

THE WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER



MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED

LONDON LOMBAY CALCUTTA
MELBOURNE

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

NEW YORK * BOSTON * CHICAGO
ATLANTA * SAN FRANCISCO

THE MACMILLAN CO. OF CANADA, LTD.
TORONTO

The Globe Edition

THE WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER

EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITIONS AND MANUSCRIPTS

BY

R. MORRIS

MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL OF THE PHILOLOGICAL SOCIETY

WITH A MEMOIR

BY

JOHN W. HALES, M.A.

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL OF THE PHILOLOGICAL SOCIETY

MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED
ST. MARTIN'S STREET, LONDON

1907

*First Edition, Globe 8vo. 1869. Reprinted 1871, 1873, 1876,
1879, 1883, 1886, 1890. Crown 8vo. 1893, with Memoir
corrected 1897. Reprinted 1899, 1902, 1904. 1906, 1907*

PREFACE.

IN the present edition of Edmund Spenser's works no attempt has been made either to modernize the Poet's language or to furnish the reader with an eclectic text. I have been simply content to reprint the earliest known editions of Spenser's various poems, correcting here and there some few errors that have crept into them, by a careful collation with subsequent editions, most of which were published in the lifetime of the poet. For an account of these with their dates of publication the reader is referred to the Biographical Memoir. Appendix I., at the end of this volume, contains all the most important variations from the original editions, and will enable the critical reader to judge favourably or otherwise of this part of my work, in which I have received some assistance from the previous labours of Church, Jortin, Warton, and Todd, as well as from the excellent editions of Professor Child and Mr. J. P. Collier. This present edition is the only modern one that contains a faithful reprint of the first edition of the *Daphnaida*, by means of which I have been enabled to present a text free at least from one error that appears in every edition after 1591.*

The prose Treatise on Ireland, as printed by Sir James Ware, and followed by all recent editors, was found on examination to be very inaccurate and incomplete.† It seemed scarcely fair to Spenser's memory to let this single piece of prose remain in so unsatisfactory a state. I have therefore re-edited it from three manuscripts belonging to the library of the British Museum.

* The edition of 1596 and all subsequent ones read—

'I will withdraw me to some darksome place,
Or some *there* cave.'

Some editors have proposed to read *dracie* for *deere*, but *deepe*, the lection of the first edition, is intelligible enough.

† The *title* itself as given by Ware is incorrectly stated. All the manuscripts, as well as the entry on the books of the Stationers' Company, read 'A View of the PRESENT State of Ireland,' but, curiously enough, the word 'present' is omitted in all editions that I have seen.

The text itself is from the Additional Manuscript, 22022, the oldest of the three manuscripts: and, according to Sir James Ware's account of some of the best manuscripts seen by him, the Ad. MS. is evidently a very good one. Harleian MS., 1932, which very closely resembles, even in its omissions, Ware's text, and Harleian MS. 7388, are very fair manuscripts, and have been collated throughout with the Additional Manuscript and Ware's text.

In compiling the Glossary I have endeavoured to make it as complete as possible: and this, it is hoped, will in some measure compensate for the absence of notes, for which no space could be found in the present volume. I have made free use of the labours of previous editors: Todd's Index, Professor Child's Notes, and the glossaries of Mr. J. P. Collier and Mr. Kitchen, have been consulted, and have facilitated and lightened my glossarial work.

In Appendix II. will be found Spenser's Letters to Gabriel Harvey, reprinted from the edition of 1580. They are also to be found, but in a very inaccurate form, in the Folio Edition, 1679, of Spenser's works.

R. M.

Amersl. 1869

CONTENTS.

	PAGE		PAGE
EDMUND SPENSER	vi	THE THIRDE BOOKE OF THE FAERIE	
A LETTER OF THE AUTHORS	3	QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF	
VERSES ADDRESSED TO THE AUTHOR	5	BRETFORMARIS, OR OF CHASTITY	155
VERSES ADDRESSED, BY THE AUTHOR		CANTO I.	155
OF THE FAERIE QUEEN, TO VARIOUS		" II.	163
NOBLEMEN, &c.	7	" III.	168
THE FIRST BOOK OF THE FAERIE		" IV.	175
QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF THE		" V.	182
KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE, OR OF HOLI-		" VI.	188
NESS	11	" VII.	193
CANTO I.	11	" VIII.	200
" II.	17	" IX.	206
" III.	22	" X.	211
" IV.	27	" XI.	218
" V.	32	" XII.	224
" VI.	38	THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FAERIE	
" VII.	43	QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF	
" VIII.	49	CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIEND-	
" IX.	54	SHIP	229
" X.	60	CANTO I.	229
" XI.	68	" II.	235
" XII.	74	" III.	241
THE SECOND BOOK OF THE FAERIE		" IV.	247
QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR		" V.	252
GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE	79	" VI.	257
CANTO I.	80	" VII.	262
" II.	86	" VIII.	267
" III.	91	" IX.	274
" IV.	96	" X.	279
" V.	102	" XI.	285
" VI.	106	" XII.	291
" VII.	112	THE FIFTH BOOKE OF THE FAERIE	
" VIII.	119	QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF	
" IX.	125	ARTEGALL, OR OF JUSTICE	295
" X.	131	CANTO I.	296
" XI.	139	" II.	300
" XII.	145	" III.	306

	PAGE		PAGE
CANTO IV.	310	THE VISIONS OF BELLAY	538
" V.	316	THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH	541
" VI.	322	DAPHNAÏDA	542
" VII.	327	COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAIN	549
" VIII.	332	ASTROPHIEL	559
" IX.	337	THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA	562
" X.	343	THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS	563
" XI.	347	A PASTORAL AEGLOGUE ON THE	
" XII.	351	DEATH OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY,	
THE SIXTE BOOKE OF THE FAERIE		KNIGHT, ETC.	566
QUEENE, CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF		AN ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PASSION,	
SIR CALIDORE, OR OF COURTSHIP	360	FOR HIS ASTROPHIEL	568
CANTO I.	361	AN EPITAPH UPON THE RIGHT	
" II.	366	HONOURABLE SIR PHILIP SIDNEY,	
" III.	371	KNIGHT	570
" IV.	377	ANOTHER OF THE SAME	571
" V.	381	AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION	572
" VI.	386	EPIGRAMS	586
" VII.	391	EPITHALAMION	587
" VIII.	396	POWRE HYMNES	592
" IX.	402	AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOYE	592
" X.	407	AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE	596
" XI.	412	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE	599
" XII.	418	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE	602
TWO CANTOS OF MUTABILITE: WHICH,		PROTHALAMION, OR A SPOURALL VERSE	605
BOTH FOR FORME AND MATTER, APPEARE TO		SONNETS	607
BE PARCELL OF SOME FOLLOWING BOOKE OF		A VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF	
THE FAERIE QUEENE, UNDER THE LEGEND		IRELAND, DISCOURSED BY WAY OF A DIA-	
OF CONSTANCE	423	LOGUE BETWEEN EUDOXUS AND IRENEUS	609
CANTO VI.	423	APPENDIX I.—VARIATIONS FROM THE	
" VII.	429	ORIGINAL EDITIONS	685
" VIII.	436	APPENDIX II.—LETTERS FROM SPEN-	
TO HIS BOOKE	440	SER (IMMERITO) TO GABRIEL HAR-	
THE SHEPHERDS CALENDER	446	VEY	706
THE RUINES OF TIME	449	GLOSSARY	711
THE TEARES OF THE MUSES	497		
VIRGIL'S GNAT	504		
PROSOPOPOIA; OR MOTHER HUBBERDS			
TALE	512		
THE RUINES OF ROME	526		
MUIOPOTMOS; OR THE FATE OF THE BUT-			
TERFLIE	532		
VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE	536		

INDEX TO FIRST LINES.

	● PAGE		PAGE
A GENTLE Knight was pricking on the plaine . . .	11	DARKE is the day, when Phœbus face is	
A gentle shepheard borne in Arcady . . .	559	snowed . . .	572
A harder lesson to learne Contingence . . .	106	Davly when do I seeke and sew for peace . . .	574
A shepheards boye, (no better doe him call.) . .	416	Diggon Davie! I biddie her godday . . .	473
After long stormes and tempests over-blowne . .	306	Doe I not see that fayrest images . . .	580
After long stormes and tempest sad a-say . . .	582		
After so long a race as I have run . . .	585		
Ah! Colin, whether on the lowly plaine . . .	572	FAIRE Proud! now tell me, why should faire	
Ah for pittie! wil rancke Winter's rage . . .	448	be proud? . . .	577
Ah! whither doost thou now, thou greater		Fayre bosom! fraught with vertues richest	
Muse . . .	429	treasure . . .	584
Ah! whither Love! wilt thou now carrie		Fayre cruell! why are ye so fierce and cruell? . .	580
mee? . . .	596	Fayre eyes! the myrrour of my mazed hart . .	573
Ah! why hath nature to so hard a hart . . .	577	Fayre is my love, with her fayre golden heares	585
And is there care in heaven? And is there		Fayre Thames streame, that from Ludds stately	
love . . .	119	towne . . .	5
And ye, brave Lord, whose goodly personage . .	8	Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and unkind . . .	581
Arion, when, through tempests cruel wracke . .	578	Firebrand of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton . .	235
As Diane hunted on a day . . .	586	Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty king	583
As Pilot well expert in perillous wave . . .	112		
As then, no winde at all there blew . . .	568		
As when a ship, that flies fayre under sayle . .	38	GOE, little booke! thy selfe present . . .	440
Ay me! how many perils doe unfold . . .	49	Great God of love, that with thy cruell darts	262
Ay me! to whom shall I my case complaine . .	502	Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny . . .	577
BE nought dismayed that her immovead mind	573	HAPPY, ye leaves! when as those lilly hands . .	573
Behold! I see the haven nigh at hand . . .	74	Hard is the doubt, and difficult to deeme . .	274
Being my self captived here in care . . .	583	Harvey, the happy above happiest men . . .	607
Being one day at my window all alone . . .	541	Here have I cause in men just blame to find . .	103
But ah for pittie! that I have thus long . . .	285	High time now gan it wax for Una fayre . .	68
By this the Northerne wagoner had set . . .	17	How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure . .	576
CALME was the day, and through the trembling		I JOY to see how, in your drawn work . . .	583
ayre . . .	605	I saw, in secret to my Dame . . .	586
Colin, my deare, when shall it please thee		I sing of deadly dolorous debate . . .	532
sing . . .	480	In brave poursults of honorable deed . . .	96
Colin, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd	566	Innocent paper; whom too cruell hand . . .	580
Collyn, I see, by thy new taken taske . . .	5	In that proud port, which her so goodly	
Come forth, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake		graceth . . .	574
your watry bowres . . .	563	In vain I thinke, right honourable Lord . . .	9
Committ to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found,) .	582	In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace . .	575
Cuddie, for shame! hold up thy heavy head . .	476	In youth, before I waxed old . . .	586

	PAGE		PAGE
Is it her nature, or is it her will . . .	579	O GOODLY golden chaynes; wherewith yfere . . .	54
Is not thilke the mery moneth of May . . .	458	O hutefull helish Snake! what furie furst . . .	218
Is not thilke same a gotheheard prowld . . .	466	O sacred hunger of ambitious mindes . . .	354
It chanced me on day beside the shore . . .	489	O what an ewe thing is to desery . . .	381
It falls me hore to write of Chastity . . .	155	O! What an endlesse work have I in hand . . .	291
It hath bene through all ages ever scene . . .	252	O! why doe wretched men so much desire . . .	241
It often fals, (as here it eurst befell) . . .	247	Of all Gods workes which doe this worlde	
It often fals, in course of common life . . .	347	adorne . . .	125
It was the month in which the righteous Maide	514	Of Court, it seemes, men Courtisie doe call . . .	361
It was the time, when rest, soft sliding downe	538	Of lover-sad calamities of old . . .	229
		Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay . . .	581
Joy of my life! full oft for loving yon . . .	585	Off, when my spirit doth spread her holder	
		winges . . .	583
LACKYNG my love, I go from place to place . . .	584	One day as I unwarily did gaze . . .	575
Leave, lady! in your glasse of cristall clene . . .	579	One day I sought with her hart-thrilling eyes . . .	574
Let not one sparke of filthy lustre fyre . . .	585	One day I wrote her name upon the sand . . .	584
Like as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde . . .	418	One day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe	536
Like as a ship with dreadfull storme long tost . . .	377		
Like as an Hynd forth singled from the heerd	195	PENELOPE, for her Ulysses sake . . .	576
Like as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes . . .	391		
Lo! Collin, here the place whose ple-aunt syte	465	RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht	
Lo! I, the Man whose Muse whylome did maske	11	thought . . .	602
Loe! I have made a Calender for every yeare . . .	486	Receive, most noble Lord, a simple taste . . .	8
Long launghing in double malady . . .	580	Receive, most Noble Lord, in gentle grace . . .	1
Long-while I sought to what I might compare	571	Redoubted Knights, and honorable Danes . . .	206
Love lift me up upon thy golden winnes . . .	599	Redoubted Lord, in whose courageous mind . . .	8
Love, that long-since hast to thy mighty powre	592	Rehearse to me, ye sacred Sisters Nine . . .	497
Lyke as a huntsman after weary chase . . .	583	Remembrance of that most Heroicke spirit . . .	9
Lyke as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde . . .	578	Renowned Lord, that for yon worthinesse . . .	9
Lyke as the Culver, on the barrel boough . . .	586	Retourne agayne, my forces late dismayd . . .	574
		Right well I wote, most mighty Sovereaine . . .	79
MAGNIFICKE Lord, whose vertues excellent . . .	7	Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts-desire . . .	573
Mark when she smileth with amiable cheure . . .	579		
Me thought I saw the grave where Laura lay	5	SEE! how the stubborne damzell doth deprave . . .	577
Men call yon fayre, and yon doe credit it . . .	584	Shall I then silent be, or shall I speake . . .	579
More then most faune, full of the living fire . . .	574	Shepheards, that wont, on pipes of oaten reed . . .	539
Most glorious Lord of lyfe! that, on this day . . .	582	Silence augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth	
Most happy letters! fram'd by kiful trade . . .	581	rage . . .	571
Most Noble Lord, the pillar of my life . . .	8	Since did I leave the presence of my love . . .	586
Most sacred fyre, that burnest nightly . . .	168	Since I have lackt the comfort of that light . . .	586
My hungry eyes, through greedy covetize . . .	578	So oft as homeward I from her depart . . .	580
My love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre . . .	577	So oft as I her beauty doe behold . . .	581
		So oft as I this history record . . .	200
NE may I, without blot of endless blame . . .	9	So oft as I with state of present time . . .	296
New yeare, forth looking out of Janus gate . . .	571	So soone as day forth dawning from the East . . .	316
No wound, which warlike hand of enemy . . .	386	Some Clarke doe doubt in their devicefull	
Nought is more honorable to a knight . . .	300	art . . .	343
Nought is on earth more sacred or divine . . .	327	Some men, I wote, will deeme in Artergall . . .	322
Nought is there under heav'ns wide hollow- nesse . . .	22	Soone as the morrow fayre with purple beames . . .	91
Nought under heaven so strongly doth allure . . .	322	Sweet is the Rose but grows upon a bryer . . .	576
Now ginneth this goodly frame of Temperance	145	Sweet Smile! the daughter of the Queene of	
Now turne againe my time, thou jolly swayne	402	Love . . .	578
		Sweet warrior! when shall I have peace with	
		yon? . . .	581

INDEX TO FIRST LINES.

ix

	PAGE		PAGE
Tell me, good Hobbinoll, what carries thee griete?	154	True is, that whilome that good Poet sayd . . .	371
Tell me, what got, what shalbe the game . . .	470	Trust not the treason of those sayihng lookes . .	580
Tell me, when shall these wearie woos have end	576	UNQWERT thought! whom at the first I bred . .	373
That conning Art hiteet of canered guyle . .	80	Urighteous Lord of Love, what law is this . .	574
That Mantuane Poesie mcompaired spitt . .	9	Upon a day, as Love layd sweetly slumbring . .	586
The antique Babel, Emprresse of the East . .	608		
The Chan Penker, when he was requide . .	10	VENEMOUS tounge, tipt with vile adders sting . .	585
The doubt which ye me deeme, layre love, is Gang	582		
The famous Briton Prince and Furey Knight . .	151	Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne . . .	584
The famous warriors of anticke world . . .	583	We now have playle (Augustus) wantonly . . .	501
The gentle shepheard satte beside a springe . .	484	Was it the worke of Nature or of Art . . .	576
The glorious image of the Maker's beantie . .	582	Weake is th' assurance that weake flesh re- poseth	581
The glorious yountraet of that Angels face . .	575	Well may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while . .	188
The joyes of love, if they should ever last . .	412	Well said the Wiseman, now prov'd true by this	267
The laurel-leave, which you this day doe weare .	577	What equall torment to the griete of mind . .	257
The love which me so cruelly tormenteth . .	579	What ever man be he whose heave munde . .	542
The merry Cuckow, messenger of Spring . .	575	What guyle is this, that those her golden tresses	578
The morow next so soone as Phryus Lamp . .	211	What man is he, that boasts of fleshly might . .	60
The noble hant that harbours vertuous thought .	32	What man so wise, what earthly witt so ware . .	43
The Panther, knowing that his spotted hyde . .	580	What man that sees the ever-whirling wheele . .	423
The paynfull smith, with force of fervent heat	577	What Tygre, or what other salvage wight . .	337
The prayse of meaneer wits this worke like profit brings	5	What vertue is so fittig for a knight . . .	366
The rolling wheele, that runneth often round .	575	What ware so cruel, or what sieg so sore . .	149
The rugged forehead, that with grave foresight .	229	When I behold that beautes wonderment . .	576
The sacred Muses have made alwaies clame . .	7	When I beholme me on that speech why leave . .	446
The shepheards boy (best known by that name)	549	When my abodes pretxed time is spent . . .	579
The overayne beauty which I doo admire . .	573	When stout Achilles heard of Helen's rape . .	6
The waves, through which my weay steps I guyde	360	When those renowned noble Peres of Greece . .	579
The weary yeare his face now having run . .	582	Where is the Antique glory now become . .	175
The world that cannot deeme of worthy things .	585	Wherefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt . .	608
They, that in the course of heavenly spheres are skild	581	Who ever doth to temperance apply . . .	102
This holy season, fit to fast and pray . . .	576	Who ever gave more honourable prize . . .	9
Tho, whenas chearelesse Night covered had . .	224	Who now does follow the foule Blatant Beast . .	407
Thomalin, why sytten we see	152	Who now shall give unto me words and sound . .	181
Those prudent heads, that with their counsels wise	7	Whoso upon him selfe will take the skill . .	310
Though vertue then were hid in highest price .	296	Who so wil seeke, by right deserts, t'attaine . .	608
Thus happy she! that is so well assured . .	581	Wonder it is to see in diverse munde . . .	182
Thus when sir Guyon with his faithful guyde .	86	Wron'd, yet not daring to expresse my paine . .	504
To all those happy blessings, which ye have . .	582	Ye gentle Ladies, in whose soveraine powre . .	306
To looke upon a worke of rare devise . . .	570	Ye heavenly sprites, whose ashue cinders he . .	526
To praise thy life or wail thy worthe death . .	570	Ye learned sisters, which have oftentimes . .	587
To thee, thou art the sommers Nightingale . .	81	Ye traitul Merchants, that, with weary toyle . .	575
To you, right noble Lord, whose carefullest True he it said, what ever man it stood . .	479	Ye	27

EDMUND SPENSER.

Ille velut fides arcana sodalibus olim
Credebat libris; neque, si male cesserat, unquam
Decurrens alio, neque si bene; quo fit ut omnia
Votiva patent veluti descripta tabella
Vita senis.

Hither, as to their fountain, other stars
Repairing in their urns draw golden light.

THE LIFE of SPENSER is wrapt in a similar obscurity to that which hides from us his great predecessor Chaucer, and his still greater contemporary Shakspeare. As in the case of Chaucer, our principal external authorities are a few meagre entries in certain official documents, and such facts as may be gathered from his works. The birth-year of each poet is determined by inference. The circumstances in which each died are a matter of controversy. What sure information we have of the intervening events of the life of each one is scanty and interrupted. So far as our knowledge goes, it shows some slight positive resemblance between their lives. They were both connected with the highest society of their times; both enjoyed court favour, and enjoyed it in the substantial shape of pensions. They were both men of remarkable learning. They were both natives of London. They both died in the close vicinity of Westminster Abbey, and lie buried near each other in that splendid cemetery. Their geniuses were eminently different: that of Chaucer was of the active type, Spenser's of the contemplative. Chaucer was dramatic, Spenser philosophical; Chaucer objective, Spenser subjective; but in the external circumstances, so far as we know them, amidst which these great poets moved, and in the mist which for the most part enfolds those circumstances, there is considerable likeness.

Spenser is frequently alluded to by his contemporaries; they most ardently recognised in him, as we shall see, a great poet, and one that might justly be associated with the one supreme poet whom this country had then produced—with Chaucer, and they paid him constant tributes of respect and admiration, but these mentions of him do not generally supply any biographical details.

The earliest notice of him that may in any sense be termed biographical occurs in a sort of handbook to the monuments of Westminster Abbey, published by Camden in 1606. Amongst the 'Reges, Reginae, Nobiles, et alij in Ecclesia Collegiata B. Petri

Westmonasterii sepulti usque ad annum 1606¹ is enrolled the name of Spenser, with the following brief obituary :

‘ Edmundus Spencer Londinensis, Anglicorum Poetarum nostri seculi facile princeps, quod ejus poemata faventibus Musis et victuro genio conscripta comprobant. Obijt immatura morte anno salutis 1598, et prope Galfredum Chaucerum conditur qui felicissime poesin Anglica literis primus illustravit. In quem hæc scripta sunt epitaphia :—

Hic prope Chaucerum situs est Spenserius, illi
Proximus ingenio proximus ut tumulo.

Hic prope Chaucerum, Spensere Poeta, poetam
Conderis, et versa quam tumulo propior.

Anglica, te vivo, vixit pluraque poetas;
Nunc moritura timet, te moriente, mori.²

Edmund Spenser, of London, far the first of the English Poets of our age, as his poems prove, written under the smile of the Muses, and with a genius destined to live. He died prematurely in the year of salvation 1598, and is buried near Geoffrey Chaucer, who was the first most happily to set forth poetry in English writing: and on him were written these epitaphs :—

Here nigh to Chaucer Spenser lies; to whom
In genius next he was, as now in tomb.

Here nigh to Chaucer, Spenser, stands thy hearse,*
Still nearer standst thou to him in thy verse.
Whilst thou didst live, lived English poetry;
Now thou art dead, it fears that it shall die.²

The next notice is found in Drummond’s account of Ben Jonson’s conversations with him in the year 1618 :

‘ Spencer’s stanzas pleased him not, nor his matter. The meaning of the allegory of his Fairy Queen he had delivered in writing to Sir Walter Rawleigh, which was, “ that by the Bleating Beast he understood the Puritans, and by the false Duessa the Queen of Scots.” He told, that Spencer’s goods were robbed by the Irish, and his house and a little child burnt, he and his wife escaped, and after died for want of bread in King Street; he refused 20 pieces sent him by my lord Essex, and said he was sure he had no time to spend them.†

The third record occurs in Camden’s *History of Queen Elizabeth (Annales rerum Anglicarum et Hibernicarum regnante Elizabetha)*, first published in a complete form in 1628. There the famous antiquary registering what demises marked the year 1598 (our March 25, 1598, to March 24, 1599), adds to his list Edmund Spenser, and thus writes of him: ‘ Ed. Spenserius, patria Londinensis, Cantabrigienis autem alumnus, Musis adeo ardentibus natus ut omnes Anglicos superioris ævi Poetas, ne Chaucero quidem concive excepto, superaret. Sed peculiari Poetis fato semper cum paupertate confictatus, etsi Greio Hiberniæ proregi fuerit ab epistolis. Vix enim ibi secessum et scribendi otium nactus, quam a rebellibus è laribus ejectus et bonis spoliatus, in Angliam inops reversus statim exspiravit, Westmonasterii prope Chaucerum impensis

* Compare ‘ Underneath this sable hearse, &c.’

† Works of William Drummond of Hawthornden. Edinburgh, 1711, p. 225.

comitis Essexiæ inhumatus, Poëtis funus ducentibus flebilibusque carminibus et calamis in tumultum coniectis.* This is to say: 'Edmund Spenser, a Londoner by birth, and a scholar also of the University of Cambridge, born under so favourable an aspect of the Muses that he surpassed all the English Poets of former times, not excepting Chaucer himself, his fellow-citizen. But by a fate which still follows Poets, he always wrestled with poverty, though he had been secretary to the Lord Grey, Lord Deputy of Ireland. For scarce had he there settled himself into a retired privacy and got leisure to write, when he was by the rebels thrown out of his dwelling, plundered of his goods, and returned into England a poor man, where he shortly after died and was interred at Westminster, near to Chaucer, at the charge of the Earl of Essex, his hearse being attended by poets, and mournful elegies and poems with the pens that wrote them thrown into his tomb.'†

In 1633, Sir James Ware prefaced his edition of Spenser's prose work on the State of Ireland with these remarks:—

'How far these collections may conduce to the knowledge of the antiquities and state of this land, let the fit reader judge: yet something I may not passe by touching Mr. Edmund Spenser and the worke it selfe, lest I should seeme to offer injury to his worth, by others so much celebrated. Hee was borne in London of an ancient and noble family, and brought up in the Universitie of Cambridge, where (as the fruites of his after labours doe manifest) he mispent not his time. After this he became secretary to Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Deputy of Ireland, a valiant and worthy governour, and shortly after, for his services to the Crowne, he had bestowed upon him by Queene Elizabeth, 3,000 acres of land in the countie of Corke. There he finished the latter part of that excellent poem of his "Faery Queene," which was soone after unfortunately lost by the disorder and abuse of his servant, whom he had sent before him into England, being then a *rebellibus* (as Camden's words are) *è laribus ejectus et bonis spoliatus*. He deceased at Westminster in the year 1599 (others have it wrongly 1598), soon after his return into England, and was buried according to his own desire in the collegiat church there, neere unto Chaucer whom he worthily imitated (at the costes of Robert Earle of Essex), whereupon this epitaph was framed.' And then are quoted the epigrams already given from Camden.

The next passage that can be called an account of Spenser is found in Fuller's *Worthies of England*, first published in 1662, and runs as follows:—

'Edmond Spenser, born in this city (London), was brought up in Pembroke-hall in Cambridge, where he became an excellent scholar; but especially most happy in English Poetry; as his works do declare, in which the many Chaucerisms used (for I will not shy affected by him) are thought by the ignorant to be blemishes, known by the learned to be beauties, to his book; which notwithstanding had been more saleable, if more conformed to our modern language.

'There passeth a story commonly told and believed, that Spenser presenting his poems to queen Elizabeth, she, highly affected therewith, commanded the lord Cecil,

* *Annales*, ed. Hearne, lii. 783.

† *History of Elizabeth, Queen of England*. Ed. 1688, pp. 564, 565.

her treasurer, to give him an hundred pound; and when the treasurer (a good steward of the queen's money) alledged that sum was too much; "Then give him," quoth the queen, "What is reason;" to which the lord consented, but was so busied, belike, about matters of higher concernment, that Spencer received no reward, whereupon he presented this petition in a small piece of paper to the queen in her progress:—

I was promis'd on a time,
To have reason for my rhyme;
From that time unto this season,
I receiv'd nor rhyme nor reason.

'Hereupon the queen gave strict order (not without some check to her treasurer), for the present payment of the hundred pounds the first intended unto him.

'He afterwards went over into Ireland secretary to the lord Gray, lord deputy thereof; and though that his office under his lord was lucrative, yet got he no estate; but saith my author "peculiari poetis fatis semper cum paupertate conflictatus est." So that it fared little better with him than with William Xilander the German (a most excellent linguist, antiquary, philosopher and mathematician), who was so poor, that (as Thuanus saith), he was thought "fami non famæ scribere."

'Returning into England, he was robb'd by the rebels of that little he had; and dying for grief in great want, anno 1598, was honourably buried nigh Chaucer in Westminster, where this distich concludeth his epitaph on his monument

Anglica, te vivo, vixit plausitque poesis;
Nunc moritura timet, te moriente, mori.

Whilst thou didst live, liv'd English poetry
Which fears now thou art dead, that she shall die.

'Nor must we forget, that the expence of his funeral and monument was defrayed at the sole charge of Robert, first of that name, earl of Essex.'

The next account is given by Edward Phillips in his *Theatrum Poëtarum Anglicanorum*, first published in 1675. This Phillips was, as is well known, Milton's nephew, and according to Warton, in his edition of Milton's juvenile poems, 'there is good reason to suppose that Milton threw many additions and corrections into the *Theatrum Poëtarum*.' Phillips' words therefore have an additional interest for us. 'Edmund Spenser,' he writes, 'the first of our English poets that brought heroic poesy to any perfection, his "Fairy Queen" being for great invention and poetic heighth, judg'd little inferior, if not equal to the chief of the ancient Greeks and Latins, or modern Italians; but the first poem that brought him into esteem was his "Shepherd's Calendar," which so endeared him to that noble patron of all vertue and learning Sir Philip Sydney, that he made him known to Queen Elizabeth, and by that means got him preferred to be secretary to his brother * Sir Henry Sidney, who was sent deputy into Ireland, where he is said to have written his "Faerie Queen;" but upon the return of Sir Henry, his employment ceasing, he also return'd into England, and having lost his great friend Sir Philip, fell into poverty, yet made his last refuge to the Queen's bounty, and had 500*l.* ordered him for his support, which nevertheless was abridged to 100*l.*

* Father.

by Cecil, who, hearing of it, and owing him a grudge for some reflections in *Mother Hubbard's Tale*, cry'd out to the queen, What! all this for a song? This he is said to have taken so much to heart, that he contracted a deep melancholy, which soon after brought his life to a period. So apt is an ingenuous spirit to resent a slighting, even from the greatest persons; and thus much I must needs say of the merit of so great a poet from so great a monarch, that as it is incident to the best of poets sometimes to flatter some royal or noble patron, never did any do it more to the height, or with greater art or elegance, if the highest of praises attributed to so heroic a princess can justly be termed flattery.*

When Spenser's works were reprinted—the first three books of the *Faerie Queene* for the seventh time—in 1679, there was added an account of his life. In 1687, Winstanley, in his *Lives of the most famous English Poets*, wrote a formal biography.

These are the oldest accounts of Spenser that have been handed down to us. In several of them mythical features and blunders are clearly discernible. Since Winstanley's time, it may be added, Hughes in 1715, Dr. Birch in 1731, Church in 1758, Upton in that same year, Todd in 1805, Aikin in 1806, Robinson in 1825, Mitford in 1839, Prof. Craik in 1845, Prof. Child in 1855, Mr. Collier in 1862, Dr. Grosart in 1884, have re-told what little there is to tell, with various additions and subtractions.

Our external sources of information are, then, extremely scanty. Fortunately our internal sources are somewhat less meagre. No poet ever more emphatically lived in his poetry than did Spenser. The Muses were, so to speak, his own bosom friends, to whom he opened all his heart. With them he conversed perpetually on the various events of his life; into their ears he poured forth constantly the tale of his joys and his sorrows, of his hopes, his fears, his distresses.

He was not one of those poets who can put off themselves in their works, who can forego their own interests and passions, and live for the time an extraneous life. There is an intense personality about all his writings, as in those of Milton and of Wordsworth. In reading them you can never forget the poet in the poem. They directly and fully reflect the poet's own nature and his circumstances. They are, as it were, fine spiritual diaries, refined self-portraits. Horace's description of his own famous fore-runner, quoted at the head of this memoir, applies excellently to Spenser. On this account the scantiness of our external means of knowing Spenser is perhaps the less to be regretted. Of him it is eminently true that we may know him from his works. His poems are his best biography. In the sketch of his life to be given here his poems shall be our one great authority.

* *Theatrum Poet. Anglic.*, ed. Brydges, 1800, pp. 148, 149.

CHAPTER I.

1552-1579.

FROM SPENSER'S BIRTH TO THE PUBLICATION OF THE SHEPHEARD'S CALENDAR.

EDMUND SPENSER was born in London in the year 1552, or possibly 1551. For both these statements we have directly or indirectly his own authority. In his *Prothalamion* he sings of certain swans whom in a vision he saw floating down the river 'Themmes,' that

At length they all to mery London came,
To mery London, my most kyndly nurse,
That to me gave this lifes first native sourse,
Though from another place I take my name,
An house of ancient fame.

A MS. note by Oldys the antiquary in Winstanley's *Lives of the most famous English Poets*, states that the precise locality of his birth was East Smithfield. East Smithfield lies just to the east of the Tower, and in the middle of the sixteenth century, when the Tower was still one of the chief centres of London life and importance, was of course a neighbourhood of far different rank and degree from its present social status. The date of his birth is concluded with sufficient certainty from one of his sonnets, viz. sonnet 60; which it is pretty well ascertained was composed in the year 1593. These sonnets are, as we shall see, of the amorous wooing sort, in the one of them just mentioned, the sighing poet declares that it is but a year since he fell in love, but that that year has seemed to him longer

Then al those fourty which my life out-went.

Hence it is gathered that he was most probably born in 1552. The inscription, then, over his tomb in Westminster Abbey errs in assigning his birth to 1553; though the error is less flagrant than that perpetrated by the inscription that preceded the present one, which set down as his natal year 1510.

Of his parents the only fact secured is that his mother's name was Elizabeth. This appears from sonnet 74, where he apostrophizes those

Most happy letters! fram'd by skillfull trade
With which that happy name was first desynd,
The which three times thrise happy hath me made,
With gifts of body, fortune and of mind,
The first my being to me gave by kind
From mothers womb deriv'd by dew descent,

The second is the Queen, the third 'my love, my lives last ornament.' A careful examination by Mr. Collier and others of what parish registers there are extant in such old churches as stand near East Smithfield—the Great Fire, it will be remembered, broke out some distance west of the Tower, and raged mainly westward—has failed to discover any trace of the infant Spenser or his parents. An 'Edmund Spenser' who is mentioned in the Books of the Treasurer of the Queen's Chamber in 1569, as paid for bearing letters from Sir Henry Norris, her Majesty's ambassador in France, to the Queen,* and who with but slight probability has been surmised to be the poet himself, is scarcely more plausibly conjectured by Mr. Collier to be the poet's father. The utter silence about his parents, with the single exception quoted, in the works of one who, as has been said above, made poetry the confidante of all his joys and sorrows, is remarkable.

Whoever they were, he was well connected on his father's side at least. 'The nobility of the Spensers,' writes Gibbon, 'has been illustrated and enriched by the trophies of Marlborough; but I exhort them to consider the "Faerie Queen" as the most precious jewel of their coronet.' Spenser was connected with the then not ennobled, but highly influential family of the Spencers of Althorpe, Northamptonshire. Theirs was the 'house of auncient fame,' or perhaps we should rather say they too belonged to the 'house of auncient fame' alluded to in the quotation made above from the *Prothalamion*. He dedicates various poems to the daughters of Sir John Spencer, who was the head of that family during the poet's youth and earlier manhood down to 1580, and in other places mentions these ladies with many expressions of regard and references to his affinity. 'Most faire and vertuous Ladio,' he writes to the 'Ladie Compton and Mountegle,' the fifth daughter, in his dedication to her of his *Mother Hubberds Tale*, 'having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knownen to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull ductie, which I have alwaies professed and am bound to beare to that house, from whence yee spring. I have at length found occasion to remember the same by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours, &c.' To another daughter, 'the right worthy and vertuous ladie the Ladie Carey,' he dedicates his *Muiopotmos*; to another, 'the right honorable the Ladie Strange,' his *Tears of the Muses*. In the latter dedication he speaks of 'your particular bounties, and also some private bands of affinitie, which it huth pleased your Ladiship to acknowledge.' It was for this lady Strange, who became subsequently the wife of Sir Thomas Egerton, that one who came after Spenser—Milton—wrote the *Arcades*. Of these three kinswomen, under the names of Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis, Spenser speaks once more in his *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*; he speaks of them as

The honour of the noble familie
Of which I meanest boast myself to be.

For the particular branch of the Spencer or Spenser family—one branch wrote the name with *s*, another with *c*—to which the poet belonged, it has been well suggested

* See Peter Cunningham's *Introduction to Extracts from Accounts of the Revels at Court*. (Shakspeare Society.)

that it was that settled in East Lancashire in the neighbourhood of Pendle Forest. It is known on the authority of his friend Kirke, whom we shall mention again presently, that Spenser retired to the North after leaving Cambridge; traces of a Northern dialect appear in the *Shepherd's Calendar*; the Christian name Edmund is shown by the parish registers to have been a favourite with one part of the Lancashire branch—with that located near Folley Close, three miles north of Hurstwood, near Burnley.

Spenser then was born in London, probably in East Smithfield, about a year before those hideous Marian fires began to blaze in West Smithfield. He had at least one sister, and probably at least one brother. His memory would begin to be retentive about the time of Queen Elizabeth's accession. Of his great contemporaries, with most of whom he was to be brought eventually into contact, Raleigh was born at Hayes in Devonshire in the same year with him, Camden in Old Bailey in 1551, Hooker near Exeter in or about 1553, Sidney at Penshurst in 1554, Bacon at York House in the West Strand, 1561, Shakspeare at Stratford-on-Avon in 1564, Robert Devereux, afterwards second Earl of Essex, in 1567.

The next assumed fact concerning Spenser is that he was educated at the Merchant Taylors' School, then just founded. Thus we learn from an entry in 'The Spending of the Money of Robert Nowell, Esq., of Reade Hall, Lancashire, brother of Alexander Nowell, Dean of St. Paul's. In an accompt of sums 'geven to poor schollers of dyvers gramare scholles' we find Xs. given, April 28, 1569, to 'Edmond Spensore Scholler of the Merchante Tayler Scholl;' and the identification is established by the occasion being described as 'his gowinge to Penbrocke Hall in Chambridge,' for we know that the future poet was admitted a Sizar of Pembroke College, then styled Hall, Cambridge, in 1569. Thus we may fairly conclude that Spenser was not only London born but London bred, though he may have from time to time sojourned with relatives and connections in Lancashire* before his undergraduateship, as well as after. Thus a conjecture of Mr. Collier's may confidently be discarded, who in the muster-book of a hundred in Warwickshire has noted the record of one Edmund Spenser as living in 1569 at Kingsbury, and conjectures that this was the poet's father, and that perhaps the poet spent his youth in the same county with Shakspeare. It may be much doubted whether it is a just assumption that every Edmund Spenser that is in any way or anywhere mentioned in the Elizabethan era was either the poet or his father. Nor, should it be allowed that the Spenser of Kingsbury was indeed the poet's father, could we reasonably indulge in any pretty pictures of a fine friendship between the future authors of *Hamlet* and of the *Faerie Queene*. Shakspeare was a mere child, not yet passed into the second of his Seven Ages, when Spenser, being then about seventeen years old, went up to the University. However, this matter need not be further considered, as there is no evidence whatever to connect Spenser with Warwickshire.

* It may be suggested that what are called the archaisms of Spenser's style may be *in part* due to the author's long residence in the country with one of the older forms of the language spoken all round him and spoken by him, in fact his vernacular. I say *in part*, because of course his much study of Chaucer must be taken into account. But, as Mr. Richard Morris has remarked to me, he could not have drawn from Chaucer those forms and words of a northern dialect which appear in the *Calendar*.

But in picturing to ourselves Spenser's youth we must not think of London as it now is, or of East Smithfield as now cut off from the country by innumerable acres of bricks and mortar. The green fields at that time were not far away from Spenser's birthplace. And thus, not without knowledge and sympathy, but with appreciative variations, Spenser could re-echo Marot's 'Eglogue au Roy sous les noms de Pan et Robin,' and its description of a boy's rural wanderings and delights. See his *Shepherd's Calendar*, December:—

Whilome in youth when flowrd my joyfull spring,
Like swallow swift I wandred here and there;
For heate of heedlesse lust me did so sting,
That I oft doubted daunger had the feare:
I went the wastefull woodes and forrest wide
Withouten dread of wolves to bene espyde.

I went to rounge amid the mazië thicket
And gather nuttes to make my Christmas game,
And joyed oft to chase the trembling pricket,
Or hunt the hartlesse hare till she were tame.
What wreaked I of wintrie ages waste?
The deemed I my spring would ever last.

How often have I scaled the craggie oke
All to dislodge the raven of her nest?
How have I wearied, with many a stroke,
The statoly walnut-tree, the while the rest
Under the tree fell all for nuttes at strife?
For like to me was libertie and life.

To be sure he is here paraphrasing, and also is writing in the language of pastoral poetry, that is, the language of this passage is metaphorical; but it is equally clear that the writer was intimately and thoroughly acquainted with that life from which the metaphors of his original are drawn. He describes a life he had lived.

It seems probable that he was already an author in some sort when he went up to Cambridge. In the same year in which he became an undergraduate there appeared a work entitled, 'A Theatre wherein be represented as well the Miseries and Calamities that follow the Voluptuous Worldlings as also the greates Joyes and Plesures which the Faithful do enjoy.' An Argument both Profitable and Delectable to all that sincerely love the Word of God. Devised by S. John Vander Noodt.' Vander Noodt was a native of Brabant who had sought refuge in England, 'as well for that I would not beholde the abominations of the Romyshe Antechrist as to escape the handes of the bloudthirsty.' 'In the meane space,' he continues, 'for the avoyding of idlenesse (the very mother and nourice of all vices) I have among other my travayles bene occupied aboute thys little Treatyse, wherein is sette forth the vilenesse and basenesse of worldly things whiche commonly withdrawe us from heavenly and spirituall matters.' This work opens with six pieces in the form of sonnets styled epigrams, which are in fact identical with the first six of the *Visions of Petrarch* subsequently published amongst Spenser's works, in which publication they are said to have been 'formerly translated.' After these so-called epigrams come fifteen *Sonnets*, eleven of which are easily recognisable amongst the *Visions of Bellay*, published along with the *Visions of Petrarch*. There is indeed as little difference between the two sets

of poems as is compatible with the fact that the old series is written in blank verse, the latter in rhyme. The sonnets which appear for the first time in the *Visions* are those describing the Wolf, the River, the Vessel, the City. There are four pieces of the older series which are not reproduced in the later. It would seem probable that they too may have been written by Spenser in the days of his youth, though at a later period of his life he cancelled and superseded them. They are therefore reprinted in this volume. (See pp. 699-701.)

Vander Noodt, it must be said, makes no mention of Spenser in his volume. It would seem that he did not know English, and that he wrote his *Declaration*—a sort of commentary in prose on the *Visions*—in French. At least we are told that this *Declaration* is translated out of French into English by Theodore Roest. All that is stated of the origin of his *Vision* is: 'The learned poete M. Francisce Petrarche, gentleman of Florence, did invent and write an Tuscan the six firste . . . which because they serve wel to our purpose, I have out of the Brabant's speache turned them into the English tongue;' and 'The other ten visions next ensuing ar described of one Ioachim du Bellay, gentleman of France, the whiche also, because they serve to our purpose I have translated them out of Dutch into English.' The fact of the *Visions* being subsequently ascribed to Spenser would not by itself carry much weight. But, as Prof. Craik pertinently asks, 'if this English version was not the work of Spenser, where did Ponsonby [the printer who issued that subsequent publication which has been mentioned] procure the corrections which are not mere typographical errata, and the additions and other variations* that are found in his edition?'

In a work called *Tragical Tales*, published in 1587, there is a letter in verse, dated 1569, addressed to 'Spencer' by George Turberville, then resident in Russia as secretary to the English ambassador, Sir Thomas Randolph. Anthony à Wood says this Spencer was the poet; but it can scarcely have been so. 'Turberville himself,' remarks Prof. Craik, 'is supposed to have been at this time in his twenty-ninth or thirtieth year, which is not the age at which men choose boys of sixteen for their friends. Besides, the verses seem to imply a friendship of some standing, and also in the person addressed the habits and social position of manhood. . . . It has not been commonly noticed that this epistle from Russia is not Turberville's only poetical address to his friend Spencer. Among his "Epitaphs and Sonnets" are two other pieces of verse addressed to the same person.'

To the year 1569 belongs that mention referred to above of payment made one 'Edmund Spenser' for bearing letters from France. As has been already remarked, it is scarcely probable that this can have been the poet, then a youth of some seventeen years on the verge of his undergraduateship.

• The one certain event of Spenser's life in the year 1569 is that he was then entered as a sizar at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge. He 'proceeded B.A.' in 1573, and 'commenced M.A.' in 1576. There is some reason for believing that his college life was troubled in much the same way as was that of Milton some sixty years later—that there prevailed some misunderstanding between him and the scholastic authorities.

* These are given in the Appendix to the present work.

He mentions his university with respect in the *Faerie Queene*, in book iv. canto xi. where, setting forth what various rivers gathered happily together to celebrate the marriage of the Thames and the Medway, he tells how

The plenteous Ouse came far from land
By many a city and by many a towne;
And many rivers taking under-hand
Into his waters as he passeth downe,
The Cle, the Were, the Grant, the Sture, the Rowne.
Thence doth by Huntingdon and CAMBRIDGE flit;
My mother Cambridge, whom as with a crowne
He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it
With many a gentle Muse and many a learned wit.

But he makes no mention of his college. The notorious Gabriel Harvey, an intimate friend of Spenser, who was elected a Fellow of Pembroke Hall the year after the future poet was admitted as a sizar, in a letter written in 1580, asks: 'And wil you needes have my testimoniall of youre old Controullers new behaviour?' and then proceeds to heap abusive words on some person not mentioned by name but evidently only too well known to both the sender and the receiver of the epistle. Having compiled a list of scurrilities worthy of Falstaff, and attacked another matter which was an abomination to him, Harvey vents his wrath in sundry Latin charges, one of which runs: 'Cartera ferè, ut olim: Bellum inter capita et membra continuatum.' 'Other matters are much as they were: war kept up between the heads [the dons] and the members [the men].' Spenser was not elected to a fellowship: he quitted his college, with all its miserable bickerings, after he had taken his master's degree. There can be little doubt, however, that he was a most diligent and earnest student during his residence at Cambridge; during that period, for example, he must have gained that knowledge of Plato's works which so distinctly marks his poems, and found in that immortal writer a spirit most truly congenial. But it is conceivable that he pursued his studies after his own manner, and probably enough excited by his independence the strong disapprobation of the master and tutor of the college of his day.

Among his contemporaries in his own college were Lancelot Andrews, afterwards Master, and eventually Bishop of Winchester, the famous preacher; Gabriel Harvey, mentioned above, with whom he formed a fast friendship, and Edward Kirke, the 'E.K.' who, as will be seen, introduced to the world Spenser's first work of any pretence. Amongst his contemporaries in the university were Preston, author of *Cambyses*, and Still, author of *Gammer Gurtons Needle*, with each of whom he was acquainted. The friend who would seem to have exercised the most influence over him was Gabriel Harvey; but this influence, at least in literary matters, was by no means for the best. Harvey was some three or four years the senior, and of some academic distinction. Probably he may be taken as something more than a fair specimen of the average scholarship and culture given by the universities at that time. He was an extreme classicist; all his admiration was for classical models and works that savoured of them; he it was who headed the attempt made in England to force upon a modern language the metrical system of the Greeks and Latins. What baneful influence he exercised over Spenser in this last respect will be shown presently. Kirke was

Spenser's other close friend; he was one year junior academically to the poet. He too, as we shall see, was a profound admirer of Harvey.

After leaving the university in 1576, Spenser, then, about twenty-four years of age, returned to his own people in the North. This fact is learnt from his friend 'E. K.'s' glosses to certain lines in the sixth book of the *Shepheardes Calendar*. E. K. speaks 'of the North countrye where he dwelt,' and 'of his removing out of the North parts and coming into the South.' As E. K. writes in the spring of 1579, and as his writing is evidently some little time subsequent to the migration he speaks of, it may be believed that Spenser quitted his Northern home in 1577, and, as we shall see, there is other evidence for this supposition. About a year then was passed in the North after he left the University.

These years were not spent idly. The poetical fruits of them shall be mentioned presently. What made it otherwise a memorable year to the poet was his falling deeply in love with some fair Northern neighbour. Who she was is not known. He who adored her names her Rosalind, 'a feigned name,' notes E. K., 'which being well ordered will bewray the very name of hys love and mistresse, whom by that name he colourereth.' Many solutions of this anagram have been essayed, mostly on the supposition that the lady lived in Kent; but Professor Craik is certainly right in insisting that she was of the North. Dr. Grosart and Mr. Fleay, both authorities of importance, agree in discovering the name Rose Dinle or Dinley; but of a person so Christian-named no record has yet been found, though the surname Dyneley or Dinley occurs in the Whalley registers and elsewhere. In the Eclogue of the *Shepheardes Calendar*, to which this note is appended, Colin Clout—so the poet designates himself—complains to Hobbinol—that is, Harvey—of the ill success of his passion. Harvey, we may suppose, is paying him a visit in the North; or perhaps the pastoral is merely a versifying of what passed between them in letters. However this may be, Colin is bewailing his hapless fate. His friend, in reply, advises him to

Forsake the soyle that so doth thee bewitch, &c.

Surely E. K.'s gloss is scarcely necessary to tell us what these words mean. 'Come down,' they say, 'from your bleak North Country hills where she dwells who binds you with her spell, and be at peace far away from her in the genial South land.' In another Eclogue (April) the subduing beauty is described as 'the Widdowes daughter of the Glen,' surely a Northern address. On these words the well-informed E. K. remarks: 'He calleth Rosalinde the Widdowes daughter of the glenno, that is, of a country hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather sayde to colour and conceale the person, than simply spoken. For it is well known, even in spite of Colin and Hobbinol, that she is a gentlewoman of no meane house, nor endowed with anye vulgare and common gifts, both of nature and manners: but suche indeede, as neede neither Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinol be grieved that so she should be commended to immortalitie for her rare and singular virtues.' Whoever this charming lady was, and whatever glen she made bright with her presence, it appears that she did not reciprocate the devoted affection of the studious young Cambridge graduate who, with probably no apparent occupation, was loitering for a while in her vicinity. It was some other—he is called Menalcas in

one of his rival's pastorals—who found favour in her eyes. The poet could only wail and beat his breast. Eclogues I. and VI. are all sighs and tears. Perhaps in the course of time a copy of the *Faerie Queene* might reach the region where Menalcas and Rosalind were growing old together; and she, with a certain ruth perhaps mixed with her anger, might recognise in Mirabella an image of her fair young disdainful self.* The poet's attachment was no transient flame that flashed and was gone. When at the instance of his friend he travelled southward away from the scene of his discomfiture, he went weeping and inconsolable. In the Fourth Eclogue Hobbinol is discovered by Thenot deeply mourning, and, asked the reason, replies that his grief is because

The ladde whome long I loved so deare
Nowe loves a lasse that all his love doth scorne;
He plondg in payne, his tressed locke dooth teare.

Shepheards delights he dooth them all forswear:
Hys pleasant pipe, whych made us meriment,
He wyllfully hath broke, and doth forbear
His wonted songs, wherein he all outwent.

Colin thou kenst, the Southerne shepheardes boye;
Him Love hath wounded with a deadly darte. &c.

The memory of Rosalind, in spite of her unkindness, seems to have been fondly cherished by the poet, and yielded to no rival vision—though there may have been fleeting fits of passion—till some fourteen years after he and she had parted—till the year 1592, when, as we shall see, Spenser, then living in the south of Ireland, met that Elizabeth who is mentioned in the sonnet quoted above, and who some year and a half after that meeting became his wife. On the strength of an entry found in the register of St. Clement Danes Church in the Strand—'26 Aug. [1587] Florenc Spenser, the daughter of Edmond'—it has been conjectured that the poet was married before 1587. This conjecture seems entirely unacceptable. There is nothing to justify the theory that the Edmund Spenser of the register was the poet. It is simply incredible that Spenser, one who, as has been said, poured out all his soul in his poems, should have wooed and won some fair lady to his wife, without ever a poetical allusion to his courtship and his triumph. It is not at all likely, as far as one can judge from their titles, that any one of his lost works was devoted to the celebration of any such successful passion. Lastly, besides this important negative evidence, there is distinct positive testimony that long after 1587 the image of Rosalind had not been displaced in his fancy by any other loveliness. In *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, written, as will be seen, in 1591, though not published till 1595, after the poet has 'full deeply divined of love and beauty,' one Melissa in admiration avers that all true lovers are greatly bound to him—most especially women. The faithful Hobbinol says that women have but ill requited their poet:—

* This supposed description of his first love was written probably during the courtship, which ended, as we shall see, in his marriage. The First Love is said to be portrayed in cant. vii., the Last in cant. x. of book vi. of the *Faerie Queene*. But this identification of Rosalind and Mirabella is, after all, but a conjecture, and is not to be accepted as gospel.

'He is repayd with scorne and foule despite,
That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth heare.'
'Indeed,' says Lucid, 'I have often heard
Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed
For being to that swaine too cruell hard.

Lucid however would defend her on the ground that love may not be compelled:—

'Beware therefore, ye groomes, I read betimes
How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise.'

This caution Colin eagerly and ardently reinforces, and with additions. His heart was still all tender towards her, and he would not have one harsh word thrown at her:—

Ah! Shepheards, then said Colin, ye ne weot
How great a guilt upon your heads yow draw
To make so bold a doome, with words unmeet,
Of thing celestiaall which ye never saw.
For she is not like as the other crew
Of shepheards daughters which emongst you bee,
But of divine regard and heavenly hew,
Excelling all that ever ye did see;
Not then to her that scorned thing so base,
But to myselfe the blame that lookt so hie,
So hie her thoughts as she herselfe have place
And joath each lowly thing with lofty eie.
Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to grant
To simple swaine, with her I may not love,
Yet that I may her honour paravant
And praise her worth, though far my wit above.
Such grace shall be some guerdon for the grieve
And long affliction which I have endured;
Such grace sometimes shall give me some reliefe
And ease of paine which cannot be recured.
And ye my fellow shepheards, which do see
And heare the languors of my too long dying,
Unto the world for ever witness bee
That hers I die, nought to the world denying
This simple trophe of her great conquest.'

This residence of Spenser in the North, which corresponds with that period of Milton's life spent at his father's house at Horton in Buckinghamshire, ended, as there has been occasion to state, in the year 1577. What was the precise cause of Spenser's coming South, is not known for certain. 'E.K.' says in one of his glosses, already quoted in part, that the poet 'for speciall occasion of private affayres (as I have bene partly of himselfe informed) and for his more preferment, removing out of the North parts, came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised him privately.' It is clear from his being admitted at his college as a sizar, that his private means were not good. Perhaps during his residence in the North he may have been dependent on the bounty of his friends. It was then in the hope of some advancement of his fortunes that, bearing with him no doubt in manuscript certain results of all his life's previous labour, he turned away from his cold love and her glen, and all her country, and set his face Town-ward.

It is said that his friend Harvey introduced him to that famous accomplished gentleman—that mirror of true knighthood—Sir Philip Sidney, and it would seem that Penshurst became for some time his home. There has already been quoted a line describing Spenser as ‘the southern shepherdes boye.’ This southern shepherd is probably Sidney. Sidney, it would seem, introduced him to his father and to his uncle, the Earl of Leicester. If we are to take Irenæus’ words literally—and there seems no reason why we should not—Spenser was for a time at least in Ireland, when Sidney’s father was Lord Deputy. Irenæus, in *A View of the Present State of Ireland*, certainly represents Spenser himself; and he speaks of what he *said* at the execution of a notable traitor at Limerick, called Murrough O’Brien; see p. 636 of this volume. However, he was certainly back in England and in London in 1579, residing at the Earl of Leicester’s house in the Strand, where Essex Street now stands. He dates one of his letters to Harvey, ‘Leycester House, this 5 October, 1579.’ Perhaps at this time he commenced, or renewed, or continued his acquaintance with his distinguished relatives of Althorpe. During the time he spent now at Penshurst and in London, he mixed probably with the most brilliant intellectual society of his time. Sidney was himself endowed with no mean genius. He, Lord Leicester, Lord Strange, and others, with whom Spenser was certainly, or in all probability, acquainted, were all eminent patrons and protectors of genius.

This passage of Spenser’s life is of high interest, because in the course of it that splendid era of our literature commonly called the Elizabethan Period may be said to have begun. Spenser is the foremost chronologically of those great spirits who towards the close of the sixteenth century lifted up their immortal voices, and spoke words to be heard for all time. In the course of this present passage of his life, he published his first important work—a work which secured him at once the hearty recognition of his contemporaries as a true poet risen up amongst them. This work was the *Shepherdes Calendar*, to which so many references have already been made.

It consists of twelve eclogues, one for each month of the year. Of these, three (i., vi., and xii.), as we have seen, treat specially of his own disappointment in love. Three (ii., viii., and x.) are of a more general character, having old age, a poetry combat, ‘the perfect pattern of a poet’ for their subjects. One other (iii.) deals with love-matter. One (iv.) celebrates the Queen, three (v., vii., and ix.) discuss ‘Protestant and Catholic,’ Anglican and Puritan questions. One (xi.) is an elegy upon ‘the death of some maiden of great blood, whom he calleth Dido.’ These poems were ushered into the world by Spenser’s college friend Edward Kirke, for such no doubt is the true interpretation of the initials E.K. This gentleman performed his duty in a somewhat copious manner. He addressed ‘to the most excellent and learned both orator and poet Mayster Gabriell Harvey’ a letter warmly commending ‘the new poet’ to his patronage, and defending the antique verbiage of the eclogues; he prefixed to the whole work a general argument, a particular one to each part; he appealed to every poem a ‘glosse’ explaining words and allusions. The work is dedicated to Sir Philip Sidney. It was published in the winter of 1579–80.

More than once in the course of it, Spenser refers to Tityrus as his great master. The twelfth eclogue opens thus:

The gentle shepheard sat beside a springe
 All in the shadow of a bushye breere,
 That Colin height, which well could pype and singe,
 For hee of Tityrus his songes did lere.

Tityrus, on E.K.'s authority, was Chaucer. It is evident from the language—both the words and the verbal forms—used in this poem that Spenser had zealously studied Chaucer, whose greatest work had appeared just about two centuries before Spenser's first important publication. The work, however, in which he imitates Chaucer's manner is not the *Shepheardes Calendar*, but his *Prosopopoia* or *Mother Hubbards Tale*, which he says, 'writing in a later year, he had "long sithens composed in the faw conceipt of my youth." The form and manner of the *Shepheardes Calendar* reflected not Chaucer's influence upon the writer, but the influence of a vast event which had changed the face of literature since the out-coming of the *Canterbury Tales*—of the revival of learning. That event had put fresh models before men, had greatly modified old literary forms, had originated new. The classical influence impressed upon Europe was by no means an unmixed good; in some respects it retarded the natural development of the modern mind by overpowering it with its prestige and stupefying it with a sense of inferiority; while it raised the ideal of perfection, it tended to give rise to mere imitations and affectations. Amongst these new forms was the Pastoral. When Virgil, Theocritus, 'Daphnis and Chloë,' and other writers and works of the ancient pastoral literature once more gained the ascendancy, then a modern pastoral poetry began to be. This poetry flourished greatly in Italy in the sixteenth century. It had been cultivated by Sannazaro, Guarini, Tasso. Arcadia had been adopted by the poets for their country. In England numerous *Elogues* made their appearance. Amongst the earliest and the best of these were Spenser's. It would perhaps be unjust to treat this modern pastoral literature as altogether an affectation. However unreal, the pastoral world had its charms—a pleasant feeling imparted of emancipation, a deep quietude, a sweet tranquillity. If vulgar men discovered their new worlds, and trafficked and bustled there, why should not the poet discover his Arcadia, and repose at his ease in it, secure from the noises of feet going and coming over the roads of the earth? •

That fine melodiousness, which is one of Spenser's signal characteristics, may be perceived in his *Elogues*, as also a native gracefulness of style, which is another distinguishing mark of him. Perceivable, too, are his great, perilous fluency of language and his immense fecundity of mind. The work at once secured him a front place in the poetical ranks of the day. Sidney mentions it in his *Apologie for Poetrie*;* Abraham Fraunce draws illustrations from it in his *Lawyers Logicke*, which appeared in 1588; Meres praises it; 'Maister Edmund Spenser,' says Drayton, 'has done enough for the immortality, had he only given us his *Shepheardes Calendar*, a masterpiece, if any.' It is easy to discern in *Lycidas* signs of Milton's study of it.

During Spenser's sojourn in the society of the Sidney's and the Dudley's, letters passed between him and Harvey, some of which are extant. From these, and from the editorial notes of Kirke, we hear of other works written by Spenser, ready to be

given to the light. The works thus heard of are *Dreames, Legends, Court of Cupide, The English Poet, The Dying Pelican, Stemmata Dudleiana, Slomber, Nine English Comedies, The Epithalamion Thamesis*, and also *The Faerie Queene* commenced. Of these works perhaps the *Legends, Court of Cupid*, and *Epithalamion Thamesis* were subsequently with modifications incorporated in the *Faerie Queene*; the *Stemmata Dudleiana; Nine English Comedies, Dying Pelican*, are altogether lost. The *Faerie Queene* had been begun. So far, as written, it had been submitted to the criticism of Harvey. On April 10, 1580, Spenser writes to Harvey, wishing him to return 'it with his 'Jong expected judgment' upon it. Harvey had already pronounced sentence in 'a letter dated April 7, and this is the sentence? 'In good faith I had once again nigh forgotten your *Faerie Queene*; howbeit, by good chauce I have nowe sent hir home at the laste, neither in better nor worse case than I founde hir. And must you of necessitie have my judgement of hir indeede? To be plaine, I am voyde of al judgement, if y^{our} nine Comedies, wherunto, in imitation of Herodotus, you give the names of the Nine Muses, and (in one man's fansie not unworthily), come not neerer Ariostoes Comedies, eyther for the finenesse of plausible elocution, or the rareness of poetical invention, than that Elvish queene doth to his Orlando Furioso, which notwithstanding, you will needes seem to emulate, and hope to overgo, as you flatly professed yourself in one of your last letters. Besides that, you know it hath bene the usual practise of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all nations, and especially in Italie, rather to shewe and advaunce themselves that way than any other; as namely, those three notorious dyscoursing heads Bibiena, Machiavel, and Aretine did (to let Bembo and Ariosto passe), with the great admiration and wonderment of the whole countrey; being indeede reputed matchable in all points, both for conceyt of witte, and eloquent decyphering of matters, either with Aristophanes and Menander in Greek, or with Plautus and Terence in Latin, or with any other in any other tong. But I will not stand greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be the Faery Queen be fairer in your eie than the Nine Muses, and Hobgoblin runne away with the garland from Apollo; marke what I saye, and yet I will not say that I thought; but there is an end for this once, and fare you well, till God or some good Aungell putte you in a better minde.'

Clearly the *Faerie Queene* was but little to Harvey's taste. It was too alien from the cherished exemplars of his heart. Happily Spenser was true to himself, and went on with his darling work in spite of the strictures of pedantry. This is not the only instance in which the dubious character of Harvey's influence is noticeable. The letters, from one of which the above doom is quoted, enlighten us also as to a grand scheme entertained at this time for forcing the English tongue to conform to the metricall rules of the classical languages. Already in a certain circle rime was discredited as being, to use Milton's words nearly a century afterwards, 'no necessary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verse, in longer works especially, but the invention of a barbarous age to set off wretched matter and lame metre.' A similar attempt was made in the course of the sixteenth century in other parts of Europe, and with the same final issue. Gabriel Harvey was an active leader in this deluded movement. When Sidney too, and Dyer, another poet of the time, proclaimed a

'general surceasing and silence of bald rhymes, and also of the very best too, instead whereof they have by authority of their whole senate, prescribed certain laws and rules of quantity of English syllables for English verse, having had already thereof great practice,' Spenser was drawn 'to their faction.'

'I am of late,' he writes to Harvey, 'more in love wyth my Englishe versifying than with ryming; whyche I should have done long since if I would then have followed your counsell.'* In allying himself with these Latin prosody bigots Spenser sinned grievously against his better taste. 'I like your late Englishe hexameters so exceedingly well,' he writes to Harvey, 'that I also enure my pen sometime in that kinde, whyche I fynd in deed, as I have heard you often defende in word, neither so harde nor so harsh [but] that it will easily and fairly yield itself to our moother tongue. For the onely or chiefest hardnesse whyche seemeth is in the accent; whyche sometimes gapeth and as it were yawneth il-favouredly, comming shorte of that it should, and sometimes exceeding the measure of the number, as in carpenter the middle sillable being used short in speache, when it shall be read long in verse, seemeth like a lame gosling that draweth one legge after hir. And heaven being used shorte as one syllable, when it is in verse stretched with a Diastole is like a lame dogge, that holdes up one legge.* His ear was far too fine and sensitive to endure the fearful sounds uttered by the poets of this Procrustæan creed. The language seemed to groan and shriek at the agonies and contortions to which it was subjected; and Spenser could not but hear its outcries. But he made himself as deaf as might be. 'It is to be wonne with custom,' he proceeds, in the letter just quoted from, 'and rough words must be studied with use. For why, a God's name, may not we, as the Greekes, have the kingdom of oure owne language, and measure our accenttes by the sounde, reserving the quantitie to the verse? . . . I would hartily wish you would either send me the rules or precepts of arte which you observe in quantities; or else follow mine that Mr. Philip Sidney gave me, being the very same which Mr. Drunt devised, but enlarged with Mr. Sidney's own judgement, and augmented with my observations, that we might both accorde and agree in one, leaste we overthrowe one another and be overthrown of the rest.' He himself produced the following lines in accordance, as he fondly hoped, with the instructions of the new school:—

• IAMBICUM TRIMETRUM.

Unhappie verse! the witness of my unhappie state,
[as indeed it was in a sense not meant]
Make thy selfe fluttring winges of thy fast flying thought
And fly forth unto my love whersoever she be.

Whether lying reastlesse in heavy bedde, or else
Sitting so cheerelesse at the cheerefull boorde, or else
Playing alone carelesse on hir heavenlie virginals.

If in bed, tell hir that my eyes can take no reate;
If at boorde, tell hir that my mouth can eat no meete;
If at hir virginals, tell her I can beare no mirth.

* *Ancient Critical Essays*, ed. Hazlewood, 1815, pp. 259, 260,

Asked why? Waking love suffereth no sleepe;
 Say that raging love doth appall the weake stomacke,
 Say that lamenting love marreth the muscalle.

Tell hir that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me asleepe,
 Tell hir that hir beauty was wonte to feede mine eyes,
 Tell hir that hir sweete tongue was wonte to make me mirth.

Now doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindlie reste,
 Now doe I dayly starve, wanting my daily food,
 Now doe I always dye wanting my timely mirth.

And if I waste who will bewalle my heavy chance?
 And if I starve, who will record my cursed end?
 And if I dye, who will saye, This was Inmerito?

Spenser of the sensitive ear wrote these lines. When the pedantic phantasy which had for a while seduced and corrupted him had gone from him, with what remorse he must have remembered these strange monsters of his creation! Let us conclude our glance at this sad fall from harmony by quoting the excellent words of one who was a bitter opponent of Harvey in this as in other matters. 'The hexameter verse,' says Nash in his *Four Letters Confuted*, 1592, 'I graunt to be a gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an English beggar), yet this clyme of ours hee cannot thrive in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in; hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running upon quagmiers up the hill in one syllable and down the dale in another; retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himself with amongst the Greeks and Latins.'

Some three years were spent by Spenser in the enjoyment of Sidney's friendship and the patronage of Sidney's father and uncle. During this time he would seem to have been constantly hoping for some preferment. According to a tradition, first recorded by Fuller, the obstructor of the success of his suit was the Treasurer, Lord Burghley. It is clear that he had enemies at Court—at least at a later time. In 1591, in his dedication of *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, he entreats Raleigh, to 'with your good countenance protest against the malice of evil mouthes, which are always wide open to carpe at and misconstrue my simple meaning.' A passage in the *Ruines of Time* (see the lines beginning 'O grief of griefs! O full of all good hearts!') points to the same conclusion; and so the concluding lines of the Sixth Book of the *Faerie Queene*, when, having told how the Blatant Beast (not killed as Lord Macaulay says in his essay on Bunyan, but) 'supprest and tamed' for a while by Sir Calidore, at last broke his iron chain and ranged again through the world, and ragged sore in each degree and state, he adds:—

Ne may this homely verse, of many meanest,
 Hope to escape his venomous despite,
 More then my former writs, all were thy cleanness
 From blamefull blot and free from all that wite
 With which some wicked tongues did it backbite,
 And bring into a mighty Peres displeasure,
 That never so deserved to endite.
 Therefore do you, my rimes, keep better measure,
 And seeke to please; that now is counted wise mens threasure.

In the *Tears of the Muses* Calliope says of certain persons of eminent rank:—

Their great revenues all in sumptuous pride
 They spend that nought to learning they may spare;
 And the rich fee which Poets wont divide
 Now Parasites and Sycophants do share.

Several causes have been suggested to account for this disfavour. The popular tradition was pleased to explain it by making Burghley the ideal dullard who has no soul for poetry—to whom one copy of verses is very much as good as another, and no copy good for anything. It delighted to bring this commonplace gross-minded person into opposition with one of the most spiritual of geniuses. In this myth Spenser represents mind, Burghley matter. But there is no justification in facts for this tradition. It may be that the Lord Treasurer was not endowed with a high intellectual nature; but he was far too wise in his generation not to pretend a virtue if he had it not, when circumstances called for anything of the sort. When the Queen patronized literature, we may be sure Lord Burghley was too discreet to disparage and oppress it. Another solution refers to Burghley's Puritanism as the cause of the misunderstanding; but, as Spenser too inclined that way, this is inadequate. Probably, as Todd and others have thought, what alienated his Lordship at first was Spenser's connection with Leicester; what subsequently aggravated the estrangement was his friendship with Essex.

CHAPTER II

1580—1589.

IN the year 1580 Spenser was removed from the society and circumstances in which, except for his probable visit to Ireland, he had lived and moved, as we have seen, for some three years. From that year to near the close of his life his home was to be in Ireland. He paid at least two visits to London and its environs in the course of these eighteen years; but it seems clear that his home was in Ireland. Perhaps his biographers have hitherto not truly appreciated this residence in Ireland. We shall see that a liberal grant of land was presently bestowed upon him in the county of Cork; and they have reckoned him a successful man, and wondered at the querulousness that occasionally makes itself heard in his works. Towards the very end of this life, Spenser speaks of himself as one

Whom sullen care
 Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay
 In princes court and expectation wayne
 Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away
 Like empty shaddowes, did afflict my brayne.

Those who marvel at such language perhaps forget what a dreary exile the poet's life in Ireland must in fact have been. It is true that it was relieved by several journeys to England, by his receiving at least one visit from an English friend, by his finding, during at any rate the earlier part of his absence, some congenial English friends residing in the country, by his meeting at length with that Elizabeth whose exelling

beauty he has sung so sweetly, and whom he married; it is also true that there was in him—as in Milton and in Wordsworth—a certain great self-containedness,* that he carried his world with him wherever he went, that he had great allies and high company in the very air that flowed around him, whatever land he inhabited; all this is true, but yet to be cut off from the fellowship which, however self-sufficing, he so dearly loved—to look no longer on the face of Sidney his hero, his ideal embodied, his living Arthur, to hear but as it were an echo of the splendid triumphs won by his and our England in those glorious days, to know of his own high fame but by report, to be parted from the friendship of Shakspeare—surely this was exile. To live in the Elizabethan age, and to be severed from those brilliant spirits to which the fame of that age is due! Further, the grievously unsettled, insurgent state of Ireland at this time—as at many a time before and since—must be borne in mind. Living there was living on the side of a volcanic mountain. That the perils of so living were not merely imaginary, we shall presently see. He did not shed tears and strike his bosom, like the miserable Ovid at Tomi; he ‘wore rather in his bonds a cheerful brow, lived, and took comfort,’ finding his pleasure in that high spiritual communion we have spoken of, playing pleasantly, like some happy father, with the children of his brain, joying in their caprices, their noblenesses, their sweet adolescence; but still it was exile, and this fact may explain that tone of discontent which here and there is perceptible in his writings †

When in 1580 Arthur, Lord Grey of Wilton, was appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland, he—perhaps through Lord Leicester’s influence, perhaps on account of Spenser’s already knowing something of the country—made Spenser his Private Secretary. There can be no doubt that Spenser proceeded with him to Dublin. It was in Ireland, probably about this time, that he made or renewed his acquaintance with Sir Walter Raleigh. In 1581 he was appointed Clerk of Degrees and Recognizances in the Irish Court of Chancery, a post which he held for seven years, at the end of which time he received the appointment of Clerk to the Council of Munster. In the same year in which he was assigned the former clerkship, he received also a lease of the lands and Abbey of Enniscorthy in Wexford county. It is to be hoped that his Chancery Court duties permitted him to reside for a while on that estate. ‘Enniscorthy,’ says the *Guide to Ireland* published by Mr. Murray, ‘is one of the prettiest little towns in the Kingdom, the largest portion of it being on a steep hill on the right bank of the Slaney, which here becomes a deep and navigable stream, and is crossed by a

* One might quote of these poets, and those of a like spirit, Wordsworth’s lines on ‘the Characteristics of a Child three years old,’ for in the respect therein mentioned, as in others, these poets are ‘as little children;’

As a faggot sparkles on the hearth,
Not less if unattended and alone,
Than when both young and old sit gathered round,
And take delight in its activity;
Even so this happy creature of herself
Is all-sufficient; Solitude to her
Is like society, who fills the air
With gladness and involuntary songs.

† See *Colin Clout’s Come Home Again*, vv. 180–184, quoted below.

bridge of six arches.' There still stands there 'a single tower of the old Franciscan monastery.' But Spenser soon parted with this charming spot, perhaps because of its inconvenient distance from the scene of his official work. In December of the year in which the lease was given, he transferred it to one Richard Synot. In the following year Lord Grey was recalled. 'The Lord Deputy,' says Holinshed, 'after long suit for his revocation, received Her Majesty's letters for the same.' His rule had been marked by some extreme, perhaps necessary severities, and was probably somewhat curtly concluded on account of loud complaints made against him on this score. Spenser would seem to have admired and applauded him, both as a ruler and as a patron and friend. He mentions him with much respect in his *View of the Present State of Ireland*. One of the sonnets prefixed to the *Faerie Queene* is addressed 'to the most renowned and valiant lord the lord Grey of Wilton,' and speaks of him with profound gratitude:—

Most noble lord, the pillar of my life,
And patron of my Muse's pupillage;
Through whose large bountie, poured on me rife
In the first season of my feeble age,
I now doe live bound yours by vassalage;
Sith nothing ever may redeeme nor reave
Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage,
Vouchsafe in worth this small gift to receive,
Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave
Of all the rest that I am tyde to account.

Lord Grey died in 1593. Spenser may have renewed his friendship with him in 1589, when, as we shall see, he visited England. For the present their connection was broken. It may be considered as fairly certain that when his lordship returned to England in 1582, Spenser did not return with him, but abode still in Ireland.

There is, indeed, a 'Maister Spenser' mentioned in a letter written by James VI. of Scotland from St. Andrews in 1583 to Queen Elizabeth: 'I have staied Maister Spenser upon the letter quhilk is written with my ain hand quhilk sall be readie within tua daies.' It may be presumed that this gentleman is the same with him of whose postal services mention is found, as we have seen, in 1569. At any rate there is nothing whatever to justify his identification with the poet. On the other hand, there are several circumstances which seem to indicate that Spenser was in Ireland continuously from the year of his going there with Lord Grey to the year of his visiting England with Raleigh in 1589, when he presented to her Majesty and published the first three books of the *Faerie Queene*. Whatever certain glimpses we can catch of Spenser during these ten years, he is in Ireland.

We have seen that he was holding one clerkship or another in Ireland during all this time. In the next place, we find him mentioned as forming one of a company described as gathered together at a cottage near Dublin in a work by his friend Lodovick * Bryskett, written, as may be inferred with considerable

* This is the 'Lodovick' mentioned in Sonnet 33, quoted below. It was from him a little later, in 1588, that Spenser obtained by 'purchase' the succession to the office of Clerk of the Government Council of Munster. See Dr. Grosart's vol. i. p. 151.

certainty, some time in or about the year 1582, though not published till 1606. This work, entitled *A Discourse of Civill Life; containing the Ethike part of Morall Philosophie*, 'written to the right honorable Arthur, late Lord Grey of Wilton'—written before his recall in 1582—describes in the introduction a party met together at the author's cottage near Dublin, consisting of 'Dr. Long, Primate of Ardmagh; Sir Robert Dillon, knight; M. Dormer, the Queene's solicitor; Capt. Christopher Carleil; Capt. Thomas Norreis; Capt. Warham St. Leger; Capt. Nicholas Dawtrey; and M. Edmond Spenser, late your lordship's secretary; and Th. Smith, apothecary.' In the course of conversation Bryskett envies 'the happinesse of the Italians who have in their mother-tongue late writers that have with a singular easie method taught all that which Plato or Aristotle have confusedly or obscurely left written' The 'late writers' who have performed this highly remarkable service of Clarifying and making intelligible Plato and Aristotle—perhaps the 'confusion' and 'obscurity' Bryskett speaks of mean merely the difficulties of a foreign language for one imperfectly acquainted with it—are Alexander Piccolomini, Gio. Baptista Giraldi, and Guazzo, 'all three having written upon the Ethick part of Morall Philosophie [sic] both exactly and perspicuously.' Bryskett then earnestly wishes—and here perhaps, in spite of those queer words about Plato and Aristotle, we may sympathise with him—that some of our countrymen would promote by English treatises the study of Moral Philosophy in English.

'In the meane while I must struggle with those bookes which I vnderstand and content my selfe to plod upon them, in hope that God (who knoweth the sincerenesse of my desire) will be pleased to open my vnderstanding, so as I may reape that profit of my reading, which I traueill for. Yet is there a gentleman in this company, whom I have had often a purpose to intreate, that as his leisure might serue him, he would vouchsafe to spend some time with me to instruct me in some hard points which I cannot of my selfe understand; knowing him to be not onely perfect in the Greeke tongue, but also very well read in Philosophie, both morall and naturall. Neuertheless such is my bashfulness, as I neuer yet durst open my mouth to disclose this my desire unto him, though I have not wanted some hartning thereunto from himselfe. For of loue and kindnes to me, he encouraged me long sithens to follow the reading of the Greeke tongue, and offered me his helpe to make me vnderstand it. But now that so good an oportunitie is offered vnto me, to satisfie in some sort my desire; I thinke I should commit a great fault, not to my selfe alone, but to all this company, if I should not enter my request thus farre, as to moue him to spend thus time which we have now destined to familiar discourse and conuersation, in declaring vnto us the great benefits which men obtaine by the knowledge of Morall Philosophie, and in making vs to know what the same is, what be the parts thereof, whereby vertues are to be distinguished from vices; and finally that he will be pleased to run oner in such order as he shall thinke good, such and so many principles and rules thereof, as shall serue not only for my better instruction, but also for the contentment and satisfaction of you al. For I nothing doubt, but that every one of you will be glad to heare so profitable a discourse and thinke the time very wel spent wherein so excellent a knowledge shal be reuealed vnto you, from which euery one may be assured to gather some fruit as wel as my selfe. Therefore (said I) turning my selfe to *M. Spenser*, It is you sir, to whom it pertaineth to shew your selfe courteous now vnto vs all and to make vs all beholding vnto you for the pleasure and profit which we shall gather from your speeches, if you shall vouchsafe to open vnto vs the goodly cabinet, in which this excellent treasure of vortues lieth locked up from the vulgar sort. And thereof in the behalfe of all as for my selfe, I do most earnestly intreate you not to say vs nay. Vnto which wordes of mine euery man applauding most with like wordes of request and the rest with gesture and countenances expressing as much, *M. Spenser* answered in this maner: Though it may seeme hard for me, to refuse the request made by you all, whom euery one alone, I should for many respects be willing to gratifie; yet as the case standeth, I doubt not but with the consent of the most part of you, I shall be excused at this time of this taske which would be laid vpon me, for sure I am, that it is not vnkowne vnto you,

that I have already undertaken a work tending to the same effect, which is in *heroical verse* under the title of a *Faerie Queene* to represent all the moral vertues, assigning to every vertue a Knight to be the patron and defender of the same, in whose actions and feates of arms and chivalry the operations of that vertue, whereof he is the protector, are to be expressed, and the vices and unruly appetites that oppose themselves against the same, to be beaten down and overcome. Which work, as I have already well entred into, if God shall please to spare me life that I may finish it according to my mind, your wish (*M. Bryskett*) will be in some sort accomplished, though perhaps not so effectually as you could desire. And the same may very well serve for my excuse, if at this time I came to be forborne in this your request, since any discourse, that I might make thus on the sudden in such a subject would be but simple, and little to your satisfactions. For it would require good aduisement and premeditation for any man to undertake the declaration of these points that you have proposed, containing in effect the Ethicke part of Morall Philosophie. Whereof since I have taken in hand to discourse at large in my poeme before spoken, I hope the expectation of that work may serve to free me at this time from speaking in that matter, notwithstanding your motion and all your intreaties. But I will tell you how I thinke by my selfe he may very well excuse my speech, and yet satisfie all you in this matter. I have seene (as he knoweth) a translation made by himselfe out of the Italian tongue of a dialogue comprehending all the Ethick part of Morall Philosophy, written by one of those three he formerly mentioned, and that is by *Giraldi* vnder the title of a dialogue of civil life. If it please him to bring us forth that translation to be here read among vs, or otherwise to deliver to us, as his memory may serue him, the contents of the same; he shal (I warrant you) satisfie you all at the ful, and himselfe wil haue no cause but to thinke the time well spent in renewing his labors, especially in the company of so many his friends, who may thereby reape much profit and the translation happily fare the better by some mending it may receive in the perusing, as all writings else may do by the often examination of the same. Neither let it trouble him that I so turne ouer to him againe the taske he wold haue put me to; for it falleth out fit for him to verifie the principall of all this Apologie. euen now made for himselfe; because thereby it will appeare that he hath not withdrawn himselfe from seruaice of the state to lye idle or wholly priuate to himselfe, but hath spent some time in doing that which may greatly benefit others and hath serued not a little to the bettering of his owne mind, and increasing of his knowledge, though he for modesty pretend much ignorance, and pleade want in wealth, much like some rich beggars, who either of custom, or for conuincions, go to begge of others those things whereof they haue no want at home. With this answer of *M. Spenser* it seemed that all the company were wel satisfied, for after some few speeches whereby they had shewed an extreme longinge after his worke of the *Faerie Queene*, whereof some parcels had been by some of them seene, they all began to presse me to produce my translation mentioned by *M. Spenser* that it might be perused among them; or else that I should (as near as I could) deliver unto them the contents of the same, supposing that my memory would not much faile me in a thing so studied and aduisedly set downe in writing as a translation must be.

Bryskett at length assents to Spenser's proposal, and proceeds to read his translation of *Giraldi*, which is in some sort criticised as he reads, Spenser proposing one or two questions 'arising principally,' as Todd says, 'from the discussion of the doctrines of Plato and Aristotle.' This invaluable picture of a scene in Spenser's Irish life shows manifestly in what high estimation his learning and genius were already held, and how, in spite of Harvey's sinister criticisms, he had resumed his great work. It tells us too that he found in Ireland a warmly appreciative friend, if indeed he had not known Bryskett before their going to Ireland. Bryskett too, perhaps, was acquainted with Sir Philip Sidney; for two of the elegies written on that famous knight's death and printed along with *Astrophel* in the elegiac collection made by Spenser were probably of Bryskett's composition, viz., *The Mourning Muse of Thestylus*, where 'Liffey's tumbling stream' is mentioned, and the one entitled *A Pastoral Elogue*, where Lycon offers to 'second' Colin's lament for Phillisides.

What is said of the *Faerie Queene* in the above quotation may be illustrated from the sonnet already quoted from, addressed to Lord Grey—one of the sonnets that in

our modern editions are prefixed to the great poem. It speaks of the great poem as

Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did weave
In savage soyle, far from Parnasso mount.

See also the sonnet addressed to the Right Honourable the Earl of Ormond and Ossory.

A sonnet addressed to Harvey, is dated 'Dublin this xvij of July, 1586.' Again, in the course of the decad now under consideration, Spenser received a grant of land in Cork—of 3,028 acres, out of the forfeited estates of the Earl of Desmond.

All these circumstances put together make it probable, and more than probable, that Spenser remained in Ireland after Lord Grey's recall. How thorough his familiarity with the country grew to be, appears from the work concerning it which he at last produced.

The years 1586–7–8 were eventful both for England and for Spenser. In the first Sidney expired of wounds received at Zutphen; in the second, Mary Queen of Scots was executed; in the third, God blew and scattered the Armada, and also Leicester died. Spenser weeps over Sidney—there was never, perhaps, more weeping, poetical and other, over any death than over that of Sidney—in his *Astrophel*, the poem above mentioned. This poem is scarcely worthy of the sad occasion—the flower of knight-hood cut down ere its prime, not yet

In flushing
When blighting was nearest.

Certainly it in no way expresses what Spenser undoubtedly felt when the woeful news came across the Channel to him in his Irish home. Probably his grief was 'too deep for tears.' It was probably one of those 'hugo cares' which, in Seneca's phrase, not 'loquuntur,' but 'stupent.' He would fain have been dumb and opened not his mouth; but the fashion of the time called upon him to speak. He was expected to bring his immortelle, so to say, and lay it on his hero's tomb, though his limbs would scarcely support him, and his hand, quivering with the agony of his heart, could with difficulty either weave it or carry it. All the six years they had been parted, the image of that chivalrous form had never been forgotten. It had served for the one model of all that was highest and noblest in his eyes. It had represented for him all true knighthood. Nor all the years that he lived after Sidney's death was it forgotten. It is often before him, as he writes his later poetry, and is greeted always with undying love and sorrow. Thus in the *Ruines of Time*, he breaks out in a sweet fervour of unextinguished affection:

Most gentle spirite breathed from above,
Out of the bosom of the Makers blis,
In whom all bountie and all vertuous love
Appeared in their native proprietis
And did enrich that noble breast of his
With treasure passing all this worldes worth,
Worthie of heaven it selfe, which brought it forth.

His blessed spirite, full of power divine
And influence of all celestiall grace,

Louthing this sunfull earth and earthlie slime,
Fled backe too soone unto his native place;
Too soone for all that did his love embrace,
Too soone for all this wretched world, whom he
Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

Yet ere his happie soule to heaven went
Out of this fleshie quole, he did devise
Unto his heavenlie Maker to present
His bodie as a spotles sacrifice,
And chose, that guiltie hands of enemies
Should powre forth th' offering of his guiltles blood,
So life exchanging for his countries good.

O noble spirite, live there ever blessed,
The world's late wonder, and the heaven's new ioy.
Live ever there, and leave me here distressed
With mortall cares and cumbrous worlds anoy;
But where thou dost that happiness enjoy,
Bid me, O bid me quicklie come to thee,
That happie there I maie thee alwaies see.

Yet whilst the Fates affoord me vitell breath,
I will it spend in speaking of thy praise,
And sung to thee untill that timelie death
By Heaven's doome doe ende my earthlie daies:
Thereto doe thou my humble spirite raise,
And mee me that sacred breath inspire
Which thou there breathest perfect and entire.

It is not quite certain in what part of Ireland the poet was living when the news that Sidney was not reached him. Was he still residing at Dublin, or had he transferred his home to that southern region which is so intimately associated with his name? The sonnet to Harvey above mentioned shows that he was at Dublin in July of the year of his friend's death. It has been said already that he did not resign his Chancery clerkship till 1588. We know that he was settled in Cork county, at Kilcolman castle, in 1589, because Raleigh visited him there that year. He may then have left Dublin in 1588 or 1589. According to Dr. Birch's *Life of Spenser*, prefixed to the edition of the *Faerie Queene* in 1751,* and the *Biographia Britannica*, the grant of land made him in Cork is dated June 27, 1580. But the grant, which is extant, is dated October 26, 1591. Yet certainly, as Dr. Grosart points out, in the 'Articles' for the 'Undertakers,' which received the royal assent on June 27, 1586, Spenser is set down for 3,028 acres; and that he was at Kilcolman before 1591 seems certain. As he resigned his clerkship in the Court of Chancery in 1588, and was then appointed, as we have seen, clerk of the Council of Munster, he probably went to live somewhere in the province of Munster that same year. He may have lived at Kilcolman before it and the surrounding grounds were secured to him; he may have entered upon possession on the strength of a promise of them, before the formal grant was issued. He has mentioned the scenery which environed his castle twice in his great poem;

* Dr. Birch refers in his note to *The Ancient and Present State of the County and City of Cork*, by Charles Smith, vol. i. book i. c. i. p. 58-63. Edit. Dublin 1750, 8vo. And Fieunes Moryson's *Itinerary*, part ii. p. 4.

but it is worth noticing that both mentions occur, not in the books published, as we shall now very soon see; in 1590, but in the books published six years afterwards. In the famous passage already referred to in the eleventh canto of the fourth book, describing the nuptials of the Thames and the Medway, he recounts in stanzas xl.-xliv. the Irish rivers who were present at that great river-gathering, and amongst them

Swift Awniduff which of the English man
Is cal'de Blacke-water, and the Liffar deep,
Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran,
Strong Allo tombing from Slewlogher steep,
And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught to weep.

The other mention occurs in the former of the two cantos *Of Mutability*. There the poet sings that the place appointed for the trial of the titles and best rights of both 'heavenly powers' and 'earthly wights' was

Upon the highest hights
Of Arlo-hill (who knowes not Arlo-hill ?)
That is the highest head (in all mens sights)
Of my old ffather Mole, who'n shepheards quill
Renowned hath with hymnes fit for a rural skill.

HIS poem called *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, written in 1591, and dedicated to Sir W. Raleigh 'from my house at Kilcolman the 27 of December, 1591' *—written therefore after a lengthy absence in England—exhibits a full familiarity with the country round about Kilcolman. On the whole then we may suppose that his residence at Kilcolman began not later than 1588. It was to be roughly and terribly ended ten years after.

We may suppose he was living there in peace and quiet, not perhaps undisturbed by growing murmurs of discontent, by signs of unrepressed and irrepressible hostility towards his nation, by ill-concealed sympathies with the Spanish invaders amongst the native population, when the Armada came and went. The old castle in which he lived had been one of the residences of the Earls of Desmond. It stood some two miles from Doneraile, on the north side of a lake which was fed by the river Awbeg or Mulla, as the poet christened it.

'Two miles north-west of Doneraile,' writes Charles Smith in his *Natural and Civil History of the County and City of Cork*, 1774, (i. 340, 341).—is Kilcoleman, a ruined castle of the Earls of Desmond, but more celebrated for being the residence of the immortal Spenser, when he composed his divine poem *The Faerie Queene*. The castle is now almost level with the ground, and was situated on the north side of a fine lake, in the midst of a vast plain, terminated to the east by the county of Waterford mountains; Bally-howra hills to the north, or, as Spenser terms them, the mountains of Mole, Nagle mountains to the south, and the mountains of Kerry to the west. It commanded a view of above half the breadth of Ireland; and must have been, when the adjacent uplands were wooded, a most pleasant and romantic situation; from whence, no doubt, Spenser drew several parts of the scenery of his poem.'

* Todd proposes to regard this date as a printer's error for 1595, quite unnecessarily.

Here, then, as in some cool sequestered vale of life, for some ten years, his visits to England excepted, lived Spenser still singing sweetly, still, as he might say, piping, with the woods answering him and his echo ringing. Sitting in the shade he would play many 'a pleasant fit;' he would sing

Some hymne or morall lair,
Or carol made to praise his loved lasse;

he would see in the rivers that flowed around his tower beings who lived and loved, and would sing of their mutual passions. It must have sounded strangely to hear the notes of his sweet voice welling forth from his old ruin—to hear music so subtle and refined issuing from that scarred and broken relic of past turbulencies—

The shepheard swaines that did about him play
with greddie listfull eares
Did stand astonisht at his curious skill
Like hartlesse deare, dismayed with thunders sound.

He presents a picture such as would have delighted his own fancy, though perhaps the actual experience may not have been unalloyed with pain. It is a picture which in many ways resembles that presented by one of a kindred type of genius, who has already been mentioned as of affinity with him—by Wordsworth. Wordsworth too sang in a certain sense from the shade, far away from the vanity of courts, and the uproar of cities; sang 'from a still place, remote from men;' sang, like his own Highland girl, all alone with the 'vale profound' 'overflowing with the sound;' finding, too, objects of friendship and love in the forms of nature which surrounded his tranquil home.

Of these two poets in their various lonelinesses one may perhaps quote those exquisite lines written by one of them of a somewhat differently caused isolation: each one of them too lacked

Not friends for simple glee,
Nor yet for higher sympathy.
To his side the fallow-deer
Came and rested without fear;
The eagle, lord of land and sea,
Stooped down to pay him fealty.

He knew the rocks which angels haunt
Upon the mountains vistant;
He hath kenned them taking wing;
And into caves where Faeries sing
He hath entered; and been told
By voices how men lived of old.

Here now and then he was visited, it may be supposed, by old friends. Perhaps that distinguished son of the University of Cambridge, Gabriel Harvey, may for a while have been his guest; he is introduced under his pastoral name of Hobbinol, as present at the poet's house on his return to Ireland. The most memorable of these visits was that already alluded to—that paid him in 1589 by Sir Walter Raleigh, with whom it will be remembered he had become acquainted some nine years before.

Raleigh, too, had received a grant from the same huge forfeited estate, a fragment of which had been given to Spenser. The granting of these, and other shares of the Desmond estates, formed part of a policy then vigorously entertained by the English Government—the colonising of the so lately disordered and still restless districts of Southern Ireland. The recipients were termed ‘undertakers;’ it was one of their duties to repair the ravages inflicted during the recent tumults and bring the lands committed to them into some state of cultivation and order.*

The wars had been followed by a famine. ‘Even in the history of Ireland,’ writes a recent biographer of Sir Walter Raleigh, ‘there are not many scenes more full of horror than those which the historians of that period rapidly sketch when showing us the condition of almost the whole province of Munster in the year 1584, and the years immediately succeeding.’*

The claims of his duties as an ‘undertaker,’ in addition perhaps to certain troubles at court, where his rival Essex was at this time somewhat superseding him in the royal favour,† and making a temporary absence not undesirable, brought Raleigh into Cork County in 1589. A full account of this visit and its important results is given us in *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, which gives us at the same time a charming picture of the poet’s life at Kilcolman. Colin himself, lately returned home from England, tells his brother shepherds, at their urgent request, of his ‘passed fortunes.’ He begins with Raleigh’s visit. One day, he tells them, as he sat

Under the foote of Mole, that mountaine bore,
Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade
Of the greene alders by the Mullacs shore,

a strange shepherd, who styled himself the Shepherd of the Ocean—

Whether allured with my pipes delight,
Whose pleasing sound yshrilled far about,
Or thither led by chance, I know not right—

found him out, and

Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit.

He sang, he tells us, a song of Mulla old father Mole’s daughter, and of another river called Bregog who loved her. Then his guest sang in turn:—

His song was all a lamentable lay
Of great unkindnesse and of usage hard,
Of Cynthia the ladie of the sea,
Which from her presence faultlesse him debard,
And ever and anon, with singulta rife,
He cryed out, to make his undersong:
Ah! my loves queene and goddesse of my life,
Who shall me pittie when thou doest me wrong?

* Mr. Edward Edwards, 1868, i. c. vi.; see also *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, vv. 312–319

† ‘My lord of Essex hath chased Mr. Raleigh from the court and confined him in Ireland.’—Letter, dated August 17, 1589, from Captain Francis Allen to Antony Bacon, Esq.—Quoted by Todd from Dr. Birch’s *Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth*.—See Mr. Edwards’s *Life of Raleigh*, i. c. viii.

After they had made an end of singing, the shepherd of the ocean

Gan to cast great lyking to my lore,
And great dislyking to my lucklesse lot
That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore,
Into that waste where I was quite forgot,

and presently perswaded him to accompany him 'his Cinthia to see'

It has been seen from one of Harvey's letters that the *Faerie Queene* was already begun in 1580; and from what Bryskett says, and what Spenser says himself in his sonnets to Lord Grey, and to Lord Ormond, that it was proceeded with after the poet had passed over to Ireland. By the close of the year 1589 at least three books were completely finished. Probably enough parts of other books had been written; but only three were entirely ready for publication. No doubt part of the conversation that passed between Spenser and Raleigh related to Spenser's work. It may be believed that what was finished was submitted to Raleigh's judgment, and certainly concluded that it elicited his warmest approval*. One great object that Spenser proposed to himself when he assented to Raleigh's persuasion to visit England, was the publication of the first three books of his *Faerie Queene*.

CHAPTER III.

1590.

Thus after an absence of about nine years, Spenser returned for a time to England; he returned 'bringing his sheaves with him.' Whatever shadow of misunderstanding had previously come between his introducer—or perhaps re-introducer—and her Majesty seems to have been speedily dissipated. Raleigh presented him to the Queen, who, it would appear, quickly recognised his merits. 'That goddess'

To mine oaten pipe enclin'd her care
That she thenceforth therein gan take delight,
And it desir'd at timely houres to heare
Al were my notes but rude and roughly dight.

In the Registers of the Stationers' Company for 1589 occurs the following entry, quoted here from Mr. Arber's invaluable edition of them:—

Primo Die Decembria.—Master Ponsonbye. Entered for his Copeye a booke intituled the fayre Queene, dysposed into xii bookes &c. Authorysed vnder thandes of the Archb. of Canterbury & bothe the Wardens, vjd.

* The letter of the author's prefixed to his poem 'expounding his whole intention in the course of this worke, which for that it giveth great light to the reader, for the better understanding is hereunto annexed,' addressed to 'Sir Walter Raleigh, Knight, Lord Wardein of the Stanneryes and her Maiesties liefetenaunt of the county of

* See Raleigh's line: entitled 'A Vision upon this Concept of the *Faery Queene*,' prefixed to the *Faerie Queene*.

Cornewayll,' is dated January 23, 1589—that is, 1590, according to the New Style. Shortly afterwards, in 1590, according to both Old and New Styles, was published by William Ponsonby 'THE FAIRIE QUEENE, Disposed into twelve books, Fashioning XII Morall vertues.' That day, which we spoke of as beginning to arise in 1579, now fully dawned. The silence of well nigh two centuries was now broken, not again to prevail, by mighty voices. During Spenser's absence in Ireland, William Shakspeare had come up from the country to London. The exact date of his advent it seems impossible to ascertain. Probably enough it was 1585; but it may have been a little later. We may, however, be fairly sure that by the time of Spenser's arrival in London in 1589, Shakspeare was already occupying a notable position in his profession as an actor; and what is more important, there can be little doubt he was already known not only as an actor, but as a play-writer. What he had already written was not comparable with what he was to write subsequently; but even those early dramas gave promise of splendid fruits to be thereafter yielded. In 1593 appeared *Venus and Adonis*; in the following year *Lucrece*; in 1595, Spenser's *Epithalamion*; in 1596, the second three books of the *Faerie Queene*; in 1597 *Romeo and Juliet*, *King Richard the Second*, and *King Richard the Third* were printed, and also Bacon's *Essays* and the first part of Hooker's *Ecclesiastical Polity*. During all these years various plays, of increasing power and beauty, were proceeding from Shakspeare's hands; by 1598 about half of his extant plays had certainly been composed. Early in 1599, he, who may be said to have ushered in this illustrious period, he whose radiance first dispersed the darkness and made the day begin to be, our poet Spenser, died. But the day did not die with him; it was then but approaching its noon, when he, one of its brightest suns, set. This day may be said to have fully broken in the year 1590, when the first instalment of the great work of Spenser's life made its appearance.

The three books were dedicated to the Queen. They were followed in the original edition—are preceded in later editions—first, by the letter to Raleigh above mentioned; then by six poetical pieces of a commendatory sort, written by friends of the poet—by Raleigh who writes two of the pieces, by Harvey who now praises and well-wishes the poem he had discountenanced some years before, by 'R. S.,' by 'H. B.,' by 'W. L. ;' lastly, by seventeen sonnets addressed by the poet to various illustrious personages; to Sir Christopher Hatton, to Lord Burghley, to the Earl of Essex, Lord Charles Howard, Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Buckhurst, Sir Francis Walsingham, Sir John Norris, Knight, lord president of Munster, Sir Walter Raleigh, the Countess of Pembroke, and others. The excellence of the poem was at once generally perceived and acknowledged. Spenser had already, as we have seen, gained great applause by his *Shepherdes Calendar*, published some ten years before the coming out of his greater work. During these ten years he had resided out of England, as has been seen; but it is not likely his reputation had been languishing during his absence. Webbe in his *Discourse of English Poetrie*, 1586, had contended 'that Spenser may well wear the garlande, and step before the best of all English poets.' The *Shepherdes Calendar* had been reprinted in 1581 and in 1586; probably enough, other works of his had been circulating in manuscript; the hopes of the country had been directed

towards him; he was known to be engaged in the composition of a great poem. No doubt he found himself famous when he reached England on the visit suggested by Raleigh; he found a most eager expectant audience; and when at last his *Faerie Queene* appeared, it was received with the utmost delight and admiration. He was spoken of in the same year with its appearance as the new laureate.* In the spring of the following year he received a pension from the crown of 50*l.* per annum. Probably, however, then, as in later days, the most ardent appreciators of Spenser were the men of the same craft with himself—the men who too, though in a different degree, or in a different kind, possessed the ‘vision and the faculty divine.’

This great estimation of the *Faerie Queene* was due not only to the intrinsic charms of the poem—to its exquisitely sweet melody, its intense pervading sense of beauty, its abundant fancifulness, its subtle spirituality—but also to the time of its appearance. For then nearly two centuries no great poem had been written in the English tongue. Chaucer had died heirless. Occleve's lament over that great spirit's decease had not been made without occasion:—

• Alas my worthie maister honorable
 This londis verray tresour and richesse
 Deth by thy dethe hathe harm irreperable
 Unto us done; hir vengeable duressse
 Dispolled hathe this londr of swetnesse
 Of Bethoryk fro us: to Tullius
 W^ls never man so like amonges us.†

And the doleful confession this orphaned rhymor makes for himself, might have been well made by all the men of his age in England:—

My dere mayster, God his soule quite,
 And fader Chaucer fayne would have me taught,
 But I was dull, and learned lyte or naught.

No worthy scholar had succeeded the great master. The fifteenth century in England had abounded in movements of profound social and political interest—in movements which eventually fertilised and enriched and ripened the mind of the nation; but, not unnaturally, the immediate literary results had been of no great value. In the reign of Henry VIII. the condition of literature, for various reasons, had greatly improved. Surrey and Wyatt had heralded the advent of a brighter era. From their time the poetical succession had never failed altogether. The most memorable name in our literature between their time and the *Faerie Queene* is that of Sackville, Lord Buckhurst—a name of note in the history of both our dramatic and non-dramatic poetry. Sackville was capable of something more than lyrical essays. He it was who designed the *Mirror for Magistrates*. To that poem, important as compared with the poetry of its day, for its more pretentious conception, he himself contributed the two best pieces that form part of it—the *Induction* and the *Complaint of Buckingham*. These pieces are marked by some beauties of the same sort as those which especially characterise Spenser; but they are but fragments; and in spirit

* Nash's *Supplication of Pierce Penniless*, 1592.

† Skeat's *Specimens of English Literature*, p. 14.

they belong to an age which happily passed away shortly after the accession of Queen Elizabeth—they are penetrated by that despondent tone which is so strikingly audible in our literature of the middle years of the sixteenth century, not surprisingly, if the general history of the time be considered. Meanwhile, our language had changed much, and Chaucer had grown almost unintelligible to the ordinary reader. Therefore, about the year 1590, the nation was practically without a great poem. At the same time, it then, if ever, truly needed one. Its power of appreciation had been quickened and refined by the study of the poetries of other countries; it had translated and perused the classical writers with enthusiasm; it had ardently pored over the poetical literature of Italy. Then its life had lately been ennobled by deeds of splendid courage crowned with as splendid success. In the year 1590, if ever, this country, in respect of its literary condition and in respect of its general high and noble excitement, was ready for the reception of a great poem.

Such a poem undoubtedly was the *Fairie Queene*, although it may perhaps be admitted that it was a work likely to win favour with the refined and cultured sections of the community rather than with the community at large. Strongly impressed on it as were the instant influences of the day, yet in many ways it was marked by a certain archaic character. It depicted a world—the world of chivalry and romance—which was departed; it drew its images, its forms of life, its scenery, its very language, from the past. Then the genius of our literature in the latter part of Queen Elizabeth's reign was emphatically dramatic; in the intense life of these years men longed for reality. Now the *Faerie Queene* is one long idealizing. These circumstances are to be accounted for partly by the character of Spenser's genius, partly by the fact already stated that chronologically Spenser is the earliest of the great spirits of his day. In truth he stands between two worlds: he belongs partly to the new time, partly to the old; he is the last of one age, he is the first of another; he stretches out one hand into the past to Chaucer, the other rests upon the shoulder of Milton.

CHAPTER IV.

1591-1599.

It is easy to imagine how intensely Spenser enjoyed his visit to London. It is uncertain to what extent that visit was prolonged. He dates the dedication of his *Colin Clouts Come Home Again* 'from my house at Kilcolman, the 27 of December, 1591.' On the other hand, the dedication of his *Daphnida* is dated 'London this first of Januarie 1591,' that is 1592 according to our new style. Evidently there is some mistake here. Prof. Craik 'suspects' that in the latter instance 'the date January 1591' is used in the modern meaning; he quotes nothing to justify such a suspicion; but it would seem to be correct. Todd and others have proposed to alter the '1591' in the former instance to 1595, the year in which *Colin Clouts Come Home Again* was published, and with which the allusions made in the poem to contemporary

writers agree; but this proposal is, as we shall see, scarcely tenable. The manner in which the publisher of the *Complaints*, 1591, of which publication we shall speak presently, introduces that work to the 'gentle reader,' seems to show that the poet was not at the time of the publishing easily accessible. He speaks of having endeavoured 'by all good meanes (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your delights) to get into my hands such small poems of the same authors, as I heard were disperst abroad in sundrie hands, and not easie to bee come by by himselfe; some of them having been diverslie imbeziled and purloyned from him since his departure ouer sea.' He says he understands Spenser 'wrote sundrie others' besides those now collected, 'besides some other Pamphlets looselie scattered abroad . . . which when I can either by myselfe or otherwise attaine too I meane likewise for your fauour sake to set fourth.' It may be supposed with much probability that Spenser returned to his Irish castle some time in 1591, in all likelihood after February, in which month he received the pension mentioned above, and on the other hand so as to have time to write the original draught of *Colin Clouts Come Home Again* before the close of December.

The reception of the *Faerie Queene* had been so favourable that in 1591—it would seem, as has been shown, after Spenser's departure—the publisher of that poem determined to put forth what other poems by the same hand he could gather together. The result was a volume entitled '*Complaints*, containing sundrie small Poemes of the Worlds Vanitie, whereof the next page maketh mention. By Ed. Sp.' 'The next page' contains 'a note of the Sundrie Poemes contained in this volume:'

1. The Ruines of Time.
2. The Teares of the Muses.
3. Virgils Gnat.
4. Proseropina or Mother Hubbards Tale.
5. The Ruines of Rome, by Bellay.
6. Munopotmos or The Tale of the Butterflie.
7. Visions of the Worlds Vantie.
8. Bellayes Visions.
9. Petrarches Visions.

In a short notice addressed to the Gentle Reader which follows—the notice just referred to—the publisher of the volume mentions other works by Spenser, and promises to publish them too 'when he can attain to' them. These works are *Eclesiastes*, *The Seven Psalmes*, and *Canticum Canticorum*—these three no doubt translations of parts of the Old Testament—*A Sennight Slumber*, *The State of Lovers*, the *Dying Pelican*—doubtless the work mentioned, as has been seen, in one of Spenser's letters to Harvey—*The Howers of the Lord*, and *The Sacrifice of a Sinner*. Many of these works had probably been passing from hand to hand in manuscript for many years. That old method of circulation survived the invention of the printing press for many generations. The perils of it may be illustrated from the fate of the works just mentioned. It would seem that the publisher never did attain to them; and they have all perished. With regard to the works which were printed and preserved, the *Ruines of Time*, as the Dedication shows, was written during Spenser's memorable visit of 1589–91 to England. It is in fact an elegy dedicated to the Countess of Pembroke, on the death of Sir Philip Sidney, 'that most brave Knight, your most

noble brother deceased.' 'Sithens my late cumming into England,' the poet writes in the Epistle Dedicatorie, 'some friends of mine (which might much prevaile with me and indeede commaund me) knowing with howe straight bandes of ductie I was tied to him; as also bound unto that noble house (of which the chiefe hope then rested in him) have sought to revive them by upbraiding me; for that I have not shewed anie thankfull remembrance towards him or any of them; but suffer their names to sleep in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieflie to satisfie, or els to avoide that fowle blot of unthankfulnesse, I have conceived this small Poeme, intituled by a generall name of the *Worlds Ruines*: yet speciallie intended to the renowning of that noble race from which both you and he sprong, and to the eternizing of some of the chiefe of them late deceased.' This poem is written in a tone that had been extremely frequent during Spenser's youth. Its text is that ancient one 'Vanity of Vanities - all is Vanity'—a very obvious text in all ages, but perhaps especially so, as has been hinted, in the sixteenth century, and one very frequently adopted at that time. This text is treated in a manner characteristic of the age. It is exemplified by a series of visions. The poet represents himself as seeing at Verulam an apparition of a woman weeping over the decay of that affluent town. This woman stands for the town itself. Of its whilome glories, she says, after a vain recounting of them,

They all are gone and all with them is gone,
Ne ought to me remaunes, but to lament
My long decay.

No one, she continues, weeps with her, no one remembers her,

Save one that naugre fortunes injurie
And times decay, and enies euell fort
Hath writ my record in true seeming sort.

Canklen the nouice of antiquitie,
And lantern into late succeeding age,
To see the light of simple vertue
Buried in ruines, through the great outrage
Of her owne people, led with warlike rage,
Canklen, though time all monuments obscure,
Yet thy just labours ever shall endure.

Then she rebukes herself for these selfish moanings by calling to mind how far from solitary she is in her desolation. She recalls to mind the great ones of the land who have lately fallen—Leicester, and Warwick, and Sidney—and wonders no longer at her own ruin. Is not *Transit Gloriarum* the lesson taught everywhere? Then other visions and emblems of instability are seen, some of them not darkly suggesting that what passes away from earth and apparently ends may perhaps be glorified elsewhere. The second of these collected poems—*The Tears of the Muses*—dedicated, as we have seen, to one of the poet's fair cousins, the Lady Strange, deploras the general intellectual condition of the time. It is doubtful whether Spenser fully conceived what a brilliant literary age was beginning about the year 1590. Perhaps his long absence in Ireland, the death of Sidney who was the great hope of England Spenser knew, the ecclesiastical controversies raging when he revisited England, may partly account

for his despondent tone with reference to literature. He introduces each Muse weeping for the neglect and contempt suffered by her respective province. He who describes these tears was himself destined to dry them; and Shakspeare, who, if anyone, was to make the faces of the Muses blithe and bright, was now rapidly approaching his prime. There can be little doubt that at a later time Spenser was acquainted with Shakspeare; for Spenser was an intimate friend of the Earl of Essex; Shakspeare was an intimate friend of the Earl of Southampton, who was one of the most attached friends of that Earl of Essex. And a personal acquaintance with Shakspeare may have been one of the most memorable events of Spenser's visit to London in 1589. We would gladly think that *Thalia* in the *Tears of the Muses* refers in the following passage to Shakspeare: the comic stage, she says, is degraded,

And he the man whom Nature selfe had made
To mock herselfe and Truth to imitate,
With kindly counter under Mimick shade,
Our pleasant Willy, ah! is dead of late;
With whom all joy and jolly meriment
Is also deuold and in dolour drent.

The context shows that by 'dead' is not meant physical death, but that

That same gentle spirit, from whose pen
Large streames of honnie and sweete nectar flowe,

produces nothing, sits idle-handed and silent, rather than pander to the grosser tastes of the day. But this view, attractive as it is, can perhaps hardly be maintained. Though the *Tears of the Muses* was not published, as we have seen, till 1591, it was probably written some years earlier, and so before the star of Shakspeare had arisen. Possibly by Willy is meant Sir Philip Sidney, a favourite haunt of whose was his sister's house at Wilton on the river Wiley or Willey, and who had exhibited some comic power in his masque, *The Lady of May*, acted before the Queen in 1578. Some scholars, however, take 'Willy' to denote John Lily. Thus the passage at present remains dark. If written in 1590, it certainly cannot mean Sidney, who had been dead some years; just possibly, but not probably, it might in that case mean Shakspeare.

Of the remaining works published in the *Complaints*, the only other one of recent composition is *Mucopotmus*, which, as Prof. Craik suggests, would seem to be an allegorical narrative of some matter recently transpired. It is dated 1590, but nothing is known of any earlier edition than that which appears in the *Complaints*. Of the other pieces by far the most interesting is *Proscopopora*, or *Mother Hubbards Tale*, not only because it is in it, as has been said, Spenser most carefully, though far from successfully, imitates his great master Chaucer, but for its intrinsic merit—for its easy style, its various incidents, its social pictures. In the dedication he speaks of it as 'These my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooued to set them forth.' However long before its publication the poem in the main was written, possibly some additions were made to it in or about the year 1590; as for instance, the well-known passage describing 'a suitor's state,' which reflects too clearly a bitter personal experience to have been composed before Spenser had grown so familiar with the Court as he became during his visit to England under

Raleigh's patronage. But it is conceivable that his experience in 1578 and 1579 inspired the lines in question.

The remaining pieces in the *Complaints* consist of translations or imitations, composed probably some years before, though probably in some cases, as has been shown, revised or altogether recast.

Probably in the same year with the *Complaints*—that is in 1591—was published *Daphnida*,* 'an Elegie upon the death of the noble and vertuous Douglas Howard, daughter and heire of Henry Lord Howard, Viscount Byndon, and wife of Arthur Georges, Esquire.' This elegy was no doubt written before Spenser returned to Ireland. It is marked by his characteristic diffuseness, abundance, melody.

Certainly before the close of the year 1591 Spenser found himself once more in his old castle of Kilcolman. A life at Court could never have suited him, however irksome at times his isolation in Ireland may have seemed. When his friends wondered at his returning unto

This barrein soyle,
Where cold and care and penury do dwell,
Here to keep sheepe with hunger and with toyle, •

he made answer that he,

Whose former dayes
Had in rude fields bene altogether spent,
Durst not adventure such unknown wayes,
Nor trust the guile of fortunes blandishment;
But rather chose back to my sheepe to tourne,
Whose utmost hardnesse I before had tryde,
Then, having leard repentance late, to mourne
Amongst those wretches which I there descryde.

That life, with all its intrigues and self-seekings and scandals, had no charms for him. Once more settled in his home, he wrote an account of his recent absence from it, which he entitled *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*. This poem was not published till 1596; but, whatever additions were subsequently made to it, there can be no doubt it was originally written immediately after his return to Ireland. Sitting in the quiet to which he was but now restored, he reviewed the splendid scenes he had lately witnessed; he recounted the famous wits he had met, and the fair ladies he had seen in the great London world; and dedicated this exquisite diary to the friend who had introduced him into that brilliant circle. It would seem that Raleigh had accused him of indolence. That ever-restless schemer could not appreciate the poet's dreaminess. 'That you may see,' writes Spenser, 'that I am not alwaies ydle as yee think, though not greatly well occupied, nor altogether undutifull, though not precisely officious, I make you present of this simple pastorall, unworthie of your higher conceipt for the meanesse of the stile, but agreeing with the truth in circumstance and matter. The which I humbly beseech you to accept in part of payment of the infinite debt in which I acknowledge myselfe bounden unto you for your singular favours and sundrie good turnes shewed to me at my late being in England, &c.'

The conclusion of this poem commemorates, as we have seen, Spenser's enduring

* This poem is in this volume reprinted from the edition of 1591. Mr. Morris thinks that Todd was not aware of this edition. Mr. Collier reprinted from the 2nd edition—that of 1596.

affection for that Rosalind who so many years before had turned away her ears from his suit. It must have been some twelve months after those lines were penned, that the writer conceived an ardent attachment for one Elizabeth. The active research of Dr. Grosart has discovered that this lady belonged to the Boyle family—a family already of importance and destined to be famous. The family seat was at Kilcoran, near Youghal, and so we understand Spenser's singing of 'The sea that neighbours to her near.' 'Thus she lived in the same county with her poet. The whole course of the wooing and the winning is portrayed in the *Amoretti* or *Sonnets*; and the *Epithalamium*. It may be gathered from these biographically and otherwise interesting pieces, that it was at the close of the year 1592 that the poet was made a captive of that beauty he so fondly describes. The first three sonnets would seem to have been written in that year. The fourth celebrates the beginning of the year 1593—the beginning according to our modern way of reckoning. All through that year 1593 the lover sighed, beseeched, adored, despaired, prayed again. Fifty-eight sonnets chronicle the various hopes and fears of that year. The object of his passion remained as steel and flint, while he wept and wailed and pleaded. His life was a long torment.

In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace
And doe myne humbled hart before her poure;
The whiles her foot she in my necke doth place
And tread my life downe in the lowly floure.

In Lent she is his 'sweet saynt,' and he vows to find some fit service for her.

Her temple sayre is built within my mind
In which her glorious image placed is.

But all his devotion profited nothing, and he thinks it were better 'at once to die.' He marvels at her cruelty. He cannot address himself to the further composition of his great poem. 'The accomplishment of that great work were

Sufficient worke for one man's simple head,
All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ.
How then should I, without another wit,
Thinke ever to endure so tedious toyle!
Sith that this one is test with troublesome
Of a proud love that doth my spirit spoyle.

He falls ill in his body too. When the anniversary of his being carried into captivity comes round, he declares, as has been already quoted, that the year just elapsed has appeared longer than all the forty years of his life that had preceded it (sonnet 60). In the beginning of the year 1594,

After long stormes and tempests sad assay
Which hardly I endured heretofore
In dread of death and dangerous dismay
With which my silly bark was tossed sore,

he did 'at length descry the happy shore.' The heart of his mistress softened towards him. The last twenty-five sonnets are for the most part the songs of a lover accepted and happy. It would seem that by this time he had completed three more books of the *Færie Queene*, and he asks leave in sonnet 70,

In pleasant mew
To sport my Muse and sing my loves sweet praise,
The contemplation of whose heavenly heav
My spirit to an higher pitch doth raise.

Probably the Sixth Book was concluded in the first part of the year 1594, just after his long wooing had been crowned with success. In the tenth canto of that book he introduces the lady of his love, and himself 'piping' unto her. In a rarely pleasant place on a fair wooded hill-top Calidore sees the Graces dancing, and Colin Clout piping merrily. With these goddesses is a fourth maid; it is to her alone that Colin pipes:—

Pype, jolly shepheard, pype thoi now apace
Unto thy love that made thee low to lout;
Thy love is present there with thee in place;
Thy love is there advaunst to be another Grace.

Of this fourth maid the poet, after sweetly praising the daughters of sky-ruling Jove, sings in this wise:—

Who can aread what creature mote she bee;
Whether a creature or a goddesse grace!
With heavenly gifts from heaven first enrac'd?
But what so sure she was, she worthy was
To be the fourth with those three other plac'd,
Yet was she certes but a countrey lasse;
Yet she all other countrey lasses farre did passe.

So farre, as doth the daughter of the day
All other lesser lights in light excell;
So farre doth she in beautyfull array
Above all other lasses beare the bell;
Ne lesse in vertue that besecms her well
Doth she exceede the rest of all her race.

The phrase 'country lass' in this rapturous passage has been taken to signify that she to whom it is applied was of mean origin; but it scarcely bears this construction. Probably all that is meant is that her family was not connected with the Court or the Court circle. She was not high-born; but she was not low-born. The final sonnets refer to some malicious reports circulating about him, and to some local separation between the sonneteer and his mistress. This separation was certainly ended in the June following his acceptance—that is, the June of 1594; for in that month, on St. Barnabas' day, that is, on the 11th, Spenser was married. This event Spenser celebrates in the finest, the most perfect of all his poems, in the most beautiful of all bridal songs—in his *Epithalamion*. He had many a time sung for others; he now bade the Muses crown their heads with garlands and help him his own love's praises to resound:—

So I unto my selfe alone will sing,
The woods shall to me answer, and my echo ring.

Then, with the sweetest melody and a refinement and grace incomparable, he sings with a most happy heart of various matters of the marriage day—of his love's waking, of the merry music of the minstrels, of her coming forth in all the pride of her visible

loveliness, of that 'inward beauty of her lively spright' which no eyes can see, of her standing before the altar, her sad eyes still fastened on the ground, of the bringing her home, of the rising of the evening star, and the fair face of the moon looking down on his bliss not unfavourably, as he would hope. The *Amoretti* and *Epithalamion* were registered at the Stationers' Hall on the 19th of November following the marriage. They were published in 1595, Spenser—as appears from the 'Dedication' of them to Sir Robert Needham, written by the printer Ponsonby—being still absent from England.

Meanwhile the poet had been vexed by other troubles besides those of a slowly requited passion. Mr. Hardiman,* in his *Irish Minstrelsy*, has published three petitions presented in 1593 to the Lord Chancellor of Ireland by Maurice, Lord Roche, Viscount Fermoy, two against 'one Edmond Spenser, gentleman,' one against one Joan Ny Callaghan—who is said to act 'by supportation, and maintenance of Edmond Spenser, gentleman, a heavy adversary unto your suppliant.' 'Where,' runs the first petition, 'one Edmond Spenser, gentleman, hath lately exhibited suit against your suppliant for three ploughlands, parcels of Shanballymore (your suppliant's inheritance) before the Vice-president and Council of Munster, which land hath been heretofore decreed for your suppliant against the said Spenser and others under whom he conveyed; and notwithstanding for that the said Spenser, being Clerk of the Council in the said province, and did assign his office unto one Nicholas Curteys among other agreements with covenant that during his life he should be free in the said office for his causes, by occasion of which immunity he doth multiply suits against your suppliant in the said province upon pretended title of others &c.' The third petition averred that 'Edmond Spenser of Kilcolman, gentleman, hath entered into three ploughlands, parcel of Ballingerath, and disseised your suppliant thereof, and continueth by countenance and greatness the possession thereof, and maketh great waste of the wood of the said land, and converteth a great deal of corn growing thereupon to his proper use, to the damage of the complainant of two hundred pounds sterling. Whereunto,' continues the document, which is preserved in the Original Rolls Office, 'the said Edmond Spenser appearing in person had several days prefixed unto him peremptorily to answer, which he neglected to do.' Therefore 'after a day of grace given,' on the 12th of February, 1594, Lord Roche was decreed the possession. Perhaps the absence from his lady love referred to in the concluding sonnets was occasioned by this litigation. Perhaps also the 'false forged lyes'—the malicious reports circulated about him—referred to in Sonnet 85, may have been connected with these appeals against him. It is clear that all his dreams of Faerie did not make him neglectful of his earthly estate. Like Shakspeare, like Scott, Spenser did not cease to be a man of the world—we use the phrase in no unkindly sense—because he was a poet. He was no mere visionary, helpless in the ordinary affairs of life. In the present case it would appear that he was even too keen in looking after his own interests. Professor Craik charitably suggests that his poverty 'rather than rapacity may be supposed to have urged whatever of hardness there was in his proceedings.' It is credible enough that these proceedings made him highly unpopular

* *Irish Minstrelsy; or, Bardic Remains of Ireland*, by J. Hardiman. London, 1831.

EDMUND SPENSER.

with the native inhabitants of the district, and that they were not forgotten when the day of reckoning came. 'His name,' says Mr. Hardiman, on the authority of *Trotter's Walks in Ireland*,* 'is still remembered in the vicinity of Kilcolman; but the people entertain no sentiments of respect or affection for his memory.'

In the same year with the *Amoretti* was published *Colin Clouts Come Home Again*, several additions having been made to the original version.

Probably at the close of this year 1595 Spenser a second time crossed to England, accompanied, it may be supposed, by his wife, carrying with him in manuscript the second three books of his *Fuerie Queene*, which, as we have seen, were completed before his marriage, and also a prose work, *A View of the Present State of Ireland*. Mr. Collier quotes the following entry from the Stationers' Register:—

20 die Januarii [1595].—Mr. Ponsenby. Entred &c. The Second Part of the *Fuerie Queene*, cont. the 4, 5, and 6 bookes, vj*d*.

This second instalment—which was to be the last—of his great poem was duly published in that year. The *View of the Present State of Ireland* was not registered till April 1598, and then only conditionally. It was not actually printed till 1633. During his stay in England he wrote the *Hymns to Heavenly Love and Heavenly Beauty*, and the *Prothalamion*, which were to be his last works.

More than four years had elapsed since Spenser had last visited London. During that period certain memorable works had been produced; the intellectual power of that day had expressed itself in no mean manner. When he arrived in London towards the close of the year 1595, he would find Shakspeare splendidly fulfilling the promise of his earlier days; he would find Ben Jonson just becoming known to fame; he would find Bacon already drawing to him the eyes of his time. Spenser probably spent the whole of the year 1596, and part of 1597, in England. In 1597 appeared, as has already been said, the first part of Hooker's *Ecclesiastical Polity*, and Bacon's *Essays*, and also Jonson's *Every Man in His Own Humour*.

The reigning favourite at this time was the Earl of Essex. In 1596 his successful descent upon Cadiz raised him to the zenith of his fame. With this nobleman Spenser was on terms of intimacy. At his London house in the Strand—a house which had previously been inhabited by Spenser's earlier patron, the Earl of Leicester—it stood where Essex Street now is, and is still represented by the two pillars which stand at the bottom of that street—Spenser no doubt renewed his friendship with Shakspeare. This intimacy with Essex, with whatever intellectual advantages it may have been attended, with whatever bright spirits it may have brought Spenser acquainted, probably impeded his prospects of preferment. There can be no doubt that one of the motives that brought him to England was a desire to advance his fortunes. Camden describes him as always poor. His distaste for his residence in Ireland could not but have been aggravated by his recent legal defeat. But he looked in vain for further preferment. He had fame, and to spare, and this was to suffice. It was during this sojourn in England that he spoke of himself, as we have seen, as one

* The name and occupation of Spenser is handed down traditionally among them (the Irish); but they seem to entertain no sentiments of respect or affection for his memory; the bard came in rather ungracious times, and the keen recollections of this untutored people are wonderful.—*Trotter's Walks through Ireland in the Years 1812, 1814, and 1817*. London, 1819, p. 302.

Whom sullen care
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay
In Princes court and expectation vayne
Of all hopes which still doe fly away
Like empty shaddows, did afflict my braine.

The publication of the second three books of the *Faerie Queene*, with a re-impression of the first three books, placed him on the highest pinnacle of fame. Its plentiful references to passing events—its adumbrations of the history of the time—however it might damage the permanent value of the work from an artistic point of view, increased its immediate popularity. How keenly these references were appreciated appears from the anxiety of the Scotch King to have the poet prosecuted for his picture of Duessa, in whom Mary Queen of Scots was generally recognised. Robert Bowes, the English ambassador in Scotland, writing to Lord Burghley from Edinburgh 12th November, 1596, states that great offence was conceived by the King against Edmund Spenser for publishing in print, in the second part of the *Faerie Queene*, ch. 9, some dishonourable effects, as the King deemed, against himself and his mother deceased. Mr. Bowes states that he had satisfied the King as to the privilege under which the book was published, yet he still desired that Edmund Spenser for this fault might be tried and punished. It further appears, from a letter from George Nicolson to Sir Robert Cecil, dated Edinburgh, 25 February, 1597-8, that Walter Quin, an Irishman, was answering Spenser's book, whereat the King was offended.*

The *View of the Present State of Ireland*, written dialogue-wise between Eudoxus and Irenæus, though not printed, as has been said, till 1633, seems to have enjoyed a considerable circulation in a manuscript form. There are manuscript copies of this tractate at Cambridge, at Dublin, at Lambeth, and in the British Museum. It is partly antiquarian, partly descriptive, partly political. It exhibits a profound sense of the unsatisfactory state of the country—a sense which was presently to be justified in a frightful manner. Spenser had not been deaf to the ever-growing murmurs of discontent by which he and his countrymen had been surrounded. He was not in advance of his time in the policy he advocates for the administration of Ireland. He was far from anticipating that policy of conciliation whose triumphant application it may perhaps be the signal honour of our own day to achieve. The measures he proposes are all of a vigorously repressive kind; they are such measures as belong to a military occupancy, not to a state-manly administration. He urges the stationing numerous garrisons; he is for the abolishing native customs. Such proposals won a not unfavourable hearing at that time. They have been admired many a time since.

It is to this work of Spenser's that Protector Cromwell alludes in a letter to his council in Ireland, in favour of William Spenser, grandson of Edmund Spenser, from whom an estate of lands in the barony of Fermoy, in the county of Cork, descended on him. 'His grandfather,' he writes, 'was that Spenser who, by his writings touching the reduction of the Irish to civility, brought on him the odium of that nation; and for those works and his other good services Queen Elizabeth conferred on him that estate which the said William Spenser now claims.'† This latter statement is

* Cooper's *Athen. Cantab.*

† See Mr. Edwards's *Life of Raleigh*, vol. i. p. 128.

evidently inaccurate. Spenser, as we have seen, had already held his estate for some years when he brought his *View* to England.

Spenser dates the dedication of his *Hymns* from Greenwich, September 1, 1596. Of these four hymns, two had been in circulation for some years, though now for the first time printed, the other two now first appeared. 'Having in the greener times of my youth,' he writes, 'composed these former two hymnes in the praise of love and beautie, and finding that the same too much pleased those of like age and disposition, which being too vehemently caried with that kind of affection do rather sucke out poyson to their strong passion than hony to their honest delight, I was moved by one of you two most excellent ladies [the ladies Margaret, Countess of Cumberland, Mary, Countess of Warwick] to call in the same; but unable so to doe, by reason that many copies thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to amend, and by way of retraction to reforme them, making (instead of those two hymnes of earthly or naturall love and beautie) two others of heavenly and celestially.' This passage is interesting for the illustration it furnishes of Spenser's popularity. It is also highly interesting, if the poems themselves be read in the light of it, as showing the sensitive purity of the poet's nature. It is difficult to conceive how those 'former hymns' should in any moral respect need amending. The moralising and corrective purpose with which the two latter were written perhaps diminished their poetical beauty; but the themes they celebrate are such as Spenser could not but ever descant upon with delight; they were such as were entirely congenial to his spirit. He here set forth certain special teachings of his great master Plato, and abandoned himself to the high spiritual contemplations he loved. But perhaps the finest of these four hymns is the second—that in honour of Beauty. Beauty was indeed the one worship of Spenser's life—not mere material beauty—not 'the goodly hew of white and red with which the cheekes are sprinkled,' or 'the sweete rosy leaves so fairly spread upon the lips,' or 'that golden wyre,' or 'those sparckling stars so bright,' but that inner spiritual beauty, of which fair hair and bright eyes are but external expressions.

So every spirite, as it is most pure
And hath in it the more of heavenly light,
So it the fairer bodie doth procure
To habite in, and it more fairly dight
With chearfull grace and amiable sight;
For of the soule the bodie forme doth take,
For soule is forme and doth the bodie make.

This hymn is one high refined rapture.

Before the close of the year 1596 Spenser wrote and published the *Prothalamion* or 'A spousall verse made in honour of the double marriage of the two honourable and vertuous ladies, the ladie Elizabeth, and the ladie Katherine Somerset, daughters to the right honourable the Earle of Worcester, and espoused to the two worthy gentlemen, M. Henry Gilford and M. William Peter Esquyers.' It was composed after the return of Essex from Spain, for he is introduced in the poem as then residing at his house in the Strand. It is a poem full of grace and beauty, and of matchless melodiousness.

This is the last complete poem Spenser wrote. No doubt he entertained the idea of completing his *Faerie Queene*; and perhaps it was after 1596 that he composed the two additional cantos, which are all, so far as is known, that he actually wrote. But the last poem completed and published in his lifetime was the *Prothalamion*.

This second visit to England at last came to an end. It was probably in 1597 that he returned once more to Kilcolman. In the following year he was recommended by her Majesty for Sheriff of Cork. But his residence in Ireland was now to be rudely terminated.

The Irish had, ever since the suppression of Desmond's rebellion in 1582, been but waiting for another opportunity to rise, that suppression not having brought pacification in its train. In the autumn of 1598 broke out another of these fearful insurrections, of which the history of English rule in Ireland is mainly composed.

In the September of that year Spenser was at the zenith of his prosperity. In that month arrived the letter recommending his appointment to be Sheriff of Cork. It seems legitimate to connect this mark of royal favour with the fact that at the beginning of the preceding month Lord Burghley had deceased. The great obstructor of the Queen's bounty was removed, and Spenser might hope that now, at last, the hour of his prosperity was come. So far as is known, his domestic life was serene and happy. The joys of the husband had been crowned with those of the father. Two sons, as may be gathered from the names given to them—they were christened Sylvanus and Peregrine—had been by this time born to him; according to Sir William Betham, who drew up a pedigree of Spenser's family, another son and a daughter had been born between the birth of Sylvanus and that of Peregrine. Then he was at this time the recognised prince of living poets. The early autumn of 1598 saw him in the culminating enjoyment of all these happinesses.

In October the insurgents burst roughly in upon his peace. No doubt his occupation of the old castle of Desmond had ever been regarded with fierce jealousy. While he had dreamed his dreams and sung his songs in the valley, there had been curses muttered against him from the hills around. At last the day of vengeance came. The outraged natives rushed down upon Kilcolman; the poet and his family barely made their escape; his home was plundered and burned. According to Ben Jonson, in the conversation with "Drummond, quoted above, not all his family escaped; one little child, new born, perished in the flames. But, indeed, the fearfulness of this event needs no exaggeration. In profound distress Spenser arrived once more in London, bearing a despatch from Sir Thomas Norreys, President of Munster, to the Secretary of State, and of course himself full of direct and precise information as to the Irish tumult, having also drawn up an address to the Queen on the subject. 'Probably, the hardships and horrors he had undergone completely prostrated him. On January 16, 1599, he died in Westminster. As to the exact place, a manuscript note found by Brand, the well-known antiquary, on the title-page of a copy of the second edition of the *Faerie Queene*, though not of indisputable value, may probably enough be accepted, and it names King Street. Ben Jonson says, 'he died for lack of bread;' but this must certainly be an exaggeration. No doubt he returned to England 'inops'—in a state of poverty—as Camden says; but it is impossible to believe that

he died of starvation. His friend Essex and many another were ready to minister to his necessities if he needed their ministry. Jonson's story is that he 'refused twenty pieces sent him by my lord Essex, and said he was sure he had no time to spend them.' This story, if it is anything more than a mere vulgar rumour, so far as it shows anything, shows that he was in no such very extreme need of succour. Had his destitution been so complete, he would have accepted the pieces for his family, even though 'he had no time to spend them himself.' It must be remembered that he was still in receipt of a pension from the crown; a pension of no very considerable amount, perhaps, but still large enough to satisfy the pangs of hunger. But numerous passages might be quoted to show that he died in somewhat straitened circumstances.

It was said, some thirty-four years after Spenser's death, that in his hurried flight from Ireland the remaining six books of the *Faerie Queene* were lost. But it is very unlikely that those books were ever completed.* Perhaps some fragments of them may have perished in the flames at Kilcolman—certainly only two cantos have reached us. These were first printed in 1611, when the first six books were republished. The general testimony of his contemporaries is that his song was broken off in the midst. Says Browne in his *Britannia's Pastorals* (Book ii. s. 1):—

' But ere he ended his melodious song,
An host of angels flew the clouds among,
And rapt this swan from his attentive mates
To make him one of their associates
In heaven's faire choir.

One S. A. Cokain writes:—

If, honour'd Colin, thou hadst lived so long
As to have finished thy Fairy song,
Not only mine but all tongues would confess,
Thou hadst exceeded old Mæonides.

He was buried near Chaucer—by his own wish, it is said—in Westminster Abbey, 'poetis funus ducentibus,' with poets following him to the grave—bearing the pall, as we might say—the Earl of Essex, furnishing the funeral expenses, according to Camden. It would seem from a passage in Browne's *Britannia's Pastorals* 'that the Queen ordered a monument to be erected over him, but that the money was otherwise appropriated by one of her agents.' The present monument, restored in 1778, was erected by Anne, Countess of Dorset, in 1620.

His widow married again before 1603, as we learn from a petition presented to the Lord Chancellor of Ireland in that year, in which Sylvanus sues to recover from her and her husband Roger Seckerstone certain documents relating to the paternal estate. She was again a widow in 1606. Till a very recent time there were descendants of Spenser living in the south of Ireland.

* No doubt he intended to complete his work. See book vi. canto v. st. 2:

' When time shall be to tell the same ;'

but this time never was.

THE FAERIE QVEENE.

DISPOSED INTO TWELVE BOOKS,

FASHIONING

XII. MORALL VERTUES.

TO
 THE MOST HIGH, MIGHTIE, AND MAGNIFICENT
 EMPRESSE,
 RENOWNED FOR PIETIE, VERTVE, AND ALL GRATIOUS GOVERNMENT,
 ELIZABETHII,
 BY THE GRACE OF GOD,
 Queene of England, France, and Ireland, and of Virginia.
 Defender of the Faith, &c.
 HER MOST HUMBLE SERVAVNT
 EDMVND SPENSER,
 DOTH, IN ALL HUMILITYE,
 DEDICATE, PRESENT, AND CONSECRATE
 THESE HIS LABOVS,
 TO LIVE WITH THE ETERNITIE OF HER NAME.¹

¹ In the first edition of 1590 the Dedication was as follows :—To the most Mightie and Magnificent Empresse Elizabeth, by the Grace of God Queene of England, France and Ireland Defender of the Faith &c

Her most humble Sernant :
 ED. SPENSER.

A LETTER OF THE AUTHORS,

EXPOUNDING HIS WHOLE INTENTION IN THE COURSE OF THIS WORKE: WHICH, FOR
THAT IT GIVETH GREAT LIGHT TO THE READER, FOR THE BETTER
UNDERSTANDING IS HEREUNTO ANNEXED.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND VALEROUS

SIR WALTER RALEIGH, KNIGHT,

LORD WARDEIN OF THE STANNERYES, AND HER MAJESTIES LIEFETENAUNT OF THE
COUNTY OF CORNEWAYLL.

Sir, knowing how doubtfully all Allegories may be construed, and this booke of mine, which I have entituled the Faery Queene, being a continued Allegory, or darke conceit, I have thought good, as well for avoyding of gredous opinions and misconstructions, as also for your better light in reading thereof, (being so by you commanded,) to discover unto you the general intention and meaning, which in the whole course thereof I have fashioned, without expressing of any particular purposes, or by accidents, therein occasioned. The generall end therefore of all the booke is to fashion a gentleman or noble person in vertuous and gentle discipline: Which for that I conceived should be most plausible and pleasing, being coloured with an historicall fiction, the which the most part of men delight to read, rather for variety of matter then for profite of the ensample, I chose the historye of King Arthure, as most fitt for the excellency of his person, being made famous by many mens former workes, and also furthest from the danger of envy, and suspicion of present time. In which I have followed all the antique Poets historicall; first Homere, who in the Persons of Agamemnon and Ulysses hath ensampled a good governour and a vertuous man, the one in his Ilias, the other in his Odysses: then Virgil, whose like intention was to doe in the person of Aeneas: after him Ariosto comprised them both in his Orlando. and lately Tasso dissevered them againe, and formed both parts in two persons, namely that part which they in Philosophy call Ethier, or vertues of a private man, coloured in his Rinaldo; the other named Politice in his Godfreddo. By ensample of which excellent Poets, I labour to pourtraict in Arthure, before he was king, the image of a brave knight, perfected in the twelve private morall vertues, as Aristotle hath devised; the

which is the purpose of these first two booke: which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encouraged to frame the other part of politicke vertues in his person, after that hee came to be king.

To some, I know, this Methode will seeme displeasurunt, which had rather have good discipline delivered plainly in way of precepts, or sermoned at large, as they use, then thus cloudily enwrapped in Allegoricall devises. But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the use of these dayes, seeing all things accounted by their shewes, and nothing esteemed of, that is not delightfull and pleasing to commune sence. For this cause is Xenophon preferred before Plato, for that the one, in the exquisite depth of his judgement, formed a Commune welth, such as it should be; but the other in the person of Cyrus, and the Persians, fashioned a government, such as might best be: So much more profitable and gratious is doctrine by ensample, then by rule. So have I laboured to doe in the person of Arthure: whome I conceive, after his long education by Timon, to whom he was by Merlin delivered to be brought up, so soone as he was borne of the Lady Igrayne, to have scene in a dream or vision the Faery Queen, with whose excellent beauty ravished, he awaking resolved to seeke her out; and so being by Merlin armed, and by Timon thoroughly instructed, he went to seeke her forth in Faery land. In that Faery Queene I meane glory in my generall intention, but in my particular I conceive the most excellent and glorious person of our soveraine the Queene, and her kingdom in Faery land. And yet, in some places els, I doe otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royall Queene or Emperesse, the other of a most vertuous and beautifull Lady, this latter

part in some places I doe expresse in Belphabe, fashioning her name according to your owne excellent concept of Cynthia, (Phaëbe und Cynthia being both names of Diana.) So in the person of Prince Arthur I sette forth magnificence in particular; which vertue, for that (according to Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest, and containeth in it them all, therefore in the whole course I mention the deedes of Arthur applyable to that vertue, which I write of in that booke. But of the xii. other vertues, I make xii. other knights the patrones, for the more variety of the history: Of which these three bookes contain three.

The first of the knight of the Redcrosse, in whome I expresse Holynes: The seconde of Sir Guyon, in whome I sette forth Temperance: The third of Britomartis, a Lady Knight, in whome I picture Chastity. But, because the beginning of the whole worke seemeth abrupte, and as depending upon other antecedents, it needs that ye know the occasion of these three knights severall adventures. For the Methode of a Poet historical is not such, as of an Historiographer. For an Historiographer discourseth of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions; but a Poet thrusteth into the midst, even where it most concerneth him, and there recurring to the thinges forepast, and divining of thinges to come, maketh a pleasing Analysis of all.

The beginning therefore of my history, if it were to be told by an Historiographer should be the twelfth booke, which is the last; where I devise that the Faery Queene kept her Annuall feaste xii. dayes; upon which xii. severall dayes, the occasions of the xii. severall adventures hapned, which, being undertaken by xii. severall knights, are in these xii. bookes severally handled and discoursed. The first was this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented him selfe a tall clownishe younge man, who falling before the Queene of Faries desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse; which was that hee might have the achievement of any adventure, which during that feaste should happen: that being granted, he rested him on the floore, unfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Soone after entred a feire Ladye in mourning weedes, riding on a white Asse, with a dwarfe behind her leading a warlike steed, that bore the Armes of a knight, and his speare in the dwarfs hand. Shee, falling before the Queene of Faries, complained that her futher and mother, an ancient King and Queene, had bene by an huge dragon many years shut up in a brwn Castle, who thence suffered them not to yassew; and therefore brought the

Faery Queene to assygne her some one of her knights to take on him that exploit. Presently that clownish person, upstarting, desired that adventure: whereat the Queene much wondering, and the Lady much gainesaying, yet he earnestly importuned his desire. In the end the Lady told him, that unless that armour which she brought, would serve him (that is, the armour of a Christian man specified by Saint Paul, vi. Ephes.) that he could not succeed in that enterprize; which being forthwith put upon him, with dewe furnitures thereunto, he seemed the goodliest man in al that company, and was well liked of the Lady. And estewones taking on him knighthood, and mounting on that strauunge Courser, he went forth with her on that adventure: where beginneth the first booke, viz.

A gentle knight was pricking on the playne, &c.

The second day ther came in a Palmer, bearing an Infant with bloody hands, whose Parents he complained to have bene slayn by an Enchaunteresse called Acrasia; and therefore craved of the Faery Queene, to appoint him some knight to performe that adventure; which being assigned to Sir Guyon, he presently went forth with that same Palmer: which is the beginning of the second booke, and the whole subject thereof. The third day there came in a Groom, who complained before the Faery Queene, that a vile Enchanter, called Busirane, had in haul a most faire Lady, called Amoretta, whom he kept in most grievous torment, because she would not yield him the pleasure of her body. Wherupon Sir Scudamour, the lover of that Lady, presently tooke on him that adventure. But being vnable to performe it by reason of the hard Enchantments, after long sorrow, in the end met with Britomartis, who succoured him, and rescued his loue.

But by occasion hereof many other adventures are intermeddled; but rather as Accidents then intendments: As the love of Britomart, the overthrow of Marinell, the misery of Florimell, the vertuousnes of Belphabe, the lasciuiousnes of Hellenora, and many the like.

Thus much, Sir, I have briefly overronne to direct your understanding to the wel-head of the History; that from thence gathering the whole intention of the conceit, ye may as in a handfull gripe al the discourse, which otherwise may happily seeme tedious and confused. So, humbly craving the continuance of your honorable favour towards me, and th' eternall establishment of your happines, I humbly take leave.

28. January 1589,

Yours most humbly affectionate,
Ed. Spenser.

VERSES ADDRESSED TO THE AUTHOR.

A Vision upon this concept of the Faery Queen.

Me thought I saw the grave where Laura lay,
Within that Temple where the vestall flame
Was wont to burne; and passing by that way
To see that buried dust of living fame,
Whose tumber faire love, and faire vertue kept,
All suddenly I saw the Faery Queene:
At whose approach the soule of Petrarche wept,
And from thenceforth those graces were not seene;
For they this Queene attended, in whose steed
Oblivion laid him downe on Lauras herse.
Hereat the hardest stones were seene to bleed,
And grones of buried ghosets the heavens did perse:
Where Homers spright did tremble all for grieve,
And curst th' access of that celestiall theife.

Another of the same.

The prayce of meaner wits this worke like profit
brings, [sings.
As doth the Cuckoes song delight when Philumena
If thou hast formed right true vertues face herein,
Vertue her selfe can best discerne to whom they
written bin. [divine
If thou hast beauty prayd, let her sole lookes
Judge if ought therein be amis, and mend it by
her cline.

If Chastitie want ought, or Temperance her dew,
Behold her Princely mind aright, and write thy
Queene anew.

Meane while she shall perceive, how far her vertues
sore [of yore:
Above the reach of all that live, or such as wrote
And thereby will excuse and favour thy good will;
Whose vertue can not be exprest, but by an Angels
quill.

Of me no lines are lov'd, nor letters are of price,
Of all which speak our English tongue, but those
of thy device.

W. R.

To the learned Shepheard.

Collyn, I see, by thy new taken taske,
Some sacred fury hath enricht thy braynes,
That leades thy muse in haughty verse to maske,
And loath the layes that longs to lowly waynes;
That lifts thy notes from Shepherdes unto kinges:
So like the lively Larks that mounting singes.

Thy lovely Rosolinde seemes now forlorne,
And all thy gentle flockes forgotten night:
Thy chaunged hart now holdes thy pypes in scorne,
Those prety pypes that did thy mates delight;
Those trusty mates, that loved thee so well;
Whom thou gav'st mirth, as they gave thee the bell.

Yet, as thou earst with thy sweete roundelays
Didst stirre to glee our laddes in homely bowers;
So moughtst thou now in these refyned layes
Delight the daintie eares of higher powers:
And so mought they, in their deepe skanning skill,
Allow and grace our Collyns flowing quyll.

And faire befall that *Faery Queene* of thine,
In whose faire eyes love linckt with vertue sittes:
Enfusing, by those bewties fyres devyne,
Such high conceites into thy humble wittes,
As raised hath poore pastors oaten reedes
From rustick tunes, to chaunt heroique deedes.

So mought thy *Redcrosse knight* with happy hand
Victorious be in that faire llands right,
Which thou dost vayne in Type of Faery land,
Elizas blessed field, that *Abnon* hight: [foes,
That shieldes her friendes, and warres her mightie
Yet still with people, peace, and plentie flows.

But (jolly shepheard) though with pleasing style
Thou feast the humour of the Courtly trayne,
Let not conceipt thy settled sence beguile,
Ne daunted be through envy or disdain.
Subject thy dome to her Empyring spright, [light.
From whence thy Muse, and all the world, takes
HOBYNOLL.

Fayre Thamis streame, that from Ludds stately
towne

Runst paying tribute to the Ocean seas,
Let all thy Nymphes and Syrens of renowne
Be silent, while this Bryttane Orpheus plays.
Nere thy sweet bankes there lives that sacred
croune,

Whose hand strowes Palme and never-dying bayes:
Let all at once, with thy soft murmuring sowne,
Present her with this worthy Poets prayes;
For he hath taught hye drifts in shepherdes weedes,
And deepe conceites now singes in *Faeries* deedes.

R. S.

Grave Muses, march in triumph and with prayes; What though his taske exceed a humane witt,
Our Goddesses here hath given you leave to land; He is excus'd, sith Sldrey thought it fitt.

W. L.

And hides this rare dispenser of your graces
Bow downe his brow unto her sacred hand.
Deserte findes dew in that most princely doome,
In whose sweete brest are all the Muses bredde:
So did that great Augustus erst in Roome
With leaves of fame adorne his Poets hedde.
Faire be the guerdon of your *Faery Queene*,
Even of the fairest that the world hath seene!

H. B.

When stout Achilles heard of Helens rape,
And what revenge the States of Greece devisd,
Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape,
In womans weedes him selfe he then disguis'd;
But this devise Ulysses soone did spy,
And brought him forth the chauce of warre to try.

When Spencer saw the fame was spreadd so large,
Through Faery land, of their renowned Queene,
Loth that his Muse should take so great a charge,
As in such haughty matter to be seene,
To seeme a shepheheard then he made his choice;
But Sydney heard him sing, and knew his voice.

And as Ulysses brought faire Thetis sonne
From his retyred life to menage armes,
So Spencer was by Sidney's speeches wonne
To blaze her fame, not fearing future harmes;
For well he knew, his Muse would soone be tyred
In her high praise, that all the world admired.

Yet as Achilles, in those warlike frayes,
Did win the palme from all the Grecian Peeres,
So Spencer now, to his immortall prayse,
Hath wonne the Laurell quite from all his feres.

To looke upon a worke of rare devise
The which a workman setteth out to view,
And not to yield it the deserved prise
That unto such a workmanship is dew,
Doth either prove the judgement to be naught,
Or els doth shew a mind with envy fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke,
Which no man goes about to discommend,
Would raise a jealous doubt, that there did lurke
Some secret doubt whereto the prayse did tend;
For when men know the goodnes of the wyne,
'Tis needlesse for the hoast to have a sygne.

Thus then, to shew my judgement to be such
As can discerne of colours blacke and white,
As all to free my minde from envies tuch,
That never gives to any man his right,
I here pronounce this workmanship is such
As that no pen can set it forth too much.

And thus I hang a garland at the dore;
Not for to shew the goodness of the ware;
But such hath bene the custome heretofore,
And customes very hardly broken are;
And when your tast shall tell you this is trew,
Then looke you give your hoast his utmost dew.

IGNOTO.



VERSES

ADDRESSED, BY THE AUTHOR OF THE FAERIE QUEENE, TO VARIOUS NOBLEMEN, &c.

To the Right honourable Sir Christopher Hatton, Lord high Chauncelor of England, &c.

THOSE prudent heads, that with their counsels
wise

Whylom the pillours of th' earth did sustaine,
And taught ambitious Rome to tyrannise
And in the neck of all the world to rayne,
Oft from those grave affaires were wont ab-
staine,

With the sweet Lady Muses for to play:
So Ennius the elder Africane,
So Maro oft did Casars cares allay. [sway
So you, great Lord, that with your counsell
The burdeine of this kingdom mightily,
With like delightes sometimes may eke delay
The rugged brow of carefull Policy,
And to these ydle rymes lend litle space,
Which for their titles sake may find more grace.

To the most honourable and excellent Lord the Earle of Essex. Great Maister of the Horse to her Highnesse, and knight of the Noble order of the Garter, &c.

Magnifick Lord, whose vertues excellent,
Doe merit a most famous Poets witt
To be thy living praises instrument,
Yet doe not sdeigne to let thy name be writt
In this base Poeme, for thee far unfitt:
Nought is thy worth disparaged thereby;
But when my Muse, whose fethers, nothing
flitt,

Doe yet but flagg, and lowly learne to fly,
With bolder wing shall dare alofte to sty
To the last praises of this Faery Queene;
Then shall it make more famous memory
Of thine Heroicke parts, such as they beene:
Till then, vouchsafe thy noble countenance
To these first labours needed furtheraunce.

To the Right Honourable the Earle of Oxford, Lord high Chamberlayne of England, &c.

Receive, most Noble Lord, in gentle gree,
The unripe fruit of an unready wit;
Which by thy countenance doth crave to
bee

Defended from soule Envies poisonous bit.
Which so to doe may thee right well besit,
Sith th' antique glory of thine auncestry
Under a shady vele is therein writ,
And eke thine owne long living memory,
Succeeding them in true nobility:
And also for the love which thou doest beare
To th' Heliconian ymps, and they to thee;
They unto thee, and thou to them, most
deare:

Deare as thou art unto thy selfe, so love
That loves and honours thee, as doth behove.

To the right honourable the Earle of Northumberland.

The sacred Muses have made alwaies clame
To be the Nourses of nobility,
And Registres of everlasting fame.
To all that armes professe and chevalry.
Then, by like right the noble Progeny,
Which them succeed in fame and worth, are
tyde

T' embrace the service of sweete Poetry,
By whose endeavours they are glorified;
And eke from all, of whom it is envide,
To patronize the authour of their praise,
Which gives them life, that els would soone
have dide,
And crownes their ashes with immortal baies.
To thee, therefore, right noble Lord, I send
This present of my paines, it to defend.

*To the right Honourable the Earle of
Ormond and Ossory.*

Receive, most noble Lord, a simple taste
Of the wilde fruit which salvage soyl hath
bred;
Which, being through long wars left almost
With brutish barbarisme is overspredd:
And, in so faire a land as may be redd,
Not one Parnassus nor one Helicone,
Left for sweete Muses to be harboured,
But where my selfe hast thy brave man-
sione:
There, in deede, dwel faire Graces many one,
And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned
And in thy person, without paragone, [wits;
All goodly bountie and true honour sits.
Such, therefore, as that wasted soyl doth yield,
Receive, dear Lord, in worth, the fruit of bar-
ren field.

*To the right honourable the Lord Ch. Howard,
Lord high Admiral of England, knight of
the noble order of the Garter, and one of
her Majesties privie Counsel, &c.*

And ye, brave Lord, whose goodly personage
And noble deeds, each other garnishing,
Take you ensample to the present age
Of th' old Heroes, whose famous offspring
The antique Poets wont so much to sing;
In this same Pageaunt have a worthy place,
Sith those huge castles of Castilian King,
That vainly threatned kingdomes to displace,
Like flying doves ye did before you chace;
And that proud people, woxen insolent
Through many victories, didst first deface:
Thy praises everlasting monument
Is in this verse engraven semblably,
That it may live to all posterity.

*To the most renowned and valiant Lord, the
Lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the Noble
order of the Garter, &c.*

Most Noble Lord, the pillar of my life,
And Patrone of my Muses pupillage;
Through whose large bountie, poured on me
In the first season of my feeble age, [rise
I now doe live, bound yours by vassalage;
Sith nothing ever may redeeme, nor reave
Of your endless debt, so sure a gage,
Vouchsafe in worth this small gift to re-
ceive,
Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave
Of all the rest that I am tyde to account:
Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did
weave
In savadge soyle, far from Parnasso Mount,

And roughly wrought in an unlearned Looome:
The which vouchsafe, dear Lord, your favorable
doome.

*To the right noble and valorous knight,
Sir Walter Rabbigh, Lord Wardein of the
Stanneryes, and lieftenaunt of Cornewail.*

To thee, that art the sommers Nightingale,
Thy soveraine Goddesses most deare delight,
Why doe I send this rusticke Madrigale,
That may thy tunefull care unseason quite?
Thou onely fit this Argument to write,
In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath built
her bowre,
And dainty love learn'd sweetly to endite.
My rimes I know unsavory and sowre,
To tast the streames that, like a golden shrowe,
Flow from thy fruitfull head, of thy love's
praise;
Fitter, perhaps, to thunder Martiall stowre,
When so thee list thy lofty Muse to raise:
Yet, till that thou thy Poeme wilt make knowne,
Let thy faire Cinthias praises be thus rudely
showne.

*To the right honourable the Lord Burleigh,
Lord high Treasurer of England.*

To you, right noble Lord, whose carefull brest
To menage of most grave affaires is bent;
And on whose mightie shoulders most doth
rest
The burdein of this kingdomes government,
As the wide compasse of the firmament
On Atlas mighty shoulders is upstayd,
Unfitly I these ydle rimes present,
The labor of lost time, and wit unstayd:
Yet if their deeper seuce be inly wayd,
And the dim veile, with which from com-
mune vew
Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd,
Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to you.
Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receive,
And wipe their faults out of your censure grave.
E. S.

*To the right honourable the Earle of Cum-
berland.*

Redoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind
The flowre of chevalry, now blooming faire,
Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kind
Which of their praises have left you the
haire;
To you this humble present I prepare,
For love of vertue and of Martiall praise;
To which though nobly ye inclined are,
As goodlie well ye shew'd in late assaies,

Yet brave ensample of long passed daies,
In which trew honor ye may fashioned see,
To like desire of honor may ye raise,
And fill your mind with magnanimitee.
Receive it, Lord, therefore, as it was ment,
For honor of your name and high descent.

E. S.

To the right honourable the Lord of Hunsdon, high Chamberlaine to her Majesty.

Renowned Lord, that, for your worthinesse
And noble deeds, have your deserved place
High in the favour of that Emperesse,
The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace:
Here eke of right have you a worthy place,
Both for your nearnes to that Faerie Queene
And for your owne high merit in like case:
Of which, apparaunt proofe was to be scene,
When that tumultuous rage and fearfull deene
Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify,
And their disloiall powre defaced clene,
The record of enduring memory.
Live, Lord, for ever in thus lasting verse,
That all posteritie thy honor may reliefe.

E. S.

To the right honourable the Lord of Buckhurst, one of her Majesties privie Counsell.

In vain I thinke, right honourable Lord,
By this rude rime to memorize thy name,
Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne record
In golden verse, worthy immortal fame:
Thou much more fit (were leasure to the same)
Thy gracious Soverains praises to compile,
And her imperiall Majestie to frame
In loftie numbers and heroicke stile.
But, sith thou maist not so, give leave a while
To baser wit his power therein to spend,
Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may
And unadvised oversights amend. [file,
But evermore vouchsafe it to maintaine
Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

To the right honourable Sir Fr. Walsingham, knight, principall Secretary to her Majesty, and one of her honourable privy Counsell.

That Mantuane Poetes incompared spirit,
Whose girland now is set in highest place,
Had not Mecenas, for his worthy merit,
It first advaunst to great Augustus grace,
Might long perhaps have lien in silence bace,
Nebene so much admir'd of later age. [trace,
This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to
Flies for like aide unto your Patronage,

That are the great Mecenas of this age,
As wel to al that civil artes professe,
As those that are inspir'd with Martiall rage,
And craves protection of her feeblennesse:
Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse
In bigger tunes to sound your living prayse.

E. S.

To the right noble Lord and most valiaunt Captaine, Sir John Norris, knight, Lord president of Mounster.

Who ever gave more honourable prize
To the sweet Muse then did the Martiall crew,
That their brave deeds she might immortalize
In her shrill tromp, and sound their praises-
dew?

Who then ought more to favour her then you,
Moste noble Lord, the honor of this age,
And Precedent of all that armes ensue?
Whose warlike provesse and manly courage,
Tempred with reason and advizement sage,
Hath fild sad Belgicke with victorious spoile;
In Fraunce and Ireland left a famous gage;
And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile. [fame,
Sith, then, each where thou hast dispredd thy
Love him that hath eternized your name.

E. S.

To the right honourable and most vertuous Lady the Countesse of Penbrooke.

Remembraunce of that most Heroicke spirit,
The hevens pride, the glory of our daies,
Which now triumpheth, through immortall merit
Of his brave vertues, crownd with lasting
Of hevenlie blis and everlasting praies; [baies
Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore,
To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies;
Bids me, most noble Lady, to adore
His goodly image, living evermore
In the divine resemblance of your face;
Which with your vertues ye embellish more,
And native beauty deck with hevenlie
grace:

For his, and for your owne especial sake,
Vouchsafe from him this token in good worth
to take.

E. S.

To the most vertuous and beautifull Lady, the Lady Carew.

Ne may I, without blot of endlesse blame,
You, fairest Lady, leave out of this place;
But with remembraunce of your gracious
name, [grnce
Wherewith that courtly garland most ye

And deck the world, adorne these verses base.
Not that these few lines can in them com-
prise

Those glorious ornaments of hevenly grace,
Wherewith ye triumph over feeble eyes,
And in subdued harts do tyranyse;

For thereunto doth need a golden quill,
And silver leaves, them rightly to devise;

But to make humble present of good will:
Which, whenas timely meanes it purchase may,
In ampler wise it selle will forth display

E. S.

*To all the gracious and beautifull Ladies in
the Court.*

The Chian Peincter. when he was requirde
To pourtraict Venus in her perfect hew,

To make his worke more absolute, desird
Of all the fairest Maides to have the vew.
Much more me needs, to draw the semblant
trew

Of beauties Queene, the worlds sole wonder-
ment,

To sharpe my seife with sundry beauties vew,
And steale from each some part of ornament.

If all the world to seeke I cverwent,
A fairer crew yet no where could I see

Then that brave court coth to mine eie
present,

That the worlds pride seemes gathered there
Of each a part I stole by cunning theft:

Forgive it me, faire Dames, sith lesse ye have
not left.

E. S

THE FIRST BOOK
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE, OR OF HOLINESSE.

<p>Lo! I, the man whose Muse whylome did maske, As time her taught, in lowly Shephards weeds, Am now enforst, a farre unfitter taske, For trumpets sterne to chaunge mine Oaten reeds, And sing of Knights and Ladies gentle deeds; Whose praises having slept in silence long, Me, all too meane, the sacred Muse arreeds To blazon broade emongst her learned throng: Fierce warres and faithful loves shall moralize my song.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">II</p> <p>Helpe then, O holy virgin! chiefe of nync, Thy weaker Novice to perlorne thy will; Lay forth out of thine everlasting seryne The antique rolles, which there lye hidden still, Of Faerie knights, and fayrest Tanaquill, Whom that most noble Britton Prince so long Sought through the world, and suffered so much ill, That I must rue his undeserved wrong: O, helpe thou my weake wit, and sharpen my dull tong!</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">III</p> <p>And thou, most dreaded mape of highest Jove, Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell dart At that good knight so cunningly didst rove, That glorious fire it kindled in his hart; Lay now thy deadly Heben bowe apart, And with thy mother mylde come to mine ayde; [Mart, Come, both; and with you bring triumphant In loves and gentle jollities arraid, [allayd. After his murderous spoyles and bloudie rage</p> <p style="text-align: center;">IV</p> <p>And with them eke. O Goddesse heavenly Mirrour of grace and Majestic divine, [bright! Great Ladie of the greatest Isle, whose light Like Phœbus lampe throughout the world doth shine, Shed thy faire beames into my feeble eyne, And raise my thoughtes, too humble and too vile, To thinke of that true glorious type of thine, The argument of mine afflicted stile: The which to heare vouchsafe, O dearest dread, a-while!</p>
--	--

CANTO I.

The Patrone of true Holnesse
Foule Errour doth defeate:
Hypocrisie, him to entrappe,
Doth to his home entreate.

<p style="text-align: center;">I</p> <p>A GENTLE Knight was pricking on the plaine, ycladd in mightie armes and silver shielde, Wherein old dints of deepe woundes did re- maine, The cruell markes of many a bloody field;</p>	<p>Yet armes till that time did he never wield. His angry steede did chide his foming bitt, As much disdayning to the curbe to yield: Full jolly knight he seemd, and faire did sitt, As one for knightly giusts and fierce encounters fitt.</p>
---	--

II

And on his brest a bloodie Crosse he bore,
The deare remembrance of his dying Lord,
For whose sweete sake that glorious badge he
And dead, as living, ever him ador'd: [wore,
Upon his shield the like was also scor'd,
For soveraine hope which in his helpe he had.
Right faithfull true he was, in deepe and word,
But of his cheere did seeme too solemne sad;
Yet nothing did he dread, but ever was ydrad.

III

Upon a great adventure he was bond,
That greatest Gloriana to him gave,
(That greatest Glorious Queene of Faery lond)
To winne him worshippe, and her grace to have,
Which of all earthly things he most did crave:
And ever as he rode his hart did earne
To prove his puissance in battell brave
Upon his foe, and his new force to learne,
Upon his foe, a Dragon horrible and stearne.

IV

A lovely Ladie rode him faire beside,
Upon a lowly Asse more white then snow,
Yet she much whiter; but the same did hide
Under a velle, that wimpled was full low;
And over all a blacke stole shee did throw:
As one that inly mournd, so was she sad,
And heave sate upon her palfrey slow;
Seemed in heart some hidden care she had,
And by her, in a line, a milkewhite lambe shee
lad.

V

So pure and innocent, as that same lambe,
She was in life and every vertuous lore;
And by descent from Royall lynage came
Of ancient Kinges and Queenes, that had of
yore
Their scepters stretcht from East to Westerne
shore.
And all the world in their subjection held;
Till that infernall feend with foule upore
Forwasted all their land, and them expeld;
Whom to avenge she had this Knight from far
compeld.

VI

Behind her farre away a Dwarfie did lag,
That lasie seemd, in being ever last,
Or wearied with bearing of her bag
Of needments at his backe. Thus as they past,
The day with cloudes was suddene overcast,
And angry Jove an hideous storme of raine
Did poure into his Lemans lap so fast,
That everie wight to shrowd it did constrain;
And this faire couple eke to shroud themselves
were fain.

VII

Enforst to seeke some covert nigh at hand,
A shadie grove not farr away they spide,
That promist ayde the tempest to withstand;
Whose loftie trees, yclad with sommers pride,
Did spred so broad, that heavens light did hide,
Not perceable with power of any starr:
And all within were pathes and alleies wide,
With footing worne, and leading inward farr.
Faire harbour that them seems, so in they
entred at

VIII

And fourth they passe, with pleasurè forward
led,
Joying to heare the birdes sweete harmony,
Which, therein shrouded from the tempest dred,
Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky.
Much can they praise the trees so straight and
hy,
The sayling Pine; the Cedar proud and tall;
The vine-propp Elme; the Poplar never dry,
The builder Oake, sole king of Forrests all;
The Aspine good for staves; the Cypressse
funerall;

IX

The Laurell, meed of mightie Conquerours
And Poets sage; the Firre that weepeth still:
The Willow, worne of forlorne Paramours;
The Eugh, obedient to the benders will;
The Birch for shaftes; the Sallow for the mill;
The Mirrhe sweete-bleeding in the bitter wound;
The warlike Beech; the Ash for nothing ill;
The fruitfull Olive; and the Platane round;
The carver Holme; the Maple sceldom inward
sound.

X

Led with delight, they thus beguile the way,
Untill the blustering storme is overblowne;
When, weening to returne whence they did
stray, [showne,
They cannot finde that path, which first was
But wander too and fro in waies unknowne,
Furthest from end then, when they nearest
weene, [owne:
That makes them doubt their wits be not their
So many pathes, so many turnings seene,
That which of them to take in diverse doubt
they been.

XI

At last resolving forward still to fare,
Till that some end they finde, or in or out,
That path they take that beaten seemd most
And like to lead the labyrinth about; [bare,
Which when by tract they hunted had through-
out,
At length it brought them to a hollowe cave
Amid the thickest woods. The Champion stout

Eftsoones dismounted from his courser brave,
And to the Dwarfie a while his needlesse spere
he gave.

XII

'Be well aware,' quoth then that Ladie milde,
'Least suddaine mischiefe ye too rash provoke:
The danger hid, the place unknowne and wilde,
Breedes dreadfull doubts. Oft fire is without
smoke,
And perill without show: therefore your stroke,
Sir Knight, with-hold, till furthor tryall made.'
'Ah Ladie,' (sayd he) 'shame were to revoke
The forward footing for an hidden shade:
Vertue gives her selfe light through darknesse
for to wade.'

XIII

'Yea but' (quoth she) 'the perill of this place
I better wot then you: though nowe too late
To wish you backe returne with foule disgrace,
Yet wisdomes warnes, whilst foot is in the gate,
To stay the steppe, ere forced to retrate.
This is the wandring wood, this *Errours* den,
A monster vile, whom God and man does hate:
Therefore I read beware. 'Fly, fly!' (quoth then
The fearefull Dwarfie) 'this is no place for living
men.'

XIV

But, full of fire and greedy hardiment,
The youthfull Knight could not for ought be
But forth unto the darksom hole he went, [staide;
And looked in: his glistring armor made
A little glooming light, much like a shade;
By which he saw the ugly monster plaine,
Halfe like a serpent horribly displaide,
But th'other halfe did womans shape retaine,
Most lothsom, filthie, foule, and full of vile
disdaigne.

XV

And, as she lay upon the durty ground, •
Her huge long taile her den all overspred,
Yet was in knots and many boughtes upwound,
Pointed with mortall sting. Of her there bred
A thousand yong ones, which she dayly fed,
Sucking upon her poisonous dugs; each one
Of sundrie shapes, yet all ill-favored:
Soone as that uncouth light upon them shone,
Into her mouth they crept, and suddain all were
gone. •

XVI

Their dam upstart out of her den effraide,
And rushed forth, hurling her hideous taile
About her cursed head; whose folds displaid
Were stretcht now forth at length without en-
traile.
She lookt about, and seeing one in mayle,
Armed to point, sought backe to turne againe;
For light she hated as the deadly bale,

Ay wont in desert darknes to remaine,
Where plain none might her see, nor she see
any plaine.

XVII

Which when the valiant Elfe perceiv'd, he leapt
As Lyon fierce upon the flying pray,
And with his trenchand blade; her boldly kept
From turning backe and forced her to stay:
Therewith enrag'd she loudly gan to bray,
And turning fierce her speckled taile advaunst,
Threatning her angrie sting, him to dismay;
Who, nought aghast, his mightie hand en-
haunst: [der glaunst.
The stroke down from her head unto her shoul-

XVIII

• Much daunted with that dint her sence was
dazl;
Yet kindling rage her selfe she gathered round,
And all attonce her beastly bodie raizd
With doubled forces high above the ground:
Tho, wrapping up her wretched sterne arownd,
Lept fierce upon his shield, and her huge traine
All suddenly about his body wound,
That hand or foot to stirr he strove in vaine.
God helpe the man so wrapt in *Errours* end-
lesse traine!

XIX

His Lady, sad to see his sore constraint,
Cride out, 'Now, now, Sir knight, shew what
ye bee;
Add faith unto your force, and be not faint;
Strangle her, els she sure will strangle thee.'
That when he heard, in great perplexitie,
His gall did grate for griefe and high disdaigne;
And, knitting all his force, got one hand free,
Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great
paine, [constraine.
That soone to loose her wicked bands did her

XX

Therewith she spewd out of her filthie maw
A flood of poyson horrible and blacke,
Full of great lumps of flesh and gobbets raw,
Which stonck so vildly, that it forst him
slacke [lacke.
His grasping hold, and from her turne him
Her vomit full of bookes and papers was,
With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes did
lacke,
And creeping sought way in the weedy gras:
Her filthie parbreake all the place defiled has.

XXI

As when old father Nilus gins to swell
With timely pride above the Aegyptian vale
His fattie waves doe fertile slime outwell,
[And overflow each plaine and lowly dale:

But, when his later spring gins to auale,
Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherein there
breed
Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly male
And partly femall, of his fruitful seed;
Such ugly monstrous shapies elswher may no
man read.

XXII

The same so sore annoyed has the knight,
That, welugh choked with the deadly stinke,
His forces faile, ne can no lenger fight:
Whose corage when the feend perceivd to
shrinke,

She poured forth out of her hellish sinke
Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents small,
Deformed monsters, fowle, and blacke as inke,
Which swarming all about his legs did crall,
And him encombred sore, but could not hurt
at all.

XXIII

As gentle shepheard in sweete eventide,
When ruddy Phoebus gins to welke in west,
High on an hill, his flocke to wewen wide,
Markes which doe byte their hasty sapper
best;

A cloud of cumbrous gnates doe him molest,
All striving to infixe their feeble stinges,
That from their noyance he no where can rest;
But with his clownish hands their tender wings
He brusheth oft, and oft doth mar their mur-
murings.

XXIV

Thusill bestedd, and fearefull more of shame
Then of the certeine perill he stood in
Halfe furious unto his foe he came,
Resolv'd in minde all suddenly to win,
Or soone to lose, before he once would lin;
And stroke at her with more then manly force,
That from her body, full of filthie sin,
He raft her hatefull heade without remorse.
A stramine of cole-black blood forth gushed
from her corse.

XXV

Her scatter'd brood, soone as their Parent
deare

They saw so rudely falling to the ground,
Groning full deadly, all with troublous feare
Gathred themselves about her body round,
Weeping their wonted entrance to have found
At her widemouth; but being there withstood,
They flock'd all about her bleeding wound,
And sucked up their dying mothers bloud,
Making her death their life, and eke her hurt
their good.

XXVI

That detestable sight him much amazde,
To see th' unkindly Impes, of heaven accurst,
Devoure their dam; on whom while so he gazd,
Having all satisfide their bloody thirst,
Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse burst,
And bowels gushing forth: well worthy end
Of such as drunke her life the which then nurst!
Now needeth him no lenger labour spend,
His foes have slaine themselves, with whom he
should contend.

XXVII

His Lady, seeing all that chaunst from farre,
Approcht in hast to greet his vicorie; | starre,
And saide, 'Fairst knight, borne under happie
Who see your vanquisht foes before you lye,
Well worthie be you of that Armory,
Wherein ye have great glory, wonne this day,
And proov'd your strength on a strong enimie,
Your first adventure: many such I pray,
And henceforth ever wish that like succeed it
may!'

XXVIII

Then mounted he upon his Steele againe,
And with the Lady backward sought to wend.
That path he kept which beaten was most
Ne ever would to any byway bend, [plaine,
But still did follow one unto the end,
The which at last out of the wood them brought.
So forward on his way (with God to frend)
He passed forth, and new adventure sought:
Long way he traveled before he heard of
ought.

XXIX

At length they chaunst to meet upon the way
An aged Sire, in long blacke weedes yclad,
His feete all bare, his beard all hoarie gray,
And by his belt his booke he hanging had:
Sober he seemde, and very sagely sad,
And to the ground his eyes were lowly bent,
Simple in shew, and voide of malice bad;
And all the way he prayed as he went,
And often knockt his breast, as one that did
repent.

XXX

He faire the knight saluted, loutyng low,
Who faire him quited, as that courteous was;
And after asked him, if he did know
Of straunge adventures, which abroad did pas.
'Ah! my dear some,' (quoth he) 'how should,
alas!
Silly old man, that lives in hidden cell,
Bidding his beades all day for his trespass,
Tydings of warre and worldly trouble tell?
With holy father sits not with such thinges to
mell.

XXXI

'But if of daunger, which hereby doth dwell,
And homebredd evil ye desire to heare,
Of a straunge man I can you tidings tell,
That wasteth all this countrie, farre and neare.'
'Of such,' (saide he,) 'I chiefly doe inquire,
And shall thee well rewarde to shew the place,
In which that wicked wight his dayes doth
weare;
For to all knighthood it is foule disgrace,
That such a cursed creature lives so long a
space.'

XXXII

'Far hence' (quoth he) 'in wastfull wilder-
nesse
His dwelling is, by which no living wight
May ever passe, but thorough great distresse.'
'Now,' (saide the Ladie,) 'draweth toward
night,
And well I wote, that of your later sight
Ye all forweari'd be; for what so strong,
But, wanting rest, will also want of might?
The Sunne, that measures heaven all day long,
At night doth baite his steedes the Ocean
waves emong.

XXXIII

'Then with the Sunne take, Sir, your timely
rest,
And with new day new worke at once begin:
Untroubled night, they say, gives counsell
best.'
'Right well, Sir knight, ye have advised bin,
Quoth then that aged man: 'the way to win
Is wisely to advise; now day is spent:
Therefore with me ye may take up your In
For this same night.' The knight was well
content;
So with that godly father to his home they
went.

XXXIV

A litle lowly Hermitage it was,
Downe in a dale, hard by a forests side,
Far from resort of people that did pas
In travell to and froe: a litle wyde
There was an holy chappell edifyde,
Wherein the Hermite dewly wont to say
His holy thinges each morne and eventyde:
Thereby a christall streame did gently play,
Which from a sacred fountaine welled forth
alway.

XXXV

Arrived there, the litle house they fill,
Ne looke for entertainment where none was;
Rest is their feast, and all thinges at their will:
The noblest mind the best contentment has.

With faire discourse the evening so they pas;
For that olde man of pleasing wordes had store,
And well could file his toungue as smooth as
glas:

He told of Saintes and Popes, and evermore
He strowd an *Ave-Mary* after and before.

XXXVI

The drouping night thus creepeth on them
fast;
And the sad humor loading their eyeliddes,
As messenger of Morpheus, on them cast
Sweet slombring dew, the which to sleep
them biddes.
Unto their lodgings then his guestes he riddes:
Where when all drownd in deadly sleepe he
findes,
He to his studie goes; and there amidde
His magick bookes, and artes of sundrie kinde,
He seekes out mighty charmes to trouble sleepey
minds.

XXXVII

Then choosing out few words most horrible,
(Let none them read) thereof did verses frame;
With which, and other spelles like terrible,
He bad awake blacke Plutoes griesly Dame;
And cursed heven; and spake reprochful shame
Of highest God, the Lord of life and light:
A bold bad man, that dar'd to call by name
Great Gorgon, prince of darknes and dead
night; [flight.
At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put to

XXXVIII

And forth he cald out of deepe darknes dredd
Legions of Sprights, the which, like litle flies
Fluttering about his ever-damned hedd,
Awaite whereto their service he applies,
To aide his friendes, or fray his enemies.
Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo,
And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes:
The one of them he gave a message too, [doo.
The other by him selfe staide, other worke to

XXXIX

He, making speedy way through spersed ayre,
And through the world of waters wide and
deepe,
To Morpheus house doth hastily repaire.
Amid the bowels of the earth full never peepe,
And low, where dawning day doth never peepe,
His dwelling is; there Tethys his wet bed
Doth ever wash, and Cynthia still doth steepe
In silver dew his ever-drouping hed,
Whiles sad Night over him her mantle black
doth spread.

XL

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast,
The one faire fram'd of burnisht Ivory,
The other all with silver overcast;
And wakeful dogges before them farre doe lye,
Watching to banish Care their enemy,
Who oft is wont to trouble gentle Sleep.
By them the Sprite toothe passe in quietly,
And unto Morpheus comes, whom drowned deepe
In drowsie fit he findes: of nothing he takes
keepe.

¶

XLI

And more to lulle him in his slumber soft.
A trickling streame from high rock tumbling
downe,

And ever-drizling raine upon the loft, [sowne
Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like the
Of swarming Bees, did cast him in a sowne.
No other noyse, nor peoples troublous cryes,
As still are wont t'annoy the walled towne,
Might there be heard; but carelesse Quiet lyes
Wrant in eternall silence farre from enimyces.

XLII

The Messenger approaching to him spake;
But his waste wordes retourn'd to him in vaine:
So sound he slept, that nought mought him
awake. [paine,
Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with
Whereat he gan to stretch; but he againe
Shooke him so hard, that forced him to speake.
As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine
Is tost with troubled sights and fancies weake,
He mumbled soft, but would not all his silence
breake.

XLIII

The Sprite then gan more boldly him to wake,
And threatned unto him the dreaded name
Of Hecate: whereat he gan to quake,
And, lifting up his lompish head, with blame
Halfe angrie asked him, for what he came.
'Hether' (gouth he), 'me Archimago sent,
He that the stubborne Sprites can wisely tame,
He bids thee to him send for his intent [sent.
A fit false dreame, that can delude the sleepers

XLIV

The God obayde; and, calling forth straight
way
A diverse Dreame out of his prison darke,
Delivered it to him, and downe did lay
His heaue head, deuide of careful carke;
Whose senses all were straight benumbd and
starke.
He, backe returning by the Yvorie dore,
Remounted up as light as chearefull Larke;

And on his litle winges the dreame he bore
In hast unto his Lord, where he him left afore.

XLV

Who all this while, with charmes and hidden
Had made a Lady of that other Spright, [artes,
And fram'd of liquid ayre her tender partes,
So lively and so like in all mens sight,
That weaker sence it could have raviast quight:
The maker selfe, for all his wondrous witt,
Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight.
Her all in white he clad, and over it
Cast a black stole, most like to seeme for Una
fit.

XLVI

Now, when that ydle dreame was to him
Unto that Elfin knight he bad him fly, [brought,
Where he slept soundly void of evil thought,
And with false shewes abuse his fantasie,
In sort as he him schooled privily:
And that new creature, borne without her dew,
Full of the makers guyle, with usage sly
He taught to imitate that Lady trew,
Whose semblance she did carrie under feigned
hew.

XLVII

Thus, well instructed, to their worke they
haste;
And, comming where the knight in slomber lay,
The one upon his hardie head him plaste,
And made him dreame of loves and lustfull play,
That nigh his manly hart did melt away,
Bathed in wanton blis and wicked joy.
Then seemed him his Lady by him lay,
And to him playnd, how that false winged boy
Her chaste hart had subdewd to learne Dame
Pleasures toy.

XLVIII

And she her selfe, of beautie soveraigne
Queene,
Fayre Venus, seemde unto his bed to bring
Her, whom he, waking, evermore did weene
To bee the chastest floure that aye did spring
On earthly branch, the daughter of a king,
Now a loose Leman to vile service bound:
And eke the Graces seemed all to sing,
Hymen Io Hymen! dauncing all around;
Whylst freshest Flora her with Yvie girlond
crownd

XLIX

In this great passion of unwonted lust,
Or wonted feare of doing ought amis,
He starteth up, as seeming to mistrust
Some secret ill, or hidden foe of his,

Lo! there before his face his Ladie is,
Under blacke stole hyding her bayted hooke;
And as halfe blushing offred him to kis,
With gentle blandishment and lovely looke,
Most like that virgin true which for her
knight him took.

L

All cleane dismayd to see so uncouth sight,
And half enraged at her shamelesse guise,
He thought have slaine her in his fierce des-
pight;

But hastie heat tempring with sufferance wise,
He stayde his hand; and gan himselfe advise
To prove his sense, and tempt her fained truth.
Wringing her hands, in womens pitteous wise,
Tho can she weepe, to stirre up gentle ruth
Both for her noble blood, and for her tender
youth.

L.I

And sayd, 'Ah Sir, my liege Lord, and my
Shall I accuse the hidden cruell fate, | love,
And mightie causes wrought in heaven above,
Or the blind God that doth me thus amate,
For hoped love to winne me certaine hate?
Yet thus perforce he bids me do, or die.
Die is my dow; yet rew my wretched state,
You, whom my hard avenging destinie
Hath made judge of my life or death indif-
ferently.

L.II

'Your owne deare sake forst me at first to leave
My fathers kingdom'—There she stopt with
teares;
Her swollen hart her speech seemd to bereave,
And then againe begonne; 'My weaker yeares,
Captiv'd to fortune and frayle worldly feares,
Fly to your sayth for succour and sure ayde:
Let me not die in languor and long teares.'
'Why, Dame,' (quoth he,) 'what hath ye thus
dismayd?
What frayes ye, that were wont to comfort me
affrayd?'

L.III

'Love of your selfe,' she saide, 'and deare con-
straint,
Lets me not sleepe, but waste the wearie night
In secret anguish and unpittied plaint,
Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned
quight.'
Her doubtfull words made that redoubted
knight
Suspect her truth: yet since no' untruth he
knew,
Her fawning love with foule disdaigned full spight
He would not shend; but said, 'Deare dame,
I rew, | you grew.
That for my sake unknowne such griefe unto

L.IV

'Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground;
For all so deare as life is to my hart,
I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound:
Ne let vaine feares procure your needlesse
smart.
Where cause is none; but to your rest depart.'
Not all content, yet seemd she to appease
Her mournfull plaintes, beguiled of her art,
And fed with words that could not chose but
please: [case.
So, slyding softly forth, she turnd as to her

L.V

Long after lay he musing at her mood,
Much griev'd to thinke that gentle Dame so
light,
For whose defence he was to shed his blood.
At last, dull wearines of former fight
Having yrockt asleepe his irkesome spright,
That troublous dreame gan freshly tosse his
braine
With bowres, and beds, and ladies deare de-
light:
But, when he saw his labour all was vaine,
With that misformed spright he buckereturned
againe.

CANTO II.

The guilefull great Enchaunter parts
The Redcrosse Knight from Truth:
Into whose stead faire falshood steps,
And workes him woefull ruth.

I

By this the Northerne wagoner had set
His sevenfold teme behind the stedfast starre
That was in Ocean waves yet never wet,
But firme is fixt, and sendeth light from farre

To al that in the wide deepe wandring arre;
And chearefull Chaunticlers with his note shrill
Had warned once, that Phoebus fiery carre
In hast was climbing up the Easterne hill, [fill:
Full envious that night so long his roome did

II

When those accursed messengers of hell,
That feigning dreame, and that faire-forged
Spright,

Came to their wicked maister, and gan tel
Their bootlesse paines, and ill succeeding
night:

Who, all in rage to see his skiltull might
Deluded so, gan threaten hellish paine,
And sad Proserpines wrath, them to affright:
But, when he saw his threatening was but vaine,
He cast about- and searcht his baleful bokes
againe.

III

Etsoones he tooke that miscreated faire,
And that false other Spright, on whom he spred
A seeming body of the subtille aire,
Like a young Squire, in loves and lusty-hed
His wanton daies that ever loosely led,
Without regard of armes and dreaded fight:
Those twoo he tooke, and in a secrete bed,
Covered with darkenes and misdeeming night,
Them both together laid to joy in vaine delight.

IV

Forthwith he runnes with feigned faithfull
Unto his guest, who, after troublous sights [hast
And dreames, gan now to take more sound
repest;

Whom suddenly he wakes with fearful frights,
As one agast with feends or damned sprights,
And to him calls; 'Rise, rise! unhappy Swaine,
That here wex old in sleepe, whiles wicked
wights [chaine:

Have knit themselves in Venus shameful
Come, see where your false Lady doth her
honor staine.'

V

All in amaze he suddenly up start
With sword in hand, and with the old man went;
Who soone him brought into a secret part,
Where that false couple were full closely ment
In wanton lust and leud embracement:
Which when he saw, he burnt with zealous fire;
The eie of reason was with rage yblent,
And would have slaine them in his furious ire,
But hardly was restrained of that aged sire.

VI

Retourning to his bed in torment great,
And bitter anguish of his guilty sight.
He could not rest; but did his stout heart eat,
And wast his inward gall with deepe despight,
Yrkesome of life, and too long lingring night.
At last faire Hesperus in highest skie
Had spent his lampe, and brought forth
dawning light.

Then up he rose, and clad him hastily:
The dwarfe him brought his steed; so both
away do fly.

VII

Now when the rosy fingred Morning faire,
Weary of aged Tithones saffron bed,
Had spred her purple robe through dewy aire,
And the high hills Titan discovered,
The royall virgin shooke off drousy-hed;
And, rising forth out of her baser bowre,
Lookt for her knight, who far away was fled,
And for her dwarfe, that wont to wait eare
howie: [woeful stowre.
Then gan she wail and weepe to see that

VIII

And after hir she rode, with so much speede
As herslowe beast could make; but all in vaine,
For him so far had borne his light-foot steede,
Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce disdain,
That him to follow was but fruitlesse paine:
Yet she her weary limbes would never rest;
But every hil and dale, each wood and plaine,
Did search, sore grieved in her gentle brest,
He so ungently left her, whome she loved best.

IX

But subtile Archimago, when his guests
He saw divided into double parts,
And Una wandring in woods and Forrests,
Th' end of his drift, he praised his dvelish arts,
That had such might over true meaning harts:
Yet rests not so, but other meanes doth make,
How he may worke unto her further smarts;
For her he hated as the hissing snake, [take.
And in her many troubles did most pleasure

X

He then devise himselfe how to disguise;
For by his mighty science he could take
As many formes and shapes in seeming wise,
As ever Proteus to himselfe could make:
Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in lake,
Now like a foxe, now like a dragon fell;
That of himselfe he ofte for feare would quake,
And oft would flie away. O! who can tell
The hidden powre of herbes, and might of
Magick spel?

XI

But now seemde best the person to put on
Of that good knight, his late bequiled guest:
In mighty armes he was yclad anon,
And silver shield; upon his coward brest
A bloody crosse, and on his craven crest
A bough of heares discoloured diversly.
Full jolly knight he seemde, and wel address;

And when he sate upon his courser free,
Saint George himselfe ye would have deemed
him to be.

XII

But he, the knight whose semblaunt he did
beare,

The true Saint George, was wandred far away,
Still flying from his thoughts and gealous feare:
Will was his guide, and grieve led him astray.
At last him chaunst to meete upon the way
A faithlesse Sarazin, all armed to point,
In whose great shield was writ with letters gay
Sans foy; full large of limbe and every joint
He was, and cared not for God or man a point.

XIII

Hee had a faire companion of his way,
A goodly Lady clad in scarlot red,
Purfl'd with gold and pearle of rich assay;
And like a Persian mitre on her hed
Shee wore, with crowns and owches garnished,
The which her lavish lovers to her gave.
Her wanton palfrey all was overspred
With tinsell trappings, woven like a wave,
Whose bridle rung with golden bells and bosses
brave.

XIV

With faire disport, and courting dalliance,
Shee intertaine her lover all the way;
But, when she saw the knight his speare ad-
vance,
Shee soone left off her mirth and wanton play,
And bad her knight addresse him to the fray,
His foe was nigh at hand. He, pricke with
pride
And hope to winne his Ladies hearte that day,
Forth spurred fast: adowne his coursers side
The red blood trickling stained the way, as he
did ride.

XV

The knight of the Redcrosse, when him he
Spurring so hote with rage dispiteous, [spide
Gan fairely couch his speare, and towards ride.
Soone meete they both, both fell and furious,
That, daunted with theyr forces hideous,
Their steeds doe stagger, and amazed stand;
And eke themselves, too rudely rigorous,
Astonied with the stroke of their owne hand,
Doe backe rebutte, and ech to other yealdeth
land.

XVI

As when two rams, stir'd with ambitious pride,
Fight for the rule of the rich fleeced flocke,
Their horned fronts so fierce on either side
Doe meete, that, with the terror of the shooke,

Astonied, both stand sencelesse as a blocke,
Forgetfull of the hanging victory:
So stood these twaine, unmoved as a rocke,
Both staring fierce, and holding idly
The broken reliques of their former cruelty.

XVII

The Sarazin, sore daunted with the buffe,
Snatcheth his sword, and fiercely to him flies;
Who well it warke, and quyteth cuff with cuff:
Each others equall puisaunce envies,
And through their iron sides with cruell spies
Doe seeke to perce; repining courage yields
No foote to foe: the flashing fier flies,
As from a forge, out of their burning shields;
And streams of purple blood new die the ver-
dant fields.

XVIII

'Curse on that Cross,' (quoth then the Sarazin,) 'That keeps thy body from the bitter fitt!
Dead long ygoe, I wote, thou haddest bin,
Had not that charme from thee forwarded itt:
But yet I warne thee now assured sitt,
And hide thy head.' Therewith upon his crest
With rigor so outrageous he smitt,
That a large share it hewd out of the rest,
And glauncing dwayne his shield from blame
him fairly blest.

XIX

Who, thereat wondrous wroth, the sleeping
Of native vertue gan eftsoones revive; [spark
And at his haughty helmet making mark,
So hugely stroke, that it the steele did rive,
And cleft his head. He, tumbling downe alive,
With bloody mouth his mother earth did kis,
Greeting his grave: his grudging ghost did
strive
With the fraile flesh; at last it fittid is,
Whither the soules doe fly of men that live
amis.

XX

The Lady, when she saw her champion fall
Like the old ruines of a broken towre,
Staid not to waile his woefull funeral,
But from him fled away with all her powre;
Who after her as hastily gan scowre,
Bidding the dwarfe with him to bring away
The Sarazins shield, signe of the conqueroure.
Her soone he overtooke, and bad to stay; [may.
For present cause was none of dread her to dis-

XXI

Shee turning backe, with ruefull counte-
naunce,
Cride, 'Mercy, mercy, Sir, vouchsafe to show
On silly Dame, subject to hard mischaunce,
And to your mighty wil!' Her humble low,

In so ritche weedes, and seeming glorious show,
Did much emmove his stout heroicke heart;
And said, 'Deare dame, your sudden overthrow
Much rueth me; but now put feare apart,
And tel both who ye be, and who that tooke
your part.'

XXII

Melting in teares, then gan shee thus lament,
'The wretched woman, whom unhappy howre
Hath now made thrall to your commandement,
Before that angry heavens list to lowre,
And fortune false betraide me to thy powre,
Was (O! what now availeth that I was?)
Borne the sole daughter of an Emperour,
He that the wide West under his rule has,
And high hath set his throne where Tiberis
doth pass.

XXIII

'He, in the first flowre of my freshest age,
Betrothed me unto the onely haire
Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage:
Was never Prince so faithfull and so faire;
Was never Prince so meeke and debonaire;
But ere my hoped day of spousall shone,
My dearest Lord fell from high honors staire
Into the hands of hys accursed fone,
And cruelly was slaine; that shall I evermore.

XXIV

'His blessed body, spoild of lively breath,
Was afterward, I know not how, convoid.
And fro me hid: of whose most innocent death
When tidings came to mee, unhappy maid,
O, how great sorrow my sad soule assaid!
Then forth I went his woefull corse to find,
And many yeares throughout the world I straid,
A virgin widow, whose deepe wounded mind
With love long time did languish, as the stricken
hind.

XXV

'At last it chaunced this proud Sarazin
To meeete me wandring; who perforce me led
With him away, but yet could never win
The Fort, that Ladies hold in soveraigne dread.
There lies he now with foule dishonor dead,
Who, whiles he livde, was called proud Sans
foy,
The eldest of three brethren; all three bred
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sans joy;
And twixt them both was born the bloudy bold
Sans loy.

XXVI

'In this sad plight, friendlesse, unfortunate,
Now miserable I, Fidesse, dwell,
Craving of you, in pittie of my state,
To doe none ill, if please ye not doe well.'

He in great passion al this while did dwell,
More busying his quicke eies her face to view,
Then his dull eares to heare what shee did tell;
And said, 'faire lady, hart of tith would rew
The undeserved woes and sorrowes, which ye
shew.

XXVII

'Henceforth in safe assurance may ye rest,
Having both found a new friend you to aid,
And lost an old foe that did you molest;
Better new friend then an old foe is aid.
With change of chear the seeming simple
maid
Let fal her cien, as shamefast, to the earth,
And yeelding soft, in that she nought gainsaid,
So forth they rode, he feining seemly mirth,
And shee coy looks: so daintie, they say,
maketh deth.

XXVIII

Long time they thus together traveled;
Til, weary of their way, they came at last
Where grew two goodly trees, that faire did
spread
Their armes abroad, with gray mosse overcast;
And their greene leaves, trembling with every
blast,
Made a calme shadowe far in compasse round:
The fearefull shepheard, often there aghast,
Under them never sat, ne wout there sound
His mery oaten pipe, but shund th' unlucky
ground.

XXIX

But this good knight, soone as he them can
spie,
For the coole shade him thither hastily got:
For golden Phoebus, now ymounted hie,
From fiery wheeles of his faire chariot
Hurled his beame so scorching cruell hot,
That living creature mote it not abide;
And his new Lady it endured not.
There they alight, in hope themselves to nide
From the fierce heat, and rest their weary limbs
a tide.

XXX

Faire seemly pleasance each to other
makes,
With goodly purposes, there as they sit;
And in his falsed fancy he her takes
To be the fairest wight that lived yit;
Which to expresse he beutis his gentle wit:
And, thinking of those branches greene to
A girlond for her dainty forehead sit, [frame
He pluckt a bough; out of whose rife there
came [the same.
Smal drops of gory blood, that trickled down

XXXV

Therewith a piteous yelling voice was heard,
Crying, 'O! spare with guilty hands to teare
My tender sides in this rough rynd embard;
But fly, ah! fly far hence away, for feare
Least to you hap that happened to me heare,
And to this wretched Lady, my deare love;
O, too deare love, love bought with death too
deare!
Astand he stood, and up his heare did hove;
And with that sudden horror could no member
move.

XXXVI

At last whenas the dreadfull passion
Was overpast, and manhood well awake,
Yet musing at the strange occasion,
And doubting much his sence, he thus bespake:
'What voice of damned Ghost from Limbo lake,
Or guilefull spright wandring in empty aire,
Both which fraile men doe oftentimes mistake,
Sends to my doubtfull eares these speeches rare,
And ruefull plaints, me bidding guiltlesse
blood to spare?'

XXXVII

Then, groning deep; 'Nor damned Ghost,
(quothe he,) [speake;
'Nor guilefull sprite to thee these words doth
But once a mau, Fradubio, now a tree: [weake
Wretched man, wretched tree! whose nature
A cruell witch, her cursed will to wreake,
Hath thus transformd, and plast in open plaines,
Where Boreas doth blow full bitter bleake,
And scorching Sunne does dry my secret vaines;
For though a tree I some, yet cold and heat
me paines.'

XXXVIII

'Say on, Fradubio, then, or man or tree,
Quoth then the Knight; 'by whose mischievous
Art thou misshaped thus, as now I see? [arts
He oft finds med'cine who his grieve imparts,
But double griefs afflict concealing hart,
As raging flames who striveth to suppress.'
'The author then,' (said he) 'of all my smarts,
Is one Duessa, a false sorceresse,
That many errant knights hath brought to
wretchednesse.

XXXIX

'In prime of youthly yeares, when corage
The fire of love, and joy of chevalree, [hott
First kindled in my brest, it was my lott
To love this gentle Lady, whome ye see
Now not a Lady, but a seeming tree;
With whome, as once I rode accompanye,
Me chaunced of a knight encountred bee,
That had a like faire Lady by his syde;
Like a faire Lady, but did fowle Duessa hyde.

XXXVI

'Whose forged beauty he did take in hand
All other Dames to have exceeded farre:
I in defence of mine did likewise stand, [starre.
Mine, that did then shine as the Morning
So both to battell fierce arraunged arre,
In which his harder fortune was to fall
Under my speare: such is the dye of warre.
His Lady, left as a prise martiall,
Did yield her comely person to be at my call.

XXXVII

'So doubly lov'd of ladies, unlike faire,
Th' one seeming such, the other such indeede,
One day in doubt I cast for to compare
Whether in beauties glorie did exceede:
A Rosy girlond was the victors meede.
Both seemde to win, and both seemde won to
So hard the discord was to be agreeed. [ber.
Frelissa was as faire as faire mote bee,
And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as shee.

XXXVIII

'The wicked witch, now seeing all this while
The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway,
What not by right she cast to win by guile;
And by her hellish science raisd straight way
A foggy mist that overcast the day,
And a dull blast, that breathing on her face
Dimmed her former beauties shining ray,
And with foule ugly forme did her disgrace:
Then was she fayre alone, when none was
faire in place.

XXXIX

'Then cride she out, "Fye, fye! deformed
wight,
'Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth plaine
'To have before bewitched all mens sight:
'O! leave her soone, or let her soone be slaine."
Her loathly visage viewing, with disdain,
Eftsoones I thought her such as she me told,
And would have kild her; but with fained
paine [hold:
The false witch did my wrathfull hand with-
So left her, where she now is turnd to treen
mould.

XL

'Thensforth I tooke Duessa for my Dame,
And in the witch unweeting joyd long time,
Ne ever wist but that she was the same;
Till on a day (that day is everie prime,
When Witches wont do penance for their
I chaunst to see her in her proper hew, [crime.)
Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme:
A filthy foule old woman I did vew, [rew.
That ever to have toucht her I did deadly

XLI

'Her neather partes misshapen, monstrous,
Were hidd in water, that I coulde not see;
But they did seeme more foule and hideous,
Then womans shape man would beleeve to bee.
Thensforth from her most beastly companie
I gan refraine, in minde to slipp away,
Soone as appeard safe opportunitie:
For danger great, if not assur'd decay, [stray.
I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne to

XLII

'The delivish hag by chaunges of my cheare
Perceiv'd my thought; and, drown'd in sleepe
night, [smeard,
With wicked herbes and oyntments did be-
My body all, through charmes and magicke
might,
That all my senses were bereaved quight:
Then brought she me into this desert waste,
And by my wretched lovers side me pight;
Where now, enclosed in wooden wals full faste,
Banisht from living wights, our wearie daies
we waste.'

XLIII

'But how long time,' said then the Elfin
knight,
'Are you in this misformed hous to dwell?'
'We may not change,' (quoth he), 'this evill
Till we be bathed in a living well: [plight,

'That is the terme prescribed by the spell.'
'O! how,' sayd he, 'mote I that well out find,
That may restore you to your wonted well?'
'Time and suffic'd fates to former kynd
Shall us restore; none else from hence may
us unhynde'

XLIV

The false Duessa, now Fidessa hight,
Heard how in vaine Fradubie did lament,
And knew well all was true. But the good
Full of sad feare and ghastly dreymes, [knight,
When all this speech the living tree had spent.
The bleeding bough did thrust into the ground,
That from the blood he might be innocent,
And with fresh clay did close the wooden
wound: [her fownd.
Then, turning to his Lady, dead with feare

XLV

Her seeming dead he fownd with feigned
feare,
As all unwitting of that well she knew;
And paynd himselfe with busie care to reare
Her out of carelesse swowne. Her eyelids blew,
And dimmed sight, with pale and deadly hew,
At last she up gan lift: with trembling cheare
Her up he tooke, (too simple and too trew)
And oft her kist. At length, all passed feare.
He set her on her steede, and forward forth
did beare.

CANTO III.

Forsaken Truth long seekes her love,
And makes the Lyon myde;
Mares blind Devotions mart, and fall
In hand of leachour vyle.

I

NOUGHT is there under heav'ns wide hollow
nesse,
'That moves more deare compassion of mind.
Then beauteie brought t' unworthie wretched-
nesse [unkind
'Through envies snares, or fortunes freakes
I, whether lately through her brightnes blynd,
'Or through allegiance, and fast fealty,
Which I do owe unto all womankynd,
Feele my hart perst with so great agony,
'When such I see, that all for pittie I could dy.

II

And now it is empassioned so deepe,
For fairest Unaces sake, of whom I sing,
That my frayle eies these lines with teares do
steepe,
To thinke how she through guyleful handling,

'Though true as touch, though daughter of a
king,
Though faire as ever living wight was fayre,
Though nor in word nor deede ill meriting,
Is from her knight divorced in despayre.
And her dew loves dery'd to that vile witches
shayne.

III

Yet she, most faithfull Ladie, all this while
Forsaken, wofull, solitarie mayd,
Far from all peoples preace, as in exile,
In wilderness and wastfull deserts strayd,
To seek her knight; who, subtilly betrayd
Through that late vision which th' Enchaunter
wrought,
Had her abandond. She, of nought affrayd,
Through woods and wastnes wide him daily
sought; [brought.
Yet wished tydings none of him unto her

IV

One day, nigh wearie of the yrkesome way,
From her unhastie beast she did alight;
And on the grasse her dainty limbs did lay
In secret shadow, far from all mens sight:
From her fayre head her helmet she undight,
And layd her stole aside. Her angels face,
As the great eye of heaven, shyned bright,
And made a sunshine in the shady place;
Did never mortall eye behold such heavenly
grace.

V

It fortun'd, out of the thickest wood
A ramping Lyon rushed suddenly,
Hunting full greedily after salvage blood.
Soone as the royall virgin he did spy,
With gaping mouth at her ran greedily.
To have attonce devourd her tender corse;
But to the pray when as he drew more ny,
His bloody rage aswag'd with remorse, forsoe.
And, with the sight amaz'd, forgot his furious

VI

In stead thereof he kist her wearie feet,
And lickt her lilly hands with fawning tong,
As he her wronged innocence did weete.
O, how can beautie maister the most strong,
And simple truth subdue avenging wrong!
Whose yielded pryde and proud submission,
Still dreading death, when she had marked
Her hart gan melt in great compassion; [long,
And drizzling teares did shed for pure affection.

VII

'The Lyon, Lord of everie beast in field,'
Quoth she, 'his princely puissance doth abate,
And mightie proud to humble weake does
yield,
Forgetfull of the hungry rage, which late
Him prickt, in pittie of my sad estate:
But he, my Lyon, and my noble Lord,
How does he find in cruell hart to hate
Her, that him lov'd, and ever most adord
As the God of my life? why hath he me ab-
hord?'

VIII

Redounding teares did choke th' end of her
plaint,
Which softly echoed from the neighbour wood;
And, sad to see her sorrowfull constraint,
The kingly beast upon her gazing stood:
With pittie calmd downe fell his angry mood.
At last, in close hart shutting up her payne,
Arose the virgin, borne of heavenly brood,
And to her snowy Palfrey got agayne,
To seeke her strayed Champion if she might
attayne.

IX

The Lyon would not leave her desolate,
But with her went along, as a strong gard
Of her chast person, and a faythfull mate
Of her sad troubles and misfortunes hard:
Still, when she slept, he kept both watch and
ward;
And, when she wakt, he wayted diligent,
With humble service to her will prepar'd:
From her fayre eyes he tooke commandement,
And ever by her lookes conceived her intent.

X

Long she thus travelld through deserts wyde,
By which she thought her wandring knight
should passe,
Yet never shew of living wight espyde;
Till that at length she found the troden gras,
In which the tract of peoples footing was,
Under the steepe foot of a mountaine hore:
The same she followes, till at last she has
A damzel spyde, slow footing her before,
That on her shoulders sad a pot of water bore.

XI

To whom approching she to her gan call,
To weet if dwelling place were nigh at hand;
But the rude wench her answerd nought at all:
She could not heare, nor speake, nor understand;
Till, seeing by her side the Lyon stand,
With suddaine feare her pitcher downe she
And fled away: for never in that land [threw,
Face of fayre Lady she before did vew, [hew.
And that dredd Lyons looke her cast in deadly

XII

Full fast she fled, ne ever lookt behynd,
As if her life upon the wager lay;
And home she came, whereas her mother bynd
Sate in eternall night: nought could she say;
But, suddaine catching hold, did her dismay
With quaking hands, and other signes of feare:
Who, full of ghastly fright and cold affray,
Gan shut the dore. By this arrived there
Dame Una, weary Dame, and entraunce did
require:

XIII

Which when none yielded, her unruly Page
With his rude claws the wicket open rent,
And let her in; where, of his cruell rage
Nigh dead with feare, and faint astonishment,
Shee found them both in darksome corner pent;
Where that old woman day and night did pray
Upon her beads, devoutly penitent:
Nine hundred *Pater nosters* every day,
And thirse nine hundred *Aves* she was wont to
say.

XIV

And to augment her painefull penance more,
Thrise every weeke in ashes shee did sitt,
And next her wrinkled skin rough sackcloth
wore,
And thrise three times did fast from any bitt;
But now, for feare her beads shee did forgett:
Whose needlesse dread for to remove away,
Fairst Una framed words and count'naunce att;
Which hardly doen, at length shee gan them
pray, [her may,
That in their cotege small that night shee rest

XV

The day is spent; and cometh drowsie night,
When every creature shrowded is in sleepe.
Sad Una downe her laies in weary plight,
And at her feete the Lyon watch doth keepe:
In stead of rest shee does lament and weepe,
For the late losse of her deare loved knight,
And sighes, and grones, and evermore does
steepe
Her tender breast in bitter teares all night:
All night shee thinks too long, and often looks
for light.

XVI

Now when Aldeboran was mounted hye
Above the shinie Cassiopeias chaire,
And all in deawly sleepe did drowned lye
One knocked at the dore, and in would fare:
He knocked fast, and often curst, and sware,
That ready entraunce was not at his call;
For on his backe a heavy load he bare
Of nightly stelhth, and pillage severall,
Which he had got abroad by purchas criminal.

XVII

He was, to weete, a stout and sturdy thiefe,
Wont to robbe churches of their ornaments,
And poore mens boxes of their due reliefe,
Which given was to them for good intents:
The holy Saints of their rich vestiments
He did disrobe, when all men carelesse slept,
And spoild the Priests of their habiliments;
Whiles none the holy things in safety kept,
Then he by conning sleights in at the window
crept.

XVIII

And all that he by right or wrong could find,
Unto this house he brought, and did bestow
Upon the daughter of this woman blind,
Abessa, daughter of Corceca slow,
With whom he whoredome used, that few did
And fed her fatt with feast of offerings, [know,
And plenty, which in all the land did grow:
Ne spared he to give her gold and rings; [things,
And now he to her brought part of his stolen

XIX

Thus, long the dore with rage and threats hee
bett,
Yet of those fearfull women none durst rize.
The Lyon frayed them, him in to lett.
He would no longer stay him to advize,
But open breakes the dore in furious wize,
And entring is, when that disclainfull beast,
Encountering fierce, him sudder doth surprize;
And, seizing cruell clawes on trembling breast.
Under his Lordly foot him proudly hath sup-
prest.

XX

Him booteth not resist, nor succour call,
His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand;
Who streight him rent in thousand peeces
small,
And quite dismembred hath: the thirsty land
Dronke up his life; his corse left on the strand.
His fearefull freends weare out the wofull
night,
Ne dare to weepe, nor seeme to understand
The heavie hap which on them is alight;
Affraid lest to themselves the like mishappen
might.

XXI

Now when broad day the world discovered
Up Una rose, up rose the Lyon eke; [has,
And on their former journey forward pas,
In waies unknowne, her wandring knight to
seeke,
With paines far passing that long wandring
That for his love refused deitve. [Greeke,
Such were the labours of this Lady meeke,
Still seeking him, that from her still did flye;
Then furthest from her hope, when most she
weened nye.

XXII

Soone as she parted thence, the fearfull
twayne,
That blind old woman, and her daughter dear,
Came forth; and, finding Kirkrapine there
slayne,
For anguish great they gan to rend their heare,
And beat their breasts, and naked flesh to teare:
And when they both had wept and wayld their
fill,
Then forth they ran, like two amazed deare,
Halfe mad through malice and revenging will,
To follow her that was the causer of their ill.

XXIII

Whome overtaking, they gan loudly bray,
With hollow howling, and lamenting cry;
Shamefully at her rayling all the way,
And her accusing of dishonesty,

That was the flowre of faith and chastity :
And still, amidst her rayling, she did pray
That plagues, and mischiefs, and long misery,
Might fall on her, and follow all the way,
And that in endlesse error she might ever stray.

XXIV

But, when she saw her prayers nought pre-
vaile,
Shée backe retourned with some labour lost ;
And in the way, as shée did weepe and waile,
A knight her mett in mighty armes embost,
Yet knight was not for all his bragging bost :
But subtile Archimag, that Una sought
By traynes into new troubles to have taste :
Of that old woman tidings he beought,
If that of such a Lady shée could tellen ought.

XXV

Therewith she gan her passion to renew.
And cry, and curse, and raile, and rend her
heare,
Saying, that harlott she too lately knew,
That causd her shed so many a bitter teare ;
And so forth told the story of her feare.
Much seemed he to mone her haplesse chauce,
And after for that Lady did inquire ;
Which being taught, he forward gan aduance
His fair enchanted steed, and eke his charmed
lance.

XXVI

Ere long he came where Una traveild slow,
And that wilde champion wayting her besyde ;
Whome seeing such, for dread hee durst not
show
Him selfe too nigh at hand, but turned wyde
Unto an hil ; from whence when she him spyde,
By his like seeming shield her knight by name
She weend it was, and towards him gan ride :
Approaching nigh she wist it was the same :
And with faire fearfull humblesse towards
him shée came :

XXVII

And weeping said, ' Ah, my long lacked Lord,
Where have ye bene thus long out of my
sight ?
Much feared I to have bene quite abhord,
Or ought have done, that ye displeasen might,
That should as death unto my deare heart
light :
For since mine eie your joyous sight did mis,
My chearefull day is turnd to chearlesse night,
And eke my night of death the shadow is ;
But welcome now, my light, and shining
lampe of blis !'

XXVIII

He thereto meeting said, ' My dearest Dame,
Far be it from your thought, and fro my wil,
To thinke that knighthood I so much should
shame,

As you to leave that have me loved stil,
And chose in Faery court of meere goodwil,
Where noblest knights were to be found on
earth.

The earth shall sooner leave her kindly skil
To bring forth fruit, and make æternal deth,
Then I leave you, my life, yborn of heavenly
berth.

XXIX

' And sooth to say, why I left you so long,
Was for to seeke adventure in straunge place ;
Where, Archimago said, a felon strong
To many knights did daily worke disgrace ;
But knight he now shall never more deface :
Good cause of mine excuse, that mote ye please
Well to accept, and evermore embrace
My faithfull service, that by land and seas
Have vowd you to defend. Now then, your
plaint appease.'

XXX

His lovely words her seemd due recompence
Of all her passed paines : one loving howre
For many yeares of sorrow can dispence ;
A dram of sweete is worth a pound of sowre.
Shée has forgott how many a woefull stowre
For him she late endurd ; she speaks no more
Of past : true is, that true love hath no powre
To looken backe ; his eies be fixt before.
Before her stands her knight, for whom she
toyl'd so sore

XXXI

Much like, as when the beaten mariner,
That long hath wandred in the Ocean wide,
Otte souse in swelling Tethys saltish teare ;
And long time having tand his tawney hide
With blustering breath of Heaven, that none
can bide,
And scorching flames of fierce Orions hound ;
Soone as the port from far he has espide,
His chearfull whistle merly doth sound,
And Nereus crownes with cups ; his mates him
pledg around.

XXXII

Such joy made Una, when her knight she
found ;
And eke th' enchaunter joyous seemde no lesse
Then the glad marchant, that does vew from
ground
His ship far come from watrie wilderness ;

He hurles out vowes, and Neptune oft doth
blesse.

So forth they past; and all the way they spent
Discoursing of her dreadful late distresse,
In which he askt her, what the Lyon ment;
Who told her all that fell, in journey as she
went.

XXXIII

They had not ridden far, when they might see
One pricking towards them with hasty heat,
Full strongly armed, and on a courser free
That through his fiersnesse tomed all with
sweat,

And the sharpe yron did for anger eat,
When his hot ryder spurd his chauffed side;
His looke was sterne, and seemed still to threat
Cruell revenge, which he in hart did hyde;
And on his shield *Sansloy* in bloody lines was
dyde.

XXXIV

When nigh he drew unto this gentle payre,
And saw the Red-crosse which the knight did
beare,

He burnt in fire; and gan eftsoones prepare
Himselfe to batteill with his couched speare.
Loth was that other, and did faint through
feare,

To taste th' untryed dint of deadly steele:
But yet his Lady did so well him cheare,
That hope of new good hap he gan to feele:
So bent his speare, and spurd his horse with
yron heele.

XXXV

But that proud Paynim forward came so ferce
And full of wrath, that, with his sharpehead
speare,

Through vainly crossed shield he quite did
And, had his staggering steed not shronke for
feare,

Through shield and body eke he should him
Yet, so great was the puissance of his push,
That from his saddle quite he did him beare.
He, tumbling rudely downe, to ground did rush,
And from his gored wound a well of bloud did
gush.

XXXVI

Dismounting lightly from his loftie steed,
He to him leapt, in minde to reave his life,
And proudly said; 'Lo! there the worthie meed
Of him that slew Sansfoy with bloody knife:
Henceforth his ghost, freed from repining
strife,

In peace may passen over Lethe lake; [life,
When mourning altars, purged with enimies
The black infernall Furies doo aslake:
Life from Sansfoy thou tookst, Sansloy shall
from thee take.'

XXXVII

Therewith in haste his helmet gan unlace,
Till Una cride, 'O! hold that heave hand,
Deare Sir, what ever that thou be in place:
Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquish stand
Now at thy mercy: Mercy not withstand;
For he is one the truest knig'it aliye,
Though conquered now he lye on lowly land,
And, whilst him fortune favourd, fayre did
thrive [prive.
In bloody field; therefore, of life him not de-

XXXVIII

Her piteous wordes might not abate his rage,
But, rudely rending up his helmet, would
Have slayne him straight; but when he sees
his age,

And hoarie head of Archimago old,
His hasty hand he doth amased hold,
And halfe ashamed wondred at the sight:
For the old man well knew he, though untold,
In charmes and magick to have wondrous
might,
Ne ever wont in field, ne in round lists, to fight:

XXXIX

And said, 'Why Archimago, lucklesse syre,
What doe I see? what hard mishap is this,
That hath thee hether brought to tastemine yre?
Or thine the fault, or mine the error is,
In stead of foe to wound my friend amis?'
He answered nought, but in a traunce still lay,
And on those guilefull dazed eyes of his
The cloude of death did sit. Which doen away,
He left him lying so, ne would no lenger stay:

XL

But to the virgin comes; who all this while
Amased stands, her selfe so mockt to see
By him, who has the guerdon of his guile,
For so misfeigning her true knight to bee:
Yet is she now in more perplexitie,
Left in the hand of that same Paynim bold,
From whom her booteth not at all to tie:
Who, by her cleanly garment catching hold,
Her from her Palfrey pluckt, her visage to
behold.

XLI

But her fiers servant, full of kingly aw
And high disdain, whenas his souveraine Dame
So rudely handled by her foe he saw,
With gaping jawes full greedy at him came,
And, ramping on his shield, did weene the same
Have reft away with his sharp rending clawes:
But he was stout, and lust did now inflame
His corage more, that from his griping pawes
He hath his shield redeemd, and forth his
sword he drawes.

XLII

O! then, too weake and feeble was the forse
Of salvage beast his puissance to withstand;
For he was strong, and of so mightie corse,
As ever wielded speare in warlike hand,
And feates of armes did wisely understand.
Eft soones he-perced through his chaufed chest
With thrilling point of deadly yron brand,
And launcht his Lordly hart: with death oppress
He ro'd aloud, whiles life forsooke his stub-
borne brest.

XLIII

Who now is left to keepe the forlorne maid
From raging spoile of lawlesse victors will?
Her faithfull gard remov'd, her hope dismayd,
Her selfe a yielded pray to save or spill:

He now, Lord of the field, his pride to fill,
With foule reproches and disdaineful spight
Her wildly entertaines; and, will or nill,
Beares her away upon his couser light:
Her prayers nought prevaile, his rage is more
of might.

XLIV

And all the way, with great lamenting paine,
And piteous plaintes, she filleth his dull cares,
That stony hart could riven have in twaine;
And all the way she wetts with flowing teares;
But he, enrag'd with rancor, nothing heares.
Her servile beast yet would not leave her so,
But followes her far off, ne ought he feares
To be partaker of her wandring woe; | foe.
More mild in beastly kind then that her beastly

CANTO IV.

To sinfull hous of Pryde Duessa
Guydes the faithfull knight.
Where, brothers death to wreak, Sans-joy
Doth chaleng him to fight.

I

YOUNG knight whatever, that dost armes pro-
fesse,

And through long labours hunttest after fame,
Beware of fraud, beware of ficklenesse, [Dame;
In choice, and chaunge of thy deare-loved
Least thou of her believe too lightly blame,
And rash misweening doe thy hart remove:
For unto knight there is no greater shame
Then lightnesse and inconstancie in love:
That doth this Rederosse knights easample
plainly prove.

II

Who, after that he had faire Una lorne,
Through light misdeeming of her loialtie;
And false Duessa in her sted had borne,
Called Fidess', and so supposd to be,
Long with her traveld; till at last they see
A goodly building bravely garnished;
The house of mightie Prince it seemd to be,
And towards it a broad high way that led,
All bare through peoples feet which thether
travelled.

III

Great troupes of people traveld thetherward
Both day and night, of each degree and place;
But few returned, having scaped hard,
With balefull beggery, or foule disgrace;

Which ever after in most wretched case,
Like louthsome lazars, by the hedges lay.
Thether Duessa badd him bend his pace,
For she is wearie of the toilsom way,
And also nigh consumed is the lingring day.

IV

A stately Pallace built of squared bricke,
Which cunningly was without mortar laid,
Whose wals were high, but nothing strong
nor thick,
And golden foile all over them displaid,
That purest skye with brightnesse they dis-
maid:
High lifted up were many loftie towres,
And goodly galleries far over laid,
Full of faire windowes and delightful bowres:
And on the top a Diall told the timely howres.

V

It was a goodly heape for to behould,
And spake the praises of the workmans witt.
But full great pittie, that so faire a mould
Did on so weake foundation ever sitt:
For on a sandie hill, that still did flitt
And fall away, it mounted was full hie,
That every breath of heaven shook itt:
And all the hinder partes, that few could spie,
Were ruinous and old, but painted cunningly..

VI

Arrived there, they passed in forth right;
For still to all the gates stood open wide:
Yet charge of them was to a Porter hight,
Cald Malvenú, who entrance none denide:
Thence to the hall, which was on every side
With rich array and costly arras dight.
Infinite sortes of people did abide
There waiting long, to win the wished sight
Of her, that was the Lady of that Pallace bright.

VII

By them they passe, all gazing on them round,
And to the Presence mount; whose glorious vew
Their frayle amazed senses did confound:
In living Princes court none ever knew
Such endlesse riches, and so sumptuous shew;
Ne Persia selfe, the nourse of pompous pride,
Like ever saw. And there a noble crew
Of Lords and Ladies stood on every side,
Which with their presence fayre the place much
beautified.

VIII

High above all a cloth of State was spread,
And a rich throne, as bright as sunny day;
On which there sat, most brave embellished
With royall robes and gorgedus array,
A mayden Queene that shone as Titans ray,
In glistring gold and perelless pretious stone;
Yet her bright blazing beantie did assay
To dim the brightnesse of her glorious throne,
As envying her selfe, that too exceeding shone:

IX

Exceeding shone, like Phœbus fayrest childe,
That did presume his fathers fyric wayne,
And flaming mouthes of steedes, unwonted
wilde, [rayne:
Through highest heaven with weaker hand to
Proud of such glory and advancement vayne,
While flashing beautes do daze his feeble cye,
He leaves the welkin way most beaten playne,
And, rapt with whirling wheeles, inflames the
skye. [shyne
With fire not made to burne, but fayrely for to

X

So proud she shyned in her princely state,
Looking to heaven, for earth she did disdayne.
And sitting high, for lowly she did hate:
Lo! underneath her scornefull feete was layne
A dreadfull Dragon with an hideous trayne;
And in her hand she held a mirrhour bright,
Wherein her face she often vewed fayne,
And in her selfe-lov'd semblance took delight;
For she was wondrous faire, as any living wight.

XI

Of griesly Pluto she the daughter was,
And sad Proserpina, the Queene of hell;
Yet did she thinke her pearlesse worth to pas
That parentage, with pride so did she swell;
And thundring Jove, that high in heaven doth
dwell
And wield the world, she claymed for her syre,
Or if that any else did Jove excell;
For to the highest she did still aspyre,
Or, if ought higher were than that, did it desyre.

XII

And proud Lucifera men did her call,
That made her selfe a Queene, and crownd to be;
Yet rightfull kingdome she had none at all,
Ne heritage of native sovraintie;
But did usurpe with wrong and tyrannie
Upon the scepter which she now did hold:
Ne ruld her Realme with lawes; but pollicie,
And strong advicement of six wards old,
That, with their counsels bad, her kingdome
did uphold.

XIII

Soone as the Elfin knight in presence came,
And false Duesse, seeming Lady fayre,
A gentle Husher, Vanitie by name, [paire:
Made rowme, and passage for them did pre-
So goodly brought them to the lowest stayre
Of her high throne; where they, on humble knee
Making obeysaunce, did the cause declare,
Why they were come her roiall state to see,
To prove the wide report of her great Majestee.

XIV

With loftie eyes, halfe loth to looke so lowe,
She thauked them in her disdainfull wise;
Ne other grace vouchsafed them to shewe
Of Princessse worthy; scarce them bad arise.
Her Lordes and Ladies all this while devise
Themselves to setten forth to straungers sight:
Some frounce their curled heare in courtly
guise; [dight
Some pranke their rufes; and others trimly
Their gay attyre; each others greater pride
does spight.

XV

Goodly they all that knight doe entertayne,
Right glad with him to have increast their crew;
But to Duesse each one himselfe did payne
All kindnesse and faire courtesie to shew,
For in that court whylome her well they knew:
Yet the stout Faery mongst the middest crowd
Thought all their glorie vaine in knightly vew,
And that great Princessse too exceeding prowd,
That to strange knight no better countenance
allowd.

XVI

Suddein upriseth from her stately place
The roiall Dame, and for her coche doth call:
All hurtlen forth; and she, with princely pace,
As faire Aurora in her purple pall
Out of the East the dawning day doth call.
So forth she comes; her brightnes brode doth
blaze.

The heapes of people, thronging in the hall,
Doe ride each other upon her to gaze: [amaze.
Her glorious glitterand light doth all mens eies

XVII

So forth she comes, and to her coche does
Adorned all with gold and girlonds gay, [clyme,
That seemd as fresh as Flora in her prime;
And strove to match, in roiall rich array, [say,
Great Junoes golden chayre; the which, they
The gods stand gazing on, when she does ride
To Joves high hous through heavens bras-
paved way,

Drawne of fayre Pecoocks, that excell in pride,
And full of Argus eyes their tayles dispredden
wide.

XVIII

But this was drawne of six unequall beasts,
On which her six sage Counsellours did ryde,
Taught to obey their bestiall behests,
With like conditions to their kindes applyde:
Of which the first, that all the rest did guyde,
Was sluggish Idlenesse, the nourse of sin;
Upon a slouthfull Asse he chose to ryde,
Arayd in habit blacke, and amis thin,
Like to an holy Monck, the service to begin.

XIX

And in his hand his Portesse still he bare,
That much was worne, but therein little cedd;
For of devotion he had little care, [dedd;
Still drown'd in sleepe, and most of his daies
Scarse could he once uphold his heavie hedd,
To looken whether it were night or day.
May seeme the wayne was very evill ledd,
When such an one had guiding of the way,
That knew not whether right he went, or else
astray.

XX

From worldly cares himselfe he did esloyne,
And greatly shunned manly exercise;
From everie worke he chalenged essayne,
For contemplation sake: yet otherwise
His life he led in lawlesse riotie.
By which he grew to grievous malady;
For in his lustlesse limbs, through evill guise,
A shaking fever raignd continually.
Such one was Idlenesse, first of this company.

XXI

And by his side rode loathsome Gluttony,
Deformed creature, on a silthie swyne.
His belly was upblowne with luxury,
And eke with fatnesse swollen were his cyne;
And like a Crane his necke was long and fyne
With which he swallowed up excessive feast.
For want whereof poore peopledoft did pyne:
And all the way, most like a brutish beast,
He spued up his gorge, that all did him detest.

XXII

In greene vine leaves he was right fitly clad,
For other clothes he could not weare for heate;
And on his head an yvie girland had, [sweat.
From under which fast trickled downe the
Still as he rode he somewhat still did eat,
And in his hand did beare a bouzing can,
Of which he supt so oft, that on his seat
His dronken corse he scarce upholden can:
In shape and life more like a monster then a
man.

XXIII

Unfit he was for any worldly thing,
And eke unahle once to stirre or go;
Not meet to be of counsell to a king,
Whose mind in meat and drinke was drowned so,
That from his frend he seeldome knew his fo.
Full of diseases was his carcas blew,
And a dry dropsie through his flesh did flow,
Which by misdiet daily greater grew.
Such one was Gluttony, the second of that crew.

XXIV

And next to him rode lustfull Lechery
Upon a bearded Gote, whose rugged heare,
And whally eies (the signe of gelosy),
Was like the person selfe whom he did beare:
Whorough, and blacke, and filthy, did appeare,
Unseemely man to please faire Ladies eye;
Yet he of Ladies oft was loved deare,
When fairer faces were bid standen by:
O! who does know the bent of womens fantasy?

XXV

In a greene gowne he clothed was full faire,
Which underneath did hide his silthinesse;
And in his hand a burning hart he bare,
Full of vaine follies and new fanglenesse:
For he was false, and fraught with fickle nesse,
And learned had to love with secret lookes;
And well could daunce, and sing with rueful-
nesse;
And fortunes tell, and read in loving bookes,
And thousand other waies to bait his fleshly
hookes.

XXVI

Inconstant man, that loved all he saw,
And lusted after all that he did love;
Ne would his looser life be tide to law, [prove,
But joyd weake womens hearts to tempt, and
If from their loyall loves he might them move:
Which lewdnes sild k' m with reprochfull pain
Of that foule evill, which all men reprove,
That rotts the marrow, and consume the braine.
Such one was Lechery, the third of all this
traîne. ♀

XXVII

And greedy Avarice by him did ride,
Upon a Camell loaden all with gold;
Two iron coffers hong on either side,
With precious metall full as they might hold;
And in his lap an heap of coine he told;
For of his wicked pelfe his God he made,
And unto hell him selfe for money sold:
Accursed usury was all his trade, [waide.
And right and wrong ylike in equall ballaunce

XXVIII

His life was nigh unto deaths dore yplaste;
And thred-bare cote, and cobled shoes, hee ware;
Ne scarce good morrell all his life did taste,
But both from backe and belty still did spare,
To fill his bags, and richesse to compare:
Yet childe ne kinsman living had he none
To leave them to; but thorough daily care
To get, and nightly feare to lose his owne,
Heled a wretched life, unto himselfe unknowne.

XXIX

Most wretched wight, whom nothing might
suffise;
Whose greedy lust did lacke in greatest store;
Whose need had end, but no end covetise;
Whose welth was want, whose plenty made
him pore;
Who had enough, yett wished ever more;
A vile disease: and eke in foote and hand
A grievous gout tormented him full sore,
That well he could not touch, nor goe, nor
stand. ♀ band.
Such one was Avarice, the fourth of this faire

XXX

And next to him malicious Envy rode
Upon a ravenous wolfe, and still did chaw
Between his cankred teeth a venomous tode,
That all the poison ran about his chaw;
But inwardly he chawed his owne maw
At neighbours welth, that made him ever sad,
For death it was, when any good he saw;
And wept, that cause of weeping none he had;
But when he heard of harme he waxed wou-
drous glad.

XXXI

All in a kirtle of discoloured say
He clothed was, ypaynted full of eies;
And in his bosome secretly there lay
An hatefull Snake, the which his taile uptyes
In many folds, and mortall sting impley.
Still as he rode he gnasht his teeth to see
Those heapes of gold with griple Covetyse;
And grudged at the great felicitæ
Of proud Lucifera, and his owne companee.

XXXII

He hated all good workes and vertuous deeds,
And him no lesse, that any like did use;
And who with gracious bread the hungry feeds,
His almes for want of faith he doth accuse.
So every good to bad he doth abuse;
And eke the verse of famous Poets witt
He does backebite, and spightfull poison
spues
From leprous mouth on all that ever writt.
Such one vile Envy was, that fite in row did
sitt.

XXXIII

And him beside rides fierce revenging Wrath,
Upon a Lion, loth for to be led;
And in his hand a burning brand he hath,
The which he brandisheth about his hed;
His eies did hurle forth sparkles fiery red,
And stared sterne on all that him beheld;
As ashes pale of hew, and seeming ded;
And on his dagger still his hand he held,
Trembling through hasty rage when choler in
him sweld.

XXXIV

His ruffin raiment all was stained with blood
Which he had spilt, and all to rags yrent,
Through unadvised rashnes woxen wood;
For others hands he had no government,
Ne car'd for blood in his avengement:
But, when the furious fitt was overpast,
His cruel facts he often would repent;
Yet, wilfull man, he never would forcast
How many mischieves should ensue his heed-
lesse hast.

XXXV

Full many mischieves follow cruell Wrath:
Abhorred bloodshed, and tumultuous strife,
Unmanly murder, and unthrifty scath,
Ritter despight, with rancours rusty knife,
And fretting griefe, the enemy of life:
All these, and many evils moe haunt ire,
The swelling Splene, and Frenzy raging
rife,
The shaking Palsey, and Saint Fraunces fire,
Such one was Wrath, the last of this ungodly
tire.

XXXVI

And, after all, upon the wagon beame,
Rode Sathan with a smarting whip in hand,
With which he forward lasht the lassy tyme,
So oft as Slowth still in the mire did stand.
Huge routs of people did about them band,
Shouting for joy; and still before their way
A foggy mist had covered all the land;
And, underneath their feet, all scattered lay
Dead skulls and bones of men whose life had
gone astray.

XXXVII

So forth they marchen in this goodly sort,
To take the solace of the open aire, [sport:
And in fresh flowing fields themselves to
Emongst the rest rode that false lady faire,
The foule Duessa, next unto the faire
Of proud Lucifer, as one of the traine:
But that good knight would not so nigh
repaire,
Him selfe estraunging from their joyaunce
vaine,
Whose fellowship seemd far unfitt for warlike
swaine.

XXXVIII

So, having solaced themselves a space
With pleasure of the breathing fields yfed,
They backe returned to the princely Place;
Whereas an errant knight in armes yced,
And henthish shield, wherein with letters red,
Was writt *Sansjoy*, they new arrived find:
Enflam'd with fury and fiers hardy hed,
He seemd in hart to harbour thoughts unkind,
And nourish bloody vengeance in his bitter
mind.

XXXIX

Who, when the shamed shield of slaine
Sansfoy
He spide with that same Faery champions page,
Beswearing him that did of late destroy
His eldest brother: burning all with rage,
He to him leapt, and that same envious gage
Of victors glory from him snacht away:
But th' Elfin knight, which ought that war-
like wage,
Disdained to loose the meed he wonne in fray;
And, him rencountring fierce, reskewd the noble
pray.

XL

Therewith they gan to hurtlen greedily,
Redoubted battaile ready to darrayne,
And clash their shields, and shake their swerds
on hy, [traine;
That with their sturte they troubled all the
Till that great Queene, upon eternall paine
Of high displeasure that ensewen might,

Commaunded them their fury to refraine;
And, if that either to that shield had right,
In equall lists they should the morrow next it
fight.

XLI

'Ah dearest Dame,' quoth then the Paynim
'Pardon the error of enraged wight, [bold,
Whome great griefe made forgett the raines to
hold

Of reasons rule, to see this recreant knight,
No knight, but treachour full of false despight
And shameful treason, who through guile hath
slayn

The prowtest knight that ever field did fight.
Even stout Sansfoy, (O who can then refrayn?)
Whose shield he beares reuerset, the more to
heap disdain.

XLII

'And, to augment the glorie of his guile,
His dearest love, the faire Fidessa, loe!
Is there possessed of the traytour vile;
Who reapes the harvest sown by his foe,
Sown in bloodie field, and bought with woe:
That brothers hand shall dearly well requight.
So be, O Queene! you equall favour shewe.'
Him litle answerd th' angry Elfin knight;
He never meant with words, but swords, to
plead his right:

XLIII

But threw his gauntlet, as a sacred pledge
His cause in combat the next day to try:
So been they parted both, with harts on edge
To be aveng'd each on his enemy.
That night they pas in joy and jollity.
Feasting and courting both in bowre and hall;
For Steward was excessive Gluttony,
That of his plenty poured forth to all:
Which doen, the Chamberlain, Slowth, did to
rest them call.

XLIV

Now whenas darkesome night had all displayd
Her coleblacke curtain over brightest skye;
The warlike youtnes, on dayntie couches layd,
Did chace away sweet sleepe from sluggish
eye,

To muse on meanes of hoped victory.
But whenas Morpheus had with leaden mace
Arrested all that courtly company,
Uprose Duessa from her resting place, [pace.
And to the Paynims lodging comes with silent

XLV

Whom broad awake she findes, in troublous fitt,
Fore-casting how his foe he might annoy;
And him amoves with speeches seeming fitt:
'Ah deare Sansjoy, next dearest to Sansfoy,

Cause of my new griefe, cause of my new joy;
Joyous to see his ymage in mine eye,
And greeved to thinke how foe did him destroy,
That was the flowre of grace and chevalrye;
Lo! his Fidessa, to thy secret faith I flye.

XLVI

With gentle wordes he can her fayrely greet,
And bad say on the secretes of her hart:
Then, sighing soft; 'I learne that litle sweet
Oft tempred is.' (quoth she,) 'with muchell
smart: [dart
For since my brest was launght with lovely
Of deare Sansfoy, I never joyed howre,
But in eternall woes my weaker hart
Have wasted, loving him with all my powre,
And for his sake have felt full many an heaue
stowre.

XLVII

'At last, when perils all I weened past,
And hop'd to reape the crop of all my care,
Into new woes unweeting I was cast
By this false faytor, who unworthie ware [snare
His worthie shield, whom he with guilefull
Entrapped slew, and brought to shamefull
grave:
Me, silly maid, away with him he bare.
And ever since hath kept in darkness cave,
For that I would not yeeld that to Sansfoy I
gave.

XLVIII

'But since faire Sunne hath sperst that low-
ring clowd,
And to my loathed life now shewes some light,
Under your beames I will me safely shrowd
From dreaded storme of his disdainfull sight:
To you th' inheritance belongs by right
Of brothers prayse, to you eke longes his
love.
Let not his love, let not his restlesse spright.

Be unreveng'd, that calles to you above
From wandring Stygian shores, where it doth
endlesse move.'

XLIX

Thereto said he, 'Faire Dame, be nought dis-
maid [gone:
For sorrowes past; their griefe is with them
Ne yet of present perill be affraid,
For needlesse feare did never vantage none;
And helplesse hap it booteth not to mone.
Dead is Sansfoy, his vitall paines are past,
Though greeved ghost for vengeance deep do
grone:
He lives that shall him pay his dewties last,
And guiltie Elin blood shall sacrifice in hast.'

I.

'O! but I feare the fickle freakes,' (quoth shee)
'Of fortune false, and oddes of armes in field,'
'Why, dame,' (quoth he) 'what oddes can ever
bee.
Where both doe fight alike, to win or yield?'
'Yea, but,' (quoth she) 'he beares a charmed
shield, [perce;
And eke enchanted armes, that none can
Ne none can wound the man that does them
wield.' [ferce,
'Charmd or enchanted,' answerd he then
'I no whitte reck; ne you the like need to re-
here.

LI

'But, faire Fidessa, sithens fortunes guile,
Or enimies powre, hath now captived you,
Returne from whence ye came, and rest a while,
Till morrow next that I the Elfe subdew,
And with Sansfoyes dead dowry you endew.'
'Ah me! that is a double death,' (she said)
'With proud foes sight my sorrow to renew,
Where ever yet I be, my secret aide [obaid.
Shall follow you.' So, passing forth, she him

CANTO V.

The faithfull knight in equall field
Subdewes his faithlesse foe;
Whom false Divesa saved, and for
His cure to hell does goe,

I

THE noble hart that harbours vertuous
thought,
And is with childe of glorious great intent,
Can never rest, untill it forth have brought
Th'eternall brood of glorie excellent:

Such restlesse passion did all night torment
The flaming corage of that Faery knight,
Devising how that doughtie tournament
With greatest honour he atchieven might:
Still did he wake, and still did watch for
[dawning light,

II

At last, the golden Orientall gate
Of greatest heaven gan to open fayre;
And Phoebus, fresh as brydegrome to his mate,
Came dauncing forth, shaking his deawie
hayre. [ayre.
And hurld his glistring beaums through gloomy
Which when the wakeful Elfe perceiv'd, streight
He started up, and did him selfe prepayre [way,
In sunbright armes, and battailous array;
For with that Pagan proud he combatt will
that day.

III

And forth he comes into the commune hall;
Where earely waite him many a gazing eye,
To weet what end to straunger knights may fall.
There many Minstrales maken melody,
To drive away the dull melancholy;
And many Bardes, that to the trembling chord
Can tune their timely voices cunningly;
And many Chroniclers, that can record
Old loves, and warres for Ladies doen by many
a Lord.

IV

Soone after comes the cruell Sarazin,
In woven maille all armed warily;
And sternly lookes at him, who not a pin
Does care for looke of living creatures eye.
They bring them wines of Greece and Araby,
And daintie spices fetch from furthest Ynd,
To kindle heat of courage privily;
And in the wine a solemne oth they bynd
To observe the sacred lawes of armes that are
as ynd.

V

At last forth comes that far renowned Queene:
With royall pomp and princely majestie
She is ybrought unto a paled greene,
And placed under stately canapee,
The warlike feates of both those knights to see.
On th' other side in all mens open view
Duesse placed is, and on a tree
Sansfuy his shield is hangd with bloody hew:
Both those the lawrell girlonds to the victor
dew.

VI

A shrilling trompett soundd from on hye,
And unto battaill bad them selves addresse:
Their shining shieldes about their wrestes they
tye, [blesse.
And burning blades about their heades doe
The instruments of wrath and heavynesse.
With greedy force each other doth assaile,
And strike so fiercely, that they do im presse
Deepe dinted furrowes in the battred mayle:
The yron walles to ward their blowes are weak
and fraile.

VII

The Sarazin was stout and wondrous strong,
And heaped blowes like yron hammers great;
For after blood and vengeance he did long:
The knight was fiers, and full of youthly heat,
And doubled strokes, like dreaded thunders
threat:
For all for praise and honour he did fight.
Both stricken stryke, and beaten both doe beat,
That from their shields forth flyeth fire light,
And hewen helmets deepe shew marks of eithers
might.

VIII

So th' one for wrong, the other strives for
right.
As when a Gryfon, seized of his pray,
A Dragon fiers encountreth in his flight,
Through wildest ayre making his ydle way,
That would his rightfull ravine rend away:
With hideous horror both together smight,
And souce so sore that they the heavens affray;
The wise South-ayer, seeing so sad sight,
Th' amazed vulgar telles of warres and mortall
flight.

IX

So th' one for wrong, the other strives for
right,
And each to deadly shame would drive his foe:
The cruell steele so greedily doth bight
In tender flesh, that streames of blood down
flow; [show,
With which the armes, that earst so bright did
Into a pure vermillion now are dyde.
Great ruth in all the gazers harts did grow,
Seeing the gored woundes to gape so wyde,
That victory they dare not wish to either side.

X

At last the Paynim chaunst to cast his eye,
His sudden eye flaming with wrathfull fyre,
Upon his brothers shield, which hong thereby:
Therewith redoubled was his raging yre,
And said; 'Ah! wretched sonne of wofull ayre,
Doeest thou sit wayling by blacke Stygian lake,
Whylest here thy shield is hangd for victors
hyre?

And, sluggish german, doest thy forces slake
To after-send his foe, that him may overtake?

XI

'Goe, caytive Elfe, him quickly overtake,
And soone redeeme from his long-wandering
woe:
Goe, guiltie ghost, to him my message make,
'That I his shield have quit from dying foe.'
Therewith upon his crest he stroke him so,
I hat twice he reeled, readie twice to fall;

End of the doubtfull battaile deaped the
The lookers on; and lowd to him gan call
The false Duessa, 'Thine the shield, and I, and
all!'

XII

Soone as the Faerie heard his Ladie speake,
Out of his shawning dreame he gan awake;
And quickning sawh, that earst was woxen
weake,

The creeping deadly cold away did shake:
Tho mov'd with wrath, and shame, and Ladies
Of all attence, he cast avengd to be, [sake,
And with so' exceeding furie at him strake,
That forced him to stoupe upon his knee:
Had he not stouped so, he should have cloven
bee.

XIII

And to him said; 'Goe now, proud Miscreant,
Thyselfe thy message do to german deare;
Alone he, wandring, thee too long doth want:
Goe say, his foe thy shield with his doth beare.'
Therewith his heave hand he high gan reare,
Him to have slaine; when lo! a darkesome
clowd

Upon him fell: he so where doth appeare,
But vanisht is. The Elle him calls aloud,
But answer none receives; the darknes him
does shrowd.

XIV

In haste Duessa from her place arose,
And to him running said; 'O! provest knight,
That ever Ladie to her love did chose,
Let now abate the terrour of your might,
And quench the flame of furious despight,
And bloodie vengeance: lo! th' infernall
powres,
Covering your foe with cloud of deadly night.
Have borne him hence to Plutoes balefull
bowres: [glory yours,
The conquest yours; I yours; the shield, and

XV

Not all so satisfide, with greedy eye
He sought all round about, his thirsty blade
To bathe in blood of faithlesse enemy;
Who all that while lay hid in secret shade.
He standes amazed how he thence should fade:
At last the trumpets Triumph sound on he;
And running Heralds humble homage made,
Greeting him goodly with new victorie.
And to him brought the shield, the cause of
enmitie.

XVI

Wherewith he goeth to that sovaine
Queene;
And falling her before on lowly knee,

To her makes present of his service seene:
Which she accepts with thankses and goodly
Greatly advauncing his gay chevalree: [gree,
So marcheth home, and by her takes the
knight,

Whom all the people followe with great glee,
Shouting, and clapping all their hands on
hight. [bright,
That all the ayre it fills, and flies to heaven

XVII

Home is he brought, and layd in sumptons
Where many skilfull leaches him abide [bed,
To salve his hurts, that yet still freshly bled.
In wine and oyle they wash his woundes wide,
And softly gan embalne on everie side:
And all the while most heavenly melody
About the bed sweet musicke did divide,
Him to beguile of grieve and agony;
And all the while Duessa wept full bitterly.

XVIII

As when a wearie traveller, that straves
By muddy shore of broad seven-mouthed Nile,
Unweeting of the perillous wandring waves,
Doth meete a cruell craftie Crocodile. [guile,
Which, in false grieve hyding his harmefull
Doth weepe full sore, and sheddeth tender
The foolish man, that pities all this while [teares;
His mournfull plight, is swallowed up un-
wares, [cares,
Forgetfull of his owne that mindes an others

XIX

So wept Duessa untill eventide,
That shynning lampes in Joves high house
were light;
Then forth she rose, no lenger would abide,
But comes unto the place where th' Methien
knight. [spright,
In shewbring swownd, nigh voyd of vitall
Lay coverd with mehaunted cloud all day:
Whom when she found, as she him left in
pight,
To wayle his wofull case she would not stay,
But to the Easterne coast of heaven makes
speedy way:

XX

Where griesly Night, with visage deadly sad,
That Phoebus chearefull face durst never view,
And in a foule blacke pitchy mantle clad, [mew,
She findes forth comming from her darkesome
Where she all day did hide her hated heve.
Before the dore her yron charet stood,
Already harnesssed for journey new,
And cole blacke steedes yborne of hellish brood,
That on their rusty bits did champ as they
were wood.

XXI

Who when she saw Duessa, sunny bright,
Adorn'd with gold and jewels shining cleare,
She greatly grew amazed at the sight,
And th' unacquainted light began to feare,
For never did such brightness there appeare;
And would have backe retired to her cave,
Untill the witches speach she gan to heare,
Saying; 'Yet. O thou dreaded Dame! I crave
Abyde, till I have told the message which I
have.'

XXII

She stayd; and fourth Duessa gan proceede.
'O! thou most auncient Grandmother of all.
More old then Jove, whom thou at first didst
breede,

Or that great house of Gods celestiall,
Which wast begot in Demogorgon's hall,
And sawst the secrets of the world unmade.
Why sufferst thou thy Nephewes deare to fall
With Elfin sword most shamefully betrade?
Lo! where the stout Sansjoy doth sleepe in
deadly shade.

XXIII

'And him before, I saw with bitter eyes
The bold Sansjoy shrink underneath his speare.
And now the pray of fowles in field he lyes,
Nor wayld of friends, nor layd on grouning
heare,
That whylome was to me too dearly deare.
O! what of gods then boots it to be borne,
If old Aveugles sonnes so evil heare?
Or who shall not great Nightes children scorne.
When two of three her Nephewes are so fowle
forlorne?

XXIV

'Up, then! up, dreary Dame, of darknes
Queene!
Go, gather up the reliques of thy race;
Or else goe them avenge, and let be seene
That dreaded Night in brightest day hath
place,
And can the children of fayre light deface.'
Her feeling speeches some compassion mov'd
In hart, and chaunge in that great mothers face:
Yet pitty in her hart was never prov'd
Till then, for evermore she hated, never lov'd:

XXV

And said, 'Deare daughter, rightly may I rewe
The fall of famous children borne of mee,
And good successes which their foes ensue:
But who can turne the stream of destinee,
Or brake the chayne of strong necessitee,
Which fast is tyde to Joves eternall seat?
The sonnes of Day he favoureth, I see,

And by my^o ruines thinkes to make them great:
To make one great by others losse is bad ex-
cheat.'

XXVI

'Yet shall they not escape so freely all,
For some shall pay the price of others guilt;
And he the man that made Sansjoy to fall,
Shall with his owne blood price that he hath
spilt.

But what art thou, that telst of Nephews kilt?'
'I, that do seeme not I, Duessa am,'
Quoth she, 'how ever now, in garments gilt
And gorgeous gold arayd, I to thee came,
Duessa I, the daughter of Deceit and Shame.'

XXVII

Then, bowing downe her aged backe, she kist
The wicked witch, saying, 'In that fayre face
The false resemblance of Deceit, I wist,
Did closely lurke; yet so true-seeming grace
It carried, that I scarce in darksome place
Could it discern, though I the mother be
Of falshood, and roote of Duessaes race.
O welcome, child! whom I have longd to see,
And now have seene unware. Lo! now I goe
with thee.'

XXVIII

Then to her yron wagon she betakes,
And with her beares the fowle welfavoured
witch. [makes.
Through mirkesome aire her ready way she
Her twyfold Teme, of which two blacke as
pitch,
And two were browne, yet each to each unlich,
Did softly swim away, ne ever stamp
Unless she chaunst their stubborne mouths
to twitch; [champ,
Then, loming tarre, their bridles they would
And trampling the fine element would fiercely
ramp.

XXIX

So well they sped, that they be come at length
Unto the place whereas the Pajnym lay,
Devoid of outward sence and native strength,
Coverd with charmed cloud from vew of day,
And sight of men, since his late luckelesse fray.
His cruell wounds, with cruddy bloud con-
geald,
They binden up so wisely as they may,
And handle softly, till they can be heald:
So lay him in her charett, close in night con-
ceald.

XXX

And, all the while she stood upon the ground,
The wakefull dogs did never cease to bay,
As giving warning of th' unwonted sound,
With which her yron wheelles did them affray,

And her darke griesly looke them much dismay:
The messenger of death, the ghastly owle,
With dreary shriekes did also her bewray;
And hungry wolves continually did howle
At her abhorred face, so filthy and so fowle.

XXXI

Thence turning backe in silence softe they
stole,
And brought the heavy corse with easy pace
To yawning gulfe of deepe Avernus hole.
By that same hole an entraunce, darke and
base,
With smoake and sulphur hiding all the place,
Descends to hell there creature never past,
That backe returned without heavenly
grace;
But dreadfull Furies, which their chaines have
brast, [men aghast,
And damned sprights sent forth to make ill

XXXII

By that same way the direfull dames doe
drive
Their mournfull charett, fild with rusty blood,
And downe to Plutoes house are come bilive:
Which passing through, on every side them
stood
The trembling ghosts with sad amazed mood,
Chattring their iron teeth, and staring wide
With stony eies; and all the hellish brood
Of feends infernal flockt on every side,
To gaze on erthly wight that with the Night
durst ride.

XXXIII

They pas the bitter waves of Acheron,
Where many soules sit wailing woefully,
And come to fiery flood of Phlegeton,
Whereas the damned ghosts in torments fry,
And with sharp shrilling shriekes doe bootlesse
cry,
Cursing high Iove, the which them thithersent.
The house of endlesse paine is built thereby,
In which ten thousand sorts of punishment
The cursed creatures doe eternally torment.

XXXIV

Before the threshold dreadfull Cerberus
His three deformed heads did lay along,
Curled with thousand adders venomous,
And lilled forth his bloody flaming tong:
At them he gan to reare his bristles strong,
And felly gnarre, untill Dayes enemy
Did him appease; then downe his taile he
hong,
And suffered them to passen quietly;
For she in hell and heave had power equally.

XXXV

There was Ixion turned on a wheele,
For daring tempt the Queene of heaven to sin;
And Sisyphus an huge round stone did reele
Against an hill, ne might from labour lin:
There thrifty Tantalus hong by the chin;
And Tityus fed a vultur on his knaw;
Typhæus joynts were stretched on a gln;
Theseus condemned to endlesse slouth by law;
And fifty sisters water in leke vessels draw.

XXXVI

They all, beholding worldly wights in place,
Leave off their worke, unmindfull of their smart,
To gaze on them; who forth by them doe pace,
Till they be come unto the furthest part;
Where was a Cave ywrought by vondrous art.
Deepe, darke, uneasy, dolefull, comfortlesse.
In which sad Aesculapius far apart
Emprisoned was in chaines remedlesse;
For that Hippolytus rent corse he did redresse.

XXXVII

Hippolytus a jolly huntsman was,
That wont in charett chace the foming bore:
He all his Peeres in beauty did surpas,
But Ladies love as losse of time forbore:
His wanton stepdame loved him the more;
But, when she saw her offred sweets refusd,
Her love she turnd to hate, and him before
His father fierce of treason false accusd,
And with her gealous termes his open eares
abused:

XXXVIII

Who, all in rage, his Sea-god syre besought
Some cursed vengeance on his sonne to cast.
From surging gulf two Monsters straight were
brought,
With dread whereof his chacing steedes aghast
Both, charett swifte and huntaman overcast:
His goodly corps, on ragged cliffs yrent,
Was quite dismembred, and his members chast
Scattered on every mountaine as he went,
That of Hippolytus was left no monument.

XXXIX

His cruell step-dame, seeing what was donne,
Her wicked daies with wretched knife did end,
In death avowing th' innocence of her sonne.
Which hearing, his rash syre began to rend
His heare, and hasty tong that did offend:
Tho, gathering up the reliques of his smart,
By Dianas meanes, who was Hippolyts frend,
Them brought to Aesculape, that by his art
Did heale them all againe, and joynd every
part.

XL.

Such wondrous science in mans witt to rain
When Jove avizd, that could the dead revive,
And fates expired could renew again,
(Of endlesse life he might him not deprive,
But unto hell did thrust him downe alive,
With flashing thunderbolt ywounded sore:
Where, long remaining, he did alwaies strive
Himselfe with salves to health for to restore,
And slake the heavenly fire that rag'd ever-
more.

XLI

There auncient Night arriving did alight
From her nigh weary wayne, and in her armes
To Aesculapius brought the wounded knight:
Whome having softly disarail of armes,
Tho gan to him discover all his harmes,
Beseeching him with prayer and with praise,
If either salves, or oyles, or herbes, or charmes,
A forlonne wight from dore of death mote raise,
He would at her request prolong her nephews
daies.

XLII

'Ah Dame,' (quoth he) 'thou temptest me
in vaine,
To dare the thing, which daily yet I rew,
And the old cause of my continued paine
With like attempt to like end to renew.
Is not enough, that, thrust from heaven dew,
Here endlesse penance for one fault I pay,
But that redoubled crime with vengeance new
Thou biddest me to ceke? Can Night defray
The wrath of thundering Jove, that rules both
night and day?'

XLIII

'Not so,' (quoth she) 'but, sith that heavens
king
From hope of heaven hath thee excluded quight,
Why fearest thou, that canst not hope for thing;
And fearest not that more thee hurten might,
Now in the powre of everlasting Night?
Goe to then, O thou far renowned sonne
Of great Apollo! shew thy famous might
In medicine, that els hath to thee wonne
Great pains, and greater praise, both never to
be donne.'

XLIV

Her words prevaild: And then the learned
leach
His cunning hand gan to his wounds to lay,
And all things els the which his art did teach:
Which having seene, from thence arose away
The mother of dredd darknesse, and let stay
Aveugles sonne there in the leaches cure;
And, backe retourning, took her wonted way

To ronne her timely race, whilst Phoebus
pure
In westerne waves his weary wagon did recure.

XLV

The false Duessa, leaving noyous Night,
Returnd to stately pallace of Dame Pryde:
Where when she came, she found the Faery
knight
Departed thence; albee his wounded wyde
Not throughly heald unready were to ryde.
Good cause he had to hasten thence away;
For on a day his wary Dwarf had spyde
Where in a dungeon deepe huge numbers
lay
Of caytive wretched thralls, that wayled night
and day:

XLVI

A ruefull sight as could be scene with eie,
Of whom he learned had in secret wise
The hidden cause of their captivtie;
How mortgaging their lives to Covetise,
Through wastfull Pride and wanton Riotise,
They were by law of that proud Tyrannesse,
Provokt with Wrath and Envyes false surmise,
Condemned to that Dungeon mercilesse,
Where they should live in wo, and dye in
wretchednesse.

XLVII

There was that great proud king of Babylon,
That would compell all nations to adore,
And him as onely God to call upon;
Till, through celestiall doome thrown out of
Into an Oxe he was transformd of yore. [dore,
There also was king Croesus, that enhaunst
His hart too high through his great richesse
store;
And proud Antiochus, the which advaunst
His cursed hand gainst God, and on his altares
daunst.

XLVIII

And them long time before, great Nimrod was,
That first the world with sword and fire war-
And after him old Niinus far did pas [rayd;
In princely pomp, of all the world obayd.
There also was that mightie Monarch layd
Low under all, yet above all in pride,
That name of native syre did fowle upbrayd,
And would as Ammons sonne be magnifide,
Till, scorn of God and man, a shamefull death
he bide.

XLIX

All these together in one heape were throwne,
Like carcases of beastes in butchers stall.
And in another corner wide were strowne
The Antique ruins of the Romanes fall:

Great Romulus, the Grandsyre of them all;
Proud Tarquin, and too lordly Ientulus;
Stout Scipio, and stubborne Hanniball;
Ambitious Sylla, and sterne Marius; [nius.
High Caesar, great Pompey, and fiers Anto-

L

Amongst these mightie men were women mixt,
Proud women, vaine, forgetfull of their yoke:
The bold Semiramis, whose sides transfixt
With sonnes' own blade her fowle reproches
spoke:

Fayre Sthenobcea, that her selfe did choke
With wilfull chorde for wanting of her will;
High minded Cleopatra, that with stroke
Of Aspes sting her selfe did stoutly kill;
And thousands moe the like that did that don-
geon fill.

LI

Besides the endlessse routes of wretched
thralls,
Which thither were assembled day by day
From all the world, after their wofull falles,
Through wicked pricke and wasted welthes
decay.

But most of all, which in that dongeon lay,
Fell from high Princes courtes, or Ladies
bowres,
Where they in ydle pomp, or wanton play,

Consumed had their goods and thriftlesse
howres, [stowres.
And lastly thrown themselves into these heavy

LII

Whose case whenas the careful Dwarfe had
tould,
And made ensample of their mournfull sight
Unto his Maister, he no longer would
There dwell in perill of like painefull plight,
But early rose; and, ere that dawning
light
Discovered had the world to heaven wyde,
He by a privy Posterne tooke his flight,
That of no envious eyes he mote be spyde;
For, doubtlesse, death enswed if any him des-
cryde.

LIII

Scarse could he footing find in that fowle way,
For many corses, like a great Lay-stall,
Of mured men, which therein strowed lay
Without remorse or decent funerall;
Which al through that great Princesse prude
did fall,
And came to shamefull end. And them besyde,
Forth ryding underneath the castell wall,
A Donghill of dead carcasses he spyde:
The dreadfull spectacle of that sad house of
Pryde.

CANTO VI.

From lawlesse lust by wondrous grace
Fayre Una is releast:
Whom salvage nation doe adore,
And learns her wise becaust.

I

As when a ship, that flies fayre under sayle,
An hidden rocke escaped hath unwages,
That lay in waite her wrack for to bewaile,
The Marriner yet halfe amazed stares
At perill past, and yet in doubt ne dares
To joy at his foolhappie oversight:
So doubly is distrest twixt joy and cares
The dreadlesse corage of this Elfin knight,
Having escaped so sad ensamples in his sight.

II

Yet sad he was, that his too hastie speed
The fayre Duess' had forst him leave behind;
And yet more sad, that Una, his deare dreed,
Her truth had staynd with treason so unkind:

Yet cyme in her could never creature find;
But for his love, and for her own selfe sake,
She wandred had from one to other Ynd,
Him for to seeke, ne ever would forsake,
Till her unwares the fiers Sansloy did overtake:

III

Who, after Archimagos fowle defeat,
Led her away into a forest wilde;
And, turning wrathfull syre to lustfull heat,
With beastly sin thought her to have defilde,
And made the vassall of his pleasures vilde.
Yet first he cast by treatie, and by traynes
Her to perswade that stubborne fort to yilde:
For greater conquest of hard love he gaynes,
That workes it to his will, then he that it con-
straines.

IV

With fawning wordes he courted her a while;
And, looking lovely and oft sighing sore,
Her constant hart did tempt with diverse guile:
But wordes, and lookes, and sighes she did
As rock of Diamond stedfast evermore. [abhorre;
Yet for to feed his fyrie lustfull eye,
He snatcht the veile that hong her face before:
Then gan her beautie shyne as brightest skye,
And burnt his beasty hart t'efforce her cha-
stitye.

V

So when he saw his flatt'ring artes to fayle,
And subtle engines bett from batteree;
With greedy force he gan the fort assaile,
Whereof he weend possessed soone to bee,
And win rich spoile of ransackt chastitee.
Ah heavens! that doe this hideous act behold,
And heavenly virgin thus outraged see,
How can ye vengeance just so long withhold,
And hurle not flashing flames upon that Pay-
nim bold?

VI

The pitteous mayden, carefull, comfortlesse,
Does throw out thrilling shriekes, and shriek-
ing cryes,
The last vaine helpe of womens great distresse,
And with loud plaintes importuneth the skyes,
That molten starres doe drop like weeping eyes;
And Phœbus, tyng so most shamefull sight,
His blushing face in foggy cloud implies,
And hydes for shame. What witt of mortal
wight | plight?
Can now devise to quitt a thrall from such a

VII

Eternall providence, exceeding thought,
Where none appeares can make her selfe a way
A wondrous way it for this Lady wrought,
From Lyons clawes to pluck the gryped pray.
Her shrill outcries and shriekes so loud did bray,
That all the woodes and forestes did resound:
A troupe of Faunes and Satyres far away
Within the wood were dauncing in a rownd,
Whiles old Sylvanus slept in shady arbor
sownd:

VIII

Who, when they heard that pitteous strained
In haste forsooke their rurall merriment, [voice,
And ran towards the far rebownded noyce,
To weet what wight so loudly did lament.
Unto the place they come incontinent:
Whom when the raging Sarazin espyde,
A rude, mishapen, monstrous rablement,
Whose like he never saw, he durst not byde,
But got his ready steed, and fast away gan
ryde.

IX

The wyld woodgods, arrived in the place,
There find the virgin, doolfull, desolate,
With ruffled rayments, and layre blubbered face,
As her outrageous foe had left her late; [hate,
And trembling yet through feare of former
All stand amazed at so uncouth sight,
And gin to pittie her unhappie state:
All stand astonied at her beautie bright,
In their rude eyes unworthie of so wofull plight.

X

She, more amazd, in double dread doth
dwell;
And every tender part for feare does shake.
As when a greedy Wolfe, through hunger fell,
A seely Lamb far from the flock does take,
Of whom he meanes his bloody feast to make,
A Lyon spyes fast running towards him,
The innocent pray in hast he does forsake;
Which, quitt from death, yet quakes in every
him [grim.
With chaunge of feare, to see the Lyon looke so

XI

Such fearefull sitt assaid her trembling hart,
Xe word to speake, ne joynt to move, she had;
The salvage nation feele her secret smart,
And read her sorrow in her count'nance sad;
Their frowning forheades, with rough hornes
And rustick horror, all asyde doe lay; [yclad,
And, gently greeming, shew a semblance glad
To comfort her; and, feare to put away,
Their backward bent knees teach her humbly
to obey.

XII

The doubtfull Damzell dare not yet committ
Her single person to their barbarous truth;
But still twist feare and hope amazd does sitt,
Late leard what harme to hasty trust ensu'th.
They, in compassion of her tender youth,
And wonder of her beautie soverayne,
Are wonne with pity and unwonted ruth;
And, all prostrate upon the lowly playne,
Doe kisse her feete, and fawne on her with
count'nance fayne

XIII

Their harts she ghesseth by their humble
And yielde her to extremitie of time; [guise,
So from the ground she fearelesse doth arise,
And walketh forth without suspect of crime.
They, all as glad as birdes of joyous Pryme,
Thence lead her forth, about her dauncing
round,
Shouting, and singing all a shepherds ryme;

And with greene branches strowng all the
ground,
Do worship her as Queene with olive girlond
cround.

XIV

And all the way their merry pipes they sound.
That all the woods with doubled Echo ring;
And with their horned feet doe weare the
ground,
Leaping like wanton kids in pleasant Spring.
So towards old Sylvanus they her bring;
Who, with the noyse awaked, cometh out
To weet the cause, his weake steps governing
And aged limbs on cypresse staddle stout,
And with an yvie twyne his waste is girt about.

XV

Far off he wonders what them makes so glad;
Or Bacchus merry fruit they did invent,
Or Cybelus franticke rites have made them mad:
They, drawing nigh, unto their God present
That flowre of fayth and beautie excellent.
The God himselfe, vewing that mirrhour rare,
Stood long amazed, and burpt in his intent:
His owne fayre Dryope now he thynkes not faire,
And Pholoe fowle, when her to this he doth
compaire.

XVI

The woodborne people fall before her flat,
And worship her as Goddesses of the wood;
And old Sylvanus selfe bethynkes not what
To thinke of wight so fayre, but gazing stood
In doubt to deeme her borne of earthly brood:
Sometimes dame Venus selfe he seemes to see;
But Venus never had so sober mood:
Sometimes Diana he her takes to be,
But misseeth bow and shaftes, and buskins to
her knee.

XVII

By vew of her he ginneth to revive
His ancient love, and dearest Cyparisse:
And calles to mind his pourtraiture alive,
How fayre he was, and yet not fayre to this:
And how he slew with glauncing dart amisse
A gentle Hynd, the which the lovely boy
Did love as life, above all worldly blisse:
For griefe whereof the lad n'ould after joy,
But pynd away in anguish and selfe-wild
annoy.

XVIII

The woo ldy nymphes, faire Hamadryades,
Her to behold do thither runne apace;
And all the troupe of light-foot Naiades
Flocke all about to see her lovely face;

But, when they vewed have her heavenly grace,
They envy her in their malicious mind,
And fly away for feare of fowle disgrace:
But all the Satyres scorne their woody kind,
And henceforth nothing faire but her on earth
they find.

XIX

Glad of such lucke, the luckeiesse lucky mayd
Did her content to please their feeble eyes,
And long time with that salvage people stayd,
To gather breath in many miscreyes,
During which time her gentle wit she plyes
To teach them truth, which worshipt her in
And made her th' Image of Idolatryes; | vaine,
But when their bootlesse zeale she did restrayne
From her own worship, they her Asse would
worship fayn

XX

It fortun'd, a noble warlike knight
By just occasion to that Forrest came
To seeke his kindred, and the lignage right
From whence he tooke his weldeserved name:
He had in armes abroad wonne muchell fame,
And fild far landes with glorie of his might:
Plaine, faithfull, true, and enny of shame,
And ever lov'd to fight for Ladies right;
But in vaine glorious frayes he litle did delight.

XXI

A Satyres sonne, yborne in Forrest wyld,
By straunge adventure as it did betyde,
And there begotten of a lady myld,
Fayre Thyamis, the daughter of Labryde;
That was in sacred bandes of wedlocke tyde
To Therion, a loose unruly swayne,
Who had more joy to raunge the Forrest wyde,
And chase the salvage beast with busie payne,
Then serve his Ladies love, and waste in
pleasures vayne.

XXII

The forlorne mayd did with loves longing
burne,
And could not lacke her lovers company;
But to the woods she goes, to serve her turne,
And seeke her spouse that from her still does fly,
And followes other game and venery:
A Satyre chaunst her wandring for to finde;
And, kindling coles of lust in brutish eye,
The loyall linkes of wedlocke did unbinde,
And made her person thrall unto his beastly
kind.

XXIII

So long in secret cabin there he held
Her captive to his sensuall desyre,
Till that with timely fruit her belly sweld,
And bore a boy unto that salvage syre:

Then home he suffred her for to retyre,
For ransome leaving him the late-borne childe;
Whom, till to ryper yeares he gan aspyre,
He noursled up in life and manners wilde,
Emongst wild beastes and woods, from lawes
of men exilde.

XXIV

For all he taught the tender ymp was but
To banish cowardize and bastard feare:
His trembling hand he would him force to put
Upon the Lyon and the rugged Beare; [teare;
And from the she Beares teats her whelps to
And eke wyld roring Buls he would him make
To tame, and ryde their backes, not made to
beare;
And the Robuckes in flight to overtake, [quake.
That everie beast for feare of him did fly, and

XXV

Thereby so fearlesse and so fell he grew,
That his own syre, and maister of his guise,
Did often tremble at his horrid vew;
And oft, for dread of hurt, would him advise
The angry beastes not rashly to despise,
Nor too much to provoke; for he would learne
The Lyon stoup to him in lowly wise,
(A lesson hard) and make the Libbard sterne
Leave roaring, when in rage he for revenge did
earne.

XXVI

And for to make his powre approved more,
Wyld beastes in yron yokes he would compell;
The spotted Panther, and the tusked Bore,
The Pardale swift, and the Tigre cruell,
The Antelope, and Wolfe both fiers and fell;
And them constraine in equall tyme to draw.
Such joy he had their stubborne harts to quell,
And sturdie courage tame with dreadfull aw,
That his beheast they feared as a tyrans law.

XXVII

His loving mother came upon a day
Unto the woodes, to see her little sonne;
And chaunst unwares to meet him in the way,
After his sportes and cruell pastime donne;
When after him a Lyonesse did runne,
That roaring all with rage did lowd requere
Her children deare, whom he away had wonne:
The Lyon whelpes she saw how he did beare,
And lull in rugged armes withouten childish
feare.

XXVIII

The fearefull Dame all quaked at the sight,
And turning backe gan fast to fly away;
Untill, with love revokt from vaine affright,
She hardly yet perswaded was to stay,

And then to him these womanish words gan
'Ah Satyrane, my dearling and my joy, [say:
For love of me leave off this dreadfull play;
To dally thus with death is no fit toy:
Go, find some other play-fellowes, mine own
sweet boy.'

XXIX

In these and like delightes of bloody game
He prayned was, till ryper yeares he raught;
And there abode, whylst any beast of name
Walkt in that forrest, whom he had not taught
To feare his force: and then his courage
haught
Desyrd of forreine foemen to be knowne,
And far abroad for straunge adventures sought;
In which his might was never overthrowne;
But through al Faery lond his famous worth
was blown.

XXX

Yet evermore it was his maner faire,
After long labours and adventures spent,
Unto those native woods for to repaire,
To see his syre and offspring aunient.
And now he thither came for like intent;
Where he unwares the fairest Una found,
Straunge Lady in so straunge habillment,
Teaching the Satyres, which her sat around,
Trew sacred lore, which from her sweet lips did
redound.

XXXI

He wondred at her wisdoms heavenly rare,
Whose like in womens witt he never knew;
And, when her curteous deeds he did compare,
Gan her admire, and her sad sorrowes rewe,
Blaming of Fortune, which such troubles threw.
And joyd to make prooffe of her cruelty
On gentle Dame, so hurtlesse and so trow:
Thenceforth he kept her goodly company,
And learmed her discipline of faith and verity.

XXXII

But she, all vowd unto the Redcrosse Knight,
His wandring perill closely did lament,
Ne in this new acquaintaunce could delight;
But her deare heart with anguish did torment,
And all her witt in secret counsels spent,
How to escape. At last in privy wise
To Satyrane she shewed her intent;
Who, glad to gain such favour, gan devise,
How with that pensive Maid he best might
thence arise.

XXXIII

So on a day, when Satyres all were gone
To do their service to Sylvanus old,
The gentle virgin, left behinde alone,
He led away with corage stout and bold,

Too late it was to Satyres to be fold,
Or ever hope recover her againe:
In vaine he seeks that having cannot hold.
So fast he carried her with careful paine,
That they the woods are past, and come now
to the plaine.

XXXIV

The better part now of the lingering day
They traveld had, whenas they far espide
A weary wight forwarding by the way:
And towards him they gan in haste to ride,
To weete of newes that did abroad betide,
Or tidings of her knight of the Rederosse,
But he them spying gan to turne aside
For feare, as seemed, or for some feigned losse:
More greedy they of newes fast towards him
do crosse.

XXXV

A silly man, in simple weeds forworne,
And sold with dust of the long dried way;
His sandals were with toilsome travell torne,
And face all tann'd with scorching sunny ray,
As he had traveld many a summers day
Through boyling sands of Arabie and Ynde,
And in his hand a Jacobs staffe, to stay
His weary limbs upon; and eke behind
His scrip did hang, in which his needments he
did bind.

XXXVI

The knight, approaching nigh, of him inquerd
Tidings of warre, and of adventures new;
But warres, nor new adventures, none he herd.
Then Una gan to aske, if ought he knew,
Or heard abroad of that her champion trew,
That in his armour bare a croslet red?
Ay me! Deare dame,' (quoth he) 'well may
I rewe

To tell the sad sight which mine eyes have red;
These eyes did see that knight both living and
eke ded.'

XXXVII

That cruell word her tender hart so thrild,
That sudden cold did runne through every
And stony horror all her senses filld: [vaine,
With dying fitt, that downe she fell for paine.
The knight her lightly reared up againe,
And comforted with courteous kind reliefe:
Then, wonne from death, she bad him tellen
plaine

The further processe of her hidden grieve:
The lesser pangs can beare who hath endur'd
the chief.

XXXVIII

Then gan the Pilgrim thus: 'I chaunst this
This fatali day that shall I ever rewe. [day,
To see two knights, in travell on my way,
(A sorry sight) arraung'd in batteill new,

Both breathing vengeance, both of wrathfull
hew.

My fearful flesh did tremble at their strife,
To see their blades so greedily imbrow,
That, dronke with blood, yet thirsted after life:
What more? the Rederosse knight was slain
with Paynim knife.'

XXXIX

'Ah! dearest Lord,' (quoth she) 'how might
that bee,
And he the stoutest knight that ever wonne?'
'Ah! dearest dame,' (quoth he) 'how might I
see

The thing that might not be, and yet was done?'
'Where is,' (said Satyrane) 'that Paynim
sonne,

That him of life, and us of joy, hath reft?'
'Not faraway,' (quoth he) 'he hence doth wonne,
Foreby a fountaine, where I late him left
Washing his bloody wounds, that through the
steele were cleft.'

XL

Therewith the knight thence marched forth
in hast,

Whiles Una, with huge heavinesse oppress,
Could not for sorrow follow him so fast:
And soone he came, as he the place had ghest,
Whereas that Pagan proud him selfe did rest
In secret shadow by a fountaine side:
Even he it was, that erst would have suppress
Faïre Una: whom when Satyrane espide,
With foule reprochfull words he boldly him
defide.

XLI

And said; 'Arise, thou cursed Misereant,
That art with knightlesse guile, and trech-
erous train, [vaunt
Faïre knight hood fowly shamed, and doest
That good knight of the Rederosse to have slain:
Arise, and with like treason now maintain
Thy guilty wrong, or els thee guilty yelde.'
The Sarazin, thus hearing, rose amain,
And, catching up in hast his three-square shield
And shining helmet, soone him buckled to the
field.

XLII

And, drawing nigh him, said; 'Ah! mishorn
In evill houre thy foes thee hither sent [Elfe,
Anothers wrongs to wreak upon thy selfe:
Yet ill thou blamest me for having blent
My name with guile and traiterous intent:
That Rederosse knight, perdie, I never slew;
But had he beene where earst his armes were
lent,

Th' enchaunter vaine his error should not rewe;
But thou his error shalt, I hope, now proven
trew.'

XLIII

Therewith they gan, both furious and fell,
To thrnder blowes, and fiersly to assaile
Each other, bent his enemy to quell,
That with their force they perst both plate
and maile,

And made wide furrowes in their fleshes fraile,
That it would pittie any living eie. [raile;
Large floods of blood adowne their sides did
But floods of blood could not them satisfie:
Both hongred after death; both chose to win,
or die.

XLIV

So long they fight, and full revenge pursue,
That, fainting, each themselves to breathe lett,
And, ofte refreshed, battell oft renewe.
As when two Bores, with ranceling malice mett,
Their gory sides fresh bleeding fiercely frett;
Til breathlesse both themselves aside retire.
Where foming wrath their cruell tuskes they
whett, [respure,
And trample th' earth, the whiles they may
Then backe to fight againe, new breathed and
entire.

XLV

So fiersly, when these knights had breathed
once,
They gan to fight retourne, increasing more
Their puissant force, and cruell rage attonce,
With heaped strokes more hugely then before;
That with their drery wounds, and bloody gore,
They both, deformed, scarcely could bee known.
By this, sad Una fraught with anguish sore,

Led with their noise which through the aire
was thrown, [had sown.
Arriv'd wher they in erth their fruitles blood

XLVI

Whom all so soone as that proud Sarazin
Espide, he gan revive the memory
Of his leud lusts, and late attempted sin,
And Jette the doubtfull battell hastily,
To catch her, newly offed to his eie.
But Satyrane, with strokes him turning, staid,
And sternely bad him other businesse plic
Then hunt the steps of pure unspecked Maid:
Wherewith he al enrag'd these bitter speeches
said.

XLVII

'O foolish faecies soune! what fury mad
Hath thee incensd to hast thy dolefull fate?
Were it not better I that Lady had
Then that thou hadst repented it too late?
Most sencelesse man he, that himselfe doth hate,
To love another: Lo! then, for thine ayd,
Here take thy lovers token on thy pate.'
So they to fight; the whiles the royall Mayd
Fledd farre away, of that proud Paynim sore
afraid.

XLVIII

But that false Pilgrim, which that leasing
Being in deed old Archimage, did stay [told,
In secret shadow all this to behold;
And much rejoiced in their bloody fray:
But, when he saw the Damsell passe away,
He left his stond, and her pursu'd apace,
In hope to bring her to her last decay.
But for to tell her lamentable race, [place,
And eke this battels end, will neede another

CANTO VII.

The Redcrosse knight is captive made
By Gyaunt proud oppress:
Prince Arthure meets with Una great-
ly with those newes distress.

I

WHAT man so wise, what earthly witt so ware,
As to discry the crafty cunning frame,
By which decept doth maske in visour faire,
And cast her coulours, died deepe in graine,
To seeme like truth, whose shape she well can
faime,
And fitting gestures to her purpose frame,
The guiltlesse man with guile to entertaine?
Great maistresse of her art was that false Dame,
The false Ducessa, cloked with Fidessacs name.

II

Who when, returning from the drery Night,
She fownd not in that perilous hous of Pryde,
Where she had left the noble Redcrosse knight,
Her hoped pray, she would no lenger byde,
But forth she went to seeke him far and wide.
Ere long she fownd, whereas he wearie sate
To reste him selfe foreby a fountaine syde,
Disarmed all of yron-coted Plate;
And by his side his steed the grassy forage
ate.

III

Hee feedes upon the cooling shade, and bayes
His sweatie forehead in the breathing wynd,
Which through the trembling leaves full
gently playes,
Wherein the chearefull birds of sundry kynd
Doe chaunt sweet musick to delight his mynd.
The witch approching gan him fayrely greet,
And with reproch of carelesnes unkynd
Upbrayd, for leaving her in place unmeet,
With fowle words tempring faire, soure gall
with^h nony sweet.

IV

Unkindnesse past, they gan of solace trent,
And bathe in plesaurance of the joyous shade
Which shielded them against the boyling heat,
And with greene boughes decking a gloomy
glade,
About the fountaine like a girlond made;
Whose bubbling wave did ever freshly well,
Ne ever would through fervent sommer fade:
The sacred Nymph, which therein wont to
dwell,
Was out of Dianas favor, as it then befell.

V

The cause was this: one day when Phœbe fayre
With all her band was following the chace,
This nymph, quite tyr'd with heat of scorciung
Sattdowne to rest in midst of the race: [ayre,
The goddesse wroth gan fowly her disgrace,
And badd the waters, which from her did flow,
Be such as she her selfe was then in place.
Thenceforth her waters wexed dull and slow,
And all that drinke thereof do faint and feeble
grow.

VI

Hereof this gentle knight unweeting was;
And lying downe upon the sandie graille,
Dronke of the streame, as cleare as christall
Estsoones his manly forces gan to fayle, [glas;
And mightie strong was turnd to feeble frayle.
His chaunged powres at first them selves not
Till crudled cold his corage gan assayle, [felt;
And cheareful blood in fayntnes chill did melt,
Which like a fever fit through all his bodie
swelt.

VII

Yet goodly court he made still to his Dame,
Poured out in loosnesse on the grassy grownd,
Both carelesse of his health, and of his fame;
Till at the last he heard a dreadfull sownd,
Which through the wood loud bellowing did
rebownd,
That all the earth for terror seemd to shake,
And trees did tremble. Th' Elfe, therewith
astownd,

Upstartd lightly from his looser make,
And his unready weapons gan in hand to take.

VIII

But ere he could his armour on him dight,
Or gett his shield, his monstrous enemy
With sturdie steps came stalking in his sight,
An hideous Geaunt, horrible and hye. [skye;
That with his tallnesse seemd to threat the
The ground eke groned under him for dreed:
His living like saw never living eye,
Ne durst behold: his stature did exceed [seed.
The height of three the tallest sonnes of mortall

IX

The greatest Earth his uncouth mother was,
And blustering Æolus his boasted syre;
Who with his breath, which through the world
doth pas,
Her hollow womb did secretly inspyre,
And fild her hidden caves with stormie yre,
That she conceiv'd; and trebling the dew time
In which the wombes of women doe expyre,
Brought forth this monstrous masse of earthly
slyme, [full cryme.
Pust up with emptic wynd, and fild with sin-

X

So grown great, through arrogant delight
Of th' high descent whereof he was yborne,
And through presumption of his matchlesse
might,
All other powres and knighthood he did scorne.
Such now he marcheth to this man forlorne,
And left to losse; his stalking steps are stayde
Upon a snaggy Oke, which he had torne
Out of his mothers bowelles, and it made
His mortall mace, therewith his foemen he
dismayde.

XI

That, when the knight he spyde, he gan ad-
vance
With huge force and insupportable mayne,
And towards him with dreadfull fury prounce;
Who haplesse, and eke hopelesse, all in vaine
Did to him pace sad battaile to darrayne,
Disarmd, disgraste, and inwardly dismayde;
And eke so faint in every joynt and vayne,
Through that fraile fountain which him feeble
made, [single blade.
That scarcely could he weeld his bootlesse

XII

The Geaunt strooke so maynly mercilesse,
That could have overthrowne a stony towre;
And, were not heavenly grace that did him
blesse,
He had beene pouldred all as thin as flowre:

But he was wary of that deadly stowre,
And lightly leapt from underneath the blow :
Yet so exceeding was the villains powre,
That with the winde it did him overthrow,
And all his senses stound that still he lay full
low.

XIII

As when that divelish yron Engin, wrought
In deepest Hell, and fram'd by Furies skill,
With windy Nitre and quick Sulphur fraught,
And ramd with bollet rownd, ordaind to kill,
Conceiveth fyre, the heavens it doth fill
With thundring noyse, and all the ayre doth
choke,
That none can breath, nor see, nor heare at will,
Through smouldry cloud of dusky stinking
smoke ; [escapeth the stroke.
That th' only breath him daunts, who hath

XIV

So daunted when the Geaunt saw the knight,
His heavie hand he heaved up on hys,
And him to dust thought to have battred
quight,
Untill Duessa loud to him gan crye,
'O great Orgoglio ! greatest under skye,
O ! hold thy mortall hand for Ladies sake ;
Hold for my sake, and doe him not to tye,
But vanquisht thine eternall bondslave make,
And me, thy worthy meed, unto thy Leman
take.

XV

He hearkned, and did stay from further
harmes,
To gayne so goodly guerdon as she spake :
So willingly she came into his armes,
Who her as willingly to grace did take,
And was possessed of his newfound make.
Then up he tooke the slombred sencelesse
corse,
And, ere he could out of his swowne awake,
Him to his castle brought with hastie forse,
And in a Dongeon deepe him threw without
remorse.

XVI

From that day forth Duessa was his deare,
And highly honourd in his haughtie eye :
He gave her gold and purple pall to weare,
And triple crowne set on her head full hie,
And her endowd with royall majestye.
Then, for to make her dreaded more of men,
And peoples hartes with awfull terror tye,
A monstrous beast ybredd in filthy fen
He chose, which he had kept long time in dark-
some den.

XVII

Such one it was, as that renowned Snake
Which great Alcides in Stremona slew,
Long fostred in the filth of Lerna lake :
Whose many heades, out budding ever new,
Did breed him endlesse labor to subdew.
But this same Monster much more ugly was,
For seven great heads out of his body grew,
An yron brest, and back of scaly bras,
And all embrewed in blood his eyes did shine
as glas.

XVIII

His tayle was stretched out in wondrous
length,
That to the hous of heavenly gods it raught :
And with extorted powre, and borrow'd
strength,
The everburning lamps from thence it brought.
And proudly threw to ground, as things of
naught ;
And underneath his filthy feet did tread
The sacred thinges, and holy heastes forc-
taught.
Upon this dreadfull Beast with sevenfold head
He sett the false Duessa, for more aw and
dread.

XIX

The wofull Dwarf, which saw his maisters
fall
Whiles he had keeping of his grasing steed.
And valiant knight become a caytive thrall,
When all was past, tooke up his forlorne weed ;
His mightie Armour, missing most at need ;
His silver shield, now idle, maisterlesse ;
His poynant speare that many made to bleed,
The rueful monuments of heaviness ;
And with them all departes to tell his great
distresse.

XX

He had not travaill long, when on the way
He wofull Lady, wofull Una, met,
Fast flying from that Paynims greedy pray,
Whilset Satyrane him from pursuit did let.
Who when her eyes she on the Dwarf had set,
And saw the signes that deadly tydings spake,
She fell to ground for sorrowfull regret,
And lively breath her sad brest did forsake ;
Yet might her pitteous hart be scene to pant
and quake.

XXI

The messenger of so unhappie newes
Would faine have dyde : dead was his hart
within,
Yet outwardly some little comfort shewes.
At last, recovering hart, he does begin

To rubb her temples, and to chawfe her chin,
And everie tender part does tosse and turne:
So hardly he the fittid life does win
Unto her native prison to retoerne;
Then gins her grieved ghost thus to lament
and mourne:

XXII

'Ye dreary instruments of dolefull sight,
That doe this 'deadly spectacle behold,
Why doe ye lenger feed on loathed light,
Or liking find to gaze on earthly mould,
Sith cruell fates the carefull threds unfould,
The which my life and love together tyde?
Now let the stony dart of sencelesse cold
Perce to my hart, and pas through everie side,
And let eternall night so sad sight fro me hyde

XXIII

'O lightsome day! the lampe of highest Jove,
First made by him mens wandring wayes to
guyde,
When darknesse he in deepest dongeon drove,
Henceforth thy hated face for ever hyde,
And shut up heavens windowes shyning wyde;
For earthly sight can nought but sorrow breed,
And late repentance which shall long abyde:
Mine eyes no more on vanitie shall feed,
But seled up with death shall have their
deadly meed.'

XXIV

Then downe againe she fell unto the ground,
But he her quickly reared up againe:
Thrise did she sinke adowne in deadly swound,
And thrise he her reviv'd with busie paine.
At last when life recover'd had the raine,
And over-wrestled his strong enemy,
With foltring tong, and trembling everie vaine,
'Tell on,' (quoth she) 'the wofull Tragedy,
The which these reliques sad present unto
mine eye.

XXV

'Tempestuous fortune hath spent all herspight,
And thrilling sorrow throwne his utmost dart:
Thy sad teng cannot tell more heavy plight
Then that I feele, and harbour in mine hart:
Who hath endur'd the whole can beare ech
part.

If death it be, it is not the first wound [smart.
That launched hath my brest with bleeding
Begin, and end the bitter balefull stound;
If lesse then that I feare, more favour I have
found.'

XXVI

Then gan the Dwarfes the whole discourse de-
The subtle traines of Archimago old, [clare;
The wanton loves of false Fidessa fayre, [bold;
Bought with the blood of vanquisht Paynim

The wretched payre transformed to troen mould;
The house of Pryde, and perilles round about;
The combat which he with Sansjoy did hould;
The lucklesse conflict with the Gyaunt stout,
Wherein captiv'd, of life or death he stood in
doubt.

XXVII

She heard with patience all unto the end,
And strove to maister sorrowfull assay,
Which greater grew the more she did contend,
And almost rent her tender hart in tway,
And love fresh coles unto her fire did Jay;
For greater love, the greater is the losse.
Was never Lady loved dearer day
Then she did love the knight of the Redcrosse,
For whose deare sake so many troubles her
did osse.

XXVIII

At last when fervent sorrow staked was,
She up arose, resolving him to find
Alive or dead; and forward forth doth pas,
All as the Dwarfes the way to her assynd;
And evermore, in constant carefull mynd,
She seid her wound with fresh renewed bale.
Long tost with stormes, and bet with bitter
wind,
High over hills, and lowe adowne the dale,
She wandred many a wood, and measurd many
a vale.

XXIX

At last she chaunced by good hap to meet
A goodly knight, faire marching by the way,
Together with his Squire, arrayed meet:
His glitterand armour shined far away,
Like glancing light of Phœbus brightest
ray;
From top to toe no place appeared bare,
That deadly dint of steele endanger may.
Athwart his brest a bauldrick brave he ware,
That shind, like twinkling stars, with stones
most pretious rare.

XXX

And in the midst thereof one pretious stone
Of wondrous worth, and cke of wondrous
might,
Shapt like a Ladies head, exceeding shone,
Like Hesperus amongst the lesser lights,
And strove for to amaze the weaker sights:
Thereby his mortall blade full comely hong
In yvory sheath, yearv'd with curious slights,
Whose hilts were burnisht gold, and handle
strong
Of mother perle; and buckled with a golden
tong.

XXXI

His haughtie Helmet, horrid all with gold,
Both glorious brightnesse and great ferroure
For all the crest a Dragon did enfold [bredd:
With greedie pawes, and over all did spredd
His golden wings: his dreadfull hideous hedd,
Close couched on the bever, seemd to throw
From flaming mouth bright, sparkles fiery redd,
That suddaine horroure to faint hartes did show;
And sealy tayle was stretcht adowne his back
full low.

XXXII

Upon the top of all his loftie crest,
A bounch of heares discolourd diversly,
With sprinkled pearle and gold full richly
drest,
Did shake, and seemd to daunce for jollity,
Like to an almond tree ymounted hye
On top of greene Selinis all alone,
With blossoms brave bedecked daintily;
Whose tender locks do tremble every one
At everie litle breath that under heaven is
blowne.

XXXIII

His warlike shield all closely cover'd was,
Ne might of mortall eye be ever seene;
Not made of Steele, nor of enduring bras,
Such earthly metalls soon consumed beene,
But all of Diamond perfect pure and cleene
It framed was, one massy entire mould,
Hewen out of Adamant rocke with engines
keene,
That point of speare it never perceen could,
Ne dint of direfull sword divide the substance
would.

XXXIV

The same to wight he never wont disclose,
But whenas monsters huge he would dismay,
Or daunt unequall armies of his foes,
Or when the flying heavens he would affray;
For so exceeding shone his glistring ray,
That Phœbus golden face it did attaint.
As when a cloud his beames doth over-lay;
And silver Cynthia waxed pale and faynt,
As when her face is staynd with magicke arts
constraint.

XXXV

No magicke arts hereof had any might,
Nor bloody wordes of bold Enchaunters call;
But all that was not such as seemd in sight
Before that shield did fade, and suddaine fall:
And when him list the raskall routes appall,
Men into stones therewith he could transnew,
And stones to dust, and dust to nought at all;
And, when him list the prouder lookes subdew,
He would them gazing blind, or turne to other
hew,

XXXVI

Ne let it seeme that credence this exceeds;
For he that made the same was knowne right
well
To have done much more admirable deedes.
It Merlin was, which whylome did excell
All living wightes in might of magicke spell:
Both shield and sword, and armour all he
wrought
For this young Prince, when first to armes he
fell;
But, when he dyde, the Faery Queene it brought
To Faerie lond, where yet it may be seene, if
sought:

XXXVII

• A gentle youth, his dearely loved Squire,
His speare of heben wood behind him bare,
Whose harmful head, thrise heated in the fire,
Had riven many a brest with pikehead square:
A goodly person, and could menage faire
His stubborne steed with curbed canon butt,
Who under him did trample as the aire,
And chaunft that any on his backe should sitt:
The yron rowels into frothy fume he bitt.

XXXVIII

Whenas this knight nigh to the Lady drew,
With lovely court he gan her entertaïne;
But, when he heard her answers loth, he knew
Some secret sorrow did her heart distraïne;
Which to allay, and calme her storming paine,
Faïre feeling words he wisely gan display,
And for her humor fitting purpose faïne,
To tempt the cause it selfe for to bewray,
Wherewith unmoved, these bleeding words she
gan to say.

XXXIX

‘What worlds delight, or joy of living speach,
Can hart, so plungd in sea of sorrowes deep,
And heaped with so huge misfortunes, reach?
The carefull cold beginneth for to creep,
And in my heart his yron arrow steep,
Soone as I thinke upon my bitter bale.
Such helpelesse harmes yts better hidden keep,
Then rip up griefe where it may not availle:
My last left comfort is my woes to weepe and
waile.’

XL

‘Ah Lady deare,’ quoth then the gentle knight,
‘Well may I ween your griefe is wondrous
great; [spright,
For wondrous great griefe groneth in my
Whiles thus I heare you of your sorrowes treat.
But, woefull Lady, let me you intrete,
For to unfold the anguish of your hart:
Mishaps are maistred by advice discrete,

And counsell mitigates the greatest smart :
Found never help who never would his hurts
impart.'

XLI

'O, but,' (quoth she) 'great griefe will not be
tould,

And can more easily be thought then said,
'Right so,' (quoth he) 'but he that never would
Could never: will to might gives greatest aid.'
'But griefe,' (quoth she) 'does greater grow dis-
plaid,

If then it find not helpe, and breeds despaire.'
'Despaire breeds not,' (quoth he) 'where faith is
staide,' [paire.]

'No faith so fast,' (quoth she) 'but flesh does
'Flesh may empaire,' (quoth he) 'but reason can
repaire.'

XLII

His goodly reason, and well-guided speach,
So deepe did settle in her gracious thought,
That her perswaded to disclose the breach
Which love and fortune in her heart had
wrought;

And said; 'Faie Sir, I hope good hap hath
You to inquire the secrets of my griefe,
Or that your wisdom will direct my thought,
Or that your prowess can me yield reliefe:
Then, heare the story sad, which I shall tell you
briefe.

XLIII

'The forlorne Maiden, whom your eies have
seene
The laughing stocke of fortunes mockeries,
Am th' onely daughter of a King and Queene,
Whose parents deare, whiles equal destinies
Did ronne about, and their felicities
The favourable heavens did not envy,
Did spread their rule through all the territories,
Which Phison and Euphrates floweth by, [sally:]
And Gehons golden waves doe wash continu-

XLIV

'Till that their cruel cursed enemy,
An huge great Dragon, horrible in sight,
Bred in the loathly lakes of Tartary,
With murderous ravine, and devouring might,
Their kingdome spould, and cuntry wasted
quight:

Themselves, for feare into his jawes to fall,
He forst to castle strong to take their flight;
Where, fast embard in mighty brassen wall,
He has them now four years besieged to make
them thrall.

XLV

'Full many knights, adventurous and stout,
Have enpriz'd that Monster to subdue.
From every coast that heaven walks about
Have thither come the noble Martial crew

That famous harde atchievements still pursew;
Yet never any could that girlond win,
But all still shronke, and still he greater grew:
All they, for want of faith, or guilt of sin,
The pittous pray of his fiers cruelty have bin.

XLVI

'At last, yled with far reported praise, [spread,
Which flying fame throughout the world had
Of doughty knights, whom Faery land did raise,
That noble order hight of maidenhead,
Forthwith to court of Gloriane I sped,
Of Gloriane, great Queene of glory bright,
Whose kingdomes seat Cleopolis is red;
There to obtaine some such redoubted knight,
That Parents deare from tyrants powre deliver
might.

XLVII

'Yt was my chaunce (my chaunce was faire
and good)
There for to find a fresh unproved knight;
Whose manly hands imbrawd in guilty blood
Had never beene, ne ever by his might
Had throwne to ground the unregarded right:
Yet of his prowess prooffe he since hath made
(I witnes am) in many a cruell fight;
The groning ghosts of many one dismaide
Have felt the bitter dint of his avenging blade.

XLVIII

'And ye, the forlorne reliques of his powre,
His biting sword, and his devouring speare,
Which have endured many a dreadfull stowre,
Can speake his prowess that did earst you beare,
And well could rule; now he hath left you
To be the record of his ruefull losse, [hcare
And of my dolefull disaventurous deare.
O! heavie record of the good Redcrosse,
Where have yee left your lord that could so
well you tosse?

XLIX

'Welf hoped I, and faire beginnings had,
That he my captive languor should redeeme:
Till, all unweeting, an Enchaunter bad
His sence abusd, and made him to misdeeme
My loyalty, not such as it did seeme,
That rather death desire then such despight.
Be judge, ye heavens, that all things right
esteeme,
How I him lov'd, and love with all my might.
So thought I eke of him, and think I thought
aright.

L

'Thenceforth me desolate he quite forsooke,
To wander where wilde fortune would me lead,
And other bywaies he himselfe betooke,
Where never foote of living wight did tread,

That brought not backe the balefull body dead :
In which him chaunced false Duessa meete,
Mine onely foe, mine onely deadly dread ;
Who with her witchcraft, and misseeming
 sweete,
Inveigled him to follow her desires unmeete.

' At last, by subtille sleights she him betraid
 Unto his foe, a Gyaunt huge and tall,
 Who him disarm'd, dissolute, dismaid,
 Unwares surpris'd, and with mighty mall
 The monister merciless him made to fall,
 Whose fall did never foe before behold :
 And now in darkesome dungeon, wretched
 thrall.

Remediesse for aie he doth him hold.
This is my cause of griefe, more great then
may be told.'

111

Ere she had ended all she gan to faint :
But he her comforted, and faire bespake :
'Certes, Madame, ye have great cause of plaint,
'That stoutest heart, I weene, could cause to
quake :
But be of cheare, and comfort to you take ;
For till I have acquitt your captive knight,
Assure your selfe I will you not forsake,'
His chearefull words reviv'd her chearelesse
spright, [ever right.
So forth they went, the Dwarfes them guiding

CANTO VIII.

Faire virgin, to redeeme her deare,
Brings Arthure to the fight :
Who slayes the Gyaunt, wounds the beast,
And strius Duesse knight.

I

AY me ! how many perils doe enfold
The righteous man, to make him daily fall,
Were not that heavenly grace doth him uphold,
And stedfast truth acquite him out of all.
Her love is firme, her care continuall,
So oft as he, through his own foolish pride
Or weakness, is to sinful bands made thrall :
Els should this Redcrosse knight in bands have
dyde, [thither guyd.
For whose deliverance she this Prince doth

II

They sadly travelld thus, untill they came
Nigh to a castle builded strong and hyc :
Then cryde the Dwarf, 'Lo! yonder is the
same,
In which my Lord, my liege, doth lucklesly
Thral to that Gyaunts hatefull tyranny :
Therefore, deare Sir, your mightie powres assay.'
The noble knight alighted by and by
From loftie steed, and badd the Ladie stay.
To see what end of fight should him befall that
day.

III

So with his Squire, th' admirer of his might,
He marched forth towards that castle wall,
Whose gates he fownd fast shutt, ne living
wight
To warde the same, nor answere commers call.
Then tooke that Squire an horne of bugle small,
Which hong adowne his side in twisted gold
And tasselles gay. Wyde wonders over all

(Of that same hornes great virrues weren told,
Which had approved bene in uses manifold.

IV

Was never wight that heard that shrilling
sownd,
But trembling feare did feel in every vaine :
Three miles it might be easy heard arownd,
And Echoes three aunswer'd it selfe againe :
No false enchauntment, nor deceitfull traine,
Might once abide the terror of that blast,
But presently was void and wholly vaine :
No gate so strong, no locke so firme and fast,
But with that percing noise flew open quite,
or brast.

The same before the Gyaunts gate he blew,
That all the castle quaked from the ground,
And every dore of freewill open flew.
The Gyaunt selfe, dismaied with that sound,
Where he with his Duessa dalliance fownd,
In hast came rushing forth from inner bowre,
With staring countenance sterne, as one
astownd, [stowe]
And staggering steps, to weet what suddain
Had wrought that horror strange, and dar'd
his dreaded powre.

VI
And after him the proud Duessa came,
High mounted on her many headed beast,
And every head with fyrie tongue did flame,
And every head was crowned on his crest,
And bloody mouthed with late cruell feast.

That when the knight beheld, his mightie shield
Upon his manly arme he soone adrest,
And at him fiercly flew, with corage filld,
And eger greedinesse throughe every member
thrild.

VIII

Therewith the Gyant buckled him to fight,
Inflam'd with scornfull wrath and high dis-
daine,
And lifting up his dreadfull club on hight,
All armd with ragged snubbes and knottie
graire,
Him thought at first encounter to have slaine.
But wise and wary was that noble Pere;
And, lightly leaping from so monstrous maine,
Did fayre avoide the violence him nere.
It booted nought to thinke such thunderbolts
to beare.

VIII

Ne shame he thought to shonne so hideous
might:
The ydle stroke, enforcing furious way,
Missing the marke of his misavmed sight,
Did fall to ground, and with his heavy sway
So deeply dinted in the driven clay,
That three yardes deepe a furrow up did
throw.
The sad earth, wounded with so sore assay,
Did grone full grievous underneath the blow,
And trembling with strange feare did like an
earthquake show.

IX

As when almightie Jove, in wrathfull mood,
To wreake the guilt of mortall sin is bent,
Hurles forth his thundring dart with deadly
food
Enrold in flames, and smouldring dreriment,
Throughe riven cloudes and molten firmament,
The fiers threeforked engin, making way,
Both loftie towres and highest trees hath rent,
And all that might his angry passage stay;
And, shooting in the earth, castes up a mount
of clay.

X

His boystrous club, so buried in the ground,
He could not rearen up againe so light,
But that the Knight him at advantage fownd;
And, whiles he stovve his combed clubbe to
quight
Out of the earth, with blade all burning bright
He smot off his left arme, which like a block
Did fall to ground, depriv'd of native might:
Large streames of blood out of the trunked
stock
Forth gush'd, like fresh water streames from
riven rocke.

XI

Dismayed with so desperate deadly wound,
And eke impatient of unwonted payne,
He loudly brayd with beastly yelling sownd,
That all the fieldes rebellowed againe.
As great a noyse, as when in Cymbrian plaine
An heard of Bulles, whom kindly rage doth
sting,
Doe for the milky mothers want complaine.
And fill the fieldes with troublous bellowing:
The neighbor woods arownd with hollow mur-
mur ring.

XII

That when his deare Duessa heard, and saw
The evil stownd that daungerd her estate,
Unto his aide she hastily did draw [of late,
Her dreadfull beast, who, swolne with blood
Came ramping forth with proud presumptuous
gate,
And threatned all his heades like flaming
brandes.
But him the Squire made quickly to retrace,
Encountring fiers with single sword in hand:
And twixt him and his Lord did like a bul-
warke stand.

XIII

The proud Duessa, full of wrathfull spight,
And fiers disdain to be affronted so,
Enforst her purple beast with all her might,
That stop out of the way to overthrow,
Scorning the let of so unequal foe:
But nathemore would that courageous swayne
To her yeeld passage gainst his Lord to goe,
But with outrageous strokes did him restraime,
And with his body bard the way atwixt them
twaine.

XIV

Then tooke the angrie witch her golden cup,
Which still she bore, replete with magick artes;
Death and despayre did many thereof sup,
And secret poyson through their inner partes,
Th' eternall bale of heave wounded harts:
Which, after charmes and some enchant-
ments said,
She lightly sprinkled on his weaker partes:
Therewith his sturdie corage soon was quayed,
And all his senses were with suddain dread
dismayd.

XV

So downe he fell before the cruell beast,
Who on his neck his bloody clawes did seize,
That life nigh crusht out of his panting breast:
No powre he had to stirre, nor will to rize.
That when the carefull knight gan well avise,
He lightly left the foe with whom he fought,
And to the beast gan turne his enterprise,

For wondrous anguish in his hart it wrought,
To see his loved Squyre into such thralldom
brought:

XVI

And, high advauncing his blood-thirstie blade,
Stroke one of those deformed heades so sore,
That of his puissance proud ensample made:
His monstrous scalpe downe to his teeth it tore,
And that misformed shape misshaped more.
A sea of blood gusht from the gaping wound,
That her gay garments staynd with filthy
And overflowed all the field around, [gore,
That over shoes in blood he waded on the
grownd.

XVII

Thereat he rored for exceeding paine, [bred;
That to have heard great horror would have
And scourging th' emptie ayre with his long
trayne,
Through great impatience of his grieved hee,
His gorgeous ryder from her loftie sted
Would have cast downe, and trodd in durty
myre,
Had not the Gyaunt soone her succoured;
Who, all enrag'd with smart and frantick yre,
Came hurtling in full fiers, and forst the knight
retyre.

XVIII

The force, which wout in two to be disperst,
In one alone left hand he now unites,
Which is through rage more strong then both
were erst;
With which his hideous club aloft he dities,
And at his foe with furious rigor smites,
That strongest Oake might seeme to cverthrow.
The stroke upon his shield so heavie lites,
That to the ground it doubleth him full low:
What mortall wight could ever beare so mon-
strous blow?

XIX

And in his fall his shield, that covered was,
Did loose his vele by chaunce, and open flew;
The light whereof, that heavens light did pas,
Such blazing brightnesse through the ayer
threw,
That eye mote not the same endure to vew,
Which when the Gyaunt spyde with staring
eye,
He downe let fall his arme, and soft withdrew
His weapon huge, that heaved was on hye
For to have slaine the man, that on the ground
did lye.

XX

And eke the fruitfull-headed beast, amaz
At flashing beames of that sunshiny shield,
Became stark blind, and all his senses dazl,
That downe he tumbled on the durtie field,

And seemd himselfe as conquered to yield.
Whom when his maistresse proud perceiv'd to
fall,

Whiles yet his feeble feet for faintnesse reeld,
Unto the Gyaunt lowly she gan call; [all,
'O! helpe, Orgoglio; helpe! or els we perish

XXI

At her so pitteous cry was much amov'd
Her champion stout; and for to ayde his frend,
Againe his wonted angry weapon prov'd,
But all in vaine, for he has redd his end
In that bright shield, and all their forces spend
Them selves in vaine: for, since that glauncing
He hath no powre to hurt, nor to defend. [sight,
As where th' Almightyes lightning brond does
light, [ces quight.
It dimmes the dazed eyen, and daunts the sen-

XXII

Whom when the Prince, to batteill new ad-
drest [see,
And threatening high his dreadfull stroke, did
His sparkling blade about his head he blew,
And smote off quite his right leg by the knee,
That downe he tumbled; as an aged tree,
Ihigh growing on the top of rocky clift,
Whose hartstrings with keene steele nigh
hewen be;
The mightie trunk, halfe rent with ragged rift,
Doth roll adowne the rocks, and fall with feare-
full drift.

XXIII

Or as a Castle, reared high and round,
By subtil engins and malicious slight
Is undermined from the lowest ground,
And her foundation forst, and feebled quight,
At last downe fallcs; and with her heaped
hight
Her hastie ruine does more heavie make,
And yields it selfe unto the victours might.
Such was this Gyaunts fall, that seemd to shake
The stedfast globe of carth, as it for feare did
quake.

XXIV

The knight, then lightly leaping to the pray,
With mortall steele him smot againe so sore,
That headlesse his unweldy bodie lay,
All wallowd in his owne fowle bloody gore,
Which flowed from his wounds in wondrous
store.

But, soone as breath out of his breast did pas,
That huge great body, which the Gyaunt bore,
Was vanisht quite; and of that monstrous mas
Was nothing left, but like an emptie blader
was.

XXV

Whose grievous fall when false Ducessa spyde,
Her golden cup she cast unto the ground,
And crowned mitre rudely threw asyde:
Such piercing griefe her stubborne hart did
wound,
That she could not endure that dolefull stound
But leaving all behind her fled away.
The light-foot Squyre her quickly turned
around,
And, by hard meanes enforcing her to stay,
So brought unto his Lord as his deserved pray.

XXVI

The roiall Virgin which beheld from farre,
In pensive plight and sad perplexitie, [warré,
The whole atcheivement of this doubtfull
Came running fast to greet his victorie,
With sober gladnesse and myld modestie;
And with sweet joyous cheare him thus be-
spake:
'Fayre branch of noblesse, flowre of chevalrie,
That with your worth the world amazed make,
How shall I quite the paynes ye suffer for my
sake?

XXVII

'And you, fresh budd of vertue springing fast,
Whom these sad eyes saw nigh unto deaths
dore,
What hath poore Virgin for such perill past
Wherewith you to reward? Accept therefore
My simple selfe, and service evermore:
And he that high does sit, and all things see
With equall eye, their merites to restore,
Behold what ye this day have done for mee,
And what I cannot quite requite with usuree.

XXVIII

'But sith the heavens, and your faire hande-
ling,
Have made you master of the field this day,
Your fortune maister eke with governing,
And, well begonne, end all so well, I pray!
Ne let that wicked woman scape away;
For she it is, that did my Lord betrall,
My dearest Lord, and deepe in dungeon lay,
Where he his better dayes hath wasted all:
O heare, how piteous he to you for ayd does
call!'

XXIX

Forthwith he gave in charge unto his Squyre,
That scarlot whore to keepeen carefully;
Whyles he himselfe with greedie great desyre
Into the Castle entred forcibly,
Where living creature none he did espye.
Then gan he lowdly through the house to call,
But no man car'd to answer to his crye:

There raignd a solemne silence over all;
Nor voice was heard, nor wight was seene in
bowre or hall.

XXX

At last, with creeping crooked pace forth came
An old old man, with beard as white as snow,
That on a staffe his feeble steps did frame,
And guyde his wearie gate both too and fro,
For his eye sight him fayled long ygo;
And on his arme a bounch of keyes he bore,
The which unused rust did overgrow:
Those were the keyes of every inner dore;
But he could not them use, but kept them still
in store.

XXXI

But very uncouth sight was to behold,
How he did fashion his untoward pace;
For as he forward moovd his footing old,
So backward still was turnd his wrinckled face:
Unlike to men, who ever, as they trace,
Both feet and face one way are wont to lead.
This was the auncient keeper of that place,
And foster father of the Gyaunt dead;
His name Ignaro did his nature right aread.

XXXII

His reverend heares and holy gravitee
The knight much honor'd, as becomed well;
And gently askt, where all the people bee,
Which in that stately building wont to dwell:
Who answerd him full soft, *he could not tell*.
Again he askt, where that same knight was layd,
Whom great Orgoglio with his puissaunce fell
Had made his cavytie thrall: againe he sayde,
He could not tell; ne ever other answer made.

XXXIII

Then asked he, which way he in might pas?
He could not tell, againe he answered.
The feat the courteous knight displeased was,
And said; 'Old syre, it seemes thou hast not
How ill it sits with that same silver hel, [red
In vaine to mocke, or mockt in vaine to bee:
But if thou be, as thou art pourtrahed
With natures pen, in ages grave degree,
Aread in graver wise what I demand of thee.'

XXXIV

His answers likewise was, *he could not tell*:
Whose sencelesse speach, and doted ignorance,
Whenas the noble Prince had marked well,
He ghest his nature by his countenance,
And calmd his wrath with goodly temperance.
Then, to him stepping, from his arme did reach
Those keyes, and made himselfe free entrance.
Each dore he opened without any breach,
There was no barre to stop, nor foe him to
empeach.

XXXV

There all within full rich arayd he found,
 With royall arras, and resplendent gold,
 And did with store of every thing abound,
 That greatest Princes presence might behold.
 But all the floore (too filthy to be told)
 With blood of guiltlesse babes, and innocents
 trew, [fold,
 Which there were slaine as sheepe out of the
 Defiled was, that dreadfull was to vew;
 And sacred ashes over it was strowed new.

XXXVI

And there beside of marble stone was built
 An Altare, carv'd with cunning ymagery,
 On which trew Christians blood was often spilt,
 And holy Martyres often doen to die
 With cruell malice and strong tyranny:
 Whose blessed sprites, from underneath the
 stone,
 To God for vengeance cryde continually:
 And with great griefe were often heard to
 grone, [piteous mone.
 That hardest heart would bleede to hear their

XXXVII

Through every rowme he sought, and everie
 bowr,
 But no where could he find that wofull thrall:
 At last he came unto an yron doore,
 That fast was lockt, but key found not at all
 Emongst that bounch to open it withall;
 But in the same a little grate was pight,
 Through which he sent his voyce, and lowd
 did call
 With all his powre, to weet if living wight
 Were housed therewithin, whom he enlargen
 might.

XXXVIII

Therewith an hollow, dreary, murmuring voyce
 These piteous plaintes and dolours did re-
 sound: [choyce
 'O! who is that, which brings me happy
 Of death, that here lye dying every stound,
 Yet live perforce in balefull darkenesse bound?
 For now three Moones have changed thrice
 their hew, [ground,
 And have been thrice hid underneath the
 Since I the heavens chearefull face did vew.
 O! welcome thou, that doest of death bring
 tydings trew.'

XXXIX

Which when that Champion heard, with
 percing point
 Of pittie deare his hart was thrilled sore
 And trembling horror ran through every joynt,
 For ruth of gentle knight so fowle foreloze

Which shaking off, he rent that yron dore
 With furious force and indignation fell;
 Where entred in, his foot could find no flore,
 But all a deepe descent, as darke as hell,
 That breathed ever forth a filthy banefull smell.

XL

But nether darknesse fowle, nor filthy bands,
 Nor noyous smell, his purpose could withhold,
 (Entire affection hateth nicer hands)
 But that with constant zeale and corage bold,
 After long paines and labors manifold,
 He found the meanes that Prisoner up to reare;
 Whose feeble thighes, unable to uphold [beare;
 His pined corse, him scarce to light could
 A ruefull spectacle of death and ghastly dreere.

XLI

His sad dull eies, deepe sunck in hollow pits,
 Could not endure th' unwonted sunne to view;
 His bare thin cheekes for want of better bits,
 And empty sides deceived of their dew,
 Could make a stony hart his hap to rew;
 His rawbone armes, whose mighty brawns
 bowra [hew,
 Were wont to rive steele plates, and helmets
 Were clene consumed; and all his vitall powres
 Decayd, and al his flesh shronk up like withered
 flowres.

XLII

Whome when his Lady saw, to him she ran
 With hasty joy: to see him made her glad,
 And sad to view his visage pale and wan,
 Who earst in flowres of freshest youth was clad.
 Tho, when her well of teares she wasted had,
 She said; 'Ah dearest Lord! what evill starre
 On you hath frownd; and poud his influence
 That of your selfe ye thus berobbed arre, [bad,
 And this misseeming hew your manly looks
 doth marre?

XLIII

'But welcome now, my Lord in wele or woe,
 Whose presence I have lackt too long a day:
 And fie on Fortune, mine avowed foe, [alay;
 Whose wrathful wreakes them selves doe now
 And for these wronges shall treble penance pay
 Of treble good: good growes of evils priefe.
 The chearelesse man, whom sorrow did dismay,
 Had no delight to treaten of his griefe;
 His long endured famine needed more reliefe.

XLIV

'Faire Lady,' then said that victorious
 knight,
 'The things, that grievous were to doe, or beare,
 Them to renew, I wote, breeds no delight,
 Best musicke breeds delight in loathing care

But th' only good that growes of passed feare
Is to be wise, and ware of like again.
This daies ensample hath this lesson deare
Deepe written in my heart with yron pen,
That blisse may not abide in state of mortall
men.

XLV

'Henceforth, Sir knight, take to you wanted
strength,
And maister these mishaps with patient might.
Loe! where your foe lies strecht in monstrous
length;
And loe! that wicked woman in your sight,
The roote of all your care and wretched plight.
Now in your powre, to let her live, or die.'
'To doe her die,' (quoth Una) 'were despight,
And shame t'avenge so weake an enemy;
But spoile her of her scarlot robe, and let her
fly.'

XLVI

So, as she bad, that witch they disaraid,
And robd of roiall robes, and purple pall.
And ornaments that richly were displaid,
Ne spared they to strip her naked all.
Then, when they had despoild her tire and call,
Such as she was their eies might her behold,
That her misshaped parts did them appall:
A loathly, wrinkled hag, ill favoured, old.
Whose secret filth good manners biddeth not
be told.

XLVII

Her crafty head was altogether bald,
And, as in hate of honorable eld.
Was overgrowne with scurfe and filthy scald:
Her teeth out of her rotten gummies were feld,
And her sowre breath abominably smeld;
Her dried dugs, lyke bladders lacking wind,
Along downe, and filthy matter from them
weld;

Her wrizled skin, as rough as maple rind,
So scabby was that would have loathd all
womankind.

XLVIII

Her neather parts, the shame of all her kind,
My chaster Muse for shame doth blush to
write;
But at her rompe she growing had behind
A foxes taile, with dong all fowly dight;
And eke her feetemost monstrous were in sight;
For one of them was like an Eagles claw,
With griping talaunts armd to greedy sight,
The other like a beares uneven jaw,
More ugly shape yet never living creature saw.

XLIX

Which when the knights beheld amazd they
were,
And wondred at so fowle deformed wight.
'Such then,' (said Una,) 'as she seemeth here,
Such is the face of falshood: such the sight
Of fowle Duessa, when her borrowed light
Is laid away, and counterfeisance knowne.'
Thus when they had the witch disrobed quight,
And all her filthy feature open showne,
They let her goe at will, and wander waies
unknowne.

L

Shee, flying fast from heavens hated face,
And from the world that her discovered wide,
Fled to the wastfull wilderness apace,
From living eies her open shame to hide,
And lurkt in rocks and caves, long unespide.
But that faire crew of knights, and Una faire,
Did in that castle afterwards abide,
To rest them selves, and weary powres repaire;
Where store they fownd of al that dainty was
and rare.

CANTO IX.

His loves and lignage Arthure tells:
The knights knitt friendly bands:
Sir Trevisan flies from Despeyre,
Whom Redcros knight withstands.

I

O GOODLY golden chayne, wherewith yfere
The vertues linked are in lovely wize;
And noble mindes of yore allyed were,
In brave poursuitt of chevalrous emprise,
That none did others safety despise,
Nor aid envy to him in need that stands;
But friendly each did others praise devise,
How to advance with favourable hands,
As this good Prince redeemd the Redcrosse
knight from banda.

II

Who when their powres, empaynd through
labor long,
With dew repast they had recured well,
And that weake captive wight now waxed
strong.
Them list no lenger there at leasure dwell,
But forward fare as their adventures sell.
But, ere they parted, Una faire besought
That straunger knight his name and nation
tell;

Least so great good, as he for her had wrought,
Should die unknown, and buried be in thankles
thought.

III

'Faie virgin,' (said the Prince,) 'yee me
require

A thng without the compas of my witt;
For both the lignage, and the certein Sire,
From which I sprong, from mee are hdden yitt;
For all so soone as life did me admitt
Into this world, and shewed hevens light,
From mōthers pap I taken was unfit,
And streight deliver'd to a Fary knight,
To be upbrought in gentle thewes and martall
might.

IV

'Unto Old Timon he me brought bylive;
Old Timon, who in youthly yeares hath beene
In warlike feates th' expertest man alive,
And is the wisest now on earth I weene:
His dwelling is low in a valley greene,
Under the foot of Kauran mōssy hōie,
From whence the river Dee, as silver cleene,
His tomling billowes roll- with gentle roie;
There all my daies he trauind mee up in ver-
tuous lore.

V

'Thither the great magicien Merlin came,
As was his use, oftymes to visit me,
For he had charge my discipline to frame,
And Tutors nouriture to oversee.
Him oft and oft I askt in privacy,
Of what lonnes and what lignage I did spring;
Whose answere bad me still assured bee,
That I was sonne and heire unto a king,
As time in her just term the truth to light
should bring.'

VI

'Well worthy impe,' said then the Lady gent,
'And Pupill fitt for such a Tutors hand!
But what adventure, or what high intent,
Hath brought you hither into Faery land,
Aread, Prince Arthur, crowne of Martiall
band?'
'Full hard it is,' (quoth he) 'to read aright
The course of heavenly cause, or understand
The secret meaning of th' eternall might,
That rules mens waies, and rules the thoughts
of living wight.

VII

'For whether he, through fatal deepe foresight,
Me hither sent for cause to me unghost,
Or that fresh bleeding wound, which day
and night
Whilome doth rancle in my riven brest,

With forced fury following his behest,
Me hither brought by wayes yet never found,
You to have helpt I hold my selfe yet blest.'
'Ah! courteous Knight,' (quoth she) 'what
secret wound [ground?]
Could ever find to grieve the gentlest hart on

VIII

'Dear Dame,' (quoth he) 'you sleeping sparkes
awake, [grow:
Which, troubled once, into huge flames will
Ne ever will their fervent fury slake,
Till living moysture into smoke do flow,
And wasted life doe lye in ashes low:
Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire,
But, told, it flames; and, hidden, it does glow,
I will revele what ye so much desire.
Ah. Love! lay down thy bow, the whiles I
may respire.

IX

'It was in freshest flowie of youthly yeares,
When corage first does creepe in manly cheere.
Then first the cole of kindly heat appeares
To kindle love in every living brest:
But me had warnd old Timous wise behest,
Those creeping flames by reason to subdew,
Before their rage grew to so great unest.
As miserable lovers use to rew, [wexeth new,
Which still wex old in woe, whiles wo stil

X

'That ydle name of love, and lovers life,
As losse of time, and vertues enemy,
I ever scornd, and joyd to stirre up strife,
In midst of their mournfull Tragedy,
Ay wont to laugh when them I heard to cry,
And blow the fire which them to ashes brent:
Their God himselfe, grievd at my libertie,
Shott many a dart at me with fiers intent;
But I them warded all with wary government.

XI

'But all in vaine: no fort can be so strong,
Ne fleshly brest can armed be so sound,
But will at last be wonne with battrie long.
Or unawares at disadvantage fownd.
Nothing is sure that growes on earthly grownd,
And who most trustes in arme of fleshly might,
And boasts in beauties chaine not to be bownd,
Doth soonest fall in disaventrous fight,
And yeeldes his caytive neck to victours most
despight.

XII

'En-ample make of him your haplesse joy,
And of my selfe now mated, as ye see;
Whose prouder vaunt that proud avenging boy,
Did soone pluck downe, and curbd my libertie.

For on a day, priekt forth with Jollitee
Of looser life and heat of hardiment,
Raunging the forest wide on gourser free,
The fields, the floods, the heavens, with one
consent, [intent,
Did seeme to laugh on me, and favour mine

XIII

'Forwearied with my sportes, I did alight
From loftiesteed, and downe to sleepe me layd,
The verdant gras my couch did goodly dight,
And pillow was my helmet fayre displayd;
Whiles every sence the humour sweet embayd,
And slombring soft my hart did steale away;
Me seemed, by my side a royall Mayd
Her daintie limbes full softly down did lay:
So fayre a creature yet saw never sunny day.

XIV

'Most goodly glee and lovely blandishment
She to me made, and badd me love her deare;
For dearly sure her love was to me bent,
As, when just time expired, should appeare.
But whether dreames delude, or true it were,
Was never hart so ravisht with delight,
Ne living man like wordes did ever heare,
As she to me delivered all that night;
And at her parting said, She Queene of
Faeries light.

XV

'When I awoke, and found her place devoyd,
And nought but pressed gras where she had
I sorrowed all so much as earst I joyd, [lyen,
And washed all her place with watry eyen.
From that day forth I lov'd that face divyne;
From that day forth I cast in carefull mynd,
To seek her out with labor and long tyne,
And never vovd to rest till her I fynd:
Nyne monethes I seek in vain, yet ni'll that
vow unbynd.'

XVI

Thus as he spake, his visage waxed pale,
And change of hew great passion did bewray;
Yet still he strove to cloke his inward bale,
And hide the smoke that did his fire display,
Till gentle Una thus to him gan say:
'O happy Queene of Faeries! that hast fownd,
Mongst many, one that with his prowess may
Defend thine honour, and thy foes confownd.
True loves are often sown, but seldom grow
on ground.'

XVII

'Thine, O! then,' said the gentle Redcrosse
knight,
'Next to that Ladies love, shalbe the place,
O fayrest virgin! full of heavenly light,
Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly race,

Was firmest fixt in myne extremest case,
And you, my Lord, the Patrone of my life,
Of that great Queene may well gaine worthie
grace,
For onely worthie you through prowes priefe,
Yf living man mote worthie be to be her liefe.'

XVIII

So diversly discoursing of their loves,
The golden Sunne his glistring head gan shew,
And sad remembraunce now the Prince amoves
With fresh desire his voyage to pursue,
Als Una eard her travell to renew. [bynd,
Then those two knights, fast friendship for to
And love establish each to other tiew,
Gave goodly gifts, the signes of gratefull mynd,
And eke, as pledges firme, right hands together
joynd.

XIX

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of Diamond sure,
Embowd with gold and gorgeous ornament,
Wherein were closd few drops of liquor pure,
Of wondrous worth, and vertue excellent,
That any wond could heale incontinent. [gave
Which to requite, the Redcrosse knight him
A booke, wherein his Saviours testament
Was writt with golden letters rich and brave:
A worke of wondrous grace, and hable soules
to save.

XX

Thus beene they parted, Arthur on his way
To seeke his love, and th' other to fight
With Unas foe, that all her realme did pray.
But she, now weighing the decayed plight
And shrunken synewes of her chosen knight,
Would not a while her forward course pursue,
Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull light,
Till he recovered had his former hew: [knew.
For him to be yet weake and wearie well she

XXI

So as they traveld, lo! they gan espy
An armed knight towards them gallop fast,
That seemed from some feared foe to fly,
Or other griesly thing that him aghast.
Still as he feld his eye was backward cast,
As if his feare still followed him behynd:
Als flew his steed as he his bandes had brast,
And with his winged heeles did tread the wynd,
As he had beene a fole of Pegasus his kynd.

XXII

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his head
To bee unarmed, and curld uncombed heares
Upstaring stiffe, dismayd with uncouth dread:
Nor drop of blood in all his face appears,

Nor life in limbe, and, to increase his feares,
In fowle reproch of knighthoodes fayre degree,
About his neck an hempen rope he weares,
That with his glistring armes does ill agree;
But he of rope or armes has now no memorie.

XXIII

The Redecrosse knight toward him crossed fast,
To weet what mister wight was so dismayd.
There him he findes all sencelesse and aghast,
That of him selfe he seemd to be afraid;
Whom hardly he from flying forward stayd,
Till he these wordes to him deliver might:
'Sir knight, aread who hath ye thus arayd,
And eke from whom make ye this hasty flight?
For never knight I saw in such misseeming
plight.'

XXIV

He answerd nought at all; but adding new
Feare to his first amazement, staring wyde
With stony eyes and hartlesse hollow hew,
Atonisht stood, as one that had aspyde
Internall furies with their channes untide.
Him yett againe, and yett againe, bespake
The gentle knight; who nought to him replyde;
But, trembling every joynt, did only quake,
And foltring tongue, at last, these wordes seemd
forth to shake;

XXV

'For Gods deare love, Sir knight, doe me not
stay;
For loe! he comes, he comes fast after mee.'
Eft looking back would faine have runne away;
But he him forst to stay, and tellen free
The secrete cause of his perplexitie:
Yet nathemore by his bold hartie speach
Could his blood frosen hart emboldened bee,
But through his boldnes rather feare did reach;
Yett, forst, at last he made through silence
sudden breach.

XXVI

'And am I now in safetie sure,' (quoth he)
'From him that would have forced me to dye?
And is the point of death now turnd from mee,
That I may tell this haplesse history?' | nye,
'Fear nought,' (quoth he) 'no daunger now is
'Then shall I you recount a ruefull case,'
(said he) 'the which with this unlucky eye
I late beheld; and, had not greater grace
Me reft from it, had bene partaker of the place.'

XXVII

'I lately chaunst (Would I had never
chaunst!)
With a fayre knight to keepe companee,
Sir Terwin hight, that well himselfe advaunst
In all assayes, and was both bold and free,

But not so happy as mote happy bee:
He lov'd, as was his lot, a Lady gent,
That him againe lov'd in the least degree;
For she was proud, and of too high intent,
And joyd to see her lover languish and lament:

XXVIII

'From whom retourning sad and comfortlesse,
As on the way together we did fare,
We met that villen, (God from him me blesse!)
That cursed wight, from whom I escapt whyle-
are,
A man of hell that calls himselfe Despayre:
Who first us greets, and after sayre areedes
Of tydings straunge, and of adventures rare:
So creeping close, as Snake in hidden weedes,
Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly
deedes.

XXIX

'Which when he knew, and felt our feeble
harts
Emboist with bale, and bitter byting griefe,
Which love had launched with his deadly
darts,
With wounding words, and termes of foule
reprieft,
He pluckt from us all hope of dew relieft,
That earst us held in love of lingring life;
Then hopelesse, hartlesse, gan the cunning
thiefe
Perswade us dye, to stint all further strife:
To me he lent this rope, to him a rusty knife.

XXX

'With which sad instrument of hasty death,
That wofull lover, loathing lenger light,
A wyde way made to let forth living breath:
But I, more fearefull or more lucky wight,
Dismayd with that deformed dismall sight,
Fledd fast away, halfe dead with dying
feare;

Ne yet assur'd of life by you, Sir knight,
Whose like infirmity like chaunce may beare;
But God, you never let his charmed speeches
heare!'

XXXI

'How may a man,' (said he) 'with idle speach
Be wonne to spoyle the Castle of his health?'
'I wote,' (quoth he) 'whom tryall late did
teach,
That like would not for all this worldes wealth,
His subtil tong like dropping honny mealt'h
Into the heart, and searcheth every vaine;
That, ere one be aware, by secret stealth
His powre is reft, and weaknes doth reaine.
O! never, Sir, desire to try his guilefull traine.'

XXXII

'Certes,' (sayd he) 'hence shall I never rest,
Till I that treachours art have heard and tryde;
And you, Sir knight, whose name mote I re-
Of grace do me unto his cabin guyde.' I quest,
'I, that hight Trevisan,' (quoth he) 'will ryde
Against my liking backe to doe you grace:
But nor for gold nor glee will I abyde
By you, when ye arrive in that same place;
For lever had I die then see his deadly face.'

XXXIII

Ere long they come where that same wicked
wight
His dwelling has, low in an hollow cave,
For underneath a craggy cliff ypyght,
Darke, dolefull, dreary, like a greedy grave,
That still for carrion carcases doth crave.
On top whereof ay dwell the ghastly Owle,
Shrieking his balefull note, which ever drave
Far from that haunt all other cheerefull fowle.
And all about it wandring ghoutes did wayle
and howle.

XXXIV

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees,
Whereon nor fruit nor leafe was ever seene,
Did hang upon the ragged rocky knees;
On which had many wretches hanged beene,
Whose carcases were scattered on the Greene,
And throwne about the cliffs. Arrived there,
That bare-head knight, for dread and dolefull
feene,
Would faine have fled, ne durst approchen neare;
But th' other forst him staye, and comforted
in feare.

XXXV

That darkesome cave they enter, where they
find
That cursed man, low sitting on the ground,
Musing full sadly in his sullen mind:
His griesie lockes, long grown and unbound,
Disordered long about his shoulders round,
And hid his face, through which his hollow
eyne
Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound;
His raw-bone checkes, through penurie and
pine,
Were shronke into his jawes, as he did never

XXXVI

His garment, nought but many ragged clouts.
With thornes together pind and patched was,
The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts;
And him beside there lay upon the gras
A dreary corse, whose life away did pas,
All wallowd in his own yet luke-warme blood.
That from his wound yet welled fresh, alas!

In which a rusty knife fast fixed stood,
And made an open passage for the gushing flood.

XXXVII

Which piteous spectacle, approving trow
The wofull tale that Trevisan had told,
Whenas the gentle Redcrosse knight did vew,
With sirc zeale he burnt in courage bold
Him to avenge before his blood were cold,
And to the villen sayd, 'Thou damned wight,
The authour of this fact we here behold,
What justice can but judge againt thee right,
With thine owne blood to price his blood, here
shed in sight?'

XXXVIII

'What frankele fit,' (quoth he) 'hath thus
distraught
Thee, foolish man, so rash a doome to give?
What justice ever other judgement taught,
But he should dye who merites not to live?
None els to death this man despayning drive
But his owne guiltie mind, deserving death.
Is then unjust to each his dew to give?
Or let him dye, that loatheth living breath,
Or let him die at ease, that liveth here meath?'

XXXIX

'Who travailes by the wearie wandering way,
To come unto his wished home in haste,
And meetes a flood that doth his passage stay,
Is not great grace to helpe him over past.
Or free his feet that in the myre sticke fast?
Most envious man, that grieves at neighbours
good;
And fond, that joyest in the woe thou hast!
Why wilt not let him passe, that long hath
stood | flood?
Upon the bancke, yet wilt thy selfe not pas the

XL

'He' there does now enjoy eternall rest
And happy ease, which thou dost want and
crave.
And further from it daily wanderest:
What if some little payne the passage have,
That makes frayle flesh to feare the bitter
wave, | long ease,
Is not short payne well borne. that brings
And layes the soule to sleepe in quiet grave?
Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie seas,
Ease after warre, death after life, does greatly
please.'

XLI

The knight much wondred at his suddene wit,
And sayd; 'The terme of life is limited,
Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten, it:
The souldier may not move from watchfull sted,

Nor leave his stand untill his Capitaine bed.
 'Who life did limit by almightie doome,'
 (Quoth he) 'knowes best the termes esta-
 blished;
 And he, that points the Centonell his roome,
 Doth license him depart at sound of morning
 droome.'

XLII

'Is not his deed, what ever thing is donne
 In heaven and earth? Did not he all create
 To die againe? All ends that was begonne:
 Their times in his eternall booke of fate
 Are written sure, and have their certein date.
 Who then can strive with strong necessitie,
 That holds the world in his still chaunging
 state,
 Or shunne the death ordaynd by destinie?
 When houre of death is come, let none aske
 whence, nor why.

XLIII

'The lenger life, I wote, the greater sin;
 The greater sin, the greater punishment:
 All those great battels, which thou boasts to
 win
 Through strife, and blood-shed, and avenge-
 Now prayed, hereafter deare thou shalt repent;
 For life must life, and blood must blood, repay.
 Is not enough thy evill life forespent?
 For that once hath missed the right way,
 The further he doth goe, the further he doth
 stray.

XLIV

'Then doe no further gae, no further stray.
 But here ly downe, and to thy rest betake,
 Th' ill to prevent, that life enswen may;
 For what hath life that may it loved make,
 And gives not rather cause it to forsake?
 Feare, sickness, age, losse, labour, sorrow, strife,
 Payne, hunger, cold that makes the hart to
 quake,
 And ever fickle fortune rageth rife;
 All which, and thousands mo, do make a loath-
 some life.

XLV

'Thou, wretched man, of death hast greatest
 need.
 If in true ballaunce thou wilt weigh thy state;
 For never knight, that dared warlike deed,
 More luckless dissaventures did amate:
 Witnes the dungeon deepe, wherein of late
 Thy life shutt up for death so oft did call;
 And though good lucke prolonged hath thy
 date,
 Yet death then would the like mishap forestall,
 Into the which hereafter thou maist happen
 tall.

XLVI

'Why then doest thou, O man of sin! desire
 To draw thy dayes forth to their last degree?
 Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire
 High heaped up with huge iniquitee,
 Against the day of wrath to burden thee?
 Is not enough, that to this Lady mild
 Thou falsed hast thy faith with perjure,
 And sold thy selfe to serve Duessa vild, [defild?
 With whom in al abuse thou hast thy selfe

XLVII

'Is not he just, that all this doth behold
 From highest heaven, and beares an equall cie?
 Shall he thy sins up in his knowledge fold,
 And guilty be of thine impietie?
 Is not his lawe, let every sinner die; [dome,
 Die shall all flesh? What then must needs be
 Is it not better to doe willingly,
 Then linger till the glas be all out ronne?
 Death is the end of woes. die soone. O faeries
 soone!'

XLVIII

The knight was much enmoued with his speech,
 That as a sword's poynt through his hart did
 perse,
 And in his conscience made a secreete breach,
 Well knowing trew all that he did chere,
 And to his fresh remembraunce did reverse
 The ugly vew of his deformed crimes;
 That all his manly powres it did disperse,
 As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes;
 That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted often-
 times.

XLIX

In which amazement when the Mi-creaunt
 Perceived him to waver, weake and fraile, [daunt,
 Whiles trembling horror did his conscience
 And hellish anguish did his soule assaile;
 To drive him to despair, and quite to quaille,
 Hee shewed him, painted in a table plaine,
 The damned ghosts that doe in torments waile,
 And thousand feends that doe them endlesse
 paine
 With fire and brimstone, which for ever shall
 [remaine.

L

The sight whereof so thoroughly him dismayd,
 That nought but death before his eyes he saw,
 And ever burning wrath before him laid,
 By righteous sentence of th' Almighties law.
 Then gan the villin him to overcrow, [fire,
 And brought unto him swords, ropes, poison,
 And all that might him to perdition draw;
 And bad him choose what death he would de-
 sire; [Gods ire.
 For death was dew to him that had provokt

LI

But, whenas none of them he saw him take,
He to him raught a dagger sherpe and keene,
And gave it him in hand: his hand did quake
And tremble like a leafe of Aspin greene,
And troubled blood through his pale face was
scene

To come and goe with tidings from the heart,
As it a ronning messenger had beene.
At last, resolv'd to work his finall smart,
He lifted up his hand, that backe againe did
start.

LII

Which whenas Una saw, through every vaine
The crudled cold ran to her well of life,
As in a swowne: but, soone reliv'd againe,
Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed knife,
And threw it to the ground, enraged rife,
And to him said; 'Fie, fie, faint hearted Knight!
What meanest thou by this reprochfull strife?
Is this the battaile which thou vaunst to
fight
With that fire-mouthed Dragon, horrible and
bright?

LIII

'Come; come away, fraile, feeble, fleshly wight,
Ne let vaine words bewitch thy manly hart.
Ne divelish thoughts dismay thy constant
spright:

In heavenly mercies hast thou not a part?
Why shouldst thou then despeire, that chpsen
art?

Where justice growes, there grows etc greater
The which doth quench the brond of hellish
smart,

And that accurst hand-writing doth deface.
Arise, sir Knight; arise, and leave this cursed
place.'

LIV

So up he roge, and thence amounted straight.
Which when the carle beheld, and saw his guest
Would safe depart, for all his subtile sleight,
He chose an halter from among the rest,
And with it hong him selfe, unbidd, unblest.
But death he could not worke him selfe ther-by,
For thousand times he so him selfe had drest,
Yet nathelesse it could not doe him die,
Till he should die his last, that is, eternally.

CANTO X.

Her faithfull knight faire Una brings
To house of Holinesse;
Where he is taught repentaunce, and
The way to heavenly blesse.

I

WHAT man is he, that boasts of fleshly
And vaine assuraunce of mortality, [might
Which, all so soone as it doth come to fight
Against spirituall foes, yields by and by,
Or from the felds most cowardly doth fly!
Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill,
That thorough grace hath gained victory:
If any strength we have, it is to ill, [will.
But all the good is Gods, both power and eke

III

There was an auncient house nor far away,
Renownd throughout the world for sacred lore
And pure unpotted life: so well, they say,
It governd was, and guided evermore,
Through wisdoms of a matrone grave and hore;
Whose onely joy was to relieve the needes
Of wretched soules, and helpe the helpelesse pore:
All night she spent in bidding of her bedes,
And all the day in doing good and godly
deedes.

II

By that which lately happed Una saw
That this her knight was feeble, and too faint;
And all his sinewes woxen weake and raw,
Through long enprisonment, and hard con-
straint,
Which he endured in his late restraint,
That yet he was unfitt for bloody fight.
Therefore, to cherish him with diets daint,
She cast to bring him where he chearen might,
Till he recovered had his late decayed plight.

IV

Dame Cælia men did her call, as thought
From heaven to come, or thither to arise;
The mother of three daughters, well upbrought
In goodly thewes, and godly exercise:
The eldest two, most sober, chaste, and wise,
Fidelia and Speranza, virgins were;
Though spoused, yet wanting wedlocks solemn-
nize;
But faire Charissa to a lovely fere [dere.
Was lincked, and by him had many pledges

V

Arrived there, the dore they find fast lockt,
For it was warily watcht night and day,
For feare of many foes ; but, when they knockt,
The Porter opened unto them straight way.
He was an aged syre, all hory gray,
With looks full lowly cast, and gate full slow,
Wont on a staffe his feeble steps to stay,
Hight Humiltá. They passe in, stouping low ;
For streight and narrow was the way which
he did show.

VI

Each goodly thing is hardest to begin ;
But, entred in, a spacious court they see,
Both plaine and pleasaunt to be walkt in ;
Where them does meete a francklin faire and
free,
And entertaines with comely courtesous glee ;
His name was Zele, that him right well became :
For in his speeches and behavoure hee
Did labour lively to expresse the same,
And gladly did them guide, till to the Hall
they came.

VII

There fayrely them receives a gentle Squire,
Of myld demeanure and rare courtesee,
Right cleanly clad in comely sad attyre ;
In word and deede that shewd great modestee,
And knew his good to all of each degree,
Hight Reverence. He them with speeches
meet
Does faire entreat ; no courting nicetee,
But simple, trew, and eke unfained sweet,
As might become a Squire so great persons to
greet.

VIII

And afterwards them to his Dame he leades,
That aged Dame, the Lady of the place,
Who all this while was busy at her beades ;
Which doen, she up arose with seemely grace,
And toward them full matronely did pace.
Where, when that fairest Una she beheld,
Whom well she knew to spring from heavenly
race,
Her heart with joy unwonted inly sweld,
As feeling wondrous comfort in her weaker eld :

IX

And, her embracing, said ; ' O happy earth,
Whereon thy innocent feet doe ever tread !
Most vertuous virgin, borne of heavenly berth,
That, to redeeme thy woefull parents head
From tyrans rage and ever-dying dread,
Hast wandred through the world now long a
day,
Yett ceaseest not thy weary soles to lead ;

What grace hath thee now hither brought this
way ?
Or doen thy feeble feet unweeting hither stray ?

X

' Straunge thing it is an errant knight to see
Here in this place ; or any other wight,
That hither turnes his steps. So few there bee,
That chose the narrow path, or seeke the right :
All keepe the broad high way, and take delight
With many rather for to goe astray,
And be partakers of their evill plight,
Then with a few to walke the rightest way.
O foolish men ! why hast ye to your own decay ?'

XI

' Thy selfe to see, and tyred limbes to rest,
O matrone sage,' (quoth she) ' I hither came ;
And this good knight his way with me addrest,
Ledd with thy prayses, and broad-blazed fame,
That up to heven is blowne.' The auncient
Dame

Him goodly greeted in her modest guyse,
And enterteynd them both, as best became,
With all the court'sies that she could devyse,
Ne wanted ought to shew her bounteous or wise.

XII

Thus as they gan of sondrie thinges devise,
Loe ! two most goodly virgins came in place,
Ylinked arme in arme in lovely wise :
With countenance demure, and modest grace,
They numbred even steps and equall pace ;
Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight,
Like sunny beames threw from her Christall face
That could have dazd the rash beholders sight,
And round about her head did shine like hevens
light.

XIII

She was araied all in lilly white,
And in her right hand bore a cup of gold,
With wine and water fild up to the hight,
In which a Serpent did himselfe enfold,
That hogrour made to all that did behold ;
But she no whitt did chaunge her constant
mood :

And in her other hand she fast did hold
A booke, that was both signd and seald with
blood ;
Wherein darke things were writt, hard to be
understood.

XIV

Her younger sister, that Speranza hight,
Was clad in blew, that her beseeemed well ;
Not all so chearefull seemed she of sight,
As was her suster : whether dread did dwell

Or anguish in her hart, is hard to tell.
Upon her arme a silver anchor lay,
Whereon she leane'd ever, as befell;
And ever up to heaven, as she did pray, [way.
Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarved other

XV

They, seeing Una, towards her gan wend,
Who them encounters with like courtesee;
Many kind speeches they betwene them spend,
And greatly joy each other for to see:
Then to the knight with shamefast modestie
They turne themselves, at Unas meeke request,
And him salute with well beseeching glee;
Who faire them quites, as him besee'md best,
And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.

XVI

Then Una thus: 'But she, your sister deare,
The deare Charissa, where is she become?
Or wants she health, or busie is elsewhere?'
'Ah! no,' said they, 'but forth she may not
For she of late is lightned of her wombe, [come;
And hath encreast the world with one sonne
more,
That her to see should be but troublesome.'
'Indeed,' (quoth she) 'that should her trouble
sore; [more!
But thank't be God, and her encrease so ever-

XVII

Then said the aged Celia, 'Deare dame,
And you, good Sir, I wote that of youre toyle
And labors long, through which ye hither
came,
Ye both forweari'd be: therefore, a while
I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle.'
Then called she a Grooms, that forth him led
Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile
Of puissant arme, and laid in easie bedd
His name was meeke Obedienc, rightfully
aredd.

XVIII

Now when their wearie limbes with kindly
rest,
And bodies were refresht with dew repast,
Fayre Una gan Fidelia fayre request,
To have her knight into her schoolehouse plaste,
That of her heavenly learning he might taste,
And heare the wisdom of her wordes divine.
She graunted; and that knight so much
agrate,
That she him taught celestiall discipline,
And opened his dull eyes, that light mote in
them shine.

XIX

And that her sacred Booke, with blood ywritt,
That none could reade except she did them
She unto him disclosed every whitt; [teach,
And heavenly documents thereof did preach,
That weaker witt of man could never reach;
Of God; of grace; of justice; of free-will;
That wonder was to heare her goodly speech:
For she was hable with her wordes to kill,
And rayse againe to life the hart that she did
thrill.

XX

And, when she list poure out her larger
spright,
She would commaund the hasty Sunne to stay,
Or backward turne his course from heavens
hight; [may;
Sometimes great hostes of men she could dis-
Dry-shod to passe she parts the fouds in tway;
And eke huge mountaines from their native
seat [away,
She would commaund themselves to beare
And throw in raging sea with roaring threat.
Almightie God her gave such powre and puis-
sance great.

XXI

The faithfull knight now grew in little space,
By hearing her, and by her sisters lore,
To such perfection of all heavenly grace,
That wretched world he gan for to abhore,
And mortall life gan loath as thing folore,
Greevd with remembrance of his wicked wayes,
And prick't with anguish of his sinnes so sore,
That he desir'd to end his wretched dayes:
So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soule dis-
mayes.

XXII

But wise Speranza gave him comfort sweet,
And taught him how to take assured hold
Upon her silver anchor, as was meet;
Els had his sinnes, so great and manifold,
Made him forget all that Fidelia told.
In this distressed doubtfull agony,
When him his dearest Una did behold
Disdeining life, desiring leave to dye,
She found her selfe assayld with great per-
plexity;

XXIII

And came to Celia to declare her smart;
Who, well acquainted with that common
plight,
Which sinfull horror workes in wounded hart,
Her wisely comforted all that she might,
With goodly counsell and advisement right;
And straightway sent with carefull diligence,
To fetch a Leach, the which had great insight

In that disease of grieved conscience, [Patience,
And well could cure the same : His name was

XXIV

Who, conning to that sowle-diseased knight,
Could hardly him intreat to tell his grief :
Which knowne, and all that noyd his heauie
spright

Well searcht, eftsoones he gan apply relief
Of salves and med'cines, which had passing
prief ;

And thereto added wordes of wondrous might.
By which to ease he him recured brief,
And much aswag'd the passion of his plight,
That he his paine endur'd, as seeming now
more light.

XXV

But yet the cause and root of all his ill,
Inward corruption and infected sin,
Not purg'd nor heald, behind remained still,
And festring sore did ranckle yett within,
Close creeping twixt the marow and the skin :
Which to extirpe, he laid him privily
Downe in a darksome lowly place far in,
Whereas he meant his corrosives to apply,
And with streight diet tame his stubborne
malady.

XXVI

In ashes and sackcloth he did array
His daintie corse, proud humors to abate ;
And dieted with fasting every day,
The swelling of his woundes to mitigate ;
And made him pray both earely and eke late :
And ever, as superfluous flesh did rott,
Amendment readie still at hand did wayt,
To pluck it out with pincers fyrie whott,
That soone in him was left no one corrupted
jott.

XXVII

And bitter Penance, with an yron whip,
Was wont him once to disple every day :
And sharp Remorse his hart did pricke and nip,
That drop of blood thence like a well did play :
And sad Repentance used to embay
His blamefull body in salt water sore,
The filthy blotches of sin to wash away.
So in short space they did to health restore
The man that would not live, but erst lay at
deathes dore.

XXVIII

In which his torment often was so great,
That like a Lyon he would cry and rore,
And rend his flesh, and his owne synewes eat.
His owne deare Una, hearing evermore
His ruefull shriekes and gronings, often tore
Her guiltlesse garments and her golden heare,
For pity of his payne and anguish sore :

Yet all with patience wisely she did beere,
For well she wist his cryme could els be never
cleare.

XXIX

Whom, thus recover'd by wise Patience
And trew Repentance, they to Una brought ;
Who, joyous of his cured conscience,
Him dearly kist, and fayrely eke besought
Himselfe to chearish. and consuming thought
To put away out of his carefull brest.
By this Charissa, late in child-bed brought,
Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest :
To her fayre Una brought this unacquainted
guest.

XXX

She was a woman in her freshest age,
Of wondrous beauty, and of bounty rare,
With goodly grace and comely personage,
That was on earth not easie to compare ;
Full of great love, but Cupids wanton snare
As hell she hated ; chaste in worke and will :
Her necke and breasts were ever open bare,
That ay thereof her babes might sucke their
ill ;
The rest was all in yelow robes arrayed still.

XXXI

A multitude of babes about her hong,
Playing their sportes, that joyd her to behold ;
Whom still she fed whiles they were weake and
young,
But thrust them forth still as they waxed old :
And on her head she wore a tyre of gold,
Adorn'd with gemmes and owches wondrous
fayre,
Whose passing price unneath was to be told :
And by her syde there sate a gentle payre,
Of turtle doves, she sitting in an yvory chayre.

XXXII

The knight and Una entring fayre her greet,
And bid her joy of that her happy brood ;
Who them requites with court'sies seemning
meet,
And entertaynes with friendly chearefull mood.
Then Una her besought, to be so good
As in her vertuous rules to schoole her knight,
Now after all his torment well withstood
In that sad house of Penance, where his
spright
Had past the paines of hell and long-enduring
night.

XXXIII

She was right joyous of her just request ;
And taking by the hand that Faeries sonne,
Gan him instruct in everie good behest,
Of love, and righteousnes, and well to donne ;

And wrath and hatred warely to shonne,
That drew on men Gods hatred and his wrath,
And many soules in dolours had fordonne:
In which when him she well instructed hath,
From thence to heaven she teacheth him the
ready path.

XXXIV

Wherein his weaker wandering steps to guyde,
An auncient matrone she to her does call,
Whose sober lookes her wisdom well des-
cryde:

Her name was Mercy; well knowne over-all
To be both gracious and eke liberall:
To whom the carefull charge of him she gave,
To leade aright, that he should never fall
In all his waies through this wide worldes
wave;

That Merry in the end his righteous soule
might save.

XXXV

The godly Matrone by the hand him beares
Forth from her presence, by a narrow way,
Scattered with bushy thornes and ragged breares,
Which still before him she remov'd away,
That nothing might his ready passage stay:
And ever, when his feet encombr'd were,
Or gan to shrink, or from the right to stray,
She held him fast, and firmly did upbeare,
As carefull Nourse her child from falling oft
does reare.

XXXVI

Eftsoones unto an holy Hospitall,
That was fureby the way, she did him bring;
In which seven Bead-men, that had vowed all
Their life to service of high heavens King,
Did spend their daies in doing godly thing.
Their gates to all were open evermore,
That by the wearie way were travelling;
And one sate wayting ever them before,
To call in commers-by that needy were and

XXXVII

The first of them, that eldest was and best,
Of all the house had charge and government,
As Guardian and Steward of the rest.
His office was to give entertainment
And lodging unto all that came and went;
Not unto such as could him feast againe,
And double quite for that he on them spent;
But such as want of harbour did constraine:
Those for Gods sake his dewty was to entertaine.

XXXVIII

The second was as Almoner of the place:
His office was the hungry for to feed,
And thirsty give to drinke; a worke of grace.
He feared not once himselfe to be in need,

Ne car'd to hoord for those whom he did breede:
The grace of God he layd up still in store,
Which as a stocke he left unto his seede.
He had enough; what need him care for more?
And had he lesse, yet some he would give to the
pore.

XXXIX

The third had of their wardrobe custody,
In which were not rich tyres, nor garments gay,
The plumes of pride, and winges of vanity,
But clothes meet to keepe keene cold away,
And naked nature seemely to aray;
With which bare wretched wights he delydly clad,
The images of God in earthly clay;
And, if that no spare clothes to give he had,
His owne cote he would cut, and it distribute
glad.

XL

The fourth appointed by his office was
Poore prisoners to relieve with gracious ayd,
And captives to redeeme with price of bras
From Turkes and Sarazins, which them had
stayd:
And though they faulty were, yet well he wayd,
That God to us forgiveth every howre [layd];
Much more then that why they in bands were
And he, that harrowd hell with heaveie stowre,
The faulty soules from thence brought to his
heavenly bowre.

XLI

The fift had charge sick persons to attend,
And comfort those in point of death which lay;
For them most needeth comfort in the end,
When sin, and hell, and death, doe most dismay
The feeble soule departing hence away.
All is but lost, that living we bestow,
If not well ended at our dying day.
O man! have mind of that last bitter throw;
For as the tree does fall, so lyes it ever low.

XLII

The sixt had charge of them now being dead,
In seemely sort their corpes to engrave,
And deck with dainty flowres their brydall bed,
That to their heavenly spouse both sweet and
brave [save].
They might appeare, when he their soules shall
The wondrous workmanship of Gods owne
mould,
Whose face he made all beastes to feare, and grave
All in his hand, even dead we honour should.
Ah, dearest God, me graunt, I dead be not
defould!

XLIII

The seventh, now after death and buriall done,
Had charge the tender Orphans of the dead
And wydowes ayd, least they should be undone:
In face of judgement he their right would plead,

Ne ought the powre of mighty men did dread
In their defence; nor would for gold or fee
He wonne their rightfull causes downe to tread;
And, when they stood in most necessitee,
He did supply their want, and gave them ever
free.

XLIV

There when the Elfin knight arrived was,
The first and chiefeſt of the ſeven, whoſe care
Was gueſts to welcome, towards him did paſſe;
Where ſeeing Mercie, that his ſteps upbare
And alwaies led, to her with reverence rare
He humbly louted in meeke lowlineſſe,
And ſeemely welcome for her did prepare:
For of their order ſhe was Patronneſſe,
Albe Chariffa were their chiefeſt funderreſſe.

XLV

There ſhe awhile him ſtayes, himſelfe to reſt,
That to the reſt more hablo he might bee;
During which time, in every good beſeſt,
And godly worke of Almes and charitee,
Shee him inſtructed with great indutree.
Shortly therein ſo perfect he became,
That, from the firſt unto the laſt degree,
His mortall life he learned had to frame
In holy righteousneſſe, without rebuke or
blame.

XLVI

Thence forward by that painfull way they paſſe
Forth to an hill that was both ſteepe and hy,
On top whereof a ſacred chappell was,
And eke a little Hermitage thereby,
Wherein an aged holy man did lie,
That day and night ſaid his devotion,
Ne other worldly buſines did apply:
His name was heavenly Contemplation;
Of God and goodnes was his meditation.

XLVII

Great grace that old man to him given had;
For God he often ſaw from heavens hight:
All were his earthly eien both blunt and bad,
And through great age had loſt their kindly
ſight, [ſpright.
Yet wondrous quick and perſaunt was his
As Eagles eie that can behold the Sunne.
That hill they ſcale with all their powre and
might,
That his fraile thighes, high weary and fordonne,
Gan faile; but by her helpe the top at laſt he
wonne.

XLVIII

There they doe finde that godly aged Sire,
With ſnowy lockes adowne his ſhoulders ſhed;
As hoary froſt with ſpangles doth attire
The moſſy branches of an Oke halfe ded.

Each bone might through his body well be red
And every ſinew ſeene, through his long faſt;
For nought he car'd his carcas long unfed;
His mind was full of ſpiritual repaſt, [chaſt.
And pyn'd his fleſh to keepe his body low and

XLIX

Who, when theſe two approaching he aſpide,
At their firſt preſence grew agrieved ſore,
That forſt him lay his heavenly thoughts aſide;
And had he not that Dame reſpected more,
Whom highly he did reverence and adore,
He would not once have moved for the knight.
They him ſaluted, ſtanding far afore,
Who, well them greeting, humbly did requight,
And asked to what end they clomb that
tedious hight?

L

'What end,' (quoth ſhe) 'ſhould cauſe us
take ſuch paine,
But that ſame end, which every living wight
Should make his marke high heaven to attaine?
Is not from hence the way, that leadeth right
To that moſt glorious houſe, that gliſtreth
bright
With burning ſtarres and everliving fire,
Whereof the keyes are to thy hand beſight
By wiſe Fidelia? Shee doth thee require,
To ſhew it to this knight, according his deſire.'

LI

'Thriſe happy man,' ſaid then the father
grave,
'Whoſe ſtaggering ſteps thy ſteady hand doth
lead,
And ſhewes the way his ſinfull ſoule to ſave!
Who better can the way to heaven aread
Then thou thyſelfe, that was both borne and
bred
In heavenly throne, where thouſand Angels
ſhine?
Thou doeſt the prayers of the righteous ſeal
Preſent before the majeſty divine,
And his avenging wrath to clemency incline.

LII

'Yet, ſince thou bidſt, thy pleaſure ſhalbe
donne.
Then come, thou man of earth, and ſee the way,
That never yet was ſeene of Faeries ſonne;
That never leads the traveller aſtray,
But after labors long and ſad delay,
Brings them to joyous reſt and endleſſe blis.
But firſt thou muſt a ſeaſon faſt and pray,
Till from her hands the ſpright aſſoiled is,
And have her ſtrength recur'd from fraile in-
firmities.'

F

LIII

'That done, he leads him to the highest Mount,

Such one as that same mighty man of God,
That blood-red billowes, like a walled front,
On either side disparted with his rod,
Till that his army fry-foot through them yod,
Dwelt forty daies upon; where, writt in stone
With bloody letters by the hand of God,
The bitter doome of death and balefull mone
He did receiue; whiles flashing fire about him
shone:

LIV

Or like that sacred hill, whose head full lie,
Adorn'd with fruitfull Olives all around,
Is, as it were for endlesse memory
Of that deare Lord who oft thereon was fownd,
For ever with a flowring girlond crown'd:
Or like that pleasant Mount, that is for ay
Through famous Poets verse each where re-
nownd,
On which the thrise three learned Ladies play
Their hevenly notes, and make full many a
lovely lay.

LV

From thence, far off he unto him did shew
A little path that was both steepe and long,
Which to a goodly City led his vew,
Whose wals and towres were builded high
and strong
Of perle and precious stone, that earthly tong
Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell;
Too high a ditty for my simple song.
The City of the greates king hight it well,
Wherem eternall peace and happinesse doth
dwell.

LVI

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see
The blessed Angels to and fro descend
From highest heven in gladsome companee,
And with great joy into that City wend,
As commonly as frend does with his frend.
Whereat he wondred much, and gan enquire,
What stately building durst so high extend
Her lofty towres unto the starry sphere,
And what unknown nation there empeopled
were?

LVII

'Faïre Knight,' (quoth he) 'Hierusalem that
The new Hierusalem, that God has built [is,
For those to dwell in that are chosen his,
His chosen people, purg'd from sinful guilt
With pretious blood, which cruelly was spilt
On curs'd tree, of that unspotted lam,
That for the sinnes of al the world was kilt:

Now are they Saints all in that City sam,
More deare unto their God then younglings to
their dam.'

LVIII

'Till now,' said then the knight, 'I weened
well,
That great Cleopolis, where I have beene,
In which that fairest Faery Queene doth dwell,
The fairest city was that might be scene;
And that bright towre, all built of christall
dene,
Pantheon, seemd the brightest thing that was;
But now by prooffe all otherwise I weene,
For this great City that does far surpass,
And this bright Angels towre quite dims that
towre of glas.'

LIX

'Most trew,' then said the holy aged man;
'Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame.
The fairest peece that eie beholden can,
And well becomes all knights of noble name,
That covett in th' immortall booke of fame
To be eternized, that same to haunt,
And doen their service to that soveraigne Dame,
That glory does to them for guerdon graunt:
For she is hevenly borne, and heaven may
justly vaunt.

LX

'And thou, faire yimp, sprong out from
English race,
How ever now accompted Elfin some,
Well worthy doest thy service for her grace,
To aide a virgin desolate, forlornome;
But when thou famous victory hast wonne,
And high amongst all knights hast hong thy
shield,
Thenceforth the suitt of earthly conquest
shonne,
And wash thy hands from guilt of bloody field:
For blood can nought but sin, and wars but
sorrows yield.

LXI

'Then seek this path that I to thee presage,
Which after all to heaven shall thee send;
Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage
To yonder same Hierusalem doe bend,
Where is for thee ordain'd a blessed end:
For thou, amongst those Saints whom thou
doest see,
Shalt be a Saint, and thine owne nations frend
And Patrone: thou *Saint George* shalt called
bee,
Saint George of mery *England*, the signe of
victorie'

LXII

'Unworthy wretch,' (quoth he) 'of so great
grace,
How dare I thinke such glory to attaine?'
'These, that have it attaynd, were in like
case,
As wretched men, and lived in like paine.'
'But deeds of armes must I at last be faine
And Ladies love to leave, so dearly bought?'
'What need of armes, where peace doth ay
remaine,'
(Said he) 'and bitter battailes all are fought?
As for loose loves, they are vaine, and vanish
into nought.'

LXIII

'O! let me not,' (quoth he) 'then turne a-
gaine
Backe to the world, whose joyes so fruitlesse
are;
But let me heare for aie in peace remaine,
Or streightway on that last long voiage fare,
That nothing may my present hope empare.'
'That may not be,' (said he) 'ne maist thou
yitt
Forgoe that royal maides bequeathed care,
Who did her cause into thy hand committ,
Till from her cursed foe thou have her freely
quitt.'

LXIV

'Then shall I soone,' (quoth he) 'so God me
Abett that virgins cause disconsolate, [grace,
And shortly back returne unto this place,
To walke this way in Pilgrims poore estate.
But now aread, old father, why of late
Didst thou behight me borne of English blood,
Whom all a Faeries soune doen nominat?'
'That word shall I,' (said he) 'avouchen good,
Sith to thee is unknowne the cradle of thy
brood.'

LXV

'For, well I wote, thou springst from ancient
race
Of Saxon kinges, that have with mightie hand,
And many bloody battailes fought in face,
High reard their royall throne in Britans land,

And vanquishd them, unable to withstand:
From thence a Faery thee unweeting reft,
There as thou slepest in tender swadling land,
And her base Elfin brood there for thee left:
Such, men do Chaungelings call, so chaung'd
by Faeries theft.

LXVI

'Thence she thee brought into this Faery
lond,
And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde;
Where thee a Ploughman all unweeting fond,
As he his toylesome teme that way did guye,
And brought thee up in ploughmans state to
hyde,
Whereof Georgos he thee gave to name;
Till prickt with courage, and thy forces pryde,
To Faery court thou cam'st to seek for fume,
And prove thy puissant armes, as seemes thee
best became.'

LXVII

'O holy Sire!' (quoth he) 'how shall I quight
The many favours I with thee have fownd,
That hast my name and nation redd aright,
And taught the way that does to heaven
bownd!'
This saide, adowne he looked to the grownd
To have returnd; but dazed were his eyne
Through passing brightnes, which did quite
confound
His feeble sence, and too exceeding shyne.
So darke are earthly things compar'd to things
divine.

LXVIII

At last, whenas himselfe he gan to fynd,
To Una back he cast him to retyre,
Who him awaited still with pensive mynd.
Great thanks, and goodly meed, to that good
syre
He thens departing gave for his paynes hyre
So came to Una, who him joyd to see;
And, after litle rest, gan him desyre
Of her adventure myndfull for to bee.
So leave they take of Cœlia and her daugh-
ters three.

CANTO XI.

The knight with that old Dragon fights
Two days incessantly :
The third himcoverthrowes, and gayns
Most glorious victory.

^c ⁱ
High time now gan it wex for Una fayre
To thinke of those her captive Parents deare,
And their forwasted kingdom to repayre :
Whereto whenas they now approached neare,
With hartie wordes her knight she gan to
cheare,
And in her modest maner thus be-pake : [deare,
'Deare knight, as deare as ever knight was
That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake,
Iligh heaven behold the tedious toyle ye for me
take !

ⁱⁱ
'Now are we come unto my native soyle,
And to the place where all our perilles dwell ;
Here hauntes that feend, and does his dayly
spoyle ;
Therefore, henceforth, bee at your keeping well,
And ever ready for your foeman fell :
The sparke of noble courage now awake,
And strive your excellent selfe to excell :
That shall ye evermore renowned make [take.
Above all knights on earth, that batteill under-

ⁱⁱⁱ
And pointing forth, 'Lo! yonder is,' (said she)
'The brasen towre, in which my parents deare
For dread of that huge feend emprisoned be ;
Whom I from far see on the walles appeare,
Whose sight my feeble soule doth greatly
And on the top of all I do espye [cheare :
The watchman wayting tydings glad to heare ;
That, (O my Parents!) might I happily
Unto you bring, to ease you of your misery !'

^{iv}
With that they heard a roaringhideous sownd,
That all the ayre with terror filled wyde,
And seemd uneth to shake the steadfast ground,
Eftsoones that dreadful Dragon they espyde,
Where stretcht he lay upon the sunny side
Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill :
But, all so soone as he from far descryde
Those glistring armes that heven with light
did fill, [untill
He rousd himselfe full blyth, and hastned them

^v
Then badd the knight his Lady yede aloof,
And to an hill herselfe withdraw asyde ;
From whence she might behold that battaill
proof,
And eke be safe from daunger far descryde.
She him obayd, and turnd a little wyde.—
Now, O thou sacred Muse! most learned Dame,
Fayre ympe of Phœbus and his' aged byrde,
The Nourse of time and everlasting fame,
That warlike handes ennoblest with immortal
name ;

^{vi}
O! gently come into my feeble brest ;
Come gently, but not with that mightie rage.
Wherewith the martiall troupes thou doest
infest,
And hartes of great Herots doest enrage,
That nought their kindled corage may aswage :
Soone as thy dreadfull trompe begins to sownd,
The God of warre with his fiers equiPAGE
Thou doest awake, sleepe never he so sownd ;
And scared nations doest with horror sterne
astownd.

^{vii}
Fayre Goddess, lay that furious fitt asyde,
Till I of warres and bloody Mars doe sing,
And fry on fieldes with Sarazin blood bedyde,
Twixt that great faery Queene and Paynim
king,
That with their horror heven and earth did ring ;
A worke of labour long, and endlesse prayse :
But now a while lett downe that haughtie
string,
And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse,
That I this man of God his godly armes may
blaze.

^{viii}
By this, the dreadful Beast drew nigh to
hand,
Halfe flying and halfe footing in his haste,
That with his largenesse measured much land,
And made wide shadow under his huge waste.
As mountaine doth the valley overcaste,
Approching nigh, he reared high afore
His body monstrous, horrible, and vaste ;

Which, to increase his wondrous greatnes more,
Was swoln with wrath and poyson, and with
bloody gore;

IX

And over all with brasen scales was armd,
Like plated cote of Steele, so couched neare
That nought mote perce; ne might his corse
bee harmd

With dint of sward, nor push of pointed speare:
Which as an Eagle, seeing pray appeare,
His aery plumes doth rouse, full rudely dight;
So shaked he, that horror was to heare:
For as the clashing of an Armor bright,
Such noyse his rouzed scales did send unto the
knight.

X

His flaggy winges, when forth he did display,
Were like two sayles, in which the hollow
wynd

Is gathered full, and worketh speedy way:
And eke the pennes, that did his pincons bynd,
Were like mayne-yardest with flying canvas
lynd;

With which whenas him list the ayre to beat,
And there by force unwonted passage fynd,
The cloudes before him field for terror great,
And all the heavens stood still amazed with his
threat.

XI

His huge long tayle, wovnd up in hundred
foldes,
Does overspred his long bras-sealy back,
Whose wreathed boughtes when ever he un-
foldes,

And thick entangled knots adown does slack,
Bespotted as with shieldes of red and blacke,
It sweepeth all the land behind him farre,
And of three furlongs does but litle lacke;
And at the point two stinges in fixed aggre,
Both deadly sharp, that sharpest Steele ex-
ceeden farre.

XII

But stinges and sharpest Steele did far exceed
The sharpnesse of his cruel rending clawes:
Dead was it sure, as sure as death in deed,
What ever thing does touch his ravenous pawes,
Or what within his reach he ever draws.
But his most hideous head my tongue to tell
Does tremble; for his deepe devouring jawes
Wyde gaped, like the grisly mouth of hell,
Through which into his darke abysses all ravin
fell.

XIII

And, that more wondrous was, in either jaw
Three rankes of yron teeth enraunged were,
In which yett trickling blood, and gobbets raw,
Of late devoured bodies did appeare,

That sight thereof bredd cold congealed feare;
Which to increase, and all atonce to kill,
A cloud of smothering smoke, and sulphure
seare,
Out of his stinking gorge forth steamed still,
That all the ayre about with smoke and stench
did fill.

XIV

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining
shieldes,
Did burne with wrath, and sparkled living
fyre:

As two broad Beacons, sett in open fieldes,
Send forth their flames far off to every shyre,
And warning give that enemies conspyre
With fire and sword the region to invade:
So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous yre;
But far within, as in a hollow glade,
Those glaring lampes were sett that made a
dreadfull shade.

XV

So dreadfull he towards him did pas,
Forelifting up a-loft his speckled brest,
And often bounding on the brused gras,
As for great joyance of his newcome guest.
Eftsoones he gan advance his haughty crest,
As chauffed bore his bristles doth upreare;
And shoke his scales to battaile ready drest,
That made the Rederosse knight nigh quake
for feare,
As bidding bold defyaunce to his foeman
neare.

XVI

The knight gan fayrely couch his steady speare,
And fierseely ran at him with rigorous might:
The pointed Steele, arriving rudely there,
His harder hyde would nether perce nor
bight,

But, glauncing by, forth passed forward right.
Yet sore amovd with so puissaunt push,
The wrathfull beast about him turned light,
And him so rudely, passing by, did brush
With his long tayle, that horse and man to
ground did rush.

XVII

Both horse and man up lightly rose againe,
And fresh encounter towards him addrest;
But th' ydle stroke yett backe recoyld in vaine,
And found no place his deadly point to rest.
Exceeding rage enflam'd the furious Beast,
To be avenged of so great despyght;
For never felt his imperceable brest
So wondrous force from hand of living wight;
Yet had he prov'd the powre of many a puis-
sant knight.

XVIII

Then, with his waving wings displayed wyde,
Himselfe up high he lifted from the ground,
And with strong flight did forcibly dryde
The yielding ayre, which nigh too feeble found
Her flitting parts, and element unsound,
To heare so great a weight: he, cutting way
With his broad sayles, about him soared round;
At last, low stouping with unweldy sway,
Snatcht up both horse and man, to beare them
quite away.

XIX

Long he them bore above the subject plaine,
So far as Ewghen bow a shaft may send,
Till struggling strong did him at last constrain
To let them downe before his flightes end:
As hagar d hauke, presuming to contend
With hardy fowle above his hable might,
His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend
To trusse the pray too heavy for his flight;
Which, coming down to ground, does free it
selfe by flight.

XX

He so disseized of his gryping grosse,
The knight his thrillant speare againe assayd
In his bras-plated body to embosse, [layd;
And three mens strength into the stroake he
Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked as affrayd,
And glaucing from his scaly necke did glyde
Close under his left wing, then broad displayd:
The percing steale there wrought a wound full
wyde, [lowdly cryde
That with the uncouth smart the Monster

XXI

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore
When wintry storme his wrathful wreck does
threat;
The rolling billowes beate the ragged shore,
As they the earth would shoulder from her seat;
And greedy gulfe does gape, as he would eat
His neighbour element in his revenge:
Then gin the blustering brethren boldly threat
To move the world from off his stedfast henge,
And boystrous battaile make, each other to
avenge.

XXII

The steely head stuck fast still in his flesh,
Till with his cruell clawes he snatcht the wood,
And quite a sunder broke. Forth flowed fresh
A gushing river of blacke gory blood,
That drowned all the land wheron he stood;
The streame thereof would drive a water-mill:
Treble augmented was his furious mood
With bitter sence of his deepe rooted ill,
That flames of fire he threw forth from his
large nosethril.

XXIII

His hideous tayle then hurled he about,
And therewith all enwrapt the nimble thyes
Of his froth-fomy steed, whose courage stout
Striving to loose the knott that fast him tyes,
Himselfe in straighter bandes too rash impleyes,
That to the ground he is perforce constraind
To throw his ryder; who can quickly rise
From off the earth, with durty blood distaynd,
For that reprochfull fall right fowly he disdaynd;

XXIV

And fiercely tooke his trenchand blade in hand,
With which he stroke so furious and so fell,
That nothing seemd the puissaunce could with-
Upon his crest the hardned yron fell, [stand:
But his more hardned crest was armd so well,
That deeper dint therein it would not make;
Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell,
That from thenceforth he shund the like to take,
But when he saw them come he did them still
forsake.

XXV

The knight was wroth to see his stroke beguyl'd,
And smot againe with more outrageous might;
But backe againe the sparring steale recovld,
And left not any marke where it did light,
As if in Adamant rocke it had bene pight.
The beast, impatient of his smarting wound
And of so fierce and forcible despight, [ground;
Thought with his winges to styve above the
But his late wounded wing unserviceable found.

XXVI

Then full of griefe and anguish vehement,
He lowdly brayd, that like was never heard;
And from his wide devouring oven sent
A flake of fire, that flashing in his beard
Him all amaz, and almost made afeard:
The scorching flame sore swingd all his face,
And through his armour all his body seard,
That he could not endure so cruell care,
But thought his armes to leave, and helmet
to unlace.

XXVII

Not that great Champion of the antique world,
Whom famous Poetes verse so much doth
vaunt,
And hath for twelve huge labours high extold,
So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt,
When him the poysoned garment did enchaunt,
When Centaures blood and bloody verses
charm'd; [daunt;
As did this knight twelve thousand dolours
Whom fyrie steale now burnt, that erst him
arm'd;
That erst him goodly arm'd, now most of all
him harm'd.

XXVIII

Faynt, wearie, sore, emboyled, grieved, brent,
With heat, toyle, wounds, arines, smart, and
inward fire,

That never man such mischiefes did torment:
Death better were; death did he oft desire,
But death will never come when needes require.
Whom so dismayd when that his foe beheld,
He cast to suffer him no more respire,
But gan his sturdy sterne about to weld,
And him so strongly stroke, that to the ground
him feld.

XXIX

It fortun'd, (as fayre it then befell)
Behynd his backe, unweeting, where he stood,
Of auncient time there was a springing well,
From which fast trickled forth a silver flood,
Full of great vertues, and for medicine good:
Whylome, before that cursed Dragon got
That happy land, and all with innocent blood
Defyld those sacred waves, it rightly hot
The well of life, ne yet his vertues had
forgot:

XXX

For unto life the dead it could restore,
And guilt of sinfull crimes cleane wash away;
Those that with sickness were infected sore
It could recure; and aged long decay
Renew, as one were borne that very day.
Both Silo this, and Jordan, did excell,
And th' English Bath, and eke the German
Spau;
Ne can Cephise, nor Helbrus, match this well:
Into the same the knight back overthrowen
fell.

XXXI

Now gan the golden Phœbus for to sleepe
His fierie face in billowes of the west,
And his faint steedes watred in Ocean sleepe,
Whiles from their journall labours they did
rest;
When that infernall Monster, having kest
His wearie foe into that living well,
Gan high advance his broad discoloured brest
Above his wonted pitch, with countenance fell,
And clapt his yron wings as victor he did
dwell.

XXXII

Which when his pensive Lady saw from farre,
Great woe and sorrow did her soule assay,
As weening that the sad end of the warre;
And gan to highest God entirely pray
That feared chance from her to turne away:
With folded hands, and knees full lowly bent,
All night sleepe watcht, ne once adowne would
lay

Her dainty limbes in her sad dieriment,
But praying still did wake, and waking did
lament.

XXXIII

The morrow next gan carely to appeare,
That Titan rose to ruine his daily race;
But carely, ere the morrow next gan reare
Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face,
Up rose the gentle virgin from her place,
And looked all about, if she might spy
Her loved knight to move his manly pace:
For she had great doubt of his safety,
Sincc late she saw him fall before his enemy.

XXXIV

At last she saw where he up-started brave
Out of the well, wherein he drenched lay:
As Eagle, fresh out of the ocean wave,
Where he hath left his plumes all hory gray,
And deekt himselfe with fethers youthly gay,
Like Eynas hauke up mounts unto the skies,
His newly-budded pincons to assay,
And marveiles at himselfe stil as he flies:
So new this new-borne knight to battell new
did rise.

XXXV

Whom when the damned feedd so flesh did
No wonder if he wondred at the sight, [spy,
And doubted whether his late enemy
It were, or other new supplied knight.
He now, to prove his late-renewed might,
Iligh brandishing his bright deaw-burning
blade,
Upon his crested scalp so sore did smite,
That to the scull a yawning wound it made:
The deadly dint his dulled senses all dismayd.

XXXVI

I wote not whether the revenging steels
Were hardned with that holy water dew
Wherein he fell, or sharper edge did feeles,
Or his baptized hands now greater grew,
Or other secret vertue did en-cue;
Els never could the force of fleshly arme,
Ne molten mettall, in his blood embrew;
For till that stownd could never wight him
harne [charme,
By subtilty, nor slight, nor might, nor mighty

XXXVII

The cruell wound enraged him so sore,
That loud he yelled for exceeding paine;
As hundred ramping Lions seemd to rore,
Whom ravenous hunger did thereto constraîne:
Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine,
And therewith scourge the buxome aire so sore,
That to his force to yelden it was faine;

Ne ought his sturdy strokes might stand afore,
That high trees overthrow, and rocks in peeces
tore.

XXXVIII

The same advauncing high above his head,
With sharpe intended sting so rude him smott,
That to the earth him drove, as stricken dead;
Ne living wight would have him life behott:
The mortall sting his angry needle shott
Quite through his shield, and in his shoulder
seasl.

Where fast it stucke, ne would thereout be gott:
The griefe thereof him wondrous sore diseasl,
Ne might his rancoring paine with patience be
appeasl.

XXXIX

But yet, more mindfull of his honour deare
Then of the grievous smart which him did
wring,
From loathed soile he can him lightly reare,
And strove to loose the far infixid sting:
Which when in vaine he tryde with strugg-
ling,
Inflam'd with wrath, his raging blade he hefte,
And strooke so strongly, that the knotty string
Of his huge taile he quite a sonder cleft;
Five joints thereof he hewd, and but the stump
him left.

XL

Hart cannot thinke what outrage and what
cries,
With fowle enfouldred smoake and flashing fire,
The hell-bred beast threw forth unto the skyes,
That all was covered with darknesse dire:
Then, fraught with rancour and engorged yre,
He cast at once him to avenge for all;
And, gathering up himselfe out of the mire
With his uneven wings, did fiercely fall
Upon his sunne-bright shield, and grypt it
fast withall.

XLI

Much was the man encumberd with his hold,
In feare to lose his weapon in his paw,
Ne wist yett how his talaunts to unfold;
Nor harder was from Cerberus greedy jaw
To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw
To reave by strength the griped gage away:
Thrise he assayd it from his foote to draw,
And thrise in vaine to draw it did assay;
It booted nought to thinke to robbe him of his
pray.

XLII

Tho, when he saw no power might prevaile,
His trusty sword he cald to his last aid,
Wherewith he fersly did his foe assaile,
And double blowes about him stoutly laid,

That glauncing fire out of the yron plaid,
As sparkles from the Andvile use to fly,
When heavy hammers on the wedge are swaid:
Therewith at last he forst him to untie
One of his grasping feete, him to defend
thereby.

XLIII

The other foote, fast fixed on his shield,
Whenas no strength nor stroks mote him con-
straine

To loose, ne yet the warlike pledge to yield,
He smott therat with all his might and maine,
That nought so wondrous pursuance might
sustaine:

Upon the joint the lucky Steele did light,
And made such way that hewd it quite in
twaine;

The paw yett missed not his minisht might,
But hong still on the shield, as it at first was
pight.

XLIV

For griefe thereof and diveli-h despight,
From his infernall founace forth he threw
Huge flames that dimmed all the heavens light,
Enrold in dusky smoke and brimstone blew:
As burning Aetna from his boyling stew
Doth belch out flames, and rockes in peeces
broke,

And ragged ribs of mountaines molten new,
Enwrapt in coleblacke clowds and filthy smoke,
That al the land with stench and heven with
horror choke.

XLV

The heate whereof, and harmefull pestilence,
So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire
A little backward for his best defence,
To save his body from the scorching fire,
Which he from hellish entrailles did expire.
It chaunst, (eternall God that chaunce did
guide)

As he recoiled backward, in the mire
His nigh foreweried feeble feet did slide,
And downe he fell, with dread of shame sore
terrid.

XLVI

There grew a goodly tree him faire beside,
Loaden with fruit and apples rosy redd,
As they in pure vermillion had been dide,
Whereof great vertues over-all were redd;
For happy life to all which thereon fedd,
And life eke everlasting did befall:
Great God it planted in that blessed stedd
With his Almighty hand, and did it call
The tree of life, the crime of our first fathers
fall.

XLVII

In all the world like was not to be fownd,
Save in that soile, where all good things did
grow,
And freely sprong out of the fruitfull grownd,
As incorrupted Nature did them sow,
Till that dredd Dragon all dñl overthrow.
Another like faire tree eke grew thereby,
Whereof whoso did eat, eftsoones did know
Both good and ill. O mournfull memory!
That tree through one mans fault hath doen
us all to dy.

XLVIII

From that first tree forth flowd, as from a
well,
A trickling streame of Balme, most soveraine
And dainty deare, which on the ground still
fell,
And overflowed all the fertile plaine,
As it had dewed bene with timely raine:
Life and long health that gracious ointment
gave, [again
And deadly wounds could heale, and reare
The sencelesse corse appointed for the grave:
Into that same he fell, which did from death
him save.

XLIX

For nigh thereto the ever damned Beast
Durst not approach, for he was deadly made,
And al that life preserved did detest;
Yet he it oft adventur'd to invade.
By this the drouping day-light gan to fade,
And yield his rowme to sad succeeding night,
Who with her sable mantle gan to shade
The face of earth and wayes of living wight,
And high her burning torch set up in heaven
bright.

L

When gentle Una saw the second fall
Of her deare knight, who, weary of long fight
And faint through losse of blood, moov'd not
at all,
But lay, as in a dreame of deepe delight,
Besmeard with pretious Balme, whose vertuous
might
Did heale his woundes, and scorching heat alay;
Againe she stricken was with sore affright,
And for his safetie gan devoutly pray,
And watch the noyous night, and wait for
joyous day.

LI

The joyous day gan early to appeare;
And fayre Aurora from the dewy bed
Of aged Tithone gan herselfe to reare
With rosy cheekes, for shame as blushing red:

Her golden locks for hast were loosely shed
About her eares, when Una her did marke
Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers spred,
From heaven high to chace the chearelesse
darke; [larke.
With mery note her lowd salutes the mounting

LII

Then freshly up arose the doughty knight,
All healed of his hurts and woundes wide,
And did himselfe to battaile ready dight;
Whose early foe awaiting him beelde
To have devoured, so soone as day he spyde,
When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare,
As if late fight had nought him damnifyde,
He woxe dismaid, and gan his fate to feare:
Nathlesse with wonted rage he him advaunced
neare.

LIII

And in his first encounter, gaping wyde,
He thought atonce him to have swallowd
quight,
And rusht upon him with outragious pryde;
Who him rencountering fierce, as hauke in
flight,
Perforce rebutted backe. The weapon bright,
Taking advantage of his open jaw, [might,
Ran through his mouth with so importune
That deepe emperst his darksom hollow maw,
And, backe retyrd, his life blood forth with all
did draw.

LIV

So downe he fell, and forth his life did breathe,
That vanisht into smoke and cloudes swift;
So downe he fell, that th' earth him underneath
Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift;
So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift, [away,
Whose false foundation waves have washt
With dreadfull poyse is from the mayneland rift,
And rolling downe great Neptune doth dismay:
So downe he fell, and like an heaped mountaine
lay.

LV

The knight him selfe even trembled at his fall,
So huge and horrible a masse it seemd;
And his deare Lady, that beheld it all,
Durst not approach for dread which she mis-
deemd;
But yet at last, whenas the direfull feend
She saw not stirre, off-shaking vaine affright
She nigher drew, and saw that joyous end:
Then God sho prayds, and thank't her faithfull
knight,
That had atchieved so great a conquest by his
might.

CANTO XII.

Fayre Una to the Redecrosse Knight
 Betrouthed is with joy :
 Though false Duncssa, it to barre,
 Her false sleighes doe employ.

BEHOOLD ! I see the haven nigh at hand
 To which I meane my wearie course to bend ;
 Vere the maine shote, and beare up with the
 land,
 The which afore is fayrly to be kend,
 And seemeth safe from storms that may offend ;
 There this fayre virgin wearie of her way
 Must landed bee, now at her journeyes end ;
 There eke my feeble burke a while may stay,
 Till mery wynd and weather call her thence
 away.

Scarsely had Phœbus in the glooming East
 Yett harness'd his fyrie-footed teeme,
 Ne reard above the earth his flaming creast,
 When the last deadly smoke aloft did steeme,
 That signe of last outbreathed life did seeme
 Unto the watchman on the castle-wall,
 Who thereby dead that balefull Beast did deeme.
 And to his Lord and Lady lowd gan call,
 To tell how he had scene the Dragons fatal fall.

Uprose with hasty joy, and feeble speed,
 That aged Syre, the Lord of all that land,
 And looked forth, to weet if trow indeed
 Those tydings were, as he did understand :
 Which whenas trow by tryall he out fond,
 He bad to open wyde his brassen gate,
 Which long time had beene shut, and out of hond
 Proclaymed joy and peace through all his state ;
 For dead now was their foe, which them forrayed
 late.

Then gan triumphant Trompets sownd on hye,
 That sent to heven the echoed report
 Of their new joy, and happie victory
 Gainst him, that had them long opprest with
 And fast imprisoned in sieged fort. [tort.
 Then all the people, as in solemne feast,
 To him assembled with one full consort,
 Rejoycing at the fall of that great beast,
 From whose eternall bondage now they were
 releast.

Forth came that auncient Lord, and aged
 Queene,
 Arayd in antique robes downe to the grownd,
 And sad habiliments right well besene :
 A noble crew about them waited rownd
 Of sage and sober peres, all gravely gownd ;
 Whom far before did march a goodly band
 Of tall young men, all hable armes to sownd :
 But now they laurell branches bore in hand,
 Glad signe of victory and peace in all their
 land.

Unto that doughtie Conquerour they came,
 And hum before themselves prostrating low,
 Their Lord and Patrone loud did him pro-
 clame,
 And at his feet their lawrell boughes did throw.
 Soone after them, all dauncing on a row,
 The comely virgins came, with garlands dight,
 As fresh as flowres in meadow greene doe grow
 When morning dew upon their leaves doth
 light : [on light.
 And in their handes sweet Timbrels all upheld

And them before the fry of children yong
 Their wanton sportes and childish mirth did
 play,
 And to the Maydens sownding tymbrels song
 In well attuned notes a joyous lay,
 And made delightfull musick all the way,
 Untill they came where that faire virgin stood :
 As fayre Diana in fresh sommers day
 Beholdes her nymphes ciraung'd in shady wood,
 Some wrestle, some do run, some bathe in
 christall flood.

So she beheld those maydens meriment
 With chearefull vew ; who, when to her they
 came,
 Themselves to ground with gracious humblesse
 And her ador'd by honorable name, [lent.

Lifting to heven her everlasting fame:
Then on her head they sett a girlond greene,
And crowned her twixt earnest and twixt
game:

Who, in her self-resemblance well beseene,
Did seeme, such as she was, a goodly maiden
Queene.

IX

And after all the raskall many ran,
Heaped together in rude rablement,
To see the face of that victorious man,
Whom all admired as from heaven sent,
And gazd upon with gaping wonderment;
But when they came where that dead Dragon
lay, [tent,
Stretch on the ground in monstrous large ex-
The sight with ydle feare did them dismay,
Ne durst approach him nigh to touch, or once
assay.

X

Some feard, and fledd; some feard, and well
it faynd;
One, that would wiser seeme then all the rest,
Warnd him not touch, for yet perhaps remaynd
Some lingring life within his hollow brest,
Or in his wombe might lurke some hidden nest
Of many Dragonettes, his fruitfull seede:
Another said, that in his eyes did rest
Yet sparckling fyre, and badd thereof take
heed;
Another said, he saw him move his eyes indeed.

XI

One mother, whenas her foolehardy chyld
Did come too neare, and with his talants play,
Hafte dead through feare, her litle babe re-
vyld,
And to her gossibs gan in counsell say:
‘How can I tell, but that his talants may
Yet scratch my soune, or rend his tender hand?’
So diversly them selves in vaine they fray;
Whiles some more bold to measure him nigh
stand,
To prove how many acres he did spred of land.

XII

Thus flocked all the folke him rownd about;
The whiles that hoarie king, with all his traine,
Being arrived where that champion stout
After his foes defeasaunce did remaine,
Him goodly greetes, and fayre does entertayne
With princely gifts of yvory and gold, [paine.
And thousand thanks him yeeldes for all his
Then when his daughter deare he does behold,
Her dearey doth imbrace, and kisseth manifold.

XIII

And after to his Pallace he them brings,
With shaumes, and trompets, and with Clarions
sweet,

And all the way the joyous people sings,
And with their garments strowes the paved
street; [meet

Whence mounting up, they fynd purveyaunce
Of all, that royall Princes court became;
And all the floore was underneath their feet
Bespredd with costly scarlott of great name,
On which they lowly sitt, and fitting purpose
frame.

XIV

What needes me tell their feast and goodly
guize,
In which was nothing riotous nor vaine?
What needes of dainty dishes to devize,
Of comely services, or courtly trayne?
My narrow leaves cannot in them contayne
The large discourse of roiall Princes state.
Yet was their manner then but bare and playne;
For th’ antique world excesse and pryde did
hate: [late.
Such proud luxurious pompe is swollen up but

XV

Then, when with meates and drinkes of every
kinde
Their fervent appetites they quenched had,
That auncient Lord gan fit occasion finde,
Of straunge adventures, and of perils sad
Which in his travell him befallen had,
For to demand of his renowned guest: [sad,
Who then with utt’rance grave, and count’nance
From poynt to poynt, as is before exprest,
Discourst his voyage long, accordiing his re-
quest.

XVI

Great pleasure, mixt with pittifull regard,
That godly King and Queene did passionate,
Whyles they his pittifull adventures heard;
That oft they did lament his lucklesse state,
And often blame the too importune fate
That heaped on him so many wrathfull wreakes;
For never gentle knight, as he of late,
So tossed was in fortunes cruell freakes:
And all the while salt teares bedewd the
hearers cheaks.

XVII

Then sayd that royall Pere in sober wise;
‘Deare Sonne, great beene the evils which ye
bore
From first to last in your late enterprise,
That I note whether praise or pitty more;

For never living man, I weene, se sore
In sea of deadly daungers was distrest:
But since now safe ye seised have the shore,
And well arrived are, (high God be blest!)
Let us devize of ease and everlasting rest.

'Ah dearest Lord!' said then that doughty
knight,
'Of ease or rest I may not yet devize;
For by the faith which I to armes have plight,
I bownden am streight after this emprise,
As that your daughter can ye well advize,
Backe to retourne to that great Faery Queene,
And her to serve sixe yeares in warlike wize,
Gainst that proud Paynim king that works her
teene: [beene]
Therefore I ought crave pardon, till I there have

'Unhappy falls that hard necessity.'
(Quoth he) 'the troubler of my happy peace,
And vowed foe of my felicity;
Ne I against the same can justly preace:
But since that band ye cannot now release,
Nor doen undo, (for vowes may not be vayne)
Soone as the terme of those six yeares shall
cease,
Ye then shall hither backe retourne agayne,
The marriage to accomplish vovd betwixt you
twain.

xx
'Which, for my part, I covet to performe
In sort as through the world I did proclame,
That who-so kild that monster most deforme,
And him in hardy battayle overcame,
Should have mine onely daughter to his Dame,
And of my kingdome heyre apparaunt bee:
Therefore, since now to thee perteynes the same
By dew desert of noble chevalree, [to thee].
Both daughter and eke kingdome lo! I yield

Then forth he called that his daughter fayre.
The fairest Un', his onely daughter deare,
His onely daughter and his onely hayre;
Who forth proceeding with sad sobe chere,
As bright as doth the morning starre appeare
Out of the East, with flaming lockes bedight,
To tell that dawning day is drawing neare.
And to the world does bring long-wished light:
So faire and fresh that Lady shewd herselfe in
sight.

xxii
So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in May;
For she had layd her mournfull stole aside,
And widow-like sad wimple throwne away,
Wherewith her heavenly beantie she did hide,

Whiles on her wearie journey she did ride;
And on her now a garment she did weare
All lilly white, withoutten spot or pride,
That seemd like silke and silver woven neare:
But neither silke nor silver therein did appeare.

XXIII

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties beame,
And glorious light of her sunshyny face,
To tell were as to strive against the streame:
My ragged rimes are all too rude and base
Her heavenly lineaments for to enchace.
Ne wonder; for her own deare loved knight,
All were she daily with himselfe in place,
Did wonder much at her celestial sight: [dight].
Oft had he seene her faire, but never so faire

So fairely dight when she in presence came,
She to her Syre made humble reverence,
And bowed low, that her right well became,
And added grace unto her excellence:
Who with great wisdom and grave eloquence
Thus gan to say—But, care he thus had sayd,
With flying speede, and seeming great pretence,
Came running in, much like a man dismayd,
A Messenger with letters, which his message
sayd.

XXV

All in the open hall amazed stood
At suddennesse of that unwary sight,
And wondred at his breathlesse hasty mood:
But he for nought would stay his passage right,
Till fast before the king he did alight:
Where falling flat great humblesse he did make.
And kist the ground whereon his foot was pight:
Then to his handes that writt he did betake,
Which he disclosing read thus, as the paper
spake:

XXVI

'To thee, most mighty king of Eden fayre,
Her greeting sends in these sad lines, adrest
The wofull daughter and forsaken heyre
Of that great Emperour of all the West;
And bids thee be advized for the best,
Ere thou thy daughter linck, in holy band
(Of wellocke, to that new unknown guest:
For he already plighted his right hand
Unto another love, and to another land.

XXVII

'To me, sad mayd, or rather widow sad,
He was affyaunced long time before,
And sacred pledges he both gave, and had,
False erraunt knight, infamous, and forswore!
Witnessse the burning Altars, which he swore,
And guilty heavens of his hold perjury;
Which though he hath polluted oft of yore,

Yet I to them for judgement just doe fly,
And them conjure t' avenge this shameful
injury.

XXVIII

'Therefore, since mine he is, or free or bond,
Or false or trew, or living or else dead,
Withhold, O soverayne Prince! your hasty hond
From knitting league with him, I you aread;
Ne weene my right with strength adowne to
tread,
Through weaknesse of my widowhed or woe;
For truth is strong her rightfull cause to plead,
And shall finde friends, if need requirerth soe.
So bids thee well to fare, Thy neither friend
nor foe, *Fidessa.*'

XXIX

When he these bitter byting wordes had red,
The tydings straunge did him abashed make,
That still he sate long time astonish'd,
As in great muse, ne word to creature spake.
At last his solemne silence thus he brake,
With doubtfull eyes fast fix'd on his guest:
'Redoubted knight, that for myne only sake
Thy life and honor late adventurst, | prest.
Let nought be hid from me that ought to be ex-

'What meane these bloody vowes and idle
threats,
Throwne out from womanish impatient mynd?
What hev'ens? what altars? what enraged
heates,
Here heaped up with termes of love unkynd,
My conscience cleare with guilty bands would
bynd?
Ilig God be witnesse that I guiltlesse ame;
But if yourselfe, Sir knight, ye faulty fynd,
Or wrapped be in loves of former Dame,
With cryme doe not it cover, but disclosge the
same.'

XXXI

To whom the Redcrosse knight this answer
sent:
'My Lord, my king, be nought hereat dismayd,
Till well ye wote by grave intendment,
What woman, and wherefore, doth me upbrayd
With breach of love and loialty betrayd.
It was in my mishaps, as hitherward
I lately travell'd, that unwares I strayd
Out of my way, through perils straunge and
hard, | declard.
That day should faile me ere I had them all

XXXII

'There did I find, or rather I was fownd
Of this false woman that *Fidessa* hight,
Fidessa hight the falsest Dame on grownd,
Most false *Duessa*, royall richly dight,

That easy was t' inveigle weaker sight:
Who by her wicked arts and wylie skill,
Too false and strong for earthly skill or might,
Unwares me wrought unto her wicked will,
And to my foe betrayd when least I feared il

Then stepped forth the goodly royall Mayd,
And on the ground herselfe prostrating low,
With sober countenance thus to him sayd:
'O! pardon me, my soveraine Lord, to shew
The secret treasons, which of late I know
To have bene wrought by that false sorceresse:
Shee, onely she, it is, that earst did throw
This gentle knight into so great distresse,
That death him did awaite in daily wretched-
nesse.

XXXIV

'And now it seemes, that she suborned hath
This crafty messenger with letters vaine,
To worke new woe and improvid'd scath,
By breaking of the band betwixt us twaine;
Wherein she used hath the practicke paine
Of this false footman, clokt with simplenesse,
Whome if ye please for to discover plaine,
Ye shall him *Archimago* find, I ghesse, | lesse.
The falsest man alive: who tries, shall find no

The king was greatly moved at her speach;
And, all with suddain indignation fraight,
Bad on that Messenger rude hands to reach.
Eftsoones the Gard, which on his state did wait,
Attacht that faytor false, and bound him strait,
Who seeming sorely chauff'd at his band,
As chained beare whom cruell dogs doe bait,
With ydle force did faine them to withstand,
And often semblaunce made to scape out of
their hand.

XXXVI

But they him layd full low in dungeon deepe,
And bound him hand and foote with yron chains;
And with continual watch did warely keepe.
Who then would thinke that by his subtle
trains
He could escape fowle death or deadly pains?
Thus, when that Princes wrath was pacified,
He gan renew the late forbidden baine,
And to the knight his daughter deare he tyde
With sacred rites and vowes for ever to abyde.

XXXVII

His owne two hands the holy knotts did knitt,
That none but death for ever can divide;
His owne two hands, for such a turne most fitt,
The housling fire did kinde and provide,

And holy water thereon sprinkled wide;
At which the bushy Teade a groome did light,
And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide,
Where it should not be quenched day nor night,
For feare of evil fates, but burnen ever bright.

XXXVIII

Then gan they sprinkle all the posts with
wine,
And made great feast to solemnize that day:
They all perfumde with frankincense divine,
And precious odours fetcht from far away,
That all the house did sweat with great aray:
And all the while sweete Musicke did apply
Her curious skill the warbling notes to play,
To drive away the dull Melancholy;
The whiles one sung a song of love and jollity.

XXXIX

During the which there was an heavenly noise
Heard sownd through all the Pallace pleasantly,
Like as it had bene many an Angels voice
Singing before th' eternall majesty,
In their trinall triplicities on hye:
Yett wist no creature whence that hevenly
Proceeded, yet each one felt secretly [sweet
Himselfe thereby refte of his senses meet,
And ravished with rare impression in his sprite.

XL

Great joy was made that day of young and
old,
And solemne feast proclaymd throughout the
land,

That their exceeding merth may not be told:
Suffice it heare by signes to understand
The usuall joyes at knitting of loves band.
Thrise happy man the knight himselfe did
hold,

Possessed of his Ladies hart and hand;
And ever, when his eie did her behold,
His heart did seeme to melt in pleasures mani-
fold.

XLI

Her joyous presence, and sweet company,
In full content he there did long enjoy;
Ne wicked envy, ne vile ghaiovy,
His deare delights were hable to annoy:
Yet, swimming in that sea of blisfull joy,
He nought forgott how he whilome had sworne,
In case he could that monstrous beast de-
stroy,

Unto his Faery Queene backe to retourne;
The which he shortly did, and Una left to
mourne.

XLII

Now, strike your sailes, yee jolly Mariners,
For we be come unto a quiet rude,
Where we must land some of our passengers,
And light this weary vessell of her lode:
Here she a while may make her safe abode,
Till she repaired have her tackles spent,
And wants supplide; And then againe abroad
On the long voiage whereto she is bent:
Well may she speede, and fairely finish her
intent!

THE SECOND BOOK

OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE.

I

RIGHT well I wote, most mighty Sovereaine,
That all this famous antique history
Of some th' abundance of an ydle braine
Will judged be, and painted forgery,
Rather then matter of just memory;
Sith none that breatheth living aire does know
Where is that happy land of Faery,
Which I so much doe vaunt, yet no where
show,
But vouch antiquities, which no body can
know.

II

But let that man with better sence advize,
That of the world least part to us is red;
And daily how through hardy enterprize
Many great Regions are discovered,
Which to late age were never mentioned.
Who ever heard of th' Indian Peru?
Or who in venturous vessell measured
The Amazon huge river, now found trew?
Or fruitfullest Virginia who did ever vew?

III

Yet all these were, when no man did them
know,
Yet have from wisest ages hidden beene;
And later times things more unknowne shall
show.
Why then should witlesse man so much mis-
weene,

That nothing is but that which he hath seene?
What if within the Moones fayre shining
spheare,
What if in every other starre unseene
Of other worldes he happily should heare,
He wonder would much more; yet such to
some appeare.

IV

Of faery lond yet if he more inquire,
By certein signes, here sett in sondrie place,
He may it fynd; ne let him then admyre,
But yield his sence to bee too blunt and bace,
That no'te without an hound fine footing trace.
And thou, O fayrest Princess under sky!
In this fayre mirrhour maiest behold thy face,
And thine owne realmes in lond of Faery,
And in this antique ymage thy great auncestry.

V

The which O! pardon me thus to enfold
In covert vele, and wrap in shadowes light,
That feeble eyes your glory may behold,
Which ells could not endure those beames
bright,
But would bee dazed with exceeding light.
O! pardon, and vouchsafe with patient eare
The brave adventures of this faery knight,
The good Sir Guyon, graciously to heare;
In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly
doth appeare.

CANTO I.

Guyon, by Archimago abused,
The Redcrosse knight awnytes;
Fyndes Mordant and Amavia slaine
With pleasures poisoned baytes.

THAT conning Architect of cancred guyle,
Whom Princes late displeasure left in bands,
For falsed letters, and suborned wyle,
Soone as the Redcrosse knight he understands
To beene departed out of Eden landes,
To serve againe his souveraine Elfin Queene,
His artes he moves, and out of caytives landes
Himselke he frees by secret meanes unscene;
His shackles emptie left, himselke escaped
cleene.

II

And forth he fares, full of malicious mynd,
To worken mischief, and avengeing woe,
Where ever he that godly knight may fynd,
His onely hart-sore, and his onely foe;
Sith Una now he algates must forgoe,
Whom his victorious handes did earst restore
To native crowne and kingdom late ygoe;
Where she enjoys sure peace for evermore,
As wetherbeaten ship arryv'd on happie shore.

III

Him therefore now the object of his spight
And deadly food he makes: him to offend,
By forged treason or by open fight,
He seekes, of all his drifte the aymed end:
Thereto his subtil' engins he does bend,
His practick witt and his fuyre fyled tongue,
With thousand other sleights; for well he kend
His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong:
For hardly could bee hurt who was already
stong.

IV

Still as he went he craftie stales did lay,
With cunning traynes him to entrap unwares,
And privy spyals plast in all his way, [fares,
To weete what course he takes, and how he
To ketch him at a vantage in his snares.
But now so wise and wary was the knight
By tryall of his former harmes and cares,
That he descryde and shonned still his sligh:
The fish that once was caught new bait wil:
hardly byte,

V

Nath'lesse th' Enchaunter would not spare
In hope to win occasion to his will; his payne,
Which wher he long awaited had in vayne,
He chaungd his mynd from one to other ill;
For to all good he enemy was still.
Upon the way him fortun'd to meete,
Fayre marching underneath a shady hill,
A goodly knight, all arm'd in harnesse meete,
That from his head no place appeared to his
feete.

VI

His carriage was full comely and upright;
His countenance demure and temperate;
But yett so sterne and terrible in sight,
That cheard his friendes, and did his foes amate:
He was an Elfin borne of noble state
And mickle worship in his native land;
Well could he tourney, and in lists debate.
And knighthood tooke of good Sir Huons hand,
When with king Oberon he came to Faery land.

VII

Him als accompanyd upon the way
A comely Palmer, clad in black attyre,
Of rypest yeares, and heares all hoarie gray,
That with a staffe his feeble steps did stire,
Least his long way his aged limbes should tire:
And, if by lookes one may the mind arcad,
He seemd to be a sage and sober syre;
And ever with slow pace the knight did lead,
Who taught his trampling steed with equall
steps to tread.

VIII

Such whenas Archimago them did view,
He weened well to worke some uncouth wyle:
Eftsoones untwisting his deceptfull clew,
He gan to weave a web of wicked guyle,
And, with faire countenance and flattering style
To them approaching, thus the knight bespake;
'Fayre sonne of Mars, that seeke with warlike
spoyle, [make,
And great atchiev'ments, great your selfe to
Vouchsafe to stay your steed for humble misers
sake.'

IX

He stayd his steed for humble misers sake,
 And badd tell on the tenor of his playnt: 'Who feigning then in every limb to quake
 Through inward feare, and seeming pale and faynt,
 [paynt: With piteous mone his percing speach gan
 'Deare Lady! how shall I declare thy care,
 Whom late I left in languorous constraynt?
 Would God! thy selfe now present were in place
 [thee grace. To tell this ruefull tale: thy sight could win

X

'Or rather would, O! would it so had chaunst,
 That you, most noble Sir, had present beene
 When that lowd rybauld, with vyle lust aduauost,
 Laid first his filthie hands on virgin cleene,
 To spoyle her dainty corps, so faire and sheene
 As on the earth, great mother of us all,
 With living eye more fayre was never scene
 Of chastity and honour virginall: [did call.
 Witnes, ye heavens, whom she in vaine to help

XI

'How may it be,' sayd then the knight halfe wroth,
 [shent? 'That knight should knighthood ever so haue
 'None but that saw,' (quoth he) 'would weene for troth,
 How shamefully that Mayd he did torment:
 Her looser golden lockes he rudely rent, [sword
 And drew her on the ground; and his sharpe
 Against her snowy brest he fiercely bent,
 And threatned death with many a bloodie word:
 [abhorde. Tounge hates to tell the rest that eye to see

XII

Therewith amoved from his sober mood,
 'And lives he yet,' (said he) 'that wrought this act?
 And doen the heavens afford him vitall food?'
 'He lives,' (quoth he) 'and boasteth of the fact,
 Ne yet hath any knight his courage crackt.'
 Where may that treachour then, (sayd he) 'be found,
 Or by what meanes may I his footing tract?'
 'That shall I shew,' (sayd he) 'as sure as hound
 [ing wound. The stricken Deare doth challenge by the bleed-

XIII

He stayd not lenger talke, but with fierce yre
 And zealous haste away is quickly gone
 To seeke that knight, where him that crafty Squire
 Supposed to be. They do arrive anone

Where sate a gentle Lady all alone,
 With garments rent, and heare dischevelled,
 Wringing her handes, and making piteous mone:
 Her swollen eyes were much disfigured,
 And her faire face with teares was fowly blubbered.

XIV

The knight, approching nigh, thus to her said:
 'Fayre Lady, through fowle sorrow ill bedight,
 Great pitty is to see you thus dismayd,
 And marre the blossom of your beauty bright:
 For thy appease your griefe and heavy plight,
 And tell the cause of your conceived payne;
 For, if he live that hath you doen despight,
 He shall you doe dew recompence agayne,
 Or els his wrong with greater puissance main-
 taine.'

XV

Which when she heard, as in despightfull wise
 She wilfully her sorrow did augment,
 And offred hope of comfort did despise:
 Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent,
 And scratcht her face with ghastly dremiment;
 Ne would she speake, ne see, ne yet be seene,
 But hid her vi-age, and her head downe bent,
 Either for grievous shame, or for great teene,
 As if her hart with sorrow had transfixed berne:

XVI

Till her that Squire bespake: 'Madame, my liefe,
 For Gods deare love be not so wilfull bent,
 But doe vouchsafe now to receive reliefe,
 The which good fortune doth to you present.
 For what bootes it to weepe and to wayment
 When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill increase,
 And the weake minde with double woe torment?'
 [appease When she her Squire heartly speake, she gan
 Her voluntarie paine, and feele some secret ease.

XVII

Eftsoone she said; 'Ah! gentle trustie Squire,
 What comfort can I, wofull wretch, conceave?
 Or why should ever I henceforth desyre
 To see faire heavens face, and life not leave,
 Sith that false Traytour did my honour reave?'
 'False traytour certes,' (saide the Faerie knight)
 'I read the man, that ever would deceave
 A gentle Lady, or her wrong through might:
 Death were too litle paine for such a fowle despight.

XVIII

'But now, fayre Lady, comfort to you make,
And read who hath ye wrought this shamefull
plight,

That short revenge the man may overtake,
Where-so he be, and soone upon him light.'
'Certes,' (saide she) 'I wote not how he hight,
But under him a gray steede he did wield,
Whose sides with dappled circles weren dight;
Upright he rode, and in his silver shield | field.'
He bore a bloodie Crosse that quartred all the

XIX

'Now by my head,' (saide Guyon) 'much I
muse, | amiss,
How that same knight should doe so fowle
Or ever gentle Damzell so abuse:
For, may I boldly say, he surely is
A right good knight, and trew of word ywis:
I present was, and can it witnesse well, [mis
When armes he swore, and streight did enter-
Th' adventure of the Errant damozell,
In which he hath great glory wonne, as I
heare tell.

XX

'Nathlesse he shortly shall againe he tryde,
And fairely quit him of th' imputed blame;
Els, be ye sure, he dearely shall abyde,
Or make you good amendment for the same:
All wrongs have mendes, but no amendes of
shame.

Now therefore, Lady, rise out of your paine,
And see the salving of your blotted name.'
Full loth she seemd thereto, but yet did faine,
For she was inly glad her purpose so to gaine.

XXI

Her purpose was not such as she did faine,
Ne yet her person such as it was seene;
But under simple shew, and semblant plaine,
Lurkt false Duesse secretly unseene,
As a chaste Virginitie that had wronged beene:
So had false Archimago her disguysd,
To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad teene;
And eke himselfe had craftily devised
To be her Squire, and do her service well
aguisd.

XXII

Her, late forlorne and naked, he had found
Where she did wander in waste wilderness,
Lurking in rockes and caves far under ground,
And with greene mosse cov'ring her nakednesse
To hide her shame and loathly filthinesse,
Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments
And borrowd beauty spoyld. Her nathlesse
Th' enchanter finding fit for his intents
Did thus reveast, and deckt with dew habili-
ments.

XXIII

For all he did was to deceive good knights,
And draw them from pursuit of praise and
fame

To slug in slouth and sensuall delights,
And end their daies with irrenowned shame.
And now exceeding grieve him overcame,
To see the Redcrosse thus advaunced hie;
Therefore this craftie engine he did frame,
Against his praise to stirre up envye
Of such, as vertues like mote unto him allye.

XXIV

So now he Guyon guydes an uncouth way
Through woods and mountaines, till they came
at last

Into a pleasant dale that lowly lay
Betwix two hils, whose high heuts overplast
The valley did with coole shade overcast:
Through midst thereof a little river cold,
By which there sate a knight with helme
unlaste,
Himselfe refreshing with the liquid cold.
After his travell long and labours manifold.

XXV

'Lo! yonder he,' cryde Archimago alowd,
'That wrought the shamefull fact which I did
shew;

And now he doth himselfe in secret shrowd.
To fly the vengeance for his outrage dew:
But vaine; for ye shall dearely do him rew,
So God ye speed and send you good successe,
Which we far off will here abide to vew.'
So they him left inflam'd with wrathfulnessse,
That streight against that knight his speare
he did addresse.

XXVI

Who, seeing him from far so fierce to pricke,
His werlike armes about him gan embrace,
And in the rest his ready speare did sticke:
Tho, when as still he saw him towards pace,
He gan encounter him in equal race.
They bene ymett, both ready to affray,
When suddenly that warriour gan abace
His threatned speare, as if some new mishap,
Had him betide, or hidden danger did entrap;

XXVII

And cryde, 'Mercie, Sir knight! and mercie,
Lord,
For mine offence and heedelesse hardiment,
That had almost committed crime abhord,
And with reprochfull shame mine honour
shent,
Whiles cursed steale against that badge I bent,

The sacred badge of my Redcemers death,
Which on your shield is set for ornament !
But his fierce foe his steed could stay unneath,
Who, prickt with courage kene, did cruell
battell breath.

XXVIII

But, when he heard him speake, streight way
he knew
His error; and, himselfe inclyning, sayd;
'Ah! deare Sir Guyon, well becommeth you,
But me behoveth rather to upbrayd,
Whose hastie hand so far from reason strayd,
That almost it did haynous violence
On that fayre ymage of that heavenly Mayd,
That decks and armes your shield with faire
defence: [offence.]
Your court'sie takes on you anothers dew

XXIX

So beene they both at one, and doen upreare
Their bevers bright each other for to greet;
(Goodly comportance each to other beare,
And entertaime themselves with court'sies meet.
Then said the Redcrosse knight; 'Now mote
I weete,
Sir Guyon, why with so fierce saliaunce,
And fell intent, ye did at earst me meet;
For sith I know your goodly governaunce,
(Great cause, I weene, you guided, or some un-
couth chaunce.'

XXX

'Certes,' (said he) 'well mote I shame to tell
The fond encheanson that me hither led.
A false infamous faitour late befell
Me for to meet, that seemed ill bested,
And playnd of grievous outrage, which he red
A knight had wrought against a Ladie gent;
Which to avenge he to this place me led,
Where you he made the marke of his intent,
And now is fled: soule shame him follow wher
he went !'

XXXI

So can he turne his earnest unto game,
Through goodly handling and wise tem-
perance.
By this his aged Guide in presence came;
Who, soone as on that knight his eye did
glaunce,
Eft-soones of him had perfect cognizaunce,
Sith him in Faery court he late avizd;
And sayd; 'Fayre sonne, God give you happy
chaunce,
And that deare Crosse upon your shield devizd,
Wherewith above all knights ye goodly seeme
aguaid !

XXXII

'Joy may you have, and everlasting fame,
Of late most hard atchiev'ment by you donne,
For which enrolled is your glorious name
In heavenly Regesters above the Sunne,
Where you a Saint with Saints your seat have
wonne:

But wretched we, where ye have left your marke,
Must now anew begin like race to runne.
God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy warke,
And to the wished haven bring thy weary
barke !'

XXXIII

'Palmer,' him answered the Redcrosse knight,
'His be the praise that this atchiev'ment
wrought,
Who made my hand the organ of his might:
More then goodwill to me attribute nought;
For all I did, I did but as I ought.
But you, faire Sir, whose pageant next ensewes,
Well mote yce thee, as well can wish your
thought,
That home ye may report thrise happy newes;
For well ye worthy bene for worth and gentle
thewes.'

XXXIV

So courteous conge both did give and take,
With right hands plighted, pledges of good
will.
Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make
With his blacke Palmer, that him guided still:
Still he him guided over dale and hill,
And with his steedy staffe did point his way;
His race with reason, and with words his will,
From fowle intemperaunce he ofte did stay,
And suffred not in wrath his hasty steps to
stray.

XXXV

In this faire wize they travaile long yfere,
Through many hard assayes which did betide;
Of which he honour still away did beare,
And spred his glory through all cuntries wide.
At last, as chaunst them by a forest side
To passe, for succour from the scorching ray,
They heard a ruefull voice, that dearely cride
With piercing shriekes and many a dolefull lay;
Which to attend awhile their forward steps
they stay.

XXXVI

'But if that carelesse heavens,' (quoth she)
'despie
The doome of just revenge, and take delight
To see sad pageaunts of mens miseries,
As bound by them to live in lives despight;
Yet can they not warne death from wretched
wight.

Come, then; come soone; come sweetest
 death, to me,
 And take away this long lent latched light:
 Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweete the medi-
 cines be, [dome free,
 That long captived soules from weary thral-

XXXVII

'But thou, sweete Babe, whom frowning
 froward fate
 Hath made sad witnesse of thy fathers fall,
 Sith heven fice deignes to hold in living state,
 Long maist thou live, and better thrive withall
 Then to thy lucklesse parents did befall.
 Live thou; and to thy mother dead attest
 That cleare she didd from blemish criminall:
 Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding breast
 Loe! I for pledges leave. So give me leave
 to rest.'

XXXVIII

With that a deadly shriek she forth did throw
 That through the wood re-echoed againe;
 And after gave a grone so deepe and low
 That seemd hertender heart was rent in twaine,
 Or thrild with point of thorough-piercing
 paine:

As gentle Hynd, whose side with cruell steele
 Through launched, forth her bleeding life does
 raine, [feele,
 Whiles the sad pang approching shee does
 Braies out her latest breath, and up her eies
 doth seele.

XXXIX

Which when that warriour heard, dismounting
 strait
 From his tall steed, he rusht into the thick,
 And soone arrived where that sad pourtraict
 Of death and dolour lay, halfe dead, halfe
 quick;

In whose white alabaster brest did stick
 A cruell knife that made a griesly wovnd,
 From which forth gusht a stream of gore blood
 thick,

That all her goodly garments staine arownd,
 And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassy
 grownd.

XL

Pitifull spectacle of deadly smart,
 Beside a bubbling fountaine low she lay,
 Which shee increased with her bleeding hart,
 And the cleane waves with purple gore did
 ray:

Als in her lap a lovely babe did play
 His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew;
 For in her streaming blood he did embay
 His litle hands, and tender joints embrew:
 Pitifull spectacle, as ever eie did vew!

XLI

Besides them both, upon the soiled gras
 The dead corse of an armed knight was spread,
 Whose armour all with blood besprincled was;
 His ruddy lips did smyle, and rosy red
 Did paint his chearefull cheekes, yett being ded;
 Seemd to have beene a goodly personage,
 Now in his freshest flowre of lusty-heh
 Fitt to inflame faire Lady with loves rage,
 But that fiers fate did crop the blossome of his
 age.

XLII

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did behold,
 His hart gan wexe as starke as marble stone,
 And his fresh blood did frieze with fearefull
 cold,
 That all his senses seemd bereft attone:
 At last his mighty ghost gan deepe to grone,
 As Lion, grudging in his great disdain,
 Mournes inwardly, and makes to him selfe
 mone;
 Til ruth and fraile affection did constraine
 His stout courage to stoupe, and shew his in-
 ward paine.

XLIII

Out of her gored wound the cruell steel
 He lightly snatcht, and did the floodgate stop
 With his faire garment; then gan softly feel
 Her feeble pulse, to prove if any drop
 Of living blood yet in her veynes did hop:
 Which when he felt to move, he hoped faire
 To call backe life to her forsaken shop.
 So well he did her deadly wounds repaire,
 That at the last shee gan to breath out living
 aire.

XLIV

Which he perceiving greatly gan rejoice,
 And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart
 Is meetest med'cine, tempred with sweete voice:
 'Ay me! deare Lady, which the ymage art
 Of ruefull pittie and impatient smart,
 What direfull chaunce, armd with avenging fate,
 Or cursed hand, hath plaid this cruell part,
 Thus fowle to hasten your untimely date?
 Speake, O deare Lady, speake! help never comes
 too late.'

XLV

Therewith her dim eie-lids she up gan reare,
 On which the drery death did sitt as sad
 As lump of lead, and made darke clouds appeare:
 But when as him, all in bright armour clad,
 Before her standing she espied had,
 As one out of a deadly dreame affright,
 She weakly started, yet she nothing drad:
 Straight downe againe herselfe, in great des-
 pight, [and light,
 She groveling threw to ground, as hating life

XLVI

The gentle knight hersoonē with carefull paine
Uplifted light, and softly did uphold:
Thrise he her reard, and thrise she sunck againe,
Till he his armes about her sides gan foli,
And to her said; 'Yet, if the stony cold
Hath not all seized on your frozen hart,
Let one word fall that may your grief unfold,
And tell the secrete of your mortall smart:
He oft finds present helpe who does his griefe
impart.'

XLVII

Then, casting up a deadly looke, full low
Shée sight from bottome of her wounded brest;
And after, many bitter throbs did throw,
With lips full pale and foltring tongue opprest,
These words she breathed forth from riven chest:
'Leave, ah! leave off, whatever wight thou bee,
To lett a weary wretch from her dew rest,
And trouble dying soules tranquillitee;
Take not away, now got, which none would
give to me.'

XLVIII

'Ah! far be it,' (said he) 'Deare dame, from mee,
To hinder soule from her desired rest,
Or hold sad life in long captivitee;
For all I seeke is but to have redrest
The bitter pang; that doth your heart infest.
Tell then, O Lady! tell what fatall priefe
Hath with so huge misfortune you opprest;
That I may cast to compas your reliefe, [griefe,
Or die with you in sorrow, and partake your

XLIX

With feeble hands then stretched forth on hye,
As heven accusing guilty of her death,
And with dry drops congealed in her eye,
In these sad wordes she spent her utmost breath:
'Heare then, O man! the sorrowes that unearh
My tong can tell, so far all sence they pas.
Loe! this dead corpse, that lies here underneath,
The gentlest knight, that ever on greene gras
Gay steed with spurs did pricke, the good Sir
Mortdant was:

L

'Was, (ay the while, that he is not so now!)
My Lord, my love, my deare Lord, my deare
love!

So long as hevns just with equall brow
Vouchsafed to behold us from above.
One day, when him high corage did emmove,
As wont ye knights to seeke adventures wilde,
He pricked forth his puissant force to prove.
Me then he left enwombed of this childe,
This luckles childe, whom thus ye see with
blood defild.

LI

'Him fortunēd (hard fortune ye may ghesse)
To come, where vile Acrasia does woune;
Acrasia, a false enchaunteresse,
That many errant knights hath fowle fordonne;
Within a wandring Island, that doth ronne
And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling is.
Fayre Sir, if ever there ye travell, shonne
The cursed land where many weend amis,
And know it by the name: it hight the *Bowre
of blis*.

LII

'Her blis is all in pleasure, and delight,
Wherewith she makes her lovers dronken mad;
And then with words, and weedes, of wondrous
might,
On them she workes her will to uses bad:
My liefest Lord she thus beguiled had;
For he was flesh: (all flesh doth fraytie breed)
Whom when I heard to beene so ill bestad,
Wenke wretch, I wrapt my selfe in palmer weed,
And cast to seek him forth through danger and
great dread.

LIII

'Now had fayre Cynthia by even tounres
Full measured thre quarters of her yeare,
And thrise thre tymes had hid her crooked
hornes,
Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbear,
And bad me call Lucina to me neare.
Lucina came; a manchild forth I brought
The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my mid-
wives, weare:
Hard help at need! So deare thee, babe, I bought;
Yet nought too dear I deemd, while so my deare
I sought.

LIV

'Him so I sought; and so at last I fownd,
Where him that witch had thralld to her will,
In chaines of lust and lewde desyres ybrownd,
And so transformed from his former skill,
That me he knew not, nether his owne ill;
Till, through wise handling and faire govern-
I him regured to a better will, [aunre,
Purged from drugs of fowle intemperance:
Then meanes I gan devise for his deliveraunce.

LV

'Which when the vile Enchaunteresse per-
ceiv'd,
How that my Lord from her I would reprove,
With cup thus charmd him parting she deceiv'd;
"Sad verse, give death to him that death does
"And losse of love to her that loves to live, [give,
"So soone as Bacchus with the Nympe does
So parted we, and on our journey drive; [lincke!"

Till, coming to this well, he stoupt to drinke:
The charme fulfilld, dead suddenly he downe
did sincke.

LVI

'Which when I, wretch'—Not one word more
she sayd,
But breaking off the end for want of breath,
And slyding soft, as downe to sleepe her layd,
And ended all her woe in quiet death.
That seeing, good Sir Guyon could weath
From tearestabstayne; for grieve his hart did
grate,
And from so heave sight his head did wreath,
Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate,
Which plunged had faire Lady in so wretched
state.

LVII

Then turning to his Palmer said; 'Old syre,
Behold the ymage of mortalitie,
And feeble nature cloth'd with fleshy tyre.
When raging passion with fierce tyranny
Robs reason of her dew regalitie,
And makes it servaunt to her basest part,
The strong it weakens with infirmite,
And with bold fure armes the weakest hart:
The strong through pleasure soonest falles, the
weake through smart.'

LVIII

'But temperance' (said he) 'with golden
squire
Betwixt them both can measure out a meane;
Nether to melt in pleasures whott desyre,
Nor frye in hartlesse grieve and dolefull tene:
Thrise happy man, who fares them both
atweene!
But sith this wretched woman overcome
Of anguish, rather then of crime, hath bene,

Reserve her cause to her eternall doome;
And, in the meane, vouchsafe her honorable
toombe.'

LIX

'Palmer,' quoth he, 'death is an equall doome
To good and bad; the common In of rest;
But after death the tryall is to come,
When best shall bee to them that lived best;
But both alike, when death hath bo' h suppress,
Religious reverence doth buriall teene,
Which whoso wants, wants so much of his rest:
For all so great shame after death I weene,
As selfe to dyen bad, unburned bad to beene.'

LX

So both agree their bodies to engrave:
The great earthes wombe they open to the sky,
And with sad Cypressse seemely it embrace;
Then, covering with a clod their closed eye,
They lay therein their corses tenderly,
And bid them sleepe in everlasting peace.
But, ere they did their utmost obsequy,
Sir Guyon, more affection to increase, | release,
Bynempt a sacred vow, which none should ay

LXI

The dead knights sword out of his sheath he
drew,
With which he cutt a lock of all their heare,
Which medling with their blood and earth he
threw
Into the grave, and gan devoutly swear;
'Such and such evil God on Guyon reare,
And worse and worse, young Orphane, be thy
payne,
If I, or thou, dew vengeance doe forbear,
Till guiltie blood her guerdon doe obtayne!'
So shedding many teares they closd the earth
agayne.

CANTO II.

Babes bloody handes may not be clensd;
The face of golden Meane:
Her sisters, two Extremities,
Strive her to banish cleane.

I

Thus when Sir Guyon with his faithful guyde
Had with dew rites and dolorous lament
The end of their sad Tragedie uptyde,
The little babe up in his armes he hent;
Who with sweet pleasaunce, and bold blanch-
ishment,
Gan smyle on them, that rather ought to weep,
As carelesse of his woe, or innocent
Of that was doen; that ruth emperced deepe
In that knightes hart, and wordes with bitter
teares did deepe:

II

'Ah! lucklesse babe, borne under cruell
starre,
And in dead parents balefull ashes bred,
Full little weenest thou what sorrowes are
Left thee for porcion of thy livelyhed;
Poore Orphane! in the wild world scattered,
As budding braunch rent from the native
tree,
And throwen forth, till it be withered.
Such is the state of men: Thus enter we
Into this life with woe, and end with misere!'

III

Then, soft himselfe inclynynge on his knee
Downe to that well, did in the water weene
(So love does loath disdainefull nicitee)
His guiltie handes from bloody gore to cleene.
He washt them oft and oft, yet nought they
beene

For all his washing cleaner. Still he strove;
Yet still the litle hands were bloody scene:
The which him into great amazement drove,
And into diverse doubt his wavering wonder
glove.

IV

He wist not whether blott of fowle offence
Might not be purgd with water nor with bath;
Or that high God, in lieu of innocence,
Imprinted had that token of his wrath,
To shew how sore bloodguiltinesse he hat'th;
Or that the charme and veneme which they
dronck,
Their blood with secret filth infected hath,
Being diffused through the senseless tronck,
That through the great contagion direfull
deadly stonck.

V

Whom thus at gaze the Palmer gan to bord
With goodly reason, and thus fayre bespake;
'Ye bene right hard amated, gracious Lord,
And of your ignorance great mervell make,
Whyles cause not well conceived ye mistake:
But know, that secret vertues are infused
In every fountaine, and in everie lake, [chusd,
Which who hath skill them rightly to have
To proove of passing wonders hath full often
usd:

VI

'Of those, some were so from their source in-
dewd [pap
By great Dame Nature, from whose fruitfull
Their welheads spring, and are with moisture
dewd;
Which feedes each living plant with liquid sap,
And fillles with flowres fayre Floraes painted
But other some, by guilte of later grace, [lap:
Or by good prayers, or by other hap,
Hau vertue poud into their waters bace,
And thenceforth were renowmd, and sought
from place to place.

VII

'Such is this well, wrought by occasion
straunge,
Which to her Nymph befell. Upon a day,
As she the woodes with bow and shaftes did
raunge,
The hardisse Hynd and Robucke to dismay,

Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the way.
And, kindling fire at her faire-burning eye,
Inflamed was to follow beauties pray,
And chased her that fast from him did fly;
As hynd from her, so she fled from her enemy.

VIII

'At last, when fayling breath began to faint,
And saw no meanes to scape, of shame affrayd,
She set her downe to weepe for sore constraint;
And to Diana calling lowd for ayde,
Her deare besought to let her die a mayd.
The goddesse heard; and suddaine, where she
sate [mayd
Welling out streames of teares, and quite dis-
With stony feare of that rude rustick mate,
Transformd her to a stone from stedfast vir-
gins state.

IX

'Lo! now she is that stone; from whose two
heads, [flow,
As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames do
Yet colde through feare and old conceived
dreadis;
And yet the stone her semblance seemes to show,
Shapt like a maide, that such ye may her know:
And yet her vertues in her water byde,
For it is chaste and pure as purest snow,
Ne lets her waves with any filth be dyde;
But ever, like herselfe, unstayned hath beene

X

'From thence it comes, that this babes bloody
hand
May not be clensd with water of this well:
Ne certes, Sir, strive you it to withstand,
But let them still be bloody, as befell,
That they his mothers innocence may tell,
As she bequeathd in her last testament;
That, as a sacred Symbole, it may dwell
In her sonnes flesh, to mind revengement. [ment.
And be for all chaste Dames an endlesse moni-

XI

He hearkned to his reason, and the childe
Uptaking, to the Palmer gave to beare;
But his sad fathers armes with blood defilde,
An heavie load, himselfe did lightly reare;
And turning to that place, in which whyleare
He left his loftie steed with golden sell [theare:
And goodly gorgeous barbe, him found not
By other accident, that earst befell, [not tell.
He is convaide; but how, or where, here fits

XII

Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he wroth,
Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease,
And fairly fare on foot, how ever loth:
His double burden did him sore disease.

So long they traueiled with litle ease,
Till that at last they to a Castle came,
Built on a rocke adjoyning to the seas :
It was an auncient worke of antique fame,
And wondrous strong by nature, and by skil-
full frame.

XIII

Therein three sisters dwelt of sundry sort,
The children of one syre by mothers threæ;
Who dying whylome did diuide this fort
To them by equall shares in equall fee:
But stryfull mind and diuerse qualtee
Drew them in partes, and each made others foe:
Still did they strive and daily disagree;
The eldest did against the youngest goe, [woe,
And both against the middest meant to worke]

XIV

Where when the knight arriv'd, he was right
well
Receiv'd, as knight of so much worth became,
Each other sister, who did far excell
The other two: Medina was her name,
A sober sad and comely courtesous Dame;
Who rich arayd, and yet in modest guise,
In goodly garments that her well became,
Fayre marching forth in honorable wize,
Him at the threshold mett, and well did en-
terprize.

XV

She led him up into a goodly bowre,
And comely courted with meet mode-tie;
Ne in her speach, ne in her haviour,
Was lightnesse scene or looser vanitie,
But gracious womanhood, and gravitie,
Above the reason of her youthly yeares.
Her golden lockes she roundly did upnye
In breadd tramels, that no looser heares
Did out of order stray about her daintie cares.

XVI

Whilest she her selfe thus busily did frame
Seemely to entertaine her new-come guest,
Newes hereof to her other sisters came,
Who all this while were at their wanton rest.
Accounting each her friend with lavish fest:
They were two knights of perelesse puissance,
And famous far abroad for warlike gest,
Which to these Ladies love did countenance,
And to his mistresse each himselfe strove to
advance.

XVII

He that made love unto the eldest Dame,
Was sight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man;
Yet not so good of deedes as great of name,
Which he by many rash adventures wau,

Since errant armes to sew he first began:
More huge in strength then wise in workes he
And reason with foole-hardize over ran; [was,
Sterne melancholy did his courage pas,
And was, for terroure more, all armd in shyning
bras.

XVIII

But he that lov'd the youngest was Sansloy;
He, that faire Una late fowle outraged,
The most unruly and the boldest boy
That ever waulke weapons menagel,
And all to lawlesse lust encouraged [might;
Through strong opinion of his matchlesse
Ne ought he car'd whom he endamaged
By tortious wrong, or whom bereav'd of right:
He, now this Ladies Champion, chose for love
to fight.

XIX

These two gay knights, vovd to so diuerse
loves,
Each other does envy with deadly hate,
And daily warre against his foeman moves,
In hope to win more favour with his mate,
And th' others pleasing service to abate.
To magnifie his owne. But when they heard
How in that place straunge knight arrived late,
Both knightes and ladies forth right angry far'd,
And fercely unto battell sterne themselves
prepar'd.

XX

But ere they could proceede unto the place
Where he abode, themselves at discord fell,
And cruell combat joynd in middle space:
With horrible assault, and fury fell,
They heapt huge strokes the scorned life to
quell,
That all on upore from her settled sent,
The house was raysd, and all that in did dwell.
Seemd that lowde thunder with amazement
great [fouldring heat,
Did rend the ratling skyes with flames of

XXI

The noyse thereof cald forth that straunger
knight,
To wset what dreadfull thing was there in hound;
Where whenas two brave knightes in bloody
fight
With deadly rancour he enraunged fond,
His sunbroad shield about his wrest he bond,
And shyning blade unsheatht, with which he
ran
Unto that stead, their strife to understand;
And at his first arrivall them began
With goodly meanes to pacifie, well as he can.

XXII

But they, him spying, both with greedy forse
 Attonce upon him ran, and him beset
 With strokes of mortall steele without remorse,
 And on his shield like yron sledges bet:
 As when a Beare and Tygre, being met
 In cruell fight on Lybicke Ocean wide,
 Espye a traveler with feet surbet,
 Whom they in equall pray hope to divide,
 They stint their strife and him assayle on
 everie side.

XXIII

But he, not like a weary travelere,
 Their sharp assault right boldly did rebut,
 And suffred not their blowes to byte him nere,
 Bit with redoubled buffes them backe did put:
 Whose grieved mindes, which choler did englut,
 Against themselves turning their wrathfull
 spight, [cut;
 Gan with new rage their shieldes to hew and
 But still, when Guyon came to part their fight,
 With heave load on him they freshly gan to
 smight.

XXIV

As a tall ship tossed in troublous seas,
 Whom raging windes, threatning to make the
 pray
 Of the rough rockes, doe diversly disease,
 Meetes two contrarie billowes by the way,
 That her on either side doe sore assay,
 And boast to swallow her in greedy grave;
 Shee, scornng both their spights, does make
 wide way,
 And with her brest breaking the fomy wave,
 Does ride on both their backs, and faire her
 self doth save.

XXV

So boldly he him beares, and rusheth forth
 Betwene them both by conduct of his blaſe.
 Wondrous great prowesse and heroick worth
 He shewd that day, and rare ensample made,
 When two so mighty warriours he dismade.
 Attonce he wards and strikes; he takes and
 pales;
 Now forst to yield, now forcing to invade;
 Before, behind, and round about him laies;
 So double was his paines, so double be his
 praise.

XXVI

Strange sort of fight, three valiaunt knights
 to see
 Three combates joine in one, and to darraigne
 A triple warre with triple enmittee,
 All for their Ladies froward love to gaine,

Which gotten was but hate. So love does raine
 In stoutest minds, and maketh monstrous
 warre; •

He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe,
 And yett his peace is but continual jarre:
 O miserable men that to him subject are!

XXVII

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious
 armes,
 The faire Medina, with her tresses torne
 And naked brest, in pittie of their harmes,
 Emongst them ran; and, falling them beforne,
 Besought them by the womb which them had
 • born, [deare,
 And by the loves which were to them most
 And by the knighthood which they sure had
 sworn,
 Their deadly cruell discord to forbear,
 And to her just conditions of faire peace to
 hear.

XXVIII

But her two other sisters, standing by,
 Her lowd gainsaid, and both their champions
 Pursew the end of their strong enmity, [bad
 As ever of their loves they would be glad:
 Yet she with pittie words, and counsell sad,
 Still strove their stubborne ragas to revoke;
 That at the last, suppressing fury mad,
 They gan abstaine from dint of direfull stroke,
 And hearken to the sober speaches which she
 spoke.

XXIX

'Ah, puisaunt Lords! what cursed evil
 Or fell Erinnyes, in your noble harts [Spright,
 Her hellish brond hath kindled with despight,
 And stird you up to worke your wilfull smarts?
 Is this the joy of armes? be these the parts
 Of glorious knighthood, after blood to thrust,
 And not regard dew right and just desarts?
 Vaine is the vaunt, and victory unjust,
 That more to mighty hands then rightfull cause
 doth trust.

XXX

'And were there rightfull cause of difference,
 Yet were not better fayre it to accord
 Then with bloodguiltinesse to heape offence,
 And mortal vengeance joyne to crime abhord?
 O! fly from wrath; fly, O my liefest Lord!
 Sad be the sights, and bitter fruites of warre,
 And thousand furies wait on wrathfull sword;
 Ne ought the praise of prowesse more doth
 marre
 Then fowle revenging rage, and base contentious
 jarre.

XXXI

'But lovely concord, and most sacred peace,
Doth nourish vertue, and fast friendship breeds,
Weake she makes strong, and strong thing does
increase,

Till it the pitch of highest praise exceeds:
Brave be her warres, and honorab!e deeds,
By which she triumphes over yre and pride,
And winnes an Olive girlond for her meeds.
Be, therefore, O my deare Lords! pacifide,
And this misseeming disoord meekely lay aside.'

XXXII

Her gracious words their rancour did appall,
And suncke so deepe into their boyling brests,
That downe they lett their cruell weapons fall,
And lowly did abase their lofty crests
To her faire presence and discrete behests.
Then she began a treaty to procure,
And stablish terms betwixt both their requests,
That as a law for ever should endure;
Which to observe in word of knights they
did assure.

XXXIII

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their
league,
After their weary sweat and bloody toile,
She them besought, during their quiet tregue,
Into her lodging to repaire awhile,
To rest themselves, and grace to reconcile.
They soone consent: so forth with her they fare;
Where they are well receivd, and made to spoile
Themselves of soiled armes, and to prepare
Their minds to pleasure, and their mouths to
dainty fare.

XXXIV

And those two froward sisters, their faire
loves, [loth,
Came with them eke, all were they wondrous
And fained cheare, as for the time behoves,
But could not colour yet so well the troth,
But that their natures bad appeard in both;
For both did at their second sister grutch
And inly grieve, as doth an hidden moth
The inner garment frett, not th' after touch:
One thought her cheare too litle, th' other
thought too much.

XXXV

Elissa (so the eldest hight) did deeme
Such entertainment base, ne ought would eat,
Ne ought would speake, but evermore did seeme
As discontent for want of merth or meat:
No solace could her Paramour intreat
Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliaunce;
But with bent lowring browes, as she would
threat,

She scould, and frownd with froward coun-
tenaunce;
Unworthy of faire Ladies comely governaunce.

XXXVI

But young Perissa was of other mynd,
Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light,
And quite contrary to her sisters kynd;
No measure in her mood, no rule of right,
But poured out in pleasure and delight:
In wine and meats she flowd above the banck,
And in excesse exceeded her owne might;
In sumptuous tye she joyd her selfe to pranck,
But of her love too lavish: (litle have she
thanck!)

XXXVII

Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sansloy,
Fitt mate for such a mincing minceon,
Who in her loosenesse tooke exceeding joy.
Might not be found a francker framon,
Of her leawd parts to make companion:
But Huddibras, more like a Malecontent,
Did see and grieve at his bold fashion;
Hardly could he endure his harliment,
Yett still he satt, and inly did lum selfe tor-
ment.

XXXVIII

Betwixt them both the faire Medina satc
With sober grace and goodly carriage:
With equal measure she did moderate
The strong extremities of their outrage.
That forward paire she ever would aswage,
When they would strive dew reason to exceede,
But that same froward twaine would accorage,
And of her plenty adde unto their need:
So kept she them in order, and her selfe in heed.

XXXIX

Thus fairely shee attemperd her feast,
And pleasd them all with meeete satiety.
At last, when lust of meat and drinke was
She Guyon deare besought of curtesie [ceast,
To tell from whence he came through jeopardy,
And whither now on new adventure bownd:
Who with bold grace, and comely gravity,
Drawing to him the cies of all around,
From lofty siege began these words aloud to
sownd.

XL

'This thy demanda. O Lady! doth revive
Fresh memory in me of that great Queene,
Great and most glorious virgin Queene alive,
That with her soveraine power, and scepter
All Faery lond does peaceably sustene, [shene,
In widest Ocean she her throne does reare,
That over all the earth it may be seeme;

As morning Sunne her beames dispredden
 cleare, [appeare,
 And in her face faire peace and mercy doth

XLI

In her the riches of all heavenly grace
 In chiefe degree are heaped up on hysc:
 And all, that els this worlds enclosure bace
 Hath great or glorious in mortall eye,
 Adornes the person of her Majestye:
 That men, beholding so great excellence
 And rare perfection in mortalitye;
 Doe her adore with sacred reverence,
 As th' Idole of her makers great magnificence.

XLII

'To her I homage and my service owe,
 In number of the noblest knightes on ground;
 Mongst whom on me she deigned to bestowe
 Order of Maydenhead, the most renownd
 That may this day in all the world be found.
 An yearely solemne feast she wontes to hold,
 The day that first doth lead the yeare around,
 To which all knights of worth and courage bold
 Resort, to heare of straunge adventures to be
 told.

XLIII

'There this old Palmer shewd himselfe that
 day,
 And to that mighty Princesse did complaine
 Of grievous mischiefes which a wicked Fay
 Had wrought, and many whelmd in deadly
 paine;
 Whereof he crav'd redresse. My Soveraine,
 Whose glory is in gracious deeds, and joye-
 Throughout the world her mercy to maintaine,

Eftsoones devised redresse for such annoves:
 Me, all unfit for so great purpose, she em-
 ployes.

XLIV

'Now hath faire Phebe with her silver face
 Thrise seene the shadowes of the weather
 Sith last I left that honorable place, [world,
 In which her roiall presence is enrold;
 Ne eyer shall I rest in house nor hold,
 Till I that false Acrasia have wonne;
 Of whose fowle deedes, too hideous to bee told,
 I witnesse am, and this their wratched sonne,
 Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly for-
 donne.'

XLV

• 'Tell on, fayre Sir,' said she, 'that dolefull
 tale, [restraine,
 From which sad ruth does seeme you to
 That we may pittie such unhappie bale,
 And learne from pleasures poyson to abstaine:
 Ill by ensample good doth often gayne.'
 Then forward he his purpose gan purswe,
 And told the story of the mortall payne,
 Which Mordant and Amavia did rew,
 As with lamenting eyes him selfe did lately vew.

XLVI

• Night was far spent; and now in Ocean deep
 Orion, flying fast from hissing snake,
 His flaming head did hasten for to steep,
 When of his pitteous tale he end did make:
 Whilst with delight of that he wisely spake
 Those guesstes, beguyled, did beguyle their eyes
 Of kindly sleepe that did them overtake.
 At last, when they had markt the chaunged
 skyes, [to rest him hys.
 They wist their houre was spent; then each

CANTO III.

Vaine Braggadocchio, getting Guy-
 ons horse, is made the scorn
 Of knighthood trew; and is of fayre
 Belphebe fowle forlorne. •

I

SOONE as the morrow fayre with purple beames
 Disperst the shadowes of the misty night,
 And Titan, playing on the eastern streames,
 Gan cleare the dewy ayre with springing light,
 Sir Guyon, mindfull of his vow yplight,
 Uprose from drowsie couch, and him addrest
 Unto the journey which he had behight:
 His puissant armes about his noble brest,
 And many-folded shield he bound about his
 wrest.

II

Then, taking Congé of that virgin pure,
 The bloody-handed babe unto her truth
 Did earnestly commit, and her conjure
 In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth,
 And all that gentle noriture ensu'th;
 And that, so soone as ryper yeares he raught,
 He might, for memory of that dayes ruth,
 Be called Ruddymane; and thereby taught
 T'avenge his Parents death on them that had
 it wrought.

III

So forth he far'd, as now befell, on foot,
Sith his good steed is lately from him gone;
Patience perforce: helpelesse what may it boot
To frett for anger, or for grieve to mone?
His Palmer now shall foot no more alone.
No fortune wrought, as under greene woodes
syde

He lately heard that dying Lady grone,
He left his steed without, and speare besyde,
And rushed in on foot to ayd her ere she dyde.

IV

The whyles a losell wandring by the way,
One that to bountie never cast his mynd,
Ne thought of honour ever did assay
His baser brest, but in his kestrell kynd
A pleasing vaine of glory he did fynd,
To which his flowing tounge and troublous
spright [clynd:
Gave him great ayd, and made him more in-
He, that brave steed there finding ready dight,
Purloyned both steed and speare, and ran away
full light.

V

Now gan his hart all swell in jollity,
And of him selfe great hope and help conceiv'd,
That puffed up with smoke of vanity,
And with self-loved personage deceiv'd,
He gan to hope of men to be receiv'd [bee:
For such as he him thought, or faine would
But for in court gay portance he perceiv'd,
And gallant shew to be in greatest gree,
Eftsoones to court he cast t' advance his first
degree.

VI

And by the way he chaunced to espy
One sitting ydle on a sunny banck,
To him avauting in great bravery, [pranck,
As Peacocke that his painted plumes doth
He smote his courser in the trembling flank;
And to him threatned his hart-thrilling speare:
The seely man, seeing him ryde so ranck,
And ayme at him, fell flatt to ground for feare,
And crying, 'Mercy!' loud, his pitious handes
gan reare.

VII

Theat the Scarcrow wexed wondrous proud,
Through fortune of his first adventure fayre,
And with bigthundring voice revyld him lowd:
'Vile Caytive, vassall of dread and despayre,
Unworthie of the commune breathed ayre,
Why livest thou, dead dogh, a lenger day,
And doest not unto death thyselfe prepayre?
Dy, or thyselfe my captive yeld for ay.
Great favour I thee graunt for aunswere thus
to stay.'

VIII

'Hold, O deare Lord! hold your dead-doing
hand,' [thrall,
Then loud he cryde; 'I am your humble
'Aywretch,' (quoth he) 'thy destinies withstand
My wrathfull will, and doe for mercy call.
I give thee life: therefore prostrated fall,
And kisse my stirrup; that thy homage bee.'
The Miser threw him selfe, as an Offall,
Streight at his foot in base humiitee,
And cleeped him his liege, to hold of him
in fee.

IX

So happy peace they made and faire accord.
Eftsoones this liegeman gan to wexe more
bold,
And when he felt the folly of his Lord,
In his owne kind he gan him selfe unfold;
For he was wyly witted, and growne old
In cunning sleightes and practick knavery.
From that day forth he cast for to uphold
His ydle humour with fine flattery,
And blow the bellows to his swelling vanity.

X

Trompart, sitt man for Braggadocchio,
To serve at court in view of vaunting eye;
Vaine-glorious man, when fluttering wind does
blow
In his light winges, is lifted up to skye;
The scorne of knightthood and trew chevalrye,
To thinke, without desert of gentle deyd
And noble worth, to be advanced hye:
Such prayse is shame; but honour, vertues
meed, [secd.
Doth beare the fayrest flowre in honourable

XI

So forth they pas, a well consorted payre,
Till that at length with Archimaged they meet:
Who seeing one, that shone in armour fayre,
On goodly courser thondring with his feet,
Eftsoones supposed him a person meet
Of his revenge to make the instrument;
For since the Redcrosse knight he erst did weete
To been with Guyon knitt in one consent,
The ill, which earst to him, he now to Guyon
ment.

XII

And coming close to Trompart gan inquire
Of him, what mightie warrior that mote bee,
That rode in golden sell with single spere,
But wanted sword to wreake his enmittee?
'He is a great adventurer,' (said he) [gone,
'That hath his sword through hard assay for-
And now hath vowd, till he avenged bee

Of that despiht, never to wearen none :
That speare is him enough to doen a thousand
grone.'

XIII

Th' enchaunter greatly joyed in the vaunt,
And weened well ere long his will to win,
And both his foen with equall foyle to daunt,
Tho to him louting lowly did begin
To plaine of wronges, which had committed bin
By Guyon, and by that false Redecrosse knight;
Which two, through treason and deceitfull gin,
Had slayne Sir Mordant and his Lady bright:
That mote him honour win to wreak so foule
despiht.

XIV

Therewith all suddenly he seemd enragd,
And threatned death with dreadfull counten-
aunce,
As if their lives had in his hand beene gagd;
And with stiffe force shaking his mortall launce,
To let him weet his doughtie valiaunce,
Thus said: 'Old man great sure shal be thy
meel, [geuneece
If, where those knights for feare of dew ven-
Doe lurke, thou certainly to mee areel.
That I may wreake on them their hainous
hatefull deed.'

XV

'Certes, my Lord,' (said he) 'that shall I
soone,
And give you eke good helpe to their decay.
But mote I wisely you advise to doom,
Give no ods to your foes, but doe purway
Your selfe of sword before that bloody day;
For they be two the prowtest knights on grownd,
And oft approv'd in many hard assay;
And eke of surest steele that may be fownd,
Do arme your self against that day, them to
confownd.'

XVI

'Dotard,' (said he) 'let be thy deepe advise:
Seemes that through many yeares thy wits
thee faile,
And that weake eld hath left thee nothing wise,
Els never should thy judgement be so frayle
To measure manhood by the sword or mayle.
Is not enough fowre quarters of a man,
Withouten sword or shield, an hoote to quayle?
Thou little wotest what this right-hand can:
Speake they which have beheld the battailes
which it wan.'

XVII

The man was much abashed at his boast;
Yet well he wist that whoso would contend
With either of those knightes on even coast,
Should neede of all his armes him to defend,

Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend,
When Braggadocchio saide; 'Once I did
swear, • [to end,
When with one sword seven knightes I brought
Thenceforth in battaile never sword to beare,
But it were that which noblest knight on earth
doth weare.'

XVIII

'Pearly, Sir knight,' saide then th' enchaunter
blive,
'That shall I shortly purchase to your hond;
For now the best and noblest knight alive
Prince Arthur is, that wonnes in Faerie lond:
He hath a sword that flames like burning brood,
The same by my device I undertake
Shall by to morrow by thy side be fond.'
At which bold word that boaster gan to quake,
And wondred in his minde what mote that
Monster make.

XIX

He stayd not for more bidding, but away
Was sudden vanished out of his sight: [play
The Northerne winde his wings did broad di-
At his commaund, and reared him up light
From off the earth to take his aerie flight.
They lookt about, but nowhere could espye
Tract of his foot: then dead through great af-
fright
They both nigh were, and each bad other flye:
Both fled attonce, ne ever backe returned eye;

XX

Till that they come unto a forrest greene,
In which they shrowd themselves from cause-
les feare; [beene.
Yet feare them followes still where so they
Each trembling leafe and whistling wind they
heare,
As ghastly bug, does greatly them affeare:
Yet both doe strive their fearefulnesse to faine.
At last they heard a horne that shrilled cleare
Throughout the wood that echoed againe,
And made the forrest ring, as it would rive in
twaine.

XXI

Eft through the thicke they heard one rudely
rush,
With noyse whereof he from his loftie steed
Downe fell to ground, and crept into a bush,
To hide his coward head from dying dreed:
But Trompart stoutly stayd to taken heed
Of what might hap. Eftsoone there stepped
A goodly Ladie clad in hunters weed, [foorth
That seemd to be a woman of great worth,
And by her stately portance borne of heavenly
birth.

XXII

Her face so faire as flesh it seemed not,
But hevenly pourtrait of bright Angells hew,
Cleare as the skye, withouten blame or blot,
Through goodly mixture of complexions dew;
And in her cheekes the verneill red did shew
Like roses in a bed of lillies shed,
The which ambrosiall odours from them threw,
And gazers sence with double pleasure fed,
Hable to heale the sick, and to revive the ded.

XXIII

In her faire eyes two living lamps did flame,
Kindled above at th' hevenly makers light,
And darted fyrie beames out of the same,
So passing persant, and so wondrous bright,
That quite bereav'd the rash beholders sight:
In them the blinded god his lustfull fyre
To kindle oft assay'd, but had no might;
For, with dredd Majestie and awfull yre,
She broke his wanton darts, and quenched bace
desyre.

XXIV

Her yvorie forehead, full of bountie brave,
Like a broad table did it selfe disprede,
For Love his loftie triumphes to engrave,
And write the battailes of his great godhead:
All good and honour might therein be red,
For there their dwelling was. And, when she
spake, [shed]
Sweete wordes like dropping honny she did
And twixt the perles and rubins softly brake
A silver sound, that heavenly musicke seemd
to make.

XXV

Upon her eyelids many Graces sate,
Under the shadow of her even browes,
Working belgardes and amorous retrate;
And everie one her with a grace endowes,
And everie one with meekenesse to her bowes.
So glorious mirrhour of celestiall grace,
And soveraine moniment of mortall vowes,
How shall frayle pen describe her heavenly face,
For feare, through want of skill, her beauty to
disgrace?

XXVI

So faire, and thousand thousand times more
faire,
She seemd, when she presented was to sight;
And was velad, for heat of scorching aire,
All in a silken Camus lilly whight,
Purled upon with many a folded plight,
Which all above besprinkled was throughout
With golden aygulets, that glisten'd bright
Like twinkling starres: and all the skirt
Was hemd with golden fringe. [about]

XXVII

Below her ham her weed did somewhat trayne,
And her streight legs most bravely were em-
In gilden buskins of costly Cordwayne, [bayld
All bard with golden bendes, which were
entayld
With curious antickes, and full sayre aumayld:
Before, they fastned were under her knees
In a rich jewell, and therein entrayld
The ends of all the knots, that none might see
How they within their fouldings close
enwrapped bee:

XXVIII

Like two faire marble pillours they were scene,
Which doe the temple of the Gods support,
Whom all the people decke with girlands
And honour in their festivall resort; [greene,
Those same with stately grace and princely
port [grace]:
She taught to tread, when she herselfe would
But with the woody Nymphes when she did
play,
Or when the flying Libbard she did chace,
She could them nimble move, and after fly
apace.

XXIX

And in her hand a sharpe bore-speare she
held,
And at her backe a bow and quiver gay,
Stuft with steale-headed dartes, wherewith she
queld
The salvage beastes in her victorious play,
Knit with a golden bauldricke, which forelay
Athwart her snowy brest, and did divide
Her daintie paps; which, like young fruit in
Now little gan to swell, and being tide [May,
Through her thin weed their places only sig-
nified.

XXX

Her yellow lockes, crisped like golden wyre,
About her shoulders weren loosely shed,
And, when the winde amongst them did in-
They waved like a penon wyde disprede, [spyre,
And low behinde her backe were scattered:
And, whether art it were or heedlesse hap,
As through the flouring Forrest nash she fled,
In her rude heares sweet flowres themselves
did lap, [did enwrap.
And flourishing fresh leaves and blossomes

XXXI

Such as Diana by the sandy shore
Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus greene, [lore,
Where all the Nymphes have her unwarres for-
Wandreth alone with bow and arrowes keene,

To seeke her game: Or as that famous Queene
Of Amazons, whom Pyrrhus did destroy,
The day that first of Priame she was seene,
Did shew her selfe in great triumphant joy,
To succour the weake state of sad afflicted Troy.

XXXII

Such when as hartlesse Trompart her did
vew,
He was dismayed in his coward minde,
And doubted whether he him-selfe should shew,
Or fly away, or bide alone behinde;
Both feare and hope he in her face did finde:
When she at last him spying thus bespake:
'Hail, Groom! didst not thou see a bleeding
Hynde, [strake?
Whose right haunch earst my steadfast arrow
If thou didst, tell me, that I may her over-
take.'

XXXIII

Wherewith reviv'd, this answer forth he
threw:
'O Goddess, (for such I thee take to bee)
For nether doth thy face terrestriall shew,
Nor voyce sound mortal; I avow to thee,
Such wounded beast as that I did not see,
Sith earst into this Forrest wild I came,
But mote thy goodlyhed forgive it mee,
To weete which of the gods I shall thee name,
That unto thee dew worship I may rightly
frame'

XXXIV

To whom she thus—but ere her words enswd,
Unto the bush her eye did suddain glaunce,
In which vaine Braggadocchio was mewd,
And saw it stirre: she left her percing launce,
And towards gan a deadly shafte advaunce,
In mind to marke the beast. At which sad
stowre
Trompart forth stept to stay the mortall
chance,
Out crying; 'O! what ever heavenly powre,
Or earthly wight thou be, withhold this deadly
howre.

XXXV

'O! stay thy hand; for yonder is no game
For thy fiers arrows, them to exercise; name
But loe! my Lord, my liege, whose warlike
Is far renown'd through many bold emprise;
And now in shade he shrowded yonder lies.'
She staid: with that he crawl'd out of his nest,
Forth creeping on his cative hands and thies;
And, standing stoutly up, his lofty crest
Did fiercely shake, and rowze as cunning late
from rest,

XXXVI

As fearfull fowle, that long in secret cave
For dread of soying hauke her selfe hath hid,
Nor caring how, her silly life to save,
She her gay painted plumes disorder'd:
Seeing at last her selfe from danger rid,
Peepes forth, and soone renews her native
She gins her feathers fowle disfigured pride:
Prowdly to prune, and sett on every side;
She shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she
did her hide.

XXXVII

So when her goodly visage he beheld,
He gan himselfe to yaunt: but, when he vewd
Those deadly tooles which in her hand she
Saw into other fitts he was transmewd, [held,
Till she to him her gracious speech renewd:
'All haile, Sir knight! and well may thee be-
fall,

As all the like, which honor have pursewd
Through deeds of armes and prowess martiall.
All vertue merits praise, but such the most of
all.'

XXXVIII

To whom he thus: 'O fairest under skie!
Trew be thy words, and worthy of thy praise,
That warlike feats doest highest glorifie.
Therein I have spent all my youthly daies,
And many batailles fought and many fraies
Throughout the world, wher-so they might be
Endevoring my dreaded name to raise [found,
Above the Moone, that fame may it resound
In her eternall tromp, with laurell girlond
cround.

XXXIX

'But what art thou, O Lady! which doest
raunge
In this wilde forest, where no pleasure is,
And doest not it for joyous court exchange,
Emongst thine equal peres, where happy blis
And all delight does raigne, much more then
this?
There thou maist love, and dearly loved be,
And swim in pleasure, which thou here doest
mis: [see:
There maist thou best be seene, and best maist
The wood is fit for beasts, the court is fitt for
thee.'

XL

'Who-so in pompe of prodwate estate (quoth she)
'Does swim, and bathes him selfe in courtly
blis,
Does waste his dayes in darke obscuritee,
And in oblivion ever buried is;
Where ease abownds it's eath to doe amis:
But who his limbs with labours, and his mynd
Behaves with cares, cannot so easy mis,

Abroad in armes, at home in stidious kynd,
Who seekes with painfull toile shall honor
soonest fynd :

XLI

'In woods, in waves, in warres, she wents to dwell,
And wil be found with perill and with paine;
No can the man that moulds in ydle cell
Unto her happy mansion attaine :
Before her gate high God did Sweate ordaine,
And wakefull watches ever to abide;
But easy is the way and passage plaine
To pleasures pallace : it may soone be spide,
And day and night her dores to all stand open wide.

XLII

'In Princes court'—The rest she would have sayd,
But that the foolish man, fild with delight
Of her sweete words that all his sence dismayd,
And with her wondrous beauty ravisht quight,
Gan burne in filthy lust; and, leaping light,
Thought in his bastard armes her to embrace.
With that she, swarving backe, her Javelin bright
Against him bent, and fiercely did menace :
So turned her about, and fled away apace.

XLIII

Which when the Pesaunt saw, amazd he stood,
And grieved at her flight; yet durst he nott
Pursew her steps through wild unknowen wood :
Besides he heard her wrath, and threatned shott,
Whiles in the bush he lay, not yett forgott :
Ne car'd he greatly for her presence wayne,
But turning said to Trompart; 'What fowle
blott

Is this to knight, that Lady should agayne
Depart to woods aintoucht, and leave so proud
disdayne.'

XLIV

'Perdy,' (said Trompart) 'lett her pas at will,
Least by her presence daunger mote befall;
For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill)
But that shee is some powre celestiall?'
For whiles shespake her great words did appall
My feeble courage, and my heart oppresse,
That yet I quake and tremble over-all.'
'And I,' (said Braggadocchio) 'thought nolesse,
When first I heard her horn sound with such
ghastlinesse.

XLV

'For from my mothers wombe this grace I
Me given by eternall destiny, [have
That earthly thing may not my corage brave
Dis-may with feare, or cause one foot to flye,
But either hellish feends, or powres on hye:
Which was the cause, when earst that horne I
heard,
Weening it had bene thunder in the skye,
I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard;
But, when I other knew, my self I boldly reard.

XLVI

'But now, for feare of worse that may betide,
Let us soone hence depart.' They soone agree :
So to his steed he gott, and gan to ride
As one unfitt therefore, that all might see
He had not trayned bene in chevalree.
Which well that valiaunt courser did discern;e;
For he despisd to tread in dew degree,
But chaufd and som'd with corage fiers and
sterne, [erne,
And to be easd of that base burden still did

CANTO IV.

Guyon does Furor bind in chaines,
And stops occasion :
Delivers Phaon, and therefore
By strife is rayld uppon.

I

In brave poursuitt of honorable deed,
There is I know not (what) great difference
Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed,
Which unto things of valorous pretence
Seemes to be borne by native influence;
As feates of armes, and love to entertaine :
But chiefly skill to ride seemes a science
Proper to gentle blood : some others faine
To menage steeds, as did this vaunter, but in
vaine.

II

But he, the rightfull owner of that steede,
Who well could menage and subdew his pride,
The whiles on foot was forced for to yeed
With that blacke Falmer, his most trusty
guide,
Who suffred not his wandring feete to slide;
But when strong passion, or weake fleshli-
nesse,
Would from the right way seeke to draw him
wide,

He would, through temperaunce and stedfastnesse,
Teach him the weak to strengthen, and the strong suppress.

III

It fortun'd, forth faring on his way,
He saw from far, or seemed for to see,
Some troublous uprore or contentious fray,
Whereto he drew in hast it to agree.
A mad man, or that feigned mad to bee,
Drew by the heare along upon the grownd
A handsom stripling with great crueltee,
Whom sore he bett, and godd with many a wovnd,
That cheekes with teares, and sydes with blood,
did all abownd.

IV

And him behynd a wicked Hag did stalke,
In ragged robes and filthy disaray;
Her other leg was lame, that she no'te walke,
But on a staffe her feeble steps did stay:
Her lockes, that loathly were and hoarie gray,
Grew all afore, and loosely hong unrold;
But all behinde was bald, and worne away,
That none thereof could ever taken hold,
And eke her face ill-favour'd, full of wrinckles old.

V

And ever as she went her tounge did walke
In fowle reproch, and termes of vile despight,
Provoking him, by her outrageous talke,
To heape more vengeance on that wretched wight:
Sometimes she raught him stones, wherwith to smite,
Sometimes her staffe, though it her one leg were,
Withouten which she could not goe upright;
Ne any evill meanes she did forbear,
That might him move to wrath, and indignation reare.

VI

The noble Guyon, mov'd with great remorse,
Approching, first the Hag did thrust away;
And after, adding more impetuous forse,
His mighty hands did on the madman lay,
And pluckt him backe; who, all on fire streight way,
Against him turning all his fell intent,
With beastly brutish rage gan him assay,
And smott, and bitt, and kickt, and scratcht,
and rent,
And did he wist not what in his avengement.

VII

And sure he was a man of mickle might,
Had he had governaunce it well to guyde;
But, when the frantick fitt inflamd his spright,
His force was vaine, and strooke more often wyde,
Then at the ayemd marke which he had eyde:
And oft himselfe he chaunst to hurt unwares,
Whylest reason, blent through passion, nought descreyde;
But, as a blindfold Bull, at randon fares,
And where he hits nought knowes, and whom he hurts nought cares.

VIII

His rude assault and rugged handling
Straunge seemed to the knight, that aye with foe
In sayre defence and goodly menaging
Of armes was wont to fight; yet nathemoe
Was he abashed now, not fighting so;
But more enfierced through his currish play,
Him sternly grypt, and hailing to and fro,
To overthrow him strongly did assay,
But overthrew him selfe unwares, and lower lay:

IX

And being downe the villain sore did beate
And bruze with clownish fistes his manly face;
And eke the Hag, with many a bitter threat,
Still cald upon to kill him in the place.
With whose reproch, and odious menace,
The knight emboyling in his haughtie hart
Knitt all his forces, and gan soone unbrace
His grasping hold: so lightly did upstart,
And drew his deadly weapon to maintaine his part.

X

Which when the Palmer saw, he loudly cryde,
'Not so, O Guyon! never thinke that so
That Monster can be maistred or destroyd:
He is not, ah! he is not such a foe,
As steele can wound, or strength can overthrowe.
That same is Furor, cursed cruel wight,
That unto knighthood workes much shame and woe;
And that same Hag, his aged mother, hight
Occasion; the roote of all wrath and despight.

XI

'With her, whose will raging Furor tame,
Must first begin, and velle her amenage:
First her restraine from her reprochfull blame
And evill meanes, with which she doth enrage

Her frantick sonne, and kindles his corage;
Then, when she is withdrawn or strong with-
stood,
It's eath his ydle fury to aswage,
And calme the tempest of his passion wood:
The bankes are overflowne when stopped is the
flood.'

XII

Therewith Sir Guyon left his first emprise,
And, turning to that woman, fast her hent
By the hofre lockes that hong before her eyes,
And to the ground her threw: yet n'ould she
stent

Her bitter rayling and foule revilement,
But still provokt her sonne to wreake her
wrong;

But nathelesse he did her still torment,
And, catching hold of her ungratious tonge
Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and
strong.

XIII

Then, whenas use of speech was from her reft,
With her two crooked handes she signes did
make,

And beckned him, the last help she had left;
But he that last left help away did take,
And both her handes fast bound unto a stake,
That she note stirre. Then gan her sonne to
flye

Full fast away, and did her quite forsake;
But Guyon after him in hast did hye,
And soone him overtooke in sad perplexitye.

XIV

In his strong armes he stifly him embraste,
Who him gainstriving nought at all prevaild;
For all his power was utterly defaste,
And furious fitts at earst quite weren quaild:
Oft he re'nforst, and oft his forces sayld,
Yet yield he would not, nor his rancor slack.
Then him to ground he cast, and rudely hayld,
And both his hands fast bound behind his
backe,
And both his feet in fetters to an yron racke.

XV

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind,
And hundred knots, that did him sore con-
straine;

Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind
And grimly gnash, threatening revenge in vaine:
His burning eyen, whom bloody strakes did
staine.

Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes of
And more for rancor despight then for great
paine,

Shakt his long lockes colourd like copper-wyre,
And bitt his tawny beard to shew his raging
yre.

XVI

Thus when as Guyon Furor had captivd,
Turning about he saw that wretched Squire,
Whom that mad man of life nigh late deprivd,
Lying on ground, all soild with blood and
myre:

Whom whenas he perceived to respyre,
He gan to comfort, and his woundes to dresse.
Being at last recured, he gan inquire [tresse,
What hard mishap him brought to such dis-
And made that caytives thrall, the thrall of
wretchednesse.

XVII

With hart then throbbing, and with watry
eyes, [the hap,
'Fayre Sir' (quoth he) 'what man can shun
That hidden lyes unwares him to surpise?
Misfortune waites advantage to entrap
The man most wary in her whelming lap:
So me weake wretch, of many weakest one,
Unweeting and unaware of such mishap,
She brought to mischief through Occasion,
Where this same wicked vellein did me light
upon.

XVIII

'It was a faithlesse Squire, that was the source
Of all my sorrow and of these sad teares,
With whom from tender dugs of commune nourse
Attonce I was upbrought; and eft, when yeares
More ripe us reason lent to chose our Peares,
Our selves in league of vowed love wee kint
In which we long time, without gealous feares
Or faultie thoughts, contynewd as was fitt;
And for my part, I vow, dissembled not a whit.

XIX

'It was my fortune, commune to that age,
To love a Lady fayre of great degree,
The which was borne of noble parentage,
And set in highest seat of dignitee,
Yet seemd no lesse to love then lov'd to bee:
Long I her serv'd, and found her faithfull still,
No ever thing could cause us disagree.
Love, that two harts makes one, makes eke one
will; [fulfill.
Each strove to please, and others pleasure to

XX

'My friend, hight Philemon, I did partake
Of all my love and all my privitie;
Who greatly joyous seemed for my sake,
And gracious to that Lady as to mee;

Ne ever wight that mote so welcome bee
As he to her, withouten blott or blame;
Ne ever thing that she could think or see,
But unto him she would impart the same.
O wretched man, that would abuse so gentle
Dame!

XXI

'At last such grace I found, and meanes I
wrought,
That I that Lady to my spouse had wonne;
Accord of friendes, consent of Parents sought,
Affyauncé made, my happinesse begonne,
There wanted nought but few rites to be donne,
Which marriage make: that day too farre did
seeme.

Most joyous man, on whom the shining Sunne
Did shew his face, my selfe I did esteeme,
And that my falsér friend did no less joyous
deeme.

XXII

'But ear that wished day his beame disclosd,
He, either envying my toward good,
Or of him selfe to treason ill disposd,
One day unto me came in friendly mood,
And told for secret, how he understood
That Lady, whom I had to me assynd,
Had both distaind her honorable blood,
And eke the faith which she to me did bynd;
And therefore wisht me stay till I more truth
should fynd.

XXIII

'The gnawing anguish, and sharp gelyosy,
Which his sad speach infixed in my brest,
Ranckled so sore, and festred inwardly,
That my engreeved mind could find no rest,
Till that the truth thereof I did out wrest;
And him besought, by that same sacred band
Betwixt us both, to counsell me the best.
He then with solemne oath and plightd hand
Assurd, ere long the truth to let me understand.

XXIV

'Ere long with like againe he boorded mee,
Saying, he now had boulded all the floure,
And that it was a groome of base degree,
Which of my love was partener Paramoure:
Who used in a darkesome inner bowre
Her oft to meete: which better to approve,
He promised to bring me at that howre,
When I should see that would me nearer move,
And drive me to withdraw my blind abused love.

XXV

'This gracelesse man, for furtherance of his
guile,
Did court the handmayd of my Lady deare,
Who, glad t' embosome his affection vile,
Did all she might more pleasing to appeare.

One day, to worke her to his will more neare,
He woo'd her thus: Pryene, (so she hight,)
What great despyght doth fortune to thee beare,
Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright,
That it should not deface all others lesser light?

XXVI

'But if she had her least helpe to thee lent,
T' adorne thy forme according thy desert,
Their blazing pride thou wouldest soone have
blent, [part;
And staynd their prayses with thy least good
No should faire Claribell with all her art,
Tho' she thy Lady be, approach thee neare:
For prooff thereof, this evening, as thou art,
Aray thyselfe in her most gorgeous geare,
That I may more delight in thy embracement
deare

XXVII

'The Mayden, proud through praise and mad
through love,
Him hearkned to, and soone her selfe arayd,
The whiles to me the treachour did remove
His craftie engin, and, as he had sayd,
Me leading, in a secret corner layd,
The sad spectatour of my Tragedie: [playd,
Where left, he went, and his owne false part
Disguised like that groome of base degree,
Whom he had feignd th' abuser of my love to
bee.

XXVIII

'Eftsoones he came unto th' appointed place,
And with him brought Pryene, rich arayd,
In Claribell's clothes. Her proper face
I not discerned in that darke some shade,
But weend it was my love with whom he playd.
Ah God! what horreur and tormenting grieft
My hart, my handes, mine eyes, and all assayd!
Me liefer were ten thousand deathes priefe
Then wounde of gealous woring, and shame of
such repriefe.

XXIX

'I home retourning, fraught with fowle
despyght,
And chawing vengeance all the way I went,
Soone as my loathed love appeared in sight,
With wrathfull hand I slew her innocent,
That after soone I dearly did lament;
For, when the cause of that outrageous deede
Demaunded, I made plaine and evident,
Her faultie Handmayd, which that bale did
breede, [her weede.
Confest how Philemon her wrought to chaunge

XXX

'Which when I heard, with horrible affright
And hellish fury all enragd, I sought
Upon my selfe that vengeable despyght

To punish : yet it better first I thought
To wraeke my wrath on him that first it
wrought :

To Philemon, false faytour Philemon,
I cast to pay that I so dearly bought.
Of deadly drugs I gave him drinke anon,
And washt away his guilt with guilty potion.

XXXI

'Thus heaping crime on crime, and griefe on
griefe,

To losse of love adjoyning losse of frend,
I meant to purge both with a third mischief,
And in my woes beginner it to end :
That was Pryene ; she did first offend,
She last should smart : with which cruell
intent,

When I at her my murderous blade did bend,
She fled away with ghastly dreriment,
And I, poursewing my fell purpose, after went.

XXXII

'Feare gave her winges, and rage enforst my
flight ; [chace,
Through woods and plaines so long I did her
Till this mad man, whom four victorious might
Hath now fast bound, me met in middle space.
As I her, so he me poursewd apace,
And shortly overtooke : I, breathing yre,
Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace,
And with my heat kindled his cruell fyre ;
Which kindled once, his mother did more rage
inspyre.

XXXIII

'Betwixt them both they have me doen to lye,
Through wounds, and strokes, and stubborne
handeling,

That death were better then such agony
As griefe and fury unto me did bring :
Of which in me yet stickes the mortall sting,
That during life will never be appeas'd !
When he thus ended had his sorrowing,
Said Guyon ; 'Squyre, sore have ye bene
diseas'd, [rance be eas'd,
But all your hurts may soone through tempe-

XXXIV

Then gan the Palmer thus ; 'Most wretched
man,

That to affections does the bridle lend !
In their beginning they are weake and wan,
But soone through suffrance growe to fearefull
end : [tend ;

Whiles they are weake, betimes with them con-
For, when they once to perfect strength do grow,
Strong warres they make, and cruell batty
bend

Gainst fort of Reason, it to overthrow :
Wrath, gealosy, griefe, love, this Squyre have
laide thus low.

XXXV

'Wrath, gealosie, griefe, love, do thus expell :
Wrath is a fire ; and gealosie a weede ;
Griefe is a flood ; and love a monster fell ;
The fire of sparkes, the weede of little see'de,
The flood of drops, the Monster filth did breede :
But sparkes, seed, drops, and filth, do thus delay ;
The sparkes soone quench, the springing seed
outweed,

The drops dry up, and filth wipe cleane away :
So shall wrath, gealosy, griefe, love, die and
decay.'

XXXVI

'Unlucky Squire,' (saide Guyon) 'sith thou
hast

Falne into mischief through intemperaunce,
Henceforth take heede of that thou now hast
past,

And guyde thy waies with warie governaunce,
Least worse betide thee by some later chaunce.
But read how art thou nam'd, and of what kin ?
'Phaon I hight,' (quoth he) 'and do adlvance
Mine auncestry from famous Coradin,
Who first to rayse our house to honour did
begin.'

XXXVII

Thus as he spake, lo ! far away they spyde
A varlet running towards hastily,
Whose flying feet so fast their way applyde,
That round about a cloud of dust did fly,
Which, mingled all with sweate, did dim his eye.
He soone approached, panting, breathlesse, whot,
And all so soyld that none could him descry :
His countenance was bold, and bashed not
For Guyons looks, but scornfull eyeglance
at him shot.

XXXVIII

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield,
On which was drawn faire, in colours fit,
A flaming fire in midst of bloody field,
And round about the wreath this word was
writ,

Burnt I doe burne. Right well boesemed it
To be the shield of some redoubt knight ;
And in his hand two darts, exceeding flit
And deadly sharp, he held, whose heads were
dight

In poyson and in blood of malice and despight.

XXXIX

When he in presence came, to Guyon first
He boldly spake ; 'Sir knight, if knight thou
Abandon this forestalled place at erst, [bee,
For feare of further harme, I counsell thee :

Or bide the chaunce at thine owne jeoparddee.
The knight at his great boldnesse wondered;
And, though he scord his ydle vanitee,
Yet mildly him to purpose answered;
For not to grow of nought he it conjectured.

XL

'Varlet, this place most dew to me I deeme,
Yielded by him that held it forcibly:
But whence should come that harme, which
thou dost seeme
To threat to him that mindes his chaunce
t' abye?'

'Perdy,' (sayd he) 'here comes, and is hard by,
A knight of wondrous powre and great assay,
That never yet encountred enemy
But did him deadly daunt, or fowle dismay;
Ne thou for better hope, if thou his presence
stay.'

XLI

'How hight he then,' (sayd Guyon) 'and
from whence?'

'Pyrochles is his name, renownmed farre
For his bold feates and hardy confidence,
Full oft approvd in many a cruell warre;
The brother of Cymochles, both which arre
The sonnes of old Acrates and Despight;
Acrates, sonne of Phlegeton and Jarre;
But Phlegeton is sonne of Herebus and Night;
But Herebus sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

XLII

'So from immortall race he does proceede,
That mortall hands may not withstand his
might,

Drad for his derring doe and bloody deed;
For all in blood and spoile is his delight.
His am I Atin, his in wrong and right,
That matter make for him to worke upon,
And stirre him up to strife and cruell fight.
Fly therefore, fly this fearefull stead anon,
Least thy foolhardize worke thy sad confusion.

XLIII

'His be that care, whom most it doth concerne,
(Sayd he) 'but whither with such hasty flight

Art thou now bound? for well note I discern
Great cause, that carries thee so swifte and
light.'

'My Lord,' (quoth he) 'me sent, and streight
To seeke Occasion, where so she bee: [behight
For he is all disposd to bloody fight,
And breathes out wrath and hainous crueltee:
Hard is his hap that first fells in his jeoparddee.'

XLIV

'Mad man,' (said then the Palmer) 'that does
seeke

Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife:
Shee comes unsought, and shonned followes eke.
Happy! who can abstaine, when Rancor rife
Kindles Revenge, and threats his rusty knife.
Woe never wants where every cause is caught;
And rash Occasion makes unquiet life!

'Then loe! wher bound she sits, whom thou
hast sought,' [brought.'

Said Guyon: 'let that message to thy Lord be

XLV

That when the varlett heard and saw, streight
way [knight,
He waxed wondrous wroth, and said; 'Vile
That knights and knighthood doest with shame
upbray,

And shewst th'ensample of thy childishe might,
With silly weake old woman that did fight!
Great glory and gay spoile, sure hast thou gott,
And stoutly prov'd thy puissance here in sight.
That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wott,
And with thy blood abolish so reprochfull blott.'

XLVI

With that one of his thrillant darts he threw,
Headed with yre and vengeable despight.
The quivering steels his aynd end wel knew,
And to his brest it selfe intended right:
But he was wary, and, ere it enight
In the meant marke, advaunst his shield atweene,
On which it seizing no way enter might,
But backe rebownding left the forehead keene:
Eftsoones he fled away, and night no where be
seene.

CANTO V.

Pyrochles does with Guyon fight,
 And Furors chayne unties,
 Who him sore wounds : whiles Atin to
 Cymochles for ayd flies.

I
 Who ever doth to temperaunce apply
 His stedfast life, and all his actions frame,
 Trust me, shal find no greater enemy
 Then stubbornne perturbation to the same ;
 To which right wel the wise doe give that name,
 For it the goodly peace of staid mindes
 Does overthrow, and troublous warre proclame :
 His owne woes author, who so bound it findes,
 As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully unbindes.

II
 After that varlets flight, it was not long
 Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon spide
 One in bright armes embattaile full strong,
 That, as the Sunny beames do glauce and glide
 Upon the trembling wave, so shined bright,
 And round about him threw forth sparkling fire,
 That seemd him to enflame on every side :
 His steed was bloody red, and fumed yre,
 When with the maistring spur he did him
 roughly stire.

III
 Approching nigh, he never staid to greet,
 Ne chaffar words, prowd courage to provoke,
 But prickt so fiers, that underneath his feete
 The smouldring dust did rownd about him
 smoke.
 Both horse and man nigh able for to choke ;
 And fayrly couching his Steeleheaded speare,
 Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke :
 It booted nought Sir Guyon, comming neare,
 To thincke such hideous puissance on foot to
 beare ;

IV
 But lightly shunned it ; and, passing by,
 With his bright blade did smite at him so fell,
 That the sharpe steele, arriving forcibly
 On his broad shield, bitt not, but glauncing fell
 On his horse necke before the quilted sell,
 And from the head the body sundred quight.
 So him dismounted low he did compell
 On foot with him to matchen equall fight :
 The truncked beast fast bleeding did him
 slowly dight.

V
 Sore bruized with the fall he slow arose,
 And all enraged thus him loudly shent ;
 'Disleall Knight, whose coward corage chose
 To wreake it selfe on beast all innocent,
 And shund the marke at which it should be
 ment ; [frayl :
 Therby thine armes seem strong, but manhood
 So hast thou oft with guile thine honor blent ;
 But little may such guile thee now avayl, [fayl :
 If wanted force and fortune doe me not much

VI
 With that he drew his flaming sword, and
 strooke
 At him so fiercely, that the upper marge
 Of his sevenfolded shield away it tooke,
 And, glauncing on his helmet, made a large
 And open gash therein : were not his targe
 That broke the violence of his intent, [charge ;
 The weary sowle from thence it would dis-
 Nathelesse so sore a buff to him it lent, [bent.
 That made him reele, and to his brest his bever

VII
 Exceeding wroth was Guyon at that blow,
 And much ashamd that stroke of living arme
 Shoulde him dismay, and make him stoup so low,
 Though otherwise it did him litle harme :
 The, hurling high his yron braced arme,
 He smote so manly on his shoulder plate,
 That all his left side it did quite dis-aime ;
 Yet there the steel stayd not, but inly bate
 Deepe in his flesh, and opened wide a red
 floodgate.

VIII
 Deadly dismayd with horror of that dint
 Pyrochles was, and grieved eke entyre ;
 Yet nathe more did it his fury stint,
 But added flame unto his former fire,
 That wel nigh molt his hart in raging yre :
 Ne thenceforth his approved skill, to ward,
 Or strike, or hurdle rownd in warlike gyre,
 Rememberd he, ne car'd for his saungard,
 But rudely rag'd, and like a cruell tygre far'd.

IX

He hewd, and lasht, and foynd, and thondred
blowes,
And every way did seeke into his life; [throwes,
Ne plate, ne male, could ward so mighty
But yellded passage to his cruell knife.
But Guyon, in the heat of all his strife,
Was wary wise, and closely did awayt
Avantage, whilist his foe did rage most rife:
Sometimes athwart, sometimes he strook him
strayt, [such bayt.
And falsed oft his blowes t' illude him with

X

Like as a Lyon, whose imperiall powre
A prowde rebellious Unicorn defyces,
T' avoide the rash assault and wrathfull stowre
Of his fiers foe, him to a tree applies, [spyes,
And when him ronning in full course he
He slips aside; the whiles that furious beast
His precious horne, sought of his enmyes,
Strikes in the stocke, ne thence can be releast,
But to the mighty victor yields a bounteous
feast.

XI

With such faire sleight him Guyon often
tayld,
Till at the last all breathlesse, weary, faint,
Him spying, with fresh onsett he assayld,
And kindling new his corage seeming quaint,
Strooke him so hugely, that through great con-
straint
He made him stoup perforce unto his knee,
And doe unwilling worship to the Saint,
That on his shield depainted he did see: [hee.
Such homage till that instant never leained

XII

Whom Guyon seeing stoup, poursewed fast
The present offer of faire victory,
And soone his dreadfull blade about he cast,
Wherewith he smote his haughty crest so hye,
That straight on grownd made him full low to
lye;
Then on his brest his victor foote he thrust:
With that he cryde; 'Mercy! doe me not dye,
Ne deeme thy force by fortunes doome unjust,
That hath (maugre her spight) thus low me
laid in dust.'

XIII

Eftsoones his cruel hand Sir Guyon stayd,
Tempering the passion with advizement slow,
And maistring might on enmy dismayd;
For th' equall die of warre he well did know:
Then to him said; 'Live, and allcavage owe
To him that gives thee life and liberty;
And henceforth by this daies ensample trow,

That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardry,
Doe breede repentance late, and lasting in-
famy.'

XIV

So up he let him rise; who, with grim looke
And count'naunce sterne, upstanding, gan to
grind
His grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke
His sandy lockes, long hanging downe behind,
Knotted in blood and dust, for grief of mind
That he in ods of armes was conquered:
Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find,
That him so noble knight had mastered;
Whose bounty more then might, yet both, he
wondered.

XV

Which Guyon marking said; 'Be nought
agriev'd,
Sir knight, that thus ye now subdewd are:
Was never man, who most conquestes atchiev'd,
But sometimes had the worse, and lost by warre,
Yet shortly gaynd that losse exceeded farre.
Losse is no shame, nor to bee lesse then foe;
But to bee lesser then himselfe doth marre
Both loosers lott, and victours prayse alsoe:
Vaine others overthrowes who selfe doth over-
throw

XVI

'Fly, O Pyrochles! fly the dreadfull warre
That in thy selfe thy lesser partes do move;
Outrageous anger, and woe-working jarre,
Direfull impatience, and hart-murding love:
Those, those thy foes, those warriours far
remove,
Which thee to endlesse bale captived lead.
But sith in might thou didst my mercy prove,
Of courtesie to mee the cause read [dread,
That thee against me drew with so impetuous

XVII

'Dreadlesse,' (said he) 'that shall I soone
declare. [tort
It was complaint that thou hadst done great
Unto an aged woman, poore and bare,
And thralld her in chaines with strong effort,
Voide of all succour and needfull comfort;
That ill besemes thee, such as I thee see,
To worke such shame. Therefore, I thee exhort
To chaunge thy will, and set Occasion free,
And to her captive sonne yield his first libertee.

XVIII

Thereat Sir Guyon smylde; 'And is that all,
(Said he) 'that thee so sore displeased hath?
Great mercy, sure, for to enlarge a thrall,
Whose freedom shall thee turne to greatest
scath!

Nath'lesse now quench thy whott embroyling
wrath :

Loe! there they bee; to thee I yield them free.
Thereat he, wondrous glad, out of the path
Did lightly leape, where he them bound did see,
And gan to breake the bands of their captivitee.

XIX

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe untyde,
Before her sonne could well assoyled bee,
She to her use returnd, and streight defyde
Both Guyon and Pyrochles; th' one (said
shee)

Bycause he wonne; the other, because hee
Was wonne. So matter did she make of
nought,

To stirre up strife, and garre them disagree:
But, soone as Furor was enlargd, she sought
To kindle his quencht fyre, and thousand causes
wrought.

XX

It was not long ere she inflam'd him so,
That he would algates with Pyrochles fight,
And his redeemer chalengd for his foe,
Because he had not well mainteind his right,
But yielded had to that samestraunger knight.
Now gan Pyrochles wex as fwood as hee,
And him affronted with impatient might:
So both together fiers engrasped bee,
Whyles Guyon standing by their uncouth strife
does see.

XXI

Him all that while Occasion did provoke
Against Pyrochles, and new matter fram'd
Upon the old, him stirring to bee wroke
Of his late wronges, in which she oft him
blam'd

For suffering such abuse as knighthood sham'd,
And him dishabed quyte. But he was wise,
Ne would with vaine occasions be inflam'd;
Yet others she more urgent did devise;
Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

XXII

Their fell contention still increased more,
And more thereby increased Furors might,
That he his foe has hurt and wounded sore,
And him in blood and durt deformed quight.
His mother eke, more to augment his spight,
Now brought to him a flaming fyre brond,
Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning
bright,

Had kindled: that she gave into his hond,
That armd with fire more hardly he mote him
withstond.

XXIII

Tho gan that vilkein wex so fiers and strong,
That nothing might sustaine his furious forse.
He cast him downe to ground, and all along
Drew him through durt and myre without
remorse,
And fowly battered his comely corse,
That Guyon much disdeigned so loathly sight.
At last he was compeld to cry perforce,
'Help, O Sir Guyon! helpe, most noble knight,
To ridd a wretched man from handes of hellish
wight!'

XXIV

The knight was greatly moved at his playnt,
And gan him dight to succour his distresse,
Till that the Palmer, by his grave restraint,
Him stayd from yielding pitifull redresse,
And said; 'Deare sonne, thy causelesse ruth
represe,
Ne let thy stout hart melt in pittie vayne:
He that his sorrow sought through wilfulnesse,
And his foe fettred would release agayne,
Deserves to taste his follies fruit, repented
payne.'

XXV

Guyon obeyd: So him away he drew
From needlesse trouble of renewing fight
Already fought, his voyage to poursew.
But rash Pyrochles valett, Atin hight,
When late he saw his Lord in heavie plight
Under Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to fall,
Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in sight,
Fledd fast away to tell his funerall | call.
Unto his brother, whom Cymochles men did

XXVI

He was a man of rare redoubted might,
Famous throughout the world for warlike
praysse,
And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilous fight:
Full many doughtie knightes he in his dayes
Had doen to death, subdevide in equall frayes
Whose carkases, for terrour of his name,
Of fowles and beastes he made the piteous
prayes.
And hong their conquerd armes, for more de-
fame,
On gallow trees, in honour of his dearest Dame.

XXVII

His dearest Dame is that Enchaunteresse,
The vyle Acrasia, that with vaine delightses,
And ydle pleasures in her Bowre of Blisse,
Does charme her lovers, and the feeble sprightes

Can call out of the bodies of fraile wightes ;
Whom then she does transforme to monstrous
hewes,
And horribly misshapes with ugly sightes,
Captiv'd eternally in yron mewes [shewes.
And darksome dens, where Titan his face never

XXVIII

There Atin fownd Cymochles sojourning,
To serve his Lemans love: for he by kynd
Was given all to lust and loose living,
When ever his fiers handes he free mote fynd:
And now he has pourd out his ydle mynd
In daintie delices, and lavish joyes,
Having his warlike weapons cast behynd,
And flowes in pleasures and vaine pleasing
toyes,
Mingled amongst loose Ladies and lascivious
boyes.

XXIX

And over him art, stryving to compayre
With nature, did an Arber greene disprede,
Framed of wanton Yvie, flouring fayre,
Through which the fragrant Egplantine did
spred
His prickling armes, entrayld with roses red,
Which daintie odours round about them threw:
And all within with flowres was garnished,
That, when myld Zephyrus amongst them blew,
[colors shew.
Did breath out bounteous smels, and painted

XXX

And fast beside there trickled softly downe
A gentle streame, whose murmuring wave did
play
Amongst the puny stones, and made a sowne,
To lull him soft asleepe that by it lay:
The wearie Traveller, wandering that way,
Therein did often quench his thirsty heat,
And then by it his wearie limbes display.
Whiles creeping slomber made him to forget
His former payne, and wypt away his toilsom
sweat.

XXXI

And on the other syde a pleasaunt grove
Was shott up high, full of the stately tree
That dedicated is t' Olympick Jove,
And to his sonne Alcides, whenas hee
In Nemus gayned goodly victoree:
Therein the mery birdes of every sorte
Chaunted aloud their chearefull harmonie,
And made amongst them selves a sweete con-
sort,
That quickned the dull spright with musical
comfort.

XXXII

There he him found all carelesly displaid,
In secrete shadow from the sunny ray,
On a sweet bed of lillies softly lay,
Amidst a flock of Damzelles fresh and gay,
That round about him dissolute did play
Their wanton follies and light meriments:
Every of which did loosely disaray
Her upper partes of meet habiliments,
And shewed them naked, deckt with many
ornaments.

XXXIII

And every of them strove with most delights
Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew:
Some framd faire lookes, glancing like evening
lights;
Others sweet wordes, dropping like honny dew:
Some bathed kisses, and did soft embue
The sugred licour through his melting lips:
One boastes her beautie, and does yield to vew
Her dainty limbes above her tender hips;
Another her out boastes, and all for try all
strips.

XXXIV

He, like an Adder lurking in the weedes,
His wandring thought in deepe desire does
steepe,
And his frayle eye with spoyle of beauty feedes:
Sometimes he falsly faines himselfe to sleepe,
Whiles through their lids his wanton eyes do
peepe
To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,
Whereby close fire into his heart does creepe:
So he them deceives, deceivd in his conceipt,
Made dronke with drugs of deane voluptuous
receipt.

XXXV

Atin, arriving there, when him he spyde
Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade,
Fiercely approaching to him lowly cryde,
'Cymochles; oh! no, but Cymochles shade,
In which that manly person late did fade.
What is become of great Acrates sonne?
Or where hath he hong up his mortall blade,
That hath so many haughty conquests wouned?
Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne?

XXXVI

Then, pricking him with his sharp-pointed
dart, [knight,
He saide; 'Up, up! thou womanish weake
That here in Ladies lap entombd art,
Unmindfull of thy praise and prowtest might,
And weetlesse eke of lately wrought despight,
Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on sencelesse ground,
And groneth out his utmost grudging spright

Through many a stroke and many a streaming
wound,
Calling thy help in vaine that here in joyes art
dround.'

XXXVII

Suddenly out of his delightfull dreame
The man awoke, and would have questiond
more;
But he would not endure that wofull theame
For to dilate at large, but urged sore,
With piercing wordes and pittifull implore,
Him hasty to arise. As one affright
With hellish feends, or Furies made uprore,

He then uprose, inflamd with fell despiht,
And called for his armes, for he would algatee
fight :

XXXVIII

They beneybrought; he quickly does him dight,
And lightly mounted passeth on his way;
Ne Ladies loves, ne sweete enticacies, might
Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay,
For he has vowd to beene avengd that day
(That day it selfe him seemed all too long)
(On him, that did Pyrochles deare dismay :
So proudly pricketh on his courser strong,
And Atin ay him pricks with spurs of shame
and wrong.

CANTO VI.

Guyon is of immodest Merith
Led into loose desyre;
Fights with Cymochles, whiles his brother
burns in furious fyre.

I

A HARDER lesson to learne Continence
In joyous pleasure then in grievous paine;
For sweetnesse doth allue the weaker sence
So strongly, that unethers it can refraine
From that which feeble nature covets faine:
But grieve and wrath, that be her enemies
And foes of life, she better can abstaine:
Yet vertue vauntes in both her victories,
And Guyon in them all shewes goodly may-
steries.

II

Whom bold Cymochles travailing to finde,
With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him
The wrath which Atin kindled in his mind,
Came to a river, by whose utmost brim
Wayting to passe, he saw whereas did swim
Along the shore, as swift as glauce of eye,
A litle Gondelay bedecked trim
With boughes and arbours woven cunningly,
That like a litle forrest seemed outwardly.

III

And therein sate a Lady fresh and fayre,
Making sweet solace to herselfe alone:
Sometimes she song as lowd as larke in ayre,
Sometimes she laught, as merry as Pope Jone;
Yet was there not with her else any one,
That to her might move cause of meriment:
Matter of merth enough, though there were
none,
She could devise; and thousand waies invent
To feede her foolish humour and vaine jolli-
ment.

IV

Which when far off Cymochles heard and saw,
He lowdly cald to such as were aboard
The little barke unto the shore to draw,
And him to ferry over that deepe ford.
The merry mariner unto his word [way
Soone hearkned, and her painted bote straight-
Turnd to the shore, where that same warlike
She in receiv'd; but Atin by no way [Lord
She would admit, albe the knight her much
did pray.

V

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did slide,
More swift then swallow sheres the liquid skye,
Withouten care or Pilot it to guide,
Or winged canvas with the wind to fly:
Onely she turnd a pin, and by and by
It cut away upon the yielding wave,
Necared she her course for to apply; [have,
For it was taught the way which she would
And both from rocks and flats it selfe could
wisely save.

VI

And all the way the wanton Damsell found
New merth her passenger to entertaine;
For she in pleasaunt purpose did abound,
And greatly joyed merry tales to faine,
Of which a store-house did with her remaine:
Yet seemed, nothing well they her became;
For all her wordes she drownd with laughter
vaine,
And wanted grace in utt'ring of the same,
That turned all her pleasaunce to a scoffing
game.

VII

And other whiles vaine toyes she would devise,
As her fantastick wit did most delight:
Sometimes her head she fondly would arguize
With gaudy girlonds, or fresh flowrets tight
About her necke, or rings of rushes plight:
Sometimes, to do him laugh, she would asay
To laugh at shaking of the leaves light
Or to behold the water worke and play
About her little frigot, therein making way.

VIII

Her light behaviour and loose dalliaunce
Gave wondrous great contentment to the
knight,
That of his way he had no soveraigne,
Nor care of vow'd revenge and cruell fight,
But to weake wench did yield his martiall
might:
So easie was to quench his flamed minde
With one sweete drop of sensuall delight.
So easie is t'appease the stormy winde [kind,
Of malice in the calme of pleasaunt woman.

IX

Diverse discourses in their way they spent;
Amongst which Cymochles of her questioned
Both what she was, and what that usage ment,
Which in her cott she daily practized?
'Vaine man,' (saide she) 'that wouldest be
reckoned
A straunger in thy home, and ignoraunt
Of Phædria, (for so my name is red)
Of Phædria, thine owne fellow servaunt;
For thou to serve Acrasia thy selfe doest vaunt.

X

'In this wide Inland sea, that hight by name
The Idle lake, my wandring ship I row,
That knowes her port, and thither sayles, by
ayme,
Ne care, ne feare I how the wind do blow,
Or whether swift I wend, or whether slow
Both slow and swift alike deserve my tourne;
Ne swelling Neptune ne lowd thundring Jove
Can chaunge my cheare, or make me ever
mourne: [bourne,
My little boat can safely passe this perilous

XI

Whiles thus she talked, and whiles thus she
toyd,
They were far past the passage which he spake,
And come unto an Island waste and voyd,
That floted in the midst of that great lake;
There her small Gondelay her port did make,

And that gay payre, issewing on the shore,
Disburnd her. Their way they forward take
Into the land that lay them faire before,
Whose pleasaunce she him shewed, and plentifull
great store.

XII

It was a chosen plott of fertile land,
Amongst wide waves sett, like a litle nest,
As if it had by Natures cunning hand
Bene choicely picked out from all the rest,
And laid forth for ensample of the best:
No daintie flowre or herbe that growes on
grownd,
No arboret with painted blossomes drest
And smelling sweete, but there it might be
found [al arownd.
To bud out faire, and throwe her sweete smells

XIII

No tree whose braunches did not bravely
spring;
No braunch whereon a fine bird did not sitt;
No bird but did her shrill notes sweetely sing;
No song but did containe a lovely ditt.
Trees, braunches, birds, and songs, were framed
For to allure fraile mind to careless ease: [fitt
Caelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake
witt
Was overcome of thing that did him please;
So pleased did his wiathfull purpose faire appease.

XIV

Thus when shee had his eyes and senses fed
With false delights, and filld with pleasures
Into a shady dale she soft him led, [vayn,
And layd him downe upon a grassy playn;
And her sweete selfe without dread or disdayn
She sett beside, laying his head disarmd
In her loose lap, it softly to sustayn,
Where soone he slumbrd fearing not be harmd:
The whiles with a love lay she thus him sweetly
charmd.

XV

'Behold! O man! that toilesome paines doest
take, [grows,
The flowers, the fields, and all that pleasaunt
How they them selves doe thine ensample make,
Whiles nothing envious nature them forth
throwes
Out of her fruitfull lap; how no man knowes,
They spring, they bud, they blossome fresh
and faire, [shows;
And decke the world with their rich pompous
Yet no man for them taketh paines or care,
Yet no man to them can his carefull paines
compare.

XVI

'The lilly, Lady of the flowing field,
The flowre-deluce, her lovely Pafamoure,
Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labors yield,
And soone leave off this toylsome weary stoure:
Loe, loe! how brave she decks her bounteous
boure,
With silkin curtens and gold coverletts,
Therein to shrowd her sumptuous Belainque;
Yet nether spinnes nor cards, ne cares nor
fretts, [letta,
But to her Mother Nature all her care she

XVII

'Why then doest thou, O man! that of them
Art Lord, and eke of nature Sovereaine, [all
Willfully make thyselfe a wretched thrall,
And waste thy joyous howres in needelesse
paine,
Seeking for daunger and adventures vaine?
What bootes it al to have, and nothing use?
Who shall him rew that swimming in the
maine
Will die for thirst, and water doth refuse?
Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present plea-
sures chuse.'

XVIII

By this she had him lulled fast asleepe,
That of no worldly thing he care did take:
Then she with liquors strong his eies did stoepe,
That nothing should him hastily awake.
So she him left, and did her selfe betake
Unto her boat again, with which she clefte
The slouthfull wave of that great griesv lake:
Soone shee that Island far behind her left,
And now is come to that same place where
first she wefte.

XIX

By this time was the worthy Guyon brought
Unto the other side of that wide strond
Where she was rowing, and for passage sought.
Him needed not long call: shee soone to hond
Her ferry brought, where him she byding fond
With his sad guide: him selfe she tooke aboard,
But the Blacke Palmer suffred still to stonde,
Ne would for price or prayers once afford
To ferry that old man over the perlorus foord.

XX

Guyon was loath to leave his guide behind,
Yet being entred might not backe retyre;
For the fitt barke, obaying to her mind,
Forth launched quickly as she did desire,
Ne gave him leave to bid that aged sire
Adieu; but nimbly ran her wonted course
Through the dull billowes thicke as troubled
mire,

Whom nether wind out of their seat could forse
Nor timely tides did drive out of their sluggish
course.

XXI

And by the way, as was her wonted guise,
Her mery fitt shee, freshly gan to reare,
And did of joy and jollity devise,
Her selfe to cherish, and her guest to cheare.
The knight was courteous, and did not forbear
Her honest merth and pleasure to partake;
But when he saw her toy, and gibe, and geare,
And passe the bonds of modest merimake,
Her dalliaunce he despis'd, and follies did for-
sake.

XXII

Yet she still followed her former style,
And said and did all that mote him delight,
Till they arrived in that pleasaunt Ile,
Where sleeping late she left her other knight.
But whenas Guyon of that land had sight,
He wist him selfe amisse, and angry said;
'Ah, Dame! perdy ye have not doen me right,
Thus to mislead mee, whiles I you obaid:
Me litle needed from my right way to have
straid.'

XXIII

'Faire Sir,' (quoth she) 'be not displeas'd at all,
Who fares on sea may not command his way,
Ne wind and weather at his pleasure call:
The sea is wide, and easy for to stray;
The wind unstable, and doth never stay.
But here a while ye may in safety rest,
Till season serve new passage to assay:
Better safe port then be in seas distrest.'
Therewith she laught, and did her earnest end
in jest.

XXIV

But he, halfe discontent, mote nathelesse
Himselfe appease, and issewd forth on shore;
The joyes whereof and happy fruitfulnessse,
Such as he saw she gan him lay before,
And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made much
more: [spring,
The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly
The trees did bud, and early blossomes bore;
And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing,
And told that gardins pleasures in their
caroling.

XXV

And she, more sweete then any bird on
bough,
Would oftentimes amongst them beare a part,
And strive to passe (as she could well enough)
Their native musicke by her skilful art:
So did she all that might his constant hart
Withdraw from thought of warlike enterprize,
And drowne in dissolute delights apart,

Where noise of armes, or vew of martiall guize,
Might not revive desire of knightly exercise.

XXVI

But he was wise, and wary of her will,
And ever held his hand upon his hart;
Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill,
As to despise so courteous seeming part
That gentle Lady did to him impart:
But, fairly tempring, fond desire subdewd,
And ever her desired to depart.
She list not heare, but her disports poursewd,
And ever bad him stay till time the tide
renewd.

XXVII

And now by this Cymochles howre was spent,
That he awoke out of his ydle dreme;
And, shaking off his drowsy dreriment,
Gan him avize, howe ill did him beseme
In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme,
And quench the brond of his conceived yre:
Tho up he started, stird with shame extreme,
Ne staid for his Damsell to inquire,
But marched to the Strand there passage to
require.

XXVIII

And in the way he with Sir Guyon mett,
Accompanyde with Phædria the faire:
Eftsoones he gan to rage, and inly frett,
Crying; 'Let be that Lady debonaire,
Thou recreant knight, and soone thyselfe
prepaire
To batteille, if thou meane her love to gayn.
Loe, loe! already how the fowles in aire
Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn
Thy carcas for their pray, the guerdon of thy
payn.'

XXIX

And therewithall he fiersly at him flew,
And with importune outrage him assayld;
Who, soone preparad to field, his sword forth
drew,
And him with equall vawle countervayld:
Their mightie strokes their habergeons dis-
mayld,
And naked made each others manly spalles;
The mortall steele despitiously entayld
Deepe in their flesh, quite through the yron
walles,
That a large purple streame adowne their
giambeux falles.

XXX

Cymochles, that had never mett before
So puissant foe, with envious despight
His prouwd presumed force increased more,
Disdeigning to bee held so long in fight.

Sir Guyon, grudging not so much his might
As those unknighly raylings which he spoke,
With wrathfull fire his corage kindled bright,
Thereof devising shortly to be wroke,
And doubling all his powres redoubled every
stroke.

XXXI

Both of them high attonce their handes en-
haunst, [sway.
And both attonce their huge blowes down did
Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglauust,
And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away;
But Guyons angry blade so fiers did play
(On th' others helmet, which as Titan shone,
That quite it clove his plumed crest in tway,
'And bared all his head unto the bone;
Wherewith astonisht, still he stood as sence-
lesse stone.

XXXII

Still as he stood, fayre Phædria, that beheld
That deadly daunger, soone atweene them ran;
And at their feet her selfe most humbly feld,
Crying with pitteous voyce, and count'nance
wan,
'Ah, well away! most noble Lords, how can
Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous sight,
To shed your lives on ground? Wo worth the
man,
That first did teach the cursed steele to bight
In his owne flesh, and make way to the living
spright!

XXXIII

'If ever love of Lady did empierce
Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place,
Withhold your bloody handes from battaill
fierce;
And, sith for me ye fight, to me this grace
Both yield, to stay your deadly stryfe a space.'
They stayd a while, and forth she gan pro-
ceede:
'Most wretched woman and of wicked race,
That am the authour of this hainous deed,
And cause of death betwene two doughtie
knights do breed!

XXXIV

'But, if for me ye fight, or me will serve,
Not this rude kynd of battaill, nor these armes
Are meet, the which doe men in bale to sterue,
And doolefull sorrow heape with deadly harmes:
Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes.
Another warre, and other weapons, I
Doe love, where love does give his sweet
Alarmes
Without bloodshed, and where the enemy
Does yield unto his foe a pleasaunt victory.

XXXV

'Debatefull strife, and cruell enmity,
The famous name of knighthood fowly shend ;
But lovely peace, and gentle amity,
And in Amours the passing howres to spend,
The mightie martiall handes doe most com-
Of love they ever greater glory bore [mend :
Then of their armes ; Mars is Cupidoes frend,
And is for Venus loves renoumed more
Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he did
of yore.'

XXXVI

Therewith she sweetly smild. They, though
full bent
To prove extremities of bloody fight,
Yet at her speach their rages gan relent,
And calmed the sea of their tempestuous spight.
Such powre have pleasing wordes : such is the
Of courteous clemency in gentle hart. [might
Now after all was ceast, the Faery knight
Besought that Damzell suffer him depart,
And yield him ready passage to that other part.

XXXVII

She no lesse glad then he desirous was
Of his departure thence ; for of her joy
And vaine delight she saw he light did pas,
A foe of folly and immodest toy,
Still solemne sad, or still disdainfull coy ;
Delighting all in armes and cruell warre,
That her sweet peace and pleasures did annoy,
Troubled with terrour and unquiet jarre,
That she well pleased was thence to amove him
farre.

XXXVIII

The him she brought aboard, and her swift bote
Forthwith directed to that further strand ;
The which on the dull waves did lightly flote,
And soone arrived on the shallow sand,
Where glad some Guyon salied forth to land,
And to that Damzell thanks gave for reward
Upon that shore he spied Atin stand,
There by his maister left, when late he far'd
In Phædras flitt bark over that perous shard.

XXXIX

Well could he him remember, sith of late
He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made :
Streight can he him revyle, and bitter rate,
As Shepherdes curre, that in darke eveninges
shade
Hath tracted forth some salvage beastes trade :
'Vile Miscreant,' (said he) whither dost thou
flye [invade ?
The shame and death, which will thee soone
What coward hand shall doe thee next to dye,
That art thus fowly fledd from famous enemy ?

XL

With that he stifly shooke his steelhead dart :
But sober Guyon, hearing him so rayle,
Though somewhat moved in his mightie hart,
Yet with strong reason maistred passion
fraile,
And passed fayrely forth. He, turning taile,
Back to the strand retyrd, and there still stayd,
Awaiting passage which him late did faile ;
The whiles Cymochles with that wanton mayd
The hasty heat of his avowd revenge delayd.

XLI

Whylest there the varlet stood, he saw from
farre
An armed knight that towards him fast ran ;
He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre
His forlorne steed from him the victour wan :
He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint, and wan ;
And all his armour sprinkled was with blood,
And soyled with durty gore, that no man can
Discerne the hew thereof. He never stood,
But bent his hastie course towards the ylle
flood.

XLII

The varlett saw, when to the flood he came,
How without stop or stay he fiersly leapt,
And deepe him selfe beducked in the same,
That in the lake his loftie crest was stept,
Ne of his safetie seemed care he kept ;
But with his raging armes he rudely dasht
The waves about, and all his armour swept,
That all the blood and filth away was washt ;
Yet still he bet the water, and the billowes
dash.

XLIII

Atin drew nigh to weet what it mote bee,
For much he wondred at that uncouth sight :
Whom should he but his owne deare Lord
there see,
His owne deare Lord Pyrochles in sad plight,
Ready to drowne him selfe for fell despight :
'Harrow now out, and well away !' he cryde,
'What dismall day hath lent this cursed light,
To see my Lord so deadly damnifyde ?
Pyrochles, O Pyrochles ! what is thee betyde ?'

XLIV

'I burne, I burne, I burne !' then lowd he
cryde.
'O ! how I burne with implacable fyre ;
Yet nought can quench mine inly flaming syde,
Nor sea of licour cold, nor lake of myre :
Nothing but death can doe me to respyre.'
'Ah ! be it,' (said he) 'from Pyrochles farre
After pursewing death once to requyre,

Or think, that ought those puissant hands
may marre: [starre;
Death is for wretches borne under unhappy

XLV

'Perdye, then is it fitt for me,' (said he)
'That am, I weene, most wretched man alive;
Burning in flames, yet no flames can I see,
And dying dayly, dayly yet revive.
(O Atin! helpe to me last death to give.'
The varlet at his plaint was grieved so sore,
That his deepe wounded hart in two did rive;
And, his owne health remembering now no more,
Did follow that ensample which he blam'd afore.

XLVI

Into the lake he leapt his Lord to ayd,
(So Love the dread of daunger doth despise)
And of him catching hold him strongly stayd
From drowning. But more happy he then wise,
Of that seas nature did him not advise:
The waves thercof so slow and sluggish were,
Engrost with mud which did them fowle agrie,
That every weighty thing they did upbeare,
Ne ought mote ever sinck downe to the
bottom there.

XLVII

Whiles thus they struggled in that ydle wave,
And strove in vaine, the one him selfe to
drowne,
The other both from drowning for to save,
Lo! to that shore one in an auncient gowne,
Whose hoary locks great gravitie did crowne,
Holding in hand a goodly arming sword,
By fortune came, ledd with the troublous sowne.
Where drenched deepe he fownd in that dull
ford [Lord.
The carefull servaunt stryving with his tagging

XLVIII

Him Atin spying knew right well of yore,
And lowdly cald; 'Help, helpe! O Archimago!
To save my Lord in wretched plight forlore;
Helpe with thy hand, or with thy counsell sage;

Weake handes, but counsell is most strong in
age.'

Him when the old man saw, he woudred sore
To see Pyrochles there so rudely rage;
Yet sithens helpe, he saw, he needed more
Then pitty, he in hast approached to the shore,

XLIX

And cald: 'Pyrochles! what is this I see?
What hellish fury hath at earst thee hent?
Furious ever I thee knew to bee,
Yet never in this straunge astonishment.'
'These flames, these flames' (he cryde) 'doe
me torment.' [see
'Wha flames,' (quoth he), when I thee present
In daunger rather to be drent then brent?'
'Harrow! the flames which me consume,'
(said hee) [hee.
'Ne can be quencht, within my secret bowelles

L

'That cursed man, that cruel feend of hell,
Furor, oh! Furor hath me thus bedight:
His deadly woundes within my liver swell,
And his wholt fyre burnes in mine entralles
bright,
Kindled through his infernall brond of spight,
Sith late with him I batteill vaine would boste;
That now, I weene, Joves dreaded thunder light
Does scorch not halfe so sore, nor damned
ghoste
In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste.'

LI

Which when as Archimago heard, his grieve
He knew right well, and him attonce disarm'd;
Then searcht his secret woundes, and made a
priefe
Of every place that was with bruizing harmd,
Or with the hidden fire too inly warmd,
Which doen, he balmes and herbes thereto
applyd,
And evermore with mightie spels them charmd;
That in short space he has them qualifyde,
And him restor'd to helth that would have
algates dyde.

CANTO VII.

Guyon findes Mamon in a delve
 Sunning his threasure hore;
 Is by him tempted, and led downe
 To see his secreete store.

I

As Pilot well expert in perilous wave,
 That to a stedfast starre his course hath bent,
 When foggy mistes or cloudy tempests have
 The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,
 And cover'd heaven with hideous dreriment,
 Upon his card and compas firmes his eye,
 The maysters of his long experiment,
 And to them does the steddly helme apply,
 Bidding his winged vessell fairly forward fly:

II

So Guyon having lost his trustie guyde,
 Late left beyond that Ydle lake, proceedes
 Yet on his way, of none accompanye;
 And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes
 Of his own vertues and praise-worthie deedes.
 So, long he yode, yet no adventure found,
 Which fame of hers shrill trumpet worthy reedes;
 For still he traveld through wide wastfull
 ground, [around,
 That nought but desert wilderness shewed all

III

At last he came unto a gloomy glade,
 Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens
 light,
 Whereas he sitting found in secret shade
 An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile wight,
 Of grisly hew and fowle ill favour'd sight;
 His face with sm'ke was tand, and eies were
 bleard,
 His head and beard with sout were ill bedight,
 His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have ben
 seard [clawes appeard
 In smythes fire-splitting forge, and nayles like

IV

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust,
 Was underneath enveloped with gold; [dust,
 Whose glistring glosse, darkned with filthy
 Well yet appeared to have beene of old
 A worke of rich entayle and curious mould,
 Woven with antickes and wyld ymagery;
 And in his lap a masse of coyne he told,
 And turned upside downe, to fede his eye
 And covetous desire with his huge threasury.

V

And round about him lay on every side
 Great heapes of gold that never could be spent;
 Of which some were rude owre, not purifide
 Of Mulcibers devouring element;
 Some others were new driven, and distent
 Into great Ingowes and to wedges square;
 Some in round plates withouten moniment;
 But most were stamp't, and in their metal bare
 The antique shap'es of kings and keasars
 straunge and rare.

VI

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright
 And haste he rose for to remove aside [sight,
 Those pretious hils from straungers envious
 And downe them poured through an hole full
 Into the hollow earth, them there to hide. [wide
 But Guyon, lightly to him leaping, stayd
 His hand that trembled as one terrifyd;
 And though himselfe were at the sight dismayd,
 Yet him perforce restaynd, and to him doubt-
 full sayd:

VII

'What art thou, man, (if man at all thou art)
 That here in desert hast thine habitaunce,
 And these rich hils of welth doest hide apart
 From the worldes eye, and from her right
 usauance?'
 Thereat, with staring eyes fixed askaunce,
 In great disdain he answerd: 'Hardy Elfe,
 That darest view my direfull countenance,
 I read thee rash and heedlesse of thy selfe,
 To trouble my still seate, and heapes of pre-
 tious pelfe.

VIII

'God of the world and worldlings I me call,
 Great Mammon, greatest god below the skye,
 That of my plenty poure out unto all,
 And unto none my graces do envye:
 Riches, renowne, and principality,
 Honour, estate, and all this worldes good,
 For which men swinck and sweat incessantly,
 Fro me do flow into an ample flood,
 And in the hollow earth have their eternall brood.

IX

'Wherefore, if methow deigneto serve and sew,
At thy commaund lo! all these mountaines bee:
Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew,
All these may not suffice, there shall to thee
Ten times so much be nombred francke and
free.'

[vaine,
'Mammon,' (saide he) 'thy godheads vaunt is
And idle offers of thy golden fee;
To them that covet such eye-glutting gaine
Proffer thy gifte, and fitter servaunts enter-
taine.

X

'Me ill besits, that in der-doing armes
And honours suit my vowed daies do spend,
Unto thy bounteous baytes and pleasing
charmes,
With which weake men thou witchest, to attend;
Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend,
And low abase the high heroicke spright,
That joyes for crownes and kingdomes to con-
tend:
[delight;
Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes be my
Those be the riches fit for an advent'rous knight.'

XI

'Vaine glorious Elfe,' (saide he) 'doest not thou
weet,
That money can thy wantes at will supply?
Shields, steeds, and armes, and all things for
thee meet.
It can purvay in twineckling of an eye;
And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply.
Do not I kings create, and throw the crowne
Sometimes to him that low in dust doth ly,
And him that raignd into his rowme thrust
downe,
[renowne?
And whom I lust do heape with glory and

XII

'All otherwise' (saide he) 'I riches read,
And deeme them roote of all disquietnesse;
First got with guile, and then preserv'd with
dread,
And after spent with pride and lavishesse,
Leaving behind them grieve and heavinesse:
Infinite mischiefes of them doe arise,
Strife and debate, bloodshed and bitterness,
Outrageous wrong, and hellish covetize,
That noble heart as great dishonour doth despize.

XIII

'Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine;
But realmes and rulers thou doest both con-
found,
And loyall truth to treason doest incline:
Witness the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on
ground,

The crowned often slaine, the slayer cround;
The sacred Diademe in peeces rent,
And purple robe goied with many a wound,
Castles surprizd, great cities sackt and brent:
So mak'st thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull
government.

XIV

'Long were to tell the troublous stormes that
tosse
The private state, and make the life unsweet:
Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth
crosse,
And in fraye wood on Adrian gulf doth fleet,
Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet.'
Then Mammon waxing wroth; 'And why then,'
• sayd,
'Are mortall men so foud and indiscreet
So evill thing to seeke unto their ayd,
And having not complaine, and having it up-
brayd?'

XV

'Indeede,' (quoth he) 'through fowle intem-
perance,
Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise;
But would they thinke with how small allow-
ance
Untroubled Nature doth her selfe suffice,
Such superfluities they would despise,
Which with sad cares empeach our native joyes.
At the well-head the purest strames arise;
But mucky filth his braunching armes annoyes,
And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave
accloyes.

XVI

'The antique world, in his first flowring youth,
Fownd no defect in his Creators grace;
But with glad thankes, and unreprieved truth,
The gifts of soveraine bounty did embrace:
Like Angels life was then mens happy cace;
But later ages pride, like correfed steed,
Abusd her plenty and fat swolne encrease
To all licentious lust, and gan exceed
The measure of her meane and naturall first
need!

XVII

'Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe
Of his great Grandmother with steele to wound,
And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe
With Sacriledge to dig. Therein he fownd
Fountaines of gold and silver to abownd,
Of which the matter of his huge desire
And pompous pride eftswoones he did compownd;
Then avarice gan through his veines inspire
His greedy flames, and kindled life-devouring
fire.'

XVIII

'Sonne,' (said he then) 'lett be thy bitter scorne,
And leave the rudenesse of that antique age
To them that liv'd therein in state forlorne:
Thou, that doest live in later times, must wage
Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage.
If then thee list my offred grace to use,
Take what thou please of all this surplussage;
If thee list not, leave have thou to refuse:
But thing refused doe not afterward accuse.'

XIX

'Me list not' (said the Elfin knight) 'receave
Thing offred, till I know it well be gott;
Ne wote I but thou didst these goods bereave
From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott,
Or that bloodguiltinesse or guile them blott.'
'Perdy,' (quoth he) 'yet never eie did vew,
Ne tong did tell, ne hand these handled not;
But saie I have them kept in secret mew
From heavens sight, and powre of al which
them poursew.'

XX

'What secret place' (quoth he) 'can safely hold
So huge a masse, and hide from heavens eie?
Or where hast thou thy wonne, that so much
gold

Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery?'
'Come thou,' (quoth he) 'and see.' So by and by
Through that thick covert he him led, and
found

A darkesome way, which no man could descry,
That deep descended through the hollow
grownd, [arownd.

And was with dread and horror compassed

XXI

At length they came into a larger space,
That stretcht itself into an ample playne;
Through which a beaten broad high way did
trace,

That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly rayne.
By that wayes side there sate internall Payne,
And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife:
The one in hand an yron whip did strayne,
The other brandished a bloody knife;
And both did gnash their teeth, and both did
threaten life.

XXII

On thother side in one consort there sate
Cruell Revenge, and rancorous Despight;
Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate;
But gnawing Gealosy, out of their sight
Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight;
And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,
And found no place wher safe he shroud him
might:

Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye, [eye.
And shame his ugly face did hide from living

XXIII

And over them sad horror with grim hew
Did alwaies sore, beating his yron wings;
And after him Owles and Night-ravens flew,
The hatefull messengers of heavy things;
Of death and dolor telling sad tidings;
Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte,
A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings,
That hart of flint asonder could have rifted;
Which having ended after him she flyeth
swift.

XXIV

All these before the gates of Pluto lay,
By whom they passing spake unto them
nought;
But th' Elfin knight with wonder all the way
Did feed his eyes, and sild his inner thought.
At last him to a litle dore he brought,
That to the gate of Hell, which gaped wide,
Was next adjoining, ne them parted ought:
Betwixt them both was but a litle stride,
That did the house of Richesse from hell-mouth
divide.

XXV

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care,
Day and night keeping wary watch and ward,
For feare least Force or Fraud should unawares
Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in gard:
Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thither-ward
Approch, albe his drowsy den were next;
For next to death is Sleepe to be compar'd;
Therefore his house is unto his annex:
Here Sleep, ther Richesse, and Hel-gate them
botin betwext.

XXVI

So soon as Mammon there arrivd, the dore
To him did open and afforded way:
Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore,
Ne darkenesse him, ne daunger might dismay.
Soone as he entred was, the dore streight way
Did shutt, and from behind it forth there lept
An ugly feend, more fowle then dismall day,
The which with monstrous stalke behind him
stept, [kept.
And ever as he went dew watch upon him

XXVII

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy guest,
If ever covetous hand, or lustfull eye,
Or lips he layd on thing that likte him best,
Or ever sleepe his eie-strings did untie,
Should be his pray. And therefore still on hye
He over him did hold his cruell clawes,
Threatning with greedy gripe to doe him dye,

And rend in peeces with his ravenous pawes,
If ever he transgest the fatall Stygian lawes.

XXVIII

That houses forme within was rude and
strong,
Lyke an huge cave hewne out of rocky clifte,
From whose rough vout the ragged breaches
hong
Emboss with massy gold of glorious guifte,
And with rich metall loaded every rifte,
That heavy ruine they did seeme to threat;
And over them Arachne high did lifte
Her cunning web, and spred her subtile nett,
Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more
black then Jett.

XXIX

Both rooffe, and floore, and walls, were all of
gold,
But overgrowne with dust and old decay,
And hid in darkenes, that none could behold
The hew thereof; for vew of cherefull day
Did never in that house it selfe display,
But a faint shadow of uncertein light:
Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away,
Or as the Moone, clothed with cloudy night,
Does show to him that walkes in feare and sad
affright.

XXX

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene
But huge great yron chests, and coffers strong,
All bari with double bends, that none could
Them to efforce by violence or wrong: [weene
On every side they placed were along;
But all the grownd with sculs was scattered,
And dead mens bones, which round about were
flong;
Whose lives, it seemed, whilome there were shed,
And their vile carcasses now left unburied.

XXXI

They forward passe; ne Guyon yet spoke
Till that they came unto an yron dore, [word,
Which to them opened of his owne accord,
And shewd of richesse such exceeding store,
As eie of man did never see before,
Ne ever could wjthin one place be fownd,
Though all the wealth which is, or was of yore,
Could gathered be through all the world arownd,
And that above were added to that under
grownd.

XXXII

The charge thereof unto a covetous Spright
Commanded was, who thereby did attend,
And warily awaited day and night,
From other covetous feendes it to defend,

Who it to rob and ransacke did intend.
Then Mammon, turning to that warriour, said;
'Loe! here the worldes blis: loe! here the end,
To which al men doe ayme, rich to be made:
Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.'

XXXIII

'Certes,' (sayd he) 'I n'll thine offred grace,
Ne to be made so happy doe intend:
Another blis before mine eyes I place,
Another happines, another end.
To them that list these base regards I lend;
But I in armes, and in atchievements brave,
Do rather choose my fitting houres to spend,
And to be Lord of those that riches have,
Then them to have my selfe, and be their ser-
vile slave.'

XXXIV

Thereat the feed his gnashing teeth did grate,
And griev'd so long to lacke his greedie pray;
For well he weened that so glorious bayte
Would tempt his guest to take thereof brave;
Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away,
More light then Culver in the Faulcons list.
Eternall God thee save from such decay!
But, whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist,
Him to entrap unwaies another way he wist.

XXXV

Thence forward he him ledd, and shortly
brought
Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright
To him did open, as it had beene taught.
Therein an hundred raunges weren pight,
And hundred furnaces all burning bright:
By every founace many feendes did byde,
Deformed creatures, horrible in sight;
And every feend his busie paines applyde
To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

XXXVI

One with great bellows gathered filling ayre,
And with forst wind the fewell did inflame;
Another did the dying bronds repayre
With yron tongs, and sprinkled ofte the same
With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame,
Who, maystring them, renewd his former heat:
Some scumd the drosse that from the metall
came;
Some stird the molten owre with ladles great;
And every one did swinke, and every one did
sweat.

XXXVII

But, when an earthly wight they present saw
Glistring in armes and battailous aray,

From their whot work they did themselves
withdraw

To wonder at the sight; for till that day
They never creature saw that cam that way:
Their staring eyes sparkling with fervent fyre
And ugly shapes did nigh the man dismay,
That, were it not for shame, he would retyre;
Till that him thus bespake their soveraine
Lord and syre;

XXXVIII

'Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall
That living eye before did never see. [eye,
The thing, that thou didst crave so earnestly,
To weet whence all the wealth late shewed by
Proceeded, lo! now is reveald to thee. [mee
Here is the fountaine of the worldes good: •
Now, therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,
Advise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood,
Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be
withstood.'

XXXIX

'Suffise it then, thou Money God,' (quoth hee)
'That all thine ydle offers I refuse.
All that I need I have: what needeth mee
To covet more then I have cause to use?
With such vaine shewes thy worldlings vyle
abuse;
But give me leave to follow mine emprise,
Mammon was much displeas'd, yet no'te he chuse
But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise;
And thence him forward ledd him further to
entise.

XL

He brought him, through a darksom narrow
strayt,
To a broad gate all built of beaten gold:
The gate was open; but therein did wayt
A sturdie villein, stryding stiffe and bold,
As if the highest God defy he would:
In his right hand an yron club he held,
But he himselfe was all of golden mould,
Yet had both life and sence, and well could
weld [queld.
That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes he

XLI

Disdayne he called was, and did disdayne
To be so cald, and who so did him call:
Sterne was his looke, and full of stomacke
vayne;
His portance terrible, and stature tall,
Far passing th' hight of men terrestriall,
Like an huge Gyant of the Titan race; [small,
That made him scorne all creatures great and
And with his pride all others powre deface:
More fitt amongst black fendes then men to
have his place.

XLII

Soone as those glitterand armes he did espye,
That with their brightnesse made that dark-
nes light,
His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye,
And threaten batteill to the Faery knight;
Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight,
Till Mammon did his hasty hand withhold,
And counseld him abstaine from perillous fight;
For nothing might abash the villen bold,
Nemortall steele emperce his miscreated mould.

XLIII

So having him with reason pacifyde,
And that fiers Carle commaunding to forbear,
He brought him in. The rowme was large
and wyde,
As it some Gyeld or solemne Temple weare
Many great golden pillours did upbeare
The massy rooffe, and riches huge sustayne;
And every pillour decked was full deare
With crownes, and Diademes, and titles vaine,
Which mortall Princes wore whiles they on
earth did rayne.

XLIV

A route of people there assembled were,
Of every sort and nation under skye,
Which with great uprore preaced to draw nere
To th' upper part, where was advanced hie
A stately siege of soveraine majestyc:
And thereon satt a woman, gorgeous gay
And richly cladd in robes of royaitye,
That never earthly Prince in such aray
His glory did enhaunce, and pompous pryde
display.

XLV

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to
bee, [threw
That her broad beauties beam great brightnes
Through the dim shade, that all men might
• it see:
Yet was not that same her owne native hew,
But wrought by art and counterfetted shew,
Thereby more lovers unto her to call:
Nath'lesse most heavenly faire in deed and vew
She by creation was, till she did fall;
Thenceforth she sought for helps to cloke her
crime withall.

XLVI

There, as in glistering glory she did sitt,
She held a great gold chaine ylincked well,
Whose upper end to highest heven was knitt,
And lower part did reach to lowest Hell;
And all that preace did rownd about her sell
To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby
To climbe aloft, and others to excell:

That was Ambition, rash desire to sty,
And every linck thereof a step of dignitie.

XLVII

Some thought to raise themselves to high
By riches and unrighteous reward; [degree
Some by close shouldring; some by flatteree;
Others through friendes; others for base regard,
And all by wrong waies for themselves pre-
pard:

Those that were up themselves kept others low;
Those that were low themselves held others
hard,
Ne suffred them to ryse or greater grow;
But every one did strive his fellow downe to
throw.

XLVIII

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire,
What meant that preace about that Ladies
throne,

And what she was that did so high aspyre?
Him Mammon answered; 'That goodly one,
Whom all that folke with such contentioun
Doe flock about, my deare, my daughter is:
Honour and dignitie from her alone
Derived are, and all this worldes blis,
For which ye men doe strive; few gett, but
many mis:

XLIX

'And fayre Philotime she rightly light.
The fairest wight that womneth under skie,
But that this darksom neather world her light
Doth dim with horror and deformitie;
Worthie of heven and hye felicitie,
From whence the gods have her for envy
thrust:
But, sith thou hast found favour in mine eye,
Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust,
That she may thee advance for works and
merits just.'

L

'Gramercy, Mammon,' (said the gentle
knight)
'For so great grace and offred high estate;
But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,
Unworthy match for such immortall mate
My selfe well yote, and mine unequall fate:
And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,
And love avowd to other Lady late,
That to remove the same I have no might:
To change love causelesse is reproch to warlike
knight'

LI

Mammon emmowed was with inward wrath;
Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence ledd,
Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path,
Into a gardin goodly garnished

With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not
be reddy;

Not such as earth out of her fruitfull wombe
Throwes forth to men, sweet and well savoyed,
But direfull deadly black, both leafe and bloom,
Fitt to adorne the dead, and deck the dreery
toombe.

LII

There mournfull Cypressse grew in greatest
store,
And trees of bitter Gall, and Helbon sad;
Dead sleeping Poppy, and black Hellebore;
Cold Coloquintida, and Tetra mad;
Mortall Sammitis, and Cicuta bad,
With which th' unjust Atheniens made to dy
Wise Socrates; who, thereof quaffing glad,
Poured out his life and last Philosophy
To the fayre Critias, his dearest Belamy!

LIII

The Gardin of Proserpina this hight;
And in the midst thereof a silver seat,
With a thick Arber goodly over-dight,
In which she often usd from open heat
Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat:
Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,
With branches broad dispredd and body great,
Clothed with leaves, that none the wood mote
see,
And laden all with fruit as thick as it might
bee.

LIV

Their fruit were golden apples glistring bright,
That goodly was their glory to behold:
On earth like never grew, ne living wight
Like ever saw, but they from hence were sold;
For those which Hercules, with conquest bold
Got from great Atlas daughters, hence began,
And planted there did bring forth fruit of gold;
And those with which th' Eubæan young man
wan
Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out
ran.

LV

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,
With which Acontius got his lover trew,
Whom he had long time sought with fruitlesse
suit:
Here eke that famous golden Apple grew,
The which amongst the gods false Ate threw;
For which th' Idean Ladies disagreed,
Till partiall Paris dempt it Venus dew,
And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,
That many noble Greekes and Trojans made
to bleed.

LVI

The warlike Elfe much wonked at this tree,
So fayre and great that shadowed all the
ground,
And his broad braunches, laden with rich see,
Did stretch themselves without the utmost
bound
Of this great gardin, compast with a mound;
Which over-hanging, they themselves did
steepe
In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it round.
That is the river of Cocytus deepe,
In which full many soules do endlesse wayle
and weepe.

LVII

Which to behold he clomb up to the bancke,
And looking downe saw many damned wightes
In those sad waves, which direfull deadly
stancke,
Plonged continually of cruell Sprightes,
That with their piteous cryes, and yelling
shrighes,
They made the further shore resounden wide.
Emongst the rest of those same ruefull sightes,
One cursed creature he by chance espide, [side,
That drenched lay full deepe under the Garden

LVIII

Deepe was he drenched to the upmost chin,
Yet gaped still as coveting to drinke
Of the cold hquor which he waded in;
And stretching forth his hand did often thinke
To reach the fruit which grew upon the
brincke;
But both the fruit from hand, and flood from
Did flye abacke, and made him vainely swinke;
The whiles he sterv'd with hunger, and with
drouth,
He daily dyde, yet never throughly dyen couth.

LIX

The knight, him seeing labour so in vaine,
Askt who he was, and what he ment thereby?
Who, groning deepe, thus answered him againe;
'Most cursed of all creatures under skye,
Lo! Tantalus, I here tormented lye:
Of whom high Jove wont whylome feasted
bee;
Lo! here I now for want of food doe dye:
But, if that thou be such as I thee see, [mee!'
Of grace I pray thee. give to eat and drinke to

LX

'Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus,' (quoth he)
'Abide the fortune of thy present fate;
And unto all that live in high degree,
Ensamble be of mind intemperate,
To teach them how to use their present state.'

Then gan the cursed wretch alowd to cry,
Accusing highest Jove and gods ingrate;
And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly,
As author of injustice, there to let him dye.

LXI

He lookt a litle further, and espyde
Another wretch, whose carcas deepe was drent
Within the river, which the same did hyde;
But both his handes, most filthy seculent,
Above the water were on high extent,
And saynd to wash themselves incessantly,
Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent,
But rather fowler seemed to the eye;
So lost his labour vaine and ydle industry.

LXII

The knight him calling asked who he was?
Who, lifting up his head, him answerd thus;
'I Pilate am, the falsest Judge, alas!
And most unjust: that, by unrighteous
And wicked doome, to Jewes despitous
Delivered up the Lord of life to dye,
And did acquite a murderer felonous;
The whiles my handes I washt in purity,
The whiles my soule was soyld with fowle in-
iquity.'

LXIII

Infinite moe tormented in like paine
He there beheld, too long here to be told:
Ne Mammon would there let him long remayne,
For terror of the tortures manifold,
In which the damned soules he did behold,
But roughly him bespake: 'Thou fearefull foole,
Why takest not of that same fruite of gold?
Ne sittest downe on that same silver stoole,
To rest thy weary person in the shadow coole?'

LXIV

All which he did to do him deadly fall
In frayle intemperance through sinfull bayt;
To which if he inclyned had at all, [wayt,
That dreadfull feend, which did behinde him
Would him have rent in thousand peeces strayt:
But he was wary wise in all his way,
And well perceived his deceitfull sleight,
Ne suffered lust his safety to betray.
So goodly did beguile the Guyler of his pray.

LXV

And now he has so long remained there,
That vitall powres gan waxe both weake and wan
For want of food and sleepe, which two upbeare,
Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of man,
That none without the same endure can:
For now three dayes of men were full out-
wrought,
Since he this hardy enterprize began:

Fortly great Mammon fayrely he besought
Into the world to guyde him backe, as he him
brought.

LXXVI

The God, though loth, yet was constraynd
t' obey;
For lenger time then that no living wight

Below the earth might suffred be to stave:
So backe againe him brought to living light.
But all so soone as his enfeebled spright
Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,
As overcome with too exceeding might,
The life did flit away out of her nest,
And all his senses were with deadly fit oppress.

CANTO VIII.

Sir Guyon, layd in swowne, is by
Acrates sonnes despoild;
Whom Arthure soone hath reskewed,
And Paynim brethren foyld.

I

AND is there care in heaven? And is there
love
In heavenly spirits to these creatures base,
That may compassion of their evilles move?
There is: else much more wretched were the
race [grace
Of men then beasts. But O! th' exceeding
Of highest God that loves his creatures so,
And all his workes with mercy doth embrace,
That blessed Angels he sends to and fro, [for
To serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked

II

How oft do they their silver bowers leave,
To come to succour us that succour want!
How oft do they with golden pineons cleave
The fitting skyes, like flying Pursuivant,
Against fowle feedes to ayd us militant!
They for us fight, they watch and dewly ward,
And their bright Squadrons round about us
plant,
And all for love, and nothing for reward.
O! why should heavenly God to men have such
regard?

III

During the while that Guyon did abide
In Mamons house, the Palmer, whom whyleare
That wanton Mayd of passage had denide,
By further search had passage found elsew here;
And, being on his way, approached neare
Where Guyon lay in trance; when suddenly
He heard a voyce that called lowd and cleare,
'Come hither! hither! O, come hastily!'
That all the fields resounded with the ruefull
cry.

IV

The Palmer lent his eare unto the noyce,
To weet who called so importunely:
Again he heard a more efforced voyce,
That bad him come in haste. He by and by

His feeble feet directed to the cry;
Whicht to that shady delye him brought at last,
Where Mammon earst did sunne his threasury;
There the good Guyon he found slumbring fast
In seneeles dreame; which sight at first him
sore aghast.

V

Beside his head there satt a faire young man,
Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares,
Whose tender bud to blossom new began,
And florish faire above his equall peares:
His snowy front, curled with golden heares,
Like Phœbus face adorn'd with sunny rayes,
Divinely shone; and two sharpe winged
sheares,
Decked with diverse plumes, like painted Jayes,
Were fixt at his backe to cut his ayery wayes.

VI

Like as Cupido on Idæan hill,
When having laid his cruell bow away
And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill
The world with murtherous spoiles and bloody
pray,
With his faire mother he him dights to play,
And with his goodly sisters, Graces three:
The Goddesse, pleas'd with his wanton play,
Suffers her selfe through sleepe beguiled to bee,
The whiles the other Ladies mind theyr mery
glee.

VII

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was
Through fear and wonder that he nought could
say,
Till him the childe bespoke: 'Long lackt, alas!
Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay,
Whiles deadly fitt thy pupill doth dismay.
Behold this heavy sight, thou reverend Sire!
But dread of death and dolor doe away;
For life ere long shall to her home retire,
And he that breathlesse seems shal corage both
respire.

VIII

'The charge, which God doth unto me arrett,
Of his deare safety, I to thee commend;
Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett
The care thereof my selfe unto the end,
But evermore him succour, and defend
Against his foe and mine: watch thou, I pray,
For evill is at hand him to offend.'
So having said, estoones he gan display
His painted nimble wings, and vauisht quite
away.

IX

The Palmer seeing his lefte empty place,
And his slow eies beguiled of their sight,
Woxe sore affraid, and standing still a space,
Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight.
At last, him turning to his charge beight,
With trembling hand his troubled pulse gan
try;
Where finding life not yet dislodged quight.
He much rejoyst, and cou'd it tenderly,
As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

X

At last he spide where towards him did pace
Two Paynim knights al armd as bright as
skie,
And them beside an aged Sire did trace,
And far before a light-foote Page did flie,
That breathed strife and troublous enmitie.
Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old,
Who, meeting earst with Archimago slie
Foreby that idle strond, of him were told
That he which earst them combatted was Guyon
bold.

XI

Which to avenge on him they dearly vowd,
Where ever that on ground they mote him
find:
False Archimago provokte their corage prow'd,
And stryful Atin in their stubborne mind
Coles of contention and whot vengeance tind
Now bene they come whereas the Palmer sate,
Keeping that alombrd corse to him assind:
Well knew they both his person, sith of late
With him in bloody armes they rashly did
debate.

XII

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage
That sire he fowl bespake: Thou dotard vile,
That with thy brutenesse shendst thy comely
Abandon soone, I read, the caytive spoile [age.
Of that same outcast carcas, that erewhile
Made it selfe famous through false trechery,
And crownd his coward crest with knightly
stile;

Loe! where he now inglorious doth lye,
To proove he lived it that did thus fowly dye.

XIII

To whom the Palmer fearlesse answered:
'Certes, Sir knight, ye bene too much to blame,
Thus for to blott the honor of the deat,
And with fowle cowardize his carcas shame,
Whose living handes immortalizd his name.
Vile is the vengeance on the ashes cold,
And envy base to burke at sleeping laue.
Was never wight that treason of him told:
Your self his prowesse prov'd, and found him
fiers and bold.'

XIV

Then sayde Cymochiles: 'Palmer, thou doest
dote,
Ne canst of prowesse ne of knighthood deeme,
Save as thou seest or hearst. But well I wote,
That of his puissaunce tryall made extreme.
Yet gold al is not that doth golden seeme;
Ne all good knights that shake well speare and
shield.

The worth of all men by their end esteeme,
And then dew praise or dew reproch them yield;
Bad therefore I him deeme that thus lies dead
on field.'

XV

'Good or bad,' gan his brother fiers reply,
'What doe I recke, sith that he dide entire?
Or what doth his bad death now satisfy
The greedy hunger of revenging yre, [sire?
Sith wrathfull hand wrought not her owne de-
Yet since no way is left to wreake my spight,
I will him reave of armes, the victors hure,
And of that shield, more worthy of good knight;
For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour
briht?'

XVI

'Fayre Sir,' said then the Palmer suppliant,
'For knightoods love doe not so fowle a deed,
Ne blame your honor with so shamefull vaunt
Of vile revenge. To spoile the dead of weed
Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes exceed:
But leave these relics of his living night
To decke his herce, and trap his tomb-blacke
steed.'
'What herce or steed' (said he) 'should he
But be entombed in the raven or the knight?'

XVII

With that, rude hand upon his shield he laid,
And th' other brother gan his helme unlace,
Both fiercely bent to have him disaraid;
Till that they spyde where towards them did
pace

An armed knight, of bold and bounteous grace,
Whose squire bore after him an heben launce
And covered shield. Well kende him so far space
Th' enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce,
When under him he saw his Lybian steed to
prauce;

XXIII

And to those brethren said; 'Rise, rise bylive,
And unto battell doe your selves addresse;
For yonder comes the prouest knight alive,
Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and noblesse,
That hath to Paynim knights wrought gret
distresse,

And thousand Sarzins sowly donne to dye.
That word so deepe did in their harts impresse,
That both eftsoones upstart furiously,
And gan themselves prepare to battell greedily.

XIX

But fiers Pyrochles, lacking his owne sword,
The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine,
And Archimage besought, him that afford
Which he had brought for Braggadochio vaine
'So would I,' (said th' enchaunter) 'glad and
faine

Beteeme to you this sword, you to defend,
Or ought that els your honour might main-
taine;

But that this weapons powre I well have kende
To be contrary to the worke which ye intend:

XX

'For that same knights owne sword this is,
of yore
Which Merlin made by his almightie art
For that his nourling, when he knighthood
swore,

Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart.
The metall first he mixt with Medewart,
That no enchantment from his dint might
save;

Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart,
And seven times dipped in the bitter wave
Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it gave.

XXI

'The vertue is, that nether steele nor stone
The stroke thereof from entraunce may defend;
Ne ever may be used by his fone,
Ne forst his rightful owner to offend;
Ne ever will it breake, ne ever bend:
Wherefore *Morddure* it rightfully is hight.
In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend
The same to thee, against his lord to fight;
For sure yt would deceive thy labor and thy
might.'

XXII

'Foolish old man,' said then the Pagan wroth,
'That weenest words or charms may force
withstond:

Soone shalt thou see, and then beleeeve for troth,
That I can carve with this inchaunted brond
His Lords owne flesh.' Therewith out of his
bond

That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht away,
And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond:
So ready dight fierce buttaile to assay,
And match his brother proud in battailous aray.

XXIII

By this, that straunger knight in presence
came,

And goodly salued them; who nought againe
Him answered, as courtesie became; [daine,
But with sterne looks, and stomachous dis-
gave signes of grudge and discontentment
vaine.

Then, turning to the Palmer, he gan spy
Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne
And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye,
In whose dead face he redd great magnanimity.

XXIV

Sayd he then to the Palmer: 'Reverend Syre,
What great misfortune hath betidd this knight?
Or did his life her fatal date expyre,
Or did he fall by treason, or by fight?

How ever, sure I rew his pitteous plight.'
'Not one, nor other,' sayd the Palmer grave,
'Hath him befallen; but cloudes of deadly night
A while his heavy eyldis cover'd have, [wave:
And all his sences drowned in deep sencelesse

XXV

'Which those his cruell foes, that stand here-
by,

Making advantage, to revenge their spight,
Would him disarm and threaten shamefully;
Unworthise usage of redoubted knight.

But you, faire Sir, whose honourable sight
Doth promise hope of helpe and timely grace,
Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,
And by your powre protect his feeble cace?
First prayse of knighthood is fowle outrage to
deface.'

XXVI

'Palmer, (said he) 'no knight so rude, I weene,
As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost;
Ne was there ever noble courage scene,
That in advantage would his puissance bost:
Honour is least where oddes appeareth most.
May bee, that better reason will aswage
The rash revengers heat. Words, well disposet,

Have secrete powre t' appease inflamed rage:
If not, leave unto me thy knights last patron-
age.'

XXVII

Tho, turning to those brethren, thus bespoke:
'Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might,
It seeme, just wronges to vengeancee doe
provoke, [knight,
To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming
Mote ought allay the storme of your despight,
And settle patience in so furious heat?
Not to debate the challenge of your right,
But for his carkas pardon I entreat,
Whom fortune hath already laid in lowest seat.'

XXVIII

To whom Cymochles said; 'For what art thou,
That mak'st thy selfe his dayes-man, to prolong
The vengeancee prest? Or who shall let me
now

On this vile body from to wreak my wrong,
And made his carkas as the outcast dong?
Why should not that dead carrion satisfye
The guilt which, if he lived had thus long,
His life for dew revenge should deare aby?
The trespass still doth live, albee the person dye.

XXIX

'Indeed,' then said the Prince, 'the evill done
Dyes not, when breath the body first doth leave;
But from the grandsyre to the Nephewes sonne,
And all his seede the curse doth often cleave,
Till vengeancee utterly the guilt bereave:
So streightly God doth judge. But gentle

Knight,

That doth against the dead his hand upheave,
His honour staines with rancour and despight,
And great disparagement makes to his former
might.'

XXX

Pyrochles gan sayle the second tyme,
And to him said: 'Now, felon, sure I read,
How that thou art partaker of his crime:
Therefore, by Termagaunt thou shalt be dead.
With that his hand, more sad then lump of
lead,

Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure,
His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave his
head.

The faithfull steele such treason no'uld endure,
But, swarving from the marke, his Lordes life
did assure.

XXXI

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,
That horse and man it made to reele asyde:
Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his sell,
For well of yore he learned had to ryde,

But full of anger fierly to him eyde;
'False traitour! miscreant! thou broken hast
The law of armes to strike foe undelide:
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt taste
Right sowre, and feele the law the which thou
hast defast.'

XXXII

With that his balefull speare he fiercely bent
Against the Pagans brest, and therewith
thought

His cursed life out of her lodge have rent;
But ere the point arrived where it ought,
That seven fold shield, which he from Guyon
brought,

He cast between to ward the bitter stownd:
Through all those foldes the steelehead passage
wrought, [to ground
And through his shoulder perst; wherewith
He groveling fell, all gored in his gushing
wound.

XXXIII

Which when his brother saw, fraught with
great griefe

And wrath, he to him leaped furiously.
And fowly saide: 'By Mahonne, cursed thiefe,
That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt aby:
Then, hurling up his harmefull blade on hy,
Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,
That from his saddle forced him to fly;
Els mote it needes downe to his manly brest
Have cleft his head in twaine, and he thence
disposset.

XXXIV

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse,
Wanting his sword when he on foot should
fight:

His single speare could doe him small redresse
Against two foes of so exceeding might,
The least of which was match for any knight.
And now the other, whom he erst did daunt,
Had reard him selfe againe to cruel fight
Three times more furious and more puisaunt,
Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignoraunt.

XXXV

So both attonce him charge on either syde
With hidous strokes and importable powre
That forced him his ground to traverse wyde,
And wisely watch to ward that deadly stowre;
For in his shield, as thicke as sterneic showre,
Their strokes did rane: yet did he never
quale,

Ne backward shrinke, but as a stedfast towre
Whom foe with double battry doth assaile,
Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids them
nought availe.

XXXVI.

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay;
Till that at last, when he advantage spyde,
His poynant speare he thrust with puissant
sway [wyde,
At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was
That through his thigh the mortall Steele did
gryde:

He, swarving with the force, within his flesh
Did breake the launce, and let the head abyde,
Out of the wound the red blood flowed fresh,
That underneath his feet soone made a purple
plesh.

XXXVII

Horribly then he gan to rage and rayle,
Cursing his Gods, and him selfe dawning deepe:
Als when his brother saw the red blood rayle
Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe,
For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe,
And said; 'Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond,
'That twice hath spedd; yet shall it not thee
keepe
From the third brunt of this my fatall brond:
Lo! where the dreadfull Death beynd thy
backe doth stond.'

XXXVIII

With that he strooke, and thother strooke
withall, [might:
That nothing seemd mote beare so mon-strous
The one upon his covered shield did fall, [byte:
And glauncing downe would not his owner
But thother did upon his troncheon smyte,
Which hewing quite asunder, further way
It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,
The which dividing with importune sway,
It scied in his right side, and there the dint
did stay.

XXXIX

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme
flood.
Red as the Rose, thence gushed grievously;
That when the Paynym spyde the streaming
blood,
Gave him great hart and hope of victory.
On th' other side, in huge perplexity
The Prince now stood, having his weapon broke,
Nought could he hurt, but still at warde did ly:
Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke
Cymochles twice, that twice him forst his foot
revoke.

XL

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse,
Sir Guyon's sword he lightly to him raught,
And said; 'Fayre Sonne, great God thy right
hand blesse,
To use that sword so well as he it ought!'

Glad was the knight, and with fresh courage
fraught,
When as againe he armed felt his hond:
Then like a Lyon, which hath long time saught
His robbed whelpes, and at the last them foud
Amongst the shepheards swaynes, then wexeth
wood and yond:

XLI

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes
On either side, that neither mayle could hold,
Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes:
Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told;
Eft to Cymochles twice so many fold;
Then, backe againe turning his busie hond,
Them both atonce compeld with courage bold
To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond;
And though they both stood stiffe, yet could
not both withstond.

XLII

As salvage Bull, whom two fierce mastives
bayt,
When rancour doth with rage him once engore,
Forgets with wary warde them to awayt.
But with his dreadfull hornes them drives asone,
Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the flore,
Beathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine,
That all the forest quakes to heare him rore:
So rag'd Prince Arthur twist his foemen
twaine, [sustaine.
That neither could his mightie puissance

XLIII

But ever at Pyrochles when he smitt,
(Who Guyons shield cast ever him before,
Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtract was
writt),
His hand relented and the stroke forbore.
And his deare hart the picture gan adore;
Which oft the Paynym saw'd from deadly
stowre: [more;
But him henceforth the same can save no
For now arrived is his fatall howie, [powie.
That n'g'e avoyded be by earthly skill or

XLIV

For when Cymochles saw the fowle reproch,
Which them appeached, pickt with guiltie
shame
And inward grieve, he fiercely gan app'och,
Resolv'd to put away that loathly blame,
Or dye with honour and desert of fame;
And on the hauberg stroke the Prince so sore,
That quite disparted all the linked frame,
And pierced to the skin, but bit no more:
Yet made him twice to reele, that never moov'd
afore.

XLV

Whereat reuierst with wrath and sharp regret,
He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade,
That it empierst the Pagans burganet;
And, cleaving the hard steele, did deepe invade
Into his head, and cruell passage made
Quite through his brayne. He, tomling
downe on ground, [shade
Breathd out his ghost, which, to th' infernall
Fast flying, there eternall torment found
For all the sinnes wherewith his lewd life did
abound.

XLVI

Which when his german saw, the stony feare
Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd,
Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare;
But as a man whom hellish seedes have frayd,
Long trembling still he stode: at last thus sayd;
'Traytour, what hast thou doen? How ever
may
Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd
Against that knight! Harrow and well away!
After so wicked deeде why liv'st thou lenger
day?'

XLVII

With that all desperate, as loathing light,
And with revenge desyring soone to dye,
Assembling all his force and utmost might,
With his owne sward he fierce at him did flye,
And strooke, and foynd, and lasht outrageously,
Withouten reason or regard. Well knew
The Prince, with patience and sufferance sly
So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew:
Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that battell
gan renew.

XLVIII

As when a windy tempest bloweth hie,
That nothing may withstand his stormy
stowre, [flye;
The cloudes, as thinges affrayd, before him
But all so soone as his outrageous powre
Is layd, they fiercely then begin to showre;
And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,
Now all atonce their malice forth do poure:
So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in fight,
And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle
might.

XLIX

At last, when as the Sarazin perceiv'd
How that straunge sword refusd to serve his
need, [deceiv'd,
But when he stroke most strong the jint
He flog it from him; and, devoyd of dreed,
Upon him lightly leaping without heed
Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,
Thinking to overthrowe and downe him
tred:

But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast,
And through his nimble sleight did under him
down cast.

L

Nought booted it the Paynim then to strive;
For as a Bittur in the Eagles clawe,
That may not hope by flight to scape alive,
Still waytes for death with dread and trem-
bling aw;
So he, now subject to the victours law,
Did not once move, nor upward cast his eye.
For vile disdaine and rancour, which did
gnaw

His hart in twaine with sad melancholy;
As one that loathed life, and yet despyd to
dye.

LI

But full of princely bounty and great mind,
The Conquerour nought cared him to slay;
But casting wronges and all revenge behind,
More glory thought to give life then decay.
And sayd; 'Paynim, this is thy dismall day.
Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreaunce,
And my trew liegeman yield thy selfe for ay,
Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,
And all thy wronges will wipe out of my
sovenaunce.'

LII

'Foole!' (sayd the Pagan) 'I thy gift defyce,
But use thy fortune as it doth befall;
And say, that I not overcome doe dye.
But in despight of life for death doe call.'
Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet withall,
That he so wilfully refusd grace;
Yet sith his fate so cruelly did fall,
His shining Helmet he gan soone unlace,
And left his headlesse body bleeding all the
place.

LIII

By this Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt,
Life having maystered her sencelesse foe,
And looking up, whenas his shield he lakt
And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe;
But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe
Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad he grew.
And saide; 'Deare sir, whom wandring to and
fro

I long have lakt, I joy thy face to vew:
Firme is thy faith, whom daunger never from
me drew.

LIV

'But read, what wicked hand hath robbed mee
Of my good sword and shield?' The Palmer,
glad

With so fresh hew uprissing him to see,
Him answered: 'Fayre sonne, be no whit sad

For want of weapons; they shall soone be had,
So gan he to discourse the whole debate,
Which that straunge knight for him sustained
had,

And those two Sarazins confounded late,
Whose carcases on ground were horribly prostrate.

LV

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens
trew,
His hart with great affection was embayd,
And to the Prince, bowing with reverence dew
As to the patrone of his life, thus sayd; [ayd
My Lord, my liege, by whose most gracious
I live this day, and see my foes subdewd,

What may suffice to be for meede repayd
Of so great graces as ye have me shewd,
But to be ever bound —

LVI

To whom the Infant thus; 'Fayre Sir, what
need

Good turnes be counted as a servile bond
To bind their dooers to receive their meed?
Are not all knightes by oath bound to withstand
Oppressours powre by armes and puissant
hond?

Suffise that I have done my dew 'n place.'
So goodly purpose they together fond
Of kindnesse and of courteous aggrace;
The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled apace

CANTO IX.

The house of Temperance, in which
Doth sober Alma dwell,
Besieged of many foes, whom straung-
er knightes to flight compell.

I

Of all Gods workes which doe this worlde
adorne,

There is no one more faire and excellent
Then is mans body, both for powre and forme,
Whiles it is kept in sober government;
But none then it more fowle and indecent,
Distempred through misrule and passions
bace;

It growes a Monster, and incontinent
Doth loose his dignity and native grace:
Behold, who list, both one and other in this
place.

II

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,
The Briton Prince recov'ring his stolne sword,
And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere
Forth passed on their way in fayre accord,
Till him the Prince with gentle court did bode:
'Sir knight, mote I of you this court'sy read,
To weet why on your shield, so goodly scord,
Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head?
Full lively is the semblaunt, though the sub-
stance dead.'

III

'Fayre Sir,' (sayd he) 'if in that picture dead
Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew;
What mote ye weene, if the trew lively-head
Of that most glorious visage ye did we:
But yf the beauty of her mind ye knew,
That is, her bounty, and imperiall powre,

Thousand times fairer than her mortall hew,
O! how great wonder would your thoughts
devoure,
And infinite desire into your spirite poure.

IV

'Shee is the mighty Queene of Faery,
Whose faire retraitt I in my shield doe beare;
Shee is the flowre of grace and chastity
Throughout the world, renowned far and neare,
My liege, my liege, my Sovereaine, my deare,
Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,
And with her light the earth enlumineth
cleare:

Far reach her mercies, and her praises farre,
As well in state of peace, as puissance in
warre.'

V

'Thrise happy man,' (said then the Briton
knight)
'Whom gracious lott and thy great valiaunce
Have made thee soldier of that Princesse
bright,
Which with her bounty and glad countenance
Doth blesse her servants, and them high
advantage.

How may straunge knight hope ever to aspire,
By faithfull service and meete amenaunce,
Unto such blisse? sufficient were that hire
For losse of thousand lives, to die at her
desire.'

VI

Said Guyon, 'Noble Lord, what meed so
Or grace of earthly Prince so soveraine, [great,
But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat
Ye well may hope, and easely attaine?
But were your will her sold to entertaine,
And numbred be mongst knights of Mayden-
hed,
Great guerdon, well I wote, should you remaine,
And in her favor high bee reckoned,
As Arthegall and Sophy now beene honored.'

VII

'Certes,' (then said the Prince) 'I God avow,
That sith I armes and knighthood first did
plight,
My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now,
To serve that Queene with al my powre and
might. [light,
Seven times the Sunne, with his lamp-burning
Hath walkte about the world, and I no lesse,
Sith of that Goddessse I have sought the sight,
Yet no where can her find : such happinesse
Heaven doth to me envy, and fortune favour-
lesse.'

VIII

'Fortune, the foe of famous chevisancee,
'Seldom' (said Guyon) 'yields to vertue
aide, [chancee,
But in her way throwes mischief and mis-
Whereby her course is stopt and passage staid :
But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismayd,
But constant keepe the way in which ye stand ;
Which, were it not that I am els delaid
With hard adventure which I have in hand,
' labour would to guide you through al Faery
land.'

IX

'Gramercy Sir,' said he ; 'but mote I weete
What straunge adventure doe ye now pursue ?
Perhaps my succour or advizement meete
Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew.'
Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew
Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles ;
Which to avenge the Palmer him forth drew
From Faery court. So talked they, the whiles
They wasted had much way, and measured
many miles.

X

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in naste
His weary wagon to the Western vales,
Whenas they spide a goodly castel, plaste
Foreby a river in a pleasaunt dale ;
Which choosing for that evenings hospitale,
They thither marcht : but when they came in
sight,
And from their sweaty Coursers did arole,

They found the gates fast barred long ere night,
And every loup fast lockt, as fearing toes des-
pight.

XI

Which when they saw, they weened fowle
reproch
Was to them doen, their entraunce to forestall,
Till that the Squire gan nigher to approach,
And wind his horne under the castle wall,
That with the noise it shooke as it would fall.
Eftsoones forth looked from the highest spire
The watch, and lowd unto the knights did call,
To weete what they so rudely did requie ?
Who gently answered, 'They entraunce did
desire.

XII

'Fly fly, good knights,' (said he) 'fly fast
away,
If that your lives ye love, as meete ye should ;
Fly fast, and save your selves from neare de-
cay ; [would :
Here may ye not have entraunce, though we
We would, and would againe, if that we
But thousand enemies about us rave. [could ;
And with long siege us in the castle hold.
Seven yeares this wize they us besieged have,
And many good knights slaine that have us
sought to save.'

XIII

Thus as he spoke, loe ! with outragious cry
A thousand velleins rownd about them swarmed
Out of the rockes and caves adjoining nye ;
Vile caitive wretches, ragged, rude, deformd,
All threatening death, all in straunge manner
armd ; [speares,
Some with unweldy clubs, some with long
Some rusty knives, some staves in fier warmd :
Sterne was their looke ; like wild amazed
steares,
Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe upstanding
heares.

XIV

Fiersly at first those knights they did assaile,
And drove them to recoile ; but when againe
They gave fresh charge, their forces gan to
Unhable their encounter to sustaine ; [fayle,
For with such puissaunce and impetuous maine
Those Champions broke on them, that forst
them fly, [swaine
Like scattered Sheepe, whenas the Shepherds
A Lyon and a Tigre doth espye, [forest nye,
With greedy pace forth rushing from the

XV

A while they fled, but soone retourned againe
With greater fury then before was fownd ;

And evermore their cruell Capitaine [rownd,
Sought with his raskall routs t'enclose them
And, overonne, to tread them to the ground:
But soone the knights with their bright burn-
ing blades [fownd,
Broke their rude troupes, and orders did con-
fewing and slashing at their idle shades;
For though they bodies seem, yet substance
from them fades.

XVI

As when a swarme of Gnats at eventide
Out of the fennes of Allan doe arise, [wide,
Their murmuring small trompetts sownden
Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,
That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies;
Ne man nor beast may rest, or take repast
For their sharpe wounds and noyous injuries,
Till the fierce Northerne wind with blustering
blast [east,
Doth blow them quite away, and in the Ocean

XVII

Thus when they had that troublous rout
dispersd,
Unto the castle gate they come againe,
And entraunce crav'd which was denied erst.
Now when report of that their perious paine,
And combrous conflict which they did sustaine.
Came to the Ladies eare which there did dwell,
Shee forth issewed with a goodly traine
Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well,
And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

XVIII

Alma she called was; a virgin bright,
That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage;
Yet was shee woo'd of many a gentle knight,
And many a Lord of noble parentage,
That sought with her to lincke in marriage:
For shee was faire as faire mote ever bee,
And in the flowre now of her freshest age,
Yet full of grace and goodly modestie, [see.
That even heaven rejoyced her sweete face to

XIX

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,
That from her shoulder to her heele downe
raught;
The traine whereof loose far behind her strayd,
Braunched with gold and perle most richly
wrought, [taught
And borne of two faire Damsels which were
That service well. Her yellow golden heare
Was trimly wovon and in tresses wrought,
Ne other tise she on her head did weare,
But crowned with a garland of sweete Rosiere.

XX

Goodly shee entertaind those noble knights,
And brought them up into her castle hall;
Where gentle court and gracious delight
Shee to them made, with mildnesse virginall,
Shewing her selfe both wise and liberall.
Then, when they rested had a season dew,
They her besought of favour speciall
Of that faire Castle to affoord them vew:
Shee graunted; and, then leading forth, the
same did shew.

XXI

First she them led up to the Castle wall,
That was so high as foe might not it clime,
And all so faire and fensible withall:
Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,
But of thing like to that Egyptian slime,
Whereof king Nine whilome built Babel towre.
But O great pitty! that no lenger time
So goodly workmanship should not endure:
Soone it must turne to earth; no earthly thing
is sure.

XXII

The frame thereof seemd partly circulare,
And part triangulare; O worke divine!
Those two the first and last proportions are;
The one imperfect, mortall, feminine,
Th' other immortall, perfect, masculine;
And twint them both a quadrate was the base
Proportiond equally by seven and nine;
Nine was the circle sett in heavens place:
All which compacted made a goodly Diapase.

XXIII

Therein two gates were placed seemly well.
The one before, by which all in did pas,
Did th' other far in workmanship excell;
For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,
But of more worthy substance fram'd it was:
Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,
That when it locked none might thorough pas,
And when it opened, no man might it close,
Still open to their friends, and closed to their
foes.

XXIV

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely wrought,
Stone more of valew, and more smooth and
fine,
Then Jett or Marble far from Ireland brought,
Over the which was cast a wandring vine,
Enchaced with a wanton yvie twine;
And over it a fayre Portcullis hong,
Which to the gate directly did incline
With comely compasse and compacture strong,
Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding
long.

XXV

Within the Barbican a Porter sate,
Day and night duely keeping watch and ward;
Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the gate,
But in good order, and with dew regard;
Utterers of secrets he from thence debar'd,
Bablers of folly, and blazers of crime:
His larumbell might lowd and wyde be hard
When cause requyrd, but never out of time;
Early and late it rong, at evening and at prime.

XXVI

And rownd about the porch on every syde
Twice sixteene warders satt, all armed bright
In glistring steele, and strongly fortifyde:
Tall yeomen seemed they and of great might,
And were enraunged ready still for fight.
By them as Alma passed with her guesates,
They did obeysaunce, as beseemed right,
And then againe retourned to their restes:
The Porter eke to her did lout with humble
gestes.

XXVII

Thence she them brought into a stately Hall,
Wherein were many tables fayre dispre'd,
And ready dight with drapets festiual,
Against the viaundes should be ministred.
At th' upper end there sate, yelad in red
Downe to the ground, a comely personage,
That in his hand a white rod menaged:
He Stewart was, hight Diet; rype of age,
And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

XXVIII

And through the Hall there walked to and
A jolly yeoman, Marshall of the same, [fro
Whose name was Appetite: he did bestow
Both guesates and meate, when ever in they
cume,
And knew them how to order without blame,
As him the Stewart badd. They both attone
Did dewty to their Lady, as became;
Who, passing by, forth ledd her guesates anone
Into the kitchen rowme, ne spard for nicenesse
none.

XXIX

It was a vault ybuilt for great dispenche,
With many raunges reard along the wall,
And one great chimney, whose long tonnell
thence
The smoke forth threw. And in the midst of all
There placed was a caudron wide and tall
Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott,
More whott then Aetn', or flaming Mongiball
For day and night it brent, ne ceased not,
So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

XXX

But to delay the heat, least by mischaunce
It might breake out and set the whole on fyre,
There added was by goodly ordinaunce [styre
An huge great payre of bellows, which did
Continually, and cooling breath inpyre.
About the Caudron many Cookes accoyld
With hookes and ladles, as need did requyre:
The whyles the viaundes in the vessell boyld
They did about their businesse sweat, and
sorely toyld.

XXXI

The maister Cooke was cald Concoction;
A carefull man, and full of comely guyse.
The kitchen clerke, that hight Digestion,
Did order all th' Achates in seemely wise,
And set them forth, as well he could devise.
The rest had severall offices assynd;
Some to remove the scum as it did rise;
Others to beare the same away did mynd;
And others it to use according to his kynd.

XXXII

But all the liquour, which was fowle and
waste,
Not good nor serviceable elles for ought,
They in another great rownd vessell plaste.
Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought:
And all the rest, that noyous was and nought,
By secret wayes, that none might it espy,
Was close convoid, and to the backgate brought,
That cleped was Port Esquiline, whereby
It was avoided quite, and throwne out privily.

XXXIII

Which goodly order and great workmans skill
Whenas those knightes beheld, with rare delight
And gazing wonder they their mindes did fill;
For never had they seene so straunge a sight.
Thence backe againe faire Alma led them right,
And sogne into a goodly Parlour brought,
That was with royall arras richly dight,
In which was nothing pourtrahed nor wrought;
Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but easie to be
thought

XXXIV

And in the midst thereof upon the floure
A lovely bevy of faire Ladies sate,
Courtred of many a jolly Paramoure,
The which them did in modest wise amate,
And each one sought his Lady to aggrate:
And eke amongst them litle Cupid playd
His wanton sportes, being retourned late
From his fierce warres, and having from him
layd
His cruel bow, wherewith he thousands hath
dismayd.

XXXV

Diverse delights they fownd them selves to
 please; [Joy;
 Some song in sweet consort; some laught for
 Some plaid with straws; some yelly satt at ease;
 But other some could not abide to toy;
 All pleasance was to them grieve and annoy:
 This frownd, that faund, the third for shame
 did blush,
 Another seemed envious or coy,
 Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush;
 But at these straungers presence every one
 did hush.

XXXVI

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place,
 They all attonce out of their seates arose,
 And to her homage made with humble grace:
 Whom when the knights beheld, they gan dis-
 pose
 Themselves to court, and each a damzell chose.
 The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light,
 That was right faire and fresh as morning
 rose,
 But somewhat sad and solemne eke in sight,
 As if some pensive thought constrained her
 gentle spright.

XXXVII

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold
 Was fretted all about, she was arayd;
 And in her hand a Poplar braunch did hold:
 To whom the Prince in courteous maner sayd;
 'Gentle Madame, why beene ye thus dismayd,
 And your faire beauteie doe with sadnes spill?
 Lives any that you hath thus ill apayd?
 Or doen you love? or doen you lack your will?
 What ever bee the cause, it sure beseemes you
 ill.'

XXXVIII

'Fayre Sir,' said she, halfe in disdaine full wise,
 'How is it that this mood in me ye blame,
 And in your selfe doe not the same advise?
 Him ill beseemes anothers fault to name,
 That may unwares bee blotted with the same:
 Pensive I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,
 Through great desire of glory and of fame;
 Ne ought, I weene, are ye therein behynd,
 That have three years sought one, yet no
 where can her find.'

XXXIX

The Prince was inly moved at her speach,
 Well weeting trew what she had rashly told;
 Yet with faire semblaunt sought to hyde the
 breach,
 Which change of colour did perforce unfold,
 Now seeming flaming whott, now stony cold:
 Tho, turning soft aside, he did inquire

What wight she was that Poplar braunch did
 hold?

It answered was, her name was Prays-desire,
 That by well doing sought to honour to aspyre.

XL

The whyles the Faery knight did entertayne
 Another Damsell of that gentle crew,
 That was right fayre and modest of demayne,
 But that too oft she chaung'd her native hew.
 Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment
 blew,

Close rownd about her tuckt with many a plight:
 Upon her fist the bird, which shoneth vew,
 And keepes in covert close from living wight,
 Did sitt, as yet ashamd how rude Pan did her
 dight.

XLI

So long as Guyon with her communed,
 Unto the grownd she cast her modest eye,
 And ever and anone with rosy red
 The bashfull blood her snowy cheekes did dye,
 That her became, as polisht yvory
 Which cunning Craftesman hand hath overlaid
 With fayre vermillion or pure Castory.
 Great wonder had the knight to see the mayd
 So straungely passioned, and to her gently
 said:

XLII

'Fayre Damzell, seemeth by your troubled
 cheare,

That either me too bold ye weene, this wise
 You to molest, or other ill to feare
 That in the secret of your hart close lyes,
 From whence it doth, as cloud from sea, aryse.
 If it be I, of pardon I you pray;
 But if ought else that I mote not deryse,
 I will, if please you it discure, assay
 To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.'

XLIII

She answered nought, but more abasht for shame
 Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely face
 The flashing blood with blushing did inflame,
 And the strong passion mard her modest grace,
 That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace;
 Till Alma him bespake: 'Why wonder yee,
 Faire Sir, at that which ye so much embrace?
 She is the fontaine of your modestie:
 You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes it selfe
 is shee.'

XLIV

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,
 And turnd his face away, but she the same
 Dissembled faire, and faynd to oversee.
 Thus they awhile with court and goodly game

Themselves did solace each one with his Dame,
Till that great Lady thence away them sought
To vew her Castles other wondrous frame:
Up to a stately Turret she them brought,
Ascending by ten steps of Alabaster wrought.

XLV

That Turrets frame most admirable was,
Like highest heaven compassed around,
And lifted high above this earthly masse,
Which it surwe'd as hills doen lower ground;
But not on ground mote like to this be found:
Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome
built
In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;
Nor that proud towre of Troy, though rich
guilt, [Greekes was spilt,
From which young Hectors blood by cruell

XLVI

The rooffe hereof was arch'd over head,
And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily:
Two goodly Beacons, set in watches stead,
Therein gave light, and flam'd continually;
For they of living fire most subtilly
Were made, and set in silver sockets bright,
Cover'd with lids deviz'd of substance sly,
That readily they shut and open might.
O! who can tell the prayes of that makers
might?

XLVII

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell, [powre,
This parts great workmanship and wondrous
That all this other worldes worke doth excell,
And likest is unto that heavenly towre
That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre.
Therein were divers rowmes, and divers stages;
But three the chiefest and of greatest powre,
In which there dwelt three honorable sages.
The wisest men, I weene, that lived in their
ages.

XLVIII

Not he, whom Greece, the Nourse of all good
arts,
By Phœbus doome the wisest thought alive,
Might be compar'd to these by many parts:
Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did survive
Three ages, such as mortall men contrive,
By whose advise old Priams cittie fell,
With these in praise of pollicies mote strive.
These three in these three rowmes did sondry
dwell,
And counselld faire Alma how to governe well.

XLIX

The first of them coud things to come foresee;
The next could of thinges present best advise;

The third things past could keep in memoree:
So that no time nor reason could arise,
But that the same could one of these comprize.
For thy the first did in the forepart sit,
That nought mote hinder his quickie prejudice:
He had a sharpe foresight and working wit
That never idle was, ne once would rest a whit.

L

His chamber was dispaigned all within
With sondry colours, in the which were writ
Infinite shapes of thinges dispersed thin,
Some such as in the world were never yit,
Ne can devized be of mortall wit:
Some daily scene and knownen by their names,
Such as in idle fantasies do flit;
Infermall Hags, Centaurs, fowles, Hippodames,
Apes, Lyons, Eagles, Owles, fooles, lovers,
children, Dames.

LI

And all the chamber filled was with flyes
Which buzzed all about, and made such sound
That they encombr'd all mens eares and eyes:
Like many swarnes of Bees assembled round,
After their hives with honny do abound.
All those were idle thoughtes and fantasies,
Devices, dreames, opinions unsound,
Shewes, visions, sooth-sayes, and prophesies;
And all that fained is, as leasings, tales, and lies.

LII

Emongst them all sate he which wonned there,
That hight Phantastes by his nature trew,
A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote appere,
Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew,
That him full of melancholy did shew;
Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring eyes,
That mad or foolish seem'd: one by his vew
Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed skyes,
When oblique Saturne sate in th' house of
agonyes.

LIII

Whom Alma having shewed to her guesates,
Thence brought them to the second rowme,
whose wals
Were painted faire with memorable gestes
Of famous Wisards, and with picturals
Of Magistrates, of courts, of tribunals,
Of commen-wealthes, of states, of pollicy,
Of lawes, of judgements, and of decretals,
All artes, all science, all Philosophy, [wittily.
And all that in the world was ay thought

LIV

Of those that rowme was full; and them among
There sate a man of ripe and perfect age,
Who did them meditate all his life long,
That through continual practise and usage

He now was growne right wise and wondrous
 sage: [see
 Great pleasure had those straunger knights to
 His goodly reason and grave personage,
 That his disciples both desyrd to bee;
 But Alma thence them led to th' hindmost
 rowme of three.

LV

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,
 And therefore was removed far behind,
 Yet were the wals, that did the same uphold,
 Right firme and strong, though somewhat they
 declind;
 And therein sat an old old man, halfe blind,
 And all decrepit in his feeble corse,
 Yet lively vigour rested in his mynd
 And recompent them with a better scorse:
 Weake body wel is chang'd for minds redoub-
 led forse.

LVI

This man of infinite remembrance was,
 And things foregone through many ages held,
 Which he recorded still as they did pas,
 Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,
 As all things els the which this world doth
 weld;
 But laid them up in his immortall scrine,
 Where they for ever incorrupted dweld:
 The warres he well remembered of king Nine,
 Of old Assaracus, and Inachus divine.

LVII

The yeares of Nestor nothing were to his,
 Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liv'd;
 For he remembered both their infancie;
 Ne wonder then, if that he were depriv'd
 Of native strength now that he them surviv'd.
 His chamber all was hang'd about with rolls
 And old records from auncient times deriv'd,

Some made in books, some in long parchment
 scrolls,
 That were all worm-eaten and full of canker
 holes.

LVIII

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett,
 Tossing and turning them withouten end;
 But for he was unahle them to fett,
 A little boy did on him still attend
 To reach, when ever he for ought did send;
 And oft when thinges were lost, or did amis,
 That boy them sought and unto him did lend:
 Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is;
 And that old man Eumnestes, by their pro-
 pertis.

LIX

The knightes there entring did him reverence
 dew,
 And wondred at his endlesse exercise:
 Then as they gan his Library to vew,
 And antique Regesters for to avise,
 There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize
 An auncent booke, hight *Briton monuments*,
 That of this lands first conquest did devize,
 And old division into Regiments,
 Till it reduced was to one mans governements.

LX

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke,
 That hight *Antiquitee of Faery lond*:
 In which whenas he greedily did looke,
 Th' ofspring of Elves and Faeryes there he fond,
 As it delivered was from hond to hond:
 Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire
 Their countreys auncestry to understand,
 Crav'd leave of Alma and that aged sire
 To read those bookes; who gladly granted
 their desire.

CANTO X.

A chronicle of Briton kings,
 From Brute to Uthers rayne;
 And rolls of Elfin Emperours,
 Till time of Gloriane.

I

Who now shall give unto me words and sound
 Equall unto this haughty enterprise? [ground
 Or who shall lend me wings, with which from
 My lowly verse may loftily arise,
 And lift it selfe unto the highest skyes?
 More ample spirit than hitherto was wount
 Here needes me, whiles the famous auncestries

Of my most dreaded Sovereigne I recount,
 By which all earthly Princes she doth far sur-
 mount.

II

Ne under Sunne that shines so wide and faire,
 Whence all that lives does borrow life and light,
 Lives ought that to her linage may compare;
 Which though from earth it be derived right

Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to heuens hight,
And all the world with wonder overspred;
A labor huge, exceeding far my might.
How shall fraile pen, with feare disparaged,
Conceive such sovaine glory and great
bountyhed?

III

Argument worthy of Mæonian quill;
Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote,
Whereon the ruines of great Ossa hill,
And triumphes of Phlegrean Jove, he wrote,
That all the Gods admird his lofty note.
But if some relish of that heavenly lay
His learned daughters would to me report
To decke my song withall, I would assay,
Thy name, O sovaine Queene! to blazon far
away.

IV

Thy name, O sovaine Queene! thy realme,
and race,
From this renowned Prince derived arre,
Who mightily upheld that royall mace [farre
Which now thou bearest, to thee descended
From mighty kings and conquerours in warre,
Thy fathers and great Grandfathers of old,
Whose noble deeds above the Northern starre
Immortall fame for ever hath enrold; [told.
As in that old mans booke they were in order

V

The land which warlike Britons now possesse,
And therein have their mighty empire raysd,
In antique times was salvage wilderness,
Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprov'd, unpraysd;
Ne was it Island then, ne was it payd
Amid the ocean waves, ne was it sought
Of merchants farre for profits therein prayd;
But was all desolate, and of some thought
By sea to have bene from the Celticke mayn-
land brought.

VI

Ne did it then deserve a name to have,
Till that the venturous Mariner that way
Learning his ship from those white rocks to
save,
Which all along the Southerne sea-coast lay
Threatning unheedy wrecke and rash decay,
For safety that same his sea-marke made,
And namd it ALBION: But later day,
Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,
Gan more the same frequent, and further to
invade.

VII

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt
Of hideous Giants, and halfe beastly men,
That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt;
But wild like beastes lurking in loathsome den,

And flying fast as Roebucke through the fen,
All naked without shame or care of cold,
By hunting and by spoiling liveden;
Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold,
That sonnes of men amazd their sternnesse to
behold.

VIII

But whence they sprong, or how they were
begott,
Unceath is to assure; unceath to wene
That monstrous error, which doth some assott,
That Dioclesians fifty daughters shene
Into this land by chaunce have driven bene;
Where, companing with feends and filthy
Sprights
Through vaine illusion of their lust unclene,
They brought forth Geaunts, and such dread-
ful wights
As far exceeded men in their immeasurd mights.

IX

They held this land, and with their filthinesse
Polluted this same gentle soyle long time;
That their owne mother loadid their beastli-
nesse,
And gan abhorre her broods unkindly crime,
All were they borne of her owne native slime:
Until that Brutus, aciently deriv'd
From roiall stocke of old Assaracs line,
Driven by fatall error here arriv'd,
And them of their unjust possession depriv'd.

X

But ere he had established his throne,
And spred his empire to the utmost shore,
He fought great batteils with his salvage fone;
In which he them defeated evermore,
And many Giaunts left on groning flore:
That well can witnes yet unto this day
The westerne Hough, besprinkled with the gore
Of mighty Goemot, whome in stout fray
Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

XI

And eke that ample Pitt, yet far renownd
For the large leape which Debon did compell
Coultn to make, being eight lugs of grownd,
Into the which retournig backe he fell:
But those three monstrous stones doe most
excell,
Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion,
Whose father Hercules in Fraunce did quell,
Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention,
At bold Canutus; but of him was slaine anon.

XII

In meed of these great conquests by them
Corineus had that Province utmost west [gott,

To him assigned for his worthy lott,
Which of his name and memorabile gest
He called Cornwaile, yet so called best ;
And Debons shayre was that is Devonshyre :
But Canute had his portion from the rest,
The which he cald Canutium.*for his hyre ;
Now Cantium, which Kent we comenly inqyre

XIII

Thus Brute this Realme unto his rule sub-
dewd,
And raigned long in great felicity,
Lov'd of his freends, and of his foes eschewd :
He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,
Borne of fayre Inogene of Italy ;
Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,
And Locrine left chiefe Lord of Britany.
At last ripe age bad him surrender late
His life, and long good fortune, unto finall
fate.

XIV

Locrine was left the sovaine Lord of all ;
But Albanact had all the Northerne part.
Which of himselfe Albania he did call ;
And Camber did possess the Westerne quart.
Which Severne now from Logris doth depart :
And each his portion peaceably enjoyd,
Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge in
hart,
That once their quiet government annoyd :
But each his paynes to others profit still em-
ployd.

XV

Untill a nation straunge, with visage swart,
And corage fierce that all men did afraie,
Which through the world then swarmd in
every part,
And overflowd all countries far away,
Like Noyes great flood, with their importune
This land invaded with like violence, {sway,
And did themselves through all the North dis-
play :
Untill that Locrine for his Realmes defence,
Did head against them make and strong mun-
ificence,

XVI

He them encountred, a confused rout,
Foreby the River that whylome was hight
The ancient Abus, where with courage stout
He them defeated in victorious fight,
And chaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,
That forst their chieftain, for his safeties sake,
(Their Chieftain Humber named was aright,)
Unto the mighty streame him to betake,
Where he an end of battell and of life did
make.

XVII

The king retourned proud of victory,
And insolent wox through unwonted ease,
That shortly he forgot the jeopardy,
Which in his land he lately did appease,
And fell to vaine voluptuous disease :
He lov'd faire Lache Estrild, leudly lov'd,
Whose wanton pleasures him too much did
please,
That quite his hart from Guendolene remov'd,
From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies
faithfull prov'd.

XVIII

The noble daughter of Corineus
Would not endure to bee so vile disdaind,
But, gathering force and corage valorous,
Encountred him in battell well ordaind,
In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind :
But she so fast pur-ewd, that him she tooke
And threw in bands, where he till death re-
maind ;
Als his faire Leman flying through a brooke
She overhent, nought moved with her piteous
looke,

XIX

But both her selfe, and eke her daughter deare,
Begotten by her kingly Paramoure,
The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare,
She there attached, far from all succoure ;
The one she slew upon the present floure,
But the sad virgin, innocent of all,
Adowne the rolling river she did poure,
Which of her name now Severne men do call :
Such was the end that to disloyall love did fall.

XX

Then for her sonne, which she to Loerin bore,
Madan was young, unmeet the rule to sway,
In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store,
Till ryper years he raught and stronger stay ;
During which time her powre she did display
Through all this Realme, the glory of her sex,
And first taught men a woman to obey :
But, when her sonne to mans estate did wex,
She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger
vex.

XXI

Tho Madan raignd, unworthie of his race,
For with all shame that sacred throne he filld,
Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place ;
In which being consorted with Manild,
For thirst of single kingdom him he killd.
But Ebranc salved both their infamies
With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild
In Henault, where yet of his victories
Brave monuments remaine, which yet that land
envies.

XXII

An happy man in his first dayes he was,
And happy father of faire progeny :
For all so many weekes as the yere has,
So many children he did multiply :
Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply
Their mindes to prayse and cheualrous desyre :
Those germans did subdew all Germany,
Of whom it hight ; but in the end their Syre
With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to
retyre.

XXIII

Which blott his sonne succeeding in his seat,
The second Brute, the second both in name
And eke in semblance of his puissaunce great,
Right well recur'd, and did away that blame
With recompence of everlasting fame :
He with his victour sword first opened
The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame,
And taught her first how to be conquered ;
Since which, with sondrie spoiles she hath been
ransacked.

XXIV

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania,
And let the marsh of Esthamburges tell,
What colour were their weters that same day,
And all the moore twixt Elversham and Dell,
With blood of Henalois which therein fell.
How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see
The greene shield dyde in dolorous vernell ?
That not *Scuith quirdh* it mote seeme to bee,
But rather *y scuith gogh*, signe of sad crueltee.

XXV

His sonne, king Leill, by fathers labour long,
Enjoyd an heritage of lasting peace,
And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong.
Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease,
But taught the land from wearie wars to cease :
Whose footsteps Blindnd following, in artes
Exceeld at Athenes all the learned preace,
From whence he brought them to these salvage
parts,
And with sweet science mollifide their stub-
borne harts.

XXVI

Ensampler of his wondrous faculty,
Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon,
Which aceth with secret fire eternally,
And in their entrailles, full of quick Brimston,
Nourish the flames which they are warmed
upon,
That to their people wealth they forth do well,
And health to every forreyne nation :
Yet he at last, contending to excell
The reach of men, through flight into fond
mischief fell.

XXVII

Next him king Leyr in happie peace long
raynd,
But had no issue male him to succeed,
But three faire daughters, which were well
uptraund
In all that seemed fitt for kingly seed :
Mongst whom his realme he equally decreed
To have divided. Tho, when feeble age
Nigh to his utmost date he saw proceed,
He cald his daughters, and with speeches sage
Inquyrd, which of them most did love her
parentage ?

XXVIII

The eldest, Honorill, gan to protest [lov'd :
That she much more than her owne life him
And Regan greater love to him protest
Then all the world, when ever it were proov'd ;
But Cordeill said she lov'd him as behoov'd :
Whose simple answer, wanting colours fayre
To paint it forth, him to displeasaunce moov'd,
That in his crown he counted her no hayre,
But twixt the other twain his kingdom whole
did shayre.

XXIX

So wedded th' one to Maglan king of Scottes,
And thother to the king of Cambria, [lottes ;
And twixt them shayrd his realme by equall
But without dowre the wise Cordelia
Was sent to Aggarnip of Celtica.
Their aged Syre, thus eased of his crowne,
A private life ledd in Albania
With Honorill, long had in great renowne,
That nought him griev'd to beene from rule
deposed downe.

XXX

But true it is that, when the oyle is spent,
The light goes out, and weeke is throwne away :
So, when he had resign'd his regiment,
His daughter gan despise his drouping day,
And wearie wax of his continuall stay.
Tho to his daughter Regan he repayrd.
Who him at first well used every way ;
But when of his departure she despayrd,
Her bounties he abated, and his cheure empayrd.

XXXI

The wretched man gan then avise too late,
That love is not where most it is profest ;
Too truly tryde in his extremest state.
At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the rest,
He to Cordelia him selfe addressd,
Who with entyre affection him receav'd,
As for her Syre and king her seemed best ;
And after all an army strong she leav'd,
To war on those which him had of his realme
bereav'd.

XXXII.

So to his crowne she him restord againe;
In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,
And after wild it should to her remaine,
Who peaceably the same long time did weld,
And all mens harts in dew obedience held;
Till that her sisters children, woxen strong,
Through proud ambition against her rebeld,
And overcommen kept in prison long, [hong,
Till weary of that wretched life her selfe she

XXXIII

Then gan the bloody brethren both to raine;
But fierce Cundah gan shortly to envy
His brother Morgan, prickt with proud disdain
To have a pere in part of soverailty;
And kindling coles of euell enmity,
Raisd warre, and him in batteill overthrew.
Whence as he to those woody hilles did fly,
Which hight of him Glamorgan, there him
slew:
Then did he raigne alone, when he none equall
knew.

XXXIV

His sonne Rivall' his dead rowme did supply;
In whose sad time blood did from heaven rayne.
Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cæcily,
In constant peace their kingdomes did contayne.
After whom Lago, and Kinnmarke did rayne,
And Gorbogud, till far in years he grew:
Then his ambitious sonnes unto them twayne
Arraught the rule, and from their father drew;
Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison
threw.

XXXV

But O! the greedy thirst of royall crowne,
That knowes no kinred, nor regardes no right,
Stird Porrex up to put his brother downe;
Who, unto him assembling forreigne might,
Made warre on him, and sell him selfe in fight:
Whose death t'aveuge, his mother mercilesse,
Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,
Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,
And with most cruell hand him murdred
pittilesse.

XXXVI

Here ended Brutus sacred progeny, [borne
Which had seven hundred yeares this scepter
With high renowne and great felicity: [borne
The noble branch from th' antique stocke was
Through discord, and the roiall throne forlorne.
Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent,
Whilest each of Brutus boasted to be borne,
That in the end was left no monument
Of Brutus, nor of Britons glorie auncient.

XXXVII

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might,
And wondrous wit to menage high affayres,
Who, stird with pittie of the stressed plight
Of this sad realme, cut into sondry shayres
By such as claymd themselves Brutes right-
full hayres,
Gathered the Princes of the people loose
To taken counsell of their common cares;
Who, with his wisdom won, him streight did
choose [loose.
Their king, and swore him fealty to win or

XXXVIII

Then made he head against his enimies,
And Ymner slew of Logris miscreate;
Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allies,
This of Albany newly nominate,
And that of Cambry king confirmed late,
He overthrew through his owne valiaunce;
Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state,
And shortly brought to civile governaunce,
Now one, which earst were many made through
variaunce.

XXXIX

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men
Were unto him reveald in vision; [say
By which he freed the Travelers high-way,
The Churches part, and Ploughmans portion,
Restraining stealth and strong extortion,
The gratiuous Numa of great Britany;
For till his dayes, the chiefe dominion
By strength was wielded without pollicy:
Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for
dignity.

XL

Donwallo dyde, (for what may live for ay?)
And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowess
both,
That sacked Rome too deagely did assay,
The recompence of their perjured oth;
And ransackt Greece wel tryde, when they
were wroth:
Besides subjected France and Germany,
Which yet their praises speake, all be they
And inly tremble at the memory [loth,
Of Brennus and Belinus, kings of Britany.

XLI

Next them did Gurgiunt, great Belinus sonne,
In rule succede, and eke in fathers praise;
He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarkewonne,
And of them both did soy and tribute raise,
The which was dew in his dead fathers daies.
He also gave to fugitives of Spayne,
Whom he at sea found wandring from their
waies,

A seate in Ireland safely to remayne,
Which they should hold of him, as subject to
Britayne.

XLII

After him reigned Guitheline his hayre,
The justest man and trewest in his daies,
Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,
A woman worthy of immortall praise, [layes,
Which for this Realme found many goodly
And wholesome Statutes to her husband
brought.

Her many deemd to have beene of the Fayes,
As was Agerie that Numa taught :
Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd
and thought.

XLIII

Her sonne Sisiflus after her did rayne;
And then Kimarus : and then Danius :
Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustayne;
Who, had he not with wrath outrageous
And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous
And mightie deedes, should matched have
the best :

As well in that same field victorious
Against the forreine Morands he exprest ;
Yet lyes his memorie, though carcass sleepe in
rest.

XLIV

Five sonnes he left, begotten of one wife,
All which successively by turnes did rayne :
First Gorboman, a man of vertuous life,
Next Archigald, who for his proud disdayne
Deposed was from princedomes soverayne,
And piteous Elidure put in his sted,
Who shortly it to him restord agayne,
Till by his death he it recovered :
But Peridure and Vigent him disthroned.

XLV

In wretched prison long he did remaine,
Till they outtraigned had their utmost date,
And then therein rescized was againe,
And ruled long with honorable state.
Till he surrendered Realme and life to fate.
Then all the sonnes of these five brethren raynd
By dew successe, and all their Nephewes late;
Even thrise eleven descents the crowne reataynd,
Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

XLVI

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud,
Left of his life most famous memory,
And endlesse monuments of his great good :
The ruin'd wals he did reedifye
Of Troynovant, gair'd force of enemy,
And built that gate which of his name is hight,
By which he lyes entombed solemnly.

He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,
Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his might.

XLVII

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane, their
Was by the people chosen in their sted, [Eme,
Who on him tooke the roiall Diademe,
And goodly well long time it governed ;
Till the prowde Romanes him disquieted,
And warlike Caesar, tempted with the name
Of this sweet Island never conquered,
And envying the Britons blazed fame,
(O hideous hunger of dominion!) hither came.

XLVIII

Yet twice they were repulsed backe againe,
And twice reulorst backe to their ships to fly ;
The whiles with blood they all the shore did
staine,
And the gray Ocean into purple dy :
Ne had they footing found at last, perdie,
Had not Androgeus, false to native soyle,
And envious of Uncles soveraintie,
Betrayd his country unto forreine spoyle.
Nought els but treason from the first this land
did foyle.

XLIX

So by him Caesar got the victory,
Through great bloodshed and many a sad assay,
In which himselfe was charged heavily
Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,
But lost his sword, yet to be seene this day.
Thenceforth this land was tributarie made
T'ambitious Rome, and did their rule obey,
Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd :
Yet oft the Briton kings against them strongly
swayd.

I.

Next him Tenantius raignd; then Kimbeline,
What time th' eternall Lord in fleshy slime
Enwombed was, from wretched Adams line
To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime.
O joyous memorie of happy time,
That heavenly grace so plenteously displayd!
(O too high ditty for my simple rime!)
Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd,
For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

LI

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour,
An army brought, and with him batteile fought,
In which the king was by a Treachetour
Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought :
Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought ;
For Arvirage his brothers place supplide
Both in his armes and crowne, and by that
draught

Did drive the Romanes to the weaker syde,
That they to peace agreed. So all was paci-
fyde.

LII

Was never king more highly magnifide,
Nor dredd of Romanes, then was Arvirage;
For which the Emperour to him allide
His daughter Genuiss' in marriage:
Yet shortly he renounst the vassallage
Of Rome againe, who hither hastily sent
Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage
Forwasted all, till Genuissa gent
Persuaded him to ceasse, and her lord to relent.

LIII

He dide, and him succeeded Marius,
Who joyd his dayes in great tranquillity.
Then Coyll; and after him good Lucius,
That first received Christianity,
The sacred pledge of Christes Evangely.
Yet true it is, that long before that day
Hither came Joseph of Arimathy, [say,
Who brought with him the holy grayle, they
And preacht the truth; but since it greatly
did decay.

LIV

This good king shortly without issew dide,
Whereof great trouble in the kingdome grew,
That did her selfe in sondry parts divide,
And with her powre her owne selfe overthrew,
Whiles Romanes daily did the weake subdew:
Which seeing, stout Bunduca up arose,
And taking armes the Britons to her drew;
With whom she marched streight against her
foes, [close.
And them unwares besides the Severne did en-

LV

There she with them a cruell batteill tryde,
Not with so good success as shee deserv'd;
By reason that the Captaines on her syde,
Corrupted by Paulinus, from her swerv'd.
Yet, such as were through former flight pre-
serv'd
Gathering againe, her Host she did renew,
And with fresh corage on the victor serv'd.
But being all defeated, save a few, [slew.
Rather then fly, or be captiv'd, her selfe she

LVI

O famous monument of womens prayse!
Matchable either to Semiramis,
Whom antique history so high doth rayse,
Or to Hypsipil', or to Thomiris.
Her Host two hundred thousand numbred is;
Who, whiles good fortune favoured her might,
Triumphed oft against her enemies;

And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight,
Shee triumphed on death, in enemies despight.

LVII

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered,
Fought with Severus, and him overthrew,
Yet in the chace was slaine of them that fled,
So made them victors whome he did subdew.
Then gan Carausius tyrannize anew,
And gainst the Romanes bent their proper
powre;
But him Allectus treacherously slew,
And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure:
Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short happy
howre:

LVIII

For Asclepiodate him overcame,
And left inglorious on the vanquish playne,
Without or robe or rag to hide his shame:
Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne,
But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine:
Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme,
Was of the Britons first crownd Sovereaine.
Then gan this Realme renew her passed prime:
He of his name Coylchester built of stone and
lime.

LIX

Which when the Romanes heard, they hither
sent
Constantius, a man of mickle might,
With whome king Coyll made an agreement,
And to him gave for wife his daughter bright,
Fayre Helena, the fairest living wight;
Who in all godly thewes and goodly praise
Did far excell, but was most famous hight
For skil in Musicke of all in her daies,
As well in curious instruments as cunning
laies.

LX

Of whom he did great Constantine begett,
Who afterward was Emperour of Rome.
To which whiles absent he his mind did sett,
Octavius here leapt into his roome,
And it usurped by unrighteous doome:
But he his title justifie by might,
Slaying Traherne, and having overcome
The Romane legion in dreadfull fight.
So settled he his kingdome, and confirmd
his right:

LXI

But wanting ysew male, his daughter deare
He gave in wedlocke to Maximian,
And him with her made of his kingdome heyre,
Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan,
Till murdered by the freends of Gratian. [land,
Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade this
During the raigne of Maximinian;

Who dying left none heire them to withstand,
But that they overran all parts with easy
hand.

LXII

The weary Britons, whose war-hable youth
Was by Maximian lately ledd away,
With wretched miseries and woefull ruth,
Were to those Pagans made an open pray,
And daily spectacle of sad decay :
Whome Romane warres, which now fowr
hundred yeares
And more had wasted, could no whit dismay :
Til, by consent of Commons and of Peares,
They crownd the second Constantine with
joyous teares.

LXIII

Who having oft in batteill vanquished
Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming Easter-
lings,
Long time in peace his realme established,
Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings,
Of neighbour Scots, and forrein Scatterlings
With which the world did in those dayes
abound :
Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings
From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound,
Which from Alcluid to Panwelt did that bor-
der bownd.

LXIV

Three sones he dying left, all under age ;
By means whereof their uncle Vortigere
Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage ;
Which th' Infants tutors gathering to feare,
Them closely into Armorick did beare :
For dread of whom, and for those Picts an-
noyes,
He sent to Germany straunge aid to reare ;
From whence eftsoones arrived here three
boyes
Of Saxons, whome he for his safety employes.

LXV

Two brethren were their Capitayns, which
hight
Hengist and Horsus, well approv'd in warre,
And both of them men of renown'd might ;
Who making vantage of their civile jarre,
And of those forreyners which came from
farre,
Grew great, and got large portions of land,
That in the Realme ere long they stronger
arre
Then they which sought at first their helping
And Vortiger have forst the kingdome to
aband.

LXVI

But by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne,
He is againe unto his rule restord ;
And Hengist, seeming sad for that was donne,
Received is to grace and new accord, [word.
Through his faire daughters face and flattering
Soone after which three hundred Lords he slew
Of British blood, all sitting at his bord ;
Whose dolefull monuments who list to rew,
Th' eternall marks of treason may at Stonheng
vew.

LXVII

By this the sonnes of Constantine, which fled,
Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares attayne,
And, here arriving, strongly challenged
The crowne which Vortiger did long detainne :
Who, flying from his guilt, by them was
slayne ; [death.
And Hengist eke soon brought to shamefull
Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,
Till that through poyson stopped was his breath ;
So now entomb'd lies at Stonheng by the
heath.

LXVIII

After him Uther, which Pendragon hight,
Succeeding—There abruptly it did end,
Without full point, or other Cesure right ;
As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,
Or th' Author selfe could not at least attend
To finish it : that so untimely breach
The Prince him selfe halfe seemed to offend ;
Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,
And wonder of antiquity long stopt his speech.

LXIX

At last, quite ravisht with delight to heare
The royall Ofspring of his native land,
Cryde out ; 'Deare country ! O ! how dearly
deare
Ought thy remembrance and perpetuall band
Be to thy foster Childe, that from thy hand
Did commun breath and nouriture receive.
How brutish is it not to understand
How much to her we owe, that all us gave ;
That gave unto us all what ever good we have.

LXX

But Guyon all this while his booke did read,
Ne yet has ended ; for it was a great
And ample volume, that doth far exceed
My leasure so long leaves here to repeat :
It told how first Prometheus did create
A man, of many parts from beasts deryv'd,
And then stole fire from heaven to animate
His worke, for which he was by Jove depryv'd
Of life him self, and hart-strings of an Aegle
ryv'd.

LXXI

That man so made he called Elfe, to weete
Quick, the first author of all Elfin kynd;
Who, wandring through the world with wearie
feet,
Did in the gardins of Adonis fynd
A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mynd
To be no earthly wight, but either Spright,
Or Angell, th' authour of all woman kynd;
Therefore a Fay he her according hight,
Of whom all Faeryes spring, and fetch their
lignage right.

LXXII

Of these a mighty people shortly grew,
And puissant kinges which all the world
warrayd,
And to them selves all Nations did subdew.
The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,
Was Elfin; him all India obeyd,
And all that now America men call:
Next him was noble Elfinan, who laid
Cleopolis foundation first of all:
But Elifine enclosed it with a golden wall.

LXXIII

His sonne was Elfinell, who overcame
The wicked Gobbelines in bloody field;
But Elfant was of most renowned fame,
Who all of Christall did Panthena build:
Then Elfar, who two brethren gyauntes kild,
The one of which had two heades, th' other
three:
Then Elfinor, who was in magick skill;
He built by art upon the glassy See
A bridge of bras, whose sound heavens thunder
seem'd to bee.

LXXIV

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd,
And all their Ofspring, in their dew descentes;

Even seven hundred Princes, which maintaynd
With mightie deedes their sondry govern-
ments;

That were too long their infinite contents
Here to record, ne much materiall:
Yet should they be most famous monuments,
And brave ensample, both of martiall
And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

LXXV

After all these Elficleos did rayne,
The wise Elficleos, in great Majestic,
Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,
And with rich spoyles and famous victorie
Did high aduance the crowne of Faery:
He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon,
The eldest brother, did untimely dy;
Whose emptie place the mightie Oberon
Doubly supplide, in spousall and dominion.

LXXVI

Great was his power and glorie over all
Which, him before, that sacred seate did fill,
That yet remanes his wide memoriall.
He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,
Him to succede therein, by his last will:
Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre,
Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill;
Therefore they Glorian call that glorious flowre:
Long mayst thou, Glorian, live in glory and
great powre!

LXXVII

Beguyl'd thus with delight of novelties,
And naturall desire of countryes state,
So long they redd in those antiquities,
That how the time was fled they quite forgate:
Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late,
Perforce their studies broke, and them besought
To thinke how supper did them long awaite.
So halfe unwilling from their bookes them
brought.

And fayrely feasted as so noble knightes she

CANTO XI.

The enemies of Temperaunce
Besiege her dwelling place:
Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle
Maleger doth deface.

I

WHAT warre so cruel, or what siege so sore,
As that which strong affections doe apply
Against the forte of reason evermore,
To bring the sowle into captivity?

Their force is fiercer through infirmity
Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage,
And exercise most bitter tyranny.
Upon the partes brought into their bondage:
No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.

II

But in a body which doth freely yeeld
His partes to reasons rule obedient,
And letteth her that ought the scepter weeld,
All happy peace and goodly government
Is settled there in sure establishment.
There Alma, like a virgin Queene most bright,
Doth florish in all beautie excellent;
And to her guesates doth bounteous banquet dight,
Attempted goodly well for health and for
delight.

III

Early, before the Morne with cremosin ray
The windowes of bright heaven opened had,
Through which into the world the dawning
day
Might looke, that maketh every creature glad,
Uprose Sir Guyon, in bright armour clad,
And to his purposed journey him prepar'd:
With him the Palmer eke in habit sad
Him selfe address to that adventure hard:
So to the rivers syde they both together far'd:

IV

Where them awaited ready at the ford
The Ferriman, as Alma had behight,
With his well-rigged bote: They goe abord,
And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forth-
right.
Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,
And fast the land behynd them fled away.
But let them pas, whiles wind and wether
right
Doeserve their turnes: here I a while must stay,
To see a cruell fight doen by the prince this
day.

V

For all so soone as Guyon thence was gon
Upon his voyage with his trustie guyde,
That wicked band of velleins fresh begon
That castle to assaile on every side,
And lay strong siege about it far and wyde.
So huge and infinite their numbers were,
That all the land they under them did hyde;
So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare
Their visages imprint when they approched
neare.

VI

Them in twelve troupes their Captein did
dispart,
And round about in fittest steades did place,
Where each might best offend his proper part,
And his contrary object most deface,
As every one seem'd meetest in that cace.
Seven of the same against the Castle gate
In strong entrenchments he did closely place,

Which with incessaunt force and endlesse hate
They battred day and night, and entraunce
did awate.

VII

The other five five sondry wayes he sett
Against the five great Bulwarke of that pyle,
And unto each a Bulwarke did arrett,
T' assaile with open force or hidden guyle,
In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.
They all that charge did fervently apply
With greedie malice and importune toyle,
And planted there their huge artillery,
With which they dayly made most dreadfull
battery.

VIII

The first troupe was a monstrous rablement
Of fowle mishapen wightes, of which some
were
Headed like Owles, with beekes uncomely bent;
Others like Dogs; others like Gryphons dreare;
And some had wings, and some had clawes to
teare:
And every one of them had Lynces eyes;
And every one did bow and arrowes beare.
All those were lawlesse lustes, currupt envyes,
And covetous aspects, all cruell enmyes.

IX

Those same against the bulwarke of the Sight
Did lay strong siege and battailous assault,
Ne once did yield it respite day nor night;
But soone as Titan gan his head exault,
And soone againe as he his light withhault,
Their wicked engins they against it bent:
That is, each thing by which the eyes may
fault:
But two then all more huge and violent,
Beautes and Money, they that Bulwarke sorely
rent.

X

The second Bulwarke was the Hearing sence,
Gainst which the second troupe assignment
makes;
Deformed creatures, in straunge difference,
Some having heads like Harts, some like to
Snakes, [brakes:
Some like wilde Bores late roud out of the
Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamies.
Leasinges, backbytinges, and vain-glorious
crakes,
Bad counsels, prayses, and false flatteries:
All those against that fort did bend their
batteries.

XI

Likewise that same third Fort, that is the
Smell,
Of that third troupe was cruelly assayd;

Whose hideous shapes were like to feendes of
hell, [dismayd,
Some like to houndes, some like to Apes,
Some like to Puttockes, all in plumes arrayd;
All shap't according their conditions:
For by those ugly formes weren pourtrayd
Foolish delights, and fond abusions,
Which doe that sence besiege with light
illusions.

XII

And that fourth band which cruell batty
bent
Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the Taste,
Was, as the rest, a gryscie rablement; [faste
Some mouth'd like greedy Oysterges; some
Like loathly Toades; some fashioned in the
Like swine: for so deformd is luxury, [waste
Surfeate, misdiet, and unthrifite waste,
Vaine feastes, and ydle superfluity:
All those this sences Fort assayle incessantly.

XIII

But the fift troupe, most horrible of hew
And ferce of force, is dreadfull to report;
For some like Snailles, some did like spyders
shew,
And some like ugly Urchins thick and short:
Cruelly they assayed that fift Fort,
Armed with dartes of sensuall Delight,
With stinges of carnall lust, and strong effort
Of feeling pleasures, with which day and night
Against that same fift bulwarke they continued
fight.

XIV

Thus these twelve troupes with dreadfull
puissaunce
Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay,
And evermore their hideous Ordinaunce
Upon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play,
That now it gan to threaten neare decay:
And evermore their wicked Capitayn
Provoked them the breaches to assay,
Sometimes with threats, sometimes with hope
of gayn, [attayn.
Which by the ransack of that peece they should

XV

On th' other syde, th' assieged Castles ward
Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,
And many bold repulse and many hard
Atchievement wrought, with perill and with
payne,
That goodly frame from ruine to sustaine:
And those two brethren Gyauntes did defend
The walles so stoutly with their sturche mayne,
That never entrance any durst pretend,
But they to direfull death their groning ghosts
did send.

XVI

The noble Virgin, Ladie of the Place,
Was much dismayed with that dreadful sight,
For never was she in so evill case,
Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight,
Gau her recomfort from so sad affright,
Offering his service, and his dearest life
For her defence against that Carle to fight,
Which was their chiefe and th' authour of that
strife:
She him remerci'd as the Patrone of her life.

XVII

Eftsoones himselfe in glitterand armes he
dight,
And his well proved weapons to him bent;
So, taking courteous conge, he behight
Those gates to be unbar'd, and forth he went.
Fayre mote he thee, the prowtest and most
gent,
That ever brandished bright steele on bye!
Whome soone as that unruly rablement
With his gay Squyre issewing did espye, [cry:
They reard a most outrageous dreadful yelling

XVIII

And therewithall attonce at him let fly [snow,
Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of
And round about him flocke impetuously,
Like a great water flood, that tumbling low
From the high mountaines, threates to over-
flow
With suddain fury all the fertile playne,
And the sad husbandmans long hope doth
throw [vayne;
Adowne the streame, and all his vowes make
Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may
sustayne.

XIX

Upon his shield their heaped hayle he bore,
And with his sword disperst the raskall
flockes,
Which fled asonder, and him fell before;
As withered leaves drop from their dried
stokes, [locks:
When the wroth Western wind does reave their
And underneath him his courageous steed,
The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like
docks;
The fierce Spumador, borne of heavenly seed,
Such as Laomedon of Phæbus race did breed.

XX

Which suddaine horreur and confused cry
When as their Capteine heard, in haste he yode
The cause to weet, and fault to remedy:
Upon a Tygre swift and fierce he rode,

That as the winde ran underne^a his lode,
Whiles his long legs nigh raiht unto the
ground.

Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode,
But of such subtille substance and unsound,
That like a ghost he seem'd whose grave-
clothes were unbound :

XXI

And in his hand a bended bow was scene,
And many arrowes under his right side,
All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,
Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide ;
Such as the Indians in their quivers hide :
Those could he well direct and streight as line,
And bid them strike the marke which he had
eyde ;

Ne was there salve, ne was there medicine,
That mote recure their wounds ; so inly they
did tine.

XXII

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke,
His body leane and meagre as a rake,
And skin all withered like a dried rooke ;
Thereto as cold and dreary as a snake,
That seemd to tremble evermore and quake ;
All in a canvas thin he was kedight,
And girded with a belt of twisted brake :
Upon his head he wore an Helmet light,
Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a
ghastly sight.

XXIII

Maleger was his name ; and after him
There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags,
With hoary lockes all loose, and visage grim ;
Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in rags,
And both as swift on foot as chased Stags ;
And yet the one her other legge had lame,
Which with a staffe, all full of litle snags,
She did support, and Impotence her name.
But th' other was Impatience, arm'd with
raging flame

XXIV

Soone as the Carle from far the Prince espyde
Glistring in armes and warlike ornament,
His Bea-t he felly prickt on either syde,
And his mischievous bow full readie bent,
With which at him a cruell shaft he sent :
But he was warie, and it warded well
Upon his shield, that it no further went,
But to the ground the idle quarrell fell :
Then he another and another did expell.

XXV

Which to prevent the Prince his mortall speare
Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did
ride,

To be avenged of that shot whyleare ;
But he was not so hardy to abide
That bitter stownd, but turning quicke aside
His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare :
Whom to poursue the Infant after hide
So fast as his good Courser could him beare ;
But labour lost it was to weene approach him
neare.

XXVI

For as the winged wind his Tigre fled,
That vew of eye could scarce him overtake,
Ne scarce his feet on ground were seeme to tread :
Through hills and dales he speedy way did
make,
Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake ;
And in his flight the villain turn'd his face
(As wonts the Tartar by the Caspian lake,
Whenas the Russian him in fight does chase)
Unto his Tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

XXVII

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace,
Still as the greedy knight nigh to him drew :
And oftentimes he would relent his pace,
That him his foe more fiercely should pour-
rew :
But when his uncouth manner he did vew,
He gan avize to follow him no more,
But keepe his standing, and his shaftes eschew,
Untill he quite had spent his perious store,
And then assayle him fresh, ere he could shift
for more.

XXVIII

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew
His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe,
And to him brought, fresh batteill to renew ;
Which he espying cast her to restraine
From yjelding succour to that cursed Swaine,
And her attaching thought her hands to tye :
But soone as him dismounted on the plaine
That other Hag did far away espye
Binding her sister, she to him ran hastily ;

XXIX

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,
Him backward overthrew, and downe him
stayd
With their rude handes and gryesly grapple-
ment ;
Till that the villain, comming to their ayd,
Upon him fell, and lode upon him layd :
Full litle wanted but he had him slaine,
And of the battell balefull end had made,
Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine,
And commen to his reskew, ere his bitter
bane.

xxx

So greatest and most glorious thing on
ground

May often need the helpe of weaker hand ;
So feeble is mans state, and life unsound,
That in assurance it may never stand,
Till it dissolved be from earthly band,
Proove be thou, Prince, the prowrest man alyve,
And noblest borne of all in Britayne land ;
Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely drive,
That, had not grace thee blest, thou shoulddest
not survive.

xxxix

The Squire arriving fiercely in his armes
Snatcht first the one, and then the other Jade,
His chiefest letts and authors of his harmes,
And them perforce withheld with threatned
blade,
Least that his Lord they should behinde invade ;
The whiles the Prince, prickt with reprochful
shame,
As one awake out of long slombring shade,
Revivynge thought of glory and of fame,
United all his powres to purge him selfe from
blame.

xxxix

Like as a fire, the which in hollow cave
Hath long bene underkept and down suppress,
With murmurous disdayne doth inly rave,
And grudge in so streight prison to be prest,
At last breakes forth with furious unrest,
And strives to mount unto his native seat ;
All that did earst it hinder and molest, [heat,
Yt now devoures with flames and scorching
And carries into smoake with rage and horror
great.

xxxix

So mightely the Briton Prince him rouza
Out of his holde, and broke his cavyte band ;
And as a Beare, whom angry cures have touz,
Having off-shakt them and escapt their handes,
Becomes more fell, and all that him withstands
Treads down and overthrowes. Now had the
Carle

Alighted from his Tigre, and his hands
Discharged of his bow and deadly qu'le,
To seize upon his foe flatt lying on the marle.

xxxix

Which now him turnd to disadvantage deare ;
For neither can he fly, nor other harme,
But trust unto his strength and manhood
meare,

Sith now he is far from his monstrous swarme,
And of his weapons did himselfe disarme.
The knight, yet wrothfull for his late disgrace,
Fiercely advaunst his valorous right arme,

And him so sore smott with his yron mace,
That groveling to the ground he fell, and fild
his place.

xxxix

Wel weened hee that field was then his owne,
And all his labor brought to happy end ;
When suddain up the villaine overthrowne
Out of his swowne arose, fresh to contend,
And gan him selfe to second battaill bend,
As hurt he had not beene. Thereby there lay
An huge great stone, which stood upon one
end,

And had not bene removed many a day ;
Some land-marke seemd to bee, or signe of
sundry way :

xxxix

The same he snatcht, and with exceeding
away
Threw at his foe, whe was right well aware
To shonne the engin of his meant decay ;
It booted not to thinke that throw to beare,
But grownd he gave, and lightly lept areare :
Eft fierce retournynge, as a faulcon fayre,
That once hath failed of her souse full neare,
Remounts againe into the open ayre,
And unto better fortune doth her selfe pre-
payre.

xxxix

So brave retournynge, with his brandisht blade
He to the Carle him selfe agayn addrest,
And strooke at him so sternely, that he made
An open passage through his riven brest,
That halfe the steele behind his backe did rest ;
Which drawing backe, he looked evermore
When the hart blood should gush out of his
chest,
Or his dead corse should fall upon the flore ;
But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathe-
more.

xxxix

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee,
All were the wound so wide and wonderous
That through his carcas one might playnly
see.

Halfe in amaze with horror hideous,
And halfe in rage to be deluded thus,
Again through both the sides he strooke him
quight,
That made his spright to grone full piteous ;
Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright,
But freshly, as at first, prepard himselfe to
fight.

xxxix

Threat he smitten was with great affright,
And trembling terror did his hart apall ;
Ne wist he what to thinke of that same sight,
Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all :

He doubted least it were some magical
 Illusion that did beguile his sense,
 Or wandring ghost that wanted funerall,
 Or aery spirit under false pretence,
 Or hellish scound rayed up through diuinish
 science.

XL

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach,
 That he began to doubt his dazeled sight,
 And oft of error did himselfe appeach:
 Flesh without blood, a person without spright.
 Wounds without hurt, a body without might.
 That could doe harme, yet could not harmed
 bee,

That could not die, yet seemd a mortall wight,
 That was most strong in most infirmitee;
 Like did he neuer heare, like did he neuer see.

XLI

Awhile he stood in this astonishment,
 Yet would he not for all his great dismay
 Give over to effect his first intent,
 And th' utmost meanes of victory assay,
 Or th' utmost yssue of his owne decay.
 His owne good sword Mordure, that neuer
 fayld

At need till now, he lightly threw away,
 And his bright shield that nought him now
 avayld,
 And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

XLII

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he
 snatcht,

And crusht his carcas so against his breast,
 That the disdainfull sowle he thence dispatcht,
 And th' ydle breath all utterly exprest.
 Tho, when he felt him dead, adowne he keast
 The lumpish corse unto the sencelesse grownd;
 Adowne he keast it with so puissant wrest,
 That backe againe it did alofte rebownd,
 And gave against his mother earth a grone-
 full sownd.

XLIII

As when Joves harness-bearing Bird from
 hye

Stoupes at a flying heron with proud disdayne,
 The stone-dead quarry falls so forcibly,
 That yt rebownds against the lowly playne,
 A second fall redoubling backe agayne.
 Then thought the Prince all peril sure was
 past,

And that he victor onely did remayne;
 No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast
 Gan heape huge strokes on him, as ere he down
 was cast.

XLIV

Nigh his wife end then woxe th' amazed
 knight,
 And thought his labor lost, and travell wayne,
 Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight:
 Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty mayne,
 That, whiles he marveild still, did still him
 payne;
 Forthy he gan some other wayes advize,
 How to take life from that dead-living
 swayne,
 Whom still he marked freshly to arise
 From th' earth, and from her womb new spirits
 to reprice.

XLV

He then remembered well, that had bene said,
 How th' Earth his mother was, and first him
 bore,
 She eke, so often as his life decayd,
 Did life with usury to him restore,
 And reysd him up much stronger then before,
 So soone as he unto her wombe did fall:
 Therefore to grownd he would him cast no
 more,
 Ne him commit to grave terrestriall,
 But beare him farre from hope of succour
 usuall.

XLVI

Tho up he caught him twixt his puissant
 hands,
 And having scrud out of his carrien corse
 The lothfull life, now loosd from sinfull bands,
 Upon his shoulders carried him perforce
 Above three furlongs, taking his full course
 Until he came unto a standing lake;
 Him therinto he threw without remorse,
 Ne stint, till hope of life did him forsake:
 So end of that Carles dayes and his owne
 paynes did make.

XLVII

Which when those wicked Hags from far did
 spye,
 Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands,
 And th' one of them with dreadfull yelling
 crye,
 Throwing away her broken chaines and bands,
 And having quencht her burning fier-brands,
 Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lake;
 But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands
 One of Malegers cursed darts did take,
 So ryv'd her trembling hart, and wicked end
 did make.

XLVIII

Thus now alone he conquerour remains:
 Tho, camming to his Squyre that kept his steed,

Thought to have mounted; but his feeble
vaines
Him faild thereto, and served not his need,
Through losse of blood which from his wounds
did bleed,
That he began to faint, and life decay:
But his good Squire, him helping up with
speed,
With stedfast hand upon his horse did stay,
And led him to the Castle by the beaten
way.

XI.IX
Where many Groomes and Squyres ready were
To take him from his steed full tenderly;
And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there
With balme, and wine, and costly spicery,
To comfort him in his infirmity.
Eftesoones shee causd him up to be conwayd,
And of his armes despoyled easily
In sumptuous bed shee made him to be layd;
And al the while his wounds were dressing by
him stayd.

● CANTO XII.

Guyon, by Palmers governaunce,
Passing through perilles great,
Doth overthrow the Bowre of blis,
And Acrasy defeat.

I
Now ginnes that goodly frame of Temper-
aunce
Fayrely to rise, and her adorned hed
To pricke of highest prayse forth to advaunce,
Formerly grounded and fast setteled
On firme foundation of true bountyhed:
And this brave knight, that for this vertue
fights,
Now comes to point of that same perilous sted,
Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall delights,
Mongst thousand dangers, and ten thousand
Magick mights.

II
Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,
Ne ever land beheld, ne living wight,
Ne ought save perill still as he did pas.
Tho. when appeared the third Morrow bright
Upon the waves to spred her trembling light,
An hideous roling far away they heard,
That all their senses filled with affright;
And streight they saw the raging surges reard
Up to the skyes, that them of drowning made
affeard.

III
Said then the Boteman, 'Palmer, sterc aright,
And keepe an even course; for yonder way
We needes must pas (God doe us well acquight!)
That is the Gulfe of Greedinease, they say,
That deepe engorgeth all this worldes pray;
Which having swallowd up excessively,
He soone in vomit up againe doth lay,
And belcheth forth his superfluity,
That all the seas for feare doe seeme away to fly.'

IV
'On thother syde an hideous Rocke is pight
Of mightie Magnes stone, whose craggie clift
Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight,
Over the waves his rugged armes doth lift,
And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift
On whoso cometh nigh; yet nigh it drawes
All passengers, that none from it can shift:
For, whiles they fly that Gulfes devouring jaws,
They on this rock are rent, and sunck in helples
wawes.'

V
Forward they passe, and strongly he them
rowes,
Untill they nigh unto that Gulfe arrive,
Wherestreamc more violent and greedy growes:
Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve
To strike his oares, and mightily doth drive
The hollow vessel through the threatfull wave;
Which, gaping wide to swallow them alyve
In th' huge abyssc of his engulging grave,
Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great
terroure rave.

VI
They, passing by, that grisely mouth did see
Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,
That seemd more horrible then hell to bee,
Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe
Through which the damned ghosts doen often
creepe
Backe to the world, bad livers to torment:
But nought that fallies into this direfull deepe
Ne that approacheth nigh the wyde descent,
May backe retourne, but is condemned to be
drent.

VII

On thother side they saw that pōsious Roche,
Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate,
On whose sharp cliftes the ribs of vessels broke;
And shivered ships, which had bene wrecked
Yet stuck with carcases exanimate [late,
Of such, as having all their substance spent
In wanton joyes and lustes intemperate,
Did afterwards make shipwrack violent
Both of their life and fame, for ever fowly blent.

VIII

Forthy this hight The Roche of vile Reproch,
A dangerous and detestable place,
To which nor fish nor fowle did once approach,
But yelling Meawes, with Seagulles hoars and
bace,
And Cormorants, with birds of ravenous race,
Which still sat waiting on that wastfull clift
For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,
After lost credit and consumed thrift,
At last them driven hath to this despairefull
drift.

IX

The Palmer. seeing them in safetie past,
Thus saide; 'Behold th' ensamples in our sights
Of lustfull luxurie and thrēlesse wast.
What now is left of miserable wightes,
Which spent their looser daies in leud delights,
But shame and sad reproch, here to be red
By these rent reliques, speaking their ill
Let all that live hereby be counselled [plightes?
To shunne Roche of Reproch, and it as death
to dred!'

X

So forth they rowed; and that Ferryman
With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so
strong,
That the hoare waters from his frigot ran,
And the light bubbles daunced all along,
Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong.
At last far off they many Islandes spy
On every side floting the floodes emong:
Then said the knight: 'Lo! I the land descry;
Therefore, old Syre, thy course doe thereunto
apply.'

XI

'That may not bee,' said then the Ferryman,
'Least wee unweeting hap to be fordonne;
For those same Islandes, seeming now and than,
Are not firme land, nor any certein wonne,
But stragling plots which to and fro doe ronne
In the wide waters: therefore are they hight
The Wandering Islandes. Therefore doe them
shonne;
For they have ofte drawne many a wandering
Into most deadly daunger and distressed plight.

XII

'Yet well they seeme to him, that farre doth
vew,
Both faire and fruitfull, and the ground dispreed
With grassy greene of delectable hew;
And the tall trees with leaves appareled
Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white and red,
That mote the passengers thereto allure;
But whosoever once hath fastened
His foot thereon, may never it recure,
But wandreth evermore uncertein and unsure.

XIII

'As th' I-le of Delos whylome, men report,
Amid th' Aegean sea long time did stray,
Ne made for shipping any certein port,
Till that Latona travailing that way,
Flying from Junoes wrath and hard assay,
Of her fayre twins was there delivered,
Which afterwards did rule the night and day:
Thenceforth it firmly was established,
And for Apolloes temple highly herried.'

XIV

They to him hearken, as becometh meete,
And passe on forward: so their way does ly,
That one of those same Islandes, which doe
fleet
In the wide sea, they needes must passen by,
Which seemd so sweet and pleasaunt to the
eye,
That it would tempt a man to touchen there:
Upon the banck they sitting did espy
A daintie damell dressing of her heare,
By whom a little skippet floting did appeare.

XV

She, them espying, loud to them can call,
Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore,
For she had cause to busie them withall;
And therewith lowdly laught: But nathe more
Would they once turne, but kept on as afore:
Which when she saw, she left her lockes un-
dight,
And running to her boat withouten ore,
From the departing land it launched light,
And after them did drive with all her power
and might.

XVI

Whom overtaking, she in merry sort
Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly;
Now faining dalliaunce and wanton sport,
Now throwing forth lewd wordes immodestly;
Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly
Her to rebuke for being loose and light:
Which not abiding, but more scornfully

Scoffing at him that did her justly wite,
She turn'd her bote about, and from them
rowed quite.

XVII

That was the wanton Phœdria, which late
Did ferry him over the Idle lake:
Whom nought regarding they kept on their
gate,

And all her vaine allurements did forsake;
When then the wary Boteman thus bespake:
'Here now behoveth us well to ayse,
And of our safety good heede to take;
For here before a perious passage lyes,
Where many Mermayds haunt making false
melodies:

XVIII

'But by the way there is a great Quicksand,
And a whirlpooole of hidden jeopardy;
Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an even hand,
For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly.'
Scarse had he saide, when hard at hand they
spy

That quicksand nigh with water covered;
But by the checked wave they did descry
It plaine, and by the sea discoloured:
It called was the quicksand of Unthriftyhed.

XIX

They, passing by, a goodly Ship did see
Laden from far with precious merchandize,
And bravely furnished as ship might bee,
Which through great disaventure, or mesprise,
Her selfe had runne into that hazardize;
Whose mariners and merchants with much
toyle
Labour'd in vaine to have recur'd their prize,
And the rich wares to save from pitteous spoyle;
But neither toyle nor travaill might her backe
recoyle,

XX

On th' other side they see that perillous Poole,
That called was the Whirlpooole of decay;
In which full many had with haplesse doole
Beene suncke, of whom no memorie did stay:
Whose circled waters rapt with whirling sway,
Like to a restlesse wheele, still running round,
Did covet, as they passed by that way,
To draw their bote within the utmost bound
Of his wide Labyrinth, and then to have them
dround.

XXI

But th' heedfull Boteman strongly forth did
stretch
His brawnie armes, and all his bodie straine,
That th' utmost sandy breach they shortly
fetch,
Whiles the dredd daunger does behind remaine.

Suddeine they see from midst of all the Maine
The surging waters like a mountaine rise,
And the great sea, puft up with proud dis-
daine,

To swell above the measure of his guise,
As threatening to devour all that his powre
despise.

XXII

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore
Outragiously, as they enraged were,
Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before
His whirling chariot for exceeding feare;
For not one puffs of winde there did appeare,
That all the three thereat woxe much afraid,
Unweeting what such horrour strange did
reare.

Etsoones they saw an hideous hoast arrayd
Of huge Sea monsters, such as living sence
dismayd:

XXIII

Most ugly shapes and horrible aspects,
Such as Dame Nature selfe mote feare to see,
Or shame that ever should so fowle defects
From her most cunning hand escaped bee;
All dreadfull portraicts of deformitee:
Spring-headed Hydres; and sea-shouldring
Whales;
Great whirlpooles which all fishes make to flee;
Bright Scolopendraes arm'd with silver scales;
Mighty Monoceroses with immeasured tayles.

XXIV

The dreadful Fish that hath deserv'd the name
Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull
hew;
The grisly Wasserman, that makes his game
The flying ships with swiftness to pursue:
The horrible Sea-satyre, that doth shew
His fearefull face in time of greatest storme;
Huge Ziffius, whom Mariners eschew
No lesse then rockes, (as travellers informe)
And greedy Rosmarines with visages deforme.

XXV

All these, and thousand thousands many more,
And more deformed Monsters thousand fold,
With dreadfull noise and hollow rombling
rore
Came rushing, in the fomy waves enrold,
Which seem'd to fly for feare them to behold.
Ne wonder, if these did the knight appall;
For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold,
Be but as bugs to fearen babes withall,
Compared to the creatures in the seas en-
trall.

XXVI

'Feare nought,' then saide the Palmer well
aviz'd,

'For these same Monsters are not these in deed,
But are into these fearefull shapes disguis'd
By that same wicked witch, to worke us dread,
And draw from on this journey to proceed.'
Tho lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye.

He smote the sea, which calmed was with
speed,

And all that dreadfull Armie fast gan flye
Into great Têlys bosome, where they hidden
lye.

XXVII

Quit from that danger forth their course they
kept;

And as they went they heard a ruefull cry
Of one that wayld and pittifully wept,
That through the sea resounding plaints did fly:
At last they in an Island did espy
A seemely Maiden sitting by the shore,
That with great sorrow and sad agony
Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,
And lowd to them for succour called evermore.

XXVIII

Which Guyon hearing straight his Palmer bad
To stere the bote towards that dolefull Mayd,
That he might know and ease her sorrow sad;
Who, him avizing better, to him sayd:
'Faie Sir, be not displeas'd if disobayd:
For ill it were to hearken to her cry,
For she is inly nothing ill apayd;
But onely womanish fine forgery, [mity.
Your stubborne hart t'affect with fraile infir-

XXIX

'To which when she your courage hath in-
clind

Through foolish pitty, then her guilefull bayt
She will embosome deeper in your mind,
And for your ruine at the last awayt.'
The Knight was ruled, and the Boteman strayt
Held on his course with stayed stedfastnesse,
Ne ever shroncke, ne ever sought to bayt
His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse,
But with his oares did sweepe the watry wilder-
nesse.

XXX

And now they nigh approached to the sted
Whereas those Mermayds dwelt: it was a still
And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered
With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill;
On th' other side a high rocke toured still,
That twist them both a pleasant port they
And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill: [made,

There those five sisters had continuall trade,
And usd to bath themselves in that decept-
full shade.

XXXI

They were faie Ladies, till they fondly
striv'd

With th' Heliconian maides for maystery; 'O
Of whom they, over-comen, were depriv'd
Of their proud beautie, and th' one moyity
Transform'd to fish for their bold surquedry;
But th' upper halfe their hiew retayned still,
And their sweet skill in wonted melody:
Which ever after they abus'd to ill, [did kill.
T' allure weake travellers, whom gotten they

XXXII

So now to Guyon, as he passed by,
Their pleasant tunes they sweetly thus ap-
'O thou fayre sonne of gentle Faery, [plyde:
That art in mightie armes most magnifyde
Above all knights that ever batteill tryde,
O! turne thy rudder hitherward awhile
Here may thy storme-bett vessell safely ryde,
This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,
The worldes sweet In from paine and wearis-
some turmoyle.'

XXXIII

With that the rolling sea, resounding soft,
In his big base them fitly answered;
And on the rocke the waves breaking aloft
A solemne Meane unto them measured;
The whiles sweet Zephyrus lowd whistled
His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony,
Which Guyons senses softly tickled,
That he the boteman bad row easily, [lody.
And let him heare some part of their rare me-

XXXIV

But him the Palmer from that vanity
With temperate advice discourseled,
That they it past, and shortly gan descry
The land to which their course they leveled;
When suddainly a grosse fog over-spread
With his dull vapour all that desert has,
And heavens chearefull face enveloped,
That all things one, and one as nothing was,
And this great Universe seemd one confus-
mas.

XXXV

Thereat they greatly were dismayd, ne wist
How to direct theyr way in darkenes wide,
But feard to wander in that wastefull mist,
For tomling into mischiefes unespide:
Worse is the daunger hidden then descride.
Suddainly an innumerable flight [cride,
Of harmefull fowles about them fluttering

And with their wicked wings them ofte did
smight,
And sore annoyed, groping in that griesly night.

XXXVI

Even all the nation of unfortunate
And fawall birds about them flocked were,
Such as by nature men abhorre and hate;
The ill-faste Owle, deaths dreadfull messengere;
The hoars Night-raven, trump of dolefull dreere;
The lether-winged Batt, dayes enemy;
The ruefull Strich, still waiting on the bere;
The whistler shrill, that whoso heares doth dy;
The hellish Harpyes, prophets of sad destiny.

XXXVII

All those, and all that els does horror breed,
About them flew, and fild their sayles with
fear :

Yet stayd they not, but forward did proceed,
Whiles th' one did row, and th' other stifly
steare;

Till that at last the weather gan to cleare,
And the faire land it selfe did playnly shew.
Said then the Palmer; 'Lo! where does appeare
The sacred soile where all our perills grow.
Therefore, Sir knight, your ready arms about
you throw.'

XXXVIII

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke,
The whiles the nimble bote so well her sped,
That with her crooked keele the land she
Then forth the noble Guyon sallied, [strooke:
And his sage Palmer that him governed;
But th' other by his bote behind did stay.
They marched fayrly forth, of nought ydred.
Both firmly armed for every hard assay,
With constancy and care, gainst dawnger and
dismay.

XXXIX

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing
Of many beasts, that roard outrageously,
As if that hungers poynt or Venus sting
Had them enraged with fell surquedry:
Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,
Untill they came in vew of those wilde beasts,
Who all atonce, gaping full greedily,
And rearing ferely their upstaring crests,
Ran towards to devoure those unexpected
guests.

XL

But soone as they approcht with deadly threat,
The Palmer over them his staffe upheld, [feat.
His mighty staffe, that could all charmes de-
Esteesoones their stubborne corages were queld,

And high advaunced crests downe meekely
feld

Instead of fraying, they them selves did feare,
And trembled as them passing they beheld:
Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare,
All monsters to subdew to him that did it
beare.

XLI

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,
Of which Caduceus whilome was made,
Caduceus, the rod of Mercury, [invade
With which he wons the Stygian realmes
Through ghastly horror and eternall shade:
Th' infernall seends with it he can asswage,
And Orcus tame, whome nothing can persuade,
And rule the Furies when they most doe rage.
Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer
sage.

XLII

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe arryve
Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate;
A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve,
That natures worke by art can imitate:
In which whatever in this worldly state
Is sweete and pleasing unto living sense,
Or that may dayntest fantasy aggrate,
Was poured forth with plentiful dispencher,
And made there to abound with lavish affluence.

XLIII

Goodly it was enclosed round about,
As well their entred guesates to keep within,
As those unruly beasts to hold without;
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin:
Nought feard theyr force that fortillage to win.
But wisdomes powre, and temperaunces
might,
By which the mightiest things efforced bin:
And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce
light.
Rather for pleasure then for battery or fight.

XLIV

Yt framed was of precious yvory,
That seemd a worke of admirable witt;
And therein all the famous history
Of Jason and Medæa was ywritt;
Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt;
His goodly conquest of the golden fleece,
His falsed sayth, and love too lightly flitt;
The wondrous Argo, which in venturous pecece
First through the Euxine seas bore all the
flour of Greece.

XLV

Ye might have seene the frothy billowes fry
Under the ship as thorough them she went,

That seemd the waves were into yvory,
Or yvory into the waves were sent;
And otherwhere the snowy substance sprent
With vermell, like the boyes blood therein
shed,
A piteous spectacle did represent;
And otherwhiles, with gold besprinkled,
Yt seemd thenchanted flame which did
Cræusa wed.

XLVI

All this and more might in that goodly gate
Be red, that eyer open stood to all [sate
Which thither came; but in the Porch there
A comely personage of stature tall.
And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall.
That travellers to him seemd to entize:
His looser garment to the ground did fall,
And flew about his heeles in wanton wize,
Not fitt for speedy pace, or manly exercize.

XLVII

They in that place him Genius did call:
Not that celestiall powre, to whom the care
Of life, and generation of all
That lives, perteynes in charge particulare.
Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,
And straunge phantomes death lett us ofte
foresce,
And ofte of secret ill bids us beware:
That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see,
Yet each doth in him selfeit well perceive to bee.

XLVIII

Therefore a God him sage Antiquity
Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call;
But this same was to that quite contrary,
The foe of life, that good envyes to all,
That secretly doth us procure to fall [us see:
Through guilefull semblants which he makes
He of this Gardin had the governall,
And Pleasures porter was devized to bee,
Holding a staffe in hand for mere formalitee.

XLIX

With diverse flowres he daintily was deckt,
And strowed round about; and by his side
A mighty Mazer bowle of wine was sett,
As if it had to him bene sacrifice,
Wherewith all new-come guests he gratyfide:
So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by;
But he his ydle curtesie defide,
And overthrew his bowle disdainfully,
And broke his staffe with which he charmed
semblants sly.

L

Thus being entred, they behold around
A large and spacious plaine, on every side

Strowed with pleasauns; whose fayre grassy
ground
Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide
With all the ornaments of Floraes pride,
Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne
Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride
Did decke her, and too lavishly adorne,
When forth from virgin bowre she comes in
th' early morne.

LI

Therewith the Heavens alwayes joviall
Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast state,
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall,
Their tender buds or leaves to violate;
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate,
T' afflict the creatures which therein did dwell;
But the milde ayre with season moderate
Gently attempted, and disposd so well,
That still it breathed forth sweet spirit and
holesom smell:

LII

More sweet and holesome then the pleasaunt
hill
Of Rhodope, on which the Nimphe that bore
A gyant babe herselfe for griefe did kill;
Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of yore
Fayre Daphne Phæbus hart with love did
gore;
Or Ida, where the Gods lov'd to repayre,
When ever they their heavenly bowres forlore;
Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses fayre;
Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden mote com-
payre.

LIII

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre aspect
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight
To sincke into his sense, nor mind affect,
But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,
Brydling his will and maystering his might,
Till that he came unto another gate;
No gate, but like one, being goodly dight [late
With bowes and branches, which did broad di-
Their clasping armes in wanton wreathings
intricate:

LIV

So fashioned a Porch with rare device,
Archd over head with an embracing vine,
Whose bounches hanging downe seemd to en-
tice
All passers by to taste their lushious wine,
And did them selves into their hands incline,
As freely offering to be gathered;
Some deepe empurpled as the Hyacine,
Some as the Rubine laughing sweetely red,
Some like faire Emeraudes, not yet well
ripened.

LV

And them amongst some were of burnisht
gold,
So made by art to beautify the rest,
Which did themselves amongst the leaves en-
fold,
As lurking from the vew of covetous guest,
That the weake boughes, with so rich load
opprest
Did bow adowne as overburdened.
Under that Porch a comely dame did rest
Clad in fayre weedes but fowle disordered,
And garments loose that seemd unmeet for
womanhed.

LVI

In her left hand a Cup of gold she held,
And with her right the riper fruit did reach,
Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,
Into her cup she scruzd with daintie breach
Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,
That so faire winepresse made the wine more
sweet:
Thereof she usd to give to drinke to each,
Whom passing by she happened to meet:
It was her guise all Strangers goodly so to
greet.

LVII

So she to Guyon offered it to tast,
Who, taking it out of her tender hond,
The cup to ground did violently cast.
That all in peeces it was broken foud,
And with the liquor stained all the lound:
Whereat Excesse exceedingly was wroth,
Yet note the same amend, ne yet withstond,
But suffered him to passe, all were she loth:
Who, nought regarding her displeasure, forward
goth.

LVIII

There the most daintie Paradise on ground
It selfe doth offer to his sober eye,
In which all pleasures plenteously abownd,
And none does others happinesse envye:
The painted flowres, the trees upshooting hye,
The dales for shade, the hilles for breathing
space,
The trembling groves, the christall running by,
And, that which all faire workes doth most
aggrace, [place,
The art which all that wrought appeared in no

LIX

One would have thought, (so cunningly the
rude
And scorned partes were mingled with the fine)
That nature had for wantonnesse ensude
Art, and that Art at nature did repine;

So striving each th' other to undermine,
Each did the others worke more beautify;
So differing both in willes agreed in fine:
So all agreed, through sweete diversity,
This Gardin to adorne with all variety.

LX

And in the midst of all a fountaine stood,
Of richest substance that on earth might bee,
So pure and shiny that the silver flood
Through every channell running one might
see:
Most goodly it with curious ymagerees
Was overwrought, and shapes of naked boyes,
Of which some seemd with lively jollitee
To fly about, playing their wanton toyes,
Whylest others did them selves embay in liquid
joyes.

LXI

And over all of purest gold was spred
A trayle of yvie in his native hew;
For the rich metall was so coloured,
That wight who did not well avis'd it wew
Would surely deeme it to bee yvie trew:
Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe,
That themselves dipping in the silver dew
Their fleecy flowres they fearefully did steepe,
Which drops of Christall seemd for wantones
to weep.

LXII

Infint streames continually did well
Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,
The which into an ample laver fell,
And shortly grew into so great quantitie,
That like a litle lake it seemd to bee;
Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight,
That through the waves one might the bottom
see,
All pav'd beneath with Jasper shining bright,
That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle
upright.

LXIII

And all the margent round about was sett
With shady Laurell trees, thence to defend
The sunny beames which on the billowes bett,
And those which therein bathed mote offend.
As Guyon happed by the same to wend,
Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde,
Which therein bathing seemed to contend
And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde
Their dainty partes from vew of any which
they eyd.

LXIV

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight
Above the waters, and then downe againe
Her plonge, as over-maystered by might,
Where both awhile would covered remaine,

And each the other from to rise restraine;
 The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a
 veile,
 So through the christall waves appeared plaine:
 Then suddenly both would themselves unhele,
 And th' amorous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes
 revele.

LXV

As that faire Starre, the messenger of morne,
 His dewy face out of the sea cloth reare;
 Or as the Cyprian goddess, newly borne
 Of th' Ocean's fruitfull froth, did first appeare:
 Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare
 Christalline humor dropped downe apace.
 Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him
 neare,
 And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace;
 His stubborn brest gan secret pleasance to
 embrace.

LXVI

The wanton Maidens, him espying, stood
 Gazing awhile at his unwonted guise;
 Then th' one her selfe low ducked in the flood,
 Abasht that her a stranger did avise;
 But thother rather higher did arise.
 And her two lilly paps aloft displayd,
 And all that might his melting hart entyse
 To her delights she unto him bewrayd;
 The rest hidd underneath him more desirous
 made.

LXVII

With that the other likewise up arose,
 And her faire lockes, which formerly were
 bownd
 Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose,
 Which flowing low and thick her cloth'd arround,
 And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd:
 So that faire spectacle from him was rest,
 Yet that which rest it no lesse faire was fownd.
 So hidd in lockes and waves from lookers theft,
 Nought but her lovely face she for his looking
 left.

LXVIII

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall,
 That blushing to her laughter gave more grace,
 And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.
 Now when they spyde the knight to slacke his
 Them to behold, and in his sparkling face
 pace
 The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare,
 Their wanton meriments they did encrease,
 And to him beckned to approach more neare,
 And shewd him many sights that corage cold
 could feare.

LXIX

On which when gazing him the Palmer saw,
 He much rebuked those wandring eyes of his,

And counselld well him forward thence did
 draw.

Now are they come nigh to the Bowre of blis,
 Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis,
 When thus the Palmer: 'Now, Sir, well avise;
 For here the end of all our travaill is:
 Here wounnes Acrasia, whom we must surprise,
 Els she will slip away, and all our drift despise.

LXX

Eftsoones they heard a most melodious sound,
 Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,
 Such as attonce might not on living ground,
 Save in this Paradise, be heard elsewhere:
 Right hard it was for wight which did it heare,
 To read what manner musicke that mote bee.
 For all that pleasing is to living care
 Was there consorted in one harmonie;
 Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, waters,
 all agree:

LXXI

The joyous birdes, shrouded in chearefull shade
 Their notes unto the voice attempted sweet;
 Th' Angelicall soft trombling voyces made
 To th' instruments divine responce meet;
 The silver sounding instruments did meet
 With the base murmur of the waters fall;
 The waters fall with difference discreet,
 Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did call;
 The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.

LXXII

There, whence that Musick seemed heard to
 bee,
 Was the faire Witch her selfe now solacing
 With a new Lover, whom, through sorcerie
 And witchcraft, she from farre did thither
 bring:
 There she had him now laid aslumbering
 In secret shade after long wanton joyes,
 Whilst round about them pleasantly did sing
 Many faire Ladies and lascivious boyes,
 That ever mixt their song with light licentious
 toyes.

LXXIII

And all that while right over him she hong
 With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight,
 As seeking medicine whence she was stong,
 Or greedily depasturing delight;
 And oft inclining downe, with kisses light
 For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,
 And through his humid eyes did sucke his
 spright,
 Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd;
 Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his case she
 rewed.

LXXIV

The whites some one did chaunt this lovely lay:

Ah! see, whoso fayre thing doest faine to see,
In springing flowre the image of thy day.
Ah! see the Virgin Rose, how sweetly shee
Doth first peepe forth with bashfull modestee,
That fairer seemes the lesse ye see her may.
Lo! see soone after how more bold and free
Her bared bosome she doth broad display;
Lo! see soone after how she fades and falls
away.

LXXV

So passeth, in the passing of a day,
Of mortall life the leafe, the bud, the flowre;
Ne more doth flourish after first decay, [bowre
That erst was sought to deck both bed and
Of many a lady, and many a Paramowre.
Gather therefore the Rose whilst yet is prime,
For soone comes age that will her pride de-
flowre;
Gather the Rose of love whilst yet is time,
Whilst loving thou mayst loved be with equall
crime.

LXXVI

He ceast; and then gan all the quire of birdes
Their diverse notes t'attune unto his lay,
As in approvaunce of his pleasing wordes.
The constant payre heard all that he did say,
Yet swarred not, but kept their forward way
Through many covert groves and thickets close,
In which they creeping did at last display
That wanton Lady with her lover lose, [pose.
Whose sleepeie head she in her lap did soft dis-

LXXVII

Upon a bed of Roses she was layd, [sin;
As faint through heat, or dight to pleasant
And was arayd, or rather disarayd,
All in a veile of silke and silver thin,
That lud no whit her alabaster skin, [be:
But rather shewed more white, if more might
More subtle web Arachne cannot spin;
Nor the fine nets, which oft we woven see
Of scorched dew, do not in th' ayre more
lightly flee.

LXXVIII

Her snowy brest was bare to ready spoyle
Of hungry eies, which n'ote therewith be filld;
And yet, through languour of her late sweet
toyle, [till,
Few drops, more cleare then Nectar, forth dis-
That like pure Orient perles adowne it trild;
And her faire eyes, sweet smyling in delight,
Moyntened their fierie beames, with which she
thrild

Frail harts, yet quenched not; like starry light,
Which, sparkling on the silent waves, does
seeme more bright.

LXXIX

The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to be
Some goodly swayne of honorable place,
That certes it great pitty was to see
Him his nobility so fowle de-face:
A sweet regard and amiable grace,
Mixed with manly sternesse, did appeare,
Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face;
And on his tender lips the downy beare
Did now but freshly spring, and silken blos-
soms beare.

LXXX

His warlike Armes, the ylle instruments
Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree;
And his brave shield, full of old monuments,
Was fowly ras't, that none the signes might
Ne for them ne for honour cared hee, [see:
Ne ought that did to his advancement tend;
But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuries,
His dayes, his goods, his bodie, he did spend:
O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend!

LXXXI

The noble Elfe and carefull Palmer drew
So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull
game, [threw
That sudden forth they on them rusht, and
A subtle net, which only for that same
The skilfull Palmer formally did frame:
So held them under fast; the whites the rest
Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.
The faire Enchauntresse, so unwares opprest,
Tryde all her arts and all her sleights thence
out to wrest.

LXXXII

And eke her lover strove, but all in vaine;
For that same net so cunningly was wound,
That neither guile nor force might it distraigne.
They tooke them both, and both them strongly
bound [found:
In captive bandes, which there they readie
But her in chaines of adamant he tyde;
For nothing else might keepe her safe and
sound:

But Verdant (so he hight) he soone untyde,
And counsell sage in steed thereof to him ap-
plyde.

LXXXIII

But all those pleasaunt bowres, and Pallace
brave,
Guyon broke downe with rigour pittilesse;
Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save
Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,

But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulness.
 Their groves he feld; their gardens did deface;
 Their arbors spoyle; their Cabinets suppress;
 Their banket houses burne; their buildings race;
 And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest
 place.

LXXXIV

Then led they her away, and eke that knight
 They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad.
 The way they came, the same retourn'd they
 right,

Till they arrived where they lately had
 Charm'd those wild-beasts that rag'd with
 furie mad;

Which, now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,
 As in their mistresse reskew whom they lad;
 But them the Palmer soone did pacify.

Then Guyon askt, what meant those beasts
 which there did ly?

LXXXV

Sayd he; 'These seeming beasts are men in-
 deed,

Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed
 Whylome her lovers, which her lustes did feed,
 Now turned into figures hideous,

According to their minde like monstrous.'

'Sad end,' (quoth he) 'of life intemperate,

And mourneful meed of joyes delicious!
 But, Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,
 Let them returned be unto their former state.'

LXXXVI

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe them
 strooke,

And streight of beastes they comely men be-
 Yet being men they did unmanly looke, [came;
 And stared ghastly; some for inward shame,

And some for wrath to see their captive Dame:
 But one above the rest in speciall [name,

That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle by
 Repyned greatly, and did him miscall

That had from hoggish forme him brought to
 naturall.

LXXXVII

Saide Guyon; 'See the mind of beastly man,
 That hath so soone forgot the excellence

Of his creation, when he life began,
 That now he chooseth with vile difference

To be a beast, and lacke intelligence!' [kinde
 To whom the Palmer thus: 'The donghill

Delights in filth and fowle incontinence:
 Let Gryll be Gryll, and have his hoggish minde;

But let us hence depart whilst wether serves
 and winde.'

THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.

I

It falls me here to write of Chastity,
The sayrest vertue, far above the rest:
For which what needes me fetch from Faery
Forreine ensamples it to have exprest?
Sith it is shrined in my Soveraines brest,
And formd so lively in each perfect part,
That to all Ladies, which have it protest,
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart;
If pourtrayd it might bee by any living art.

II

But living art may not least part expresse,
Nor life-resembling pencill it can paynt:
All were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles,
His dedale hand would faile and greatly faynt,
And her perfections with his error t ynt:
Ne Poets witt, that passeth Painter farre
In picturing the parts of beauty daynt,
So hard a workemanship adventure darre,
For fear, through want of words, her excell-
lence to marre.

III

How then shall I, Apprentice to the skill?
That whilome in divinest wits did rayne,
Presume so high to stretch mine humble quill?
Yet now my luckelesse lott doth me coustrayne

Hereto perforce. But, O dredd Soverayne!
Thus far-forth pardon, sith that choicest witt
Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure playne,
That I in colourd shewes may shadow itt,
And antique praises unto present persons fitt.

IV

But if in living colours, and right hew,
Thy selfe thou covet to see pictured,
Who can it doe more lively, or more trew,
Then that sweete verge, with Nectar sprink-
In which a gracious servaunt pictured [led,
His Cynthia, his heavens sayrest light?
That with his melting sweetnes ravished,
And with the wonder of her beames bright,
My senses lulled are in slumber of delight.

V

But let that same delicious Poet lend
A little leave unto a rusticke Muse | mend,
To sing his mistresse prayse; and let him
If ought amis her liking may abuse:
Ne let his sayrest Cynthia refuse
In mirrours more then one her selfe to see;
But either Gloriana let her chuge,
Or in Belphebe fashioned to bee; [chastitee.
In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare

CANTO I.

Guyon encountreth Britomart:
Fayre Florimell is chased:
Ducasses traines and Malocas-
taes champions are defaced.

I

The famous Briton Prince and Faery knight,
After long wayes and perillous paines endur'd,
Having their weary limbes to perfect plight
Restord, and sory wounds right well re-
cur'd,

Of the faire Alma greatly were procur'd
To make there lenger sojourn and abode;
But when thereto they might not be allur'd,
From seeking praise and deeds of armes abroad,
They courteous congé tooke, and forth together
yode.

II

But the captiv'd Acrasia he sent,
Because of travaill long, a nigher way,
With a strong gard, all reskow to prevent,
And her to Faery court safe to convey;
That her for witness of his hard assay
Unto his Faery Queene he might present:
But he him selfe betooke another way,
To make more triall of his hardiment, [went.
And seek adventures as he with Prince Arthure

III

Long so they travelled through wastefull
ways, [wonne,
Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did
To hunt for glory and renowned prayse.
Full many Countreyes they did overrohne,
From the uprising to the setting Sunne,
And many hard adventures did atchieve;
Of all the which they honour ever wonne.
Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve, [grieve.
And to recover right for such as wrong did

IV

At last, as through an open plaine they yode,
They spide a knight that towards pricked fayre;
And him beside an aged Squire there rode,
That seemd to couch under his shield three-
square,
As if that age badd him that burden spare,
And yield it those that stouter could it wield.
He them espying gan him selfe prepare,
And on his arme addresse his goodly shield
That bore a Lion passant in a golden field.

V

Which seeing, good Sir Guyon deare besought
The Prince of grace to let him ronne that turne.
He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught
His poynant speare, and sharply gan to spurne
His fomy steed, whose fiery feete did burne
The verdant gras as he thereon did tread;
Ne did the other backe his foote returne,
But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
And bent his dreadful speare against the
others head.

VI

They beene ymett, and both theyr points
arriv'd;
But Guyon drove so furious and fell, [have riv'd;
That seemd both shield and plate it would
Nathelasse it bore his foe not from his sell,
But made him stagger, as he were not well:
But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware,
Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell;
Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare,
That mischievous mischance his life and
limbs did spare.

VII

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke;
For never yet, with warlike armes he bore
And shivering speare in bloody field first shooke,
He fownd him selfe dishonored so sore.
Ah! gentlest knight, that ever armor bore,
Let not thee grieve dismounted to have beene,
And brought to grownd that never wast before;
For not thy fault, but secret powre unseene:
That speare enchanted was which layd thee
on the greene.

VIII

But weenedst thou what wight thee over-
threw,
Much greater griefe and shamefuller regret
For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst
rehew,
That of a single damzell thou wert mett
On equal plaine, and there so hard besett:
Even the famous Britomart it was,
Whom straunge adventure did from Britayne
sett
To seeke her lover (love far sought alas!)
Whose image shee had seene in Venus looking
glas.

IX

Full of disdainfull wrath he fierce uprose
For to revenge that fowle reprocheful shame,
And snatching his bright sword began to
close
With her on foot, and stoutly forward came:
Dye rather would he then endure that same.
Which when his Palmer saw, he gun to feare
His toward perill, and untoward blame,
Which by that new rencounter he should reare;
For death: sate on the point of that enchanted
speare:

X

And hasting towards him gan fayre per-
swade
Not to provoke misfortune, nor to weene
His speares default to mend with cruell blade;
For by his mightie Science he had seene
The secrete vertue of that weapon keene,
That mortall puissance mote not withstand.
Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy beene:
Great hazard were it, and adventure fond,
To loose long gotten honour with one evill
hond.

XI

By such good meanes he him discourse
From prosecuting his revenging rage:
And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,
His wrathfull will with reason to aswage;
And laid the blame, not to his carriage,
But to his starting steed that swarv'd asyde,
And to the ill purveyaunce of his page,

That had his furnitures not firmly tyde,
So is his angry corage fayrly pacifyde.

XII

Thus reconcilment was betweene them knitt,
Through goodly temperaunce and affection
chaste;

And either vovd with all their power and witt
To let not others honour be defaste
Of friend or foe, who ever it embaste;
Ne armes to beare against the others syde:
In which accord the Prince was also plaste,
And with that golden chaine of concord tyde.
So goodly all agreed they forth yfere did tyde.

XIII

O! goodly usage of those antique tymes,
In which the sword was servaunt unto right;
When not for malice and contentious crymes,
But all for prayse, and prooffe of manly might,
The martiall brood accustomed to fight:
Then honour was the meed of victory,
And yet the vanquished had no despight.
Let later age that noble use envy,
Vyle rancor to avoid and cruel surquedry.

XIV

Long they thus travelled in friendly wise,
Through countreyes waste, and eke well
edifyde,
Seeking adventures hard, to exercise
Their puissaunce, whylome full dernly tryde.
At length they came into a forest wyde,
Whose hideous horror and sad trembling sownd,
Full griesly seemd: Therein they long did
ryde,
Yet tract of living creature none they fownd,
Save Beares, Lyons, and Buls, which romed
them arownd.

XV

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,
Upon a milckwhite Palfrey all alone,
A goodly Lady did foreby them rush,
Whose face did seeme as cleare as Christall
stone,

And eke, through feare, as white as whales bone:
Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,
Which fiedd so fast that nothing mote him hold,
And scarce them leasure gave her passing to
behold.

XVI

Still as she fiedd her eye she backward threw,
As fearing evill that pursewd her fast;
And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,
Loosely disperst with puff of every blast:

All as a blazing starre doth furre outcast
His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dis-
predd,

At sight whereof the people stand aghast;
But the sage wisard telles, as he has redd,
That it importunes death and dolefull drery-
hedd.

XVII

So as they gazed after her a while,
Lo! where a griesly foster forth did rush,
Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle:
His tyreling Jade he fiersly forth dē. push
Through thicke and thin, both over banck and
bush,
In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,
That from his gory sydes the blood did gush.
Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,
And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare
he shooke.

XVIII

Which outrage when those gentle knights
did see,
Full of great envy and fell gealosity
They stayd not to avise who first should bee,
But all spurd after, fast as they mote fly,
To reskew her from Jamefull villany.
The Prince and Guyon equally bylive
Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby
Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame alive:
But after the foule foster Timias did strive.

XIX

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant
mind
Would not so lightly follow beauties chace,
Ne reekt of Ladies Love, did stay behynd,
And them awayted there a certaine space,
To weet if they would turne backe to that place;
But when she saw them gone she forward
went,
As lay her journey, through that perloous Pace,
With stedfast corage and stout hardiment:
Ne evil thing she feard, ne evill thing she ment.

XX

At last, as nigh out of the wood she came,
A stately Castle far away she spyde,
To which her steps directly she did frame.
That Castle was most goodly edifyde,
And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest syde:
But faire before the gate a spatious playne,
Mantled with greene, it selfe did spredde wyde,
On which she saw six knights, that did dar-
rayne
Fiers battail against one with cruell might and
mayne.

XXI

Mainely they all attonce upon him laid,
And sore beset on every side arownd, [maid,
That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dis-
Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd,
All had he lost much blood through many a
wound,

But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way,
To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd,
Made them recoil, and fly from dredd decay.
That none of all the six before him durst assay.

XXII

Like dastard Curres that, having at a bay
The salvage beast embost in wearie chace,
Dare not adventure on the stubborn pray,
Ne byte before, but come from place to place
To get a snatch when turned is his face.
In such distresse and doubtfull jeopardy
When Britomart him saw, she ran apace
Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry
Badd those same six forbear that single enemy.

XXIII

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,
Ne ought the more the mightie strokes sur-
ceasse.
But gathering him rownd about more neare,
Their direfull rancour rather did encrease;
Till that she rushing through the thickest
preasse
Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,
And soone compeld to hearken unto peace.
Tho gan she myldly of them to inquire
The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

XXIV

Whereto that single knight did answere frame:
'These six would me enforce by oddes of might
To chaunge my life, and love another Dame;
That death me liefer were then such despight,
So unto wrong to yield my wrested right:
For I love one, the trueest one on grownd,
Ne list me chaunge; she th' Errant Damzell
hight;
For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd
I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody
wound.'

XXV

'Certes,' (said she) 'then beene ye sixe to blame,
To weene your wrong by force to justify;
For knight to leave his Lady were great shame
That faithfull is, and better were to dy.
All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy,
Then losse of love to him that loves but one:
Ne may love be compeld by maistry;

For soone as maistry comes sweet Love anone
Taketh his nimble winges, and soone away is
gone.'

XXVI

Then spake one of those six; 'There dwelleth
Within this castle wall a Lady fayre, [here
Whose souveraine beautie hath no living pere;
Thereto so bounteous and so debonayre,
That never any mote with her compayre:
She hath ordaind this law, which we approve,
That every knight which doth this way repayre,
In case he have no Lady nor no love,
Shall doe unto her service, never to remove:

XXVII

'But if he have a Lady or a Love,
Then must he her forgoe with fowle defame,
Or els with us by dint of sword approve,
That she is fairer then our fairest Dame;
As did this knight, before ye hither came.'
'Perdy,' (said Britomart) 'the choise is hard;
But what reward had he that overcame?'
'He should advaunced bee to high regard,'
(Said they) 'and have our Ladies love for his
reward.'

XXVIII

'Therefore arcaid, Sir, if thou have a love.'
'Love hath I sure,' (quoth she) 'but Lady none;
Yet will I not fro mine own love remove,
Ne to your Lady will I service done,
But wreake your wronges wrought to this
knight alone,
And prove his cause.' With that, her mortall
speare
She mightily aventred towards one,
And downe him smot ere well aware he weare;
Then to the next she rode, and downe the next
did beare.

XXIX

'Ne did she stay till three on ground she layd
That none of them himselfe could reare againe:
The fourth was by that other knight dismayd,
All were he wearie of his former paine;
That now there do but two of six remaine,
Which two did yield before she did them smight.
'Ah!' (said she then) 'now may ye all see
plaine, [might,
That truth is strong, and trew love most of
That for his trusty servants doth so strongly
fight.'

XXX

'Too well we see,' (saide they) 'and prove too
well [might:
Our faulty weakenes, and your matchlesse
Forthy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,
Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,

And we your liegemen faith unto you plight,
So underneath her feet their swords they mard,
And, after, her besought, well as they might,
To enter in and reape the dew reward.
She graunted; and then in they all together
far'd.

XXXI

Long were it to describe the goodly frame,
And stately port of Castle Joyeous,
(For so that Castle hight by comun name)
Where they were entertaynd with courteous
And comely glee of many gracious
Faيرة Ladies, and of many a gentle knight,
Who, through a Chamber long and spacious,
Eftsoones them brought unto their Ladies
sight,
That of them cleeped was the Lady of Delight.

XXXII

But for to tell the sumptuous aray
Of that great chamber should be labour lost;
For living wit, I weene, cannot display
The roiall riches and exceeding cust
Of every pillour and of every post,
Which all of purest bullion framed were, [best;
And with great perles and pretious stones em-
That the bright glisten of their beames cleare
Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did
appeare.

XXXIII

These stranger knights, through passing,
forth were led
Into an inner rowme, whose royaltie
And rich purveyance might unceath be red;
Mote Princes place be seeme so deckt to bee.
Which stately manner whenas they did see,
The image of superfluous riotize,
Exceeding much the state of meane degree,
They greatly wondred whence so sumptuous
guize [devize.
Might be maintaynd, and each gan diversely

XXXIV

The wals were round about appareiled
With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure;
In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed
The love of Venus and her Paramoure,
The fayre Adonis, turned to a flowre;
A worke of rare device and wondrous wit.
First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,
Which her essayd with many a fervent fit,
When first her tender hart was with his beautie
smit.

XXXV

Then with what sleights and sweet allure-
ments she
Entyst the Boy, as well that art she knew,

And wooed him her Paramoure to bee,
Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew,
To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew;
Now leading him into a secret shade [vew,
From his Beauperes, and from bright heavens
Where him to sleepe she gently would per-
swade,
Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert
glade:

XXXVI

And whilst he slept she over him would spred
Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes,
And her soft arme lay underneath his head,
And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes;
And whilst he bath'd with her two crafty spies
She secretly would search each daintie him,
And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes,
And fragrant violets, and Punces trim;
And ever with sweet Nectar she did sprinkle
him.

XXXVII

So did she steale his hecdelesse hart away,
And joyd his love in secret unespyde:
But for she saw him bent to cruell play,
To hunt the salvage beast in Forrest wyde,
Dreadfull of daunges that mote him betyde,
She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine
From chase of greater beastes, whose brutish
pride
Mote breede him scath unwares but all in
vaine; [doth ordaine?
For who can shun the chance that dest'ny

XXXVIII

Lo! where beyond he lyeth languishing,
Deadly engored of a great wilde Bore;
And by his side the Goddesses groveling
Makes for him endlesse mone, and evermore
With her soft garment wipes away the gore
Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull
hew:
But, when she saw no helpe might him restore,
Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,
Which in that cloth was wrought as if it lively
grew.

XXXIX

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize:
And round about it many beds were dight,
As whylome was the antique worldes guize,
Some for untimely ease, some for delight,
As pleased them to use that use it might;
And all was full of Damzels and of Squires,
Dauncing and reveling both day and night,
And swimming deepe in sensuall desyres;
And Cupid still amongst them kinilled lustfull
fyres.

XL

And all the while sweet Musicke did divide
Her looser notes with Lydian harmony ;
And all the while sweet birdes thereto applide
Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,
Ay caroling of love and jollity,
That wonder was to heare their trim consort.
Which when those knights beheld, with scorn-
full eye
They sdeigned such lascivious disport,
And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wan-
ton sort.

XLI

Thence they were brought to that great
Ladies vew,
Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed
That glistred all with gold and glorious shew,
As the proud Persian Queenes accustomed.
She seemd a woman of great bountihed,
And of rare beantie, saving that askaunce
Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed,
Did roll too lightly, and too often glaunce,
Without regard of grace or comely amenaunce.

XLII

Long worke it were, and needlesse, to devise
Their goodly entertainment and great glee.
She caused them be led in courteous wize
Into a bowre, disarmed for to be,
And cheared well with wine and spicerie :
The Redcrosse Knight was soon disarmed
there :
But the brave Mayd would not disarmed bee,
But onely vented up her umbriere,
And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

XLIII

As when fayre Cynthia. in darkesome night,
Is in a noyous cloud enveloped, [light,
Where she may finde the substance thin and
Breakes forth her silver beames, and her bright
hed
Discovers to the world discomfited :
Of the poore traveler that went astray
With thousand blessings she is heried.
Such was the beantie and the shining ray,
With which fayre Britomart gave light unto
the day.

XLIV

And eke those six, which lately with her
fought,
Now were disarmd, and did them selves present
Unto her vew, and company unsought ;
For they all seemed courteous and gent,
And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent,
Which had them traynd in all civilities,
And goodly taught to tilt and turnament :

Now were they liegemen to this Ladie free,
And her knights service ought, to hold of her
in fee.

XLV

The first of them by name Gardantè hight,
A jolly person, and of comely vew ;
The second was Pariantè, a bold knight ;
And next to him Jocantè did ensew ;
Basciante did him selfe most courteous shew ;
But fierce Bacchantè seemd too fell and keene ;
And yett in armes Noctantè greater grew :
All were faire knights, and goodly well besene ;
But to faire Britomart they all but shadowes
beene.

XLVI

For shee was full of amiable grace
And manly terror mixed therewithall ;
That as the one stird up affections base,
So th' other did mens rash desires apall,
And hold them backe that would in error fall :
As hee that hath espide a vermeill Rose,
To which sharp thornes and breres the way
forstall,
Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,
But wishing it far off his ydle wish doth lose.

XLVII

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight,
All ignorant of her contrary sex,
(For shee her weend a fresh and lusty knight,)
Shee greatly gan enamoured to wex
And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex :
Her fickle hart conceived hasty fyre,
Like sparkes of fire which fall in sclder flex,
That shortly brent into extreme desyre,
And ransackt all her reines with passion entyre.

XLVIII

Efftoones shee grew to great impatience,
And into termes of open outrage brust,
That plaine discovered her incontinence ;
Ne reckt shee who her meaning did mistrust,
For she was given all to fleshly lust,
And poured forth in sensuall delight,
That all regard of shame she had discust,
And meet respect of honor putt to flight :
So shamelesse beauty soone bec-mes a loathly
sight.

XLIX

Faire Ladies, that to love captived arre,
And chaste desires doe nourish in your mind,
Let not her fault your sweete affections marre,
Ne blott the bounty of all womankind. [find :
'Mongst thousands good one wanton Dame to
Emongst the Roses grow some wicked weeds :
For this was not to love, but lust, inclin'd ;

For love does alwaies bring forth bountecus
deeds,
And in each gentle hart desire of honor breeds.

L

Nought so of love this looser Dame did skill,
But as a cole to kindle fleshly flame,
Giving the bridle to her wanton will,
And treading uuder foote her honest name:
Such love is hate, and such desire is shame.
Still did she rove at her with crafty glaunce
Of her false eies, that at her hart did ayme,
And told her meaning in her countenance;
But Britomart dissembled it with ignoraunce.

LI

Supper was shortly dight, and downe they satt;
Where they were served with all sumptuous fare,
Whiles fruitfull Ceres and Lyæus fatt
Poured out their plenty without spight or spare.
Nought wanted there that dainty was and rare,
And aye the cups their bankes did overflow;
And aye betweene the cups she did prepare
Way to her love, and secret darts did throw;
But Britomart would not such guilfull message
know.

LII

So, when they slaked had the fervent heat
Of appetite with meates of every sort,
The Lady did faire Britomart entreat
Her to disarm, and with delightful sport
To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort;
But when shee mote not thereunto be wonne,
(For shee her sexe under that straunge purport
Did use to hide, and plaine appaurance shonne)
In playner wise to tell her grievance she
begonne.

LIII

And all attonce discovered her desire [griefe,
With sighes, and sobes, and plaints, and piteous
The outward sparkes of her inburning fire;
Which spent in vaine, at last she told her
briebe,
That but if she did lend her short reliefe
And doe her comfort, she mote algates dye:
But the chaste damzell, that had never priefe
Of such malengine and fine forgerye.
Did easely beleve her strong extremitye.

LIV

Full easy was for her to have believe,
Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,
And by long triall of the inward griefe
Wherewith imperious love her hart did vexe,
Could judge what paines doe loving harts
perplexe.
Who meanes no guile be guiled soonest shall,
And to faire semblance doth light faith annex:

The bird that knowes not the false fowlers call,
Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall.

LV

Forthy she would not in discourteise wise
Scorne the faire offer of good will profest;
For great rebuke it is love to despise,
Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request,
But with faire countenance, as becomed best,
Her entertaynd: nath'lesse shee iuly deemd
Her love too light, to woove a wandering guest,
Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
That from like inward fire that outward smoke
had seemd.

LVI

Therewith a while she her flit fancy fedd,
Till she mote winne fit time for her desire;
But yet her wound still inward freshly bleid,
And through her bones the false instilled fire
Did spred it selfe, and venime close inspire.
Tho were the tables taken all away;
And every knight, and every gentle Squire,
Gan choose his Dame with *Bascinano* gay,
With whom he ment to make his sport and
courtly play.

LVII

Some fell to daunce, some fel to hazardry,
Some to make love, some to make meryment,
As diverse witts to diverse things apply;
And all the while faire Malceasta bent
Her crafty engins to her close intent,
By this th' eternall lampes, wherewith high Jove
Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,
And the moist daughters of huge Atlas strove
Into the Ocean deepe to drive their weary
drove.

LVIII

High time it seemed then for everie wight
Them to betake unto their kindly rest:
Eftsoones long waxen torches weren light
Unto their bowres to guyden every guest.
Tho, when the Britonesse saw all the rest
Avoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile,
And safe commit to her soft feathered nest,
Wher through long watch, and late daies
weary toile, quite assole.
She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did

LIX

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe
Yshrowded was, and every mortall wight
Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe;
Faire Malceasta, whose engrieved spright
Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,
Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,
And, under the blacke vele of guilty Night,
Her with a scarlott mantle covered [loped.
That was with gold and Ermines faire enve-

LX

Then panting softe, and trembling every joynt,
Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she moov'd,
Where she for secret purpose did appoynt
To lodge the warlike maide, unwisely loov'd;
And, to her bed approaching, first she prov'd
Whether she slept or wak'te: with her softe hand
She softly felt if any member moov'd,
And lent her wary care to understand
If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee fond.

LXI

Which whenas none she fond, with easy shifte,
For feare least her unware she should abrayd,
Th' embroder'd quilt she lightly up did lifte,
And by her side her selfe she softly layd,
Of every finest fingers touch affrayd;
Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,
But inly sigh'd. At last the royall Mayd
Out of her quiet slomber did awake, [take.
And chaunged her weary side the better ease to

LXII

Where feeling one close couched by her side,
She lightly lept out of her filed bedd,
And to her weapon ran, in munde to gride
The loathed leachour. But the Dame, halfe
dadd
Through suddein feare and ghastly drierihedd,
Did shrieke alowd, that through the hous it
rong,
And the whole family, therewith adredd,
Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,
And to the troubled chamber all in armes did
throng.

LXIII

And those sixe knights, that ladies Champions
And eke the Rederosse knight ran to the stownd.
Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them
attons:
Where when cor fusedly they came, they fownd
Their lady lying on the sencelesse grownd:
On thother side they saw the warlike Mayd
Al in her snow-white smocke, with locks un-
bownd,
Threatning the point of her avenging blaed;
That with so troublous terror they were all
dismayd.

LXIV

About their Ladye first they flockt around;
Whom having laid in comfortable couch,
Shortly they reard out of her frosen swoynd;
And afterwards they gan with fowle reproch
To stirre up strife, and troublous contecke
broch:
But by ensample of the last dayes losse.
None of them rashly durst to her approach,
Ne in so glorious spoile themselves embosse:
Her succorde eke the Champion of the bloody
Crosse.

LXV

But one of those sixe knights, Gardantè hight,
Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,
Which forth he sent, with felonous despyght
And fell intent, against the virgin sheene:
The mortall steele stayd not till it was seene
To gore her side; yet was the wound not deepe,
But lightly ras'd her soft silken skin,
That drops of purple blood therout did weepe,
Which did her lilly smock with staines of ver-
meil steep.

LXVI

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew,
And with her flaming sword about her layd,
That none of them soule mischiefe could eschew,
But with her dreadfull strokes were all dis-
mayd:
Here, there, and every where, about her swayd
Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abyde;
And eke the Rederosse knight gave her good
ayd,
Ay joyning foot to foot, and syde to syde;
That in short space their foes they have quite
terrify'de.

LXVII

Thy, when as all were put to shamefull flight,
The noble Britomartis her arayd,
And her bright armes about her body dight.
For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,
Where so loose life, and so ungentle trade,
Was usd of knightes and Ladies seeming gent:
So carely, ere the grosse Earthes gryesy shade
Was all disperst out of the firmament,
They tooke their steeds, and forth upon their
journey went.

CANTO II.

The Redcrosse knight to Britomart
 Describeth Artegall :
 The wondrous myrrhour, by which she
 In love with him did fall.

I

HERE have I cause in men just blame to find,
 That in their proper praise too partial bee,
 And not indifferent to woman kind,
 To whom no share in armes and chevalree
 They doe impart, ne maken memorie
 Of their brave geates and prowesse martiall :
 Scarse do they spare to one, or two, or three,
 Rowme in their writtes ; yet the same writing
small | glories all.
 Does all their deedes deface, and dims their

II

But by record of antique times I finde
 That women wont in warres to beare most sway,
 And to all great exploits them selves inclind,
 Of which they still the girlond bore away ;
 Till envious Men, fearing their rules decay,
 Gan coyne straight lawes to curb their liberty :
 Yet sith they warlike armes have laide away,
 They have exceld in artes and pollicy,
 That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke
 t'envy.

III

Of warlike puis-saunce in ages spent,
 Be thou, faire Britomart, whose prayse I wryte ;
 But of all wisdom bee thou precedent,
 O soveraine Queene ! whose prayse I would
 endyte,
 Endite I would as dowie doth excyte ;
 But ah ! my rymes too rude and rugged arre,
 When in so high an object they do lyte,
 And, striving fit to make, I feare, doe marre :
 Thy selfe thy prayses tell, and make them
 knowne farre.

IV

She, travelling with Guyon, by the way
 Of sondry thinges faire purpose gan to find,
 T'abridg their journey long, and lingring day ;
 Mongst which it fell into that Fairies mind
 To aske this Briton Maid, what uncouth wind
 Brought her into those partes, and what inquest
 Made her dissemble her disguised kind ?
 Faire Lady she him seemd, like Lady drest.
 But fairest knight alive, when armed was her
 breast.

V

Thereat she sighing softly had no powre
 To speake a while, ne ready answer make,
 But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,
 As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,
 And every daintie limbe with horroure shake ;
 And ever and anon the rosy red
 Flasht through her face, as it had beene a flake
 Of lightning through bright heaven fulmined :
 At last, the passion past, she thus him answered.

VI

' Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre
 I taken was from nourses tender pap,
 I have been trained up in warlike stowre,
 To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap
 The warlike ryder to his most mishap :
 Sithence I loathed have my life to lead,
 As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap,
 To finger the fine needle and nyce thread,
 Me lever were with point of foemans speare be
 dead.

VII

' All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,
 To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,
 By sea, by land, where so they may be mett,
 Onely for honour and for high regard,
 Without respect of riches or reward :
 For such intent into these partes I came,
 Withouten compasse or withouten carl,
 Far fro my native soyle, that is by name
 The greater Brytayne, here to seek for praise
 and fame.

VIII

' Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond
 Doe many famous knightes and Ladies wonne,
 And many strange adventures to bee fond,
 Of which great worth and worship may be
 wonne ;
 Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.
 But mote I weete of you, right courteous
 knight,
 Tydings of one that hath unto me donne
 Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
 The which I seeke to wreake, and Artegall
 he hight.'

IX

The worde gone out she backe againe would
As her repenting so to have missayd, [call,
But that he, it uptaking ere the fall,
Her shortly answered: 'Faire martiall Mayd,
Certes ye misavised beene t' upbrayd
A gentle knight with so unknighly blame;
For, weet ye well, of all that ever playd
At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,
The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the name.

X

'Forthy great wonder were it, if such shame
Should ever enter in his bounteous thought,
Or ever doe that mote deservén blame:
The noble courage never weeneth ought
That may unworthy of it selfe be thought.
Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware,
Least that too farre ye have your sorrow sought:
You and your countrey both I wish welfare,
And honour both; for each of other worthy
are.'

XI

The royall Maid woxe inly wondrous glad,
To heare her Love so highly magnifyde;
And joyd that ever she affixed had
Her hart on knight so goodly glorifyde,
How ever finely she it faind to hyde.
The loving mother, that nine monethes did
beare
In the deare closett of her painefull syde
Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,
Doth not so much joyyce as she rejoyced
there.

XII

But to occasion him to further talke,
To feed her humor with his pleasing style,
Her list in stryfull termes with him to balke,
And thus replyde: 'How ever, Sir, ye fyle
Your courteous tongue his prayes to compyle,
It ill besemes a knight of gentle sort,
Such as ye have him boasted, to beguyle
A simple maide, and worke so hainous tort,
In shame of knighthood, as I largely can
report.

XIII

'Let bee therefore my vengeance to dissuade,
And read where I that faytour false may find.'
'Ah! but if reason faire might you perswade
To slake your wrath, and mollify your mind'
(Said he) 'perhaps ye should it better find:
For hardie thing it is, to weene by might
That man to hard conditions to bind,
Or ever hope to match in equall fight,
Whose prowesse paragone saw never living
wight

XIV

'Ne soothlich is it easie for to read
Where now on earth, or how, he may be fownd;
For he ne wonneth in one certeine stead,
But restlesse walketh all the world around,
Ay doing thinges that to his fame redownd,
Defending Ladies cause and Orphans right,
Whereso he heares that any doth confownd
Them comfortlesse through tyranny or might:
So is his sovaine honour raisde to hevén
hight.'

XV

His feeling wordes her feeble sence much
And softly sunck in to her molten hart: [pleased,
Hart that is inly hurt is greatly eased
With hope of thing that may allegge his
smart;
For pleasing wordes are like to Magick art,
That doth the charmed Snake in slomber lay.
Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart,
Yet list the same efforce with faind gainesay;
So dischord ofte in Musick makes the sweeter
lay:—

XVI

And said; 'Sir knight, these ydle termes
forbeare;
And, sith it is uneath to finde his haunt,
Tell me some markes by which he may ap-
pear, If chauce I him encounter paravant; [peare,
For perdy one shall other slay, or daunt:
What shape, what shield, what armes, what
stedd, what stedd,
And what so else his person most may vaunt?'
All which the Rederosse knight to point aredd.
And him in everie part before her fashioned.

XVII

Yet him in everie part before she knew,
How ever list her now her knowledge fayne,
Sith him whylome in Britayne she did vew,
To her revealed in a mirrhour playne;
Whereof did grow her first engrafted payne,
Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did taste,
That but the fruit more sweetnes did contayne,
Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote waste,
And yield the pray of love to lothsome death
at last.

XVIII

By straunge occasion she did him behold,
And much more straungely gan to love his
sight,
As it in bookes hath written beene of old.
In Deheubarth, that now South-wales is hight,
What time king Ryence reign'd and dealed
right,
The great Magitien Merlin had deviz'd,
By his deepe science and hell-dreaded might,

A looking glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,
Whose vertues through the wyde worlde soone
were solemniz'd.

XIX

It vertue had to shew in perfect sight
Whatever thing was in the world contaynd,
Betwixt the lowest earth and hevens hight,
So that it to the looker appertaynd:
Whatever foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,
Therein discovered was, ne ought mote pas,
Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd;
Forthy it round and hollow shaped was,
Like to the world itselfe, and seemd a world
of glus.

XX

Who wonders not, that reades so wonderous
worke?

But who does wonder, that has red the Towre
Wherein th' Aegyptian Phao long did lurke
From all mens vew, that none might her dis-
coure,
Yet she might all men vew out of her bowre?
Great Ptolomee it for his lemans sake
Yboulded all of glasse, by Magicke powre,
And also it impregnable did make; [brake.
Yet when his love was false he with a peaze it

XXI

Such was the glassy globe that Merlin made,
And gave unto king Ryence for his gard,
That never foes his kingdome might invade,
But he it knew at home before he hard
fydings thereof, and so them still debar'd.
It was a famous Present for a Prince,
And worthy worke of infinite reward,
That treasons could bewray, and foes convince:
Happy this Realme, had it remayned ever
since!

XXII

One day it fortun'd fayre Britomart
Into her fathers closet to repayre;
For nothing he from her reserv'd apart,
Being his onely daughter and his hayre;
Where when she had espyde that mirrhour
fayre,
Her selfe awhile therein she vewd in vaine:
Tho, her avizing of the vertues rare
Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe
Her to bethinke of that mote to her selfe per-
taine.

XXIII

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts
Imperious Love hath highest set his throne,
And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts
Of them that to him buxome are and prone:

So thought this Mayd (as maydens use to
done)

Whom fortune for her husband would allot:
Not that she lusted after any one,
For she was pure from blame of sinfull blott;
Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that
same knot.

XXIV

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye
A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize,
Through whose bright ventayle, lifted up on
His manly face, that did his foes agrize, [hye.
And frends to termes of gentle truce entize,
Lookt forth, as Phœbus face out of the east
Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arise:
Forthy his person was, and much increast
Through his Heroicke grace and honorable
gest.

XXV

His crest was covered with a couchant Hownd,
And all his armour seemd of antique mould,
But wondrous massy and assured sound,
And round about yfretted all with gold,
In which there written was, with cyphres old,
Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win:
And on his shield enveloped sevenfold
He bore a crowned little Ermelin,
That deckt the azure field with her fayre
pouldred skin.

XXVI

The Damzell well did vew his Personage
And liked well, ne further fastned not,
But went her way; ne her unguilty age
Did weene, unwares, that her unlucky lot
Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot.
Of hurt unwist most daunger doth redound;
But the false Archer, which that arrow shot
So slyly that she did not feele the wound,
Did smyle full smoothly at her weelless wo-
full stound.

XXVII

Thenceforth the fether in her lofty crest,
Ruffed of love, gan lowly to avale;
And her prowd portance and her princely gest,
With which she earst triumphed, now did
quælle:
Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile,
She woxe; yet wist she nether how, nor why.
She wist not, silly Mayd, what she did aile,
Yet wist she was not well at ease perdy;
Yet thought it was not love, but some melan-
choly.

XXVIII

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew
Defaste the beaute of the shyning skye,
And refte from men the worldes desired vew,
She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye;

But sleepe full far away from her did fly:
In stead thereof sad sighes and sorrowes deepe
Kept watch and ward about her warily,
That nought she did but wayle, and often
steepe [she did weepe.
Her dainty couch with teares which closely

XXX

And if that any drop of slombring rest
Did chaunce to still into her weary spright,
When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest,
Streight-way with dreames, and with fantas-
tick sight

Of dreadfull things, the same was put to flight;
That oft out of her bed she did astart,
As one with vew of ghastly fends affright:
Tho gan she to renew her former smart, [hart.
And thinke of that fayre visage written in her

XXX

One night, when she was tost with such un-
rest, [light,
Her aged Nourse, whose name was Glaucé
Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,
And downe againe her in her warme bed dight:
'Ah! my deare daughter, ah! my dearest
dread,
What uncouth fit,' (said she) 'what evill plight
Hath thee opprest, and with sad dreary head
Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made
thee dead ?

XXXI

'For not of nought these suddein ghastly
All night afflict thy naturall repose; [feares
And all the day, when as thine equall pearces
Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,
Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose;
Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spred
Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but
lose
Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely shed.
As one in wilfull bale for ever buried.

XXXII

'The time that mortall men their weary cares
Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
And every river eke his course forbeares,
Then doth this wicked evill thee infest,
And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled
brest:
Like an huge Aetn' of deepe engulfed gryefe,
Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest, [ryfe,
Whence forth it l reakes in sighes and anguish
As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused
stryfe.

XXXIII

'Ay me! how much I feare least love it bee!
But if that love it be, as sure I read
By known signes and passions which I see,
Be it worthy of thy race and royall seed,
Then I avow, by this most sacred head
Of my deare foster childe, to ease thy griefe
And win thy will: Therefore away doe dread:
For death nor danger from thy dew reliefe
Shall me debarre: tell me therefore, my hefest
liefe!

XXXIV

So having sayd, her twixt her armes twaine
Shee straightly straynd, and colled tenderly;
And every trembling joynt and every vaine
Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily,
To doe the frozen cold away to fly:
And her faire dewy eies with kisses deare
Shee ofte did bathe, and ofte againe did dry;
And ever her importund not to teare
To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

XXXV

The Damzell pauzd; and then thus fearfully:
'Ah! Nurse, what needeth thee to eke my
Is not enough that I alone doe dye, [payne:
But it must doubled bee with death of twaine?
For nought for me but death there doth remaine.
'O daughter deare!' (said she) 'desp're no
whit;
For never sore but might a salve obtaine:
That blinded God, which hath ye blindly smit,
Another arrow hath your lovers hart to hit.'

XXXVI

'But mine is not' (quoth she) 'like other
wound;
For which no reason can finde remedy.'
'Was never such, but note the like be fownd,'
(Said she) 'and though no reason may apply
Salve to your sore, yet love can higher styve
Then reasons reach, and oft hath wonders
donne,
'But neither God of love nor God of skye
Can doe' (said she) 'that which cannot be
donne,' [ere begonne.
'Things ofte impossible' (quoth she) 'seeme,

XXXVII

'These idle wordes' (said she) 'doe nought
as wage [breed:
My stubborne smart, but more annoiaunce
For no, no usuall fire, no usuall rage
Yt is, O Nourse! which on my life doth feed,
And sucks the blood which from my hart doth
bleed:
But since thy faithful zeale lets me not hyde
My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed,

Nor Prince nor pere it is, whose love hath gryde
My feeble breast of late, and launched this
wound wyde.

XXXVIII

'Nor man it is, nor other living wight,
For then some hope I might unto me draw;
But th' only shade and semblant of a knight,
Whose shape or person yet I never saw,
Hath me subjected to loves cruell law:
The same one day, as me mi-fortune led,
I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,
And, pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,
Unwares the hidden hooke with baite I swal-
lowed.

XXXIX

'Sithens it hath infixed faster hold
Within my bleeding bowells, and so sore
Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould,
That all my entrailes flow with poisonous gore,
And th' ulcer groweth daily more and more;
Ne can my running sore finde remedee,
Other then my hard fortune to deplore,
And languish, as the leafe faln from the tree,
Till death make one end of my daies and
miseree!

XL

'Daughter,' (said she) 'what need ye be dis-
mayd?

Or why make ye such Monster of your minde?
Of much more uncouth thing I was affrayd,
Of filthy lust, contrary unto kinde;
But this affection nothing straunge I finde;
For who with reason can you aye reprove
To love the semblaunt pleasing most your
minde, [move?
And yield your heart whence ye cannot re-
No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of love.

XLI

'Not so th' Arabian Myrrhe did set her mynd.
Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart;
But lov'd their native flesh against al kynd,
And to their purpose used wicked art:
Yet playd Pasiphaë a more monstrous part,
That lov'd a Bul, and leard a beast to bee.
Such shamefull lustes who loaths not, which
depart.
From course of nature and of modestee?
Sweete love such lewdnes bands from his faire
companee.

XLII

'But thine, my Deare, (welfare thy heart, my
deare!)
Though straunge beginning had, yet fixed is
On one that worthy may perhaps appeare;
And certes seemes bestowed not amis:

Joy thereof have thou and eternall blis!'
With that, upleaning on her elbow weake,
Her alabaster breast she soft did kis, [quake,
Which all that while shee felt to pant and
As it an Earth-quake were: at last she thus
bespake.

XLIII

'Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease;
For though my love be not so lewdly bent
As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease
My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,
But rather doth my helpelesse grieve augment;
For they, how ever shamefull and unkinde,
Yet did possesse their horrible intent;
Short end of sorrowes they therby did finde;
So was their fortune good, though wicked were
their minde.

XLIV

'But wicked fortune mine, though minde be
good,
Can have no ende nor hope of my desire,
But feed on shadowes whiles I die for food,
And like a shadowe waxe, whiles with entire
Affection I doe languish and expire.
I, fonder then Cephissus foolish chyld,
Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere
His face, was with the love thereof beguyl'd;
I, fonder, love a shade, the body far exyld.'

XLV

'Nought like,' (quoth shee) 'for that same
wretched boy
Was of him selfe the ydle Paramoure,
Both love and lover, without hope of joy,
For which he faded to a watry flowre:
But better fortune thine, and better howre,
Which lov'st the shadow of a warlike knight;
No shadow but a body hath in powre:
That body, wheresoever that it light, [might,
May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke

XLVI

'But if thou may with reason yet repress
The growing evil, ere it strength have gott,
And thes abandond wholly do possesse,
Against it strongly strive, and yield thes nott
Til thou in open fielde adowne be smott:
But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
So that needs love or denth must bee thy lott,
Then, I avow to thee, by wrong or right
To compas thy desire, and find that loved
knight.'

XLVII

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble
spright
Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd

In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might;
And the old-woman carefully displayd
The clothes about her round with busy ayd;
So that at last a little creeping sleepe
Surprisd her sence: Shee, therewith well apayd,
The dronken lamp down in the oyl did steepe,
And sett her by to watch, and sett her by to
weepe.

XLVIII

Earely, the morrow next, before that day
His joyous face did to the world revele,
They both uprose and tooke their ready way
Unto the Church, their prayers to appele
With great devotion, and with little zeale:
For the faire Damzel from the holy herse
Her love-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale:
And that old Dame said many an idle verse,
Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to re-
verse.

XLIX

Retourned home, the royall Infant fell
Into her former fitt; for-why no powre
Nor guidaunce of herselfe in her did dwell:
But th' aged Nourse, her calling to her bowre,
Had gathered Rew. and Savine, and the flowre
Of Camphora, and Calamint, and Dill;
All which she in a earthen Uot did poure.
And to the brim with Coltwood did it fill,
And many drops of milk and blood through it
did spill.

L

Then, taking thrise three heares from off her
head,
Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,

And round about the Pots mouth bound the
thread;
And, after having whispered a space
Certain sad words with hollow voice and bace,
Shee to the virgin sayd, thrise sayd she itt;
'Come daughter, come; come, spit upon my
face;
Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me spitt;
Th' uneven number for this busines is most
fitt.'

LI

That sayd, her rownd about she from her turnd,
She turned her contrary to the Sunne;
Thrise she her turnd contrary, and returned
All contrary; for she the right did shunne;
And ever what she did was streight undonne.
So thought she to undoe her daughters love;
But love, that is in gentle brest begonne,
No ydle charmes so lightly may remove:
That well can witness who by tryall it does
prove.

LII

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd avayle,
Ne slake the fury of her cruell flame, [wayle,
But that shee still did waste, and still did
That, through long languour and hart-burning
brame,
She shortly like a pynded ghost became
Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond.
That when old Glaucé saw, for feare least donne
Of her miscarriage should in her be fond,
She wist not how t'amend, nor how it to with-
stond.

CANTO III. *

Merlin bewrayes to Britomart
The state of Arthegall;
And shews the famous Progeny,
Which from them springen shall.

I

Most sacred fyre, that burnest nightly
In living brests, ykindled first above
Amongst th' eternall spheres and lamping sky,
And thence pourd into men, which men call
Love! [move
Not that same, which doth base affections
In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame,
But that sweete fit that doth true beutie love,
And choseth vertue for his dearest Dame,
Whence spring all noble deedes and never
dying fame:

II

Well did Antiquity a God thee deeme,
That over mortall mindes hast so great might,
To order them as best to thee doth seeme,
And all their actions to direct aright:
The fatall purpose of divine foresight
Thou dost effect in destined descents,
Through deepe impression of thy secret
might,
And stirredst up th' Heroës high intents,
Which the late world admyres for wondrous
moniments.

III

But thy dredd darter in nohe doe triumph
more,
Ne braver prooffe in any of thy powre
Shewd'st thou, then in this royall Maid of yore,
Making her seeke an unknowne Paramoure,
From the worlds end, through many a bitter
stowre: [rayse
From whose two loynes thou afterwarde did
Most famous fruites of matrimoniall bowre,
Which through the earth have spreadd their
living prayse,
That fame in tromp of gold eternally displayes.

IV

Begin then, O my dearest sacred Dame!
Daughter of Phœbus and of Memorye,
That doest ennoble with immortal name
The warlike Worthies. from antiquitye,
In thy great volume of Eternitye:
Begin, O Clio! and recount from hence
My glorious Soveraines goodly auncestrye,
Till that by dew degrees, and long protense,
Thou have it lastly brought unto her Excellence.

V

Full many wayes within her troubled mind
Old Glaucus cast to cure this Ladies griefe:
Full many waies she sought, but none could find,
Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsel, that is
chiefe
And choicest med'cine for sick harts reliefe:
Forthy great care she tooke, and greater feare,
Least that it should her turne to fowle repriefe
And sore reproch, when so her father deare
Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune
heare.

VI

At last she her avide, that he which made
That mirrhour, wherein the sicke Damosell
So straungely vewed her straunge lovers shade,
To weet, the learned Merlin, well could tell
Under what coast of heaven the man did dwell,
And by what means his love might best be
wrought:
For, though beyond the Africk Ismael
Or th' Indian Peru he were, she thought
Him forth through infinite endeavour to have
sought.

VII

Forthwith them selves disguising both in
straunge
And base atyre, that none might them bewray,
To Maridunum, that is now by chaunge [way:
Of name Cayr-Merlin calld, they tooke their
There the wise Merlin whylome wont (they say)
To make his wonne, low underneath the ground,
In a deepe delfe, farre from the vew of day,

That of no living wight he mote be found,
When so he counsell'd with his sprights uncon-
past round.

VIII

And, if thou ever happen that same way
To travell, go to see that dreadful place.
It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)
Under a Rock that lyes a litle space
From the swift Barry, tombing downe apace
Amongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre:
But dare thou not, I charge, in any case
To enter into that same balefull Bowre,
For feare the cruell Feendes should thee un-
wares devoure:

IX

But standing high aloft low lay thine eare,
And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines
And brasen Caudrons thou shalt rombling
heare, [paines
Which thousand sprights with long enduring
Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines:
And oftentimes great grones, and grievous
stownds, [straines,
When too huge toyle and labour them con-
And oftentimes loud strokes and ringing
sowndes [rebowndes,
From under that deepe Rock most horribly

X

The cause, some say, is this: A litle whyle
Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend
A brasen wall in compas to comyle
About Cairmardin, and did it commend
Unto these Sprights to bring to perfect end:
During which worke the Lady of the Lake,
Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did send;
Who, thereby forst his workemen to forsake,
Them bownd till his retourne their labour not
to slake.

XI

In the meane time, through that false Ladies
traîne
He was surpris'd, and buried under beare,
Ne ever to his worke returnd againe:
Nath'lesse, those feends may not their work
forbeare,
So greatly his commandement they feare,
But there doe toyle and travelle day and night,
Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare:
For Merlin had in Magick more insight
Then ever him before, or after, living wight:

XII

For he by wordes could call out of the sky
Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him
obay;

The Land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,
And darksom night he eke could turne to day:
Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,
And hostes of men of meaneest things could
When so him list his enimies to fray; [frame,
That to this day, for terror of his fame,
The feends do quake when any him to them
does name.

XIII

And, sooth, men say that he was not the sounce
Of mortall Syre or other living wight,
But wondrously begotten, and begonne
By false illusion of a guilefull Spright
On a faire Lady Nonne, that whilome light
Matilda, daughter to Pubidius,
Who was the lord of Mathraval by right,
And coosen unto king Ambrosius;
Whence he indued was with skill so merveilous.

XIV

They, here arriving, staid awhile without,
Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend,
But of their first intent gan make new dout.
For dread of daunger which it might portend;
Untill the hardy Mayd (with love to frend)
First entering, the dreadfull Mage there fownd
Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,
And writing straunge characters in the grownd,
With which the stubborne feendes he to his
service bound.

XV

He nought was moved at their entraunce
bold,
For of their comming well he wist afore;
Yet list them bid their businesse to unfold,
As if ought in this world in secrete store
Were from him hidden, or unknowne of yore.
Then Glaucè thus: 'Let not it thee offend,
That we thus rashly through thy darksom
dore
Unwares have prest; for either fatall end,
Or other mightie cause, us two did hither
send.'

XVI

He bad tell on; And then she thus began.
'Now have three Moones with borrowed bro-
thers light [wan,
Thrise shined faire, and thrise seemd dim and
Sith a sore evill, which this virgin bright
Tormenteth and doth plunge in dolefull plight,
First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote
bee,
Or whence it sprong, I can not read aright:
But this I read, that, but if remedee
Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall
see.'

XVII

Therewith th' Enchaunter softly gan to smyle
At her smooth speechees, weeting inly well
That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
And to her said: 'Beldame, by that ye tell
More neede of leach-crafte hath your Damozell,
Then of my skill: who helpe may have else-
where,
In vaine seekes wonders out of Magick spell.'
Th' old woman wox half blance those wordes
to heare,
And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine
apparee;

XVIII

And to him said: 'Yf any leaches skill,
Or other learned meanes, could have redrest
This my deare daughters deepe engrafted ill,
Certes I should be loth thee to molest;
But this sad evill, which doth her intrest,
Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
And housed is within her hollow brest,
That either seemes some cursed witches deed,
Or evill spright, that in her doth such torment
breed.'

XIX

The wisard could no longer beare her bord,
But, brusting forth in laughter, to her sayd:
'Glaucè, what needes this colourable word
To cloke the cause that hath it selfe bewrayd?
Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd,
More hudden are then Sunne in cloudy vele;
Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,
Hath hither brought for succour to appele;
The which the powres to thee are pleased to
revele.'

XX

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe des-
Was all abasht, and her pure yvory [cryde,
Into a cleare Carnation suddene dyde;
As feyre Aurora, rysing hastily,
Doth by her blushing tell that she did lye
All night in old Tithonus frozen bed,
Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly:
But her olde Nourse was nought dishartened,
But vantage made of that which Merlin had
ared;

XXI

And sayd; 'Sith then thou knowest all our
griefe,
(For what doest not thou knowe?) of grace I
pray,
Pittv our playnt, and yield us meet reliefe,
With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,
And then his spirit thus gan forth display:
'Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore
Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee dismay

The hard beginne that meetes thee in the dore,
And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppres-
seth sore:

XXII

'For so must all things excellent begin;
And eke enrooted deepe must be that Tree,
Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin
Till they to heuens hight forth stretched bee:
For from thy wombe a famous Progenee
Shall spring out of the auncient Trojan blood,
Which shall revive the sleeping memoree
Of those same antique Peres, the heuens brood,
Which Greeke and Asian rivers stayned with
their blood.

XXIII

'Renowned kings, and sacred Emperours,
Thy fruitfull Offspring, shall from thee descend;
Have Capitaines, and most mighty warriours,
That shall their conquests through all lands
extend,

And their decayed kingdomes shall amend:
The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,
They shall appeare, and mightily defend
Against their forren foe that confines from
farre,
Till universall peace compound all civill jarre.

XXIV

'It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye
Glauncing unwaies in charmed looking glas,
But the straight course of heavenly destiny,
Led with eternall providence, that has
Guyded thy glaunce, to bring his will to pas:
Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,
To love the prowrest knight that ever was.
Therefore submit thy wayes unto his will,
And doe by all dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.

XXV

'But read,' (saide Glaucè) 'thou Magitian,
What meanes shall she out seeke, or what
waies take? [man?]
How shall she know, how shall she finde the
Or what needes her to toyle, sith fates can
make

Way for themselves their purpose to pertake?'
Then Merlin thus: 'Indeede the fates are
firme, [shake];
And may not shrink, though all the world do
Yet ought mens good endeoures them confirme,
And guyde the heavenly causes to their con-
stant terme.

XXVI

'The man, whom heavens have ordaynd to
The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall: [bee
He wonneth in the land of Fayerree,
Yet is no Fary borne, ne sib at all

To Elfes, but sprung of seed terrestriall,
And whylome by false Faries stolne away,
Whyles yet in infant cradle he did cull;
Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,
But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay:

XXVII

'But sooth he is the sonne of Gorlois,
And brother unto Cadur, Cornish king;
And for his warlike feates renowned is,
From where the day out of the sea doth
Untill the closure of the Evening [spring,
From thence him, firmly bound with faith-
full band. [bring,
To this his native soyle thou backe shalt
Strongly to ayde his countrey to withstand
The powre of foraine Paynims, which invade
thy land.

XXVIII

'Great ayd thereto his mighty puis-saunce
And dreaded name shall give in that sad day;
Where also proofe of thy prow valiaunce
Thou then shalt make, t' increase thy lover's
prayer. [sway,
Long time ye both in armes shall beare great
Till thy wombes burden thee from them de-
call,
And his last fate him from thee take away;
Too rathe cut off by practise criminall
Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mis-
chance fall.

XXIX

'With thee yet shall he leave, for memory
Of his late puis-saunce, his ymage dead,
That living him in all activity
To thee shall represent. He, from the head
Of his coosen Constantus, without dread
Shall take the crowne that was his fathers
right, [stead;
And therewith crowne himselfe in th' other.
Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might
Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

XXX

'Like as a Lyon that in drowsie cave
Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he
shake; [brave
And comming forth shall spred his banner
Over the troubled South, that it shall make
The warlike Mertians for feare to quake:
Thrice shall he fight with them, and twice
shall win; [make:
But the third time shall sayre accordaunce
And, if he then with victorie can lin,
Hee shall his dayes with peace bring to his
earthly In.

XXXI

'His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him suc-
In kingdome, but not in felicity: [ceede
Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,
And with great honour many batteills try;
But at the last to th' importunity
Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield:
But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily
Avenge his fathers losse with speare and shield,
And his proud foes discomfit in victorious
field.

XXXII

'Behold the man! and tell me, Britomart,
If ay more goodly creature thou didst see?
How like a Gyaunt in each manly part
Beares he himselfe with portly majestee,
That one of th' old Heroes seemes to bee!
He the six Islands, comprovinciall
In auncient times unto great Britainee,
Shall to the same reduce, and to him call
Their sondry kings to do their homiage severall.

XXXIII

'All which his sonne Careticus awhile
Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppress;
Untill a stranger king, from unknowne soyle
Arriving, him with multitude oppresse;
Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse
Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,
Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse,
Shall overswim the sea, with many one
Of his Norweyses, to assist the Britons fone.

XXXIV

'He in his furie all shall overronne,
And holy Church with faithlesse handes deface,
That thy sad people, utterly fordonne,
Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace.
Was never so great waste in any place,
Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men;
For all thy Citities they shall sacke and race,
And the greene grasse that groweth they shall
bren, [den.
That even the wilde beast shall dy in starved

XXXV

'Whiles thus thy Britons doe in languour pine,
Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise,
Serving th' ambitious will of Augustine,
And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise
Shall backe repulse the valiaunt Brockwell
twise,
And Bangor with massacred Martyrs fill,
But the third time shall rewe his foolhardie:
For Cadwan, pittying his peoples ill, [kill.
Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons

XXXVI

'But after him, Cadwallin mightily
On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall
Ne shall avails the wicked sorcery [wreake;
Of false Pellite his purposes to breake;
But him shall slay, and on a gallows bleak
Shall give th' enchaunter his unhappy hire,
Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake,
From their long vassallage gin to respire, [ire.
And on their Paynim foes avenge their rancled

XXXVII

'Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,
Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have slayne,
Offricke and Osricke, twines unfortunate,
Both slaine in battaile upon Layburne playne,
Together with the king of Louthiaue,
Hight Adin, and the king of Orkeny,
Both joynt partakers of their fatal payne:
But Penda, fearefull of like desteny, [jealty.
Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and sweare

XXXVIII

'Him shall he make his fatal Instrument
T' afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd;
He marching forth with fury insolent
Against the good king Oswald, who indewd
With heavenly powre, and by Angels reskewd,
Al holding crosses in their hands on hye,
Shall him defeat withouten blood imbrowd:
Of which that field, for endlesse memory,
Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

XXXIX

'Whereat Cadwallin wroth shall forth issew,
And an huge hoste into Northumberland,
With which he godly Oswald shall subdew,
And crowne with martiredome his sacred head:
Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like dread,
With price o' silver shall his kingdome buy;
And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread,
Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly dye:
But shall with gifts his Lord Cadwallin pacify.

XL

'Then shall Cadwallin die; and then the raine
Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye;
Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with paine
Or powre, be hable it to remedy,
When the full time, prefixt by destiny,
Shal be expird of Britons regiment:
For heven it selfe shall their successe envy,
And them with plagues and murrins pestilent
Consume, till all their warlike puissance be
spent.

XLI

Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills
Of dying people, during eight yeares space,

Cadwallader, not yielding to his ills,
From Armoricke, where long in wretched cace
He liv'd, retourning to his native place,
Shal be by vision staide from his intent:
For th' heavens have decreed to displace
The Britons for their sinnes Jew punishment
And to the Saxons over-give their government.

XLII

'Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe,
Be to the Briton babe that shal be borne
To live in thraldome of his fathers foe!
Late king, now captive; late lord, now forlorne;
The worlds reproch; the cruell victors scorne;
Banisht from princely bowre to wastefull wood!
O! who shal helpe me to lament and mourne
The roy all seed, the antique Troyen blood,
Whose empire lenger here then ever any stood?'

XLIII

The Damzell was full deepe empassioned
Both for his griefe, and for her peoples sake,
Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned;
And, sighing sore, at length him thus bespake:
'Ah! but will hevens fury never slake,
Nor vengeance huge relent it selfe at last?
Will not long misery late mercy make,
But shall their name for ever be defaste,
And quite from off the earth their memory be
ruste?'

XLIV

'Nay but the terme' (sayd he) 'is limited,
That in this thraldome Britons shall abide;
And the just revolution measured
That they as Straungers shal be notiffide: [plide,
For twise fowre hundreth yeares shalbe sup-
p're they to former rule restor'd shal be,
And their importune fates all satisfide:
Yet, during this their most obscuritee,
Their beames shall ofte breake forth, tiffat men
them faire may see.

XLV

'For Rhodoricke, whose surname shal be
Great,
Shall of him selfe a brave ensample shew,
That Saxon kinges his friendship shall intreat;
And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew
The salvage minds with skill of just and trew:
Ther Griffith Conan also shall upreare
His dreaded heat, and the old sparkes renew
Of native corage, that his foes shall feare,
Least back againe the kingdom he from them
should beare.

XLVI

'Ne shall the Saxons selves all penceably
Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons
wonne

First ill, and after ruled wickedly;
For, ere two hundred yeares be full outronne,
There shall a Raven, far from rising Sunne,
With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly,
And bid his faithlesse chickens overronne
The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty
In their avenge tread downe the victors sur-
quedry.

XLVII

'Yet shall a third both these and thine sub-
dew,
There shall a Lion from the sea-bord wood
Of Neustria come roring, with a crew
Of hungry whelpes, his battailons bold brood,
Whose claws were newly dipt in crudelly
blood,
That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend
Th' usurped crowne, as if that he were wood,
And the spoile of the countrey conquered
Emongst his young ones shall divide with
bountyhed.

XLVIII

'Tho, when the terme is full accomplishid,
There shall a sparke of fire, which hath long-
while
Bene in his ashes raked up and hid,
Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
Of Mona, where it lurked in exile;
Which shall breake forth into bright burning
flame,
And reach into the house that beares the stile
Of roiall majesty and soveraine name:
So shall the Briton blood their crowne agayn
reclame.

XLIX

'Thenceforth eternall union shall be made
Betwene the nations different afore,
And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade
The warlike minds to learne her goodly lore,
And civile armes to exercise no more:
Then shall a royall Virgin eaine, which shall
Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke shore,
And the great Castle amite so sore withall,
That it shall make him shake, and shortly
learn to fall.

L

'But yet the end is not.'—There Merlin
stayd,
As overcome of the spirites powre,
Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,
That secretly he saw, yet note discourse:
Which sudden fitt, and halfe extatick stoure,
When the two fearefull women saw, they grew
Greatly confused in behavoure.
At last, the fury past, to former hew
Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as earst
did shew.

LI

Then, when them selves they well instructed
had
Of all that needed them to be inquired,
They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad,
With lighter hearts unto their home retir'd;
Where they in secret counsell close conspir'd,
How to effect so hard an enterprize,
And to possesse the purpose they desir'd:
Now this, now that, twixt them they did devise,
And diverse plots did frame to maske in strange
disguise.

LII

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit
Conceiv'd a bold devise, and thus bespake:
'Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most fit,
That of the time doth dew advantage take.
Ye see that good king Uther now doth make
Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren,
high
Octa and Oza, whome hee lately brake
Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight,
That now all Britany doth burne in armes
bright.

LIII

'That, therefore, uought our passage may
enpeach,
Let us in feigned armes our selves disguise,
And our weake hands (need makes good
schollers) teach
The dreadful speune and shield to exercise:
Ne certes, daughter, that same warlike wize,
I weene, would you misseeme; for ye beene
tall,
And large of limbe t' achieve an hard emprize;
Ne ought ye want but skil, which praezize small
Wil bring, and shortly make you a mayd
Martiall.

LIV

'And, sooth, it ought your corage much
inflame
To heare so often, in that royall house,
From whence, to none inferior, ye came,
Bards tell of many women valorous,
Which have full many feats adventurous
Perform'd, in paragone of proudest men:
The bold Bundoeca, whose victorious [dolen;
Exploits made Rome to quake; stout Guen-
Renowned Martia; and redoubtet Emmilen.

LV

'And, that which more then all the rest may
sway,
Late dayes ensample, which these eyes beheld:
In the last field before Menevia,
Which Uther with those forrein Pagans held,

I saw a Saxon Virgin, the which feld
Great Ulfen thrise upon the bloody playne;
And, had not Carados her hand withheld
From rash revenge, she had him surely slayne:
Yet Carados himselfe from her escapt with
payne.'

LVI

'Ah! read,' (quoth Britomart) 'how is the
hight?'
'Fayre Angela' (quoth she) 'men do her call,
No whit lesse fayre then terrible in fight:
She hath the leading of a Martiall
And mightie people, dreaded more then all
The other Saxons, which doe, for her sake
And love, themselves of her name *Angles* call.
Therefore, faire Infant, her ensample make
Unto thy selfe, and equal courage to thee take.'

LVII

Her harty wordes so deepe into the mynd
Of the yong Damzell sunke, that great desire
Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,
And generous stout courage did inspyre,
That she resolv'd, unwitting to her Syre,
Advent'rous knighthood on her selfe to don;
And counsell with her Nourse her Maides
To turne into a massy habergeon, [attire
And bad her all things put in readinesse anon.

LVIII

Th' old woman nought that needed did omit,
But all things did conveniently purway.
It fortun'd (so time their turne did fitt)
A band of Britons, ryding on forray
Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray
Of Saxon goods: amongst the which was seene
A goodly Armour, and full rich aray,
Which long'd to Angela, the Saxon Queene,
All fretted round with gold, and goodly wel
bescene.

LIX

The same, with all the other ornaments,
King Ryence caused to be hanged by
In his chiefe Church, for endlesse monuments
Of his successee and gladfull victory:
Of which her selfe avising readily,
In th' evening late old Glaucé thither led
Faire Britomart, and, that same Armory
Downe taking, her therein appareled
Well as she might, and with brave bauldrick
garnished.

LX

Beside those armes there stood a mightie
speare,
Which Bladud made by Magick art of yore,
And usd the same in batteill aye to beare;
Sith which it had beene here preserv'd in store,

For his great virtues proved long afore:
 For never wight so fast in sell could sit,
 But him perforce unto the ground it bore.
 Both speare she tooke and shield which hong
 by it; [purpose fit.
 Both speare and shield of great powre, for her

LXI

Thus when she had the virgin all arayd,
 Another hainesse which did hang thereby
 About her selfe she dight, that the yong Mayd
 She might in equall armes accompany.
 And as her Squire attend her carefully,
 Tho to their ready Steedes they clombe full
 light, [them espy,
 And through back waies, that none might

Covered with secret cloud of silent night,
 Themselves they forth conuaid, and passed
 forward right.

LXII

Ne rested they, till that to Faery lond
 They came, as Merlin them directed late:
 Where, meeting with this Rederosse Knight,
 she fond
 Of diuerse thinges discourses to dilate,
 But most of Arthegall and his estate.
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part:
 Then each to other, well affectionate,
 Friendship professed with unfained hart.
 The Rederosse Knight diuers, but forth rode
 Britomart.

CANTO IV.

Bold Marinell of Britomart
 Is throwne on the Rich strand:
 Faire Mornell of Arthure is
 Long followed, but not fond.

I

WHERE is the Antique glory now become,
 That whylome wont in women to appeare?
 Where be the brave atchievements doen by
 some? [speare,
 Where be the battailles, where the shield and
 And all the conquests which them high did
 reare,
 That matter made for famous Poets verse,
 And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?
 Beene they all dead, and laide in dolefull herse,
 Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe
 reverse?

II

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore;
 But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake!
 For all too long I burne with envy sore
 To heare the warlike feates which Homere spake
 Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake
 Of Greckish blood so ofte in Trojan plaine;
 But when I reade, how stout Debora strake
 Proud Sisera, and how Camill hath slaine
 The huge Orsiloehus, I swell with great dis-
 daine.

III

Yet these, and all that els had puissance,
 Cannot with noble Britomart compare,
 As well for glorie of great valiaunce,
 As for pure chastitee and vertue rare,
 That all her goodly deedes doe well declare.
 Well worthie stock, from which the branches
 sprong
 That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare,

As thee, O Queene! the matter of my song,
 Whose lignage from this Lady I deriue along.

IV

Who when, through speeches with the Red-
 crosse Knight,
 She leanned had th' estate of Arthegall,
 And in each point her selfe informd aright,
 A friendly league of love perpetuall
 She with him bound, and Congé tooke withall.
 Then he forth on his journey did proceede,
 To seeke adventures which mote him befall,
 And win him worship through his warlike deed,
 Which alwaies of his paines he made the
 chiefest meed.

V

But Britomart kept on her former course,
 Ne ever dofte her armes, but all the way
 Grew pensive through that amarus discourse,
 By which the Rederosse knight did earst display
 Her lovers shape and cheualrous array:
 A thousand thoughts she fashiond in her
 mind,
 And in her feigning fancie did pourtray
 Him such as fittest she for love could find,
 Wise, warlike, personable, courteous, and kind.

VI

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound
 she fedd,
 And thought so to beguile her grievous smart;
 But so her smart was much more grievous breidd,
 And the deepe wound more deep engord her
 hart,

That nought but death her dolour mote depart.
So forth she rode, without repose or rest,
Searching all lands and each remotest part,
Following the guydance of her blinded guest,
Till that to the sea-coast at length she her
address.

VII

There she alighted from her light-foot beast,
And sitting downe upon the rocky shore,
Badd her old Squyre unlace her lofty creast:
Tho having vewd awhile the surges hore
That gainst the craggy cliffs did loudly rore,
And in thef raging surquedry disdaynd
That the fast earth affronted them so sore,
And their devouring covetize restraynd;
Therent she sighed deepe, and after thus com-
playnd.

VIII

'Huge sea of sorrow and tempestuous grieve,
Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long
Far from the hoped haven of reliefe,
Why doe thy cruel billowes beat so strong,
And thy moyst mountaines each on others
throng,
Threatning to swallow up my fearefull lyfe?
O! doe thy cruell wrath and spightfull wrong
At length allay, and sting thy stormy strife,
Which in thy troubled bowels raignes and
rageth ryfe.

IX

'For els my feeble vessell, crazd and crackt
Through thy strong buffets and outrageous
blowes,
Cannot endure, but needes it must be wrackt
On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,
The whiles that love it steres, and fortune
rowes:
Love, my lewd Pilott, hath a restlesse minde;
And fortune, Boteswaine, no assurance knowes;
But saile withouten starres gainst tyde and
winde:
How can they other doe, sith both are bold and

X

'Thou God of windes, that raignest in the seas,
That raignest also in the Continent,
At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,
The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,
Unto the glad-some port of her intent.
Then, when I shall my selfe in safety see,
A table, for eternall mouiment
Of thy great grace and my great jeoparddees,
Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee!'

XI

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,
She shut up all her plaint in privy grieve

For her great courage would not let her weepe,
Till that old Glaucé gan with sharpe repleife
Her to restraine, and give her good reliefe
Through hope of those, which Merlin had her
told

Should of her name and nation be chiefe,
And fetch their being from the sacred mould
Of her immortall womb, to be in heaven enblé.

XII

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde
Where far away one, all in armour bright,
With hasty gallop towards her did ryde.
Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight
Her Helmet, to her Courser mounting light:
Her former sorrow into suddain wrath,
Both coosen passions of distrustfull spright,
Converting, forth she beates the dusty path:
Love and despiht attorce her courage kindled
hath.

XIII

As, when a foggy mist hath overcast
The face of heaven, and the cleare ayre engroste,
The world in darkenes dwels; till that at last
The watry Southwinde, from the seabord coste
Upblowing, doth disperse the vapour lo'ste,
And poures it selfe forth in a stormy shoure:
So the fayre Britomart, having discolo'ste
Her clowdy care into a wrathfull stowre,
The mist of griefe dissolv'd did into vengeance
poure.

XIV

Eftsoones, her goodly shield addressing fayre,
That mortall speare she in her hand did take,
And unto battaill did her selfe prepayre.
The knight, approaching, sternely her bespake:
'Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make
By this forbidden way in my despiht,
Ne doest by others death ensample take,
I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might,
Least afterwards it be too late to take thy flight.'

XV

Ythrild with deepe disdain of his proud
threat,
She shortly thus: 'Fly they, that need to fly;
Wordes fearen babes. I meane not thee entreat
To passe, but maugre thee will passe or dy.'
Ne lenger stayd for th' other to reply, [knowne.
But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly
Strongly the straunge knight ran, and sturdily
Strooke her full on the brest, that made her
downe
Decline her head, and touch her crouper with
[her crown.

XVI

But she againe him in the shield did amite
With so fierce furie and great puissaunce,

That, through his three-square suchin percing
quite
And through his mayled hauberque, by mis-
chance [glance.
The wicked Steele through his left side did
Him so transfixe she before her bore
Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce;
Till, sadly soucing on the sandy shore, [gore.
He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in his

XVII

Like as the sacred Oxe that carelesse stands,
With gilden hornes and flowry gurlonds crowd,
Proud of his dying honor and deare bandes,
Whiles th' altars fume with frankincense
arownd,
All suddenly, with mortall stroke astownd,
Doth groveling fall, and with his streaming gore
Distaines the pillours and the holy grownd,
And the faire flowres that decked him afore:
So fell proud Marinell upon the pretious shore.

XVIII

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,
But forward rode, and kept her ready way
Along the strond; which, as she over-went,
She saw bestrowed all with rich aray
Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,
And all the gravell mixt with golden owre:
Whereat she wondred much, but would not
stay
For gold, or perles, or pretious stones, an howre,
But them despised all; for all was in her powre.

XIX

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,
Tydings hercof came to his mothers eare:
His mother was the blacke-browd Cymment,
The daughter of great Nereus, which did beare
This warlike sonne unto an earthly pearle,
The famous Dumarin; who, on a day
Finding the Nymph asleepe in secret wheare,
As he by chance did wander that same way,
Was taken with her love, and by her closely lay.

XX

There he this knight of her begot, whom borne
She, of his father, Marinell did name;
And in a rocky cave, as wight forlorne,
Long time she fostred up, till he became
A mighty man at armes, and mickle fame
Did get through great adventures by him donne:
For never man he suffred by that same
Rich strond to travell, whereas he did wonne,
But that he must do battail with the Sea-
nymphes sonne.

XXI

An hundred knights of honorable name
He had subdew'd, and then his vas-nls made
That through all Faerie lond his noble fame
Now blazed was, and feare did all invade,
That none durst passen through that perilous
glade:
And to advaunce his name and glory more,
Her Sea-god syre she dearely did perswade
T'endow her sonne with threasure and rich store
Bove all the sonnes that were of earthly
wombes ybore.

XXII

The God did graunt his daughters deare
demaund,
To doen his Nephew in all riches flow;
Eftsoones his heaped waves he did commaund
Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw
All the huge threasure, which the sea below
Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe,
And him enriched through the overthaw
And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe
And often wayle their wealth, which he from
them did keepe.

XXIII

Shortly upon that shore there heaped was
Exceeding riches and all pretious things,
The spoyle of all the world; that it did pas
The wealth of th' East, and pompe of Persian
kings:
Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owches, rings,
And all that els was pretious and deare,
The sea unto him voluntary brings;
That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,
As was in all the lond of Faery, or else where.

XXIV

Thereto he was a doughty dreaded knight,
Tryde often to the seath of many Deare,
That none in equall armes him matchen might:
The which his mother seeing gan to feare
Least his too haughtie hardines might reare
Some hard mishap in hazard of his life.
Forthly she oft him counseled to forbear
The bloody batteill and to stirre up strife,
But after all his warre to rest his wearie knife.

XXV

And, for his more assurance, she inquir'd
One day of Proteus by his mighty spell
(For Proteus was with prophecy inspir'd)
Her deare sonnes destiny to her to tell,
And the sad end of her sweet Marinell:
Who, through foresight of his eternall skill,
Bad her from womankind to keepe him well,
For of a woman he should have much ill;
A virgin straunge and stout him should dismay
or kill.

XXVI

Fortly she gave him warning every day
The love of women not to entertaine;
A lesson too too hard for living clay
From love in course of nature to refraine.
Yet he his mothers love did well retaine,
And ever from fayre Ladies love did fly;
Yet many Ladies fayre did oft complaine,
That they for love of him would algates dy:
Dy, who so list for him, he was loves enemy.

e

XXVII

But ah! who can deceive his destiny,
Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate?
That, when he sleeps in most security
And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate
And findeth dew effect or soone or late;
So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.
His mother bad him womens love to hate,
For she of womans force did feare no harme;
So, weening to have arm'd him, she did quite
disarme.

XXVIII

This was that woman, this that deadly
wound,
That Proteus prophecide should him dismay;
The which his mother vainely did expound
To be hart-wounding love, which should assay
To bring her sonne unto his last decay.
So ticle be the termes of mortall state,
And full of subtle sophismes, which doe play
With double senses, and with false debate,
To approve the unknown purpose of eternall
fate.

XXIX

Too trew the famous Marinell it fownd,
Who, through late triall, on that wealthy
Strond
Inglorious now lies in sencelesse sownnd,
Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond.
Which when his mother deare did understand,
And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd
Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,
Gathering sweete daffadillies, to have made
Gay girlonds from the Sun their foreheads fayr
to shade;

XXX

Estesoones both flowres and girlonds far away
Shee flong, and her faire dewy lockes yrent;
To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,
And gamesom merth to grievous dreriment:
Shee threw her selfe downe on the Continent,
Ne word did speake, but lay as in a sownne,
Whiles all her sisters did for her lament
With yelling outcries, and with shrieking
sowne;
And every one did teare her girlond from her

. XXXI

Soone as shee up out of her deadly fitt
Arose, shee bad her charott to be brought;
And all her sisters that with her did sitt
Bad eke attonce their charetts to be sought:
Tho, full of bitter griefe and pensife thought,
She to her wagon clombe; clombe all the rest,
And forth together went with sorrow flaught.
The waves, obedient to theyr behest,
Them yielded ready passage, and their rage
surreast.

XXXII

Great Neptune stode amazed at their sight,
Whiles on his broad rownd backe they softly
slid,
And eke him selfe mournd at their mournful
plight,
Yet wist not what their wailing ment; yet did,
For great compassion of their sorow, bid
His mighty waters to them buxome bee:
Estesoones the roaring billowes still abid,
And all the griesly Monsters of the See
Stood gaping at their gate, and wondred them
to see.

XXXIII

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray
Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymoent:
They were all taught by Triton to obey
To the long raynes at her commaundement:
As swifte as swallowes on the waves they
went,
That their brode flaggy finnes no fume did
Ne bubbling rowndell they behinde them sent.
The rest, of other fishes drawn weare,
Which with their sinny oars the swelling sea
did sheare.

XXXIV

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brim
Of the Rich Strond, their charetts they forlore,
And let their temed fishes softly swim
Along the margent of the lony shore,
Least that their finnes should bruze, and
surbate sore
Their tender feete upon the stony grownd:
And comming to the place, whee all in gore
And cruddy blood enwallowd they fownd
The lucklesse Marinell lying in deadly sownnd,

XXXV

His mother sownndd thrise, and the third time
Could scarce recovered bee out of her paine:
Had she not bene devoid of mortall slime,
Shee should not then have bene relyv'd againe;
But, soone as life recovered had the raine,
Shee made so piteous mone and deare wayment,
That the hard rocks could scarce from tears
refraine;

And all her sister Nymphes with one consent
Supplide her sobbing brochures with sad complement.

XXXVI

'Deare image of my selfe, (she sayd) 'that is
The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne,
Is this thine high advancement? O! is this
Th' immortall name, with which thee, yet
unborne,

Thy Grandsire Nereus promist to adorne?
Now lyst thou of life and honor reste;
Now lyst thou a lump of earth forlorne;
Ne of thy late life memory is left,
Ne can thy irrevocable destiny bee wete.

XXXVII

'Fond Proteus, father of false prophesies!
And they more fond that credit to thee give!
Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,
That so deepe wound through these deare
members drive.

I feared love; but they that love doe live,
But they that dye doe nether love nor hate:
Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgive;
And to my selfe, and to accursed fate,
The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisdom bought
too late!

XXXVIII

'O! what avails it of immortall seed
To beene ybredd and never borne to dye?
Farre better I it deeme to die with speed
Then waste in woe and wayfull miserie:
Who dyes, the utmost dolor doth aby;e;
But who that lives is left to waile his losse:
So life is losse, and death felicity:
Sad life worse then glad death; and greater
crosse [to engrosse
To see frends grave, then dead the grave self

XXXIX

'But if the heavens did his dayes envie,
And my short blis maligne, yet mote they well
Thus much afford me, ere that he did die,
That the dim eies of my deare Marinell
I mote have closed, and him bed farewell,
Sith otnr offices for mother meet
They would not graunt—
Yet, maulgre them, farewell, my sweetest
sweet! [shall meet!
Farewell, my sweetest sonne, sith we no more

XL

Thus when they all had sorowed their fill,
They softly gan to search his grisely wound:
And, that they might him handle more at will,
They him disarmd; and, spredding on the
ground

Their watchet mantles frindgd with silver
rownd,

They softly wipt away the gelly blood
From th' orifice; which having well upbownd,
They poured in soveraine balme and Nectar
good, [fool,
Good both for ertilly med'cine and for hevenly

XLI

Tho when the lilly handed Liagore
(This Liagore whilome had learned skill
In leaches craft, by great Apolloes lore,
Sith her whilome upon high Pindus hill
He loved, and at last her wombe did fill
With hevenly seed, whereof wise Paeon sprong)
Did feele hir pulse, shee knew thers staied still
Some litle life his feeble sprites emong;
Which to his mother told, despayre she from
her flong,

XLII

Tho, up him taking in their tender hands,
They easely unto her charett beare:
Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
And strowe with flowres the lamentable beare.
Then all the rest into their coches clim,
And through the brackish waves their passage
sheare;
Upon great Neptunes necke they softly swim,
And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

XLIII

Deepe in the bottome of the sea her bowro
Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,
Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy
showre,
And vaulted all within, like to the Skye,
In which the Gods doe dwell eternally;
There they him laide in easy couch well dight,
And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply
Salves to his wounds, and medicines of might;
For Tryphon of sea gods the soveraine leach is
light.

XLIV

The whiles the Nymphes sitt all about him
rownd,
Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight;
And ofte his mother, vewing his wide wovnd,
Cursed the hand that did so deadly smight
Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight:
But none of all those curses overtooke
The warlike Maide, th' ensample of that might;
But fairely well shee thryvd, and well did
brooke
Her noble deeds, ne her right course for
ought forooke.

XLV

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew,
To bring to passe his mischievous intent,
Now that he had her singled from the crew
Of courteous knights, the Prince and Faery gent,
Whom late in chace of beauty excellent
Shee left, pursewing that same foster strong,
Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,
And full of sly zeale, him followed long,
To reskew her from shame, and to revenge her
wrong.

XLVI

Through thick and thin, through mountains
and through playns,
Those two great champions did attonce pursew
The fearefull damzell with incessant payns;
Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from
vew
Of hunter swifte and sent of howndes trew.
At last they came unto a double way;
Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskew,
Themselves they did dispart, each to assay
Whether more happy were to win so goodly
pray.

XLVII

But Timias, the Princes Gentle Squire,
That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent,
And with proud envy and indignat yre
After that wicked foster fiercely went:
So beene they three three sondry wayes ybent;
But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell, pent,
Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did re-
To take that way in which that Damozell
Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend of hell.

XLVIII

At last of her far off he gained vew.
Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,
And ever as he nigher to her drew,
So evermore he did increase his speed,
And of each turning still kept wary heed:
Alowd to her he oftentimes did call,
To doe away vaine doubt and needlesse
dreed:
Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
Many meeke w'rdes to stay and comfort her
withall.

XLIX

But nothing might relent her hasty flight,
So deepe the deadly feare of that soule swaine
Was earst impressed in her gentle spright,
Like as a fearefull Dove, which through the
raine
Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine,
Having farre off espide a Tassell gent,
Which after her his nimble winges doth
straine,

Doubleth her hast for feare to bee for-hent,
And with her pincons cleaves the liquid fir-
mament.

I.

With no lesse hast, and eke with nolesse dreed,
That fearefull Ladie fledd from him, that
ment

To her no evill thought nor evill deed;
Yet former feare of being fowly shent
Carried her forward with her first intent:
And though, oft looking backward, well she
vewde

Her selfe freed from that foster insolent,
And that it was a knight which now her sewde,
Yet she no lesse the knight feard then that
villein rude.

II

His uncouth shield and straunge armes her
dismayd,
Whose like in Faery lond were seldom scene,
That fast she from him fledd, no lesse afraide
Then of wilde beastes if she had chased beene:
Yet he her followd still with corage keene
So long, that now the golden Hesperus
Was mounted high in top of heaven sheene,
And warnd his other brethren joyeous
To light their blessed lamps in Joves eternall
hous.

LII

All suddenly dim wox the dampish ayre,
And griesly shadowes covered heaven bright,
That now with thousand starres was decked
fayre:
Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull sight,
And that perforce, for want of lenger light,
He mote surceasse his suit, and lose the hope
Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte
His wicked fortune that had turnd aslope,
And cursd night that reft from him so goodly
scope.

LIII

Tho, when her wayes he could no more
desery,
But to and fro at disaventure strayd;
Like as a ship, whose Lodestar suddenly
Covered with cloudes her Pilott hath dis-
mayd;
His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,
And from his loftie steed dismounting low
Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he layd
Upon the grassy ground to sleepe a throw:
The cold earth was his couch, the hard steale
his pillow.

LIV

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any rest:
In stead thereof sad sorow and disdaine

Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,
And thousand Fancies bett his ydle brayne
With their light wings, the sights of semblants
vaine.

Oft did he wish that Lady faire mote bee
His Faery Queene, for whom he did com-
plaine,
Or that his Faery Queene were such as shee;
And ever hasty Night he blamed bitterlie.

LV

'Night! thou foule Mother of annoyaunce
sad,
Sister of heaue death, and nourse of woe,
Which wast begot in heauen, but for thy bad
And brutish shape thrust downe to hell
below,
Where, by the grim flood of Cocytus slow.
Thy dwelling is in Herebus black hous,
(Black Herebus, thy husband, is the foe
Of all the Gods,) where thou ungratious
Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horreur
hideous.

LVI

'What had th' eternall Maker need of thee
The world in his continuall course to keepe,
That doest all thinges deface, ne lettest see
The beautie of his worke? Indeed, in sleepe
The slouthfull body that doth love to sleepe
His lustlesse limbs, and drowne his baser mind,
Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygian
deepe
Calles thee his goddesse, in his errour blind,
And great Dame Natures handmaide chearing
every kind.

LVII

'But well I wote, that to an heavy hart
Thou art the roote and nourse of bitter cares,
Breeder of new, renewer of old smartes;
Instead of rest thou lendest rayling teares;
Instead of sleepe thou sendest troublous feares
And dreaddfull visions, in the which alive
The dreary image of sad death appeares:
So from the wearie spirit thou doest drive
Desired rest, and men of happinesse deprive.

LVIII

'Under thy mantle black there hidden lye
Light-shonning thefts, and traiterous intent,
Abhorred bloodshed, and vile felony,
Shamefull deceit, and daunger imminent,
Fowle horror, and eke hellish dreriment:
All these, I wote, in thy protection bee,
And light doe shonne for feare of being shent;
For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee:
And all that lewdnesse love doe hate the light
to see.

LIX

'For day discovers all dishonest wayes,
And sheweth each thing as it is in deed:
The prayes of high God he faire displays,
And his large bountie rightly doth ared:
Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed
Which darknesse shall subdue and heauen win:
Truth is his daughter; he her first did breed
Most sacred virgin without spot of sinne,
Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth
begin.

LX

'O! when will day then turne to me againe,
And bring with him his long expected light?
O Titan! East to reare thy joyous waine;
Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames bright,
And chace away this too long lingring night:
Chace her away, from whence she came, to hell:
She, she it is, that hath me done despight:
There let her with the damned spirits dwell,
And yield her rowme to day that can it governe
well.'

LXI

Thus did the Prince that wearie night out-
weare
In restlesse anguish and unquiet paine;
And earely, ere the morrow did upreare
His deawy head out of the Ocean maine,
He up arose, as halfe in great disdaine,
And clombe unto his steed. So forth he went
With heavy look and lumpish pace, that plaine
In him bewraide great grudge and maltalent:
His steed eke seemd t' apply his steps to his
intent.

CANTO V.

Prince Arthur heares of Florimell :

Three fosters Timias wound ;
Belphoebe findes him almost dead,
And reareth out of sownd.

I

WONDER it is to see in diuerse mindes
How diuersly love doth his pageants play,
And shewes his powre in variable kindes :
The baser wit, whose ydle thoughts alway
Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay,
It stirreth up to sensuall desire,
And in lewd slouth to wast his carlesse day ;
But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire,
That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

II

Ne suffereth it uncomely idlenesse
In his free thought to build her sluggish nest,
Ne sufforeth it thought of ungentlenesse
Ever to creepe into his nogge brest ;
But to the highest and the worthiest
Lifteth it up that els would lowly fall :
It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest ;
It lettes not scarce this Prince to breath at all,
But to his first poursuit him forward still doth
call.

III

Who long time wandred through the forest
wyde
To finde some issue thence ; till that at last
He met a Dwarfie that seemed terrifyde
With some late perill which he hardly past,
Or other accident which him aghast ;
Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,
And whither now he travelled so fast ?
For sore he swat, and, running through that
same [nigh lame]
Thicke forest, was bescracht and both his feet

IV

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,
The Dwarfie him answerd ; ' Sir, ill mote I stay
To tell the same : I lately did depart
From Faery court, where I have many a day
Served a gentie Lady of great sway
And high accompt through out all Elfin land,
Who lately left the same, and tooke this way.
Her now I seeke ; and if ye understand
Which way she fared hath, good Sir, tell out
of hand.'

V

' What mister wight,' (saide he) ' and how
arrayd ?
' Royally clad' (quoth he) ' in cloth of gold,
As meetest may beseme a noble mayd :
Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrolld,
A fayrer wight did never Sunne behold ;
And on a Palfrey rydes more white then snow,
Yet she her selfe is whiter manifold.
The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
Is that she is the fairest wight alive, I trow.'

VI

' Now certes, swaine,' (saide he) ' such one, I
weene,
Fast flying through this forest from her lo,
A foule ill-favoured foster, I have scene :
Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,
But could not stay, so fast she did foregoe,
Carried away with wings of speedy feare.'
' Ah, dearest God !' (quoth he) ' that is great
woe,
And wondrous ruth to all that shall it heare :
But can ye read, Sir, how I may her finde, or
where ?'

VII

' Perdy, me lever were to weeten that,'
(Saide he) ' then ransom of the richest knight,
Or all the good, that ever yet I gat :
But froward fortune, and too forward Night,
Such happinesse did, naulgre, to me spight,
And fro me reft both life and light atone.
But, Dwarfie, aread what is that Lady bright
That through this Forrest wandreth thus alone ?
For of her error strange I have great ruth
and mone.'

VIII

' That Ladie is,' (quoth he) ' where so she bee,
The bountiest virgin and most debonaire
That ever living eye, I weene, did see.
Lives none this day that may with her compare
In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
The goodly ornaments of beautie bright ;
And is cyleped Florimell the fayre,
Faerie Florimell below'd of many a knight,
Yet she loves none but one, that Marinell is
hight.

IX

'A Sea nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight,
Of my deare Dame is loved dearly well:
In other none, but him, she sets delight;
All her delight is set on Marinell.
But he sets nought at all by Florimell;
For Ladies love his mother long ygoe
Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred
spell:
But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe
He is yslande, which is the ground of all our
woe.

X

'Five daies there be since he (they say) was
slaine,
And fowre since Florimell the Court forwent,
And vowed never to returne againe,
Till him alive or dead she did invent.
Therefore, faire Sir, for love of knighthood
And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may gent,
By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,
Or succour her, or me direct the way,
Do one or other good, I you most humbly pray.

XI

'So may ye gaine to you full great renomme
Of all good Ladies through the world so wide,
And haply in her hart finde highest rowme
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide;
At least eternall meede shall you abide.
To whom the Prince: 'Dwarfe, comfort to
thee take,
For, till thou tidings learne what her betide,
I here avow thee never to forsake.
Ill weares he armes, that nill them use for
Ladies sake.'

XII

So with the Dwarfe he back retourn'd againe,
To seeke his Lady where he mote her finde;
But by the way he greatly gan complaine
The want of his good Squire late left behinde,
For whom he wondrous pensive grew in
minde,
For doubt of daunger which mote him betide;
For him he loved above all mankinde,
Having him trew and faithfull ever tride.
And bold, as ever Squire that waited by
knights side:

XIII

Who all this while full hardly was assayed
Of deadly daunger, which to him betidd.
For, whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd,
After that foster fowle he fiercely ridd
To bene avenged of the shame he did
To that faire Damsell: Him he chased long
Through the thicke woods wherein he would
have lidd

His shamefull head from his avengement strong,
And oft him threatned death for his outrageous
wrong.

XIV

Nathlesse the villain sped himselfe so well,
Whether through swiftnesse of his speedie
beast, [dwell,
Or knowledge of those woods where he did
That shortly he from daunger was releast,
And out of sight escaped at the least:
Yet not escaped from the dew reward
Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast,
Ne ceased not, till him oppresse hard
The heaveie plague that for such leachours is
prepard.

XV

For soone as he was vanisht out of sight,
His coward courage gan emboldned bee,
And cast i' aveuge him of that fowle despiht
Which he had borne of his bold enime:
Tho to his brethren came, for they were three
Ungratious children of one gracelesse syre,
And unto them complaind how that he
Had used beene of that foolhardie Squire:
So then with bitter words he sturld to bloodie
yre.

XVI

Forthwith themselves with their sad instru-
ments
Of spoyle and murder they gan arme bylive.
And with him forth into the Forrest went
To wreake the wrath, which he did carst
revive [drive
In their sterne breasts, on him which late did
Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight;
For they had vow'd that never he alive
Out of that forest should escape their might:
Vile rancour their rude harts had filld with
such despiht.

XVII

Within that wood there was a covert glade,
Foreby a narrow soord, to them well knowne,
Through which it was uncauth for wight to
And now, by fortune it was overflowne. [wade;
By that same way they knew that Squire un-
knowne [set
Mote algates passe: forthy themselves they
There in await with thicke woods overgrowne,
And all the while their malice they did whet
With cruell threats his passage through the
ford to let.

XVIII

It fortun'd, as they devis'd had:
The gentle Squire came ryding that same way,

Unweeting of their wile and treason bad,
And through the ford to passen did assay;
But that fierce foster, which late fled away,
Stoutly forth stepping on the further shore,
Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,
Till he had made amends, and full restore
For all the damage which he had him doen
afore.

XIX

With that at him a quiv'ring dart he threw,
With so fell force, and villenous despite,
That through his haberjeon the forkehead flew,
And through the linked mayles empierec
quite,
But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite.
That stroke the harly Squire did sore displease,
But more that him he could not come to smite;
For by no meanes the high banke he could
sense, [vaine disease.
But labour'd long in that deepe ford with

XX

And still the foster with his long bore-speare
Him kept from landing at his wished will.
Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,
And fethered with an unlikly quill:
The wicked steele stayd not till it did light
In his left thigh, and deeply did it thrill:
Exceeding grieve that wound in him empight,
But more that with his foes he could not come
to fight.

XXI

At last, through wrath and vengeance making way,
He on the bancke arryvd with mickle payne,
Where the third brother him did sore assay,
And drove at him with all his might and
mayne
A forest-bill, which both his hands did strayne;
But warily he did avoide the blow,
And with his speare requited him againe,
That both his sides were thrilled with the
throw, [did flow.
And a large streame of blood out of the wound

XXII

He, tomling downe, with gnashing teeth did
The bitter earth, and bad to lett him in [bite
Into the balefull house of endlesse night, [sin.
Where wicked ghosts doe waile their former
Thou gan the battaile freshly to begin;
For nathemore for that spectacle bad
Did th' other two their cruell vengeance blin,
But both at once on both sides him bestad,
And load upon him layd his life for to have had.

XXIII

Tho when that villayn he aviz'd, which late
Affrighted had the fairest Florimell,
Full of fiers fury and indignant hate
To him he turned, and with rigor fell
Smote him so rudely on the Pannikell,
That to the chin he clefte his head in twaine.
Downe on the ground his carkas groveling fell:
His sinfull sowle with desperate disdaine
Out of her fleshly ferme fled to the place of
paine.

XXIV

That seeing, now the only last of three
Who with that wicked shafte him wounded had,
Trembling with horror, as that did foresee
The fearefull end of his avengement sad, [bad,
Through which he follow should his brethren
His bootelesse bow in feeble hand upcaught,
And therewith shott an arrow at the lad;
Which, sayntly fluttering, scarce his helmet
raught, [naught.
And glauncing fel to ground, but him annoyed

XXV

With that he would have fled into the wood;
But Timias him lightly overhent,
Right as he entring was into the flood,
And strooke at him with force so violent,
That headlesse him into the foord he sent:
The carcas with the streame was carried downe,
But th' head fell backward on the Continent;
So mischief fel upon the meaners crowne.
They three be dead with shame, the Squire
lives with renouwe.

XXVI

He lives, but takes small joy of his renouwe;
For of that cruell wound he bled so sore,
That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne:
Yet stfil the blood forth gusht in so great store,
That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.
Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest squire alive,
Els shall thy loving Lord thee see no more;
But both of comfort him thou shalt deprive,
And eke thy selfe of honor which thou didst
atchive.

XXVII

Providence hevenly passeth living thought,
And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way;
For loe! great grace or fortune thither brought
Comfort to him that comfortlesse now lay.
In those same woods ye well remember may
How that a noble huntresse did wonne,
Shee, that base Braggadochio did affray,
And make him fast out of the forest ronne;
Belphebe was her name, as faire as Phoebus
sunne.

XXVIII

She on a day, as shee pursw'd the chace
Of some wilde beast, which with her arrowes
keene

She wounded had, the same along did trace
By tract of blood, which she had freshly seene
To have besprinkled all the grassy greene:
By the great persue which she there perceav'd,
Well hoped shee the beast engor'd had beene,
And made more haste the life to have bereav'd;
But ah! her expectation greatly was deceav'd.

XXIX

Shortly she came whereas that wofull Squire,
With blood deformed, lay in deadly srownd;
In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire,
The Christall humor stood congeal'd rownd;
His locks, like faded leaves fallen to grownd,
Knotted with blood in bounches rudely ran;
And his sweete lips, on which before that
stownd

The bud of youth to blossome faire began, [wan.
Spoild of their rosy red were woxen pale and

XXX

Saw never living eie more heavy sight,
That could have made a rocke of stone to rew.
Urriveintwaine: which when that Lady bright,
Besides all hope, with melting eies did vew,
All suddenly abasht shee chaunged hew,
And with sterne horror backward gan to start;
But when shee better him beheld shee grew
Full of soft passion and unwonted smart: [hart.
The point of pittie perced through her tender

XXXI

Meekely shee bowed downe, to weete if life
Yet in his frosen members did remaine;
And, feeling by his pulses beating rife
That the weake sowl her seat did yett retaine,
She cast to comfort him with busie paine. .
His double folded necke she reard upright,
And rubd his temples and each trembling vaine;
His mayled haberjeon she did undight,
And from his head his heavy burganet did light.

XXXII

Into the woods thenceforth in haste shee went,
To seeke for hearbes that mote him remedy;
For shee of herbes had great intendment,
Taught of the Nymphe which from her infancy
Her nource had in trew Nobility:
There, whether yt divine Tobacco were,
Or Panachua, or Polygony,
Shee sownd, and brought it to her patient deare,
Who al this while lay bleding out his hart-
blood neare.

XXXIII

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles
plaine

Shee poundd small, and did in peeces bruze:
And then atweene her lilly handes twaine
Into his wound the juice thereof did scruze;
And round about, as she could well it uze,
The flesh therewith shee suppld and did steepe,
T' abate all spasme, and soke the swelling bruze;
And, after having searcht the intuse deepe,
She with her scarf did bind the wound from
cold to keepe.

XXXIV

By this he had sweet life recur'd agayne,
And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies,
His watry eies drizzling like deawy rayne,
He up gan lifte toward the azure skies,
From whence descend all hopelesse remedies:
Therewith he sigh'd; and, turning him aside,
The goodly Maide, ful of divinities
And gifts of heavenly grace, he by him spide,
Her bow and gilden quiver lying him beside.

XXXV

'Mercy, deare Lord!' (said he) 'what grace
is this

That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight,
To send thine Angell from her bowre of bliss
To comfort me in my distressed plight.
Angell, or Goddesse doe I call thee right?
What service may I doe unto thee meete,
That hast from darkenes me returnd to light,
And with thy heavenly salves and med'cines
sweete [blessed feete,
Hast drest my sinfull wounds? I kisse thy

XXXVI

Thereat shee blushing said; 'Ah! gentle
Squire,
Nor Goddesse I, nor Angell; but the Mayd
And daughter of a woody Nymphe, desire
No service but thy safety and ayd;
Which if thou gaine, I shal be well apayd.
Wee mortall wights, whose lives and fortunes
To commun accidents stil open layd, [bee
Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee,
To succor wretched wights whom we captived
see.'

XXXVII

By this her Damzells, which the former chace
Had undertaken after her, arriv'd,
As did Belphebe, in the bloody place,
And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriv'd
Of life, whom late their ladies arrow ryst d;
Forthy the bloody tract they followd fast,
And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd;

But two of them the rest far overpast,
And where their Lady was arrived at the last.

XXXVIII

Where when they saw that goodly boy with blood
Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wound,
They wondred much; and shortly understood
How him in deadly case their Lady fownd,
And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.
Eftsoones his warlike courser, which was strayed
Farre in the woodes whiles that he lay in
swound, [stayd,
She made those Damzels search; which being
They did him set theron, and forth with them
convayd.

XXXIX

Into that forest farre they thence him led,
Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant glade
With mountaines round about environed,
And mightie woodes which did the valley shade
And like a stately Theatre it made,
Spreading it selfe into a spacious plaine:
And in the midst a little river plaide
Emongst the pumy stones, which seemd to
plaine [restraine,
With gentle murmure that his cours they did

XL

Beside the same a dainty place there lay.
Planted with nurtle trees and Iamells greene,
In which the birds song many a lovely lay
Of Gods high praise, and of their loves sweet
teene,
As it an earthly Paradize had beene:
In whose enclosed shadow there was pight
A faire Pavillon, scarcely to bee seene,
The which was al within most richly dight,
That greatest Princes liking it mote well de-
light.

XLI

Thither they brought that wounded Squire,
and layd
In casie couch his feeble limbes to rest.
He rested him awhile; and then the Mayd
His readie wound with better salves new drest:
Daily she dressed him, and did the best
His grievous hurt to guarish, that she might;
That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,
And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:
It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

XLII

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine,
That heales up one, and makes another wound!
She his hurt thigh to him recurd againe,
But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,

Through an unwary dart, which did rebownd
From her faire eyes and gracious countenance.
What bootes it him from death to be unbownd,
To be captived in endlesse duraunce
Of sorrow and despayre without aleggeaunce!

XLIII

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,
So still his hart woxe soie, and health decayd:
Madnesse to save a part, and lose the whole!
Still whenas he beheld the heavenly Mayd,
Whiles dayly playsters to his wound she layd,
So still his Malady the more increast,
The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dis-
mayd.
Ah God! what other could he do at least,
But love so fayre a Lady that his life releast?

XLIV

Long while he strove in his corageous brest
With reason dew the passion to subdew,
And love for to dislodge out of his nest:
Still when her excellencies he did vew,
Her soveraine bountie and celestiall hew,
The same to love he strongly was constraind
But when his meane estate he did revew,
He from such hardy boldnesse was restraynd.
And of his lucklesse lott and cruell love thus
playnd:

XLV

'Unthankfull wretch,' (said he) 'is this the
meed, [quight?
With which her soverain mercy thou doest
Thy life she saved by her gracious deed;
But thou doest weene with villenous des-pight
To blott her honour, and her heavenly light.
Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally
Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light:
Fayre death, it is, to shonne more shame, to dy:
Dye rather, dy, then ever love disloyally.

XLVI

'But if to love disloyalty it bee,
Shall I then hate her that from deathes doie
Me brought? ah, farre be such reproch fro mee!
What can I lesse doe then her love therefore,
Sith I her dew reward cannot restore?
Dye rather, dye, and dying doe her serve;
Dying her serve, and living her adore,
Thy life she gave, thy life she doth deserve:
Dye rather, dye, then ever from her service
swerve.

XLVII

'But, foolish boy, what bootes thy service bace
To her to whom the heavens doe serve and sew?
Thou, a meane Squire of meeke and lowly place,
She, heavenly borne and of celestiall hew.

How then ? of all love taketh equall vew ;
And doth not highest God vouchsafe to take
The love and service of the basest crew ?
If she will not, dye meekly for her sake :
Dye rather, dye, then ever so faire love forsake !

XLVIII

Thus warreid he long time against his will ;
Till that through weakness he was forst at last
To yield himselfe unto the mightie ill,
Which, as a victour proud, gan ransack fast
His inward partes, and all his entrayles wast,
That neither blood in face nor life in hart
It left, but both did quite drye up and blast ;
As percing levin, which the inner part
Of every thing consumes, and calcineth by art.

XLIX

Which seeing fayre Belphebe gan to feare,
Least that his wound were inly well not heald,
Or that the wicked Steele empoysned were :
Little shee weend that love he close conceald.
Yet still he wasted, as the snow congeald
When the bright sunne his beaues thereon
doth beat :
Yet never he his hart to her reveald ;
But rather chose to dye for sorrow great,
Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

L

She, gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare
To doe him ease, or doe him remedy.
Many Restoratives of vertues rare,
And costly Cordialles she did apply,
To mitigate his stubborne malady :
But that sweet Cordiall, which can restore
A love-sick hart, she did to him envy ;
To him, and to all th' unworthy world forlore
She did extend that sovaine salve in secret
store.

LI

That daintie Rose, the daughter of her Morne,
More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre
The girland of her honour did adorne :
Ne suffred she the Middayes scorching powre,
Ne the sharp Northerne wind thereon to howre ;
But lapped up her silken leaves most chayne,
When so the froward skye began to lowre ;

But, soone as calmed was the christall ayre,
She did it fayre dispreed and let to florish fayre.

LII

Eternall God, in his almightie powre,
To make ensample of his heavenly grace,
In Paradize whylome did plant this flowre ;
Whence he it fetcht out of her native place,
And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,
That mortall men her glory should admv're.
In gentle Ladies breste and bounteous race
Of woman kind it fayrest Flowre doth spyre,
And beareth fruit of honour and all chaste
desyre.

LIII

Fayre ympes of beautie, whose bright shining
beames
Adorne the world with like to heavenly light,
And to your willes both royalties and Reames
Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous
might,
With this fayre flowre your goodly girlands
Of chastity and vertue virginall, [dight
That shall embellish more your beautie bright,
And crowne your heades with heavenly
coronall,
Such as the Angels were before Gods tribunall

LIV

To your faire selves a faire ensample frame
Of this faire virgin, this Belphebe fayre ;
To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame
Of chastite, none living may compayre :
Ne poysnous Envy justly can empayre
The prayse of her fresh flowing Maydenhead ;
Forthy she standeth on the highest staire
Of th' honorable stage of womanhead,
That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

LV

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity
Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde,
Tempred with grace and goodly modesty,
That seemed those two vertues strove to fynd
The higher place in her Heroick mynd :
So striving each did other more augment,
And both encreast the prayse of woman kynde,
And both encreast her beautie excellent :
So all did make in her a perfect complement.

CANTO VI.

The birth of fayre Belpheobe and
Of Amorett is told :
The Gardins of Adonis fraught
With pleasures manifold.

I

WELL LAY I weene, faire Ladies, all this while
Ye wonder how this noble Damozell
So great perfection did in her compile,
Sith that in salvage forests she did dwell,
So farre from court and royall Citadell,
The great schoolmaistresse of all courtesie :
Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far
expell
All civile usage and gentility,
And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

II

But to this faire Belpheobe in her berth
The heavens so favorable were and free,
Looking with myld aspect upon the earth
In th' Horoscope of her gativitee,
That all the gifts of grace and chastitee
On her they poured forth of plenteous horne:
Jove laught on Venus from his soverayne see,
And Phoebus with faire beames did her
adorne, [borne.
And all the Graces rockt her cradle being

III

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew,
And her conception of the joyous Prime ;
And all her whole creation did her shew
Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime
That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.
So was this virgin borne, so was she bred ;
So was she trayned up from time to time
In all chaste vertue and true bounti-hed,
Till to her dew perfection she were ripened.

IV

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee,
The daughter of Amphisa, who by race
A Faerie was, yborne of high degree.
She bore Belpheobe ; she bore in like cace
Fayre Amoretta in the second place :
These two were twinned, and twixt them two
did share
The heritage of all celestiaall grace :
That all the rest it seemd they robbed bare
Of bounty, and of beautie, and all vertues
rare.

V

It were a goodly storic to declare
By what straunge accident faire Chrysogone
Conceiv'd these infants, and how them she bare
In this wilde Forrest wandering all alone,
After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone :
For not as other womens commune brood
They were enwombed in the sacred throne
Of her chaste bodie ; nor with commune food,
As other womens babes, they sucked vitall
blood :

VI

But wondrously they were begot and bred
Through influence of th' heavens fruitfull ray
As it in antique bookes is mentioned.
It was upon a Sommers shine day,
When Titan faire his beames did display,
In a fresh fountaine, far from all mens vew,
She bath'd her brest the boyling heat t'allay ;
She bath'd with roses red and violets blew,
And all the sweetest flowers that in the Forrest
grew :

VII

Till faint through yrkesome wearines, adowne
Upon the grassy ground her selfe she layd
To sleepe, the whyles a gentle slombring
swowne
Upon her fell, all naked bare displayd.
The sunbeames bright upon her body playd,
Being through former bathing molliude,
And pierst into her wombe, where they
embayd
With so sweet sence and secret powre unspide,
That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructi-
fide.

VIII

Miraculous may seeme to him that reades
So straunge ensample of conception .
But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades
Of all things living, through impression
Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,
Doe life conceive and quickned are by kynd :
So, after Nilus inundation,
Infinite shapcs of creatures men doe fynd
Informed in the mud on which the Sunne hath
shynd.

IX

Great father he of generation
Is rightly call'd, th' authour of life and light;
And his faire sister for creation
Minist'reth matter fit, which, tamped right
With heate and humour, breeds the living
wight. [gone]
So sprang these twinnes in wombe of Chryso-
Yet wist she nought thereof, but sore affright,
Wondred to see her belly so upblowne,
Which still increast till she her terme had full
outgone.

X

Whereof conceiving shame and foule disgrace,
Albe her guiltesse conscience her cleard,
She fled into the wilderness a space,
Till that unweeldy burden she had reard.
And shund dishonor which as death she feard:
Where, wearie of long travell, downe to rest
Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard:
There a sad cloud of sleepe her overkeat,
And seized every sence with sorrow sore
opprest.

XI

It fortun'd, faire Venus having lost
Her little sonne, the winged god of love,
Who, for some light displeasure which him
crost,
Was from her fled as flit as avery Dove,
And left her blisfull bowre of joy above:
(So from her often he had fled away,
When she for ought him sharply did reprove,
And wandred in the world in straunge aray,
Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might
him bewray.)

XII

Him for to seeke, she left her heavenly hous,
The house of goodly formes and faire aspect,
Whence all the world derives the glorious
Features of beautie, and all shapes select,
With which high God his workmanship hath
deckt; [wings]
And searched everie way through which his
Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect:
She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things,
Unto the man that of him tydings to her
brings.

XIII

First she him sought in Court, where most he
us'd [not].
Whylome to haunt, but there she found him
But many there she found which sore accus'd
His falshood, and with fowle infamous blot
His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot:
Ladies and Lordes she everywhere mote heare
Complayning, how with his empoynsed shot

Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare
And so had left them languishing twixt hope
and feare.

XIV

She then the Cities sought from gate to gate,
And everie one did aske, did he him see?
And everie one her answerd, that too late
He had him seene, and felt the crueltec
Of his sharpe dartes and whot arillere:
And every one threw forth reproches rife
Of his mischievous deedes, and sayd that hee
Was the disturber of all civill life,
The enemy of peace, and authour of all strife.

XV

Then in the country she abroad him sought,
And in the rurall cottages inquir'd;
Where also many plaintes to her were brought,
How he their heedelesse harts with love had fir'd,
And his false venom through their veines in-
spir'd: [sat]
And eke the gentle Shepheard swaynes, which
Keeping their fleecy flockes as they were hyr'd,
She sweetly heard complaine, both how and
what [thereat].
Her sonne had to them doen, yet she did smile

XVI

But when in none of all these she him got,
She gan avize where els he mote him hyde:
At last she her bethought that she had not
Yet sought the salvage woods and forests wyde.
In which full many lovely Nymphes abyde;
Mongst whom might be that he did closely lye,
Or that the love of some of them him tyde:
Forthy she thither cast her course t' apply,
To search the secret haunts of Dianes company

XVII

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came,
Whereas she found the Goddesse with her crew,
After late chace of their embrewed game,
Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew;
Some of them washing with the liquid dew
From off their dainty limbs the dusty sweat
And soyle, which did deforme their lively hew,
Others lay shaded from the scorching heat,
The rest upon her person gave attendance great

XVIII

She, having hong upon a bough on high
Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste
Her silver buskins from her numble thigh,
And her lanck loynes ungirt, and breasts un-
braste,
After her heat the breathing cold to taste:
Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright
Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,

Now loose about her shoulders hong undight,
And were with sweet Ambrosia all besprinkled
light.

XIX

Soone as she Venus saw behinde her backe,
She was asham'd to be so loose surpriz'd;
And woxe halfe wroth against her damzels
That had not her thereof before aviz'd, [slacke,
But suffred her so carelesly disguiz'd
Be overtaken. Soone her garments loose
Upgather'd, in her bosome she compriz'd
Well as she might, and to the Goddess e rose;
Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her
enclose.

XX

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet,
And shortly asked her, what cause her brought
Into that wildernes for her unmeet,
From her sweete bowres, and beds with plea-
sures fraught? [thought.
That sudden change she straunge adventure
To whom halfe weeping she thus answered;
That she her dearest sonne Cupido sought,
Who in his frowardnes from her was fled,
That she repented sore to have him angered.

XXI

Theat Diana gan to smile, in scorne
Of her vaine playnt, and to her scoffing sayd:
'Great pittie sure that ye be so forlorne
Of your gay sonne, that gives ye so good ayd
To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd.'
But she was more engrieved, and replide;
'Fairster, ill besemes it to upbrayd
A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride:
The like that mine may be your paine another
tide.

XXII

'As you in woods and wanton wildernes
Your glory sett to chase the salvage beasts,
So my delight is all in joyfulness,
In beds, in bowres, in banquetts, and in feasts:
In all it becomes you, with your lofty creasts,
To scorne the joy that Jove is glad to seeke:
We both are bound to follow heavens behests,
And tend our charges with obeisance mecke.
Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to
cecke;

XXIII

'And tell me, if that ye my sonne have heard
To lurke amongst your Nymphes in secret
vize,
Or keepe their cabins: much I am affeard
Least he like one of them him selfe disguise,
And turne his arrowes to their exercise.
Sornay he long him selfe full easie hide;
For he is faire and fresh in face and guize

As any Nymph; (let not it be envide.)
So saying, every Nymph full narrowly shee eide.

XXIV

But Phoebe therewith sore was angered,
And sharply said: 'Goe, Dame; goe, seeke
your boy,
Where you him lately left, in Mars his bed:
He comes not here; we scorne his foolish joy,
Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy:
But if I catch him in this company,
By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy
The Gods doe dreadd, he dearly shall abyve:
He clip his wanton wings, that he no more
shall flye.'

XXV

Whom whenas Venus saw so sore displead,
Shee inly sory was, and gan relent
What shee had said; so her she soone appead
With sugred words and gentle blandishment,
Which as a fountaine from her sweete lips
went.
And welled goodly forth, that in short space
She was well pleas'd, and forth her damzell
sent [place,
Through all the woods, to search from place to
If any tract of him or tidings they mote trace.

XXVI

To search the God of love her Nymphes she
sent
Throughout the wandring forest every where:
And after them her selfe eke with her went
To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.
So long they sought, till they arrived were
In that same shady covert whereas lay
Fairster Crysgone in slombry traunce whilere;
Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)
Unwares had borne two babes, as fairster as
springing day.

XXVII

Unwares she them conceivd, unwares she
bore:
She bore withouten paine, that she conceiv'd
Withouten pleasure; ne her need implore
Lucinaes aide: which when they both perceiv'd,
They were through wonder nigh of sence be-
rev'd,
And gazing each on other nought bespake.
At last they both agreed her seeming griev'd
Out of her heave swowne not to awake [take.
But from her loving side the tender babes to

XXVIII

Up they them tooke; each one a babe up-
And with them carried to be fostered. [tooke,

Dame Phoebe to a Nympe her babe betooke
To be upbrought in perfect Maydenhel,
And, of her selfe, her name Belphebe red :
But Venus hers thence far away conuayd,
To be upbrought in goodly womanhed ;
And, in her hile loves stead, which was strayd,
Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her dismayd.

XXX

Shee brought her to her joyous Paradize,
Wher most she wounes when she on earth does
So faire a place as Nature can devise : [dwell ;
Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,
(Or it in Gnidus bee, I wote not well,
But well I wote by triall, that this same
All other pleasant places doth excell,
And called is by her lost lovers name,
The Gardin of Adonis, far renowmd by fame.

XXXI

In that same Gardin all the goodly flowres,
Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautify,
And decks the girlonds of her Paramours,
Are fetcht : there is the first seminary
Of all things that are borne to live and dye,
According to their kynds. Long worke it were
Here to account the endlesse progeny
Of all the weeds that bud and blossom there ;
But so much as doth need must needs be
counted here.

XXXII

It sited was in fruitfull soyle of old,
And girt in with two walls on either side ;
The one of yron, the other of bright gold,
That none might thorough breake, nor over-
stride.

And double gates it had which opened wide,
By which both in and out men moten paye ;
Th' one faire and fresh, the other old and dride.
Old Genius the porter of them was,
Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

XXXIII

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend
All that to come into the world desire :
A thousand thousand naked babes attend
About him day and night, which doe require
That he with fleshly weeds would them attune :
Such as him list, such as eternall fate
Ordained hath, he clothes with sunfull mire,
And sendeth forth to live in mortall state,
Till they agayn returne backe by the hinder
gate

XXXIII

After that they againe retourned beene,
They in that Gardin planted bee agayne,

And grow afresh, as they had never seene
Fleshly corruption, nor mortall payne. [mayne,
Some thousand yeares so doen they there re-
And then of him are clad with other hew,
Or sent into the chaungefull world agayne,
Till thither they retourne where first they
grew : [to new.
So, like a wheele, arownd they ronne from old

XXXIV

Ne needs there Gardiner to sett or sow,
To plant or prune ; for of their owne accord
All things, as they created were, doe grow,
And yet remember well the mighty word,
Which first was spoken by th' Almighty Lord,
That had them to increase and multiply :
Ne doe they need with water of the ford.
Of of the clouds, to moysten their roots dry ;
For in themselves eternall moisture they im-
ply.

XXXV

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,
And uncouth formes, which none yet euer
And every sort is in a sondry bed [knew :
Sett by it selfe, and rankt in comely rew ;
Some fitt for reasonable sowles t' indew,
Some made for beasts, some made for birds to
weare ;
And all the fruitfull spawn of fishes hew
In endlesse ranks along enranked were,
That seemd the Ocean could not containe
them there.

XXXVI

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent
Into the world, it to replenish more ;
Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent,
But still remains in everlasting store,
As it at first created was of yore :
For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,
In hatefull darknes and in deepe horrore,
An huge eternal Chaos, which supplies
The substances of natures fruitfull progeny es.

XXXVII

All things from thence doe their first being
fetch,
And borrow matter whereof they are made ;
Which, whenas forme and feature it does ketch,
Becomes a body, and doth then invade
The state of life out of the griesly shade.
That substance is eterne, and bideth so ;
Ne when the life decayes and forme does fade,
Doth it consume and into nothing goe,
But chaunged is, and often altd to and froe.

XXXVIII

The substance is not chaungd nor altered,
But th' only forme and outward fashion ;

For every substaunce is conditioned
To chaunge her hew, and sondry formes to don,
Meet for her temper and complexion:
For formes are variable, and decay
By course of kinde and by occasion;
And that faire flowre of beaultie fades away,
As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

XXXIX

Great enemy to it, and to all the rest
That in the Gardin of Adonis springs,
Is wicked Tyme; who with his scyth addrest
Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly
things,
And all their glory to the ground downe flings,
Where they do wither, and are sowly mard:
He flies about, and with his flaggy winges
Beates downe both leaves and buds without
regard,
Ne ever pittie may relent his malice hard.

XL

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,
To see so faire thinges mard and spoiled
quight;
And their great mother Venus did lament
The losse of her deare brood, her deare de-
light:
Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight,
When walking through the Gardin them she
saw,
Yet not she find redresse for such despite:
For all that lives is subject to that law;
All things decay in time, and to their end
doe draw.

XLI

But were it not that Time their troubler is,
All that in this delightfull Gardin growes
Should happy bee, and have immortall bliss:
For here all plenty and all pleasure flowes;
And sweete love gentle fits amongst them
throwes,
Without fell rancor or fond gealosy.
Frankly each Paramor his leman knowes,
Each bird his mate; ne any does envy
Their goodly meriment and gay felicity.

XLII

There is continuall Spring, and harvest there
Continuall, both meeting at one tyme;
For both the boughes doe laughing blossoms
beare,
And with fresh colours decke the wanton Pryme,
And eke attonce the heavy trees they
clyme,
Which seeme to labour under their fruites lode:
The whiles the joyous birdes make their pas-
tyme

Emongst the shady leaves, their sweet abode,
And their trew loves without suspition tell
abrode.

XLIII

Right in the midst of that Paradise [top
There stood a stately Mount, on whose round
A gloomy grove of mirtle trees did rise,
Whose shady boughes sharp steele did never
lop,
Nor wicked beastes their tender buds did crop,
But like a girlond compassed the hight; [drop,
And from their fruitfull sydes sweet gum did
That all the ground, with pretious deaw bedight,
Threw forth most dainty odours and most
sweet delight.

XLIV

And in the thickest covert of that shade
There was a pleasaunt Arber, not by art
But of the trees owne inclination made,
Which knitting their rancke braunches, part
to part,
With wanton yvie twine entrayld athwart,
And Eglantine and Caprifole emong,
Fashioned above within their inmost part,
That nether Phœbus beams could throughe
then throng, [wrong.
Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them any

XLV

And all about grew every sort of flowre,
To which sad lovers were transformde of yore;
Fresh Hyacinthus, Phœbus paramoure
And dearest love;
Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore;
Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late,
Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore
Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate,
To whom sweet Poets verse hath given end-
lesse date.

.. .

XLVI

There wont fayre Venus often to enjoy
Her deare Adonis joyous company,
And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton boy:
There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,
Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,
By her hid from the world, and from the skill
Of Stygian Gods, which doe her love envy;
But she her selfe, when ever that she will,
Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes
her fill.

XLVII

And sooth, it seemes, they say; for he may not
For ever dye, and ever buried bee
In balefull night where all thinges are forgot:
All be he subject to mortalitie,

Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,
And by succession made perpetuall,
Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie;
For him the Father of all formes they call:
Therefore needs mote he live, that living gives
to all.

XLVIII

There now he liveth in eternall blis,
Joying his goddesses, and of her enjoyd;
Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,
Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd:
For that wilde Bore, the which him once annoyd,
She firmly hath emprisoned for ay, [noyd,
That her sweet love his malice mote avoyd.
In a strong rocky Cave, which is, they say,
Hewen underneath that Mount, that none him
loosen may.

XLIX

There now he lives in everlasting joy,
With many of the Gods in company
Which thither haunt, and with the winged boy,
Sporting him selfe in safe felicity:
Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty
Ransackt the world, and in the wofull harts
Of many wretches set his triumphes hye,
Thither resortes, and laying his sad darts
Asyde, with faire Adonis plays his wanton
partes.

L

And his trew love faire Psyche with him
plays,
Fayre Psyche to him lately reconeyld,
After long troubles and unmeet upbrayes
With which his mother Venus her revyld,
And eke himselfe her cruelly exyld:
But now in stedfast love and happy state
She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld,
Pleasure, that doth both gods and men aggrate,
Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Psychelate.

LI

Hiither great Venus brought this infant fayre,
The yonger daughter of Chrysogonee,

And unto Psyche with great trust and care
Committed her, yfostered to bee
And trained up in trew feminitee:
Who no lesse carefully her tendered
Then her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom shee
Made her companion, and her lessoned
In all the lore of love, and goodly womanhead.

LII

In which when she to perfect ripenes grew,
Of grace and beautie noble Paragone,
She brought her forth into the worldes vew,
To be th' ensample of true love alone,
And Lodestarre of all chaste affection
To all fayre Ladies that doe live on grownd.
To Eaery court she came; where many one
Admyrd her goodly havcour, and fownd
His feeble hart wide launched with loves cruel
wound.

LIII

But she to none of them her love did cast,
Save to the noble knight Sir Scudamore,
To whom her loving hart she linked fast
In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore;
And for his dearest sake endured sore
Sore trouble of an hainous enemy,
Who her would forced have to have forelore
Her former love and stedfast loialty,
As ye may elsewhere reade that ruefull history.

LIV

But well I weene, ye first desire to learne
What end unto that fearefull Damozell,
Which fledd so fast from that same foster
stearne
Whom with his brethren Timias slew, befell:
That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell;
Who wandring for to seeke her lover deare,
Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell,
Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,
And from Prince Arthure fled with wings of
idle feare.

CANTO VII.

The witches sonne loves Florimell:
She flies; he falnes to dy.
Satyrane saves the Snyre of Dames
From Gyaunts tyranny.

I

LIKE as an Hynd forth singled from the heard,
That hath escaped from a ravenous beast,
Yet flies away of her owne feete afeard,
And every leaf, that shaketh with the least
Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast;

So fledd fayre Florimell from her vaine feare,
Long after she from perill was releast:
Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did
heare,
Did seeme to be the same which she escapt
whileare.

II

All that same evening she in flying spent,
And all that night her course continew'd,
Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,
Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled
Ever alike, as if her former dreed
Were hard behind, her ready to arrest;
And her white Palfrey, having conquered
The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
Perforce her carried where ever he thought
best.

III

So long as breath and hable puissance
Did native corage unto him supply,
His pace he freshly forward did advaunce,
And carried her beyond all jeopardy;
But nought that wanteth rest can long aby:
He, having through incessant travaill spent
His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,
Ne foot could further move. The Lady gent
Thereat was sudden strook with great aston-
ishment;

IV

And, forst t' alight, on foot mote algates
fare
A traveller unwonted to such way:
Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That fortune all in equall launce doth way,
And mortall miseries doth make her play.
So long she traveld, till at length she came
To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
A litle valley subject to the same,
All coverd with thick woodes that quite it
overcame.

V

Through the tops of the high trees she did
descry
A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light
Reeking aloft uprulled to the sky:
Which chearefull signe did send unto her sight
That in the same did wonne some living
wight.
Eftsoones her steps she thereunto aplyd,
And came at last in weary wretched plight
Unto the place, to which her hope did guyde,
To finde some refuge there, and rest her wearie
ryde.

VI

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
A litle cottage, built of stickes and reedes
In homely wize, and wald with sods around;
In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes
And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes;
So choosing solitarie to abide
Far from all neighbours, that her divelish
deedes

And hellish arts from people she might hide,
And hurt far off unknowne whom ever she
envide.

VII

The Damzell there arriving entred in;
Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found
Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin!
Who, soone as she beheld that sudden stound,
Lightly upstartd from the dustie ground,
And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
Stared on her awhile, as one astound,
Ne had one word to speake for great amaze,
But shewd by outward signes that dread her
sence did daze.

VIII

At last, turning her feare to foolish wrath,
She askt, what devill had her thither brought,
And who she was, and what unwonted path
Had guided her, unwelcomed, unsought?
To which the Damzell, full of doubtfull
thought.
Her mildly answer'd: 'Beldame, be not wroth
With silly Virgin, by adventure brought
Unto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
That crave but rowme to rest while tempest
overble'th.'

IX

With that adowne out of her christall eyne
Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,
That like to orient perles did purely shyne
Upon her snowy cheekes; and therewithall
She sighed soft, that none so bestiall
Nor salvage hart, but ruth of her sad plight
Would make to melt, or pitteously appall:
And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight
In mischiefe, was much moved at so pitteous
sight:

X

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyse,
With womanish compassion of her plaint,
Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,
And bidding her sit downe, to rest her faint
And wearie limbes awhile. She, nothing
quant
Nor 'sdeignfull of so homely fashion,
Sith brought she was now to so hard con-
straint,
Sate downe upon the dusty ground anon;
As glad of that small rest as Bird of tempest
gon.

XI

Tho gan she gather up her garments rent,
And her loose luckes to dight in order dew
With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament;
Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,

She was astonisht at her heavenly hew,
And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,
But or some Goddesse, or of Dianas crew,
And thought her to adore with humble spright:
T' adore thing so divine as beauty were but
right.

XII

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
A laesy loord, for nothing good to donne,
But stretched forth in ydlenesse alwayes,
Ne ever cast his mind to covet prayse,
Or ply himselfe to any honest trade,
But all the day before the sunny rayes
He us'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade:
Such laesnesse both lewd and poore attonce
him made.

XIII

He, comming home at undertime, there found
The fayrest creature that he ever saw
Sitting beside his mother on the ground;
The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,
And his base thought with terrour and with
aw

So inly smot, that as one, which hath gaz'd
On the bright Sunne unwares, doth soone
withdraw

His feeble eyne, with too much brightnes daz'd,
So stared he on her, and stood long while
amaz'd.

XIV

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,
What mister wight that was, and whence
deriv'd, [maske,
That in so straunge disguizement there did
And by what accident she there arriv'd?
But she, as one nigh of her wits depriv'd,
With nought but ghastly looks him answered;
Like to a ghost, that lately is reviv'd
From Stygian shores where late it wandred:
So both at her, and each at other wonderd.

XV

But the fayre Virgin was so meeke and myld,
That she to them vouchsafed to embrace
Her goodly port, and to their senses yld
Her gentle speech applyde, that in short space
She grew familiare in that desert place.
During vvhich time the Chorle, through her so
kind
And courtesie use, conceiv'd affection bace,
And cast to love her in his brutish mind:
No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly
tind.

XVI

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,
And shortly grew into outrageous fire;

Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,
As unto her to utter his desire;
His caytive thought durst not so high aspire.
But with soft sighes and lovely semblaunces
He ween'd that his affection entire
She should aread; many resemblaunces
To her he made, and many kinde remem-
braunces.

XVII

Oft from the Forrest wildings he did bring,
Whose sides empurpled were with smyling red;
And oft young birds, which he had taught to
sing,
His maistresse praises sweetly caroled:
Girlands of flowres sometimes for her faire hed
He fine would dight; sometimes the squirrel
wild
He brought to her in bands, as conquered
To be her thrall, his fellow-servant vild:
All which she of him tooke with countenance
meeke and mild.

XVIII

But, past a while, when she fit season saw
To leave that desert mansion, she cast
In segret wize herselfe thence to withdraw,
For feare of mischief, which she did forecast
Might by the witch or by her sonne compast.
Her wearie Palfrey, closely as she might,
Now well recovered after long repast,
In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,
His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure
right.

XIX

And earely, ere the dawning day appear'd,
She forth issewd, and on her journey went:
She went in perill, of each noyse affeard,
And of each shade that did it selfe present;
For still she feared to be overhent
Of that vile hag, or her uncivile sonne;
Who when, too late awaking, well they kent
That their fayre guest was gone, they both
begonne [undonne,
To make exceeding mone, as they had been

XX

But that lewd lover did the most lament
For her depart, that ever man did heare:
He knockt his brest with desperate intent,
And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did
teare
His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare;
That his sad mother, seeing his sore plight,
Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare
Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,
And love to frenzy turn'd, sith love is franticke
hight.

XXI

All wayes shee sought him to restore to plight,
With herbs, with charms, with counsell, and
with teares; [might
But teares, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell,
Asswage the fury which his entrailes teares:
So strong is passion that no reason heares.
Tho when all other helpes she saw to faile,
Shee turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares;
And by her diuinish arts thought to preuaile
To bringe her backe againe, or worke her finall
bale. 6

XXII

Effesoones out of her hidden cave she cald
An hideous beast of horrible aspect,
That could the stoutest corage have appalld;
Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was
spect
With thousand spots of colours quicent elect,
Thereto so swift that it all beasts did pas:
Like never yet did living eie detect;
But likest it to an Hyena was, [gras.
That feeds on womens flesh as others feede on

XXIII

If forth she cald, and gave it streight in charge
Through thicke and thin her to poursew apace,
Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,
Till her he had attaind and brought in place,
Or quite deuourd her beauties scornfull grace.
The Monster, swift as word that from her
went,
Went forth in haste, and did her footing trace
So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent
And passing speede, that shortly he her over-
hent.

XXIV

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh es-
pide,
No need to bid her fast away to fle:
That ugly shape so sore her terride,
That it shee shund no lesse then dread to die;
And her flitt palfrey did so well apply
His nimble feet to her conceived feare,
That whilst his breath did strength to him
supply,
From peril free he away her did beare;
But when his force gan faile his pace gan wax
areare.

XXV

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dismayd
At that same last extremity ful sore,
And of her safety greatly grew afraid.
And now she gan approach to the sea shore,
As it befell, that shee could fle no more,
But yield herselfe to spoile of greedinesse:
Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,

From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,
And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sickne-
nesse.

XXVI

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled
From dread of her revenging fathers hond;
Nor halfe so fast to save her maydenhed
Fled fearfull Daphne on th' *Ægean* strond,
As Florimell fled from that Monster yond,
To reach the sea ere she of him were raught:
For in the sea to drowne herselfe she fond,
Rather then of the tyrant to be caught:
Thereto fear gave her wings, and need her
courage taught.

XXVII

It fortun'd (high God did so ordaine)
As shee arriv'd on the rozing shore,
In minde to leape into the mighty maine,
A little bote lay hoving her before,
In which there slept a fisher old and pore,
The whiles his nets were drying on the sand.
Into the same shee lept, and with the ore
Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand:
So safety fownd at sea which shee fownd not at
land.

XXVIII

The Monster, ready on the pray to cease,
Was of his forward hope deceiv'd quight;
Ne durst assay to wade the perloous seas,
But greedily long gaping at the sight,
At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,
And tell the idle tidings to his Dame:
Yet, to avenge his diuinish despight,
He sett upon her Palfrey tired lame,
And slew him cruelly ere any reskew came.

XXIX

And, after having him embowelled
To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight
To passe that way, as forth he travell'd:
Yt was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,
As ever man that bloody field did fight;
But in vain sheows, that wont yong knights
bewitch,
And courtly services, tooke no delight;
But rather joyd to bee then seemen sich,
For both to be and seeme to him was labor lich.

XXX

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane,
That raungd abroad to seeke adventures wilde,
As was his wont, in forest and in plaine:
He was all armd in rugged steele unfilde,
As in the smoky forge it was compilde,
And in his Scutchin bore a Satyres beild.
He comming present, where the Monster vilde

Upon that milke-white Palfreyes carcas fedd,
Unto his reskew ran, and greedily him spedd.

XXXI

There well perceivd he that it was the horse
Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride,
That of that fend was rent without remorse:
Much feared he least ought did ill betide
To that faire Maide, the flowre of wemens pride;
For her he dearely loved, and in all
His famous conquests highly magnifide:
Besides, her golden girdle, which did fall
From her in fight, he fownd, that did him sore
apall.

XXXII

Full of sad feare and doubtfull agony
Fiercely he flew upon that wicked fend,
And with huge strokes and cruell battery
Him forst to leave his pray, for to attend
Him selfe from deadly daunger to defend:
Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh
He did engrave, and muchell blood did spend,
Yet might not doe him die: but aie more fresh
And fierce he still appeard, the more he did him
thresh.

XXXIII

He wist not how him to despoile of life,
Ne how to win the wished victory,
Sith him he saw still stronger grow through
strife,
And him selfe weaker through infirmity.
Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously
Hurling his sword away he lightly leapt
Upon the beast, that with great cruelty
Rored and rag'd to be underkept; [hept.
Yet he perforce him held, and strokes upon him

XXXIV

As he that strives to stop a sudden flood,
And in strong bancks his violence enclose,
Foreth it swell above his wonted mood,
And largely overflow the fruitfull plaine,
That all the country seemes to be a Maine,
And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne:
The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine
To see his whole yeares labor lost so soone,
For which to God he made so many an idle
boone:

XXXV

So him he held, and did through might amate.
So long he held him, and him bett so long,
That at the last his fierces gan abate,
And meekely stoup unto the victor strong:
Who, to avenge the implacable wrong
Which he supposed donne to Florimell,
Sought by all meanes his dolor to prolong,

Sith dint of Steele his carcas could not quell;
His maker with her charmes had framed him
so well.

XXXVI

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore
About her sclender waste, he tooke in hand,
And with it bownd the beast, that lowd did
rore
For great despight of that unwonted band,
Yet dared not his victor to withstand,
But trembled like a lambe fled from the pray;
And all the way him followd on the strand,
As he had long bene learned to bay;
Yet never learned he such service till that day.

XXXVII

Thus as he led the Beast along the way,
He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse
Fast flying, on a Courser dappled gray,
From a bold knight that with great hardinesse
Her hard pursawl, and sought for to sup-
presse.
She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of
wire, [her desire.
Whom she did meane to make the thrall of

XXXVIII

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste
He left his captive Beast at liberty,
And crost the nearest way, by which he cast
Her to encounter ere she passed by;
But she the way shund nathemore forthy,
But forward gallopt fast; which when he
spyde,
His mighty speare he couched warily,
And at her ran: she, having him descryde,
Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her lode
aside.

XXXIX

Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare
A trembling Culver, having spide on hight
An Eagle that with plummy wings doth sheare
The subtle ayre stouping with all his might,
The quarry throwes to ground with fell de-
spight,
And to the batteill doth her selfe prepare:
So ran the Geauntesse unto the fight,
Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
And with blasphemous bannes high God in
peesces tare.

XL

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,
Wherewith she many had of life depriv'd;
But, ere the stroke could seize his ayred place,
His speare amids her sun-brode shield arriv'd:

Yet nathemore the steele asonder riv'd,
All were the beame in bignes like a mast,
Ne her out of the stedfast saddle driv'd;
But, glauncing on the tempered metall, brast
In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her
past.

XLI

Her Steed did stagger with that puisaunt
strooke;

But she no more was moved with that might
Then it had lighted on an aged Oke,
Or on the marble Pillour that is pight
Upon the top of Mount Olympus hight,
For the brave youthly Champions to assay
With burning charet wheelles it nigh to smite;
But who that smites it mars his joyous play,
And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

XLII

Yet, therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne re-
gard

Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest,
Which on his helmet martelled so hard
That made him low incline his lofty crest,
And bowd his battred visour to his brest:
Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote ryde,
But reeled to and fro from east to west.
Which when his cruell enmy espyde,
She lightly unto him adjoynd syde to syde;

XLIII

And, on his collar laying puisaunt hand,
Out of his wavering seat him pluckt perforce,
Perforce him pluckt, unable to withstand
Or helpe himselfe; and laying thwart her
horse,

In loathly wise like to a carrion corse,
She bore him fast away. Which when the
knight

That her pursu'd saw, with great remorse
He nere was toucht in his noble spright,
And gan encrease his speed as she encreast her
flight.

XLIV

Whom when as nigh approaching she espyde,
She threw away her burden angrily;
For she list not the batteill to abide,
But made her selfe more light away to fly:
Yet her the hardy knight pursu'd so nye
That almost in the backe he oft her strake;
But still, when him at hand she did espy,
She turn'd, and semblaunce of faire fight did
make,
But, when he stayd, to flight againe she did

XLV

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan awake
Out of his dreame that did him long entraunce,

And, seeing none in place, he gan to make
Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce
Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce.
At length he spyde wher-as that wofull Squyre,
Whom he had reskewed from captivaunce
Of his strong foe, lay tombled in the myre,
Unable to arise, or foote or hand to styre

XLVI

To whom appoaching, well he mote perceive
In that fowle plight a comely personage
And lovely face, made fit for to deceive
Fraile Ladies hart with loves consuming rage,
Now in the blossome of his freshest age.
He heard him up and loosd his yron bands,
And after gan inquire his parentage,
And how he fell into the Gyaunts hands,
And who that was which chased her along the
lands.

XLVII

Then trembling yet through feare the Squire
bespake:
'That Genantesse Argante is behight,
A daughter of the Titans which did make
Warre against heaven, and heaped hills on hight
To scale the skyes and put Jove from his
right:
Her syre Typhoeus was; who, mad through
merth, [might,
And dronke with blood of men slaine by his
Through incest her of his owne mother Earth
Whylone begot, being but halfe twin of that
berth:

XLVIII

'For at that berth another Babe she bore:
To weat, the mightie Ollyphant, that wrought
Grent wreake to many errant knights of yore,
And many hath to foule confusion brought.
These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing
thought) [were,
While in their mothers wombe enclos'd they
Ere they into the lightsom world were brought,
In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,
And in that monstrous wise did to the world
appeere.

XLIX

'So liv'd they ever after in like sin,
Gainst natures law and good behavoure;
But greatest shame was to that maiden twin,
Who, not content so fowly to devour
Her native flesh and staine her brothers bowre,
Did wallow in all other fleshly myre.
And suffred beastes her body to deflowre,
So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre;
Yet all that might not slake her sensuall desyre:

I.

'But over all the cuntry she did raunge
To seeke young men to quench her flaming
thrust,

And feed her fancy with delightfull chaunge:
Whom so she fittest findes to serve her lust,
Through her name strength, in which she
most doth trust,

She with her brings into a secret Ile,
Where in eternall bondage dye he must,
Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile.
And in all shamefull sort him selfe with her
defile.

LI

'Me, seely wretch, she so at vauntage caught,
After she long in waite for me did lye,
And meant unto her prison to have brought,
Her lothsom pleasure there to satisfye;
That thousand deathes me lever were to dye
Then breake the vow that to faire Columbell
I plighted have, and yet keepe steadfastly.
As for my name, it mistreth not to tell:
Call me the Squire of Dames; that me
bescemeth well.

LII

'But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing saw
That Geauntesse, is not such as she seemd,
But a faire virgin that in martiall law
And deedes of armes above all Dames is
deemd,

And above many knightes is eke esteemd
For her great worth: She Palladine is hight.
She you from death, you me from dread, re-
deemd;

Ne any may that Monster match in fight,
But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a
wight.'

LIII

'Her well besemes that Quest,' (quoth Saty-
rane)

'But read, thou Squire of Dames, what vow
Which thou upon thy selfe hast lately take?'
'That shall I you recount,' (quoth he) 'ywis,
So be ye pleas'd to pardon all amiss.
That gentle Lady whom I love and serve,
After long suit and wearie servics,
Did aske me, how I could her love deserve,
And how she might be sure that I would never
swerve?

LIV

'I, glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,
Badd her command my life to save or spill.
Eftsoones she badd me, with incessaunt paine
To wander through the world abroad at will,
And every where, where with my power or
I might doe service unto gentle Dames, [skill
That I the same should faithfully fulfill;

And at the twelve monethes end should bring
their names [games.
And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious

LV

'So well I to faire Ladies service did,
And found such favour in their loving hartes,
That ere the yeare his course had compassid,
Thre hundred pledges for my good desartes,
And thrice three hundred thanks for my good
partes,

I with me brought, and did to her present:
Which when she saw, more bent to eke my
smartes

Then to reward my trusty true intent,
She gan for me devise a grievous punishment;

LVI

'To weet, that I my travcill should resume,
And with like labour walke the world arownd,
Ne ever to her presence should presume,
Till I so many other Dames had fownd,
The which, for all the suit I could propownd,
Would me refuse their pledges to afford,
But did abide for ever chaste and sownd."

'Ah! gentle Squire,' (quoth he) 'tell at one
word, [record?
How many fowndest thou such to put in thy

LVII

'Indeed, Sir knight,' (said he) 'one word
may tell

All that I ever fownd so wisely stayd,
For onely three they were disposd so well;
And yet three yeares I now abroad have strayd,
To fynd them out.' 'Mote I,' (then laughing
sayd [three,

The knight) 'inquire of thee what were those
The which thy proffred curtesie denyd?

Or ill they seemd sure avizd to bee, [see.'
Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did fashions

LVIII

'The first which then refused me,' (said hee)
'Certes was but a common Courtisane;
Yet flat refusd to have adoe with mee,
Because I could not give her many a Jane.'
(Thereto full hartely laughed Satyrane.)

'The second was an holy Nunne to chose,
Which would not let me be her Chappellane,
Because she knew, she said, I would disclose
Her counsell, if she should her trust in me re-
pose.

LIX

'The third a Damzell was of low degree,
Whom I in cuntry cottage fownd by chaunce:
Full litle weened I that chastitee
Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce;

Yet was she fayre, and in her countenance
Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion.
Long thus I woud her with due observ-
ance,

In hope unto my pleasure to have won;
But was as far at last, as when I first begon

LX

'Safe her, I never any woman found
That chastity did for it selfe embrace,
But were for other causes firme and sound;
Eithr for want of handsome time and place,
Or else for fenge of shame and fowle disgrace.
Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine
My Ladies love in such a desperate case,

But all my dayes am like to waste in vaine,
Seeking to match the chaste with th'unchaste
Ladies traine.'

LXI

'Perly' (sayd Satyrane) 'thou Squire of
Dames,
Great labour fondly hast thou bent in hand,
To get small thanks, and therewith many
blames,
That may amongst Alcides labours stand.'
Thence backe returning to the former land,
Where late he left the Beast he overcame,
He found him not; for he had broke his hand,
And was returnd againe unto his Dame,
To tell what tydings of fayre Florimell became.

CANTO VIII.

The Witch creates a snowy La-
dy like to Florimell;
Who wrong'd by Carle, by Proteus sav'd,
Is sought by Paridell.

So oft as I this history repord,
My heart doth melt with meere compassion,
To thinke how causelesse, of her owne accord,
This gentle Damzell, whom I write upon,
Should plunged be in such affliction
Without all hope of comfort or reliefe;
That sure, I weene, the hardest hart of stone
Would hardly finde to aggravate her griefe;
For misery craves rather mercy then repriefe.

II

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,
Had so enrackled her malicious hart,
That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate,
Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.
Now when the Deist, which by her wicked art
Late forth she sent, she backe retournings spyde
Tyde with her golden girle; it a part
Of her rich spoyles whom he had earst destroyed
She weend, and wondrous gladnes, to her hart
applyde.

III

And, with it ronning hand'ly to her sonne,
Thought with that sight him much to have
reliv'd
Who, thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,
His former griefe with furie fresh reviv'd
Much more then earst, and would have algates
riv'd
The hart out of his brest: for sith her dedd
He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriv'd

Quite of all hope wherewith he long had fedd
His foolish malady, and long time had misledd.

IV

With thought whereof exceeding mad he grew,
And in his rage his mother would have slaine,
Had she not fled into a secret mew,
Where she was wont her Sprightes to enter-
taine,
The maisters of her art: there was she faine
To call them all in order to her ayde,
And then conjure, upon eternall paine,
To counsell her, so carefully dismayd,
How she might heale her sonne whose senses
were decayd.

V

By their advice, and her owne wicked wit,
She there devis'd a wondrous worke to frame,
Whose like on earth was never framed yit;
That even Nature selfe envie the same,
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame
The thing it selfe: In hand she boldly tooke
To make another like the former Dame,
Another Florimell, in shape and looke
So lively and so like, that many it mistooke.

VI

The substance, whereof she the body made,
Was purest snow in massy mould congeald,
Which she had gathered in a shady glade
Of the Rhiphaean hills, to her reveald

By errant Sprights, but from all men conceald:

The same she tempred with fine Mercury
And virgin wax that never yet was seald,
And mingled them with perfect vermil;
That like a lively sanguine it seemd to the eye

VII

Instead of eyes two burning lampes she set
In silver sockets, shyning like the skyes,
And a quicke moving Spirit did arret
To stirre and roll them like to womens eyes:
Instead of yellow lockes she did devyse
With golden wyre to weave her curled head;
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse
As Florinells fayre haire: and, in the stead
Of life, she put a Spright to rule the carcas
dead;

VIII

A wicked Spright, yfraught with fawning
guyle
And fayre resemblance above all the rest,
Which with the Prince of Darkenes fell some-
whyle
From heavens blis and everlasting rest:
Him needed not instruct which way were best
Him selfe to fashion likest Florinell.
Ne how to speake, ne how to use his gest;
For he in counterfeisance did excell,
And all the wyles of womens wits knew pass-
ing well.

IX

Him shaped thus she deckt in garments gay,
Which Florinell had left behind her late;
That who so then her saw would surely say
It was her selfe whom it did imitate,
Or fayrer then her selfe, if ought algate
Might fayrer be. And then she forth her
Unto her sonne that lay in feeble state; | brought
Who seeing her gan straight upstart, and
thought [sought.
She was the Lady selfe whom he so long had

X

Tho fast her clipping twixt his armes twayne,
Extremely joyed in so happy sight,
And soone forgot his former sickely payne:
But she, the more to seeme such as she hight,
Coily rebutted his embracement light;
Yet still, with gentle countenance, retain'd
Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight.
Him long she so with shadowes entertain'd,
As her Creatresse had in charge to her ordain'd.

XI

Till on a day, as he disposed was
To walke the woodes with that his Idole faire,

Her to disport and idle time to pass
In th' open freshes of the gentle aire.
A knight that way there chanced to repaire;
Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine
That decdes of armes had ever in despaire,
Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting vaine
His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

XII

He, seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight,
Decked with many a costly ornament,
Much merreiled thereat, as well he might.
And thought that match a fowle disparagement:
His bloody speare oftsoones he boldly bent
Against the silly clowne, who dead through
feare
Fell straight to ground in great astonishment.
'Vilkin,' (sayd he) 'this Lady is my deare;
Dy, if thou it gainesay: I will away her beare.'

XIII

The fearefull Chorle durst not gainesay nor
dooe,
But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray;
Who, finding litle leasure her to wooe
On Trompart's steed her mounted without stay,
And without reskew led her quite away.
Proudenan him-elfe then Braggadocchio deem'd,
And next to none after that happy day,
Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd
The fairest wight on ground, and most of men
esteem'd.

XIV

But, when hee saw him-elfe free from poursute,
He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame
With termes of love and lewdnesse dissolute;
For he could well his glozing speeches frame
To such vaine uses that him best became:
But she thereto would lend but light regard,
As seeming sorry that she ever came
Into his powre, that used her so hard | prefard.
To reave her honor, which she more then life

XV

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long.
There them by chance encountred on the way
An armed knight upon a courser strong,
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay
Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray
That Capons corage: yet he looked grim,
And saynd to cheare his lady in dismay,
Who seemd for feare to quake in every liim,
And her to save from outrage meekely prayed
him.

XVI

Fiercely that stranger forward came: and,
nigh
Approching, with bold words and bitter threat

Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high,
To leaue to him that lady for excheat,
Or bide him battell without further treat.
That challenge did too peremptory seeme,
And fild his senses with abashment great;
Yet seeing nigh him jeopardy extreme,
He it dissembled well, and light seemd to
esteeme

XVII

Saying, 'Thou foolish knight, that weenst
with words
To steale away that I with blowes haue wonne,
And brought through points of many perillous
swords:

But if thee list to see thy Courser runne,
Or prove thy selfe, this sad encounter shoune,
And seeke els without hazard of thy hevl.
At those proude words that other knight
begonne

To weex exceeding wroth, and him aredd
To turne his steede about, or sure he should
be dedd.

XVIII

'Sith then,' (said Braggadochio) 'needes thou
wilt

Thy daies abridge through prooffe of puis-aunce,
Turne we our steeds; that both in equall tilt
May meete againe, and each take happy
chaunce.'

This said, they both a furlongs mountenaunce
Retird their steeds, to runne in even race;
But Braggadochio, with his bloody launce,
Once having turnd, no more returnd his face,
But lefte his love to losse, and fled him selfe
apace.

XIX

The knight, him seeing flie, had no regard
Him to poursew, but to the lady rode;
And haying her from Trompart lightly reard,
Upon his Courser sett the lovely lode,
And with her fled away without abode.
Well weened he, that fairest Florimell
It was with whom in company he yode,
And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell;
So made him thinke him selfe in heven that
was in hell.

XX

But Florimell her selfe was far away,
Driven to great distresse by fortune straunge,
And taught the carefull Marmer to play,
Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to
chaunge

The land for sea, at randon there to raunge:
I ett there that ruell Queene avengeresse,
Not satisfide so far her to estraunge

From courtly blis and wonted happinesse,
Did heape on her new waves of weary wretched-
nesse.

XXI

For being fled into the fishers bote
For refuge from the Monsters cruelty,
Long so she on the mighty maine did flote,
And with the tide drove forward carelesly;
For th' ayre was milde and cleared was the
skie,
And all his windes Dan Acolus did keepe
From stirring up their stormy enmity,
As pittying to see her wail and weepe:
But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe

XXII

At last, when droncke with drowsinesse he
woke,
And saw his drover drive along the streame,
He was dismayd; and thrise his brest he
stroke,
For marveill of that accident extreame:
But when he saw that blazing beauties beame,
Which with rare light his bote did beautifye,
He marveild more, and thought he yet did
dreame

Not well awakte; or that some extasye
Assotted had his sense, or dazed was his eye.

XXIII

But when her well avizing hee perceiv'd
To be no vision nor fantasticke sight.
Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd,
And felt in his old corage new delight
To gin awake, and stir his frosen spright:
Tho rudely aske her, how she thither came?
'Ah!' (sayd she) 'father, I note read aright
What hard misfortune brought me to this same;
Yet am I glad that here I now in safety ame.

XXIV

'But thou, good man, sith far in sea we bee,
And the great waters gin apace to swell,
That now no more we can the mayn-land see,
Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,
Least worse on sea then us on land befell.'
Thereat th' old man did nought but fondly grin,
And saide his boat the way could wisely tell;
But his deceitfull eyes did never lin [skin.
To looke on her faire face and marke her snowy

XXV

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh
Infixt such secreete sting of greedy lust,
That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,
And kindled heat that soone in flame forth
brust:

The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.
Rudely to her he leapt, and his rough hand
Where ill became him rashly would have thrust;

But she with angry scorn did him withstand,
And shamefully reproved for his rudenes fond.

XXVI

But he, that never good nor maners knew,
Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme;
Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew:
The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,
Broke into open fire and rage extreme;
And now he strength gan adde unto his will,
Foreyng to doe that did him fowle misseeme.
Bently he throwe her downe, ne car'd to spill
Her garments gay with scales of fish that all
did fill.

XXVII

The silly virgin strove him to withstand
All that she might, and him in vaine revild:
Shee struggled strongly both with foote and
hand

To save her honor from that villaine vilde.
And cride to heven, from humane help exild.
O! ye brave knights, that boast this Ladies
love,

Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild
Of filthy wretch? well may she you reprove
Of falschood or of slouth, when most it may
behave.

XXVIII

But if that thou, Sir Satyrane, didst weete,
Or thou, Sir Peridure, her sory state,
How soone would yee assemble many a flecte,
To fetch from sea that ye at land lost late!
Towres, citties, kingdomes, ye would ruinate
In your avengement and despiteous rage,
Ne ought your burning fury mote abate;
But if Sir Calidore could it presage,
No living creature could his cruelty assuage.

XXIX

But sith that none of all her knights is nye,
See how the heavens, of voluntary grace
And soveraine favor towards chastity,
Doe succor send to her distressed cace;
So much high God doth innocence embrace.
It fortun'd, whilst thus she stifly strove,
And the wide sea importuned long space
With shrilling shriekes, Proteus abroad did
rove,
Along the fomy waves driving his finny drove.

XXX

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore,
And hath the charge of Neptunes mighty
heard;

An aged sire with head all frore yore,
And sprinkled frost upon his dewy beard:
Who when those pittifull outeries he heard
Through all the seas so ruefully resound,
His charett swift in last he thither steard,
Which with a teeme of scaly Phocas bound
Was drawne upon the waves that fomed him
arownd.

XXXI

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote,
That went at will withouten card or sayle,
He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which
smote
Deepe indignation and compassion frayle
Into his hart attonce: streight did he hayle
The greedy villaine from his hoped pray,
Of which he now did very litle sayle,
And with his staffe, that drives his heard
astray, [dis-may
Him bett so sore, that life and sence did much

XXXII

The whiles the pitteous Lady up did ryse,
Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle,
And blubbred face with teares of her faire eyes:
Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,
To save her selfe from that outrageous spoyle;
But when she looked up, to weet what wight
Had her from so infamous fact asoyld,
For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,
Downe in her lap she hid her face, and lowdly
shnight.

XXXIII

Her selfe not saved yet from daunger dredd
She thought, but chaung'd from one to other
feare:
Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd
From the sharpe hawke which her attached
neare,
And fells to ground to seeke for succor there,
Whereas the hungry Spaniells she does spye
With greedy jawes her ready for to teare:
In such distresse and sad perplexity [hy.
Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see her

XXXIV

But he endeavored with speeches milde
Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,
Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was her told:
Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
Ne to recomfort her at all prevayld;
For her faint hart was with the frosen cold
Benumbd so iuly, that her wits nigh fayld,
And all her senses with abashment quite were
quayld.

XXXV

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
And with his froty lips full softly kist, [beard
Whiles the cold ysicles from his rough
Dropped adowne upon her yvory breast:
Yet he him selfe so busily adrest,
That her out of astonishment he wrought;
And out of that same fishers filthy nest
Removing her, into his charet brought,
And there with many gentle termes her faire
besought.

XXXVI

But that old leachour, which with bold assault
That beautie durst presume to violate,
He cast to punish for his hainous fault:
Then tooke he him, yet trembling sith of late,
And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate
The virgin whom he had abusde so sore;
So drag'd him through the waves in scornfull
And after cast him up upon the shore; [state,
But Florimell with him unto his bowre he bore.

XXXVII

His bowre is in the bottom of the maine,
Under a mightie rocke, gainst which doe rave
The roring billowes in their proud disdaine,
That with the angry working of the wave
Therein is eaten out an hollow cave, [keene
That seemes rough Masons hand with engines
Had long while laboured it to engrave
There was his wonne; ne living wight was
seene [it cleane,
Save one old Nymph, hight Panopé, to keepe

XXXVIII

Thither he brought the sory Florimell,
And entertained her the best he might,
And Panopé her entertaingd eke well,
As an immortall mote a mortall wight,
To winne her liking unto his delight:
With flattering wordes he sweetly wooed her.
And offered faire guesites t' allure her sight;
But she both offers and the offerer
Despyde, and all the fawning of the flatterer

XXXIX

Dayly he tempted her with this or that,
And never suffred her to be at rest;
But evermore she him refused flat,
And all his fained kindnes did detest,
So firmly she had sealed up her brest.
Sometimes he boasted that a God he hight,
But she a mortall creature loved best:
Then he would make him selfe a mortall wight;
But then she said she lov'd none, but a Faery
knight.

XL

Then like a Faerie knight him selfe he drest,
For every shape on him he could endew;
Then like a king he was to her exprest,
And offred kingdoms unto her in vew,
To be his Leman and his Lady trew:
But when all this he nothing saw prevayle,
With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,
And with sharpe threatoes her often did assayle;
So thinking for to make her stubbornne corage
quayle.

XLI

To dreadfull shapes he did him selfe trans-
forme;
Now like a Gyaunt; now like to a feend;
Then like a Centaure; then like to a storme
Raging within the waves: thereby he weend
Her will to win unto his wished end;
But when with feare, nor favour, nor with all
He els could doe, he saw him selfe esteemd,
Downe in a Dungeon deepe he let her fall,
And threatend there to make her his eternall
thrall.

XLII

Eternall thraldome was to her more liefe
Then losse of chastitie, or chaunge of love:
Dye had she rather in tormenting griefe
Then any should of falsenesse her reprove,
Or loosene, that she lightly did remove.
Most vertuous virgins! glory be thy meed,
And crowne of heavenly prayse with Santes
above, [deed
Where most sweet hymmes of this thy famous
Are still amongst them song, that far my
rymes exceed.

XLIII

Fit song of Angels caroled to bee!
But yet w^elsto my feeble Muse can frame
Shal be t' advance thy goodly chastitee
And to enroll thy memorable name
In th' heart of every honourable Dame,
That thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
And be partakers of thy endless fame.
Yt yrikes me leave thee in this wofull state,
To tell of Satyrane where I him left of late.

XLIV

Who having ended with that Squire of Dames
A long discourse of his adventures vayne,
The which himselfe then Ladies more defames,
And finding not th' Hyena to be slayne,
With that same Squire retourned back againe
To his first way. And, as they forward went,
They spyde a knight fayre pricking on the
As if he were on some adventure bent, [playne,
And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

XLV

Sir Satyrane him towards did addresse,
To weet what wight he was, and what his
quest,

And, comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to gesse,
Both by the burning hart which on his brest
He bare, and by the colours in his crest,
That Paridell it was. Tho to him yode,
And him saluting as beseeemed best,
Gan first inquire of tydings farre abroad, [rode.
And afterwards on what adventure now he

XLVI

Who thereto answering said: 'The tydings
bad,

Which now in Faery court all men doe tell,
Which turned hath great mirth to mourning
sad,

Is the late ruine of proud Marinell,
And sudden parture of faire Florimell
To find him forth: and after her are gone
All the brave knights that doen in armes
To savegard her ywandred all alone: [excell
Eamongst the rest my lott (unworthy) is to be
one.'

XLVII

'Ah! gentle knight,' (said then Sir Satyrane)
'Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,
That hast a thanklesse service on thee ta'ne,
And offrest sacrifice unto the dead:
For dead, I surely doubt, thou maist aread
Henceforth for ever Florimell to bee;
That all the noble knights of Maydenhead,
Which her ador'd, may sore repent with mee,
And all faire Ladies may for ever sory bee.'

XLVIII

Which wordes when Paridell had heard, his
hew
Gan greatly change and seemd dismayd to see:
Then said: 'Faire Sir, how may I weene it
That ye doe tell in such uncerteintee? [trew,
Or speake ye of report, or did ye see • [sore?
Just cause of dread, that makes ye doubt so
For, perdie, elles how mote it ever bee,
That ever hand should dare for to engore
Her noble blood? The heavens such crueltie
abhorre.'

XLIX

'These eyes did see that they will ever rew
T' have seene,' (quoth he) 'when as a mon-
strous beast

The Palfrey whereon she did travell slew,
And of his bowels made his bloody feast:
Which speaking token sheweth at the least
Her certeine losse, if not her sure decay:
Besides, that more suspicion encreast,
I found her golden girdle cast astray.
Distaynd with durt and blood, as relique of
the pray.'

L

'Ay me!' (said Paridell) 'the signes be sad;
And, but God turne the same to good sooth-say.
That Ladies safetie is sore to be dradd.
Yet will I not forsake my forward way,
Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray.'
'Faire Sir,' (quoth he) 'well may it you succeed'
Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay,
But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed,
My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed.'

LI

'Ye noble knights,' (said then the Squire of
Dames)
'Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy payne!
But sith the Sunne now ginnes to slake his
beames
In dewy vapours of the western mayne,
And lose the tyme out of his weary wayne,
Mote not mislike you also to abate
Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
Both light of heven and strength of men relate:
Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your
gate.'

LII

That counsell pleased well: so all yfere
Forth marched to a Castle them before;
Where soone arrayryng they restrained were
Of ready entranee, which ought evermore
To errant knights be commune: wondrous sore
Thereat displeasd they were, till that young
Squire [dore
Gan them informe the cause, why that same
Was shut to all which lodging did desyre:
The which to let you weet will further tyme
requyre.

CANTO IX.

Malbecco will no straunge knights host,
For peevish gealosy.
Paridell giusta with Britomart:
Both shew their auncestry.

I

Renowned knights, and honorable Dames,
To whom I leuell all my labours end,
Right sore I feare, least with unworthie blames
This odious argument my rymes should shend,
Or ought your goodly patience offend,
Whiles of a wanton Lady I doe write,
Which with her loose incontinence doth blend
The shyning glory of your sovaine light;
And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse
knight.

II

But never let th' ensample of the bad
Offend the good; for good, by paragone
Of evill, may more notably be rad, [tone;
As white seemes fayrer macht with blacke at-
Ne all are shamed by the fault of one: •
For lo! in heaven, whereas all goodnes is,
Amongst the Angels, a whole legione
Of wicked Sprightes did fall from happy blis;
What wonder then if one, of women all, did mis?

III

Then listen, Lordlings, if ye list to weat
The cause why Satyrane and Paridell
Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,
Into that Castle, (as that Squire does tell.)
'Therein a canered crabbed Carle does dwell,
That has no skill of Court nor courtesie,
Ne cares what men say of him, ill or well;
For all his dayes he dwynes in privite,
Yet has full large to live and spend at libertie.

IV

'But all his minde is set on mucky pelfe,
To hoord up heapes of evill gotten masse.
For which he others wrongs, and wrecks him-
Yet is he lincked to a lovely lasse, [selfe:
Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpass;e;
The which to him both far unequal yeares,
And also far unlike conditions has;
For she does joy to play amongst her peares,
And to be free from hard restraynt and gealous
feares.

V

'But he is old, and withered like hay,
Unfit faire Ladies service to supplv:

The privie guilt whereof makes him alway
Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy
Upon her with his other blacked eye.
Ne suffreth he resort of living wight
Approch to her, ne keepe her company.
But in close bowre her mewes from all mens
sight,
Depriv'd of kindly joy and naturall delight

VI

'Malbecco he, and Hellenore she hight;
Unfitly yokt together in one teene.
That is the cause why never any knight
Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme
Such as no doubt of him he neede misdeeme.'
Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smile, and say;
'Extremely mad the man I surely deeme,
That weenes with watch and hard restraynt
to stay
A womans will, which is disposd to go astray.

VII

'In vaine he feares that which he cannot
shonne;
For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes
Can guyleen Argus, when she list misdonne?
It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,
Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyes,
That can withhold her wilfull wandring feet;
But fast goodwill, with gentle courtesyes,
And timely service to her pleasures meet,
May her perhaps containe, that else would
algates fleet.'

VIII

'Then is he not more mad,' (sayd Paridell)
'That hath him selfe unto such service sold,
In dolefull thralldome all his dayes to dwell?
For sure a foole I doe him firmly hold,
That loves his fetters, though they were of
gold.
But why doe wee devise of others ill,
Whyles thus we suffer this same dotard old
To keepe us out in scorne, of his owne will,
And rather do not ransack all, and him selfe
kill?'

IX

Nay, let us first' (sayd Satyrane) 'entreat
The man by gentle meanes to let us in,

And afterwarde affray with cruell threat,
 Ere that we to efforce it doe begin :
 Then, if all fayle, we will by force it win.
 And eke reward the wretch for his mesprise,
 As may be worthy of his haynous sin.
 That counsell pleasid : then Paridell did rise
 And to the Castle gate approacht in quiet wise.

X

Whereat soft knocking entrance he desyrd.
 The good man selfe, which then the Porter
 playd,
 Him answered, that all were now retyrd
 Unto their rest, and all the keyes conveyd
 Unto their maister, who in bed was layd,
 That none him durst awake out of his dreame;
 And therefore them of patience gently playd.
 Then Paridell began to chaunge his theme,
 And threatned him with force and punishment
 extreme :

XI

But all in vaine, for nought mote him relent
 And now so long before the wicked fast
 They wayted, that the night was forward spent,
 And the faire welkin fowly overcast
 Gan blownen up a bitter stormy blast,
 With shoure and hayle so horible and died,
 That this faire man were compeld at last
 To fly for succour to a little shed,
 The which beside the gate for swyne was
 ordered.

XII

It fortunel, soone after they were gone,
 Another knight, whom tempest thither brought,
 Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone,
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare besought :
 But, like so as the rest, he prayd for nought ;
 For flatly he of entrance was refused.
 Sorely thereat he was displeased, and thought
 How to avenge himselfe so sore abused,
 And evermore the Carle of courtesie accusd.

XIII

But, to avoyde th' intollerable stowre,
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare,
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the
 shoure,
 He came, which full of guests he found why-
 So as he was not let to enter there : [leare,
 Whereat he gan to vex exceeding wroth,
 And swore that he would lodge with them
 yfere,
 Or them dislodge, all were they liefe or loth ;
 And so defyde them each, and so defyde them
 both.

XIV

Both were full loth to leave that needfull tent,
 And both full loth in darkenesse to debate ;
 Yet both full liefe him lodging to have lent,
 And both full liefe his boasting to abate :
 But chiefly Paridell his hart did grate
 To heare him threaten so despyghtfully,
 As if he did a dogge in kenell rate
 That durst not barke; and rather had he dy
 Then, when he was defyde, in coward corner ly.

XV

Tho hastily remounting to his steed
 He forth issew'd : like as a boystrous winde,
 Which in th' earthes hollow caves hath long
 ben hid
 And shut up fast within her prisons blind,
 Makes the huge element, against her kinde,
 To move and tremble as it were aghast,
 Untill that it an issew forth may finde : | blast
 Then forth it breakes, and with his furious
 Confounds both land and seas, and skyes doth
 overcast.

XVI

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht,
 and met
 Together with impetuous rage and forse,
 That with the terrour of their fierce affret
 They rudely drove to ground both man and
 horse,
 That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.
 But Paridell sore brused with the blow
 Could not arise the counterchaunge to scorse,
 Till that young Squire him reared from below ;
 Then drew he his bright sword, and gan about
 him throw.

XVII

But Satyrane forth stepping did them stay,
 And with faire treaty pacifide their yre.
 Then, when they were accorded from the fray,
 Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
 To heape on him dew vengeance for his hire.
 They beene agreed ; and to the gates they goe
 To burn the same with unquenchable fire,
 And that incurteous Carle, their commune foe,
 To doe fowle death to die, or wrap in grievous
 woe.

XVIII

Malbecco, seeing them resolv'd indeed
 To flame the gates, and hearing them to call
 For fire in earnest, ran with fearfull speed,
 And to them calling from the castle wall,
 Besought them humbly him to beare withall,
 As ignorant of servants had abuse
 And slacke attendaunce unto straungers eall.

The knights were willing all things to excuse,
Though nought belev'd, and entranche late did
not refuse.

XIX

They beene ybrought into a comely bowre,
And servd of all things that mote needfull bee;
Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre,
And welcomde more for feare then charitee;
But they dissembled what they did not see,
And welcomed themselves. Each gan undight
Their garments wet, and weary armour free,
To dry themselves by Vulcanes flaming light,
And eke their lately bruized parts to bring in
plight.

XX

And eke that straunger knight amongst the
Was for like need enforst to disaray: [rest
Tho, whenas vailed was her lofty crest,
Her golden locks, that were in trammells gay
Upbouden, did them selves adowne display
And raught u to her heeles; like sunny
beames,
That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
Their vapour vaded, shewe their golden
gleames, [their azure streames,
And through the persant aire shoote, forth,

XXI

Shee also dofte her heavy haberjeon,
Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde;
And her well-plighted frock, which she did won
To tucke about her short when she did ryde,
Shee low let fall, that flowd from her lanck
syde
Downe to her foot with carelesse modestee,
Then of them all she plainly was espyde
To be a woman-wight, unwist to bee,
The fairest woman-wight that ever eie did see.

XXII

Like as Bellona (being late returnd
From slaughter of the Giants conquered;
Where proud Encelade, whose wide nosethrills
burnd
With breathed flames, like to a furnace redd,
Transfixt with her speare downe tumbled dedd
From top of Ilemus by him heaped hye)
Hath loost her helmet from her lofty hedd,
And her Gorgonian shield gins to untye
From her lefte arme, to rest in glorious victorie.

XXIII

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were
With great amazement of so wondrous sight;
And each on other, and they all on her,
Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright

Had them surprizd. At last, avizing right
Her goodly personage and glorious hew,
Which they so much mistooke, they tooke
delight

In their first error, and yett still anew [vew.
With wonder of her beauty fed their hungry

XXIV

Yet note their hungry vew he satisfide,
But seeing still the more desir'd to see,
And ever firmly fixt did abide
In contemplation of divinitee:
But most they mervaild at her chevalree
And noble prowess, which they had approv'd,
That much they faynd to know who she mote
Yet none of all them her theif of amov'd [bee:
Yet every one her likte, and every one her
lov'd.

XXV

And Paridell, though partly discontent
With his late fall and fowle indignity,
Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,
Through gratus regard of her faire eye,
And knightly worth which he too late did try,
Yet triad did adore. Supper was light;
Then they Malhecco prayd of courtesy,
That of his lady they might have the sight
And company at meat, to doe them more de-
light.

XXVI

But he, to shifte their curious request,
Gan causen why she could not come in place;
Her crased helth, her late recourse to rest,
And humid evening ill for sicke folkes case;
But none of those excuses could take place,
Ne would they eate till she in presence came.
Shee came in presence with right comely grace,
And famely them saluted, as became, [Dame,
And shewd her selfe in all a gentle courteous

XXVII

They sate to meat; and Satyrane his chaunce
Was her before, and Paridell beside;
But he him selfe sate looking still askaunce
Gainst Britomart, and ever closely eide
Sir Satyrane, that glaunces might not glide:
But his blinde eie, that sided Paridell,
All his demesnure from his sight did hide:
On her faire face so did he feede his ill,
And sent close messages of love to her at will.

XXVIII

And ever and anone, when none was ware,
With speaking looks, that close embassage
bore,
He rov'd at her, and told his secret care
For all that art he learned had of yore;

Ne was she ignoraunt of that leud lore,
But in his eye his meaning wisely redd,
And with the like him aunswerd evermore.
Shee sent at him one fyrie dart, whose hedd
Empoisoned was with privy lust and gealous
dredd.

XXIX

He from that deadly throw made no defence,
But to the wound his weake heart opened
wyde:

The wicked engine through false influence
Past through his eies, and secretly did glyde
Into his heart, which it did sorely gryde.
But nothing new to him was that same paine,
Ne paine at all; for he so ofte had tryde
The powre thereof, and lov'd so oft in vaine,
That thing of course he counted love to enter-
taine.

XXX

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate
His inward griefe, by meanes to him well
knowne:

Now Bacchus fruit out of the silver plate
He on the table dasht, as overthrowne,
Or of the fruitfull liquor overflowne;
And by the dauncing bubbles did divine,
Or therein write to lett his love be showne;
Which well she redd out of the learned line:
A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

XXXI

And, when so of his hand the pledge she raught,
The guilty cup she fained to mistake,
And in her lap did shed her idle draught,
Shewing desire her inward flame to slake.
But such close signes they secret way did make
Unto their wils, and one eies watch escape:
Two eies him needeth. for to watch and wake.
Who lovers will deceive. Thus was the ape,
By thy faire handling, put into Malbecco's
cape.

XXXII

Now, when of meats and drinks they had
their fill,

Purpose was moved by that gentle Dame
Unto those knights adventurous, to tell
Of deeds of armes which unto them became,
And every one his kindred and his name.
Then Paridell, in whom a kindly pride
Of gracious speach and skill his words to frame
Abounded, being glad of so fitt tide
Him to commend to her, thus spake, of all
well eide.

XXXIII

'Troy, that art now nought but an idle name,
And in thine ashes buried low dost lie. [fame,
Though wulome far much greater then thy

Before that angry Gods and cruell skie
Upon thee heapt a direfull destanie;
What boots it boast thy glorious descent,
And fetch from heven thy great genealogie,
Sith all thy worthe prayves being blent
Their ofspring hath embaste, and later glory
shent?

XXXIV

'Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome
That warre was kindled which did Troy inflame,
And stately towres of Ilion whilome
Brought unto balefull ruine, was by name
Sir Paris far renownd through noble fame;
Who, through great prowess and bold hardi-
nesse,
From Lacedaemon fetcht the fayrest Dame
That ever Greece did boast, or knight possesse,
Whom Venus to him gave for meed of worthi-
nesse;

XXXV

'Fayre Helene, flowre of beauteie excellent,
And girland of the mighty Conquerours,
That madest many Ladies deare lament
The heave losse of their brave Paramours,
Which they far off beheld from Trojan towres,
And saw the fieldes of faire Scamander strowne
With carcases of noble warrioures
Whose fruitlesse lives were under furrow sowne.
And Xanthus sandy bankes with blood all
overflowne.

XXXVI

'From him my linage I derive aright,
Who long before the ten yeares siege of Troy,
Whiles yet on Ida he a shepheard hight,
On faire Oenone got a lovely boy,
Whom, for remembrance of her passed joy,
She, of his Father, Paris did name;
Who, after Greekes did Priams realme destroy,
Gathred the Trojan reliques sav'd from flame,
And with them sayling thence to th' isle of
Paros came.

XXXVII

'That was by him cald Paros, which before
Hight Nausa: there he many yeares did raine,
And buyt Nausicle by the Pontick shore;
The which he dying lefte next in remaine
To Paridas his sonne,
From whom I Paridell by kin descend:
But, for faire ladies love and glories gaine,
My native soile have lefte, my dayes to spend
In seeing deeds of armes, my lives and labors
end.'

XXXVIII

Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell
Of Trojan warres and Priams citie sackt,
The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,

She was empassiond at that piteous act,
With zealous envy of Greekes cruell fact
Against that nation, from whose race of old
She heard that she was lineally extract;
For noble Britons sprong from Trojans bold,
And Troynovant was built of old Troyes ashes
cold.

XXXIX

Then, sighing soft awhile, at last she thus:
'O lamentable fall of famous towne!
Which raignd so many yeares victorious,
And of all Asie bore the souveraine crowne,
In one sad night consumd and throwen downe.
What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
Is not empiert with deepe compassionne,
And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at
evening late?

XI.

'Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
Hath fownd another partner of your payne;
For nothing may impresse so deare con-
straint
As countries cause, and commune foes disdayne.
But if it should not grieve you backe agayne
To turne your course, I woulde heare desyre
What to Aeneas fell; sith that men sayne
He was not in the cities wofull fyre
Consum'd, but did him selfe to safety retyre.'

XLII

'Anchyses sonne, begott of Venus fayre,
Said he, 'out of the flames for safegard fled,
And with a remnant did to sea repayre;
Where he through fatall errour long was led
Full many yeares, and weetelesse wandered
From shore to shore amongst the Lybick sandes,
Ere rest he fownd. Much there he suffered,
And many perilles past in forreine landes,
To save his people rad from victours vengefull
handes.

XLIII

'At last in Latium he did arryve,
Where he with cruell warre was entertaynd
Of th' inland folke, which sought him backe
to drive,
Till he with old Latinus was constrained
To contract wedlock, (so the fates ordaind)
Wedlocke contract in blood, and eke in blood
Accomplished, that many deare complaind:
The rivall slaine, the victour, through the flood
Escaped hardly, hardly praisd his wedlock good.

XLIII

'Yet, after all, he victour did survive,
And with Latinus did the kingdom part;

But after, when both nations gan to strive
Into their names the title to convert,
His sonne Iulus did from thence depart
With all the warlike youth of Trojans blond,
And in long Alba plast his throne apart;
Where faire it florished and long time stoud,
Till Romulus, renewing it, to Rome ren out.'

XLIV

'There; there,' (said Britomart) 'afresh ap-
pear'd
The glory of the later world to spring,
And Troy againe out of her dust was reard
To sitt in second seat of souveraine king
Of all the world, under her governing.
But a third kingdom yet is to arise
Out of the Trojans scattered offspring,
That in all glory and great enterpryse, [ise.
Both first and second Troy shall dare to equal-

XLV

'It Troynovant is hight, that with the waves
Of wealthy Thamys washed is along,
Upon whose stubborne neck, (whereat he raves
With roling rage, and sore him selfe does throng)
That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong,
She fastned hath her loot; which stands so hy,
That it a wonder of the world is song
In forreine landes; and all which passen by,
Beholding it from farre, doe thinke it threatens
the skye.

XLVI

'The Trojan Brute did first that citie fownd,
And Hygate made the meure thereof by West,
And Overt gate by North: that is the bownd
Toward the land; two rivers bownd the rest.
So huge a scope at first him seemed best,
To be the compasse of his kingdomes sent:
So huge a minn could not in lesser rest,
Ne in small meares containe his glory great,
That Albion had conquered first by warlike
seat.'

XLVII

'Ah! fairest Lady knight,' (said Paridell)
'Pardon, I pray, my heedlesse oversight,
Who had forgot that whylome I heard tell
From aged Mnemon; for my wits beene light.
Indeed he said, (if I remember right)
That of the antique Trojan stocke there grew
Another plant, that raught to wondrous hight,
And far abroad his mightie branches threw
Into the utmost Angle of the world he knew.

XLVIII

'For that same Brute, whom much he did ad-
vaunce
In all his speech, was Sylvius his sonne,

Whom having slain through luckles arrowes
glauce,
He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,
Or els for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne,
And with him led to sea an youthly trayne;
Where wearie wandering they long time did
wonne,
And many fortunes prov'd in th' Ocean mayne,
And great adventures found, that now were
long to sayne.

XLIX

' At last by fatal course they driven were
Into an Island spacious and brode,
The furthest North that did to them appeare:
Which, after rest, they, seeking farre abroad,
Found it the fittest soyle for their Abode,
Fruitfull of all thinges fitt for living foode,
But wholly waste and void of peoples trode,
Save an huge nation of the Geaunts broode
That fed on living flesh, and dronck mens
vitall blood.

L

' Whom he, through wearie wars and labours
long,
Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold:
In which the great Goemagot of strong
Corneus, and Coulin of Debon old, [cold,
Were overthrowne and laide on th' earth full
Which quaked under their so hideous masse;
A famous history to bee enrold
In everlasting moniments of brasse,
That all the antique Worthies merits far did
passe.

LI

' His worke great Troynovant, his worke is
Faïre Lincolne, both renowned far away; [eke
That who from East to West will endlong
Cannot two fairer Cities find this day, [seek;
Except Cleopolis: so heard I say
Old Mnemon. Therefore, Sir, I greet you well
Your countrey kin; and you antyrelly pray
Of pardon for the strife, which late befell
Betwixt us both unknowne.' So ended Pari-
dell.

LII

But all the while that he these speeches spent,
Upon his lips hong faïre Dame Hellenore
With vigilant regard and dew attent,
Fashioning worldes of fancies evermore
In her fraile witt, that now her quite forelore:
The whiles unwares away her wondring eye
And greedy eares her weake hart from her
Which he perceiving, ever privily, [bore;
In speaking many false belgarden at her let
fly.

LIII

So long these knights discoursed diversly
Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment,
Which they had past with mickle jeopardy,
That now the humid night was farforth spent,
And heavenly lampes were halfendeale ybrent:
Which th' old man seeing wel, who too long
thought
Every discourse, and every argument,
Which by the houres he measured, besought
Them go to rest. So all unto their bowres
were brought.

CANTO X.

Paridell rapeth Hellenore:
Malbecco her pourseswes;
Fynde emongst Satyres, whence with him
To turne she doth refuse.

I

THE morow next, so soone as Phœbus Lamp
Bewrayed had the world with early light,
And fresh Aurora had the shady damp
Out of the goodly heaven amoved quight,
Faïre Britomart and that same Faery knight
Uprose, forth on their journey for to wend:
But Paridell complaynd, that his late fight
With Britomart so sore did him offend,
That ryde he could not, till his hurts he did
ameind.

II

So forth they far'd; but he behind them stayd,
Maulgre his host, who grudged grievously
To house a guest that would be needes obayd,
And of his owne him left to net liberty:
Might wanting measure moveth surquedry.
Two things he feared, but the third was death;
That fiers youngmans unruly maystery;
His money, which he lov'd as living breath;
And his faïre wife, whom honest long he kept
uneath

III

But patience perforce, he must abie
 What fortune and his fate on him will lay;
 Fond is the feare that findes no remedie:
 Yet warily he watcheth every way,
 By which he feareth evill happen may;
 So th' evill thinke by watching to prevent:
 Ne doth he suffer her, nor night nor day,
 Out of his sight her selfe once to absent:
 So doth he punish her, and eke him selfe
 torment.

IV

But Paridell kept better watch then hee,
 A fit occasion for his turne to finde.
 False love! why do men say thou canst not see,
 And in their foolish fancy feigne thee blinde,
 That with thy charmes the sharpest sight
 doest blinde,
 And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free,
 And seest every secret of the minde:
 Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee:
 All that is by the working of thy Deitee.

V

So perfect in that art was Paridell,
 That he Malbeccos halfe-meye did wyle;
 His halfe eye he wiled wondrous well,
 And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguyle,
 Both eyes and hart attonce, during the while
 That he there sojourned his woundes to heale;
 That Cupid selfe, it seeing, close did smyle
 To weet how he her love away did steale,
 And bad that none their joyous treason should
 reveale.

VI

The learned lover lost no time nor tyde
 That least advantage mote to him afford,
 Yet bore so faire a sayle, that none espyde
 His secret drift, till he her layd aboard.
 When so in open place and commune bord
 He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speech
 He courted her; yet bayted every word,
 That his ungentle hoste n'ote him appeach
 Of vile ungentlenesse, or hospitages breach.

VII

But when apart (if ever her apart)
 He found, then his false engins fast he plyde,
 And all the sleights unhosomd in his hart:
 He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde,
 And cast himselfe on ground her fast besyde:
 Tho, when againe he him bethought to live,
 He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,
 Saying, but if she Mercie would him give,
 That he mote algaees dye, yet did his death
 forgive.

VIII

And otherwhyless with amorous delights
 And pleasing toyces he would her entertaine;
 Now singing sweetly to surprize her sprights,
 Now making layes of love and lovers paine,
 Bransles, Ballads, virolayes, and verses vaine;
 Oft purposes, oft riddles, he devysd,
 And thousands like which flowd in his braine,
 With which he fed her fancy, and entysd
 To take to his new love, and leave her old
 despyd.

IX

And every where he might, and everie while,
 He did her service dewtifull, and sewd
 At hand with humble pride and pleasing guile:
 So closely yet, that none but she it vewd,
 Who well perceived all, and all indewd,
 Thus finely did he his false nets disprede,
 With which he many weake harts had subdewd
 Of yore, and many had ylike misled:
 What wonder then, if she were likewise carried?

X

No fort so fensible, no wals so strong,
 But that continuall battery will rive,
 Or daily siege, through dispurvaynaunce long
 And lacke of reskewes, will to parley drive;
 And Peece, that unto parley eare will give,
 Will shortly yield it selfe, and will be made
 The vassall of the victors will be live:
 That stratageme had oftentimes assayd
 This crafty Paramoure, and now it plaine dis-
 play'd:

XI

For through his traines he her intrapped hath,
 That she her love and hart hath wholly sold
 To him, without regard of guine or scath,
 Or care of credite, or of husband old,
 Whom she hath vow'd to dub a fayre Cuequold.
 Nought wants but time and place, which
 shortly shee
 Devized hath, and to her lover told.
 It pleased well: So well they both agree:
 So readie rype to ill ill womens counsels bee!

XII

Darke was the Evening, fit for lovers stealth,
 When chaunst Malbecco busie be elsewhere,
 She to his closet went, where all his wealth
 Lay hid; thereof she countlesse summes did
 reare,
 The which she meant away with her to beare,
 The rest she fyr'd, for sport, or for despight:
 As Hellene, when she saw aloft appeare
 The Trojane flames and reach to heavens light,
 Did clap her hands, and joyed at that dolefull
 sight.

XIII

This second Helene, fayre Dame Hellenore,
The whiles her husband ran with sory haste
To quench the flames which she had tyn'd
before,
Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste,
And ran into her lovers armes right fast;
Where streight embraced she to him did cry
And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were past;
For lo! that Guest did beare her forcibly,
And meant to ravish her, that rather had to
dy.

XIV

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd,
And ready seeing him with her to fly,
In his disquiet mind was much djsmayd:
But when againe he backward cast his eye,
And saw the wicked fire so furiously
Consume his hart, and scorch his Idoles face,
He was therewith distressed diversely,
Ne wist he how to turne, nor to what place:
Was never wretched man in such a wofull cace.

XV

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,
And left the fire; love money overcame:
But, when he marked how his money burnd,
He left his wife; money did love disclame:
Both was he loth to loose his loved Dame,
And loth to leave his liefest pelfe behinde;
Yet, sith he n'ote save both, he sav'd that same
Which was the dearest to his dounghill minde,
The God of his desire, the joy of misers blinde.

XVI

Thus whilst all things in troublous uprore
were,
And all men busie to suppress the flame,
The loving couple neede no reskew feare,
But leasure had and liberty to frame
Their purpost flight, free from all mens reake;
And Night, the patronesse of love-stealth fayre,
Gave them safe conduct, till to end they came.
So beene they gone yfere, a wanton fayre
Of lovers loosely knit, where list them to re-
payre.

XVII

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were,
Malbecco, seeing how his losse did lye, [lere,
Out of the flames which he had quencht why-
Into huge waves of grieve and gealosye
Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye
Twixt inward doole and felonous despight:
He rav'd, he wept, he stamp't, he lowd did cry,
And all the passions that in man may light
Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his caytive
spright.

XVIII

Long thus he chawd the end of inward grieve,
And did consume his gall with anguish sore:
Still when he mused on his late mischiefe,
Then still the smart thereof increased more,
And seemd more grievous then it was before.
At last when sorrow he saw bootéd nought,
Ne grieve might not his love to him restore,
He gan devise how her he reskew mought:
Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused
thought.

XIX

At last resolving, like a Pilgrim pore,
To search her forth where so she might be fond,
And bearing with him treasure in close store,
The rest he leaves in ground: So takes in hond
To seeke her endlong both by sea and lond.
Long he her sought, he sought her far and
nere,
And every where that he mote understond
Of knights and ladies any meetings were;
And of each one he mett he tidings did inquire.

XX

But all in vaine; his woman was too wise
Ever to come into his clouch againe,
And hee too simple ever to surprise
The jolly Paridell, for all his paine.
One day, as hee forpassed by the plaine
With weary pace, he far away espide
A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,
Which hove close under a forest side, | hide.
As if they lay in wait, or els them selves did

XXI

Well weened hee that those the same mote bee,
And as he better did their shape avize,
Him seemed more their maner did agree;
For th' one was armed all in warlike wize,
Whom to be Paridell he did devize;
And th' other, all yclad in garments light
Discoloured like to womanish disguise,
He did resemble to his lady bright; [sight:
And ever his faint hart much earned at the

XXII

And ever faine he towards them would goe,
But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,
But stood aloofe, unweeting what to doe;
Till that prickt forth with loves extremity
That is the father of fowle gealosy,
He closely nearer crept the truth to weet:
But, as he nigher drew, he easily
Might scerne that it was not his sweetest sweet,
Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet:

XXIII

But it was scornfull Braggadochio,
That with his servant Trompart hovered there,
Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe:
Whom such whenas Malbecco spied clere,
He turned backe, and would have fled aore,
Till Trompart, running hastily, him did stay,
And bad before his souveraine Lord appeare.
That was him loth, yet durst he not gaine say,
And comming him before low louted on the
lay.

XXIV

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
As if he could have kild him with his looke,
That to the ground him meckely made to
bowe,
And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,
That every member of his body quooke.
Said he, 'Thou man of nought, what doest
thou here
Unfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke,
Where I expected one with shield and spere
To prove some deeds of armes upon an equal
pere?'

XXV

The wretched man at his imperious speech
Was all abashed, and low prostrating said:
'Good Sir, let not my rudenes be no breach
Unto your patience, ne be ill ypaid;
For I unwares this way by fortune straid,
A silly Pilgrim driven to distresse,
That seeke a Lady'—There he sudden staid,
And did the rest with grievous sighes sup-
presse, [bitternesse.
While teares stood in his eies, few drops of

XXVI

'What Lady, man?' (said Trompart) 'take
good hart,
And tell thy grieve, if any hidden lye:
Was never better time to shew thy smart
Then now that noble succor is thee by,
That is the whole worlds commune remedy.'
That chearful word his weak heart much did
cheare,
And with vaine hope his spirits faigt supply,
That bold he sayd; 'O most redoubted Pere!
Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches case to
heare.'

XXVII

Then sighing sore, 'It is not long,' (saide hee)
'Sith I enjoyed the gentlest Dame alive;
Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,
But shame of all that doe for honor strive,
By treacherous deceit did me deprive:
Through open outrage he her bore away,
And with fowle force unto his will did drive;

Which al good knights, that armes doe bear
this day, may.
Are bownd for to revenge, and punish if they

XXVIII

'And you, most-noble Lord, that can and dare
Redresse the wrong of miserable wight,
Cannot employ your most victorious speare
In better quarell then defence of right.
And for a Lady gainst a faithlesse knight:
So shall your glory bee advanced much,
And all faire Ladies magnify your night,
And eke my selfe, albee I simple such.
Your worthy paine shall wel reward with
guerdon rich.'

XXIX

With that out of his bouget forth he drew
Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt;
But he on it lookt scornfully aske,
As much disdainig to be so misdempt,
Or a war-monger to be basely nempt;
And sayd; 'Thy offers base I greatly loth,
And eke thy words uncourteous and unkempt:
I tread in dust thee and thy money both,
That, were it not for shame'—So turned from
him wroth

XXX

But Trompart, that his maistres humor knew
In lofty looks to hide an humble minde,
Was inly tickled with that golden vew.
And in his care him rounded close behinde:
Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the winde,
Waiting advantage on the pray to sease,
Till Trompart, lowly to the ground inclinde,
Besought him his great courage to appease,
And pardon simple man that rash did him dis-
please.

XXXI

Big looking like a doughty Douceperre,
At last he thus; 'Thou clod of vilest clay,
I pardon yield, and with thy rudenes beare,
But weete henceforth, that all that golden pray,
And all that els the vaine world vaunten may,
I loath as dung, ne deeme my dew reward:
Fame is my meed, and glory vertues pay:
But minds of mortall men are muchell mard
And mov'd amisse with massy mucks unmeet
regard.

XXXII

'And more: I graunt to thy great misery
Gratious respect; thy wife shall backe be sent:
And that vile knight, who ever that he bee,
Which hath thy lady left and knighthood
shent,
By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly dent
The blood hath of so many thousands shedd,
I sweare, ere long shall dearly it repent;

Ne he twixt heven and earth shall hide his
hedd, [be dedd.]
But soone he shal be fownd, and shortly doen

XXXIII

The foolish man theat woxe wondrous blith,
As if the word so spoken were halfe donne,
And humbly thanked him a thousand sith
That had from death to life him newly wonne.
Tho forth the Boaster marching brave begonne
His stolen steed to thunder furiously,
As if he heaven and hell would over-ronne,
And all the world confound with cruelty;
That much Malbecco joyed in his jollity.

XXXIV

Thus long they three together traueiled,
Through many a wood and many an uncouth
To seeke his wife that was far wandered: [way,
But those two sought nought but the present
pray,
To weete, the treasure which he did bewray,
On which their eyes and harts were wholly sett,
With purpose how they might it best betray;
For, sith the howre that first he did them lett
The same behold, therwith their keene desires
were whett.

XXXV

It fortun'd, as they together far'd,
They spide where Paridell came pricking fast
Upon the plaine; the which him selfe prepar'd
To guist with that brave stranger knight a
As on adventure by the way he past. [cast,
Alone he rode without his Paragone;
For, having filcht her bells, her up he cast
To the wide world, and lett her fly alone:
He could be clogd. So had he served many
one.

XXXVI

The gentle Lady, loose at randon left,
The greene-wood long did walke, and wander
wide
At wilde adventure, like a forlorne yefte;
Full on a day the Satyres her espide
Straying alone withouten groome or guide:
Her up they tooke, and with them home her
led,
With them as housewife ever to abide,
To milk their gotes, and make them cheese and
bredd;
And every one as commune good her handeled

XXXVII

That shortly she Malbecco has forgott,
And eke Sir Paridell, all were he deare;
Who from her went to seeke another lott,
And now by fortune was arrived here,

Where those two guilers with Malbecco were.
Soone as the old man saw Sir Paridell,
He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
Ne word he had to speake his grieve to tell,
But to him louted low, and greeted goodly
well;

XXXVIII

And, after, asked him for Hellenore:
'I take no keepe of her,' (sayd Paridell)
'She wonneth in the Forrest there before.'
So forth he rode as his adventure fell;
The whiles the Boaster from his loftie sell
Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend;
But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure
dwell,
But went his way: whom when he passed kend,
He up remounted light, and after faind to
wend.

XXXIX

'Perdy, nay,' (said Malbecco) 'shall ye not;
But let him passe as lightly as he came:
For litle good of him is to be got,
And mickle perill to bee put to shame.
But let us goe to seeke my dearest Dame,
Whom he hath left in yonder forest wyld;
For of her safety I great doubt I ame,
Least salvage beastes her person have despoild:
Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine
have toyld.'

XL

They all agree, and forward them addresse:
'Ah! but,' (said crafty Trompart) 'weete ye
well,
That yonder in that wastefull wilderness
Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers
dwell;
Dragons, and Minotaures, and feedes of hell,
And many wilde woodmen which robbe and
rend
All travellers: therefore advise ye well
Before ye enterprise that way to wend:
One may his journey bring too soone to evill
end.'

XLI

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,
And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,
Their counsell crav'd in daunger imminent.
Said Trompart; 'You, that are the most op-
prest
With burdein of great treasure, I thinke best
Here for to stay in safetie behynd:
My Lord and I will search the wide forest.'
That counsell pleased not Malbeccoes mynd,
For he was much afraid him selfe alone to
fynd.

XLII

'Then is it best,' (said he) 'that ye doe
leave

Your treasure here in some security,
Either fast closed in some hollow grave,
Or buried in the ground from jeopardy,
Till we returne againe in safety:

As for us two, least doubt of us ye have,
Hence farre away we will blyndfolded ly,
Ne privy bee unto your treasures grave.
It pleased; so he did. Then they march for-
ward brave.

XLIII

Now, when amid the thickest woodes they
were,

They heard a noyse of many bagpipes shrill,
And shrieking Hububs them approaching
nere,

Which all the forest did with horreur fill.
That dreadfull sound the hosters hart did
thrill

With such amazment, that in hast he fledd,
Ne ever looked back for good or ill;
And after him eke fearefull Trompart spedd:
The old man could not fly, but fell to ground
half dedd.

XLIV

Yet afterwarde, close creeping as he might,
He in a bush did hyde his fearefull hedd.
The joly Satyres, full of fresh delight,
Came dauncing forth, and with them nimble
ledd

Faire Helenore with girlonds all bespredd,
Whom their May-lady they had newly made:
She, proude of that new honour which they
redd,

And of their lovely fellowship full glade,
Daunst lively, and her face did with a Lawrell
shade.

XLV

The silly man that in the thickett lay
Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved sore;
Yet durst he not against it doe or say,
But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore,
To see th' unkindnes of his Hellenore.

All day they daunced with great lusty-hedd,
And with their horned feet the greene gras
wore,

The whiles their Gotes upon the brouzes fedd,
Till drouping Phœbus gan to hyde his golden
hedd.

XLVI

Tho up they gan their mery pypes to trusse,
And all their goodly heardees did gather
round;

But every Satyre first did give a busse
To Hellenore; so busses did abound.

Now gan the humid vapour shed the grownd
With perly dew, and th' Earthes gloomy
shade

Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin rownd,
That every bird and beast awarned made
To shrowd themselves, whiles sleepe their
sences did invade.

XLVII

Which when Malbecco saw, out of the bush
Upon his handes and feete he crept full light,
And like a Gote amongst the Gotes did rush;
That, through the helpe of his lame hornes on
hight,

And misty dampes of misconceyving night,
And eke through likeness of his gotish heard,
He did the better counterfete aright:
So home he marcht amongst the horned heard,
That none of all the Satyres him espyde or
heard.

XLVIII

At night, when all they went to sleepe he
vewd

Whereas his lovely wife amongst them lay,
Embraced of a Satyre rough and rude,
Who all the night did mnde his joyous play:
Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day,
That all his hart with jealousy did swell;
But yet that nights ensample did bewray
That not for nought his wife them loved so
well,

When one so oft a night did sing his matins
bell.

XLIX

So closely as he could he to them crept,
When weavie of their sport to sleepe they fell,
And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,
He whispered in her eare, and did her tell
That it was he which by her side did dwell;
And therefore prayd her wake to heare him
plaine.

As one out of a dreame not waked well
She turnd her, and returned backe againe;
Yet her for to awake he did the more con-
straine.

L

At last with irkesom trouble she abrayd;
And then perceiving that it was indeed
Her old Malbecco, which did her upbrayd
With loosenesse of her love and louthly deed,
She was astonisht with exceeding dread,
And would have wakt the Satyre by her syde;
But he her prayd, for mercy or for meed,
To save his life, ne let him be descryde,
But hearken to his lore, and all his counsell
hyde.

LI

Tho gan he her perswade to leave that lewd
And loathsome life, of God and man abhord,
And home returne, where all should be renewd
With perfect peace and bandes of fresh accord,
And she receivd againe to bed and bord,
As if no trespass ever had beene donne:
But she it all refused at one word,
And by no meanes would to his will be wonne,
But chose amongst the jolly Satyres still to
wonne

LII

He wooed her till day-spring he espyde,
But all in vaine; and then turnd to the heard,
Who buttred him with hornes on every syde,
And trode downe in the durt, where his hore
beard
Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard.
Early, before the heavens fairest light
Out of the ruddy East was fully reard,
The heards out of their foldes were loosed
quight, [plight.
And he amongst the rest crept forth in sory

LIII

So soone as he the Prison-dore did pas,
He ran as fast as both his feet could beare,
And never looked who behind him was,
Ne scarcely who before: like as a Beare,
That creeping close amongst the hives to reare
An hony-combe, the wakefull dogs espy,
And him assaying sore his carkas teare,
That hardly he with life away does fly. [partly.
Ne stayes, till safe him selfe he see from jeo-

LIV

Ne stayd he, till he came unto the place
Where late his treasure he entombd had;
Where when he found it not, (for Trompart
Had it purloyned for his maister bad) [bace
With extreme fury he became quite mad,
And ran away, ran with him selfe away: ~
That who so strangely had him seene bestadd,
With upstart haire and staring eyes dismay,
From Limbo lake him late escaped sure would
say.

LV

High over hilles and over dales he fledd.
As if the wind him on his wings had borne;
Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he
spedd
His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne:
Griefe, and despight, and gealosy, and scorne,
Did all the way him follow hard behynd;
And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne,
So shamefully forlorne of womankynd,
That, as a Snake, still lurked in his wounded
mynd.

LVI

Still fled he forward, looking backward still;
Ne stayd his flight nor fearefull agony,
Till that he came unto a rocky hill
Over the sea suspended dreadfully,
That living creature it would terrify
To looke adowne, or upward to the hight:
From thence he threw him selfe despitously,
All desperate of his fore-damned spright,
That seemd no help for him was left in living
sight.

LVII

But through long anguish and selfe-murdring
thought,
He was so wasted and forpined quight,
That all his substance was consum'd to nought,
And nothing left but like an aery Spright,
That on the rockes he fell so fit and light,
That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all;
But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light,
Whence he with crooked clawes so long did
crall, [small.
That at the last he found a cave with entrance

LVIII

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth
Resolv'd to build his fablefull mansion [there
In dreary darkenes and continuall feare
Of that rocks fall, which ever and anon
Threates with huge ruine him to fall upon,
That he dare never sleepe, but that one eye
Still ope he keepes for that occasion;
Ne ever rests he in tranquillity,
The roring billowes beat his bowre so boys-
trously.

LIX

Ne ever is he wont on ought to feed
But todes and frogs, his pasture poysonous,
Which in his cold complexion doe breed
A filthy blood, or humour rancorous,
Matter of doubt and dread suspicious,
That doth with curelesse care consume the hart,
Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious,
Cros-cuts the liver with internall smart,
And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eter-
nall dart.

LX

Yet can he never dye, but dying lives,
And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,
That death and life attonce unto him gives,
And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.
There dwels he ever, miserable swaine,
Hatefull both to him selfe and every wight;
Where he, through privy griefe and horrour
vaine,
Is woxen so deform'd that he has quight
Forgot he was a man, and Gelosy is hight.

CANTO XI.

Britomart chaceoth Ollyphant,
 findes Scudamour distrest:
 Assayes the house of Busyrane,
 Where loves payles are exprest.

I
 O HATEFULL, hellish Snake! what furie lurst
 Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine,
 Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst,
 And fostred up with bitter milke of tine,
 Fowle Gealesy! that turnest love diuine
 To joylesse dread. and mak'st the loving hart
 With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,
 And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart?
 Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art!

II
 O! let him far be banished away,
 And in his stead let Love for ever dwell;
 Sweete Love, that doth his golden wings em-
 bay
 In blessed Nectar and pure Pleasures well,
 Untroubled of vile feare or bitter fell.
 And ye, faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make
 In th' harts of men, them governe wisely well.
 And of faire Britomart ensample take,
 That was as trew in love as Turtle to her make.

III
 Who with Sir Satyrane, as earst ye red,
 Forth ryding from Malbeccoes hostlesse hous,
 Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled
 From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous
 And hatefull outrage long him chased thus;
 It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare
 Of that Argante vile and vitious,
 From whom the Squire of Dames was ref.
 whylere; [ought were,
 This all as bad as she. and worse, if worse

IV
 For as the sister did in feminine
 And filthy lust exceede all womankind,
 So he surpassed his sex masculine,
 In beastly use, all that I ever finde:
 Whom when as Britomart beheld behinde
 The fearefull boy so greedily pursue,
 She was emmoued in her noble minde,
 T' employ her puissaunce to his reskew,
 And pricked fiercely forward where she did
 him vew.

V
 Ne was Sir Satyrane her far behinde,
 But with like increase did enuew the chace.
 Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone remde
 His former suit, and from them fled apace:
 They after both, and boldly had him bace,
 And each did strive the other to outgoe;
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,
 For he was long, and swift as any Roe, [foe
 And now made better speed t' escape his feared

VI
 It was not Satyrane, whom he did feare,
 But Britomart the flowre of chastity; [beare,
 For he the powre of chaste hands might not
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly:
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,
 That he has gotten to a forrest neare,
 Where he is shrowded in security.
 The wood they enter, and search everie where,
 They searched diversely, so both divided were.

VII
 Fayre Britomart so long him followed,
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,
 By which there lay a knight all wallowed
 Upon the grassy ground, and by him neare
 His haberjeon, his helmet, and his speare:
 A little off his sheld was rudely throwne,
 On which the winged boy in colours cleare
 Depainted was, full easie to be knowne,
 And he thereby, where ever it in field was
 showane.

VIII
 His face upon the ground did groveling ly,
 As if he had beene slombring in the shade;
 That the brave Mayd would not for courtesy
 Out of his quiet slomber him abraide,
 Nor seeme too suddenly him to invade. [throb
 Still as she stood, she heard with grievous
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob,
 That pitty did the Virgins hart of patience rob

IX
 At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes
 He sayd; 'O soverayne Lord! that sit'st on hye

And raigust in blisemongst thy blessed Saintes,
How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty
So long unwreaked of thine enemy?
Or hast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed?
Or doth thy justice sleepe and silent ly?
What looeth then the good and righteous
deed, [no meed?
If goodnesse find no grace, nor righteousness

X

'If good find grace, and righteousness reward,
Why then is Amoret in caytive band,
Sith that more bounteous creature never far'd
On foot upon the face of living land?
Or if that heavenly justice may withstand
The wrongfull outrage of unrighteous men,
Why then is Busirane with wicked hand
Suffred, these seven monethes day, in secret den
My Lady and my love so cruelly to pen!

XI

'My Lady and my love is cruelly pend
In dolefull darkenes from the vew of day,
Whilest deadly torments doe her chaste brest
rend, [tway,
And the sharpe steele doth rive her hart in
All for she Scudamore will not deny.
Yet thou, vile man, vile Scudamore, art sound,
Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay;
Unworthy wretch to tread upon the ground,
For whom so faire a Lady feelles so sore a
wound!'

XI

There an huge heape of singults did oppresse
His strugling soule, and swelling throbs
empeach
His foltring tounge with pangs of drerinesse,
Choking the remnant of his plaintife speach,
As if his dayes were come to their last reach:
Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly fit
Threatning into his life to make a breach,
Both with great ruth and terrour she was smit,
Fearing least from her cage the wearie soule
would flit.

XIII

The stouping downe she him amoved light;
Who, therewith somewhat starting, up gan
looke,
And seeing him behind a stranger knight,
Whereas no living creature he mistooke,
With great indignaunce he that sight forsooke,
And, downe againe himselfe disdainfully
Abjecting, th' earth with his faire forehead
strooke:
Which the bold Virgin seeing gan apply
Fit medcine to his griefe, and spake thus
courteously:—

XIV

'Ah gentle knight! whose deepe conceived
griefe
Well seemes t' excede the powre of patience,
Yet, if that heavenly grace some goodde reliefe
You send, submit you to high providence;
And ever in your noble hart prepense,
That all the sorrow in the world is lesse
Then vertues might and values confidence.
For who nill bide the burden of distresse,
Must not here thinke to live; for life is wretch-
ednesse.

XV

'Therefore, faire Sir, doe comfort to you take,
And freely read what wicked felon so [make,
Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle
Perhaps this hand may helpe to ease your woe,
And wreake your sorrow on your cruell foe;
At least it faire endeavour will apply.'
Those feeling words so neare the quicke did
That up his head he reared easily, [goe,
And, leaning on his elbowe, these few words
lett fly.

XVI

'What boots it plaine that cannot be redrest,
And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse care,
Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest,
Ne worldly price, cannot redceme my deare
Out of her thraldome and continuall feare:
For he, the tyrant, which her hath in ward
By strong enchantments and blacke Magicke
leare,
Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard,
And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her
gard.

XVII

'There he tormenteth her most terribly
And day and night afflicts with mortall paine.
Because to yield him love she doth deny,
Because to yield him love she doth deny,
Once to me yold, not to be yold againe:
But yet by torture he would her constraime
Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest;
Till so she doe, she must in doole remaine.
Ne may by living meanes be thence relest:
What boots it then to plaine that cannot be
redrest?'

XVIII

With this sad hersall of his heavy stresse
The warlike Damzell was passiond sore,
And sayd: 'Sir knight, your cause is nothing
Then is your sorrow certes, if not more; [lesse
For nothing so much pittie doth implore
As gentle Ladyes helplesse misery
But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,
I will, with proofe of last extremity,
Deliver her fro thence, or with her for you dy

XIX

'Ah! gentlest knight alive,' (sayd Scudamore)
 'What huge heroicke magnanimitie
 Dwells in thy bounteous brest! what couldst
 thou more,
 If shee were thine, and thou as now am I?
 O! spare thy happy daies, and them apply
 To better boot; but let me die that ought:
 More is more losse; one is enough to dy.'
 'Life is not lost,' (said she) 'for which is
 bought [be sought.]
 Endlesse knowm, that, more then death, is to

XX

Thus shee at length persuaded him to rise,
 And with her wend to see what new successe
 Mote him befall upon new enterprise.
 His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse,
 She gathered up and did about him dresse,
 And his forwardred steed unto him gott:
 So forth they forth yfere make their progresse,
 And march not past the mountenance of a
 shott, [did plott.]
 Till they arriv'd whereas their purpose they

XXI

There they dismounting drew their weapons
 And stoutly came unto the Castle gate, [bold,
 Whereas no gate they found them to withhold,
 Nor ward to waite at morne and evening late;
 But in the Porch, that did them sore amate,
 A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke
 And stinking sulphure, that with griesly hate
 And dreadfull horror did all entraunce choke,
 Enforced them their forward footing to revoke.

XXII

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd,
 Ne in that stownd wist how her selfe to beare;
 For danger yune it were to have assayd
 That cruell element, which all things feare,
 Ne none can suffer to approach neare:
 And, turning backe to Scudamour, thus sayd:
 'What monstrous enmity provoke we heare?
 Foolhardy as th' Earthes children, the which
 made
 Batteill against the Gods, so we a God invade.

XXIII

'Daunger without discretion to attempt
 Inglorious, beastlike is: therefore, Sir knight,
 Aread what course of you is safest dempt,
 And how he with our foe may come to fight.'
 'This is' (quoth he) 'the dolorous despight,
 Which earst to you I playnd: for neither may
 This fire be quencht by any witt or might,

Ne yet by any meanes remov'd away;
 So mighty be th' enchantments which the
 same do stay.

XXIV

'What is there ells but cease these fruitlesse
 paines,
 And leave me to my former languishing?
 Faire Amorett must dwell in wicked chaines,
 And Scudamore here die with sorrowing.'
 'Perdy not so,' (saide shee) 'for shameful
 Yt were t' abandon noble chevisaunce [thing
 For shewe of perill, without venturing:
 Rather let try extremities of chaunce,
 Then enterprised praise for dread to disavaunce.'

XXV

Therewith, resolv'd to prove her utmost might,
 Her ample shield she threw before her face,
 And her sword's point directing forward right
 Assayld the flame; the which ellesoomes gave
 place,
 And did it selfe divide with equall space,
 That through shee passed, as a thunder bolt
 Perceeth the yielding ayre, and doth displace
 The soying clouds into sad showres ymolt;
 So to her yold the flames, and did their force
 revolt.

XXVI

Whom whenas Scudamour saw past the fire
 Safe and untouched, he likewise gan assay
 With greedily will and envious desire, [way:
 And bad the stubborne flames to yield him
 But cruell Mulciber would not obey
 His threatfull pride, but did the more augment
 His mighty rage, and with imperious sway
 Him forst, (maulgre) his fercenes to relent,
 And hacke retire, all scorcht and pittifully
 • brenn.

XXVII

With huge impatience he inly swelt,
 More for great sorrow that he could not pas
 Them for the burning torment which he felt;
 That with fell woodnes he effierced was,
 And wilfully him throwing on the gras
 Did beat and bounse his head and brest ful
 sore:
 The whiles the Championesse now entred has
 The utmost rowme, and past the foremost dore;
 The utmost rowme abounding with all precious
 store:

XXVIII

For round about the walls yclothed were
 With goodly arras of great majesty,
 Woven with gold and silke, so close and nere
 That the rich metall lurked privily,

As faining to be hidd from envious eye;
Yet here, and there, and every where, unwares
It shewed it selfe and shone unwillingly:
Like a discoloured Snake, whose hidden snares
Through the greene gras his long bright burnisht
back declares.

XXX

And in those Tapets weren fashioned
Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire feate;
And all of love, and al of lusty-hed,
As seemed by their semblaunt, did entreat:
And eke all Cupids waries they did repeate,
And cruell battailes, which he whilome fought
Gainst all the Gods to make his empire great;
Besides the huge massacres, which he wrought
On mighty kings and kesars into furaldome
brought.

XXX

Therein was writt how often thondring Iove
Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart,
And, leaving heavens kingdome, here did rove
In straunge disguise, to slake his scalding
smart;

Now, like a Ram, faire Helle to pervart,
Now, like a Bull, Europa to withdraw:
Ah! how the fearefull Ladies tender hart
Did lively seeme to tremble, when she saw
The huge seas under her t' obay her servants
law.

XXXI

Soone after that, into a golden showre
Him selfe he chaung'd, faire Danae to vew;
And through the roofo of her strong brasen
Did raine into her lap an hony dew; [towre
The whiles her foolish garde, that litle knew
Of such deceit, kept th' yron dore fast bard,
And watcht that none should enter nor issew:
Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the ward,
Whenas the God to golden hew him selfe
transfard.

XXXII

Then was he turnd into a snowy Swag,
To win faire Leda to his lovely trade:
O wondrous skill! and sweet wit of the man,
That her in daffadillies sleeping made
From scorching heat her daintie limbes to shade;
Whiles the proud Bird, ruffing his fethers wyde
And brushing his faire brest, did her invade:
She slept; yet twist her eielids closely spytle
How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his
pryde.

XXXIII

Then shewd it how the Thebane Semelee,
Deceivd of gealous Juno, did require
To see him in his soverayne majestee
Arnd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire,

Whens dearely she with death bought her
desire.

But faire Alcmene better match did make,
Joying his love in likenes more entree:
Three nights in one, they say, that for her sake
He then did put, her pleasures lenger to par-
take.

XXXIV

'Twise was he seene in soaring Eagles shape,
And with wide winges to beat the buxome
ayre:
Once, when he with Asterie did scape;
Again, when as the Trojane boy so fayre
He snatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare:
Wondrous delight it was there to behold
How the rude Shepheards after him did stare,
Trembling through feare least down he fallen
should,
And often to him calling to take surer hould.

XXXV

In Satyres shape Antiopa he snatch;
And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd:
A shepeheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht;
And like a Serpent to the Thracian mayd.
Whyles thus on earth great Jove these page-
aunts playd,
The winged boy did thrust into his throne,
And scoffing thus unto his mother sayd:
'Lo! now the heavens obey to me alone,
And take me for thy Jove, whiles Jove to
earth is gone.'

XXXVI

And thou, faire Phœbus, in thy colours bright
Wast there enwoven, and the sad distresse
In which that boy thee plunged, for despight
That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantonnesse.
When she with Mars was meynt in joyfulnesse:
Forthly he thrild thee with a leaden dart
To love faire Daphne, which thee loved lesse;
Lesse she thee lov'd then was thy just deart,
Yet was thy love her death, and her death was
thy smart.

XXXVII

So lovedst thou the lusty Hyacinet;
So lovedst thou the faire Coronis deare;
Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct,
Yet both in flowres doe live, and love thee
beare,
The one a Pounce, the other a sweet-breare:
For grieve whereof, ye mote have lively seene
The God himselfe rending his golden heare,
And breaking quite his garland ever greene,
With other signes of sorrow and impatient
teene,

XXXVIII

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne,

The sonne of Climeue, he did repent;
Who, bold to guide the chariot of the Sunne,
Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent,
And all the world with flushing fire brent;
So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame:
Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content,
Forst him efts-oones to follow other game,
And love a Shepherds daughter for his dearest Dame.

XXXIX

He loved Isse for his dearest Dame,
And for her sake her cattell fedd awhile,
And for her sake a cowheard vile became
The servant of Admetus, cowheard vile,
Whiles that from heaven he suffered exile.
Long were to tell each other lovely flit;
Now, like a Lyon hunting after spoile;
Now, like a stag; now, like a faulcon flit:
All which in that faire arras was most lively writ.

XL

Next unto him was Neptune pictured,
In his divine resemblance wondrous lyke:
His face was rugged, and his hoare hed
Dropped with brackish dew: his threeforkt Pyke
He stearily shooke, and therewith fierce did
The raging billowes, that on every syde
They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke,
That his swift chariet might have passage wyde
Which foure great Hippodames did draw in
temewise tyde.

XLI

His seahorses did seeme to snort amayne,
And from their nosethrilles blow the brynie streame,
That made the spareckling waves to smoke agayne,
And flame with gold; but the white fomy
Did shine with silver, and shoot forth his beame.
The God himselfe did pensive seeme and sad,
And hong adowne his head as he did dreame;
For privity love his brest empierced had.
Ne ought but deare Bialtis ay could make him glad.

XLII

He loved eke Iphimedia deare,
And Aeolus faire daughter, Arne hight,
For whom he turnd him selfe into a Steare,
And fedd on fodder to beguile her sight.
Also to win Deucalions daughter bright,
He turnd him selfe into a Dolphin fayre;
And like a winged horse he tooke his flight

To snake-locke Medusa to repayre,
On whom he got faire Pegasus that flitteth,
in the ayre.

XLIII

Next Saturne was, (but who would ever weene
That sullen Saturne ever weend to love?)
Yet love is sullen, and Saturnlike scene,
As he did for Erigone it prove)
That to a Centaure did him selfe transmove.
So prov'd it eke that gracious God of wine,
When for to compass Philliras hard love,
He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,
And into her faire bosome made his grapes decline.

XLIV

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,
And gentle paignes, with which he maketh meeke
The mightie Mars, to learne his wanton playes;
How oft for Venus, and how often eek
For many other Nymphes, he sore did shreek,
With womanish teares, and with unwarlike
Privily mysteyning his horrid cheekes: [smarts,
There was he painted full of burning darts,
And many wide woundes launched through
his inner partes,

XLV

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)
His owne deare mother, (ah! why should he
so?)
Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,
That he might taste the sweet consuming woe,
Which he had wrought to many others moe.
But, to declare the mournfull Tragelyes
And spoiles wherewith he all the ground did
strow,
More eath to number with how many eyes
High heaven beholdes sad lovers nightly thee-
veryes.

XLVI

Kings, Queenes, Lords, Ladies, knights, and
Damsels gent,
Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort,
And mingled with the raskall rabblement,
Without respect of person or of port,
To shew Dan Cupid's powre and great effort.
And round about a border was entrayld
Of broken bowes and arrowes shivered short;
And a long bloody river through them rayld,
So lively and so like that living sence it fayld.

XLVII

And at the upper end of that faire rowme
There was an Altar built of pretious stone
Of passing valew and of great renowne,
On which there stood an Image all alone

Of massy gold, which with his owne light shone;

And winges it had with sondry colours dight,
More sondry colours then the proud Pavone
beares in his boasted fan, or Iris bright,
When her discoloured bow she spreads through
hevens hight.

XLVIII

Blyndfold he was; and in his cruell fist
A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,
With which he shot at randon, when him list,
Some headed with sad lead, some with pure
gold; [hold.]

(Ah man! beware how thou those dartes be-
A wounded Dragon under him did ly,
Whose hideous tayle his lefte foot did unfold,
And with a shaft was shot through either eye,
That no man forth might draw, ne no man re-
medye.

XLIX

And underneath his feet was written thus,
Unto the Victor of the Gods this bee:
And all the people in that ample hous
Did to that image bowe their humble knee,
And oft committed fowle Idolatree.
That wondrous sight faire Britomart amazd.
Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,
But ever more and more upon it gazd,
The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile-
sences dazld.

L

Tho, as she backward cast her busie eye
To search each secreete of that goodly sted.
Over the dore thus written she did spye,
Be bold: she oft and oft it over-red,
Yet could not find what sence it figured:
But what so were therein or writ or ment,
She was no whit thereby discouraged
From prosecuting of her first intent,
But forward with bold steps into the next
roome went.

LI

Much sayrer then the former was that roome,
And richier by many partes arayd;
For not with arras made in painefull loome,
But with pure gold it all was overlaid,
Wrought with wilde Antickes, which their
follics playd
In the rich metall as they living were, [made.
A thousand monstrous formes therein were

Such as false love doth oft upon him weare,
For love in thousand monstrous formes doth
oft appeare.

LII

And all about the glistring walles were hong
With warlike spoiles and with victorious prayes
Of mightie Conquerours and Captaines strong,
Which were whilome captived in their dayes
To cruell love, and wrought their owne decayes.
Their swordes and spers were broke, and hau-
berques rent,
And their prond girlonds of tryumphant bayes
Troden in dust with fury insolent, [tent.
To shew the victors might and mercesse in-

LIII

The warlike Mayd, beholding earnestly
The goodly ordinaunce of this rich Place,
Did greatly wonder; ne could satisfy
Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space:
But more she mervaild that no footings trace
Nor wight appeared, but wastefull emptinesse
And solemne silence over all that place:
Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to
possesse [fulnesse.
So rich parveyaunce, ne them keepe with care-

LIV

And, as she lookt about, she did behold
How over that same dore was likewise writ,
Be bolde, be bolde, and every where, *Be bold*;
That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it
By any ridling skill, or commune wit.
At last she spyde at that rowmes upper end
Another yron dore, on which was writ,
Be not too bold; whereto though she did bend
Her earnest minde, yet wist not what it might
intend.

LV

Thus she there wayted untill eventyde,
Yet living creature none she saw appeare.
And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde
From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenes dreare;
Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for feare
Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse
Her heavy eyes with natures burdein deare,
But drew her selfe aside in sickennesse,
And her wel-pointed wepons did about her
dresse.

CANTO XII.

The maske of Cupid, and th' echant-
ed Chamber are displayd ;
Whence Britomart redeemes faire A-
moret through charmes decayd

I

Tho, whenas chearelesse Night ycovered had
Fayre heauen with an universall clowd,
That every wight dismayd with darkenes sad
In silence and in sleepe themselves did shrowd,
She heard a shrilling Trompet sound alowd,
Signe of nigh battaill, or got victory :
Nought therewith daunted was her courage
But rather stird to cruell enmity, [prowd,
Expecting ever when some foe she might des-
cry.

II

With that an hideous⁴ torne of winde arose,
With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt,
And an earthquake, as if it streight would lose
The worlds foundations from his centre fixt :
A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt
Ensewd, whose noyauce filld the fearefull sted
From the fourth howre of night untill the sixt ;
Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred,
Though much enmov'd, but stedfast still per-
severed.

III

All suddenly a stormy whirlwind blew
Throughout the house, that clapped every dore,
With which that yron wicket open flew,
As it with mighty levers had bene tore ;
And forth ysewd, as on the realie flore
Of some Theatre, a grave personage
That in his hand a branch of laurell bore.
With comely haveour and count'nance sage.
Yclad in costly garments fit for tragicke Stage.

IV

Proceeding to the midst he stil did stand,
As if in minde he somewhat had to say ;
And to the vulgare beckning with his hand,
in signe of silence, as to heare a play,
By lively actions he gan bewray
Some argument of matter passioned :
Which doen, he backe retired soft away,
And, passing by, his name discovered.
Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

V

The noble Mayd still standing all this vewd,
And merveild at his straunge intendment.
With that a joyous fellowship isewd
Of Minstrales making goodly meriment,
With wanton Bardes, and Rymers impudent,
All which together song full chearefully
A lay of loves delight with sweet concent :
After whom marcht a jolly company,
In maner of a maske, enranged orderly.

VI

The whiles a most delicious harmony [sound,
In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to
That the rare sweetnesse of the melody
The feeble senses wholly did confound,
And the frayle soule in deepe delight nigh
drownd :
And, when it ceast, shrill trumpets lowd did
That their report did far away rebound ; [bray,
And, when they ceast, it gan againe to play,
The whiles the maskers marched forth in trim
aray.

VII

The first was Fansy, like a lovely Boy
Of rare aspect, and beauntie without peare,
Matchable other to that ympe of Troy,
Whom Jove did love and chose his cup to beare ;
Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare
To great Alcides, that, when as he dyde,
He wailed womanlike with many a teare,
And every wood and every valley wyde
He filld with Hylas name ; the Nymphes eke
Hylas cryde.

VIII

His garment nether was of silke nor say.
But paynted plumes in goodly order dight,
Like as the sunburnt Indians do aray
Their tawney bodies in their proudest plight :
As those same plumes so seemd he vaine and
That by his gate might easily appeare ; light,
For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,

And in his hand a windy fan did beare,
That in the ydle ayre he mōv'd still here and
there.

IX

And him beside marcht amorous Desyre,
Who seemd of ryper yeares then th' other
Swayne,

Yet was that other swayne this elders syre,
And gave him being, commune to them twayne:
His garment was disguysed very vayne,
And his embrodered Bonet sat awry: [strayne,
Twixt both his hands few sparks he close did
Which still he blew and kindled busily,
That soone they life conceiv'd, and forth in
flames did fly.

X

Next after him went Doubt, who was yclad
In a discolour'd cote of straunge disguise,
That at his backe a brode Capuccio had,
And sleeves dependaunt Albanese wyse:
He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,
And nycey trode, as thornes lay in his way,
Or that the flore to shrinke he did avyse;
And on a broken reed he still did stay
His feeble steps, which shrunck when hard
theron he lay.

XI

With him went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged
weed [made:
Made of Beares skin, that him more dreadfull
Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need
Straunge horror to deforme his grisly shade:
A net in th' one hand, and a rusty blade
In th' other was; this Mischiefe, that Mishap:
With th' one his foes he threatned to invade,
With th' other he his friends ment to enwrap;
For whom he could not kill he practizd to en-
trap.

XII

Next him was Feare, all arm'd from top to toe,
Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby,
But feard each shadow moving too of free;
And, his owne armes when glittering he did spy
Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,
As ashes pale of hew, and winged heeld,
And evermore on Daunger fixt his eye,
Gainst whom he alwayes bent a brasen shield,
Which his right hand unarmed fearefully did
wield.

XIII

With him went Hope in rancke, a handsome
Mayd,
Of chearefull looke and lovely to behold:
In silken samite she was light arayd,
And her fayre lockes were woven up in gold:

She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold
An holy-water-sprinkle, dipt in dewe.
With which she sprinkled favours manifold
On whom she list, and did great liking sheewe,
Great liking unto many, but true love to fewe.

XIV

And after them Dissemblaunce and Suspect
Marcht in one rancke, yet an unequall paire;
For she was gentle and of milde aspect,
Courteous to all and seeming debonaire,
Goodly adorned and exceeding faire:
Yet was that all but paynted and pourloynd,
And her bright browes were deckt with bor-
rowed haire; [coynd,
Her deeds were forged, and her words false
And alwaies in her hand two clewes of silke
she twynd.

XV

But he was fowle, ill favoured, and grim,
Under his ciebrowes looking still askaunce;
And ever, as Dissemblaunce laught on him,
He lowrd on her with daungerous eyeglance,
Shewing his nature in his countenance:
His rolling eyes did never rest in place,
But walke each where for feare of hid mis-
chaunce,
Holding a lnttis still before his face,
Through which he stil did peep as forward he
did pace.

XVI

Next him went Griefe and Fury, match yfere;
Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,
Downe hanging his dull head with heavy chere,
Yet inly being more then seeming sad:
A paire of Pincers in his hand he had,
With which he pinched people to the hart,
That from thenceforth a wretched life they
ladd,
In wilfull languor and consuming smart,
Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours
dart.

XVII

But Fury was full ill appareled
In rags, that naked night she did appeare,
With ghastly looks and dreadfull deriherd;
And from her backe her garments she did teare,
And from her head ofte rente her snarled heare:
In her right hand a firebrand shee did tosse
About her head, still roming here and there;
As a dismayed Deare in chace embost,
Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way
lost.

XVIII

After them went Displeasure and Pleasaunce,
He looking lompish and full sullen sad,

And hanging downe his heavy countenance;
 She chearfull, fresh, and full of joyaunce glad,
 As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad;
 That evill matched paire they seemd to bee:
 An angry Waspe th' one in a viall had,
 Th' other in hers an hony-laden Bee.
 Thus marched these six couples forth in faire
 degrea.

XIX

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame,
 Led of two grysie Villeins, th' one Despight,
 The other cleped Cruelty by name:
 She, dolefull Lady, like a dreary Spright
 Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night,
 Had Deathes owne ymage sigurd in her face,
 Full of sad signes, fearfull to living sight;
 Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace,
 And with her feeble fete did move a comely
 pace.

XX

Her brest all naked, as nett yvory
 Without adorne of gold or silver bright,
 Wherewith the Craftesman woult it beautify,
 Of her dew honour was despoyled quight;
 And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight!)
 Entrenched deep with knyfe accursed keene,
 Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright,
 (The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene,
 That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowye
 cleene.

XXI

At that wide orifice her trembling hart
 Was drawne forth, and in silver basin layd,
 Quite through transixed with a deadly dart,
 And in her blood yet steeming fresh embayd:
 And those two villeins, which her steps upstayd,
 When her weake fete could scarcely her
 sustaine,
 And fading vitall powres gan to faile,
 Her forward still with torture did constraîne,
 And evermore encreased her consuming paine.

XXII

Next after her, the winged God him selfe
 Came riding on a Lion ravenous,
 Taught to obey the menage of that Elfe
 That man and beast with powre imperious
 Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous,
 His blindfold eies he bad awhile unbinde,
 That his proud spoile of that same dolorous
 Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kinde;
 Which seene, he much rejoiced in his cruell
 minde.

XXIII

Of which ful proud, him selfe up rearing hye
 He looked round about with sterne disdayne,

And did survey his goodly company;
 And, marshalling the evill-ordered trayne,
 With that the darts which his right hand did
 straine
 Full dreadfully he shooke, that all did quake,
 And clapt on hye his coulourd winges twaine,
 That all his many it affraide did make:
 Tho, blinding him againe, his way he forth
 did take.

XXIV

Behinde him was Reproch, Repentaunce,
 Shame; [behinde:
 Reproch the first, Shame next, Repent
 Repentaunce feeble, sorrowfull, and lame;
 Reproch despightfull, carelesse, and unkinde;
 Shame most ill-favourd, bestiall, and blinde:
 Shame lowrd, Repentaunce sighd, Reproch did
 scould; [entwinde,
 Reproch sharpe stings, Repentaunce whips
 Shame burning brond-yrons in her hand did
 hold: [mould.
 All three to each unlike, yet all made in one

XXV

And after them a rude confused rout
 Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read:
 Emongst them was sterne Strife, and Anger
 stout;
 Unquiet Care, and fond Unthriftyhead;
 Lewd Losse of Time, and Sorrow seeming dead;
 Inconstant Change, and false Disloyalty;
 Consuming Riotise, and guilty Dread
 Of heavenly vengeance; faint Infirmy;
 Vile Poverty; and, lastly, Death with infamy.

XXVI

There were iull many moe like maladies,
 Whose names and natures I note readeen well;
 So many moe, as there be phantasies
 In wavereng womens witt, that none can tell,
 Of paines in love, or punishments in hell:
 All which disguised marcht in masking wise
 About the chamber by the Damozell;
 And then returned, having marched thise,
 Into the inner rowme from whence they first
 did rise.

XXVII

So soone as they were in, the dore streightway
 Fast locked, driven with that stormy blast
 Which first it opened, and bore all away.
 Then the brave Maid, which at this while was
 plast
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,
 Iasewd forth, and went unto the dore
 To enter in, but fownd it locked fast:
 It vaine she thought with rigorous uprore
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore,

XXVIII

Where force might not auaile, there sleights
and art

She cast to use, both fitt for hard emprise:
Forthy from that same rowme not to depart
Till morrow next shee did her selfe auize,
When that same Maske againe should forth
arize.

The morrowe next appeard with joyous cheare,
Calling men to their daily exercise:
Then she, as morrow fresh, her selfe did reare
Out of her secret stand that day-for-to outweare.

XXIX

All that day she outoure in wandering
And gazing on that Chambers ornament,
Till that againe the second evening
Her covered with her sable vestiment, [blent:
Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath
Then, when the second watch was almost past,
That brasen dore flew open, and in went
Bold Britomart, as she had late forecast,
Nether of ylle showes, nor of false charmes
aghast.

XXX

So soone as she was entred, rownd about
Shee cast her eies to see what was become
Of all those persons which she saw without:
But lo! they streight were vanisht all and some;
Ne living wight she saw in all that roome,
Save that same woeful Lady, both whose hands
Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,
And her small waste girt rownd with yron bands
Upon a brasen pillour, by the which she stands.

XXXI

And her before the vile Enchaunter sate,
Figuring straunge characters of his art:
With living blood he those characters wrate,
Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart,
Seeming transixed with a cruell dart;
And all perforce to make her him to love.
Ah! who can love the worker of her smart?
A thousand charmes he formerly did prove,
Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast
hart remove.

XXXII

Soone as that virgin knight he saw in place,
His wicked bookes in hast he overthrew,
Not caring his long labours to deface;
And, fiercely running to that Lady trew,
A murderous knife out of his pocket drew,
The which he thought, for villenous despight,
In her tormented bodie to embrew:
But the stout Damzell, to him leaping light,
His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his
might.

XXXIII

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,
The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,
And, turning to herselfe, his fell intent,
Unwares it strooke into her snowie chest,
That litle drops empurpled her faire brest.
Exceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew,
Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest,
And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew,
To give him the reward for such vile outrage
dew.

XXXIV

So mightily she smote him, that to ground
He fell halfe dead: next stroke him should
have slaine,
Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound,
Fierly unto her called to abstaine
From doing him to dy. For else her paine
Should be remedlesse; sith none but hee
Which wrought it could the same recure againe.
Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to
bee; [see:
For life she him envyde, and long'd revenge to

XXXV

And to him said: 'Thou wicked man, whose
For so huge mischief and vile villany [meed
Is death, or if that ought doe death exceed;
Be sure that nought may save thee from to dy
But if that thou this Dame do presently
Restore unto her health and former state:
This doe, and live, els dye undoubtedly.'
He, glad of life, that lookt for death but late,
Did yield him selfe right willing to prolong
his date:

XXXVI

And, rising up, gan streight to over-looke
Those cursed leaves, his charmes back to
reverse.
Full dreadfull things out of that balefull booke
He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,
That horror gan the virgins hart to perse,
And her faire locks up stared stiffe on end,
Hearing him those same bloody lynes reherse;
And, all the while he red, she did extend
Her sword high over him, if ought he did
offend.

XXXVII

Anon she gan perceive the house to quake,
And all the dores to rattle round about:
Yet all that did not her dismaied make, [dout:
Nor slack her threatfull hand for daungers
But still with stedfast eye and courage stout
Abode, to weet what end would come of all,
At last that mightie chaine, which round about
q 2

Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall,
And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces
small.

XXXVIII

The cruell steele, which thrild her dying hart,
Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord,
And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart
Her bleeding brest, and riven bowels gor'd,
Was closed up, as it had not bene bor'd;
And every part to safety full sownd,
As she were never hurt, was soone restord.
Tho, when she felt her selfe to be unbownd
And perfect hole, prostrate she fell unto the
grownd.

XXXIX

Before faire Britomart she fell prostrate,
Saying; 'Ah noble knight! what worthy meede
Can wretched Lady, quitt from wofull state,
Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed?
Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,
Even immortal prayse and glory wyde,
Which I your vassall, by your prowess freed,
Shall through the world make to be notifyde,
And goodly well advaunce that goodly well
was tryde.'

XL

But Britomart, uprearing her from grownd,
Said: 'Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene,
For many labours more then I have found,
This, that in safetie now I have you seene,
And meane of your deliverance have bene.
Henceforth, faire Lady, comfort to you take,
And put away remembrance of late teene;
Insted thereof, know that your loving Make
Hath no lesse griefe endured for your gentle
sake.'

XLI

She much was cheard to heare him mentiond,
Whom of all living wightes she loved best.
Then laide the noble Championesse strong hond
Upon th' enchaunter which had her distrest
So sore, and with foule outrages opprest.
With that great chaine, wherewith not long
ygoe [relest,
He bound that pittieous Lady prisoner, now
Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,
And captive with her led to wretchednesse
and wo.

XLII

Returning back, those goodly rowmes, which
She saw so rich and royally arayd, [erst
Now vantsit utterly and cleane subverst
She found, and all their glory quite decayd;
That sight of such exchange her much dismayd
Thence forth descending to that perious porch
Those dreadfull flames she also found delayd
And quenched quite like a consumed torel,
That erst all entrs wont so cruelly to scorch.

XLIII

More easie issew now then entrance late
She found; for now that fained dreadfull flame,
Which chokt the porch of that enchanted gate
And passage bard to all that thither came,
Was vantsit quite, as it were not the same,
And gave her leave at pleasure forth to passe.
Th' Enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud did
frame
To have efforst the love of that faire lasse,
Seeing his worke now wasted, deepe engrieved
was.

XLIV

But when the Victoresse arrived there
Where late she left the pensife Scudamore
With her own trusty Squire, both full of feare,
Neither of them she found where she them lore:
Therent her noble hart was stonishd sore.
But most faire Amoret, whose gentle spright
Now gan to feede on hope, which she before
Conceived had, to see her own deare knight,
Being thereof beguylde, was fild with new af-
fright.

XLV

But he, sad man, when he had long in drede
Awayted there for Britomarts returne,
Yet saw her not, nor signe of her good speed,
His expectation to despair did turne,
Misdeeming sure that her those flames did
burne;
And therefore gan advize with her old Squire,
Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did
mourne,
Thence to depart for further aide t'enquire:
Where let them wend at will, whilest here I
doe respire.

THE FOURTH BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAINING THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIENDSHIP.

I

THE rugged forehead, that with grave foresight
Welds kingdomes causes and affaires of state,
My looser rimes (I wote) doth sharply wite
For praising love as I have done of late,
And magnifying lovers deare debate;
By which fraile youth is oft to follie led,
Through false allurement of that pleasing baite.
That better were in vertues disciplined,
Then with vaine poemes weeds to have their
fancies fed.

II

Such ones ill judge of love that cannot love,
Ne in their frosen hearts feeble kindly flame
Forthy they ought not thing unknowne
reprove,
Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame
For fault of few that have abusd the same;
For it of honor and all vertue is [of fame,
The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres
That crowne true lovers with immortall blis,
The meed of them that love, and do not live
amisse.

III

Which who so list looke backe to former ages,
And call to count the things that then were
donne, [sages,
Shall find that all the workes of those wise
And brave exploits which great Heroës wonne,

Is love were either ended or begunne:
Witness the father of Philosophie,
Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne,
Of love full manie lessons did apply, [deny
The which these Stoicke censours cannot well

IV

To such therefore I do not sing at all;
But to that sacred Saint my soveraigne Queene,
In whose chaste breast all bountie naturall
And treasures of true love enlocked beene,
Above all her sexe that ever yet was scene.
To her I sing of love, that loveth best,
And best is lov'd of all alive, I weene,
To her this song most fitly is addrest,
The Queene of love, and Prince of peace from
heaven blest.

V

Which that she may the better deigne to
heare,
Do thou, dred infant, Venus dearling dove,
From her high spirit chase imperious feare,
And use of awfull Majestie remove.
Insted thereof with drops of melting love,
Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee gotten
From thy sweete smyling mother from above,
Sprinkle her heart, and haughtie courage
soften, [lesson often.
That she may hearke to love, and reade this

CANTO I.

Fayre Britomart saves Amoret:
Ducessa discord breeds
Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour:
Their fight and warlike deedes.

I

Of lovers sad calamities of old
Full many piteous stories doe remaine,
But none more piteous ever was yold
Then that of Amorets hart-binding chaine,

And this of Florimels unworthie paine
The deare compassion of whose bitter fit
My softened heart so sorely doth constraîne,
That I with tears full oft doe pittie it,
And oftentimes doe wish it never had bene writ.

II

For from the time that Scudamour her bought
In perillous fight she never joyed day;
A perillous fight, when he with force her
brought

From twentie Knights that did him all assay;
Yet fairely well he did them all dismay,
And with great glorie both the shield of love
And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away,
Whom having wedded, as did him behove,
A new unknown mischiefe did from him re-
move.

III

For that same vile Enchauntour Busyran,
The very selfe same day that she was wedded,
Amidst the bridle feast, whilst every man,
Surcharg'd with wine, were heedlesse and ill-
heided,

All bent to mirth before the bride was bedded,
Brought in that mask of love which late was
shoven;

And there the Ladie, ill of friends bestedded,
By way of sport, as oft in masks is knownen.
Conveyed quite away to living wight un-
knownen.

IV

Seven moneths he so her kept in bitter smart,
Because his sinfull lust she would not serve,
Untill such time as noble Britomart
Released her, that else was like to sterue
Through cruell knife that her deare heart did
kerue:

And now she is with her upon the way
Marching in lovely wise, that could deserve
No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay
To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

V

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell
The diverse usages and demeanour daint,
That each to other made, as oft befell:
For Amoret right fearefull was and faint
Lest she with blame her honor should attaint,
That everie word did tremble as she spake,
And everie looke was coy and wondrous quaint,
And everie limbe that touched her did quake;
Yet could she not but curteous countenance to
her make.

VI

For well she wist, as true it was indeed,
That her lives Lord and patrone of her health
Right well deserved, as his duefull meed,
Her love, her service, and her utmost wealth:
All is his justly that all freely dealth.
Nathlesse her honor, dearer then her life,
She sought to save, as thing reserv'd from
stealth.

Die had she lever with Enchanters knife
Then to be false in love, profest a virgine wife.

VII

Thereto her feard was made so much the
greater
Through fine abusion of that Briton mayd,
Who, for to hide her fained sex the better
And maske her wounded mind, both did and
sayd

Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,
That well she wist not what by them to gesse:
For other-whiles to her she purpos made
Of love, and other-whiles of lustfulness.
That much she feard his mind would grow to
some excess.

VIII

His will she feard; for him she surely thought
To be a man, such as indeed he seemed;
And much the more by that he lately wrought,
When her from deadly thraldome he redeemed,
For which no service she too much esteemed:
Yet dread of shame and doubt of fowle dis-
honor

Made her not yeeld so much as due she deemed.
Yet Britomart attended duly on her,
As well became a knight, and did to her all
honor.

IX

It so befell one evening, that they came
Unto a Castell, lodged there to bee,
Where many a knight, and many a lovely
Dame,

Was then assembled deeds of armes to see:
Amongst all which was none more faire then
shee,

That many of them mov'd to eye her sore.
The custome of that place was such, that hee,
Which had no love nor lemman there in store,
Should either winne him one, or lye without the
dore.

X

Amongst the rest there was a jolly knight,
Who, being asked for his love, avow'd
That fairest Amoret was his by right,
And offred that to justifie alowd.
The warlike virgine, seeing his so proud
And boastfull challenge, wexed inlie wroth;
But for the present did her anger shrowd,
And sayd, her love to lose she was full loth,
But either he should neither of them have, or
both.

XI

So forth they went, and both together giusted;
But that same younker soone was over-
throwne,

And made repent that he had rashly lusted
For thing unlawfull, that was not his owne:
Yet since he seemed valiant, though unknowne,

She, that no lesse was courteous then stout,
Cast how to salve, that both the custome
showne

Were kept, and yet that Knight not locked out;
That seem'd full hard t' accord two things so
far in doubt.

XII

The Seneschall was cal'd to deeme the right:
Whom she requir'd, that first fayre Amoret
Might be to her allow'd, as to a Knight
That did her win and free from chalenge set:
Which straight to her was yeelded without let.
Then, since that strange Knights love from
him was quitted,

She claim'd that to her selfe, as Ladies det,
He as a Knight might justly be admitted;
So none should be out shut, sith all of loves
were fitted.

XIII

With that, her glistening helmet she unlaced;
Which doft, her golden lockes, that were up-
bound

Still in a knot, unto her heeles downe traced,
And like a silken veile in compasse round
About her backe and all her bodie wound:
Like as the shining skie in summers night,
What time the dayes with scorching heat
abound,

Is creasted all with lines of fire light.
That it prodigious seemes in common peoples
sight.

XIV

Such when those Knights and Ladies all
about

Beheld her, all were with amazement smit,
And every one gan grow in secret doubt . . .
Of this and that, according to each wit: [it:
Some thought that some enchantment faygned
Some, that Bellona in that warlike wee
To them appear'd, with shield and armour fit:
Some, that it was a maske of strange disguise:
So diversely each one did sundrie doubts de-
vise.

XV

But that young Knight, which through her
gentle deed

Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd,
Ten thousand thanks did yeeld her for her
meed,

And, doubly overcommen, her ador'd.
So did they all their former strife accord;
And eke fayre Amoret, now freed from feare,
More franke affection did to her afford.

And to her bed, which she was wont forbear,
Now freely drew, and found right safe assu-
rance theare.

XVI

Where all that night they of their loves did
treat,

And hard adventures, twixt themselves alone,
That each the other gan with passion great
And griefull pittie privately bemone.

The morow next, so soone as Titan shone,
They both uprose and to their waies them
dight:

Long wandred they, yet never met with none
That to their willes could them direct aright,
Or to them tydings tell that mote their harts
delight.

XVII

Lo! thus they rode, till at the last they spide
Two armed Knights that toward them did
pace,

And ech of them had ryding by his side
A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space:
But Ladies none they were, albee in face
And outward shew faire semblance they did
beare;

Forunder maske of beautie and good grace
Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were,
That mote to none but to the warie wise
appeare.

XVIII

The one of them the false Duessa hight,
That now had chang'd her former wonted
hew;

For she could d'on so manie shapes in sight,
As ever could Camelon colours new;
So could she forge all colours, save the trew.
The other no whit better was then shee,
But that such as she was shee plaine did shew:
Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might bee,
And dayly more offensive unto each degree.

XIX

Her name was Atë, mother of debate
And all dissention which doth dayly grow
Amongst fraile men, that many a publike
state,

And many a private oft doth overthrow.
Her false Duessa, who full well did know
To be most fit to trouble noble knights
Which hunt for honor, raised from below
Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,
Where she in darknes wastes her cursed daies
and nights.

XX

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is;
There, whereas all the plagues and harmes
abound

Which punish wicked men that walke amisse :
It is a darksome delfe farre under ground,
With thornes and barren brakes environd
round,

That none the same may easily out-win :
Yet many waies to enter may be found,
But none to issue forth when one is in ;
For discord harder is to end then to begin.

XXI

And all withip, the riven walls were hung
With ragged monuments of times forepast,
All which the sad effects of discord sung :
There were rent robes and broken scepters
Altars defild, and holy things defast ; [plast ;
Disshivered speares, and shields ytorne in
twaine ;
Great cities ransackt, and strong castles rast ;
Nations captived, and huge armies slaine :
Of all which ruines there some relicks did re-
maine.

XXII

There was the signe of antique Babyl : ;
Of fatall Thebes ; of Rome that reign'd long ;
Of sacred Salem ; and sad Ilion,
For memorie of which on high there hong
The golden Apple, cause of all their wrong,
For which the three faire Goddesses did strive :
There also was the name of Nimrod strong ;
Of Alexander, and his Princes five
Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had
got alive.

XXIII

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,
The which amongst the Lapithes befell ;
And of the bloodie feast, which sent away
So many Centaures drunken soules to hell,
That under great Alcides furie fell ;
And of the dreadfull discord, which did drive
The noble Argonauts to outrage fell ;
That each of life sought others to deprive,
All mindlesse of the Golden fleece, which
made them strive.

XXIV

And eke of private persons many moe,
That were too long a worke to count them all ;
Some, of sworne friends that did their faith
forgoe ;
Some, of borne brethren prov'd unnaturall ;
Some, of deure lovers foes perpetuall :
Witness their broken bandes there to be seene,
Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled all ;
The monuments whereof there byding beene,
As plaine as at the first when they were fresh
and greene.

XXV

Such was her house within ; but all without,
The barren ground was full of wicked weedes,
Which she her selfe had sownen all about,
Now grown great, at first of little seedes,
The seedes of evill wordes and factious deedes ;
Which, when to ripenesse due they grown
arre,
Bring forth an infinite increase, that breedes
Tumultuous trouble, and contentious jarre,
The which most often end in bloodshed and in
warre.

XXVI

And those same cursed seedes doe also serve
To her for bread, and yeld her living food :
For life it is to her, when others sterve
Through mischievous debate and deadly feod,
That she may sucke their life, and drinke their
blood, [fed ;
With which she from her childhood had bene
For she at first was borne of hellish brood.
And by infernall furies nourished ; [red.
That by her monstrous shape might easily be

XXVII

Her face most fowle and filthy was to see,
With squinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,
And loathly mouth, unmeete a mouth to bee,
That nought but gall and venom comprehended,
And wicked wordes that God and man offended.
Her lying tongue was in two parts divided,
And both the parts did speake, and both con-
tended ;
And as her tongue so was her hart discided,
That never thought one thing, but doubly stil
was guided.

XXVIII

Als as she double spake, so heard she double,
With matchlesse eares deformed and distort,
Fild with false rumors and seditious trouble,
Bred in assemblies of the vulgar sort,
That still are led with every light report :
And as her eares, so eke her feet were odde,
And much unlike ; th' one long, the other short,
And both misplast ; that, when th' one forward
yode,
The other backe retired and contrarie trode.

XXIX

Likewise unequall were her handes twaine ;
That one did reach the other pusht away ;
That one did make the other mard againe,
And sought to bring all things unto decay ;
Whereby great riches, gathered manie a day,
She in short space did often bring to nought,
And their possessours often did dismay :

For all her studie was and all her thought
How she might overthrow the things that
Concord wrought.

XXX

So much her malice did her might surpas,
That even th' Almighty selfe she did maligne,
Because to man so mercifull he was,
And unto all his creatures so benigne.
Sith she her selfe was of his grace indigne;
For all this worlds faire workmanship she tride
Unto his last confusion to bring,
And that great golden chaine quite to divide,
With which it blessed Concord hath together
tide.

XXXI

Such was that hag which with Duessa roade;
And, serving her in her malicious use
To hurt good knights, was, as it were, her
To sell her borrowed beautie to abuse: [baude
For though, like withered tree that wanteth
joyce,
She old and crooked were, yet now of late
As fresh and fragrant as the floure-déluce
She was become, by change of her estate,
And made full goodly joyance to her new-
found mate.

XXXII

Her mate, he was a jollie youthfull knight
That bore great sway in armes and chivalrie,
And was indeed a man of mickle might;
His name was Blandamour, that did descrie
His fickle mind full of inconstancie:
And now himselfe he fittid had right well
With two companions of like qualitie,
Faithlesse Duessa, and false Paridell, [tell.
That whether were more false full hard it is to

XXXIII

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew
From farre espide the famous Britomart,
Like knight adventurous in outward vew,
With his faire paragon, his conquests part,
Approching nigh, eftsoones his wanton hart
Was tickled with delight, and jesting sayd;
'Lo! there, Sir Paridell, for your desert
Good lucke presents you with yond lovely mayd,
For pitie that ye want a fellow for your ayd.'

XXXIV

By that the lovely paire drew nigh to hond:
Whom when as Paridell more plaine beheld,
Albee in heart he like affection fond,
Yet mindfull how he late by one was feld
That did those armes and that same scutcheon
weld,
He had small lust to buy his love so deare,
But answered; 'Sir, him wise I never held,

That, having once escaped perill neare,
Would afterwards afresh the sleeping evill
reare.

XXXV

'This knight too late his manhood and his
might
I did assay, that me right dearely cost;
Ne list I for revenge provoke new fight,
Ne for light Ladies love that soone is lost.'
The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be crost,
'Take then to you this Dame of mine,' (quoth
hee)
'And I, without your perill or your cost,
Will chalenge yond same other for my fee.'
So forth he fiercely prickt that one him scarce
could see.

XXXVI

The warlike Britonesse her soone addrest,
And with such uncouth welcome did receave
Her fayned Paramour, her forced guest,
That being forst his saddle soone to leave,
Him selfe he did of his new love deceave;
And made him selfe thensample of his folie.
Which done, she passed forth, not taking leave,
And left him now as gad, as whilome jollie,
Well warn'd to beware with whom he dar'd to
dallie.

XXXVII

Which when his other companie beheld,
They to his succour ran with readie ayd;
And, finding him unable once to weld,
They reared him on horsebacke and upstayd,
Till on his way they had him forth convayd:
And all the way, with wondrous grieve of mynd
And shame, he shewd him selfe to be dismayd
More for the love which he had left behynd,
Then that which he had to Sir Paridell resynd.

XXXVIII

Nathlesse he forth did march, well as he might,
And made good semblance to his companie,
Dissembling his disease and evill plight;
Till that ere long they chaunced to espie
Two other knights, that towards them did ply
With speedie course, as bent to charge them
new:

Whom when as Blandamour approaching nie
Perceiv'd to be such as they seemd in vew,
He was full wo, and gan his former grieve
renew.

XXXIX

For th' one of them he perfectly descried
To be Sir Scudamour, by that he bore
The God of love with wings displayed wide
Whom mortally he hated evermore,

Both for his worth, that all men did adore,
And eke because his love he wonne by right:
Which when he thought, it grieved him full
sore,
That, through the bruises of his former fight,
He now unable was to wreake his old despight.

XL

Forthy he thus to Paridel bespake:
'Faïre Sir, of friendship let me now you pray,
That as I late adventured for your sake,
The hurts^o, whereof me now from battell stay,
Ye will me now with like good turne repay,
And justifie my cause on yonder knight.'
'Ah! Sir,' (said Paridell) 'do not dismay
Your selfe for this; my selfe will for you fight,
As ye have done for me: the left hand rubs
the right.'

XLI

With that he put his spurs unto his steed,
With speare in rest, and toward him did fare,
Like shaft out of a bow preventing speed:
But Scudamour was shortly well aware
Of his approach, and gan him selfe prepare
Him to receive with entertainment meete.
So furiously they met, that either bare
The other downe under their horses feete,
That what of them became themselves did
scarsly weete.

XLII

As when two billowes in the Irish sowndes,
Forcibly driven with contrarie tydes,
Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes
With roaring rage; and dashing on all sides,
That filleth all the sea with fume, divydes
The doubtfull current into divers wayes.
So fell those two in spight of both their prydes;
But Scudamour himselfe did soone uprayse,
And, mounting light, his foe for lying long up-
brayes^o.

XLIII

Who, rolled on an heape, lay still in swoound
All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle;
Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground
Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle.
Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle,
With busie care they strove him to awake,
And doft his helmet, and undid his mayle:
So much they did, that at the last they brake
His slomber, yet so mazed that he nothing
spake.

XLIV

Which when as Blandamour beheld, he sayd;
'False faitour Scudamour, that hast by slight
And foule advantage this good Knight dismayd.
A Knight much better then thy selfe behight,

Well falles it thee that I am not in plight
This day to wreake the damage by thee donne.
Such is thy wont, that still when any Knight
Is weakened, then thou doest him overronne:
So hast thou to thy selfe false honour often
wonne.'

XLV

He little answer'd, but in manly heart
His mightie indignation did forbeare;
Which was not yet so secret, but some part
Thereof did in his frowning face appeare:
Like as a gloomie cloud, the which doth beare
An hideous storme, is by the Northerne blast
Quite overblowne, yet doth not passe so cleare,
But that it all the skie doth overcast
With darknes dred, and threatens all the world
to wast.

XLVI

'Ah gentle knight!' then false Duessa sayd,
'Why do ye strive for Ladies love so sore,
Whose chiefe desire is love and friendly aid
Mongst gentle Knights to nourish evermore?
Ne be ye wroth, Sir Scudamour, therefore
That she, your love, list love another knight,
Ne do your selfe dislike a whit the more;
For Love is free, and led with selfe delight,
Ne will enforced be with maiesterdome or might.'

XLVII

So false Duessa; but vile Atè thus: [both,
'Both foolish knights! I can but laugh at
That strive and storme with stirre outrageous
For her, that each of you alike doth loth,
And loves another, with whom now she goth
In lovely wise, and sleepe, and sports, and
playes;
Whilest I with you here with many a cursed oth
Sweare she is yours, and stirre up bloudie frays,
To win a willow bough, whilest other weares
the bayes.

XLVIII

'Vile hag!' (sayd Scudamour) why dost
thou lye,
And falsly seekst a vertuous wight to shame?
'Fond knight,' (sayd she) 'the thing that with
this eye
I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same?'
'Then tell,' (quoth Blandamour) 'and feare no
blame:
Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre who so it heares.'
'I saw' (quoth she) 'a stranger knight, whose
name
I wote not well, but in his shield he beares
(That well I wote) the heads of many broken
speares;

XLIX

'I saw him have your Amoret at will;
I saw him kisse; I saw him her embrace;
I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill;
All manie nights; and manie by-in place
That present were to testifie the case.'
Which when as Scudamour did heare, his heart
Was thirt with inward grieve: as when in
chace
The Parthian strikes a stag with shivering dart,
The beast astonisht stands in middest of his
smart.

L

So stood Sir Scudamour when this he heard,
Ne word had he to speake for great dismay,
But lookt on Glaucé grim; who woxe afeard
Of outrage for the words which she heard say,
Albee untrue she wist them by assay.
But Blandamour, whenas he did espie [wray,
His change of cheere that anguish did be-
lie woxe full blithe, as he had got thereby,
And gau thereat to triumph without victorie.

LI

'Lo! recreant,' (sayd he) 'the fruitlesse end
Of thy vaine boast, and spoile of love misgot-
ten, [shent,
Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost
And all true lovers with dishonor blotten:
All things not rooted well will soone be rotten.'
'Fy, fy! false knight,' (then false Ducs-a-
cryde) [gotten;
'Unworthy life, that love with guile hast
Be thou, where ever thou do go or ryde,
Loathed of ladies all, and of all knights de-
fyde!'

LII

But Scudamour, for passing great despit,
Staid not to answer; scarcely did refraine
But that in all those knights and ladies sight
He for revenge had guiltlesse Glaucé slaine:
But, being past, he thus began amaine:
'False traitour squire! false squire of falsest
knight! [abstaine,
Why doth mine hand from thine avenge
Whose Lord hath done my love this foule
despight? [might?
Why do I not it wreake on thee, now in my

LIII

'Discourteous, disloyall Britomart,
Untrue to God, and unto man unjust!
What vengeance due can equall thy desert,
That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust
Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust?
Let ugly shame and endlesse infamy
Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust!
Yet thou, false Squire, his fault shalt deare aby,
And with thy punishment his penance shall
supply.'

LIV

The aged Dame, him seeing so enraged,
Was dead with feare; nathlesse, as neede re-
quired,
His flaming furie sought to have assuaged
With sober words, that sufferance desired,
Till time the tryall of her truth expyred;
And evermore sought Britomart to cleare:
But he the more with furious rage was fyred,
And thrise his hand to kill her did upreare,
And thrise he drew it backe; so did at last
forbare.

CANTO II.

Blandamour winnes false Florimell;
Paridell for her strives:
They are accorded: Agapé
Doth lengthen her sonnes lives.

I

FIREBRAND of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton,
By thousand furies, and from thence out
thrown
Into this world to worke confusion,
And set it all on fire by force unknown,
Is wicked discord; whose small sparkes once
blown
None but a God or godlike man can slake;
Such as was Orpheus, that, when strife was
growen

Amongst those famous ympes of Greece, did
take
His silver Harpe in hand and shortly friends
them make:

II

Or such as that celestiaall Psalmist was,
That, when the wicked feend his Lord tor-
mented,
With heavenly notes, that did all other pas
The outrage of his furious fit relented.

Such Musicke is wise words, with time contented,

To moderate stiffe mindes disposed to strive:
Such as that prudent Romane well invented,
What time his people into partes did rive,
Them reconeyld againe, and to their homes did drive.

III

Such us'd wise Glaucè to that wrathfull knight,

To calme the tempest of his troubled thought:
Yet Blamamour with termes of foule despight,
And Paridell her scornd, and set at nought,
As old and crooked and not good for ought,
Both they unwise, and warelesse of the evill
That by themselves unto themselves is wrought
Through that false witch, and that foule aged drevill;

The one a feend, the other an incarnate devill.

IV

With whom as they thus rode accompanide,
They were encountred of a lustie Knight
That had a goodly Ladie by his side,
To whom he made great dalliance and delight:
It was to weete the boyl Sir Ferraugh hight,
He that from Braggadocchio whilome rest
The snowy Florimell, whose beantie bright
Made him seeme happie for so glorious theft;
Yet was it in due triall but a wandring weft.

V

Which when as Blandamour, whose fancie light

Was alwaies fitting as the wavering wind
After each beantie that appeard in sight,
Beheld, eftsoones it prickt his wanton mind
With sting of lust that reasons eye did blind,
That to Sir Paridell these words he sent:
'Sir knight, why ride ye dumpish thus behind,
Since so good fortune doth to you present
So fayre a spoyle, to make you joyous meriment?'

VI

But Paridell, that had too late a tryall
Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine, [all:
List not to hearken, but made this faire deny-
'Last turne was mine, well proved to my
paine; [gaine!

This now be yours; God send you better
Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in scorne,
Fiercely forth prickt his steed as in disdain
Against that Knight, ere he him well could
torne;

By meanes whereof he hath him lightly over-
borne.

VII

Who, with the sudden stroke astonisht sore,
Upon the ground awhile in slomber lay;
The whiles his love away the other bore,
And, shewing her, did Paridell upbray;
'Lo! sluggish Knight, the victors happie pray!
So fortune friends the bold:' whom Paridell
Seeing so faire indeede, as he did say,
His hart with secret envie gan to swell,
And inly grudge at him that he had sped so well.

VIII

Nathlesse prond man himselfe the other
Having so peerelesse paragon ygot: [deemed,
For sure the sayrest Florimell him seemed
To him was fallen for his happie lot,
Whose like alive on earth he weened not:
Therefore he her did court, did serve, did wooe,
With humblest suit that he imagine not,
And all things did devise, and all things dooe,
That might her love prepare, and liking win
thereunto.

IX

She, in regard thereof, him recompenset
With golden words and goodly countenance,
And such fond favours sparingly dispenst:
Sometimes him blessing with a light eye-
glance,
And coy lookes tempring with loose dalliance;
Sometimes estranging him in sterner wise;
That having cast him in a foolish trance,
He seemed brought to bed in Paradise,
And prov'd himselfe most foole in what he
seem'd most wise.

X

So great a mistresse of her art she was,
Any perfectly practiz'd in womans craft,
That though therein himselfe he thought to pas,
And by his false allurements wylie draught
Had thousand women of their love becraft,
Yet now he was surpriz'd: for that false spright,
Which that same witch had in this forme en-
was so expert in every subtilie slight, [graft,
That it could overreach the wisest earthly
wight.

XI

Yet he to her did dayly service more,
And dayly more deceived was thereby;
Yet Paridell him envied therefore,
As seeming plast in sole felicity:
So blind is lust false colours to descry.
But Atè soone discovering his desire,
And finding now fit opportunity [ire,
To stirre up strife twixt love and spight and
Did privily put coles unto his secret fire.

XII

By sundry meanes thereto she prickt him
forth; ^{[speeches,}
Now with remembrance of those spightfull
Now with opinion of his owne more worth,
Now with recounting of like forniere breaches
Made in their friendship, as that Ilag him
And ever when his passion is allayd, ^{[teaches:}
She it revives, and new occasion reaches;
That on a time, as they together way'd,
He made him open challenge, and thus boldly
sayd;

XIII

'Too boastfull Blandamour! too long I beare
The open wrongs thou doest me day by day:
Well know'st thou, when we friendship first
did sweare,
The covenant was, that every spoyle or pray
Should equally be shard betwixt us tway.
Where is my part then of this Ladie bright,
Whom to thy selfe thou takest quite away?
Render therefore therein to me my right,
Or answer for thy wrong as shall fall out in
fight.'

XIV

Exceeding wroth therat was Blandamour,
And gan this bitter answer to him make:
'Too foolish Paridell! that fayrest floure
Wouldst gather faine, and yet no paines
wouldst take:
But not so easie will I her forsake;
This hand her wonne, this hand shall her defend,
With that they gan their shivering speares to
shake,
And deadly points at eithers breast to bend,
Forgetfull each to have bene ever others friend.

XV

Their fire steedes with so untamed force
Did beare them both to fell avenges end,
That both their speares with pitilesse remorse
Through shield and mayle and habergeon did
wend,
And in their flesh a griesly passage rend,
That with the furie of their owne affret
Each other horse and man to ground did send;
Where, lying still awhile, both did forget
The perillous present stownd in which their
lives were set.

XVI

As when two warlike Brigandines at sea,
With murderous weapons arm'd to cruell fight,
Do meete together on the watry lea,
They stemme ech other with so fell despight,

That with the shooke of their owne heedlesse
might
Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh asunder.
They which from shore behold the dreadful
sight ^{[der,}
Of flashing fire, and heare the ordennance thun-
Do greatly stand amaz'd at such unwonted
wonder.

XVII

At length they both upstart in amaze,
As men awaked rashly out of dreame,
And round about themselves awhile did gaze;
Till seeing her, that Florimell did seme,
In doubt to whom she victorie should deeme,
Therewith their dulled sprights they edgd anew,
And, drawing both their swords, with rage ex-
treme,
Like two mad mastiffes, each on other flew,
And shields did share, and mailles did rash,
and helmes did hew.

XVIII

So furiously each other did assayle,
As if their soules they would attonce have rent
Out of their breasts, that streames of bloud did
rayle
Adowne, as if their springs of life were spent;
That all the ground with purple bloud was
sprent, ^{[gore;}
And all their armours staynd with bloudie
Yet scarcely once to breath would they relent,
So mortall was their malice, and so sore
Become of fayned friendship which they vow'd
afore.

XIX

And that which is for Ladies most besitting,
To stint all strife and foster friendly peace,
Was from those Dames so farre and so un-
fitting,
As that, instead of praying theff surcease,
They did much more their cruelty encrease;
Bidding them fight for honour of their love,
And rather die then Ladies cause release:
With which vaine termes so much they did
them move,
That both resolv'd the last extremities to prove.

XX

There they, I weene, would fight untill this
day,
Had not a Squire, even he the Squire of Dames,
By great adventure travelled that way;
Who seeing both bent to so bloudy games,
And both of old well knowing by their names,
Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their debate:
And first laide on those Ladies thousand blames,

That did not seeke t'appease their deadly hate,
But gazed on their harmes, not pittying their
estate.

XXI

And then those Knights he humbly did
beseech
To stay their hands, till he awhile had spoken;
Who lookt a little up at that his speech,
Yet would not let their battell so be broken,
Both greedie fiers on other to be wroken:
Yet he to them so earnestly did call,
And then conjur'd by some well knownen token,
That they at last their wrothfull hands let fall,
Content to heare him speake, and glad to rest
withall.

XXII

First he desir'd their cause of strife to see:
They said, it was for love of Florimell.
'Ah gentle Knights!' (quoth he) 'how may
that bee,
And she so farre astray, as none can tell?'
'Fond Squire,' full angry then sayd Paridell,
'Seest not the Ladie there before thy face?'
He looked backe, and, her avizing well,
Weend, as he said, by that her outward grace
That fayrest Florimell was present there in
place.

XXIII

Glad man was he to see that joyous sight,
For none alive but joy'd in Florimell,
And lowly to her lowting thus behight:
'Fayrest of faire, that fairenease doest excell,
This happie day I have to greete you well,
In which you safe I see, whom thousand late
Misdoubted lost through mischiefe that befall,
Long may you live in health and happie state!
She litle answer'd him, but lightly did aggrate.

XXIV

Then, turning to those Knights, he gan anew:
'And you, Sir Blandamour, and Paridell,
That for this Ladie, present in your vew,
Have rays'd this cruell warre and outrage fell,
Certes, me seemes, bene not advised well;
But rather ought in friendship for her sake
To joyne your force, their forces to repell
That seeke perforce her from you both to take,
And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph
to make.'

XXV

Thereat Sir Blandamour, with countenance
sterne
All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake:
'Aread, thou Squire, that I the man may learne,
That dare fro me thinke Florimell to take!'

'Not one,' (quoth he) 'but many doe partake
Herein; as thus: It lately so befell,
That Satyran a girdle did uptake
Well knowne to appertaine to Florimell, [well.
Which for her sake he wore, as him beseeemed

XXVI

'But, when as she her selfe was lost and gone,
Full many knights, that loved her like deare,
Thereat did greatly grudge, that he alone
That lost faire Ladies ornament should weare,
And gan therefore close spight to him to beare;
Which he to shun, and stop vile envies sting,
Hath lately caus'd to be proclam'd each where
A solemne feast, with publike turneyng,
To which all knights with them their Ladies
are to bring:

XXVII

'And of them all she, that is fayrest found,
Shall have that golden girle for reward;
And of those Knights, who is most stout on
Shall to that fairest Ladie be prefard. [ground,
Since therefore she her selfe is now your ward,
To you that ornament of hers pertaines
Against all those that challenge it to gard
And save her honour with your ventrous paines:
That shall you win more glory than ye here
find gaine.'

XXVIII

When they the reason of his words had hard,
They gan abate the rancour of their rage,
And with their honours and their loves regard
The furious flames of malice to asswage,
Tho each to other did his faith engage,
Like faithfull friends thenceforth to joyne in one
With all their force, and battell strong to wage
Gainst all those knights, as their professed fone,
That challeng'd ought in Florimell, save they
alone.

XXIX

'So, well accorded, forth they rode together
In friendly sort that lasted but a while;
And of all old dislikes they made faire weather;
Yet all was forg'd and spread with golden foyle,
That under it hidde hate and hollow guyle.
Ne certes can that friendship long endure,
However gay and goodly be the style,
That doth ill cause or evill end enure; [sure.
For vertue is the band that bindeth harts most

XXX

Thus as they march'd all in close disguise
Of fayned love, they chaunst to overtake
Two knights that lincked rode in lovely wise,
As if they secret counsels did partake;
And each not farre behinde him had his make,
To weete, two Ladies of most goodly hew,
That twixt themselves did gentle purpose make,

Unmindfull both of that discordfull crew,
The which with speedie pace did after them
pursue.

XXXI

Who, as they now approached nigh at hand,
Deeming them doughtie, as they did appeare,
They sent that Squire afore, to understand
What mote they be: who, viewing them more
neare,
Returned readie newes, that those same weare
Two of the prowtest Knights in Faery lond,
And those two Ladies their two lovers deare;
Couragious Cambell, and stout Triamond,
With Canacee and Cambrine linckt in lovely
bond.

XXXII

Whylome, as antique stories tellen us,
Those two were foes the fellonest on ground,
And battell made the dreeddest daungerous
That ever shrilling trumpet did resound;
Though now their acts be no where to be found,
As that renowned Poet them compyled
With warlike numbers and Heroicke sound,
Dan Chaucer, well of English undefyled,
On Fames eternall beadrill worthie to be fyled.

XXXIII

Put wicked Time that all good thoughts doth
waste, [weare,
And workes of noblest wits to nought out-
That famous moniment hath quite defaste,
And robd the world of treasure endlesse deare,
The which mote have enriched all us heare.
O cursed Eld! the cankerworme of writs,
How may these rimes, so rude as doth appeare,
Hope to endure, sith workes of heavenly wits
Are quite devoured, and brought to nought by
little bits?

XXXIV

Then pardon, O most sacred happie spirit?
That I thy labours lost may thus revive,
And steale from thee the meede of thy due
merit,
That none durst ever whilst thou wast alive,
And being dead in vaine yet many strive:
Ne dare I like; but, through infusion sweete
Of thine owne spirit which doth in me survive,
I follow here the footing of thy feete,
That with thy meaning so I may the rather
meete.

XXXV

Cambelloes sister was fayre Canacee,
That was the learnedst Ladie in her dayes,
Well scene in everie science that mote bee,
And every secret worke of natures wayes;

In wittie riddles, and in wise soothsayes;
In power of herbes, and tunes of beasts and
burds;

And, that augmented all her other prayse,
She modest was in all her deedes and words,
And wondrous chaste of life, yet lov'd of Knights
and Lords.

XXXVI

Full many Lords and many Knights her loved,
Yet she to none of them her liking lent,
Ne ever was with foud affection moved,
But rul'd her thoughts with goodly governement,
For dread of blame and honours blemishment;
And eke unto her lookes a law she made,
That none of them once out of order went,
But like to warie Centonels well stayd,
Still watcht on every side, of secret foes affrayd,

XXXVII

So much the more as she refusd to love,
So much the more she loved was and sought,
That oftentimes unquiet strife did move
Amongst her lovers, and great quarrels wrought,
That oft for her in bloudie armes they fought.
Which whenas Cambell, that was stout and wise,
Perceiv'd would breede great mischief, he be-
thought

How to prevent the perill that mote rise,
And turne both him and her to honour, in this
wise.

XXXVIII

One day, when all that troupe of warlike
woovers
Assembled were to weet whose she should bee,
All mightie men and dreadfull derring-dooers.
(The harder it to make them well agree)
Amongst them all this end he did decree;
That, of them all which love to her did make,
They by consent should chose the stoutest
three [sake,
That with himselfe should combat for her
And of them all the victour should his sister
take.

XXXIX

Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was bold,
And courage full of haughtie hardiment,
Approved of in perils manifold,
Which he atchiev'd to his great ornament.
But yet his sisters skill unto him lent
Most confidence and hope of happie speed,
Conceived by a ring which she him sent,
That, amongst the manie vertues which we read,
Had power to staunch al wounds that mortally
died bleed.

XL

Well was that rings great vertue knownen to all;
That dread thereof and his redoubted might

Did all that youthly rout so much appall,
That none of them durst undertake the fight.
More wise they weend to make of love delight
Then life to hazard for faire Ladies looke;
And yet uncertaine by such outward sight,
Though for her sake they all that perill tooke,
Whether she would them love, or in her liking
brooke.

XLI

Amongst those knights there were three
brethren bold,
Three bold'r brethren never were yborne,
Borne of one mother in one happie mold,
Borne at one burden in one happie morne;
Thrise happie mother, and thrise happie morne.
That bore three such, three such not to be fond!
Her name was Agapè, whose children were
All three as one; the first light Priamond,
The second Dyamond, the youngest Triamond.

XLII

Stout Priamond, but not so strong to strike;
Strong Diamond, but not so stout a knight;
But Triamond was stout and strong alike:
On horsebacke used Triamond to fight,
And Priamond on foote had more delight;
But horse and foote know Diamond to wield:
With curtaxe used Diamond to smite,
And Triamond to handle speare and shield,
But speare and curtaxe both used Priamond in
field.

XLIII

These three did love each other dearly well,
And with so firme affection were allyde,
As if but one soule in them all did dwell,
Which did her powre into three parts divyde;
Like three faire branches budding farre and
wide,
That from one roote deriv'd their vitall sap:
And like that roote that doth her life divide,
Their mother was; and had full blessed hap.
These three so noble babes to bring forth at
one clap.

XLIV

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill
Of secret things, and all the powres of nature,
Which she by art could use unto her will,
And to her service bind each living creature,
Through secret understanding of their feature.
Thereto she was right faire, whenso her face
She list discover, and of goodly stature:
But she as Fayes are wont, in privie place
Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests wyld
to space.

XLV

There on a day a noble youthly knight,
Seeking adventures in the salvage wood,

Did by great fortune get of her the sight,
As she sate careless by a cristall flood
Combing her golden lockes, as seemd her good;
And unawares upon her laying hold,
That strove in vaine him long to have with-
stood.

Oppressed her, and there (as it is told)
Got these three lovely babes, that prov'd three
champions bold.

XLVI

Which she with her long fostred in that wood,
Till that to ripenesse of mans state they grew:
Then shewing forth signes of their fathers
blood,
They loved armes, and knighthood did ensew,
Seeking adventures where they anie knew.
Which when their mother saw, she gan to dout
Their safetie; least by searching dangers new,
And rash provoking perils all about,
Their days mote be abridged through their
corage stout.

XLVII

Therefore desirous th' end of all their dayes
To know, and them t' enlarge with long ex-
tent,
By wondrous skill and many hidden wayes
To the three fatall sisters house she went.
Farre under ground from tract of living went,
Downe in the bottome of the deepe Abyss,
Where Demogorgon, in dull darknesse pent
Farr from the view of gods and heavens bliss,
The hideous Chaos keepes, their dreadfull
dwelling is.

XLVIII

There she them found all sitting round about,
The direfull distaffe standing in the mid,
And with unwearied fingers drawing out
The lines of life, from living knowledge hid.
Sad Clotho held the rocke, the whiles the thrid
By griesly Lachesis was spun with paine,
That cruell Atropos estoones undid,
With cursd knife cutting the twist in twaine.
Most wretched men, whose dayes depend on
thrids so vaine!

XLIX

She, them saluting, there by them sate still
Beholding how the thrids of life they span:
And when at last she had beheld her fill,
Trembling in heart, and looking pale and wan,
Her cause of comming she to tell began.
To whom fierce Atropos: 'Bold Fay, that durst
Come see the secret of the life of man,
Well worthie thou to be of Jove accurst,
And eke thy childrens thrids to be asunder
burst!'

I.

Whereat she sore affrayd, yet her besought
To graunt her boone, and rigour to abate,
That she might see her childrens thrids forth
brought,

And know the measure of their utmost date
To them ordained by eternall fate:
Which Clotho graunting shewed her the same,
That when she saw, it did her much amate
To see their thrids so thin as spiders frame,
And eke so short, that seemd their ends out
shortly came.

LI

She then began them humbly to intreate
To draw them longer out, and better twine,
That so their lives might be prolonged late:
But Lachesis thereat gan to reſpēde,
And ſayd; 'Fond dame, that deem'st of things
divine

As of humane, that they may altrēd bee,
And chaung'd at pleasure for those impes of
thine!

Not so; for what the Fates do once decree,
Not all the gods can chaunge, nor Jove him
self can free!

LII

'Then since' (quoth she) 'the terme of each
mans life
For nought may lessened nor enlarged bee,

Graunt this; that when ye shred with fatall
knife

His line, which is the eldest of the three,
Which is of them the shortest, as I see,
Eftsoones his life may passe into the next:
And, when the next shall likewise ended bee,
That both their lives may likewise be annext
Unto the third, that his may so be trebly wext.

LIII

They graunted it; and then that carefull Fay
Departed thence with full contented mynd;
And, coming home, in warlike fresh aray
Them found all thre according to their kynd:
But unto them what destinie was assaynd,
Or how their lives were ekt, she did not tell;
But evermore, when she fit tyme could fynd,
She warned them to tend their safeties well,
And love each other deare, what ever them
befell.

LIV

So did they surely during all their dayes,
And never discord did amongst them fall,
Which much augmented all their other praise;
And now, t'increase affection naturall,
In love of Canacee they joynd all:
Upon which ground this same great battell
grew,

Great matter growing of beginning small,
The which, for length, I will not here pursew,
But rather will reserve it for a Canto new.

CANTO III.

The battell t'ixt three brethren with
Cambell for Canacee:
Cumbina with true friendships bond
Doth their long strife agree.

I

O! why doe wretched men so much desire
To draw their dayes unto the utmost date,
And doe not rather wish them soone expire,
Knowing the miserie of their estate,
And thousand perills which them still awate,
Tossing them like a boate amid the mayne,
That every houre they knocke at deathes gate?
And he that happie seemes, and least in payne,
Yet is as nigh his end as he that most doth
playne.

II

Therefore this Fay I hold but fond and vaine,
The which, in seeking for her children three

Long life, thereby did more prolong their
paine:

Yet whilst they lived none did ever see
More happie creatures then they seem'd to bee;
Nor more ennobled for their courtesie,
That made them dearly lov'd of each degree;
Ne more renowned for their chevalrie,
That made them dreaded much of all men farre
and nie.

III

These three that hardie chalenge tooke in hand,
For Canacee with Cambell for to fight,
The day was set, that all might understand,
And pledges pawnd the same to keepe aright:

That day, the dreddest day that living wight
Did ever see upon this world to shine,
So soone as heavens window shewed light,
These warlike Champions, all in armour shine,
Assembled were in field the challenge to define.

IV

The field with listes was all about enclos'd,
To barre the prease of people farre away ;
And at th' one side sixe judges were dispos'd,
To view and decerne the deedes of armes that
And on the other side, in fresh aray, [day:
Fayre Canacee upon a stately stage
Was set, to see the fortune of that fray,
And to be seene, as his most worthie wage
That could her purchase with his lives adventur'd gage.

V

Then entred Cambell first into the list,
With stately steps and fearelesse countenance,
As if the conquest his be surely wist.
Soone after did the brethren three advance
In brave aray and goodly amenance.
With scutchins gilt and banners broad displayd,
And, marching thrise in warlike ordinance,
Thrise lowted lowly to the noble Mayd.
The whiles shrill trompets and loud clariours
sweetly playd.

VI

Which doen, the doughty challenger came
forth,
All arm'd to point, his chalenge to abet :
Gainst whom Sir Priamond, with equall worth
And equall armes, himselfe did forward set.
A trompet blew ; they both together met
With dreadfull force and furious intent,
Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret,
As if that life to losse they had forelent,
And cared not to spare that should be shortly
spent.

VII

Right practicke was Sir Priamond in fight,
And thoroughly skild in use of shield and speare ;
Ne lesse approved was Cambelloes might,
Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare ;
That hard it was to weene which harder were.
Full many mightie strokes on either side
Were sent, that seemed death in them to beare ;
But they were both so watchfull and well eyde,
That they avoyded were, and vainely by did
ayde.

VIII

Yet one, of many, was so strongly bent
By Priamond, that with unluckie glance
Through Cambels shoulder it unwarely went,
That forced him his shield to disavnaunce.

Much was he grieved with that gracelesse
chaunce ;

Yet from the wound no drop of bloud there fell,
But wondrous paine, that did the more en-
haunce

His haughtie cofrage to avengement fell :
Smart daunts not mighty harts, but makes them
more to swell.

IX

With that, his poynant speare he fierce aven-
tred
With doubled force close underneath his shield,
That through the mayles into his thigh it en-
tred,
And, there arresting, readie way did yield
For bloud to gush forth on the grassie field ;
That he for paine himselfe n'ote right upreare,
But too and fro in great amazement reel'd ;
Like an old Oke, whose pith and sap is seare,
At pufte of every storme doth stagger here
and theare.

X

Whom so dismayd when Cambell had espide,
Againe he drove at him with double might,
That nought mote stay the steele, till in his
The mortall point most cruelly enight ; [side
Where fast infix'd, whilst he sought by slight
It forth to wrest, the staffe asunder brake,
And left the head behinde : with which des-
pight
He all enrag'd his shivering speare did shake,
And charging him afresh thus felly him be-
spake.

XI

' Lo ! faitour, there thy meede unto thee take,
The meede of thy mischallenge and abet,
Not for thine owne, but for thy sisters sake,
Have I thus long thy life unto thee let :
But to forbeare doth not forgive the det.'
The wicked weapon heard his wrathfull vow,
And, passing forth with furious affret,
Pierc'd through his bever quite into his brow.
That with the force it backward forced him to
bow.

XII

Therewith asunder in the midst it brast,
And in his hand nought but the troncheon left ;
The other halfe, behind yet sticking fast,
Out of his headpeece Cambell fiercely reft,
And with such furie backe at him it heft,
That making way unto his dearest life,
His weasand-pipe it through his gorget cleft.
Thence streames of purple bloud issuing rife
Let forth his wearie ghost, and made an end
of strife,

XIII

His wearie ghost assayld from fleshly band
Did not, as others wont, directly fly
Unto her rest in Plutoes grisly land;
Ne into ayre did vanish presently,
Ne chaunged was into a starre in sky;
But through tradduction was eftsoones deriued,
Like as his mother prayd the Destinie,
Into his other brethern that survived,
In whom he liv'd anew, of former life deprived.

XIV

Whom when on ground his brother next beheld,
Though sad and sorie for so heavy sight,
Yet leave unto his sorrow did not yeld,
But rather stir'd to vengeance and despight,
Through secret feeling of his generous spright,
Rusht fiercely forth the battell to renew,
As in reversion of his brothers right;
And challenging the Virgin as his dew,
His foe was soone address: the trumpets freshly blew.

XV

With that they both together fiercely met,
As if that each ment other to deuoure;
And with their axes both so sorely bet,
That neither plate nor mayle, where as their powre
They felt, could once sustaine the hideous
But rived were like rotten wood asunder;
Whilst through their rifts the ruddie blood
did shewe,
And firedid flash, like lightning after thunder,
That filld the lookers on attonce with ruth and wonder.

XVI

As when two Tygers prickt with hungers rage
Have by good fortune found some beasts flesh
spoyle,
On which they weene their famine to asswage,
And gaine a feastfull gerdoun of their toyle,
Both falling out doe stirre up strifefull boyle,
And cruell battell twixt themselves doe make,
Whiles neither lets the other touch the soyle,
But either sdeignes with other to partake:
So cruely these Knights strove for that Ladies sake.

XVII

Full many strokes, that mortally were ment,
The whiles were enterchaunged twixt them
two;
Yet they were all with so good wariment
Or warded, or avoyded and let goe,
That still the life stood fearelesse of her foe;
Till Diamond, disdeigning long delay
Of doubtfull fortune wavering to and fro,

Resolv'd to end it one or other way,
And heav'd his murderous axe at him with
mighty sway.

XVIII

The dreadfull stroke, in case it had arrived
Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment)
The soule had sure out of his bodie rived,
And stinted all the strife incontinent:
But Cambels fate that fortune did prevent;
For, seeing it at hand, he swarv'd asyde,
And so gave way unto his fell intent;
Who, missing of the marke which he had cyde,
Was with the force nigh field, whilst his right
foot did slyde.

XIX

As when a Vulture greedie of his pray,
Through hunger long that hart to him doth
lend,
Strikes at an Heron with all his bodies sway,
That from his force seemes nought may it
defend;
The warie fowle, that spies him toward bend
His dreadfull souse, avoydes it, shunning light,
And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend;
That with the weight of his owne weeldlesse
night
ereth flight.
He falleth nigh to ground, and scarce recov-

XX

Which faire adventure when Cambello spide,
Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recowar
From daungers dread to ward his naked side,
He can let drive at him with all his power,
And with his axe him smote in evill hower,
That from his shoulders quite his head he reft:
The headlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that
stower,
Stood still awhile, and his fast footing kept,
Till, feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly
slept.

XXI

They which that piteous spectacle beheld
Were much amaz'd the headlesse tronke to see
Stand up so long, and weapon vaine to weld,
Unweeting of the Fates divine decree
For lifes succession in those brethren three.
For notwithstanding that one soule was reft,
Yet had the bodie not dismembred bee,
It would have lived, and revived eft;
But, finding no fit seat, the lifelesse corse it left.

XXII

It left; but that same soule which therein
dwelt
Streight entring into Triamond him filld
With double life and griefe; which when he felt,
As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild

With point of Steele that close his hartbloud
 spild,
 He lightly leapt out of his place of rest,
 And rushing forth into the emptie field,
 Against Cambello fiercely him addrest; [prest.
 Who, him affronting soone, to fight was readie

XXIII

Well mote ye wonder how that noble Knight,
 After he had so often wounded beene,
 Could stand on foot now to renew the fight:
 But had ye then him forth advauncing scene,
 Some newborne wight ye would him surely
 weene;
 So fresh he seemed and so fierce in sight:
 Like as a Snake, whom wearie winters teene
 Hath worne to nought, now feeling sommers
 might, [dight.
 Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth him

XXIV

All was through vertue of the ring he wore;
 The which not onely did not from him let
 One drop of bloud to fall, but did restore
 His weakned powers, and dulled spirits whet,
 Through working of the stone therein yset.
 Else how could one of equall might with most,
 Against so many no lesse mightie met,
 Once thinke to match three such on equall cost,
 Three such as able were to match a puissant
 host?

XXV

Yet nought thereof was Triamond adredde,
 Ne desperate of glorious victorie;
 But sharply him assayld, and sore bestedde
 With heapes of strokes, which he at him let flie
 As thicke as haye le forth poured from the skie:
 He stroke, he soust, he soynd, he hewd, he lasht,
 And did his yron brond so fast applie.
 That from the same the fierie sparkles flasht,
 As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke are
 dasht.

XXVI

Much was Cambello daunted with his blowes:
 So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent,
 That he was forst from daunger of the throwes
 Backe to retire, and somewhat to relent,
 Till th' heat of his fierce furie he had spent;
 Which when for want of breath gan to abate,
 He then afresh with new encouragement
 Did him assayle, and mightily amate,
 As fast as forward erst new backward to
 retrate.

XXVII

Like as the tide, that comes fro th' Ocean
 mayne,
 Flowes up the Shenan with contrarie forse,

And over-ruling him in his owne rayne,
 Drives backe the current of his kindly course,
 And makes it seeme to have some other sourse;
 But when the floud is spnt, then backe againe,
 His borrowed waters forst to redibourse,
 He sends the sea his owne with double gaine.
 And tribute eke withall, as to his Sovereaine.

XXVIII

Thus did the battell varie to and fro,
 With diverse fortune doubtfull to be deemed:
 Now this the better had, now had his fo;
 Then he halfe vanquishd, then the other seemed,
 Yet victors both them selves alwayes esteemed:
 And all the while the disentrayld blood
 Adowne their sides like litle rivers scremed,
 That with the wasting of his vital flood,
 Sir Triamond at last full faint and feeble stood.

XXIX

But Cambell still more strong and greater
 grew,
 Ne felt his blood to wast, ne powres emperisht,
 Through that rings vertue, that with vigour
 new
 Still when as he enfeebled was, him cherisht,
 And all his wounds, and all his bruses gua-
 risht; [toyle,
 Like as a withered tree, through husbands
 Is often scene full freshly to have florisht,
 And fruitfull apples to have borne awhile,
 As fresh as when it first was planted in the
 soyle.

XXX

Through which advantage, in his strength
 he rose,
 And smote the other with so wondrous might,
 That through the seame, which did his hau-
 berk close,
 Into his throate and life it pierced quight,
 That downe he fell as dead in all mens sight;
 Yet dead he was not, yet he sure did die,
 As all men do, that lose the living spright.
 So did one soule out of his bodie flie
 Unto her native home from mortall miserie.

XXXI

But nathelesse, whilst all the lookers-on
 Him dead behight, as he to all appeard,
 All unawares he started up anon,
 As one that had out of a dreame bene reard,
 And fresh assayld his foe: who halfe affeard
 Of th' uncouth sight, as he some ghost had
 seene,
 Stood still amaz'd. holding his idle sweard;
 Till, having often by him stricken beene,
 He forced was to strike, and save himselfe
 from teene.

XXXII

Yet from thenceforth more warily he fought,
As one in feare the Stygian gods t' offend,
Ne followd on so fast, but rather sought
Him selfe to save, and danger to defend,
Then life and labour both in vaine to spend.
Which Triamond perceiving weened sure
He gan to faint toward the battels end,
And that he should not long on foote endure,
A signe which did to him the victorie assure.

XXXIII

Whereof full blith eftsoones his mightie hand
He hea'd on high, in mind with that same
blow
To make an end of all that did withstand:
Which Cambell seeing come was nothing slow
Him selfe to save from that so deadly throw;
And at that instant reaching forth his sword
Close underneath his shield, that scarce did
show,
Stroke him, as he his hand to strike upreard,
In th' arm-pit full, that through both sides
the wound appeard.

XXXIV

Yet still that direfull stroke kept on his way,
And, falling heave on Cambelloes crest,
Strooke him so hugely that in swowne he lay,
And in his head an hideous wound imprest:
And sure, had it not happily found rest
Upon the brim of his brode-plated shield,
It would have cleft his braine downe to his
brest.
So both at once fell dead upon the field,
And each to other seemd the victorie to yield.

XXXV

Which when as all the lookers-on beheld,
They weened sure the warre was at an end;
And Judges rose, and Marshals of the field
Broke up the listes, their armes away to rend;
And Canacee gan wayle her dearest friend.
All suddenly they both upstart light, blend,
The one out of the swound, which him did
The other breathing now another spright,
And fiercely each assayling gan afresh to fight.

XXXVI

Long while they then continued in that wize,
As if but then the battell had begonne:
Strckes, wounds, wards, weapons, all they did
despise,
Ne either car'd to wail, or perill shonne,
Desirous both to have the battell donne;
Ne either cared life to save or spill, wonne,
Ne which of them did winne, ne which were

So wearie both of fighting had their fill,
That life it selfe seemd loathsome, and long
safetie ill.

XXXVII

Whilst thus the case in doubtfull ballance
hong,
Unsure to whether side it would incline,
And all mens eyes and hearts, which there
among
Stood gazing, filled were with rufull tine
And secret feare, to see their fatall fine,
All suddenly they heard a troublous noyes,
That seemd some perillous tumult to desine,
Confusd with womens cries and shouts of
boyes, [noyes,
Such as the troubled Theatres oftines an-

XXXVIII

Thereat the Champions both stood still a
space,
To weeten what that sudden clamour ment:
Lo! where they spyde with speedie whirling
One in a charet of straunge furniment [pace,
Towards them driving, like a storme out sent.
The charet decked was in wondrous wize
With gold and many a gorgeous ornament,
After the Persian Monarks antique guize,
Such as the maker selfe could best by art de-
vize.

XXXIX

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell)
Of two grim Lyons, taken from the wood,
In which their powre all others did excell;
Now made forget their former cruell mood,
T' obey their riders best, as seemed good.
And therein sate a Ladic, passing faire
And bright, that seemed borne of Angels
brood,
And, with her beautie, bountie did compare,
Whether of them in her should have the greater
share.

XL

Thereto she learned was in Magicke leare,
And all the artes, that subtil wits discover,
Having therein bene trained many a yeare,
And well instructed by the Fay her mother,
That in the same she farre exceld all other:
Who understanding by her mightie art
Of th' evill plight, in which her dearest brother
Now stood, came forth in hast to take his part,
And pacifie the strife, which caused so deadly
smart.

XLI

And as she passed through th' unruly preace
Of people, thronging thicke her to behold,
Her angrie teame breaking their bonds of peace
Great heapes of them, like sheepe in narrow fold,

For hast did over-runne, in dust enrould:
That, thorough rude confusion of the rout,
Some fearing shriekt, some being harmed hould,
Some laught for sport, some did for wonder
shout, [turnd to doubt.
And some, that would seeme wise, their wonder

XLII

In her right hand a rod of peace shee bore,
About the which two Serpents weren wound,
Entrayled mutually in lovely lore,
And by the wailes together firmly bound,
And both were with one olive garland crown'd,
Like to the rod which Maias sonne doth wield,
Wherewith the hellish fiends he doth confound.
And in her other hand a cup shee hild, [fild.
The which was with Nepenthe to the brim up-

XLIII

Nepenthe is a drinck of soverayne grace,
Devised by the Gods, for to asswage
Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chace,
Which stirs up anguish and contentious rage:
Instead thereof sweet peace and quiet-age
It doth establish in the troubled mynd.
Few men, but such as sober are and sage,
Are by the Gods to drinck thereof assynd;
But such as drinck, eternall happinesse do fynd.

XLIV

Such famous men, such worthies of the earth,
As Jove will have advaunced to the skie,
And there made gods, though borne of mortall
berth,

For their high merits and great dignitie,
Are wont, before they may to heaven flie,
To drincke hereof, whereby all cares forepast
Are washt away quite from their memorie.
So did those olde Heroes hercof taste,
Before that they in blisse amongst the Gods
were plaste.

XLV

Much more of price and of more gracious powre,
Is this, then that same water of Ardenne.
The which Rinaldo drunck in happie howre,
Described by that famous Tuscan penne:
For that had might to change the hearts of men
Fro love to hate, a change of evill choise:
But this doth hatred make in love to brenne,
And heavy heart with comfort doth rejoyce.
Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld his
voice?

XLVI

At last arriving by the listes side,
Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile,
Which straight flew ope, and gave her way to
Eftsoones out of her Coch shee gan avale, [ride.

And pacing fairely forth did bid all haile,
First to her brother, whom she loved deare,
That so to see him made her heart to quail;
And next to Cambell, whose sad ruefull cheare
Made her to change her hew, and hidden love
t' appeare.

XLVII

They lightly her requit, (for small delight
They had as then her long to entertaine)
And oft them turned both againe to fight:
Which when she saw, downe on the bloody
plaine [amaine,
Her selfe she threw, and teares gan shed
Amongst her teares immixing prayers meeke,
And with her prayers reasons, to restraine
From bloody strife, and blessed peace to seeke.
By all that unto them was deare, did them
beseeke.

XLVIII

But when as all might nought with them
prevaild, [wand.
Shee smote them lightly with her powrefull
Then suddenly, as if their hearts did faile,
Their wrathfull blades downe fell out of their
hand,
And they, like men astonisht, still did stand.
Thus whilst their minds were doubtfully dis-
traught,
And mighty spirites bound with mightier band,
Her golden cup to them for drinke shee laught,
Whereof, full glad for thirst, ech drunk an
harty draught;

XLIX

Of which so soone as they once tasted had,
Wonder it is that sudden change to see:
Instead of strokes, each other kissed glad,
And lovely haulst, from feare of treason free,
And plighted hands for ever friends to be.
When all men saw this sudden change of things,
So mortall foes so friendly to agree,
For passing joy, which so great marvaile brings,
They all gan shout aloud, that all the heaven
sings.

L

All which when gentle Canace beheld,
In hast she from her lofty chaire descended,
To weet what sudden tidings was befel:
Where when she saw that cruell war so ended,
And deadly foes so faithfully affrended,
In lovely wise she gan that Lady greet,
Which had so great dismay so well amended:
And, entertaining her with curt'sies meet,
Profest to her true friendship and affection
sweet.

LI

Thus when they all accorded goodly were,
The trumpets sounded, and they all arose,

Thence to depart with gleb and gladsome
chere.

Those warlike champions both together chose
Homeward to march, themselves there to
repose :

And wise Cambina, taking by her side
Faire Canacee, as fresh as morning rose,
Unto her Coch remounting, home did ride,
Admir'd of all the people and much glori-
fide.

LII
Where making joyous feast their daies they
In perfect love, deuote of hatefull strife, [spent
Allide with bands of mutuall complement;
For Triamond had Canacee to wife,
With whom he led a long and happie life;
And Cambel tooke Cambina to his fere,
The which as life were to each other liefe.
So all alike did love, and loved were, [elsewhere.
That since their dayes such lovers were not found

CANTO IV.

Satyrane makes a Turneyment

For love of Florimell:

Britomart winnes the prize from all,
And Artegall doth quell.

I
It often fals, (as here it earst befell)
That mortall foes doe turne to faithfull frend-,
And friends profest are chaung'd to loemen
fell :

The cause of both, of both their minds depends,
And th' end of both likewise of both their
For enmitie, that of no ill proceeds [ends:
But of occasion, with th' occasion ends;
And friendship, which a faint affection breeds
Without regard of good, dyes like ill grounded
seeds.

II
That well (me seemes) appeares, by that of
late
Twixt Cambell and Sir Triamond befell,
As als by this, that now a new debate
Stird up twixt Blandamour and Paridell,
The which by course befalls me here to tell:
Who having those two other Knights espide
Marching afore, as ye remember well, . . .
Sent forth their Squire to have them both de-
side, [side.
And eke those masked Ladies riding them be-

III
Who backe returning told, as he had seene,
That they were doughtie knights of dreaded
name,
And those two Ladies their two loves unseene:
And therefore wisht them without blot or
blame

To let them passe at will, for dread of shame.
But Blandamour full of vainglorious spright,
And rather stird by his discordfull Dame,
Upon them gladly would have prov'd his might,
But that he yet was sore of his late lucklesse
fight.

IV
Yet nigh approaching he them fowle be-
pake,
Disgracing them, him selfe thereby to grace,
As was his wont : so weening way to make
To Ladies love, where so he came in place,
And, with lewd termes their lovers to deface.
Whose sharpe provokement them incenst so
sore,
That both were bent t' avenge his usage base,
And gan their shields addresse them selves
afore : [bore.
For evill deedes may better then bad words be

V
But faire Cambina with perswasions myld
Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode,
That for the present they were reconeyld,
And gan to treat of deeds of armes abroad,
And strange adventures, all the way they
rode :
Amongst the which they to, as then befell,
Of that great turney which was blazed brode,
For that rich girdle of faire Florimell,
The prize of her which did in beautie most
excell.

VI
To which folke-mote they all with one con-
sent,
Sith each of them his Ladie had him by,
Whose beautie each of them thought ex-
cellent,
Agreed to travel, and their fortunes try.
So as they passed forth they did espy
One in bright armes, with ready speare in rest,
That toward them his course seem'd to apply :
Gainst whom Sir Paridell himselfe addrest,
Him weening, ere he nigh approacht, to have
represt.

VII

Which th' other seeing gan his course relent,
And vaunted speare oftsoones to disaduaunce,
As if he naught but peace and pleasure ment,
Now false into their fellowship by chance :
Whereat they shewed courteous countenance,
So as he rode with them accompanide,
His roving eie did on the Lady glauce
Which Blandamour had riding by his side :
Whom sure he weend, that he some-where to-
fore had eide.

VIII

It was to weete that snowy Florimell,
Which Ferrau late from Braggadochio wonne:
Whom he now seeing, her remembered well,
How having reft her from the witches sonne,
He some her lost : wherefore he now begonne
To challenge her anew, as his owne prize,
Whom formerly he had in battell wonne,
And proffer made by force her to reprove :
Which scornfull offer Blandamour gan soone
despise ;

IX

And said, ' Sir Knight, sith ye this Lady clame,
Whom he that hath were loth to lose so light,
(For so to lose a Lady weft great shame)
Yee shall her winne, as I have done, in fight :
And lo ! shee shall be placed here in sight,
Together with this Hag beside her set,
That who so winnes her may her have by right :
But he shall have the Hag that is ybet,
And with her alwaies ride, till he another get.

X

That offer pleased all the company :
So Florimell with Atè forth was brought,
At which they all gan laugh full merrily :
But Braggadochio said, he never thought
For such an Hag, that seemed worse then
nought,
His person to emperill so in fight ;
But if to match that Lady they had sought
Another like, that were like faire and bright,
His life he then would spend to justifie his right.

XI

At which his vaine excuse they all gan smile,
As scorning his unmanly cowardize :
And Florimell him fowly gan revile.
That for her sake refus'd to enterprize
The battell, offred in so knightly wize :
And Atè eke provokt him privily
With love of her, and shame of such mesprize.
But nought he car'd for friend or enemy.
For in base mind nor friendship dwells nor
enmity.

XII

But Cambell thus did shut up all in jest :
' Brave Knights and Ladies, certes, ye doe
wrong
To stirre up strife, when most us needeth rest,
That we may us reserve both fresh and strong
Against the Turnement which is not long,
When who so list to fight may fight his fill :
Till then your challenges ye may prolong ;
And then it shall be tried, if ye will,
Whether shall have the Hag, or hold the Lady
still.'

XIII

They all agreed : so, turning all to game
And pleasauit bord, they past forth on their
way.
And all that while, where so they rode or came,
That masked Mock-knight was their sport and
play.
Till that at length, upon th' appointed day
Unto the place of turneyment they came ;
Where they before then found in fresh aray
Manie a braye knight and manie a daintie dame,
Assembled for to get the honour of that game.

XIV

There this faire crewe arrivng did divide
Them selves asunder : Blandamour with those
Of his on th' one, the rest on th' other side.
But boastful Braggadochio rather chose,
For glorie vaine, their fellowship to lose,
That men on him the more might gaze alone.
The rest themselves in troupes did else dispose,
Like as it seemed best to every one ;
The knights in couples marcht with ladies
linckt attone.

XV

Then first of all forth came Sir Satyrane,
Bearing that precious relieke in an arke
Of gold, that bad eyes might it not prophane ;
Which drawing softly forth out of the darke,
He open shewd, that all men it mote marke :
A gorgeous girdle, curiously embost
With pearle and precious stone, worth many a
marke ;
Yet did the workmanship farre passe the cost :
It was the same which lately Florimel had lost.

XVI

The same aloft he hung in open vew,
To be the prize of beautie and of might ;
The which oftsoones discovered, to it drew
The eyes of all, allur'd with close delight,
And hearts quite robbed with so glorious sight,
That all men threw out voves and wishes vaine,
Thrise happie Ladie, and thrise happie knight,

Them seemd that could so goodly riches gaine,
So worthie of the perill, worthy of the paine.

XVII

Then tooke the bold Sir Satyrane in hand
An huge great speare, such as he wont to wield,
And, vauncing forth from all the other band
Of knights, addrest his maiden-headed shield,
Shewing him selfe all ready for the field.
Gainst whom there singled from the other side
A Painim knight that well in armes was skild,
And had in many a battell oft bene tride,
Hight Bruncheval the bold, who fiersly forth
did ryle.

XVIII

So furiously they both together met,
That neither could the others force sustaine;
As two fierce Buls, that strive the rule to get
Of all the heard, meeete with so hideous maine,
That both rebutted tumble on the plaine:
So these two champions to the ground were
feld,
Where in a maze they both did long remaine,
And in their hands their idle troncheons held,
Which neither able were to wag, or once to
weld.

XIX

Which when the noble Ferramont espide,
He pricked forth in ayd of Satyrane;
And him against Sir Blandamour did ride
With all the strength and stiffnesse that he can.
But the more strong and stiffely that he ran,
So much more sorely to the ground he fell,
That on a heape were tumbled horse and man:
Unto whose rescue forth rode Paridell;
But him likewise with that same speare he cke
did quell.

XX

Which Braggadocchio seeing had no will
To hasten greatly to his parties ayd,
Albee his turne were next; but stood there
still,
As one that seemed doubtfull or dismayd.
But Triamond, halfe wroth to see him staid,
Sternly stept forth and raught away his speare,
With which so sore he Ferramont assaid,
That horse and man to ground he quite did
ieare,
That neither could in hast themselves againe

XXI

Which to avenge Sir Devon him did dight,
But with no better fortune then the rest:
For him likewise he quickly downe did smight,
And after him Sir Douglas him addrest,

And after him Sir Palimord forth prest:
But none of them against his strokes could
stand,
But, all the more, the more his praise increst:
For either they were left uppon the land,
Or went away sore wounded of his haplesse
haud.

XXII

And now by this Sir Satyrane abraid
Out of the swowne, in which too long he lay;
And looking round about, like one dismaid,
When as he saw the mercilesse affray
Which doughty Triamond had wrought that
day
Unto the noble Knights of Maidenhead,
His mighty heart did almost rind in tway,
For very gall, that rather wholly dead
himselfe he wisht have beene, then in so bad
a stead.

XXIII

Eftsoones he gan to gather up around
His weapons which lay scattered all abroad,
And, as it fell, his steed he ready found;
On whom remounting fiercely forth he rode,
Like sparke of fire that from the andvile glode,
There where he saw the valiant Triamond
Chasing, and laying on them heavy lode,
That none his force were able to withstand,
So dreadfull were his strokes, so deadly was
his hond.

XXIV

With that, at him his beam-like speare he
aimed,
And thereto all his power and might applide:
The wicked steele, for mischiefe first or-
dained,
And having now misfortune got for guide,
Staid not till it arrived in his side,
And therein made a very grievous wound,
That streames of blood his armour all bedide.
Much was he daunted with that direfull stound,
That scarce he him upheld from falling in a
swound.

XXV

Yet, as he might, himselfe he soft withdrew
Out of the field, that none perceiv'd it plaine;
Then gan the part of Chalers anew
To range the field, and victorlike to raine,
That none against them battell durst main-
taine.
By that the gloomy evening on them fell,
That forced them from fighting to refraine,
And trumpets sound to cease did them compell:
So Satyrane that day was judg'd to beare the
bell.

XXVI

The morrow next the Turney gan anew :
And with the first the hardy Satyrane
Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew :
On th' other side full many a warlike swaine
Assembled were, that glorious prize to gaine.
But amongst them all was not Sir Triamond,
Unable he new battell to darraigne.
Through grievance of his late received wound,
That doubly did him grieve when so himselfe
he found.

XXVII

Which Cambell seeing, though he could not
salve,
Ne done undoe, yet, for to salve his name
And purchase honour in his friends behalve,
This goodly counterfesaunce he did frame :
The shield and armes, well knowne to be the
same
Which Triamond had worne, unwares to wight
And to his friend unwist, for doubt of blame
If he misdid, he on himselfe did dight,
That none could him discern; and so went
forth to fight.

XXVIII

There Satyrane Lord of the field he found,
Triumphing in great joy and jolity,
Gainst whom none able was to stand on
ground;
That much he gan his glorie to envy,
And cast t' avenge his friends indignity.
A mightie speare eftsoones at him he bent;
Who, seeing him come on so furiously,
Met him mid-way with equall hardiment,
That forcibly to ground they both together
went.

XXIX

They up againe them selves can lightly reare,
And to their tryed swords them selves betake;
With which they wrought such wondrous
marvels there,
That all the rest it did amazed make,
Ne any dar'd their perill to partake;
Now cuffing close, now chacing to and fro,
Now hurtling round advantage for to take :
As two wild Boares together grappling go,
Chauing and foming choler each against his
foe.

XXX

So as they courst, and turneyd here and
there,
It chaunst Sir Satyrane his steed at last,
Whether through foundring or through sodein
feare,
To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast;

Which vantage Cambell did pursue so fast,
That, ere him selfe he had recovered well,
So sore he sowst him on the compast creast,
That forced him to leave his loftie sell,
And rudely tumbling downe under his horse-
feete fell.

XXXI

Lightly Cambello leapt downe from his steed
For to have rent his shield and arnes away,
That whylome wont to be the victors meed;
When all unwares he felt an hideous sway
Of many swords that lode on him did lay.
An hundred knights had him enclosed round,
To rescue Satyrane out of his pray,
All which at once huge strokes on him did
powd,
In hope to take him prisoner, where he stood
[on ground.]

XXXII

He with their multitude was nought dismayd,
But with stout courage turnd upon them all,
And with his broudron round about him layd;
Of which he dealt large almes, as dut befall :
Like as a Lion, that by chance doth fall
Into the hunters toile, doth rage and rore,
In royall heart disdainning to be thrall.
But all in vaine: for what might one do more?
They have him taken captive, though it grieve
him sore.

XXXIII

Whereof when newes to Triamond was brought
There as he lay, his wound he soone forgot.
And starting up streight for his armour sought:
In vaine he sought, for there he found it not;
Cambello it away before had got.
Cambelloes armes therefore he on him threw,
And lightly issewd forth to take his lot.
There he in troupe found all that warlike crew,
Leading l is friend away, full sorie to his view.

XXXIV

Into the thickest of that knightly preasse
He thrust, and smote downe all that was be-
tweene,
Caried with fervent zeale: ne did he cease,
Till that he came where he had Cambell scene
Like captive thrall two other Knights atweene:
There he amongst them cruell havocke makes,
That they, which lead him, soone enforced beene
To let him loose to save their proper stakes,
Who, being freed, from one a weapon fiercely
takes.

XXXV

With that he drives at them with dreadfull
might,
Both in remembrance of his friends late harme,
And in revengement of his owne despight;
So both together give a new allarme,

As if but now the battell waxed warme.
As when two greedy Wolves doe breake by force
Into an heard, farre from the husband farme.
They spoile and ravine without all remorse;
So did these two through all the field their
foes enforce.

XXXVI

Fiercely they followd on their bolde emprise,
Till trumpets sound did warne them all to rest;
Then all with one consent did yeeld the prize
To Triamond and Cambell as the best.
But Triamond to Cambell it relest,
And Cambell it to Triamond transferd,
Each labouring t' advance the others gest,
And make his praise before his owne preferd:
So that the doome was to another day differrd.

XXXVII

The last day came, when all those knightes
again
Assembled were their deedes of armes to shew.
Full many deedes that day were shewed plaine:
But Satyrane, bove all the other crew,
His wondrous worth declared in all mens view,
For from the first he to the last endured:
And though some while Fortune from him
withdrew,
Yet evermore his honour he recured, [sured.
And with unwearied powre his party still as-

XXXVIII

Ne was there Knight that ever thought of
ames, [known;
But that his utmost prowesse there made
That, by their many wounds and carelesse
harmes, [strowen,
By shivered speares, and swords all under
By scattered shields, was easie to be shewen.
There might ye see loose steeds at random
ronne,
Whose lucklesse riders late were overthrowen,
And squiers make hast to helpe their Lords
fordonne, [wonne:
But still the Knights of Maidenhead the better

XXXIX

Till that there entered on the other side
A stranger knight, from whence no man could
tell,
In quent disguise, full hard to be descride:
For all his armour was like salvage weed
With woody mosse bedight, and all his steed
With caken leaves atrapt, that seemed fit
For salvage wight; and thereto well agreed
His word, which on his ragged shield was writ,
Salvageus sine finesse, shewing secret wit.

XL

He, at his first incomming, charg'd his spere
At him that first appeared in his sight:
That was to weete the stout Sir Sangliere,
Who well was knowne to be a valiant Knight,
Approved oft in many a perous fight,
Him at the first encounter downe he smote,
And overbore beyond his crouper quight;
And after him another Knight, that hote
Sir Brianor, so sore that none him life behote.

XLI

Then, ere his hand he reard, he overthrew
Seven Knights, one after other as they came:
And, when his speare was brust, his sword he
drew,
The instrument of wrath, and with the same
Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game,
Hewing and slashing shields and helmets
bright,
And beating downe what ever nigh him came,
That every one gan shun his dreadfull sight,
No lesse then death it selfe, in dangerous af-
fright.

XLII

Much wondred all men what or whence he
came,
That did amongst the troupes so tyrannize,
And each of other gan inquire his name.
But when they could not leave it by no wize,
Most answerable to his wyld disguise
It seemed him to terme the Salvage Knight;
But ceres his right name was otherwise,
Though knowne to few, that Arthegall he hight,
The doughtiest knight that liv'd that day, and
most of might.

XLIII

Thus was Sir Satyrane with all his band
By his sole manhood and achievement stout
Dismay'd, that none of them in field durst stand,
But beaten were and chased all about.
So he continued all that day throughout,
Till evening that the Sunne gan downward
bend.
Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout
A stranger knight, that did his glorie shend:
So nought may be esteemed happie till the end.

XLIV

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull
speare
At Artegall, in midst of his pryde,
And therewith smote him on his Umbriere
So sore, that tomling backe he downe did
Over his horses taile above a stryde; [slyde
Whence litle lust he had to rise againe:
Which Cambell seeing much the same envye,

And ran at him with all his might and maine;
But shortly was likewise seene lying on the
plaine.

XLV

Whereat full inly wroth was Triamond,
And cast t' avenge the shame doen to his
freend:

But by his friend himselfe eke soone he fond
In no lesse neede of helpe then him he weend.
All which when Blandamour from end to end
Beheld, he woxe therewith displeased sore,
And thought in mind it shortly to amend:
His speare he feutred, and at him it bore,
But with no better fortune then the rest afore.

XLVI

Full many others at him likewise ran, •
But all of them likewise dismounted were;
No certes wonder, for no powre of man
Could bide the force of that enchanted speare,
The which this famous Britomart did beare;
With which she wondrous deeds of arms
atchieved,
And overthrew what ever came her neare,
That all those stranger knights full sore
agrieved, [lieved.
And that late weaker band of chalengers re-

• XLVII

Like as in sommers day, when raging heat
Doth burne the earth and boyled rivers drie,
That all brute beasts, forst to refraine fro meat,
Doe hunt for shade, where shrowded they may
lie,
And, missing it, faine from themselves to fle;
All travellers tormented are with paine:
A watry cloud doth overcast the skie,
And poureth forth a sudden shoure of raine,
That all the wretched world recomforteth
againe.

XLVIII

So did the warlike Britomart restore
The prize to knights of Maydenhead that day,
Which else was like to have bene lost, and
bore
The prayse of prowesse from them all away.
Then shrilling trumpets loudly gan to bray,
And bad them leave their labours and long
toyle
To joyous feast and other gentle play,
Where beauties prize shold win that pretious
spoyle:
Where I with sound of trompe will also rest
a while.

CANTO V.

The Ladies for the girdle strive
Of famous Florimell:
Sendamour, comming to Cares house,
Doth sleepe from him expell.

I

It hath bene through all ages ever seene,
That with the praise of armes and chevalrie
The prize of beautie still hath joyned bene;
And that for reasons speciall privitie,
For either doth on other much relie.
For he, me seemes, most fit the faire to serve,
That can her best defend from villenie;
And she most fit his service doth deserve,
That fairest is, and from her faith will never
swerve.

II

So fitly now here commeth next in place,
After the proofe of prowesse ended well,
The controverse of beauties soveraine grace;
In which, to her that doth the most excell,
Shall fall the girdle of faire Florimell:
That many wish to win for glorie vaine,
And not for vertuous use, which some doe tell

That glorious belt did in it selfe containe,
Which Ladies ought to love, and seeke for to
obtaine.

III

That girdle gave the vertue of chast love,
And wivhood true, to all that did it beare;
But whosoever contrarie doth prove,
Might not the same about her middle weare,
But it would loose, or else asunder teare.
Whilome it was (as Faeries wont report)
Dame Venus girdle, by her steemed deare
What time she usd to live in wively sort,
But layd aside when so she usd her looser sport.

IV

Her husband Vulcan whylome for her sake,
When first he loved her with heart entire,
This pretious ornament, they say, did make,
And wrought in Lemno with unquenched fire:

And afterwards did for her loves first hire
Give it to her, for ever to remaine,
Therewith to bind lascivious desire,
And loose affections straightly to restraine;
Which vertue it for ever after did retain.

V

The same one day, when she her selfe disposd
To visite her beloved Paramoure,
The God of warre, she from her middle loosd,
And left behind her in her secret bowre
On Acidalian mount, where many an howre
She with the pleasant Graces wont to play.
There Florimell, in her first ages flowre,
Was fostered by those Graces, (as they say)
And brought with her from thence that goodly
belt away.

VI

That goodly belt was Cestus hight by name,
And as her life by her esteemed deare,
No wonder then, if that to winne the same
So many Ladies sought, as shall appeare;
For perlesse she was thought that did it
beare.

And now by this their feast all being ended,
The judges, which thereto selected were,
Into the Martian field adowne descended
To deeme this doubtful case, for which they
all contended.

VII

But first was question made, which of those
Knights

That lately turneyd had the wager wonne:
There was it judged, by those worthie wights,
That Satyrane the first day best had donne:
For he last ended, having first begonne.
The second was to Triamond behight,
For that he sav'd the victour from fordonne:
For Cambell victour was in all mens sight,
Till by mishap he in his foemens hand did
light.

VIII

The third dayes prize unto that straunger
Knight,

Whom all men term'd Knight of the Hebeue
To Britomart was given by good right;
For that with puissant stroke she downe did
beare

The Salvage Knight that victour was whileare.
And all the rest which had the best afore,
And to the last unconquer'd did appeare;
For last is deemed best. To her therefore
The fayrest Ladie was adjudgd for Paramore.

IX

But therat greatly grudged Arthegall,
And much repynd, that both of victors meede

And eke of honour she did him forestall.
Yet mote he not withstand what was decreed,
But inly thought of that despightfull deede
Fit time t' awaite avenged for to bee.
This being ended thus, and all agreed,
Then next ensaw'd the Paragon to see
Of beauties praise, and yelded the fayrest her
due fee.

X

Then first Cambello brought into their view
His faire Cambina, covered with a veale;
Which, being once withdrawne, most perfect
hew

And passing beutie did oftsoones reveale,
That able was weake harts away to steale.
Next did Sir Triamond unto their sight
The face of his deare Canacee unheale;
Whose beauties beame oftsoones did shine so
bright,

That daz'd the eyes of all as with exceeding
light.

XI

And after her did Paridell produce
His false Duessa, that she might be seene;
Who with her forged beutie did seduce
The hearts of some that fairest her did weene,
As diverse wits affected divers beene.
Then did Sir Ferramont unto them shew
His Lucida, that was full faire and sheene:
And after these an hundred Ladies moe
Appear'd in place, the which each other did
outgoe.

XII

All which who so dare thinke for to enchace,
Him needeth sure a golden pen, I weene,
To tell the feature of each goodly face:
For, since the day that they created beene,
So many heavenly faces were not seene
Assembled in one place: ne he that thought
For Chian folke to pourtraict beauties Queene,
By view of all the fairest to him brought,
So many faire did see as here he might have
sought

XIII

At last, the most redoubted Britonesse
Her lovely Amoret did open shew;
Whose face, discovered, plainly did expresse
The heavenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew.
Well weened all, which her that time did vew,
That she should surely beare the bell away;
Till Blandamour, who thought he had the trew
And very Florimell, did her display,
The sight of whom once seene did all the rest
dismay.

XIV

For all afore that seemed fayre and bright,
Now base and contemptible did appeare,

Compar'd to her that shone as Phœbes light
 Amongst the lesser starres in evening cleare
 All that her saw with wonder ravish'd weare,
 And weend no mortall creatur she should bee,
 But some celestiall shape that flesh did beare:
 Yet all were glad there Florimell to see,
 Yet thought that Florimell was not so faire as
 shee.

XV

As guilefull Goldsmith that by secret skill
 With golden foyle doth finely over-sprede
 Some baser metall, which commend he will
 Unto the vulgar for good gold insted,
 He much more goodly glosse thereon doth shed
 To hide his falshood, then if it were trew:
 So hard this Idole was to be ared,
 That Florimell her selfe in all mens vew
 She seem'd to passe: so forged things do fairest
 shew.

XVI

Then was that golden belt by doome of all
 Graunted to her, as to the fayrest Dame.
 Which being brought, about her middle small
 They thought to gird, as best it her became,
 But by no means they could it thereto frame;
 For, ever as they fastned it, it loos'd
 And fell away, as feeling secret blame.
 Full oft about her wast she it enclow'd,
 And it as oft was from about her wast disclos'd:

XVII

That all men wondrous at the uncouth sight.
 And each one thought as to their fancies came,
 But she her selfe did thinke it doen for spight,
 And touch'd was with secret wrath and shame
 Therewith, as thing devis'd her to defame.
 Then many other Ladies likewise tride
 About their tender loynes to knit the same;
 But it would not on none of them abide,
 But when they thought it fast, eftswoones it was
 untide.

XVIII

Which when that scornfull Squire of Dames
 did vew,
 He lowdly gan to laugh, and thus to jest;
 'Alas! for pittie that so faire a crew,
 As like can not be seene from East to West,
 Cannot find one this girdle to invest.
 Fie on the man that did it first invent
 To shame us all with this *Ungirt umblest!*
 Let never Ladie to his love assent,
 That hath this day so many so unmanly
 shent.

XIX

Thereat all Knights gan laugh, and Ladies
 lowre:
 Till that at last the gentle Amoret

Likewise assayd to prove that girdles powre;
 And, having it about her middle set,
 Did find it fit withouten breach or let.
 Whereat the rest gan greatly to envie,
 But Florimell exceedingly did fret,
 And snatching from her hand halfe angrily
 The belt againe, about her body gan it tie,

XX

Yet nathemore would it her bodie fit;
 Yet nathelasse to her, as her dew right,
 It yielded was by them that judg'd it:
 And she her selfe adjudg'd to the Knight
 That bore the Hebene speare, as wonne in
 fight.
 But Britomart would not thereto assent,
 Ne her own Amoret forgoe so light [derment
 For that strange Dame, whose beauties won-
 She lease esteem'd then th' others vertuous
 government.

XXI

Whom when the rest did see her to refuse,
 They were full glad, in hope themselves to get
 her:
 Yet at her choice they all did greatly muse,
 But, after that, the judges did arret her
 Unto the second best that lov'd her better;
 That was the Salvage Knight: but he was
 gone,
 In great displeasure that he could not get her.
 Then was she judg'd Triamond his one;
 But Triamond lov'd Canacee, and other none.

XXII

Tho unto Satyran she was adjudg'd,
 Who was right glad to gaine so goodly meed:
 But Blandamour thereat full greatly grudg'd,
 And litle prays'd his labours evill speed,
 That for to winne the saddle lost the steed.
 Ne lesse thereat did Paridell complaine,
 And thought t'appelle from that which was
 decreed

To single combat with Sir Satyrane:
 Thereto chun Atë stird, new discord to main-
 taine.

XXIII

And eke, with these, full many other
 Knights
 She through her wicked working did incense
 Her to demaund and chalenge as their rights,
 Deserv'd for their perils recompense. [tense,
 Amongst the rest, with boastfull vaine pre-
 Stept Braggadochio forth, and as his thrall
 Her claym'd, by him in battell wonne long
 sens:

Whereto her selfe he did to witnesse call;
 Who, being askt, accordingly confessed all.

XXIV

Thereat exceeding wroth was Satyran;
 And wroth with Satyran was Blandamour;
 And wroth with Blandamour was Erivan;
 And at them both Sir Paridell did loure.
 So all together stird up strifull stoure,
 And readie were new battell to darraigne.
 Each one profest to be her paramoure, [taine;
 And vow'd with speare and shield it to main-
 Ne Judges powre, ne reasons rule, mote them
 restraîne.

XXV

Which troublous stirre when Satyrane aviz'd,
 He gan to cast how to appease the same,
 And to accord them all this meanes devis'd:
 First in the midst to set that fayrest Dame,
 To whom each one his challenge should dis-
 clame,
 And he himselfe his right would eke releasse:
 Then, looke to whom she voluntarie came,
 He should without disturbance her possesse:
 Sweete is the love that comes alone with
 willingnesse.

XXVI

They all agreed: and then that snowy Mayd
 Was in the midstest plast among them all;
 All on her gazing wisht, and vowd, and
 prayd,
 And to the Queene of beautie close did call,
 That she unto their portion might befall.
 Then, when she long had lookt upon each one,
 As though she wished to have pleas'd them all,
 At last to Braggadochio selfe alone
 She came of her accord, in spight of all his
 fone.

XXVII

Which when they all beheld they chafte, and
 rag'd,
 And woxe nigh mad for very harts despight,
 That from revenge their willes they scarce
 asswag'd: [might;
 Some thought from him her to have reft by
 Some proffer made with him for her to fight.
 But he nought car'd for all that they could
 say,
 For he their words as wind esteemed light.
 Yet not fit place he thought it there to stay,
 But secretly from thence that night her bore
 away.

XXVIII

They which remaynd, so soone as they per-
 ceiv'd
 That she was gone, departed thence with speed,
 And follow'd them, in mind her to have
 reav'd
 From wight unworthie of so noble meed.

In which poursuit how each one did succede,
 Shall else be told in order, as it fell.
 But now of Britomart it here doth neede
 The hard adventures and strange haps to tell,
 Since with the rest she went not after Flori-
 mell.

XXIX

For soone as she them saw to discord set,
 Her list no longer in that place abide;
 But, taking with her lovely Amoret,
 Upon her first adventure forth did ride,
 To seeke her lov'd, making blind love her
 guide.
 Unluckie Mayd, to seeke her enemie!
 Unluckie Mayd, to seeke him farre and wide,
 Whom, when he was unto her selfe most nie,
 She through his late disguizement could him
 not descrie!

XXX

So much the more her grieve, the more her
 toyle.
 Yet neither toyle nor grieve she once did spare,
 In seeking him that should her paine assyle;
 Where to great comfort in her sad misfarc
 Was Amoret, companion of her care:
 Who likewise songth her lover long miswent,
 The gentle Scudamour, whose heart whileare
 That stryfull hag with gealous discontent
 Had filld, that he to fell reveng was fully bent:

XXXI

Bent to revenge on blamelesse Britomart
 The crime which curs'd Atë kindled earst,
 The which like thornes did prick his gealous
 hart,
 And through his soule like poysoned arrow perst,
 That by no reason it might be reverst,
 For ought that Glaucé could or doe or say.
 For, aye the more that she the same reberst,
 The more it gauld and griev'd him night and
 day, [defray.
 That nought but dire revenge his anger mote

XXXII

So as they travelled, the drouping night,
 Covered with cloudie storme and bitter showre,
 That dreadfull seem'd to every living wight,
 Upon them fell, before her timely howre;
 That forced them to seeke some covert bowre,
 Where they might hite their heads in quiet
 rest, [stowre,
 And shrowd their persons from that stormie
 Not farre away, not meet for any guest,
 They spide a little cottage, like some poore
 mans nest.

XXXIII

Under a steepe hilles side it placed was,
There where the mouldred earth had cav'd the
banke;
And fast beside a little brooke did pas
Of muddie water, that like puddle stanke,
By which few crooked sallowes grew in ranke:
Whereto approaching nigh they heard the
sound
Of many yron hammers beating ranke,
And answering their wearie turnes around,
That seemed some blacksmith dwelt in that
desert ground.

XXXIV

There entring in, they found the goodman
selfe
Full busily unto his worke ybent;
Who was to weet a wretched wearish elfe,
With hollow eyes and rawbone cheekes for-
spent,
As if he had in prison long bene pent:
Full blacke and griesly did his face appeare,
Besmeard with smoke that nigh his eye-sight
blent;
With rugged beard, and hoarie shagged heare,
The which he never wond to combe, or duncely
sheare.

XXXV

Rude was his garment, and to rag, all rent,
Ne better had he, ne for better cared:
With blistred hands emongst the cinders
brent,
And fingers filthie with long nayles unpared,
Right fit to rend the food on which he fared
His name was Care; a blacksmith by his trade,
That neither day nor night from working
spared,
But to small purpose yron wedges made;
Those be unquiet thoughts that carefull minds
invade.

XXXVI

In which his worke he had sixe servants
prest,
About the Andvile standing evermore
With huge great hammers, that did never
rest
From heaping stroakes which thereon soused
All sixe strong groomes, but one then other
more;
For by degrees they all were disagreed,
So likewise did the hammers which they
bore.
Like belles in greatnesse orderly succed,
That he which was the last the first did farre
exceede.

XXXVII

He like a monstrous Gyant seem'd in sight,
Farre passing Bronteus or Pyracmon great,
The which in Lipari doe day and night
Frame thunderbolts for Joves avengfull
threate.
So dreadfully he did the andvile beat,
That seem'd to dust he shortly would it drive:
So huge his hammer, and so fierce his heat,
That seem'd a rocke of Diamoud it could rive
And rend asunder quite, if he thereto list
strive.

XXXVIII

Sir Scudamour there entring much admired
The manner of their worke and wearie paine;
And, having long beheld, at last enquired
The cause and end thereof, but all in vaine;
For they for nought would from their worke
refraine,
Ne let his speeches come unto their eare.
And eke the breathfull bellows blew amaine,
Like to the Northern winde, that none could
heare: [bellows weare.
Those Pellsifensse did move; and Sighes the

XXXIX

Which when that warrior saw, he said no
more,
But in his armour layd him down to rest:
To rest he layd him downe upon the flore,
(Whylome for ventrous Knights the bedding
best)
And thought his wearie limbs to have redrest.
And that old aged Dame, his faithfull Squire,
Her feeble joynts layd eke adowne to rest,
That needed much her weake age to desire,
After so long a travell which them both did
tire

XL

There lay Sir Scudamour long while expecting
When gentle sleepe his heavey eyes would
close;
Oft changing sides, and oft new place electing,
Where better seem'd he mote himselfe repose;
And oft in wrath he thence againe uprose,
And oft in wrath he layd him downe againe.
But wheresoever he did himselfe dispose,
He by no means could wished ease obtaine:
So every place seem'd painefull, and ech
changing vaine.

XLI

And evermore, when he to sleepe did think,
The hammers sound his senses did molest,
And evermore, when he began to winke,
The bellows noyse disturb'd his quiet rest,

Ne suffred sleepe to settle in his brest.
And all the night the dogs did barke and howle

About the house, at sent of stranger guest:
And now the crowing Cocke, and now the Owle
Lowde shriking, him afflicted to the very sowle.

XLIH

And, if by fortune any litle nap
Upon his heaue eye-lids chaunst to fall,
Eftsoones one of those velleins him did rap
Upon his headpeece with his yron mall;
That he was soone awaked therewithall,
And lightly started up as one affrayd,
Or as if one him suddenly did call:
So oftentimes he out of sleepe abrayd,
And then lay musing long on that him illapayd.

XLIII

So long he muzed, and so long he lay,
That at the last his wearie sprite, opprest
With fleshly weaknesse, which no creature may
Long tyme resist, gave place to kindly rest,
That all his senses did full soone arrest:
Yet in his soundest sleepe his dayly leare
His ydle braine gan busily molest,
And made him dreame those two disloyall were:
The things, that day most minds, at night doe
most appeare.

XLIV

With that the wicked carle, the maister Smith,
A paire of red-whot yron tongs did take

Out of the burning cinders, and therewith
Under his side him nipt; that, forst to wake,
He felt his hart for very paine to quake,
And started up avenged for to be
On him the which his quiet slomber brake:
Yet, looking round about him, none could see,
Yet did the smart remaine, though he himselfe
did fle.

XLV

In such disquiet and hart-fretting payne
He all that night, that too long night, did passe
And now the day out of the Ocean mayne
Began to peepe aboue this earthly masse,
With pearly dew sprinkling the morning grasse:
Then up he rose, like heauey lumpe of lead,
That in his face, as in a looking glasse,
The signes of anguish one mote plainly read,
And ghesse the man to be dismayd with
gealous dread.

XLVI

Unto his lofty steede he clombe anone,
And forth upon his former voiage fared,
And with him eke that aged Squire attone;
Who, whatsoever perill was prepared,
Both equall paines and equall perill shared;
The end whereof and dangerous event
Shall for another canticle be spared:
But here my wearie teeme, nigh over spent,
Shall breath it selfe awhile after so long
a went.

CANTO VI.

Both Scudamour and Arthegall
Doe fight with Britomart:
He sees her face; doth fall in love,
And soone from her depart.

I

WHAT equall torment to the griefe of mind
And pyning anguish hid in gentle hart,
That only feeds it selfe with thoughts unkind,
And nourisheth her owne consuming smart?
What medicine can any Leaches art
Yeele such a sore, that doth her grievance hide,
And will to none her maladie impart?
Such was the wound that Scudamour did gride,
For which Dan Phebus selfe cannot a salve provide.

II

Who having left that restlesse house of Care,
The next day, as he on his way did ride,
Full of melancholie and sad misfared
Through misconceipt, all unawares espide

An armed Knight under a Forrest side
Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede;
Who, soone as them approaching he descrie,
Gan towards them to pricke with eger speede,
That seem'd he was full bent to some mischievous deede.

III

Which Scudamour perceiving forth issewed
To have rencountred him in equall race;
But soone as th' other nigh approaching vewed
The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase
And voide his course: at which so suddain case
He wondred much. But th' other thus can say:
'Ah, gentle Scudamour! unto your grace
I me submit, and you of pardon pray, [day.'
That almost had against you trespassed this

IV

Whereto thus Scudamour: 'Small harme it were

For any knight upon a ventrous knight
Without displeasance for to prove his spere.
But reade you, Sir, sith ye my name have light,
What is your owne, that I mote you requite?'
'Certes,' (sayd he) 'ye mote as now excuse
Me from discovering you my name aright,
For time yet serves that I the same refuse;
But call ye me the Salvage Knight, as others
use.'

V

'Then this, Sir Salvage Knight,' (quoth he)
'arede:

(Or doe you here within this Forrest wonne,
That seemeth well to answer to your weede,
Or have ye it for some occasion donne?
That rather seemes, sith knowne armes ye
shonne.'

'This other day' (sayd he) 'a stranger knight
Shame and dishonour hath unto me donne,
On whom I waite to wreake that foule despight,
When ever he this way shall passe by day or
night.'

VI

'Shame be his meede,' (quoth he) 'that
meaneth shame!

But what is he by whom ye shamed were?'
'A stranger knight,' sayd he, 'unknowne by
name,

But knowne by fame, and by an Hebene speare,
With which he all that met him downe did
beare.

He, in an open Turney lately held,
From me the honour of that game did reare;
And having me, all wearie earst, downe feld,
The fayrest Ladie reft, and ever since withheld.'

VII

When Scudamour heard mention of that
speare,

He wist right well that it was Britomart,
The which from him his fairest love did beare.
Tho gan he swell in every inner part

For fell despight, and gnaw his gellous hart,
That thus he sharply sayd: 'Now, by my
head,

Yet is not this the first unknighly part,
Which that same knight, whom by his lance
I read,

Hath doen to noble knights, that many makes

VIII

'For lately he my love hath fro me reft,
And eke defiled with foule villanie

The sacred pledge which in his faith was left,
In shame of knighthood and fidelitie;
The which ere long full deare he shall abie:
And if to that avenge by you decreed
This hand may helpe, or succour ought supplie,
It shall not fayle when so ye shall it need.'
So both to wreake their wrathes on Britomart
agreed.

IX

Whiles thus they communed, lo! farre away
A Knight soft ryding towards them they spyde,
Attyr'd in torraune armes and straunge array:
Whom, when they nigh approacht, they plaine
descryde

To be the same for whom they did abyde.
Sayd they: Sir Scudamour: 'Sir Salvage
knight,

Let me thus crave, sith first I was defyde.
That first I may that wrong to him requite;
And, if I hap to fayle, you shall recure my
right.'

X

Which bing yeelded, he his threatfull speare
Gan fiewter, and against her fiercely ran.

Who soone as she him saw approachng neare
With so fell rage, her selfe she lightly gan
To dight, to welcome him well as she can
But entertaind him in so rude a wise,
That to the ground she smote both horse and
man;

Whence neither greatly harmed to arise,
But on their common harmes together did
devise.

XI

But Artegall, beholding his mischaunce,
New matter added to his former fire;
And, eft adventing his steele-headed lance,
Against her rode, full of despitous ire,
That nought but spoyle and vengeance did
require:

But to himselfe his felonous intent
Returning disappointed his desire,
While unawares his saddle he forwent,
And found himselfe on ground in great amaze-
ment.

XII

Lightly he started up out of that stound,
And snatching forth his direfull deadly blade
Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound
Thrust to an Hynd within some covert glade,
Whom without perill he cannot invade.
With such fell greedines he her assayed,
That though she mounted were, yet he her
made

To give him ground, (so much his force
And shun his mightie strokes, gainst which no
arnes avayled,

XIII

So, as they coursed here and there, it chaunst
That, in her wheeling round, behind her crest
So sorely he her strooke, that thence it glaunst
Adowne her backe, the which it fairely blest
From foule mischance; ne did it ever rest,
Till on her horses hinder parts it fell;
Where byting deepe so deadly it imprest,
That quite it chynd his backe behind the sell,
And to alight on foote her algates did compell:

XIV

Like as the lightning brond from riven skie,
Throwne out by angry Iove in his vengeance,
With dreadfull force fallies on some steeple lue;
Which battring downe, it on the church doth
glance,
And teares it all with terrible mischance.
Yet she no whit dismayd her steed forsooke,
And, casting from her that enchanted lance,
Unto her sword and shield her soone betooke;
And therewithall at him right furiously she
strooke.

XV

So furiously she strooke in her first heat.
Whiles with long fight on foot he breathlesse
was,
That she him forced backward to retreat,
And yeeld unto her weapon way to pas:
Whose raging rigour neither steele nor bras
Could stay, but to the tender flesh it went,
And pour'd the purple blood forth on the
gras;
That all his mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent,
Shew'd all his bodie bare unto the cruell dent.

XVI

At length, when as he saw her hastie heat
Abate, and panting breath begin to fayle,
He, through long sufferance growing now
more great,
Rose in his strength, and gan her fresh assayle,
Heaping huge strokes as thicke as showre of
hayle,
And lashing dreadfully at every part,
As if he thought her soule to disentrave.
Ah, cruell hand! and thrise more cruell hart,
That workst such wrecks on her to whom thou
dearest art!

XVII

What yron courage ever could endure
To worke such outrage on so faire a creature;
And in his madnesse thinke with hands im-
pure
To spoyle so goodly workmanship of nature,

The maker selfe resembling in her feature!
Certes some hellish furie or some feend
This mischief framd for their first loves de-
feature,
To bath their hands in blood of dearest freend,
Thereby to make their loves beginning their
lives end.

XVIII

Thus long they trac'd and traverst to and fro,
Sometimes pursewing, and sometimes pursuwed,
Still as advantage they espyde thereto:
But toward th' end Sir Arthegall renewed
His strength still more, but she still more
dewe'd.
At last his lucklesse hand he heav'd on hie,
Havng his forces all in one agrewed.
And therewith stroke at her so hideouslie,
That seem'd nought but death mote be her
destinie.

XIX

The wicked stroke upon her helmet chaunst,
And with the force, whiche in it selfe it bore,
Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth
glaunst
Adowne in vaine, ne harm'd her any more.
With that her angels face, unseene afore,
Like to the ruddie morne appeard in sight,
Deawed with silver drops through sweating
sore,
But somewhat redder then bescem'd aright,
Through toylesome heate and labour of her
weary fight.

XX

And round about the same her yellow heare,
Havng through stirring lood their wouted
band,
Like to a golden border did appeare,
Framed in goldsmithes forge with cunning
hand:
Yet goldsmithes cunning could not understand
To frame such subtil wire, so shinie cleare;
For it did glister like the golden sand,
The which Pactolus with his waters here
Throwes forth upon the rivage round about him
here.

XXI

And as his hand he up againe did reare,
Thinking to worke on her his utmost wracke,
His powrelesse arme, benumbd with secret
feare,
From his revengefull purpose shronke abacke,
And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke
Fell downe to ground; as if the steele had
sence,
And felt some ruth or sence his hand did lacke,
Or both of them did thinke obedience
To doe so divine a beauties excellence.

XXII

And he himselfe, long gazing thereupon,
At last fell humbly downe upon his knee,
And of his wonder made religion,
Weening some heavenly goddesse he did see,
Or else unweeting what it else might bee;
And pardon her besought his errour frayle,
That had done outrage in so high degree:
Whilest trembling horror did his sense assayle,
And made ech member quake, and manly hart
to quayle.

XXIII

Nathelesse she, full of wrnth for that late
stroke,
All that long while upheld her wrathfull hand,
With fell intent on him to bene ywroke;
And, looking sterne, still over him did stand,
Threatning to strike unlesse he would with-
stand:
And bad him rise, or surely he should die.
But, die or live, for nought he would upstand,
But her of pardon prayd more earnestlie,
Or wreake on him her will for so great injurie.

XXIV

Which when as Scudamour, who now a-
brayd,
Beheld, whereas he stood not farre aside,
He was therewith right wondrously dismayd;
And drawing nigh, when as he plaine de-
cride
That peerlesse paterne of Dame Natures pride
And heavenly image of perfection,
He blest himselfe as one sore terrifide:
And, turning feare to faint devotion,
Did worship her as some celestiall vision.

XXV

But Glaucè, seeing all that chaunced there,
Well weeting how their errour to assoyle,
Full glad of so good end, to them drew nere,
And her salewd with seemely bel-accoyle,
Joyous to see her safe after long toyle.
Then her besought, as she to her was deare,
To grant unto those warriors true a while;
Which yelded, they their bevers up did reare,
And shew'd themselves to her such as indeed
they were.

XXVI

When Britomart with sharpe avizefull eye
Beheld the lovely face of Artégall
Tempred with sternesse and stout majestie,
She gan eftsoones it to her mind to call
To be the same which in her fathers hall
Long since in that enchanted glasse she saw;
Therewith her wrathfull courage gan appall,

And haughtie spirits meekely to adaw,
That her enhanced hand she downe can soft
withdraw.

XXVII

Yet she it forst to have againe upheld,
As fayning choler which was turn'd to cold:
But ever when his visage she beheld,
Her hand fell downe, and would no longer hold
The wrathfull weapon gainst his countenance
bold:

But, when in vaine to fight she oft assayd,
She arm'd her tongue, and thought at him to
scold;

Nathlesse her tongue not to her will obeyd,
But brought forth speeches myld when she
would have missayd.

XXVIII

But Scudamour, now woxen inly glad
That all his zealous feare he false had found,
And how that Ilag his love abused had
With breach of faith and loyaltie unsound,
The which long time his grieved hart did
wound,

Him thus bespake: ' Certes, Sir Artégall,
I joy to see you lout so low on ground,
And now become to live a Ladies thrall,
That whylome in your minde wont to despise
them all.'

XXIX

Soone as she heard the name of Artégall,
Her hart did leape, and all her hart-strings
tremble,

For sudden joy and secret feare withall;
And all her vitall powres, with motion nimble
To succour it, themselves gan there assemble;
That by the swift recourse of flushing blood
Right plaine appeard, though she it would dis-
semble,

And fayned still her former angry mood,
'Thinking to hide the depth by troubling of the
flood.

XXX

When Glaucè thus gan wisely all upknit:
' Ye gentle Knights, whom fortune here hath
To be spectators of this uncouth fit, [brought
Which secret fate hath in this Ladie wrought
Against the course of kind, ne mervaille nought,
Ne thenceforth feare the thing that hethertoo
Hath troubled both your mindes with idle
thought,

Fearing least shee your loves away should woo:
Feared in vaine, sith meanes, ye see, there
wants theretoo.

XXXI

' And you, Sir Artégall, the salvage knight,
Henceforth may not disdaine that womans hand

Hath conquered you anew in second fight :
For whylome they have conquered sea and land,
And heaven it selfe, that nought may them
withstand.

Ne henceforth be rebellious unto love,
That is the crowne of knighthood, and the band
(Of noble minds derived from above, [move.
Which, being knit with vertue, never will re-

XXXII

'And you, faire Ladie knight, my dearest
Dame,

Relent the rigour of your wrathfull will,
Whose fire were better turn'd to other flame ;
And, wiping out remembrance of all ill,
Graunt him your grace ; but so that he fulfill
The penance which ye shall to him impart :
For lovers heaven must passe by sorrowes hell.
Thereat full hily blushed Britomart,
But Artegall close smyling joy'd in secret hart.

XXXIII

Yet durst he not make love so suddenly,
Ne thinke th' affection of her hart to draw
From one to other so quite contrary :
Besides her modest countenance he saw
So goodly grave, and full of princely aw,
That it his ranging faucie did refraine,
And looser thoughts to lawfull bounds with-
draw ; [saine,
Whereby the passion grew more fierce and
Like to a stubborne steede whom strong hand
would restraine.

XXXIV

But Scudamour, whose hart twixt doubtfull
feare

And feeble hope hung all this while suspence,
Desiring of his Amoret to heare
Some gladfull newes and sure intelligence,
Her thus bespake : ' But, Sir, without offence
Mote I request you tydings of my love,
My Amoret, sith you her freed fro thence
Where she, captived long, great woes did prove ;
That where ye left I may her seeke, as doth
behave.'

XXXV

To whom thus Britomart : ' Certes, Sir knight.
What is of her become, or whether left,
I can not unto you aread a right :
For from that time I from enchaunters theft
Her freed, in which ye her all hopelesse left,
I her preserv'd from perill and from feare,
And evermore from villenie her kept :
Ne ever was there wight to me more deare
Then she, ne unto whom I more true love did
beare :

XXXVI

'Till on a day, as through a desert wyld
We travelled, both wearie of the way
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld,
Where fearelesse I to sleepe me downe did lay :
But when as I did out of sleepe abray,
I found her not where I her left whyleare,
But thought she wandred was, or gone astray :
I cal'd her loud, I sought her farre and neare,
But no where could her find, nor tydings of her
heare.'

XXXVII

When Scudamour those heaveie tydings heard,
His hart was thrild with point of deadly feare,
Ne in his face or bloud or life appeard ;
But senselesse stood, like to a nazed steare
That yet of mortall stroke the stound doth
beare, [mayd
Till Glaucé thus : ' Faire Sir, be nought dis-
With needlesse dread, till certaintie ye heare ;
For yet she may be safe though somewhat
strayd : [affrayd.
Its best to hope the best, though of the worst

XXXVIII

Nathlesse he hardy of her chearefull speech
Did comfort take, or in his troubled sight
Shew'd change of better cheare : so sore a
breach
That sudden newes had made into his spright,
Till Britomart him fairly thus behight :
' Great cause of sorrow certes, Sir, ye have ;
But comfort take ; for, by this heavens light,
I vow you dead or living not to leave, [reave,
Till I her find, and wreake on him that did her

XXXIX

Therewith he rested, and well pleased was :
So, peace being confirm'd amongst them all,
They tooke their steeds, and forward thence
did pas
Unto some resting place, which mote befall,
All being guided by Sir Artegall :
Where goodly solace was unto them made,
And dayly feasting both in bowre and hall,
Untill that they their wounds well healed had,
And wearie limmes recur'd after late usage bad.

XL

In all which time Sir Artegall made way
Unto the love of noble Britomart,
And with meeke service and much suit did lay
Continuall siege unto her gentle hart : [dart,
Which, being whylome launcht with lovely
More eath was new impression to receive ;
How ever she her paynd with womanish art
To hide her wound, that none might it perceive :
Vaine is the art that seekes it selfe for to deceive.

XLI

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought
her,
With faire entreatie and sweet blandishment,
That at the length unto a bay he brought her,
So as she to his speeches was content
To lend an eare, and softly to relent. [pour'd,
At last, through many vowes which forth he
And many othes, she yeelded her consent
To be his love, and take him for her Lord,
Till they with marriage meet might finish that
accord.

XLII

Tho, when they had long time there taken rest,
Sir Artegall, who all this while was bound
Upon an hard adventure yet in quest,
Fit time for him thence to depart it found,
To follow that which he did long propound,
And unto her his congee came to take;
But her therewith full sore displeas'd he found,
And loth to leave her late betrothed make,
Her dearest love full loth so shortly to forsake.

XLIII

Yet he with strong perswasions her asswaged,
And wonne her will to suffer him depart;
For which his faith with her he fast engaged,
And thousand vowes from bottome of his hart,
That, all so soone as he by wit or art
Could that atchieve whereto he did aspire,
He unto her would speedily revert:
No longer space thereto he did desire, [expire.
But till the horned moone three courses did

XLIV

With which she for the present was appeased,
And yeelded leave, how ever malcontent
She inly were and in her mind displeased.
So, early in the morrow next, he went

Forth on his way to which he was ybent;
Ne wight him to attend, or way to guide,
As whylome was the custome ancient [ride,
Mongst Knights when on adventures they did
Save that she algaates him a while accompanie.

XLV

And by the way she sundry purpose found
Of this or that, the time for to delay,
And of the perils whereto he was bound,
The feare whereof seem'd much her to affray;
But all she did was but to weare out day.
Full oftentimes she leave of him did take;
And oft againe devis'd some what to say,
Which she forgot, whereby excuse to make;
So loth she was his companie for to forsake.

XLVI

At last, when all her speeches she had spent,
And new occasion fayld her more to find,
She left him to his fortunes government,
And backe returned with right heavie mind
To Scudamour, whom she had left behind:
With whom she went to seeke faire Amoret,
Her second care, though in another kind:
For vertues onely sake, which doth beget
True love and faithfull friendship, she by her
did set.

XLVII

Backe to that desert forrest they rettyred,
Where sorie Britomart had lost her late;
There they her sought, and every where in-
quired
Where they might tydings get of her estate;
Yet found they none. But by what haplesse fate
Or hard misfortune she was thence conveyd,
And stolne away from her beloved mate,
Were long to tell; therefore, I here will stay
Untill another tyde that I it finish may.

CANTO VII.

Amoret rapt by greedie lust
Belphebe saves from dread:
The Squire her loves; and, being blam'd,
His dayes in dole doth lead

GREAT God of love, that with thy cruell darts
Doeest conquer greatest conquerors on ground,
And setst thy kingdome in the captive harts
Of Kings and Keasars to thy service bound;
What glorie, or what guerdon hast thou found
In feeble Ladies tyranning so sore,
And adding anguish to the bitter wound

With which their lives thou lanchest long
afore, | more?
By heaping stormes of trouble on them daily

II

So whylome didst thou to faire Florimell,
And so and so to noble Britomart:
So doest thou now to her of whom I tell,
The lovely Amoret, whose gentle hart

Thou martyrest with sorow and with smart,
In salvage Forrests and in deserts wide
With Beares and Tygers taking heaue part,
Withouten comfort and withouten guide,
That pittie is to heare the perils which she tride.

III

So soone as she with that brave Britonesse
Had left that Turneyment for beauties prise,
They travel'd long; that now for wearinesse,
Both of the way and warlike exercise,
Both through a forest ryding did devise
T' alight, and rest their wearie limbs awhile.
There heaue sleepe the eye-lids did surprise
Of Britomart, after long tedious toyle,
That did her passed paines in quiet rest assoyle.

IV

The whiles faire Amoret, of nought affeard,
Walkt through the wood, for pleasure or for
need;
When suddenly behind her backe she heard
One rushing forth out of the thickest weed,
That, ere she backe could turne to taken heed,
Had unawares her snatched up from ground:
Feebly she shriekt, but so feebly indeed
That Britomart heard not the shrilling sound.
There where through weary travel she lay
sleeping sound.

V

It was to weete a wilde and salvage man;
Yet was no man, but onely like in shape,
And eke in stature higher by a span;
All overgrowne with haire, that could awhape
An hardy hart: and his wide mouth did gape
With huge great teeth, like to a tusked Bore:
For he liv'd all on ravin and on rape
Of men and beasts; and fed on fleshly gore,
The signe whereof yet stain'd his bloody lips
afore.

VI

His neather lip was not like man nor beast,
But like a wide deepe poke, downe hanging low,
In which he wont the reliques of his feast
And cruell spoyle, which he had spard, to strow:
And over it his huge great nose did grow,
Full dreadfully empurpled all with blood;
And downe both sides two wide long eares
did glow, [stood,
And raught downe to his waste when up he
More great then th' eares of Elephants by
Indus flood.

VII

His wast was with a wreath of yvie greene
Engirt about, ne other garment wore,
For all his haire was like a garment scene;
And in his hand a tall young oake he bore,

Whose knottie snags were sharpened all afore,
And beath'd in fire for Steele to be in steel.
But whence he was, or of what wombe ybore,
Of beasts, or of the earth, I have not rell,
But certes was with milke of Wolves and
Tygres fed.

VIII

This ugly creature in his armes her snatcht,
And through the Forrest bore her quite away,
With briers and bushes all to-rent and scrantcht;
Ne care he had, ne pittie of the pray, [day.
Which many a knight had sought so many a
He stayed not, but in his armes her bearing
Ran, till he came to th' end of all his way,
Unto his cave farre from all peoples hearing,
And there he threw her in, nought feeling, ne
nought fearing.

IX

For she, deare Ladie, all the way was dead,
Whilest he in armes her bore. But, when she
felt
Her selfe downe soust, she waked out of dread
Streight into grieke, that her deare hart nigh
And eft gan into tender teares to melt. [swelt,
Then, when she lookt about, and nothing found
But darknesse and dread horrour where she
She almost fell againe into a swoond, [dwelt,
Ne wist whether above she were or under
ground.

X

With that she heard some one close by her side
Sighing and sobbing sore, as if the paine
Her tender hart in peeces would divide:
Which she long listning, softly askt againe
What mister wight it was that so did plaine?
To whom thus answer'd was: 'Ah, wretched
wight!
That seekes to know anothers grieke in vaine,
Unweeting of thine owne like haplesse plight:
Selfe to forget to mind another is over-sight.'

XI

'Aye me!' (said she) 'where am I, or with
whom?
Among the living, or among the dead?
What shall of me, unhappy maid, become?
Shall death be th' end, or ought else worse,
mead?'
'Unhappy mayd' (then answer'd she), 'whose
dread

Untride is lesse then when thou shalt it try:
Death is to him, that wretched life doth lead,
Both grace and gaine; but he in hell doth lie,
That lives a loathed life, and wishing cannot
die.

XII

'This dismall day hath thee a caytive made,
And vassall to the vilest wretch alive,
Whose cursed usage and ungodly trade
The heavens abhorre, and into darknesse drive;
For on the spoile of women he doth live,
Whose bodies chaste, when ever in his powre
He may them catch unable to gaine strive,
He with his shamefull lust doth first deflowre,
And afterwarde themselves doth cruelly de-
voure.

XIII

'Now twenty daies, by which the sonnes of
men ^{[sheene.}
Divide their works, have past through heven
Since I was brought into this dolefull den;
During which space these sory eies have seen
Seaven women by him slaine, and eaten elene:
And now no more for him but I alone,
And this old woman, here remaining beene,
Till thou cam'st hither to augment our mone:
And of us three to morrow he will sure eate
one.'

XIV

'Ah, dreadfull tidings which thou doest de-
clare.'
(Quoth she) 'of all that ever hath bene knownen!
Full many great calamities and rare
This feeble brest endured hath, but none
Equall to this, where ever I have gone,
But what are you, whom like unlucky lot
Hath linckt with me in the same chame attone?'
'To tell' (quoth she) 'that what ye see, needs
not; [got!
A wofull wretched maid, of God and man for-

XV

'But what I was it irkes me to reherse;
Daughter unto a Lord of high degree;
That joyd in happy peace, till fates perverse
With guilefull love did secretly agree
To overthrow my state and dignitie.
It was my lot to love a gentle swaine,
Yet was he but a Squire of low degree;
Yet was he meet, unless mine eye did faine,
By any Ladies side for Leman to have laine,

XVI

'But for his meannesse and disparagement,
My Sire, who me too dearly well did love,
Unto my choise by no means would assent,
But often did my folly fowle reprove:
Yet nothing could my fixed mind remove,
But, whether willed or nilled friend or foe,
I me resol'd the utmost end to prove;
And, rather then my love abandon so,
Both sire and friends and all for ever to forgo.

XVII

'Thenceforth I sought by secret meanes to
worke
Time to my will, and from his wrathfull sight
To hide th' intent which in my heart did lurke,
Till I thereto had all things ready dight.
So on a day, unwetting unto wight,
I with that Squire agreede away to flit,
And in a privy place, betwixt us hight,
Within a grove appointed him to meete;
To which I boldly came upon my feeble feete.

XVIII

'But ah! unhappy houre me thither brought,
For in that place where I him thought to find,
There was I found, contrary to my thought,
(Of this accursed Carle of hellish kind,
The shame of men, and plague of womankind:
Who trussing me, as Eagle doth his pray,
Me hether brought with him as swift as wind,
Where yet untouched till this present day,
I rest his wretched thrall, the sad Æmythia.'

XIX

'Ah, sad Æmythia!' (then sayd Amoret)
'Thy ruefull plight I pittie as mine owne.
But lead to me, by what devise or wit
Hast thou in all this time, from him unknowne,
Thine honor sav'd, though into thraldome
throwne?' [man here
'Through helpe' (quoth she) 'of this old wo-
I have so done, as she to me hath showne;
For, ever when he burnt in lustfull fire,
She in my stead supplide his bestiall desire.'

XX

Thus of their evils as they did discourse,
And each did other much bewaile and mone,
Loe! where the villaine selfe, their sorrowes
source,
Came to the cave; and rolling thence the stone,
Which wont to stop the mouth thereof, that
none
Might issue forth, came rudely rushing in,
And, spredding over all the flore alone,
Gau dight him selfe unto his wonted sinne;
Which ended, then his bloudy banquet should
beginne.

XXI

Which when as fearefull Amoret perceived,
She staid not th' utmost end thereof to try.
But, like a ghastly Gelt whose wits are reaved,
Ran forth in hast with hideous outcrye,
For horreur of his shamefull villany:
But after her full lightly he uprose,
And her pursu'd as fast as she did flie:

Full fast she flies, and farre afore him goes,
Ne feesles the thornes and thicketts pricke her
tender toes.

XXII

Nor hedge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor dale she
staies,
But overleapes them all, like Robucke light,
And through the thickest makes her highest
waies;
And evermore, when with regardfull sight
She looking backe espies that griesly wight
Approching nigh, she gins to mend her pace,
And makes her feare a spur to hast her flight:
More swift then Myrrh' or Daphne in her race,
Or any of the Thracian Nymphes in salvage
chase.

XXIII

Long so she fled, and so he follow'd long;
Ne living aide for her on earth appears,
But-if the heavens helpe to redresse her wrong,
Moved with pity of her plenteous teares.
It fortune Belphebe with her peares,
The woody Nymphs, and with that lovely boy,
Was hunting then the Libbards and the Beares
In these wild woods, as was her wonted joy,
To banish sloth that oft doth noble minde
annoy.

XXIV

It so befell, as oft it falls in chace,
That each of them from other sundred were;
And that same gentle Squire arriv'd in place
Where this same cursed caytive did appeare
Pursuing that faire Lady full of feare:
And now he her quite overtaken had;
And now he her away with him did beare
Under his arme, as seeming wondrous glad,
That by his grenning laughter mote farre off
be rad.

XXV

Which drery sight the gentle Squire espying
Doth hast to crosse him by the nearest way,
Led with that wofull Ladies piteous crying,
And him assailes with all the might he may;
Yet will not he the lovely spoile dowite lay,
But with his craggy club in his right hand
Defends him selfe, and saves his gotten pray:
Yet had it bene right harl him to withstand,
But that he was full light and nimble on the
land.

XXVI

Thereto the villaine used craft in fight;
For, ever when the Squire his javelin shooke,
He held the Lady forth before him right,
And with her body, as a buckler, broke
The puissance of his intended stroke:
And if it chaunst, (as needs it must in fight)
Whilest he on him was greedy to be wroke,

That any little blow on her did light,
Then would he laugh aloud, and gather great
delight.

XXVII

Which subtile sleight did him encumber much,
And made him oft, when he would strike,
forebare;
For hardly could he come the carle to touch,
But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare:
Yet he his hand so carefully did beare,
That at the last he did himselfe attaine,
And therein left the pike-head of his speare:
A streame of coleblacke bloud thence gush
amaine, [bestaine,
That all her silken garments did with bloud

XXVIII

With that he threw her rudely on the flore,
And, laying both his hands upon his glave,
With dreadfull strokes let drive at him so sore,
That forst him flie abacke, himselfe to save:
Yet he therewith so felly still did rave,
That scarce the Squire his hand could once up-
reare,
But for advantage ground unto him gave,
Tracing and traversing, now here, now there;
For bootlesse thing it was to think such blowes
to beare.

XXIX

Whilest thus in battell they embusied were,
Belphebe, rauning in that Forrest wide,
The hideous noise of their huge strokes did
heare,
And drew thereto, making her eare her guide:
Whom when that theefe approaching nigh es-
pide
With bow in hand and arrowes ready bent,
He by his former combate would not bide,
But fled away with ghastly dreriment,
Well knowing her to be his deaths sole instru-
ment.

XXX

Whom seeing flie she speedily poursewed
With winged feete as nimble as the winde,
And ever in her bow she ready shewed
The arrow to his deadly marke desynde.
As when Latonaes daughter, cruell kynde,
In vengeance of her mothers great disgrace,
With fell despite her cruell arrowes tynde
Gainst wofull Niobes unhappy race,
That all the gods did mone her miserable case.

XXXI

So well she sped her, and so far she ventred,
That, ere unto his hellish den he raught,
Even as he ready was there to have entred,
She sent an arrow forth with mighty draught,

That in the very dore him overcaught,
And, in his nape arriving, through it thrild
His greedy throte, therewith in two dis-
traught,
That all his vitall spirites thereby spild,
And all his hairy breast with gory bloud was
sild.

XXXII

Whom when on ground she groveling saw to
rowle,
She ran in hast his life to have bereft;
But, ere she could him reach, the sinfull sowle
Having his carrion corse quite sencelesse left
Was fled to hell, surcharg'd with spoile and
theft:

Yet over him she there long gazing stood,
And oft admir'd his monstrous shape, and oft
His mighty limbs, whilst all with filthy blood
The place there overflowne seemd like a so-
daine flood.

XXXIII

Thence forth she past into his dreadfull den,
Where nought but darkesome dreemesse she
found,

Ne creature saw, but hearkned now and then
Some litle whispering, and soft groning sound.
With that she askt, what ghosts there under
ground

Lay hid in horiour of eternall night?
And bad them, if so be they were not bound,
To come and shew themselves before the light.
Now freed from feare and danger of that dis-
mall wight.

XXXIV

Then forth the sad *Emylia* issewed, [feare;
Yet trembling every joynt through former
And after her the Hag, there with her mewed,
A foule and lothsome creature, did appeare,
A leman fit for such a lover deare:
That mo'd Belphebe her no lesse to hate,
Then for to rue the others heavy cheare;
Of whom she gau enquire of her estate,
Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate.

XXXV

Thence she them brought toward the place
where late

She left the gentle Squire with *Amoret*:
There she him found by that new lovely mate,
Who lay the whites in swoone, full sadly set,
From her faire eyes wiping the cleawy wet
Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,
And handling soft the hurts which she did get;
For of that Carle she shortly bruz'd had beene,
Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to
be scene.

XXXVI

Which when she saw with sodaine glauncing
eye,
Her noble heart with sight thereof was fild
With deepe disdain and great indignity,
That in her wratth she thought them both have
thrild
With that selfe arrow which the Carle had kild;
Yet held her wrathfull hand from vengeance
sore:

But drawing nigh, ere he her well beheld,
Is thus the fauth? she said—and said no more,
But turnd her face, and fled away for evermore.

XXXVII

He seeing her depart arose up light,
Right sore grieved at her sharpe reproofe,
And follow'd fast; but, when he came in sight,
He durst not nigh approach, but kept aloofe,
For dread of her displeasures utmost proofe:
And evermore, when he did grace entreat,
And framed speeches fit for his behoofe,
Her mortall arrowes she at him did threat,
And forst him backe with fowle dishonor to
retreat.

XXXVIII

At last, when long he follow'd had in vaine,
Yet found no ease of griefe nor hope of grace,
Unto those woods he turned backe againe,
Full of sad anguish and in heavy case:
And, finding there fit solitary place
For wofull wight, chose out a gloomy glade,
Where hardly eye mote see bright heavens face
For mossy trees, which covered all with shade
And sad melancholy: there he his cabin made.

XXXIX

His wonted warlike weapons all he broke
And threw: way, with vow to use no more,
Ne thenceforth ever strike in battell stroke,
Ne offer word to speake to woman more;
But in that wilderness, of men forelore,
And of the wicked world forgotten quight,
His hadd mishap in dolor to deplore,
And wast his wretched daies in wofull plight;
So on him selfe to wreake his follies owne de-
spight.

XL

And eke his garment, to be thereto meet,
He wilfully did cut and shape anew; [sweet
And his faire lockes, that wont with ointment
To be embaulm'd, and sweat out dainty dew,
He let to grow and griesly to conerew,
Uncom'b'd, uncur'd, and carelessly unshed;
That in short time his face they overgrew,
And over all his shoulders did dispreed, [red.
That who he whilome was unceath was to be

XLI

There he continued in this carefull plight,
Wretchedly wearing out his youthly yeares,
Throug wilfull penury consumed quight,
That like a pined ghost he soone appeares:
For other food then that wilde Forrest beares,
Ne other drinke there did he ever tast
Then running water tempred with his teares,
The more his weakened body so to wast,
That out of all mens knowledge he was worne
at last.

XLII

For on a day, by fortune as it fell,
His owne deare Lord Prince Arthure came
that way,
Seeking adventures where he mote heare tell;
And, as he through the wandring wood did
Having espide this Cabin far away, [stray,
He to it drew, to weet who there did wonne;
Weening therein some holy Hermit lay,
That did resort of sinfull people shonne,
Or else some woodman shrowded there from
scorching sunne.

XLIII

Arriving there he found this wretched man
Spending his daies in dolour and despaire.
And through long fasting woxen pale and wan,
All overgrown with rude and rugged haire;
That albeit his owne dear Squire he were,
Yet he him knew not, ne aviz'd at all,
But like strange wight, whom he had scene no
where,
Saluting him gan into speach to fall,
And pittie much his plight, that liv'd like out-
cast thrall.

XLIV

But to his speach he aunswere no whit,
But stood still mute, as if he had bene dum,
Ne signe of sence did shew, ne common wit.
As one with griefe and anguise overcume,

And unto every thing did aunswere mum:
And ever, when the Prince unto him spake,
He louted lowly, as did him becume,
And humble homage did unto him make,
Midst sorrow shewing joyous semblance for his
sake.

XLV

At which his uncouth guise and usage quaint
The Prince did wonder much, yet could not
ghesse
The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint;
Yet weend, by secret signes of manlinesse
Which close appeard in that rude brutishnesse,
That he whilomesome gentle swaine had beene,
Traind up in feats of armes and knightlinesse;
Which he observ'd, by that he him had scene
To weld his naked sword, and try the edges
keene.

XLVI

And eke by that he saw on every tree,
How he the name of one engraven had
Which likly was his liefest love to be,
From whom he now so sorely was bestad,
Which was by him BELPHEBE rightly rad.
Yet who was that Belphebe he ne wist;
Yet saw he often how he waxed glad
When he it heard, and how the ground he kist
Wherein it written was, and how himselfe he
blist.

XLVII

Tho, when he long had marked his demeanor,
And saw that all he said and did was vaine,
Ne ought mote make him change his wonted
tenor,
Ne ought mote ease or mitigate his paine,
He left him there in languor to remaine,
Till time for him should remedy provide,
And him restore to former grace againe:
Which, for it is too long here to abide,
I will deferre the end untill another tide.

CANTO VIII.

The gentle Squire recovers grace,
Sclaunders her guests doth stalne:
Corlambo chaseth Placidus,
And is by Arthure slaine.

I

WELL said the Wiseman, now prov'd true by this
Which to this gentle Squire did happen late,
That the displeasure of the mighty is
Then death it selfe more dread and desperate;
For naught the same may calme ne mitigate,
Till time the tempest doe thereof delay
With sufferance soft, which rigour can abate,

And have the sterne remembrance wypt away
Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein infix'd
lay.

II

Like as it fell to this unhappy boy,
Whose tender heart the faire Belphebe had
With one sterne looke so daunted, that no joy
In all his life, which afterwards he had,

He ever tasted ; but with penance sad
And pensive sorrow pind and wore away,
Ne ever laught, ne once shew'd countenance
glad,
But alwaies wept and wailed night and day,
As blasted bloome through heat doth languish
and decay :

III

Till on a day, as in his wonted wise
His doole he made, there chaunst a turtle Do
To come where he his dolours did devise,
That likewise late had lost her dearest love,
Which losse her made like passion also prove :
Who, seeing his sad plight, her tender heart
With deare compassion deeply did emmove,
That she gan mone his undeserved smart,
And with her dolefull accent beare with him a
part.

IV

Shee sitting by him, as on ground he lay,
Her mournfull notes full piteously did frame,
And thereof made a lamentable lay,
So sensibly compyl'd, that in the same
Him seemed oft he heard his owne right name.
With that he forth would poure so plenteous
teares,
And beat his breast unworthy of such blame,
And knoeke his head, and rend his rugged
haires, [of Beares.
That could have perst the hearts of Tygres and

V

Thus, long this gentle bird to him did use
Withouten dread of perill to repaire
Unto his wonne, and with her mournfull muse
Him to recomfort in his greatest care,
That much did ease his mourning and misfare :
And every day, for guerdon of her song,
He part of his small feast to her would share ;
That, at the last, of all his woe and wrong
Companion she became, and so continued long.

VI

Upon a day as she him sate beside,
By chance he certaine miniments forth drew,
Which yet with him as reliques did abide
Of all the bounty which Belphebe throw
On him, whilst goodly grace she him did shew :
Amongst the rest a jewell rich he found,
That was a Ruby of right perfect hew,
Shap'd like a heart yet bleeding of the wound,
And with a litle golden chaine about it bound.

VII

The same he tooke, and with a riband new,
In which his Ladies colours were, did bind
About the turtles necke, that with the new
Did greatly solace his engrieved mind.

All unawares the bird, when she did find
Her selfe so deckt, her nimble wings displaid,
And flew away as lightly as the wind :
Which sodaine accident him much dismayd,
And looking after long did mark which way
she straid.

VIII

But when as long he looked had in vaine,
Yet saw her forward still to make her flight,
His weary eye returnd to him againe,
Full of discomfort and disquiet plight,
That both his juell he had lost so light,
And eke his deare companion of his care.
But that sweet bird departing flew forthright,
Through the wide region of the wastfull aire,
Untill she came where wonned his Belphebe
faire.

IX

There found she her (as then it did betide)
Sitting in covert shade of arbors sweet,
After late wearie toile which she had tride
In salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her meet.
There she alighting fell before her feet,
And gan to her her mournfull plaint to make,
As was her wont, thinking to let her weete
The great tormenting griefe that for her sake
Her gentle Squire through her displeasure did
partake.

X

She, her beholding with attentive eye,
At length did marke about her purple breast
That precious juell, which she formerly
Had knowne right well, with colour'd ribbonds
drest :
Therewith she rose in hast, and her adrest
With ready hand it to have reft away ;
But the swift bird obeyd not her behest,
But swarv'd aside, and there againe did stay :
She follow'd her, and thought againe it to assay.

XI

And ever, when she nigh approacht, the Dove
Would flit a litle forward, and then stay
Till she drew neare, and then againe remove ;
So tempting her still to pursue the pray,
And still from her escaping soft away :
Till that at length into that Forrest wide
She drew her far, and led with slow delay.
In th' end she her unto that place did guide,
Whereas that wofull man in languor did abide.

XII

Eftsoones she flew unto his fearelesse hand,
And there a piteous ditty new devis'd,
As if she would have made her understand
His sorrowes cause, to be of her despia'd :

Whom when she saw in wretched weedes disguiz'd,

With heary glib deform'd and meiger face,
Like ghost late risen from his grave agryz'd,
She knew him not, but pittied much his case,
And wisht it were in her to doe him any grace.

XIII

He her beholding at her feet downe fell,
And kist the ground on which her sole did tread,
And washt the same with water which did well
From his moist eies, and like two streames
proceed;

Yet spake no word, whereby she might aread
What mister wight he was, or what he ment;
But, as one daunted with her presence dread,
Onely few ruefull looks unto her sent,
As messengers of his true meaning and intent.

XIV

Yet nathemore his meaning she aread.
But wondred much at his so selcouth case;
And by his persons secret seemlyhed
Well wend that he had beene some man of
place,
Before misfortune did his hew deface;
That being mov'd with ruth she thus bespake:
'Ah! wofull man, what heavens hard disgrace,
Or wrath of cruell wight on thee ywrake,
Or selfe-dislikd life, doth thee thus wretched
make?'

XV

'If heaven, then none may it redresse or blame,
Sith to his powre we all are subject borne:
If wrathfull wight, then fowle rebuke and
shame

He theirs that have so cruell thee forlorne!
But if through inward griefe or wilfull scorne
Of life it be, then better doe advise:
For he, whose daies in wilfull woe are worne,
The grace of his Creator doth despise,
That will not use his gifts for thanklesse nig-
ardise.'

XVI

When so he heard her say, eftsoones he brake,
His sodaine silence which he long had pent,
And, sighing inly deepe, her thus bespake:
'Then have they all themselves against me
bent:
For heaven, first author of my languishment,
Envyng my too great felicity,
Did closely with a cruell one consent
To cloud my daies in dolefull misery,
And make me loath this life, still longing for
to die.

XVII

'Ne any but your selfe, O dearest dred,
Hath done this wrong, to wreake on worthlesse
wight [bred:
Your high displeasure, through misdeeming
That, when your pleasure is to deeme aright,
Be may redresse, and me restore to light!
Which sorry words her mightie hart did mate
With mild regard to see his ruefull plight,
That her inburning wrnth she gan abate,
And him receiv'd againe to former favours
state.

XVIII

In which he long time afterwards did lead
An happie life with grace and good accord,
Fearlesse of fortunes chaunge on envies dread,
And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare Lord
The noble Prince, who never heard one word
Of tydings what did unto him betide,
Or what good fortune did to him afford;
But through the endlesse world did wander
wide, [scride.
Him seeking evermore, yet no where him de-

XIX

Till on a day, as through that wood he rode,
He chaunst to come where those two Ladies late,
Emylia and Amoret, abode,
Both in full sad and sorrowfull estate:
The one right feeble through the pill rate
Of food which in her duresse she had found;
The other almost dead and desperate
Through her late hurts, and through that hap-
lesse wound
With which the Squire, in her defence, her sore
astound.

XX

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to rew
The evill case in which those Ladies lay;
But most was moved at the piteous vew,
Of Amoret, so neare unto decay,
That her great danger did him much diamay.
Eftsoones that pretious liquour forth he drew,
Which he in store about him kept alway,
And with few drops thereof did softly dew,
Her wounds, that unto strength restor'd her
soone anew.

XXI

Tho, when they both recovered were right well,
He gan of them inquire, what evill guide
Them thether brought, and how their harmes
befell?
To whom they told all that did them betide,
And how from thralldome vile they were untide,
Of that same wicked Carle, by Virgins hond;
Whose bloudie corse they shew'd him there
beside,

And eke his cavein which they both were bond:
At which he wondred much when all those
signes he fond.

XXII

And evermore he greatly did desire
To know what Virgin did them thence unbind,
And oft of them did earnestly inquire,
Where was her won, and how he mote her find.
But, when as nought according to his mind
He could out-learne, he them from ground did
No service lothsome to a gentle kind, [reare,
And on his warlike beast them both did beare,
Himselle by them on foot to succour them
from feare.

XXIII

So when that forrest they had passed well,
A htle cotage farre away they spide,
To which they drew ere night upon them fell;
And entring in found none therein abide,
But one old woman sitting there beside
Upon the ground in ragged rude attyre,
With filthly lockes about her scattered wide,
Gnawing her nayles for felnesse and for yre,
And there out sucking venime to her parts en-
tyre.

XXIV

A foule and loathly creature sure in sight,
And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse;
For she was stuf with rancour and despite
Up to the throat, that oft with bitterness
It forth would breake, and gush in great excesse,
Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall
Gainst all that truth or vertue doe professe;
Whom she with leasings lewdly did miscall
And wickedly backbite: Her name men
Sclaunder call.

XXV

Her nature is all goodnesse to abuse,
And causelesse crimes continually to frame,
With which she guiltlesse persons may accuse,
And steale away the crowne of their good name:
Ne ever Knight so bold, ne ever Dame
So chast and loyall liv'd, but she would strive
With forged cause them falsely to defame;
Ne ever thing so well was doen alive,
But she with blame would blot, and of due
praise deprive.

XXVI

Her words were not, as common words are
ment,
T' expresse the meaning of the inward mind,
But noysome breath, and poysonous spirit sent
From inward parts, with cancred malice lind,

And breathed forth with blast of bitter wind;
Which passing through the cares would pierce
the hart, [kind;
And wound the soule it selfe with griefe un-
For, like the spings of aspes that kill with
smart, [inner part.
Her spightfull words did pricke and wound the

XXVII

Such was that Hag, unmeet to host such
guests, [fayne;
Whom greatest Princes court would welcome
But neede, that answers not to all requests,
Bad them not looke for better entertayne;
And eke that age depysed nicenesse vaine,
Enur'd to hardnesse and to homely fare,
Which them to warlike discipline did trayne,
And manly Arms endur'd with litle care
Against all hard mishaps and fortunelesse mis-
fare.

XXVIII

Then all that evening (welcomm'd with cold
And cheapelesse hunger) they together spent;
Yet found no fault, but that the Ilag did scold
And rayle at them with grudgefull discontent,
For lodging there without her owne consent
Yet they endured all with patience milde,
And unto rest themselves all onely lent,
Regardlesse of that queane so base and vilde
To be unjustly blamd, and bitterly revilde.

XXIX

Here, well I weene, when as these rimes be
red
With misregard, that some rash-witted wight,
Whose looser thought will lightly be misled,
These gentle Ladies will misdeeme too light
For thus conversing with this noble Knight;
Sith now o' dayes such temperance is rare
And hard to finde, that heat of youthfull spright
For ought will from his greedie pleasure spare:
More hard for hungry steed t' abstaine from
pleasant lare.

XXX

But antique age, yet in the infancie
Of time, did live then like an innocent,
In simple truth and blamelesse chastitie,
Ne then of guile had made experiment;
But, void of vile and treacherous intent,
Held vertue for it selfe in soveraine awe:
Then loyall love had royall regiment,
And each unto his lust did make a lawe,
From all forbidden things his liking to with-
draw.

XXXI

The Lyon there did with the Lambe consort,
And eke the Dove sate by the Faulcons side;

Ne each of other feared fraud or tort.
But did in safe securitie abide,
Withouten perill of the stronger pride: [old,
But when the world woxe old, it woxe warre
(Whereof it high) and, having shortly tride
The traires of wit, in wickednesse woxe bold,
And dared of all sinnes the secrets to unfold.

XXXII

Then beautilie, which was made to represent
The great Creatours owne resemblance bright,
Unto abuse of lawlesse lust was lent,
And made the baite of bestiall delight:
Then faire grew foule, and foule grew faire in
sight; [man,
And that, which wont to vanquish God and
Was made the vassall of the victors might;
Then did her glorious flowre wax dead and
wan,
Despisd and troden downe of all that over-ran.

XXXIII

And now it is so utterly decayd,
That any bud thereof doth scarce remaine,
But-if few plants, preserv'd through heavenly
ayd,
In Princes Court doe hap to sprout againe,
Dew'd with her drops of bountie Sovereaine,
Which from that goodly glorious flowre pro-
ceed, [straine,
Sprung of the auncient stocke of Princes
Now th' onely remnant of that royall breed,
Whose noble kind at first was sure of heavenly
seed.

XXXIV

Tho, soone as day discovered heavens face
To sinfull men with darknes overdight,
This gentle crew gan from their eye-lids chase
The drowzie humour of the dampish night,
And did themselves unto their journey dight.
So forth they yode, and forward softly paced,
That them to view had bene an uncouth sight.
How all the way the Prince on footpace traced,
The Ladies both on horse, together last em-
braced.

XXXV

Soone as they thence departed were afore,
That shameful Hag, the slaunders of her sexe,
Them follow'd fast, and them reviled sore,
Him calling theefe, them whores; that much
did vex
His noble hart: thereto she did annexe
False crimes and facts, such as they never ment,
That those two Ladies much asham'd did wexe:
The more did she pursue her lewd intent,
And rayl'd and rag'd, till she had all her poyson
spent.

XXXVI

At last, when they were passed out of sight,
Yet she did not her spightfull speech forbear,
But after them did barke, and still backbite,
Though there were none her hatefull words to
heare.

Like as a curro doth felly bite and teare
The stone which passed straunger at him
threw:

So she, them seeing past the reach of care,
Against the stones and trees did rayle anew,
Till she had duld the sting which in her tongs
end grew.

XXXVII

They passing forth kept on their readie way,
With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde,
Both for great feeblesse, which did oft assay
Faine Amoret that scarcely she could ryde,
And eke through heauey armes which sore
annoyd

The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare;
Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to
guyde,

And all the way from trotting hard to spare;
So was his toyle the more, the more that was
his care.

XXXVIII

At length they spide where towards them
with speed

A Squire came galloping, as he would flie,
Bearing a litle Dwarfie before his steed,
That all the way full loud for aide did crie,
That seem'd his shrikes would rend the brasen
skie:

Whom after did a mightie man pursew,
Ryding upon a Dromedare on hie,
Of stature huge, and horrible of hew,
That would have maz'd a man his dreadfull
face to vew:

XXXIX

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie beames,
More sharpe then points of needles, did proceede,
Shooting forth farre away two flaming streames,
Full of sad powre, that poysonous bale did
breede

To all that on him lookt without good heed,
And secretly his enemies did slay:
Like as the Basiliske, of serpents seede,
From powrefull eyes close venom doth convey
Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre away.

XI.

He all the way did rage at that same Squire,
And after him full many threatnings threw,
With curses vaine in his avengfull ire;
But none of them (so fast away he flew)

Him overtooke before he came in vew:
Where when he saw the Prince in armour
bright,
He cald to him alond his case to rew,
And rescue him, through succour of his might,
From that his cruell foe that him pursewd in
sight.

XLI

Eftsoones the Prince tooke downe those Ladies
twaine
From loftie steepe, and mounting in their stead
Came to that Squire, yet trembling every vaine;
Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread:
Who as he gan the same to him aread,
Loe! hard behind his backe his foe was prest,
With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head,
That unto death had doen him unredrest?
Had not the noble Prince his readie stroke re-
prest:

XLII

Who, thrusting boldly twixt him and the blow,
The burden of the deadly brunt did beare
Upon his shield, which lightly he did throw
Over his head before the harme came neare:
Nathlesse it fell with so despiteous dreare
And heave sway, that hard unto his crowne
The shield it drove, and did the covering
reare: [downe]
Therewith both Squire and dwarfe did tumble
Unto the earth, and lay long while in sense-
lesse swowne.

XLIII

Whercat the Prince full wrath his strong
right hand
In full avengement heaved up on hie,
And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand
So sore, that to his saddle-bow thereby
He bowed low, and so a while did lie:
And, sure, had not his massie yron mace
Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily,
It would have cleft him to the girding place;
Yet, as it was, it did astonish him long space.

XLIV

But, when he to himselfe returnd againe,
All full of rage he gan to curse and sweare,
And vow by Mahonne that he should be slaine.
With that his murderous mace he up did reare,
That seemed nought the souse thereof could
beare,
And therewith smote at him with all his might;
But, ere that it to him approched neare,
The royall child with readie quicke foresight
Did shun the prooffe thereof, and it avoyded
light.

XLV

But, ere his hand he could recure againe
To ward his bodie from the balefull stound,
He smote at him with all his might and maine,
So furiously that, ere he wist, he found
His head before him tombling on the ground;
The whiles his babling tongue did yet blas-
pheme
And curse his God that did him so confound:
The whiles his life ran forth in bloudie streame,
His soule descended downe into the Stygian
reame.

XLVI

Which when that Squire beheld, he woxe full
glad
To see his foe breath out his spright in vaine:
But that same, dwarfe right sorie seem'd and
sad,
And howld aloud to see his Lord there slaine,
And rent his haire and scratcht his face for
paine.
Then gan the Prince at leasure to inquire
Of all the accident there hapned plaine, [fire];
And what he was whose eyes did flame with
All which was thus to him declared by that
Squire.

XLVII

'This mightie man,' (quoth he) 'whom you
have slaine,
Of an huge Geauntesse whylome was bred,
And by his strength rule to himselfe did gaine
Of many Nations into thraldome led,
And mightie kingdomes of his force adred;
Whom yet he conquer'd not by bloudie fight,
Ne hostes of men with banners brode dispred,
But by the powre of his infectious sight,
With which he killed all that came within his
might.

XLVIII

'Ne was he ever vanquished afore,
But ever vanquisht all with whom he fought;
Ne was there man so strong, but he downe
bore;
Ne woman yet so faire, but he her brought
Unto his bay, and captived her thought:
For most of strength and beutie his desire
Was spoyle to make, and wast them unto
nought,
By casting secret flakes of lustfull fire
From his false eyes into their harts and parts
entire.

XLIX

'Therefore Corlambo was he cald aright,
Though namelesse there his bodie now doth
lie;

Yet hath he left one daughter that is hight
The faire Peana, who seemes outwardly
So faire as ever yet saw living eie;
And were her vertue like her beautie bright.
She were as faire as any under skie:
But ah! she given is to vaine delight,
And eke too loose of life, and eke of love too
light.

L

'So, as it fell, there was a gentle Squire
That lov'd a Ladic of high parentage;
But, for his meane degree might not aspire
To match so high, her friends with counsell
Dissuaded her from such a disparage: [sage
But she, whose hart to love was wholly lent,
Out of his hands could not redeeme her gage,
But, firmly following her first intent,
Resolv'd with him to wend, gainst all her
friends consent.

LI

'So twixt themselves they pointed time and
place:
To which when he according did repaire,
An hard mishap and disaventurous case
Him chaunst: instead of his Æmylia faire,
This Gyants sonne, that lies there on the laire
An headlesse heape, him unawares there caught;
And all dismayd through mercilesse despaire
Him wretched thrall unto his dongeon brought,
Where he remains, of all unsuccour'd and
unsought.

LII

'This Gyants daughter came upon a day
Unto the prison, in her joyous glee,
To view the thralls which there in bondage lay:
Amongst the rest she chaunced there to see
This lovely swaine, the Squire of low degree;
To whom she did her liking lightly cast,
And wooed him her paramour to be:
From day to day she woo'd and prayd him fast,
And for his love him promist libertie at last.

LIII

'He, though affide unto a former love,
To whom his faith he firmly ment to hold,
Yet seeing not how thence he mote remove,
But by that means which fortune did unfold,
Her graunted love, but with affection cold,
To win her grace his libertie to get:
Yet she him still detaines in captive hold,
Fearing, least if she should him freely set,
He would her shortly leave, and former love
forget.

LIV

'Yet so much favour she to him hath hight
Above the rest, that he sometimes may space

And walke about her gardens of delight,
Having a keeper still with him in place;
Which keeper is this Dwarfe, her dearling base,
To whom the keyes of every prison dore
By her committed be, of speciall grace,
And at his will may whom he list restore,
And whom he list reserve to be afflicted more.

LV

'Whereof when tydings came unto mine eare,
Full mly sorie, for the fervent zeale
Which I to him as to my soule did beare,
I thether went; where I did long conceale
My selfe, till that the Dwarfe did me reveale,
And told his Dame her Squire of low degree
Did secretly out of her prison steale;
For mee he did mistake that Squire to be,
For never two so like did living creature see.

LVI

'Then was I taken and before her brought,
Who, through the likeness of my outward
Being likewise beguiled in her thought, | hew,
Gan blame me much for being so untrew
To seeke by flight her fellowship t' eschew,
That lov'd me deare, as dearest thing alive.
Thence she commaunded me to prison new;
Whereof I glad did not gaine say nor strive,
But suffred that same Dwarfe me to her don-
geon drive.

LVII

'There did I finde mine onely faithfull frend
In heavy plight and sad perplexitie;
Whereof I sorie, yet myselfe did bend
Him to recomfort with my companie,
But him the more agreev'd I found thereby:
For all his joy, he said, in that distresse
Was mine and his Æmylias libertie.
Æmylia well he lov'd, as I mote ghesse,
Yet greater love to me then her he did professe.

LVIII

'But I with better reason him aviz'd,
And shew'd him how, through error and mis-
thought
Of our like persons, eath to be disguiz'd,
Or his exchange or freedom might be wrought.
Whereto full loth was he, ne would for ought
Consent that I, who stood all fearelesse free,
Should wilfully be into thraldome brought,
Till fortune did perforce it so decree:
Yet, over-ruld at last, he did to me agree.

LIX

'The morrow next, about the wonted howre,
The Dwarfe cald at the doore of Amyas
To come forthwith unto his Ladies bowre:
Instead of whom forth came I, Placidus,

And undiscerned forth with him did pas.
There with great joyance and with gladsome
Of faire Peana I received was, [glee
And oft imbrast, as if that I were hee,
And with kind wordes accoyd, vowing great
love to mee.

LX

'Which I, that was not bent to former love
As was my friend that had her long refus'd,
Did well accept, as well it did behoove,
And to the present neede it wisely usd.
My former hardness first I faire excusd;
And after promis't large amends to make.
With such smooth termes her error I abus'd
To my friends good more then for mine owne
sake,
For whose sole libertie I love and life did stake.

LXI

'Thenceforth I found more favour at her hand,
That to her Dwarf, which had me in his
charge,
She bad to lighten my too heavey band,
And graunt more scope to me to walke at large.
So on a day, as by the flowrie marge
Of a fresh streame I with that Elfe did play,
Finding no meanes how I might us enlarge,
But if that Dwarf I could with me convey,
I lightly swarte him up and with me bore
away.

LXII

'Thereat he shriekt aloud, that with his cry
The Tyrant selfe came forth with yelling bray,

And me pursew'd; but nathemore would I
Forgoe the purchase of my gotten pray,
But have performe him hether brought away.'
'Thus as they talked, loe! where nigh at hand
Those Ladies twp, yet doubtfull through dis-
may,
In presence came, desirous t' understand;
Tydings of all which there had hapned on the
land.

LXIII

Where soone as sad Æmylia did espie
Her captive lovers friend, young Placidus,
All mindlesse of her wonted modestie
She to him ran, and him with streight embras
Enfolding, said; 'And lives yet Amyas?'
'He lives, (quoth he) 'and his Æmylia loves.'
'Then lesse, (said she) 'by all the woe I
pa-
With which my weaker patience fortune proves:
But what mishap thus long him fro my selfe
removes?

LXIV

Then gan he all this storie to renew,
And tell the course of his captivtie,
That her deare hart full deeply made to rewe,
And sigh full sore to heare the miserie
In which so long he mercurlesse did lie.
Then, after many teares and sorrowes spent,
She deare besought the Prince of remedie;
Who thereto did with readie will consent,
And well perform'd; as shall appear by his
event.

CANTO IX.

The Squire of low degree, releas'd.

Æmylia takes to wife.

Britomart fights with many Knights;
Prince Arthur stints their strife.

I

HARD is the doubt, and difficult to deeme,
When all three kinds of love together meet
And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme.
Whether shall weigh the balance downe; to
weet,
The deare affection unto kindred sweet,
Or raging fire of love to womankind,
Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet:
But of them all the band of vertuous mind,
Me seemes the gentle hart should most as-
sured bind.

II

For naturall affection soone doth cesse,
And quenched is with Cupids greater flame:

But faithfull friendship doth them both sup-
pro-se,
And them with maystring discipline doth tame,
Through thoughts aspyring to eternall fame:
For as the soule doth rule the earthly masse,
And all the service of the bodie frame,
So love of soule doth love of bodie passe,
No lesse then perfect gold surmounts the
meanest brasse.

III

All which who list by tryall to assay
Shall in this storie find approved plaine;
In which these Squires true friendship more
did away
Then either care of parents could refrain,

Or love of fairest Ladie could constraîne;
For though Pœana were as faire as morne,
Yet did this trustie squire with proud disdain
For his friends sake her offred favours scorne,
And she her selfe her syre of whom she was
yborne.

IV

Now, after that Prince Arthur graunted had
To yeeld strong succour to that gentle wayne,
Who now long time had lyen in prison sad;
He gan advise how best he mote darraigne
That enterprize for greatest glories gayne.
That headlesse tyrants tronke he reard from
ground,

And, having ympt the head to it agayne,
Upon his usuall beast it firmly bound,
And made it so to ride as it alive was found.

V

Then did he take that chaced Squire, and layd
Before the ryder, as he captive were, [ayd,
And made his Dwarf, though with unwilling
To guide the beast that did his maister beare,
Till to his castle they approched neare; [ward,
Whom when the watch, that kept continuall
Saw comming home, all voide of doubtfull feare,
He, running downe, the gate to him unbard;
Whom straight the Prince ensuing in together
fard.

VI

There did he find in her delicious boure,
The faire Pœana playing on a Rote
Complayning of her cruell Paramoure,
And singing all her sorrow to the note,
As she had learned readily by rote;
That with the sweetnesse of her rare delight
The Prince halfe rapt began on her to dote;
Till better him bethinking of the right,
He her unwares attacht, and captive held* by
might.

VII

Whence being forth produc'd, when she perceiv'd
Her owne deare sire, she cald to him for aide;
But when of him no aunswere she received,
But saw him sencelesse by the Squire upstaide,
She weened well that then she was betraide:
Then gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waile,
And that same Squire of treason to upbraide;
But all in vaine: her plaints might not prevaile,
Ne none there was to reskue her, ne none to
baile.

VIII

Then tooke he that same Dwarf, and him
compell'd
To open unto him the prison dore,

And forth to bring those thralls which there he
held.

Thence forth were brought to him above a score
Of Knights and Squires to him unknowne afore:
All which he did from bitter bondage free,
And unto former liberty restore.
Amongst the rest that Squire of low degree
Came forth full weake and wan, not like him
selfe to bee.

IX

Whom soone as faire Æmylia beheld
And Placidus, they both unto him ran,
And him embracing fast betwixt them held,
Striving to comfort him all that they can,
And kissing oft his visage pale and wan:
That faire Pœana, them beholding both,
Gan both envy, and bitterly to ban;
Through jealous passion weeping unly wroth,
To see the sight perforce that both her eyes
were loth.

X

But when awhile they had together beene,
And diversly conferred of their case, [seene
She, though full oft she both of them had
Asunder, yet not ever in one place,
Began to doubt, when she them saw embrace,
Which was the captive Squire she lov'd so
deare,
Deceived through great likenesse of their face:
For they so like in person did appeare,
That she unceath discerned whether whether
weare.

XI

And eke the Prince, when as he them avized,
Their like resemblaunce much admired there,
And mazed how nature had so well disguised
Her worke, and counterfet her selfe so nere,
As if that by one patterne, seene somewhere,
She had them made a paragon to be,
Or whether it through skill or art were,
Thus gazing long at them much wondred he;
So did the other Knights and Squires which
them did see.

XII

Then gan they ransacke that same Castle
strong, [sure,
In which he found great store of hoorded threa-
The which that tyrant gathered had by wrong
And tortious powre, without respect or mea-
sure:
Upon all which the Briton Prince made seasure,
And afterwards continu'd there a while
To rest him selfe, and solace in soft pleasure
Those weaker Ladies after weary toile;
To whom he did divide part of his purchast
spoil.

XIII

And, for more joy, that captive Lady faire,
The faire Pœana, he enlarged free,
And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire
To feast and frolicke; nathemore would she
Shew gladsome countenance nor pleasau[n]t
glee;

But grieved was for losse both of her sire,
And eke of Lordship with both land and fee:
But most she touchèd was with griefe entire
For losse of her new love, the hope of her de-
sire.

XIV

But her the Prince, through his well wonted
grace,
To better termes of myldnesse did entreat
From that fowle rudenesse which did her de-
face;

And that same bitter corsive, which did eat
Her tender heart and made refraine from meat,
He with good thewes and speeches well ap-
plyde
Did mollifie, and calme her raging heat:
For though she were most faire, and goodly
dyde,
Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and pride.

XV

And, for to shut up all in friendly love,
Sith love was first the ground of all her
griefe,

That trusty Squire he wisely well did move
Not to despise that dame which lov'd him lief,
Till he had made of her some better priefe;
But to accept her to his wedded wife:
Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe
Of all her land and lordship during life.
He yeelded, and her tooke; so stinted all their
strife.

XVI

From that day forth in peace and joyous
blis

They liv'd together long without debate;
Ne private jarre, ne spite of enemies,
Could shake the safe assurance of their state:
And she, whom Nature did so faire create
That she might match the fairest of her daies,
Yet with lewd loves and lust intemperate
Had it defaste, thenceforth reformd her waies,
That all men much admyrde her change, and
spake her praise.

XVII

Thus when the Prince had perfectly com-
pylde, [rest,
These paires of friends in peace and settled
Him selfe, whose minde did travell as with
chylde

Of his old love conceav'd in secret brest,
Resolved to pursue his former quest;
And, taking leave of all, with him did beare
Faire Amoret, whom Fortune by bequest
Had left in his protection whileare,
Exchanged out of one into another feare.

XVIII

Feare of her safety did her not constraîne;
For well she wist now in a mighty hond
Her person, late in perill, did remaine,
Who able was all daungers to withstond:
But now in feare of shame she more did stond,
Seeing her selfe all soly succourlesse,
Left in the victors powre, like vassall bond,
Whose wifher weaknesse could no way re-
presse, [excesse.
In case his burning lust should breake into

XIX

But cause of feare, sure, had she none at all
Of him, who goodly learned had of yore
The course of loose affection to forstall,
And lawlesse lust to rule with reasons lore;
That all the while he by his side her bore,
She was as safe as in a Sanctuary.
Thus many miles they two together wore,
To seeke their loves dispersed diversly,
Yet neither showed to other their hearts privy.

XX

At length they came whereas a troupe of
Knights
They saw together skirmishing, as seemed:
Sixe they were all, all full of fell despight,
But foure of them the battell best bescemed,
That which of them was best mote not be
deemed.

These foure were they from whom false Florimel
By Braggadochio lately was redeemed;
To sweet, sterne Druon, and lewd Claribell,
Love-lavish Blandamour, and lustfull Paridell.

XXI

Druons delight was all in single life,
And unto Ladies love would lend no leasure:
The more was Claribell enraged rife
With fervent flames, and loved out of measure
So eke lov'd Blandamour, but yet at pleasure
Would change his liking, and new Lemans
prove;

But Paridell of love did make no threasure,
But lusted after all that him did move:
So diversly these foure disposed were to love.

XXII

But those two other, which beside them stooode,
Were Britomart and gentle Scudamour;

Who all the while beheld their wrathfull
moode,
And wondred at their impacable stoure,
Whose like they never saw till that same houre
So dreadfull strokes each did at other drive,
And laid on load with all their might and
powre,
As if that every dint the ghost would rive
Out of their wretched courses, and their lives
deprive.

XXIII

As when Dan Æolus, in great displeasure
For losse of his deare love by Neptune hent,
Sends forth the winds out of his hidden threa-
Upon the sea to wreake his fell intent; [sure
They breaking forth with rude un-
From all foure parts of heaven doe rage full sore,
And tosse the deepes, and teare the firmament,
And all the world confound with wide uprore,
As if instead thereof they Chaos would restore.

XXIV

Cause of their discord and so fell debate
Was for the love of that same snowy maid,
Whome they had lost in Turneyment of late;
And, seeking long to weet which way she
straide, [braide
Met here together, where, through lewd up-
Of Atë and Duessa, they fell out;
And each one taking part in others aide
This cruell conflict raised thereabout, [doubt
Whose dangerous successe depended yet in

XXV

For sometimes Paridell and Blandamour
The better had, and bet the others backe;
Eftsoones the others did the field recoure,
And on his foes did worke full cruell wracke:
Yet neither would their fiendlike fury slacke,
But evermore their malice did augment;
Till that uneth they forced were, for lacke
Of breath, their raging rigour to relent,
And rest themselves for to recover spirits spent.

XXVI

Then gan they change their sides, and new
parts take;
For Paridell did take to Druons side,
For old despight which now forth newly brake
Gainst Blandamour, whom alwaies he envide;
And Blandamour to Claribell relide:
So all afresh gan former fight renew. [tide,
As when two Barkes, this caried with the
That with the wind, contrary courses sew,
If wind and tide doe change, their courses
change anew.

XXVII

Thenceforth they much more furiously gan
As if but then the battell had begonne; [fare,
Ne helmets bright ne hawberks strong did
spare, [sponne,
That through the clifts the vermill bloud out
And all adowne their riven sides did runne.
Such mortall malice wonder was to see
In friends profest, and so great outrage donne:
But sooth is said, and tride in each degree,
Faint friends when they fall out most cruell
fomen bet.

XXVIII

Thus they long while continued in fight;
Till Scudamour and that same Briton maide
By fortune in that place did chance to light:
Whom soone as they with wrathfull eie be-
wraide,
They gan remember of the fowle upbraide,
The which that Britonesse had to them donne
In that late Turney for the snowy maide;
Where she had them both shamefully fordonne,
And eke the famous prize of beauty from them
wonne.

XXIX

Eftsoones all burning with a fresh desire
Of fell revenge, in their malicious mood [ire,
They from them selves gan turne their furious
And cruell blades, yet steeming with whot
bloud,
Against those two let drive, as they were wood:
Who wondring much at that so sodaine fit,
Yet nought dismayd, them stoutly well with-
stood;
Ne yeelded foote, ne once abacke did flit,
But being doubly smitten likewise doubly smit.

XXX

The warlike Dame was on her part assaid
Of Claribell and Blandamour attone;
And Paridell and Druon fiercely laid
At Scudamour, both his professed fone:
Foure charged two, and two surcharged one;
Yet did those two them selves so bravely beare,
That th' other litle gained by the lone,
But with their owne repayed duely weare,
And usurye withall: such guine was gotten
deare.

XXXI

Full oftentimes did Britomart assay
To speake to them, and some emparlance move;
But they for nought their cruell hands would
stay,
Ne lend an eare to ought that might behove.
As when an eager mastiffe once doth prove
The tast of bloud of some engored beast,
No words may rate, nor rigour him remove

From greedy hold of that his bloudly feast:
So litle did they hearken to her sweet behest.

XXXII

Whom when the Briton Prince afarre beheld
With ods of so unequal match oppress,
His mighty heart with indignation sweld,
And inward grudge fild his heroicke brest:
Eftsoones him selfe he to their nide address,
And thrusting fierce into the thickest preace
Divided them, how ever loth to rest;
And would them faine from battell to surceasse,
With gentle words perswading them to friendly
peace.

XXXIII

But they so farre from peace or patience were,
That all at once at him gan fiercely flie,
And lay on load, as they him downe would
beare;
Like to a storme which hovers under skie,
Long here and there and round about doth stie,
At length breakes downe in rain, and haile
and sleet,
First from one coast, till nought thereof be drie,
And then another, till that likewise fleet;
And so from side to side till all the world it weet.

XXXIV

But now their forces greatly were decayd,
The Prince yet being fresh untoucht afore;
Who them with speeches milde gan first dis-
swade [bore:
From such foule outrage, and them long for-
till seeing them through suffrance hartned
more,
Him selfe he bent their furies to abate,
And layd at them so sharply and so sore,
That shortly them compelled to retrate,
And being brought in daunger to relent too late.

XXXV

But now his courage being thoroughly fired,
He ment to make them know their follies prise,
Had not those two him instantly desired
T' assuage his wrath, and pardon their mes-
prise:

At whose request he gan him selfe advise
To stay his hand, and of a truce to treat
In milder termes, as list them to devise;
Mongst which the cause of their so cruell heat
He did them aske, who all that passed gan
repeat:

XXXVI

And told at large how that same errant Knight,
To weest faire Britomart, them late had foyled

In open turney, and by wrongfull fight
Both of their publicke praise had them des-
poyled,
And also of their private loves beguyled,
Of two full hard to read the harder theft:
But she that wrongfull challenge soone assoyled,
And shew'd that she had not that Lady left,
(As they suppos'd) but her had to her liking
left.

XXXVII

To whom the Prince thus goodly well replied:
' Certes, sir Knight, ye seemen much to blame
To rip up wrong that battell once hath tried;
Wherein the honor both of Armes ye shame,
And eke the love of Ladies foule defame;
To whom the world this franchise ever yelded,
That of their loves choise they might freedom
claime, [shielded.
And in that right should by all knights be
Gainst which, me seemes, this war ye wrong-
fully have wielded.'

XXXVIII

' And yet' (quoth she) ' a greater wrong re-
maines:
For I thereby my former love have lost;
Whom seeking ever since with endlesse paines
Hath me much sorrow and much travell cost:
Aye me, to see that gentle maide so tost!'
But Scudamour, then sighing deepe, thus saide:
' Certes, her losse ought me to sorrow most,
Whose right she is, where ever she be straide,
Through many perils wonne, and many for-
tunes waide.

XXXIX

' For from the first that her I love profest,
Unto this houre, this present lucklesse howre,
I never joyed happinesse nor rest;
But thus turmoild from one to other stowre
I wast my life, and doe my daies devowre
In wretched anguise and incessant woe,
Passing the measure of my feeble powre:
That living thus a wretch, and loving so,
I neither can my love ne yet my life forgo.'

XL

Then good Sir Claribell him thus bespake:
' Now were it not, sir Scudamour, to you
Dislikefull paine so sad a taske to take,
Mote we entreat you, with this gentle crew
Is now so well accorded all anew,
That as we ride together on our way,
Ye will recount to us in order dew
All that adventure which ye did assay
For that faire Ladies love: past perils well
apay.'

XLI

So gan the rest him likewise to require,
But Britomart did him importune hard
To take on him that paine: whose great desire
He glad to satisfie, him selfe prepar'd

To tell through what misfortune he had far'd
In that atchievement, as to him befell,
And all those daungers unto them declar'd:
Which sith they cannot in this Canto well
Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

CANTO X.

Scandamour doth his conquest tell
Of vertuous Amoret:
Great Venus Temple is describ'd;
And lovers life forth set.

‘True he it said, what ever man it sayd,
That love with gall and hony doth abound;
But if the one be with the other wayd,
For every dram of hony therein found
A pound of gall doth over it redound:
That I too true by triall have approved;
For since the day that first with deadly wound
My heart was launcht, and leamed to have
loved, [moved,
I never joyed howre, but still with care was

II

‘And yet such grace is given them from above,
That all the cares and evil which they meet
May nought at all their settled mindes remove,
But seeme, gainst common sence, to them most
sweet;
As bosting in their martyrdomes unmeet.
So all that ever yet I have endured
I count as naught, and tread downe under feet,
Since of my love at length I rest assured,
That to disloyalty she will not be allured.

III

‘Long were to tell the travell and long toile
Through which this shield of love I late have
wonne,
And purchased this peerelesse beauties spoile,
That harder may be ended, then begonne:
But since ye so desire, your will be donne.
Then hearke, ye gentle knights and Ladies free,
My hard mishaps that ye may learne to shonne;
For though sweet love to conquer glorious bee,
Yet is the paine thereof much greater then the fee.

IV

‘What time the fame of this renowned prise
Flew first abroad, and all mens eares possess’d,
I, having armes then taken, gan advise
To winne me honour by some noble gest,

And purchase me some place amongst the best.
I boldly thought, (so young mens thoughts
are bold)
That this same brave emprise for me did rest,
And that both shield and she whom I behold
Might be my lucky lot; sith all by lot we hold.

V

‘So on that hard adventure forth I went,
And to the place of perill shortly came:
That was a temple faire and auncient,
Which of great mother Venus bare the name,
And farre renowned through exceeding fame,
Much more then that which was in Paphos
built,
Or that in Cyprus, both long since this same,
Though all the pillours of the one were guilt,
And all the others pavement were with yvory
spilt.

VI

‘And it was seated in an Island strong,
Abounding all with delices most rare,
And wall'd by nature gainst invaders wrong,
That none mote have accesse, nor inward fare,
But by one way that passage did prepare.
It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize [faire,
With curious Corbes and pendants graven
And, arched all with porches, did arise
On stately pillours fram'd after the Doricke
guize.

VII

‘And for defence thereof on th' other end
There reared was a castle faire and strong
That warded all which in or out did wend,
And flanked both the bridges sides along,
Gainst all that would it faine to force or wrong.
And therein wonned twenty valiant Knights,
All twenty tride in warres experience long;
Whose office was against all manner wights
By all meanes to maintaine that castels ancient
rights.

VIII

'Before that Castle was an open plaine,
And in the midst thereof a pillar placed;
On which this shield, of many sought in vaine,
The shield of Love, whose guerdon me hath
graced,
Was hangd on high with golden ribbands laced;
And in the marble stone was written this,
With golden letters goodly well enchaced;
*Blessed the man that well can use his blis:
Whose ever be the shield, faire Amoret be his.*

IX

'Which when I red, my heart did inly carue,
And pant with hope of that adventures hap:
Ne stayed further newes thereof to learne,
But with my speare upon the shield did rap,
That all the castle ringed with the clap.
Streight forth issewd a Knight all arm'd to
proofe,
And bravely mounted to his most mishap.
Who, staying nought to question from aloofe,
Ran fierce at me that fire glaunst from his
horses hoofe.

X

'Whom boldly I encountred (as I could)
And by good fortune shortly him unseattl.
Eftsoones outsprung two more of equall mould;
But I them both with equall hap defeated.
So all the twenty I likewise entreated,
And left them groning there upon the plaine:
Then, preacing to the pillour, I repeated
The read thereof for guerdon of my paine,
And taking downe the shield with me did it
retaine.

XI

'So forth without impediment I past,
Till to the Bridges utter gate I came;
The which I found sure lockt and chained fast.
I knockt, but no man ansuwerd me by name;
I cald, but no man ansuwerd to my clame:
Yet I persever'd still to knocke and call,
Till at the last I spide within the same
Where one stood peeping through a crevis small,
To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry therewithall.

XII

'That was to weete the Porter of the place,
Unto whose trust the charge thereof was lent:
His name was Doubt, that had a double face,
Th' one forward looking, th' other backward
Therein resembling Janus auncient [bent,
Which hath in charge the ingate of the yeare:
And evermore his eyes about him went,
As if some proved perill he did feare,
Or did misdoubt some ill whose cause did not
appeare.

XIII

'On th' one side he, on th' other sate Delay,
Behinde the gate that none her might espy;
Whose manner was all passengers to stay
And entertaine with her occasions sly:
Through which some lost great hope unheedily,
Which never thev recover might againe;
And others, quite excludel forth, did ly,
Long languishing there in unpittied paine,
And seeking often entraunce afterwards in
vaine.

XIV

'Me when as he had privily espide
Bearing the shield which I had conquerd late,
He kend it streight, and to me opened wide.
So in I past, and streight he closed the gate:
But being in delay in close awaite [stay,
Caught hold on me, and thought my steps to
Feigning full many a fond excuse to prate,
And time to steale the treasure of mans day,
Whose smallest minute lost no riches render
may.

XV

'But by no meanes my way I would forslow
For ought that ever she could doe or say;
But from my lofty steepe dismounting low
Past forth on foote, beholding all the way
The goodly workes, and stones of rich assay,
Cast into sundry shapes by wondrous skill,
That like on earth no where I reckon may:
And underneath, the river rolling still
With murmur soft, that seem'd to serve the
workmans will.

XVI

'Thence forth I passed to the second gate,
The Gate of Good Desert, whose goodly pride
And costly frame were long here to relate.
The same to all stode alwaies open wide;
But in the Porch did evermore abide
An hideous Giant, dreadfull to behold,
That stopt the entrance with his spacious
stride,
And with the terrour of his countenance bold
Full many did affray, that else faine enter
would.

XVII

'His name was Daunger, dreaded over-all,
Who day and night did watch and duely ward
From fearfull cowards entrance to forstall
And faint-heart-fooles, whom shew of perill
hard
Could terrifie from Fortunes faire adward:
For oftentimes faint hearts, at first capiall
Of his grim face, were from approaching seard;
Unworthy they of grace, whom one deniall
Excludes from fairest hope withouten further
triall.

XVIII

'Yet many doughty warriours, often tride
In greater perils to be stout and bold,
Durst not the sternnesse of his looke abide;
But, soone as they his countenance did behold,
Began to faint, and feeble their courage cold.
Againe, some other, that in hard assaies
Were cowards knowne, and little count did hold,
Either through gifts, or guile, or such like waies.
Crept in by stouping low, or stealing of the
kaies.

XIX

'But I, though meanest man of many moe,
Yet much disdainung unto him to lout,
Or creepe betweene his legs, so in to goe,
Resolv'd him to assault with manhood stout,
And either beat him in, or drive him out.
Eftsoones, advauncing that enchanted shield,
With all my might I gan to lay about:
Which when he saw, the glaive which he did
wield
He gan forthwith t'avale, and way unto me
yield.

XX

'So, as I entred, I did backward looke,
For feare of harme that might lie hidden there;
And loe! his hindparts, whereof heed I tooke,
Much more deformed fearefull, ugly were,
Then all his former parts did earse appere:
For hatred, murther, treason, and despight,
With many moe lay in ambushment there,
Awaiting to entrap the warelesse wight.
Which did not them prevent with vigilant
foresight.

XXI

'Thus having past all perill, I was come
Within the compasse of that Islands space;
The which did seeme, unto my simple doome,
The onely pleasant and delightfull place
That ever troden was of footings trace:
For all that nature by her mother-wit,
Could frame in earth, and forme of substance
base,
Was there; and all that nature did omit,
Art, playing second natures part, supplied it.

XXII

'No tree, that is of count, in greenewood
From lowest Juniper to Cedar tall, [growes,
No flowre in field, that daintie odour throws,
And deckes his branch with blossomes overall,
But there was planted, or grew naturall:
Nor sense of man so coy and curious nice,
But there mote find to please it selfe withall;
Nor hart could wish for any quaint device,
But there it present was, and did fraile sense
entice.

XXIII

'In such luxurious plentie of all pleasure,
It seem'd a second paradise to ghesse.
So lavishly enrich with Natures threasure,
That if the happie soules, which doe possesse
Th' Elysian fields and live in lasting blesse,
Should happen this with living eye to see,
They soone would loath their lesser happinesse,
And wish to life return'd againe to bee,
That in this joyous place they mote have joy-
ance free.

XXIV

'Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny ray;
Fairst lawnds, to take the sunne in season dew;
Sweet springs, in which a thousand Nymphs
did play;
Soft rombling brookes, that gentle slomber drew;
High reared mounts, the lands about to vew;
Low looking dales, disloignd from common
gaze;
Delightfull bowres, to solace lovers trew;
False Labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze;
All which by nature made did nature selfe a-
maze.

XXV

'And all without were walkes and alleyes
dight
With divers trees enrang'd in even rankes;
And here and there were pleasant arbors pight,
And shadie seates, and sundry flowring bankes,
To sit and rest the walkers wearie shankes:
And therein thousand payres of lovers walt,
Praying their god, and yeelding him great
thankes,
Ne ever ought but of their true loves talkt,
Ne ever for rebuke or blame of any balkt.

XXVI

'All these together by themselves did sport
Their spotlesse pleasures and sweet loves con-
tent.
But, farre away from these, another sort
Of lovers lincked in true harts consent,
Which loved not as these for like intent,
But on chaste vertue grounded their desire,
Farre from all fraud or fayned blandishment;
Which, in their spirits kindling zealous fire,
Brave thoughts and noble deedes did evermore
aspire.

XXVII

'Such were great Hercules and Hyllus deare
Trew Jonathan and David trustie tryde
Stout Theseus and Pirithous his feare
Pylades and Orestes by his syde;

Myid Titus and Gesippus without pryde;
Damon and Pythias, whom death could not sever;

All these, and all that ever had bene tyde
In bands of friendship, there did live for ever;
Whose lives although decay'd, yet loves decayed never.

XXVIII

'Which when as I, that never tasted blis
Nor happie howre, beheld with gazefull eye,
I thought there was none other heaven then this;

And gan their endlesse happinesse envye,
That being free from feare and gealosye
Might frankly theretheir loves desire possesse;
Whilist I, through paines and perious jeopadie,
Was first to seeke my lifes deare patronnesse:
Much dearer be the things which come through
hard distresse.

XXIX

'Yet all those sights, and all that else I saw,
Might not my steps withhold, but that forthright

Unto that purpos'd place I did me draw,
Where as my love was lodged day and night,
The temple of great Venus, that is hight
The Queene of beautie, and of love the mother,
There worshipped of every living wight;
Whose goodly workmanship farre past all other
That ever were on earth, all were they set together.

XXX

'Not that came famous Temple of Diane,
Whose hight all Ephesus did oversee,
And which all Asia sought with vowes prophane,

One of the worlds seven wonders sayd to bee,
Might match with this by many a degree:
Nor that which that wise King of Iurie framed
With endlesse cost to be th' Almighties see;
Nor all, that elsethrough all the world is named
To all the heathen Gods, might like to this beclamed.

XXXI

'I, much admyring that so goodly frame,
Unto the porch approach which open stood;
But therein sate an amiable Dame,
That seem'd to be of very sober mood,
And in her semblant shew'd great womanhood:
Strangewas her tyre; for on her head a crowne
She wore, much like unto a Danisk hood,
Poured with pearle and stone; and all her gowne
adowne.
Enwoven was with gold, that raught full low

XXXII

On either side of her two young men stood,
Both strongly arm'd, as fearing one another;
Yet were they brethren both of halfe the blood,
Begotten by two fathers of one mother,
Though of contrarie natures each to other:
The one of them hight Love, the other Hate.
Hate was the elder, Love the younger brother;
Yet was the younger stronger in his state
Then th' elder, and him maystred still in all debate.

XXXIII

'Nathlesse that Dame so well them tempred both,
That she them forced hand to joyne in hand,
Albe that ~~Entered~~ was thereto full loth,
And turn'd his face away, as he did stand,
Unwilling to behold that lovely hand.
Yet she was of such grace and vertuous might,
That her commaundment he could not with-
But bit his lip for felonous despight, [stand,
And gnash't his yron tuskes at that displeasing sight.

XXXIV

'Concord she cleeped was in common reed,
Mother of blessed Peace and Friendship trew;
They both her twins, both borne of heavenly seed,
And she her self likewise divinely grew;
The which right well her workes divine did shew: [frends,
For strength and wealth and happinesse she
And strife and warre and anger does subdew:
Of litle much, of foes she maketh friends,
And to afflicted minds sweet rest and quiet sends.

XXXV

'By her the heaven is in his course contained,
And all the world in state unmoved stands,
As their Almightie maker first ordained,
And bound them with inviolable bands;
Else would the waters overflow the lands,
And fire devoure the ayre, and hell them quight,
But that she holds them with her blessed hands.
She is the nourse of pleasure and delight,
And unto Venus grace the gate doth open right.

XXXVI

'By her I entring half dismayed was;
But she in gentle wise me entertayned,
And twixt her selfe and Love did let me pas;
But Hatred would my entrance have re-
strayned, [brayned,
And with his club me threatned to have
Had not the Ladie with her powerfull speech
Him from his wicked will uneth refrayned;

And th' other eke his malice did empeach,
Till I was thoroughly past the perill of his
reach.

XXXVII

' Into the inmost Temple thus I came,
Which fuming all with frankensence I found
And odours rising from the altars flame.
Upon an hundred marble pillars round
The rooffe up high was reared from the ground,
All deckt with crownes, and chaynes, and gir-
lands gay, [pound,
And thousand pretious gifts worth many a
The which sad lovers for their vowes did pay;
And all the ground was strow'd with flowres
as fresh as May.

XXXVIII

' An hundred Altars round about were set.
All flaming with their sacrifices fire,
That with the steme thereof the Temple swet,
Which rould in clouds to heaven did aspire,
And in them bore true lovers vowes entire:
And eke an hundred brasen caudrons bright,
To bath in joy and amorous desire,
Every of which was to a damzell hight;
For all the Priests were damzels in soft linnen
dight.

XXXIX

' Right in the midst the Goddess selfe did
stand
Upon an altar of some costly masse,
Whose substance was unceath to understand:
For neither pretious stone, nor durezza brasse.
Nor shining gold, nor mouldring clay it was;
But much more rare and pretious to esteeme,
Pure in aspect, and like to christall glasse,
Yet glasse was not, if one did rightly deeme;
But, being faire and brickle, likest glasse did
seeme.

XL

' But it in shape and beautie did excell
All other Idoles which the heathen adore.
Farre passing that, which by surpassing skill
Phidias did make in Paphos Isle of yore,
With which that wretched Greeke, that life
forlore,
Did fall in love: yet this much fairer shined,
But covered with a slender veile afore;
And both her feete and legs together twyned
Were with a snake, whose head and tail were
fast combyned.

XLI

' The cause why she was covered with a veile
Was hard to know, for that her Priests the
same
From peoples knowledge labour'd to conceale:
But sooth it was not sure for womanish shame.

Nor any blemish which the worke mote blame;
But for, they say, she hath both kinds in one,
Both male and female, both under one name:
She syre and mother is her selfe alone, [none,
Begets and eke conceives, ne needeth other

XLII

' And all about her necke and shoulders flew
A flocke of litle loves, and sports, and joyes,
With nimble wings of gold and purple hew;
Whose shapes seem'd not like to terrestrial
boyes,
But like to Angels playing heavenly toyes,
The whilest their eldest brother was away,
Cupid their eldest brother; he enjoys
The wide kingdome of love with lordly sway,
And to his law compels all creatures to obey.

XLIII

' And all about her altar scattered lay
Great sorts of lovers piteously complainyng,
Some of their losse, some of their loves delay,
Some of their pride, some paragons disdainyng,
Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently faynyng,
As every one had cause of good or ill.
Amongst the rest some one, through Loves
constraynyng
Tormented sore, could not containe it still,
But thus brake forth, that all the temple it did
fill

XLIV

' "Great Venus! Queene of beautie and of grace,
The joy of Gods and men, that under skie
Doeest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy place;
That with thy smylng looke doeest pacifie
The raging seas, and makst the stormes to fle;
Thee, goddess, thee the winds, the clouds doe
fear,
And, when thou spredst thy mantle forth on hie,
The waters play, and pleasant lands appeare,
And heavens laugh, and al the world shews
joyous cheare.

XLV

' "Then doth the dædale earth throw forth to thee
Out of her fruitfull lap abundant flowres;
And then all living wights, soone as they see
The spring breake forth out of his lusty bowres,
They all doe learne to play the Paramours;
First doe the merry birds, thy pretty pages,
Privily pricked with thy lustfull powres,
Chirpe loud to thee out of their leavy cages,
And thee their mother call to coole their
kindly rages.

XLVI

' "Then doe the salvage beasts begin to play
Their pleasant friskes, and loath their wonted
food:

The Lyons rore; the Tygres loudly bray;
 The raging Bulls rebellow through the wood,
 And breaking forth dare tempt the deepest
 flood [desire].
 To come where thou doest draw them with
 So all things else, that nourish vitall blood,
 Soone as with fury thou doest them inspire,
 In generation seeke to quench their inward fire.

XLVII

"So all the world by thee at first was made,
 And dayly yet thou doest the same repayre;
 Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad,
 Ne ought on earth that lovely is and fayre,
 But thou the same for pleasure didst pre-
 payre:
 Thou art the rook of all that joyous is:
 Great God of men and women, queene of 'th'
 ayre,
 Mother of laughter, and welspring of blisse,
 O graunt that of my love at last I may not
 misse!"

XLVIII

"So did he say: but I with murmure soft,
 That none might heare the sorrow of my hart,
 Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft,
 Besought her to graunt ease unto my smart,
 And to my wound her gracious help impart.
 Whilest thus I spake, behold! with happy eye
 I spyde where at the Idoles feet apart
 A bevie of fayre damzels close did lye,
 Wayting when as the Anthemie should be sung
 on hye.

XLIX

"The first of them did seeme of ryper yeares
 And graver countenance then all the rest;
 Yet all the rest were eke her equall peares,
 Yet unto her obeyed all the best.
 Her name was Womanhood; that she ex-
 prest
 By her sad semblant and demeanure wyse:
 For stedfast still her eyes did fixed rest,
 Ne rov'd at randon, after gazers guyse,
 Whose luring baytes oftymes doe heedlesse harts
 entyse.

L

"And next to her sate goodly Shamefastnesse,
 Ne ever durst her eyes from ground upreare,
 Ne ever once did looke up from her desse,
 As if some blame of evill she did feare,
 That in her cheekes made roses oft appeare:
 And her against sweet Cherefulness was placed,
 Whose eyes, like twinkling stars in evening
 cleare, [chaced]
 Were deckt with smyles that all sad humors
 And darted forth delights the which her good-
 ly graced.

LI

"And next to her sate sober Modestie,
 Holding her hand upon her gentle hart;
 And her against sate comely Curtesie,
 That unto every person knew her part;
 And her before was seatall overthwart
 Soft Silence, and submisse Obedience,
 Both linckt together never to dispart;
 Both gifts of God, not gotten but from thence,
 Both girlonds of his Saints against their foes
 offence.

LII

"Thus sate they all around in seemely rate:
 And in the midst of them a goodly mayd
 Even in the lap of Womanhood there sate,
 The which was all in lilly white arayd,
 With silver streames amongst the linnen
 stray'd;
 Like to the Morne, when first her shyning face
 Hath to the gloomy world itselfe bewray'd:
 That same was fayrest Amoret in place,
 Shyning with beauties light and heavenly
 vertues grace.

LIII

"Whom soone as I beheld, my hart gan throb
 And wade in doubt what best were to be
 donne;
 For sacrilege me seem'd the Church to rob,
 And folly seem'd to leave the thing undonene
 Which with so strong attempt I had begonne.
 Tho, shaking off all doubt and shamefast feare
 Which Ladies love, I heard, had never wonne
 Mongs't men of worth, I to her stepped neare,
 And by the lilly hand her labour'd up to
 reare.

LIV

"Thereat that formost matrone me did
 blame,
 And sharpe rebuke for being over bold;
 Saying, it was to Knight unseemly shame
 Upon a recluse Virgin to lay hold,
 That unto Venus services was sold.
 To whom I thus: "Nay, but it fitteth best
 For Cupids man with Venus mayd to hold,
 For ill your goddesse services are drest
 By virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest."

LV

"With that my shield I forth to her did
 show,
 Which all that while I closely had conceald;
 On which when Cupid, with his killing bow
 And cruell shafts, emblazond she beheld,
 At sight thereof she was with terror quelld,
 And said no more: but I, which all that
 while
 The pledge of faith, her hand, engaged held,

Like warie Hynd within the weedie soyle,
For no intreatie would forgoe so glorious
spoyle.

LVI

'And evermore upon the Goddesse face
Mine eye was fixt, for feare of her offence;
Whom when I saw with amiable grace
To laugh at me, and favour my pretence,
I was emboldned with more confidence;
And nought for nicenesse nor for envy
sparing,

In presence of them all forth led her thence
All looking on, and like astonisht staring,
Yet to lay hand on her not one of all them
daring.

LVII

'She often prayd, and often me besought,
Sometime with tender teares to let her goe,

Sometime with witching smyles; but yet, for
nought

That ever she to me could say or doe,
Could she her wished freedome fro me wooe:
But forth I led her through the Temple gate,
By which I hardly past with much adoe:
But that same Ladie, which me friended late
In entrance, did me also friend in my retrate.

LVIII

'No lesse did Daunger threaten me with dread,
Whenas he saw me, maugre all his powre,
That glorious spoyle of beautie with me lead,
Then Cerberus, when Orpheus did recoure
His Lemman from the Stygian Princes boure:
But evermore my shield did me defend
Against the storme of every dreadfull stoure:
Thus safely with my love I thence did wend.'
So ended he his tale, where I this Canto end.

CANTO XI.

Marinells former wound is heald,
He comes to Proteus hall,
Where Thames doth the Medway wedd,
And feasts the Sea-gods all.

I

But ah for pittie! that I have thus long
Left a fayre Ladie languishing in payne:
Now well-away! that I have doth such
wrong,

To let faire Florimell in bands remayne,
In bands of love, and in sad thralldomes
chayne; [free

From which, unlesse some heavenly powre her
By miracle, not yet appearing playne,
She lenger yet is like captiv'd to bee; •
That even to thinke thereof it inly pitties mee.

II

Here needs you to remember, how erwhile
Unlovely Proteus, missing to his mind
That Virgins love to win by wit or wile,
Her threw into a dongeon deepe and blind,
And there in chaynes her cruelly did bind,
In hope thereby her to his bent to draw:
For, when as neither gifts nor graces kind
Her constant mind could move at all he saw,
He thought her to compell by crueltie and
awe.

III

Deepe in the bottome of an huge great rocke
The dongeon was, in which her bound he left,
That neither yron barres, nor brasen locke,
Did neede to gard from force, or secret theft

Of all her lovers which would her have ref:
For wall'd it was with waves, which rag'd and
ror'd
As they the cliffe in peeces would have cleft;
Besides ten thousand monsters foule abhor'd
Did waite about it, gaping grisly, all begor'd.

IV

And in the midst thereof did horror dwell,
And darkenesse dredd that never viewed day,
Like to the balefull house of lowest hell,
In which old Styx her aged bones alway,
Old Styx the Grandame of the Gods, doth lay.
There did this lucklesse mayd seven months
Ne ever evening saw, ne mornings ray, [abide,
Ne ever from the day the night descride,
But thought it all one night that did no houres
dyide.

V

And all this was for love of Marinell,
Who her despyd (ah! who would her despyse?)
And womens love did from his hart expell,
And all those joyes that weake mankind entyse.
Nathlesse his pride full dearely he did pryse;
For of a womans hand it was ywroke,
That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,
Ne can be cured of that cruell stroke
Which Britomart him gave, when he did her
provoke.

VI

Yet farre and neare the Nymph his mother
sought,
And many salves did to his sore applie,
And many herbes did use. But when as
nought,
She saw, could ease his rankling maladic,
At last to Tryphon she for helpe did hie,
(This Tryphon is the seagods surgeon hight,) Whom she besought to find some remedie,
And for his paines a whistle him belught,
That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare
delight.

VII

So well that Leach did hearke to her request.
And did so wellemplay his carefull paine,
That in short space his hurts he had redrest,
And him restor'd to healthfull state againe:
In which he long time after did remaine
There with the Nymph his mother, like her
thrall:
Who sore against his will did him retaine,
For feare of perill which to him mote fall
Through his too ventrous prowesse proved over
all.

VIII

It fortun'd then, a solemne feast was there
To all the Sea-gods and their fruitfull seede,
In honour of the spousalls which then were
Betwixt the Medway and the Thames agreed.
Long had the Thames (as we in records read)
Before that day her wooed to his bed,
But the proud Nymph would for no worldly
meed,
Nor no entreatie, to his love be led;
Till now, at last relenting, she to him was wed.

IX

So both agreed that this their bridale feast
Should for the Gods in Proteus house be made:
To which they all repayr'd, both most and
least,
As well which in the mightie Ocean trade,
As that in rivers swim, or brookes doe wade;
All which, not if an hundred tongues to tell,
And hundred mouthes, and voice of brasse I
had,
And endlesse memorie that mote excell,
In order as they came could I recount them
well.

X

Helpe, therefore, O! thou sacred imp of Jove
The nursling of Dame Memorie his deare,
To whom those rolles, layd up in heaven above,
And records of antiquitie appeare,

To which no wit of man may comen neare;
Helpe me to tell the names of all those floods
And all those Nymphes, which then assembled
were
To that great banquet of the watry Gods,
And all their sundry kinds, and all their hid
abodes.

XI

First came great Neptune, with his threefork
mace,
That rules the Seas and makes them rise or fall;
His dewy lockes did drop with brine apace
Under his Diademe imperiall:
And by his side his Queene with coronall,
Faيرة Amphitrite, most divinely faيرة,
Whose yvorie shoulders weren covered all,
As with a robe, with her owne silver haire,
And deckt with pearles which th' Indian seas
for her prepaire.

XII

These marched farre afore the other crew:
And all the way before them, as they went,
Triton his trompet shrill before them blew,
For goodly triumph and great jollyment,
That made the rockes to roare as they were
rent.
And after them the royall issue came,
Which of them sprung by lineall descent:
First the Sea-gods, which to themselves doe
clame [to tame].
The powre to rule the billowes, and the waves

XIII

Phoreys, the father of that fatall brood,
By whom those old Heroes wonne such fame;
And Glaucus, that wisesouthsayer understood;
And tragicke Inoes sonne, the which became
A God of seas through his mad mothers blame,
Now hight Mæmon, and is saylers friend;
Great Brontes; and Astræus, that did shame
Himselfe with incest of his kin unkend;
And huge Orion, that doth tempests still port-
end;

XIV

The rich Creatus; and Eurytus long;
Neleus and Pelias, lovely brethren both;
Mightie Chrysæor; and Calvus strong;
Eurypulus, that calmes the waters wroth;
And faيرة Euphæmus, that upon them goth
As on the ground, without dismay or dread;
Fierce Eryx: and Alebius, that know'th
The waters depth, and doth their bottome tread;
And sad Asopus, comely with his hoarie head,

XV

There also some most famous founders were
Of puissant Nations which the world possess,

Yet sonnes of Neptune, now assembled here :
Ancient Ogyges, even th' auncestest ;
And Inachus renownd above the rest ;
Phoenix, and Aon, and Pelasgus old ;
Great Belus, Phœax, and Agenor best ;
And mightie Albion, father of the bold
And warlike people which the Britaine Islands
hold :

XVI

For Albion the sonne of Neptune was,
Who, for the prooffe of his great puissance,
Out of his Albion did on dry-foot pas
Into old Gall, that now is cleeped France,
To fight with Hercules, that did advance
To vanquish all the world with matchlesse
might ;
And there his mortall part by great mischance
Was slaine : but that which is th' immortall
spright [was dight.
Lives still, and to this feast with Neptunes seed

XVII

But what doe I their names seeke to reherse,
Which all the world have with their issue filld ?
How can they all in this so narrow verse
Contayned be, and in small compasse hild ?
Let them record them that are better skilld,
And know the monuments of passed age :
Onely what needeth shall be here fulfilld,
T' expresse some part of that great equipage
Which from great Neptune do derive their
parentage.

XVIII

Next came the aged Ocean and his Dame
Old Tethys, th' oldest two of all the rest ;
For all the rest of those two parents came,
Which afterward both sea and land possesst ;
Of all which Nereus, th' eldest and the best,
Did first proceed, then which none more up-
right,
Ne more sincere in word and deed profess
Most voide of guile, most free from fowle de-
spight, [right.
Doing him selfe, and teaching others to doe

XIX

Thereto he was expert in prophesies,
And could the leddon of the gods unfold ;
Through which, when Paris brought his fa-
rouis prise,
The faire Tindarid lasse, he him fortold
That her all Greece with many a champion
bold
Should fetch againe, and finally destroy
Proud Priams rowne. So wise is Nereus old,
And so well skilld ; nathlesse he takes great joy
Of times amongst the wanton Nymphs to
sport and ioy.

XX

And after him the famous rivers came,
Which doe the earth enrich and beautifie :
The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth
frame ; [skie ;
Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from the
Faïre Ister, flowing from the mountaines hie
Divine Scamander, purpled yet with blood
Of Greeks and Trojans which therein did die ;
Pactolus glistring with his golden flood ;
And Tygris fierce, whose streames of none may
be withstood ;

XXI

Great Ganges, and immortall Euphrates.
Deepe Indus, and Maeander intricate,
Slow Peneus, and tempestuous Phasides,
Swift Athene, and Alpheus still immaculate
Ooraxes, feared for great Cyrus fate,
Tybris, renowned for the Romaines fame,
Rich Oranochy, though but knowen late ;
And that huge River, which doth beare his
name [same.
Of warlike Amazons, who doe possesse the

XXII

Joy on those warlike women, which so long
Can from all men so rich a kingdome hold !
And shame on you, O men ! which boast your
strong [bold,
And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard and
Yet quail in conquest of that land of gold.
But this to you, O Britons ! most pertaines,
To whom the right hereof it selfe hath sold,
The which, for sparing litle cost or paines,
Loose so immortall glory, and so endlesse
gaines.

XXIII

Then was there heard a most celestiaall sound
Of dainty musicke, which did next ensue
Before the spouse : that was Arion crownd ;
Who, playing on his harpe, unto him drew
The eares and hearts of all that goodly crew.
That even yet the Dolphin, which him bore
Through the Agæan seas from Pirates vew,
Stood still by him astonisht at his lore,
And all the raging seas for joy forgot to rore.

XXIV

So went he playing on the watery plaine ;
Soone after whom the lovely Bridgemoose
came,
The noble Thamïs, with all his goodly traine ;
But him before there went, as best became,
His ancient parents, namely th' auncest
Thame.
But much more aged was his wife then he,
The Ouze, whom men doe Isis rightly name ;

Full weake and crooked creature seemed shee,
And almost blind through eld, that scarce her way
could see.

XXV

Therefore on either side she was sustained
Of two smal grooms, which by their names
were hight [which pained
The Churne and Charwell, two small streames,
Them selves her footing to direct aright,
Which fayled oft through faint and feeble
phight •

But Thame was stronger, and of better stay;
Yet seem'd full aged by his outward sight,
With head all hoary, and his beard all gray,
Deawed with silver drops that trickled downe
always. •

XXVI

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe afore
With bowed backe, by reason of the lode
And auncient heavy burden which he bore
Of that faire City, wherein make abode
So many learned impes, that shoote abroad,
And with their braunches spred all Britany,
No lesse then do her elder sisters broode.
Joy to you both, ye double noursery
Of Arts! but, Oxford, thine doth Thame most
glorify.

XXVII

But he their sonne full fresh and jolly was,
All decked in a robe of watchet hew, [glas,
On which the waves, glittering like Christall
So cunningly enwoven were, that few
Could weenen whether they were false or trew:
And on his head like to a Coronet
He wore, that seemed strange to common vew,
In which were many towres and castels set,
That it encompass round as with a golden fret.

XXVIII

Like as the mother of the Gods, they say,
In her great iron charet wons to ride,
When to Joves pallace she doth take her way,
Old Cybele, arayd with pompous pride,
Wearing a Diademe embattild wide
With hundred turrets, like a Turribant;
With such an one was Thamis beautifide;
That was to weet the famous Troynovant,
In which her kingdomes throne is chiefly re-
siant.

XXIX

And round about him many a pretty Page
Attended duely, ready to obey;
All little Rivers which owe vassallage
To him, as to their Lord, and tribute pay:
The chaulky Kenet, and the Thetis gray,
The morish Cole, and the soft sliding Breane,
The wanton Lee, that oft doth loose his way;

And the still Darent, in whose waters cleane
Ten thousand fishes play and decke his plea-
sant streame.

XXX

Then came his neighbour fouds which nigh
him dwell,
And water all the English soile throughoht:
They all on him this day attended well,
And with meet service waited him about,
Ne none disdained low to him to lout:
No, not the stately Severne grudg'd at all,
Ne storming Humber, though he looked stout;
But both him honor'd as their principall,
And let their swelling waters low before him
fall. •

XXXI

There was the speedy Tamar, which devides
The Cornish and the Devonish confines;
Through both whose borders swiftly downe it
glides, [clines:
And, meeting Plim, to Plimmouth thence de-
And Dart, nigh chockt with sands of tinny
minæ.
But Avon marched in more stately path.
Proud of his Adamants with which he shines
And glisters wide, as als' of wondrous Bath,
And Bristow faire, which on his waves he
buildd hath.

XXXII

And there came Stoure with terrible aspect,
Bearing his sixe deformed heads on hye,
That doth his course through Blandford plains
direct,
And washeth Winborne meades in season drye.
Next him went Wylbourne with passage slye,
That of his wylnesse his name doth take,
And of him selfe doth name the shire thereby:
And Mole, that like a nousing Mole doth make
His way still under ground, till Thamis he
overtake.

XXXIII

Then came the Rother, decked all with woods
Like a wood God, and flowing fast to Rhy;
And Sture, that parteth with his pleasant
floods
The Easterne Saxons from the Southerne ny,
And Clare and Harwitch both doth beautify:
Him follow'd Yar, soft washing Norwitch wall,
And with him brought a present joyfully
Of his owne fish unto their festiual,
Whose like none else could shew, the which
they Ruffins call.

XXXIV

Next these the plenteous Ouse came far from
land,
By many a city and by many a towne

And many rivers taking under-hand
 Into his waters as he passeth downe,
 The Cle, the Were, the Grant, the Sture, the
 Rowne. [flit,
 Thence doth by Huntingdon and Cambridge
 My mother Cambridge, whom as with a
 Crowne
 He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it [wit.
 With many a gentle Muse and many a learned

XXXV

And after him the fatall Welland went,
 That, if old sawes prove true (which God for-
 bid!)

Shall drowne all Holland with his excrement,
 And shall see Stamford, though now homely hid,
 Thon shine in learning, more then ever did
 Cambridge or Oxford, Englands goodly beames.
 And next to him the Nene downe softly slid;
 And bounteous Trent, that in him selfe en-
 seames [streames,
 Both thirty sorts of fish, and thirty sundry

XXXVI

Next these came Tyne, along whose stony
 bancke
 That Romaine Monarch built a brasen wall,
 Which mote the feebled Britons strongly
 flancke
 Against the Picts that swarmed over-all,
 Which yet thereof Gualsever they doe call:
 And Twede, the limit betwixt Logris land
 And Albany: And Eden, though but small,
 Yet often staine with bloud of many a band
 Of Scots and English both, that tynd on his
 strand.

XXXVII

Then came those sixe sad brethren, like for-
 lorne,
 That whilome were (as antique fathers tell)
 Sixe valiant Knights of one faire Nympe
 yborne,
 Which did in noble deedes of armes excell,
 And wanned there where now Yorke people
 dwell; [might,
 Still Ure, swift Werfe, and Oze the most of
 High Swale, unquiet Nide, and troublous Skell;
 All whom a Scythian king, that Humber hight,
 Slew cruelly, and in the river drowned quight.

XXXVIII

But past not long ere Brutus warlicke sonne,
 Locrinus, them aveng'd, and the same date,
 Which the proud Humber unto them had donne,
 By equall dome repayd on his owne pate:
 For in the selfe same river, where he late
 Had drenched them, he drowned him againe,
 And nam'd the river of his wretched fate

Whose bad condition yet it doth retaine,
 Oft tossed with his stormes which therein still
 remaine.

XXXIX

These after came the stony shallow Lone,
 That to old Lancaster his name doth lend;
 And following Dee, which Britons long ygone
 Did call divine, that doth by Chester tend;
 And Conway, which out of his streame doth send
 Plenty of pearles to decke his dames withall;
 And Lindus that his pikes doth most commend,
 Of which the aunccient Lincolne men doe call:
 All these together marched toward Proteus
 hall.

XL

Ne thence the Irishe Rivers abwent were,
 Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee,
 And joyne in neighbourhood of kingdome nere,
 Why should they not likewise in love agree,
 And joy likewise this solemne day to see?
 They saw it all, and present were in place;
 Though I them all according their degree
 Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race,
 Nor read the salvage cuntries thorough which
 they pace.

XLI

There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea,
 The sandy Slane, the stony Aubrian,
 The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea,
 The pleasant Boyne, the fishy fruitfull Ban,
 Swift Awniduff, which of the English man
 Is call'd Blacke-water, and the Liffar deep,
 Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran,
 Strong Allo tombing from Slewlogher steep,
 And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught
 to weep.

XLII

And there the three renowned brethren were,
 Which that great Gyant Blomius begot
 Of the faire Nymph Rheusa wandring there.
 One day, as she to shunne the season whot
 Under Slewboome in shady grove was got,
 This Gyant found her and by force defowrd;
 Whereof conceiving, she in time forth brought
 These three faire sons, which being thenceforth
 powrd [scowrd,
 In three great rivers ran, and many cuntries

XLIII

The first the gentle Shure that, making way
 By sweet Clonmell, adorne rich Waterford;
 The next, the stubborne Newre whose waters
 gray
 By faire Kilkenny and Rossepointe boord;
 The third, the goodly Barow which doth boord
 Great heapes of salmon in his deepe bosome;
 All which, long sundred, doe at last accord

To joyne in one, ere to the sea they come;
So, flowing all from one, all one at last become.

XLIV

There also was the wide embayed Mayre;
The pleasaunt Bandon crownd with many a wood;

The spreading Lee that, like an Island fayre,
Enclouseth Corke with his devided flood;
And balefull Ourc, late staind with English blood, [tell:

With many thore whose names no tongue can
All which that day in order seemly good
Did on the Thamis attend, and waited well
To doe their ducful service, as to them befell.

XLV

Then came the Bride, the lovely Medua came,
Clad in a vesture of unknowen geare
And uncouth fashion, yet her well became,
That seem'd like silver, sprinkled here and there [appeare:

With glittering spangs that did like starres
And wad'd upon, like water Chamelot,
To hide the metall, which yet every where
Bewrayd it selfe, to let men plainly wat
It was no mortall thing, that seem'd and yet
was not.

XLVI

Her goodly lockes adowne her backe did flow
Unto her waste, with flowres bescattered,
The which ambrosiall odours forth did throw
To all about, and all her shoulders spred
As a new spring; and likewise on her hed
A Chapelet of sundry flowers she wore,
From under which the deawy humour shed
Did tricle downe her haire, like to the hore
Congealed litle drops which doe the morne
adore.

XLVII

On her two pretty handmaides did attend,
One calld the Theise, the other calld the Crane,
Which on her waited things amisse to mend,
And both behind upheld her spredding traine;
Under the which her feet appeared plaine,
Her silver feet, faire washt against this day:
And her before there paced Pages twaine,
Both clad in colours like, and like array,
The Doune and eke the Frith, both which pre-
pard her way.

XLVIII

And after these the Sea Nymphs marched all,
All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene
Whom of their sire Nereides men call, [haire,
All which the Oceans daughter to him bare,

The gray-cyde Doris; all which fifty are,
All which she there on her attending had:
Swift Proto, milde Eucrate, Thetis faire,
Soft Spio, sweete Endore, Sao sad,
Light Doto, wanton Glauce, and Galenè glad;

XLIX

White hand Eunice, proud Dynamenè,
Joyous Thalia, goodly Amphitrite,
Lovely Pasithee, kinde Eulmene,
Lightfoote Cymothoe, and sweete Melitè,
Fairest Pherusa, Phao lilly white,
Wondrous Agavè, Poms, and Nesaen,
With Erato that doth in love delite,
And Panopæ, and wise Protomedæa, [threa:
And snowy old Doris, and milkewhite Gala-

L

Speedy Hippothodè, and chaste Actea,
Large Lisianassa, and Pronæa sage,
Euagorè, and light Pontoporea,
And she that with her least word can asswage
The surging seas, when they do sorest rage,
Cymodoce, and stout Autonoe,
And Neso, and Eione well in age,
And, seeming still to smile, Glauconomè,
And she that hight of many heastes Polynomè;

LI

Fresh Alimeda deckt with girlond greene;
Hypoco with salt-bedewed wrests;
Laomèdia like the christall sheene;
Liangorè much prais'd for wise behests;
And Psamathe for her brode snowy breasts;
Cymo, Eupompè, and Themistè just:
And, she that vertue loves and vice detests,
Ecarna, and Menippè true in trust,
And Nemerteæ learned well to rule her lust.

LII

All these the daughters of old Nereus were,
Which have the sea in charge to them assinde,
To rule his tides, and surges to upreare,
To bring forth stormes, or fast them to upbide,
And sailers save from wreckes of wrathfull winde. [were
And yet, besides, three thousand more there
Of th' Oceans seede, but Joves and Phæbus kinde;
The which in floods and fountaines doe appere,
And all mankind do nourish with their waters clere.

LIII

The which, more eath it were for mortall wight
To tell the sands, or count the starres on hye,

Or ought more hard, then thinke to reckon
right.
But well I wote that these, which I descry,
Were present at this great solemnity:

And there, amongst the rest, the mother was
Of luckelesse Marinell, Cymodocè;
Which, for my Muse her selfe now tyred has,
Unto an other Canto I will overpas.

CANTO XII.

Marin for love of Florimell
In languor wastes his life:
The Nymph, his mother, getteth her
And gives to him for wife.

I

O! WHAT an endlesse worke have I in hand,
To count the seas abundant progeny,
Whose fruitfull seede farre passeth those in
land,
And also those which wonne in th' azure sky:
For much more eath to tell the starres on hy,
Albe they endlesse seeme in estimation,
Then to recount the Seas posterity:
So fertile be the fouds in generation,
So huge their numbers, and so numberlesse
their nation.

II

Therefore the antique wisards well invented
That Venus of the fomy sea was bred,
For that the seas by her are most augmented:
Witness th' exceeding fry which there are fed,
And wondrous sholes which may of none be red.
Then, blame me not if I have err'd in count
Of Gods, of Nymphs, of rivers, yet unred;
For though their numbers do much more sur-
mount, count.
Yet all those same were there which erst I did re-

III

All those were there, and many other more,
Whose names and nations were too long to tell,
That Proteus house they fild even to the dore;
Yet were they all in order, as befell,
According their degrees disposed well.
Amongst the rest was faire Cymodocè,
The mother of unlucky Marinell,
Who thither with her came, to learne and see
The manner of the Gods when they at banquet
be.

IV

But for he was halfe mortall, being bred
Of mortall sire, though of immortall wombe,
He might not with immortall food be fed,
Ne with th' eternall Gods to banquet come;
But waikt abroad, and round about did ronne
To view the building of that uncouth place,
That seem'd unlike unto his earthly home:
Where, as he to and fro by chance did trace,
There unto him betid a disaventurous case.

V

Under the hanging of an hideous cliffe
He heard the lamentable voice of one,
That piteously complaind her careful grieffe,
Which never she before disclosed to none,
But to her selfe her sorrow did bemone:
So feelingly her case she did complaine,
That ruth it moved in the rocky stone,
And made it seeme to feele her grievous paine,
And oft to grone with billowes beating from
the maine:

VI

'Though vaine, I see, my sorrowes to unfold,
And count my cares when none is nigh to
heare,
Yet, hoping griefe may lessen being told,
I will them toll though unto no man neare:
For heaven, that unto all lends equall care,
Is farre from hearing of my heavy plight;
And lowest hell, to which I lie most neare,
Cares not what evils hap to wretched wight;
And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life de-
light.

VII

'Yet loe! the seas, I see, by often beating
Doe pearce the rockes, and hardest marble
weares:
But his hard rocky hart for nō entreating
Will yield, but when my piteous plaints he
heares,
Is hardned more with my abundant teares:
Yet though he never list to me relent,
But let me waste in woe my wretched yeares,
Yet will I never of my love repent,
But joy that for his sake I suffer prisonment.

VIII

'And when my weary ghost, with griefe out-
worne,
By timely death shall winne her wished rest,
Let then this plaint unto his eares be borne,
That blame it is to him, that armes profest,
To let her die whom he might have redrest.'
There did she pause, enforced to give place
Unto the passion that her heart opprest;

And, after she had wept and wail'd a space,
She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched case.

IX

'Ye Gods of seas, if any Gods at all
Have care of right, or ruth of wretches wrong,
By one or other way me, woefull thrall,
Deliver hence out of this dungeon strong,
In which I daily dying am too long :
And if ye deeme me death for loving one
That loves not me, then doe it not prolong,
But let me die and end my daies attone,
And let him live unlov'd, or love him selfe
alone.

X

'But if that life ye unto me decree,
Then let mee live as lovers ought to do,
And of my lifes deare love beloved be :
And if he should through pride your doome
undo,
Do you by duresse him compell thereto,
And in this prison put him here with me ;
One prison fittest is to hold us two.
So had I rather to be thrall then free ;
Such thralldome or such freedome let it surely
be.

XI

'But O vaine judgement, and conditions vaine.
The which the prisoner points unto the free !
The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his
paine,
He where he list goes loose, and laughs at me.
So ever loose, so ever happy be !
But where so loose or happy that thou art,
Know, Marinell, that all this is for thee.
With that she wept and wail'd, as if her hart
Would quite have burst through great abundance
of her smart.

XII

All which complaint when Marinell had heard,
And understood the cause of all her care
To come of him for using her so hard,
His stubborne heart, that never felt misfare,
Was toucht with soft remorse and pitty rare ;
That even for griefe of minde he oft did grone,
And inly wish that in his powre it weare
Her to redresse : but since he meanes found
none,
He could no more but her great misery bemone.

XIII

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender ruth
Was toucht, and mighty courage mollified,
Dame Venus scenne, that tameth stubborne
youth
With iron bit, and maketh him abide

Till like a victor on his backe he ride,
Into his mouth his maystring bridle threw,
That made him stoupe, till he did him bestride :
Then gan he make him tread his steps anew,
And learne to love by learning lovers paines to
rew.

XIV

Now gan he in his grieved minde devise,
How from that dungeon he might her enlarge.
Some while he thought, by faire and humble
wise
To Proteus selfe to sue for her discharge :
But then he fear'd his mothers former charge
Gainst womens love, long given him in vaine :
Then gan he thinke, perforce with sword and
targe
Her forth to fetch, and Proteus to constraine ;
But soone he gan such fully to forthinke againe.

XV

Then did he cast to steale her thence away,
And with him beare where none of her might
know :
But all in vaine, for-why he found no way
To enter in, or issue forth below ;
For all about that rocke the sea did flow :
And though unto his will she given were,
Yet without ship or bote her thence to row,
He wist not how her thence away to bere,
And daunger well he wist long to continue
there.

XVI

At last, when as no meanes he could invent,
Backe to him selfe he gan returne the blame,
That was the author of her punishment ;
And with vile curses and reprochfull shame
To damne him selfe by every evil name,
And deeme unworthy or of love or life,
That had despised so chaste and faire a dame,
Which him had sought through trouble and
long strife, [to wife,
Yet had refused a God that her had sought

XVII

In this sad plight he walked here and there,
And romed round about the rocke in vaine,
As he had lost him selfe he wist not where ;
Oft listening if he mote her heare againe,
And still benoning her unworthy paine.
Like as an llynde, whose calfe is false unware,
Into some pit, where she him heares complaine,
An hundred times about the pit side fares
Right sorrowfully mourning her bereaved cares.

XVIII

And now by this the feast was throughly
ended,
And every one gan homeward to resort :

Which seeing, Marinell was sore offended
That his departure thence should be so short,
And leave his love in that sea-walled fort.
Yet durst he not his mother disobay,
But her attending in full seemly sort,
Did march amongst the many all the way,
And all the way did only mourne, like one
astray.

XIX

Being returned to his mothers bowre,
In solitary silence, far from wight,
He gan record the lamentable stowre,
In which his wretched love lay day and night
For his dearesake, that ill deserv'd that plight.
The thought whereof empierst his hart so deepe,
That of no worldly thing he took delight;
Ne dayly food did take, ne nightly sleepe,
But pyn'd, and mourn'd, and languisht, and
alone did weepe.

XX

That in short space his wonted chearefull hew
Gan fade, and lively spirits deaded quight:
His cheekes-bones raw, and cie-pits hollow grew,
And brawney armes had lost their knownen
might,

That nothing like himselfe he seem'd in sight.
Ere long so weake of limbe, and sicke of love
He woze, that lenger he note stand upright,
But to his bed was brought, and layd above,
Like ruefull ghost, unable once to stirre or
move.

XXI

Which when his mother saw, she in her mind
Was troubled sore, ne wist well what to weene;
Ne could by search nor any meanes out find
The secret cause and nature of his teene,
Whereby she might apply some medicine:
But weeping day and night did him attend,
And mourn'd to see her losse before her eyne,
Which griev'd her more that she it could not
mend.

To see an helplesse evill double griefe doth lend.

XXII

Nought could she read the roote of his disease,
Ne weene what mister maladic it is,
Whereby to seeke some meanes it to appease.
Most did she thinke, but most she thought
amis,

That that same former fatall wound of his
Whyleare by Tryphon was not throughly
healed,

But closely rankled under th' orifis:
Least did she thinke, that which he most con-
cealed, [veiled,

That love it was, which in his hart lay unre-

XXIII

Therefore to Tryphon she againe doth hast,
And him doth chyd as false and fraudulent,
That sayd the trust which she in him had plast,
To cure her sonne, as he his faith had lent,
Who now was false into new languishment
Of his old hurt, which was not throughly cured.
So backe he came unto her patient;
Where searching every part, her well assured
That it was no old sore which his new paine
procured;

XXIV

But that it was some other maladic,
Or grief unknowne, which he could not dis-
cerne:
So left he her withouten remedie.
Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and
came,
And inly troubled was the truth to learne.
Unto himselfe she came, and him besought,
Now with faire speches, now with threatnings
sterne,
If ought lay hidden in his griev'd thought,
It to reveale; who still her answered, there
was nought.

XXV

Nathlesse she rested not so satisfide;
But leaving watry gods, as booting nought,
Unto the shinie heaven in haste she hide,
And thence Apollo, King of Leaches, brought.
Apollo came; who, soone as he had sought
Through his disease, did by and by out find
That he did languish of some inward thought,
The which afflicted his engrieved mnd;
Which love he red to be, that leads each living
kind.

XXVI

Which when he had unto his mother told,
She gan thereat to fret and greatly grieve;
And, comming to her sonne, gan first to
scold
And chyd at him that made her misbelieve:
But afterwards she gan him soft to shrieve,
And woove with fayr intreatie, to disclose
Which of the Nymphes his heart so sore did
mieve;
For sure she weend it was some one of those,
Which he had lately scene, that for his love
he chose.

XXVII

Now lesse she feared that same fatall read,
That warn'd him of womens love beware,
Which being ment of mortall creatures sead,
For love of Nymphes she thought she need not
care,

But promist him, what ever wight she weare,
That she her love to him would shortly
gaine.

So he her told: but soone as she did heare
That Florimell it was which wrought his paine,
She gan afresh to chafe, and grieve in every
vaine.

XXVIII

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie,
In which his life unluckily was layd,
It was no time to scan the prophecie,
Whether old Proteus true or false had sayd,
That his decay should happen by a mayd.
It's late in death of daunger to advize,
Or love forbid him, that is life denyd;
But rather gan in troubled mind devise
How she that Ladies libertie might enter-
prize.

XXIX

To Proteus selfe to sew she thought it
vaine,
Who was the root and worker of her woe,
Nor unto any meaner to complaine;
But unto great king Neptune selfe did goe,
And, on her knee before him falling lowe,
Made humble suit unto his Majestie
To graunt to her her sonnes life, which his
foe,
A cruell Tyrant, had presumptuouslie
By wicked doome condemn'd a wretched death
to die.

XXX

To whom God Neptune, softly smyling, thus:
'Daughter, me seemes of double wrong ye
plaine,
Gainst one that hath both wronged you and us;
For death t' adward I ween'd did appertaine
To none but to the seas sole Sovereaine.
Read therefore who it is which this hath
wrought,
And for what cause; the truth discover plaine,
For never wight so evill did or thought,
But would some rightfull cause pretend, though
rightly nought.'

XXXI

To whom she answer'd: 'Then, it is by
name
Proteus, that hath ordayn'd my sonne to die;
For that a waite, the which by fortune came
Upon your seas, he claym'd as propertie:
And yet nor his, nor his in equitie,
But yours the waite by high prerogative.
Therefore I humbly crave your Majestie

It to replevie, and my sonne reprieve.
So shall you by one gift save all us three
alive.'

XXXII

He graunted it: and streight his warrant
made,
Under the Sea-gods scale autenticall,
Commanding Proteus straight t' enlarge the
mayd,
Which wandring on his seas imperiall
He lately tooke, and sithence kept as thrall.
Which she receiving with meeke thankfulness,
Departed straight to Proteus therewithall;
Who, reading it with inward loathfulness,
Was grieved to restore the pledge he did
possesse.

XXXIII

Yet durst he not the warrant to withstand,
But unto her delivered Florimell:
Whom she receiving by the lilly hand,
Admyr'd her beautie much, as she mote well,
For she all living creatures did excell;
And was right joyous that she gotten had
So faire a wife for her sonne Marinell.
So home with her she streight the virgin lad,
And shewed her to him, then being sore be-
stad.

XXXIV

Who sorne as he beheld that angels face
Ahorn'd with all divine perfection,
His cheared heart eftsoones away gan chace
Sad death, revived with her sweet inspection,
And feeble spirit inly felt refection:
As withered weed through cruell winters tine,
That feels the warmth of sunny beanes re-
flection,
Liftes up his head that did before decline,
And gins to spread his leafe before the faire
sunshine.

XXXV

Right so himselfe did Marinell upreare,
When he in place his dearest love did spy;
And though his limbs could not his bodie
beare,
Ne former strength returne so suddenly,
Yet chearefull signes he shewed outwardly.
Ne lesse was she in secret hart affected,
But that she masked it with modestie,
For feare she should of lightnesse be detected:
Which to another place I leave to be per-
fected.

THE FIFTH BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL OR OF JUSTICE.

I
So oft as I with state of present time
The image of the antique world compare,
When as mans age was in his freshest prime,
And the first blossome of faire vertue bare;
Such oddes I finde twixt those, and these
which are,
As that, through long continuance of his course,
Meseemes the world is runne quite out of square
From the first point of his appointed sourse;
And being once amisse growes daily wourse
and wourse:

II
For from the golden age, that first was
named,
It's now at earst become a stonie one;
And men themselves, the which at first were
framed
Of earthly mould, and form'd of flesh and bone,
Are now transformed into hardest stone,
Such as behind their backs (so backward
bred)
Were throwne by Pyrrha and Deucalione:
And if then those may any worse be red,
They into that ere long will be degendred.

III
Let none then blame me, if in discipline
Of vertue and of civill uses lore,
I doe not forme them to the common line
Of present dayes, which are corrupted sore,
But to the antique use which was of yore,
When good was onely for it selfe desyred,
And all men sought their owne, and none no
more;
When Justice was not for most meed out-hyred,
But simple Truth did rayne, and was of all
admyred.

IV
For that which all men then did vertue call,
Is now cald vice; and that which vice was
hight,
Is now hight vertue, and so us'd of all:
Right now is wrong, and wrong that was is
right;
As all things else in time are chaunged quight:
Ne wonder; for the heavens revolution
Is wandred farre from where it first was
pight,
And so doe make contrarie constitution
Of all this lower world, toward his dissolu-
tion.

V
For who so list into the heavens looke,
And search the courses of the rowling spheares,
Shall find that from the point where they first
tooke
Their setting forth, in these few thousand yeares
They all are wandred much; that plaine ap-
peares:
For that same golden fleecy Ram, which bore
Phrixus and Helle from their stepdames
feares,
Hath now forgot where he was plast of yore,
And shouldred hath the Bull which fayre Eu-
ropa bore:

VI
And eke the Bull hath with his bow-bent
horne
So hardly butted those two twinnes of Jove,
That they have crusht the Crab, and quite
him borne
Into the grent Nemaean lions grove.
So now all range, and doe at randon rove
Out of their proper places farre away, [move
And all this world with them amisse doe

And all his creatures from their course astray,
Till they arrive at their last ruinous decay.

VII

Ne is that same great glorious lampe of
light,
That doth enlumine all these lesser fyres,
In better case, ne keeps his course more
right,
But is miscaried with the other Spheres:
For since the terme of fourteene hundred
yeres,
That learned Ptolomæe his hight did take,
He is declyned from that marke of theirs
Nigh thirtie minutes to the Southerne lake;
That makes me feare in time he will us quite
forsake.

VIII

And if to those Egyptian wisards old,
Which in Star-read were wont have best in-
sight,
Faith may be given, it is by them told
That since the time they first tooke the Sunnes
hight,
Foure times his place he shifted hath in sight,
And twice hath risen where he now doth
West,
And wested twice where he ought rise aright:
But most is Mars amisse of all the rest,
And next to him old Saturne, that was wont
be best.

IX

For during Saturnes ancient raigne it's sayd
That all the world with goodnesse did a-
bound:

All loved vertue, no man was affrayd
Of force, ne fraud in wight was to be found:
No warre was knowne, no dreadfull trompets
sound;

Peace universall rayn'd mongst men and beasts,
And all things freely grew out of the ground:
Justice sate high ador'd with solemne feasts,
And to all people did divide her dred^e be-
heasts:

X

Most sacred vertue she of all the rest,
Resembling God in his imperiall might;
Whose soveraine powre is herein most ex-
prest,
That both to good and bad he dealeth right,
And all his workes with Justice hath bedight.
That powre he also doth to Princes lend,
And makes them like him-selfe in glorious
sight
To sit in his own seate, his cause to end,
And rule his people right, as he doth recom-
mend.

XI

Dread Sovrayne Goddesses, that doest high-
est sit
In seate of judgement in th' Almightyes stead,
And with magnificke might and wondrous wit
Doest to thy people righteous doome aread,
That furthest Nations fillles with awful dread,
Pardon the boldnesse of thy basest thrall,
That dare discourse of so divine a read
As thy great justice, praysed over-all,
The instrument wherof loe! here thy Arte-
gall.

CANTO I.

Artegall trayn'd in Justice lore
Irenæes quest pursueth;
He doth avenge on Sanglier
His Ladies bloud embrewed.

II

THOUGH vertue then were held in highest
price,
In those old times of which I doe entreat,
Yet then likewise the wicked seede of vice
Began to spring; which shortly grew full
great,
And with their boughes the gentle plants did
beat:
But evermore some of the vertuous race
Rose up, inspired with heroicke heat,
That cropt the branches of the sient base,
And with strong hand their fruitful rancknes
did deface.

Such first was Bacchus, that with furious
might
All th' East, before untam'd, did over-ronne,
And wrong repressed, and establisht right,
Which lawlesse men had formerly fordonne:
There Justice first her princely rule begonue.
Next Hercules his like ensample shewed,
Who all the West with equall conquest wonne,
And monstrous tyrants with his club sub-
dewed:
The club of Justice dread with kingly powre
endewed.

III

And such was he of whom I have to tell,
The Champion of true Justice, Artegall :
Whom (as ye lately mote remember well)
An hard adventure, which did then befall,
Into redoubted perill forth did call ;
That was to succour a distressed Dame
Whom a strong tyrant did unjustly thrall,
And from the heritage, which she did clame,
Did with strong hand withhold ; Grantorto
was his name.

IV

Wherefore the Lady, which Irena hight,
Did to the Faery Queene her way addresse,
To whom complainyng her afflicted plight,
She her besought of gracious redresse.
That soveraine Queene, that mightie Em-
peresse,
Whose glorie is to aide all suppliants pore,
And of weake Princes to be Patronesse,
Chose Artegall to right her to restore ;
For that to her he seem'd best skild in right-
eous lore.

V

For Artegall in justice was upbrought
Even from the cradle of his infancie,
And all the depth of rightfull doome was
taught
By faire Astræa with great industrie,
Whilest here on earth she lived mortallie :
For till the world from his perfection fell
Into all filth and foule iniquitie,
Astræa here mongst earthly men did dwell,
And in the rules of justice them instructed
well.

VI

Whiles through the world she walked in this
sort,
Upon a day she found this gentle childe .
Amongst his peres playing his childish sport ;
Whom seeing fit, and with no crime defilde,
She did allure with gifts and speeches milde
To wend with her. So thence him farr she
brought
Into a cave from companie exile. [raught,
In which she nourished him till yeares he
And all the discipline of justice there him
taught.

VII

There she him taught to weigh both right
and wrong
In equall ballance with due recompence,
And equitie to measure out along
According to the line of conscience,
When so it needs with rigour to dispence :
Of all the which, for want there of mankind,
She caused him to make experience

Upon wyld beasts, which she in woods did find
With wrongfull powre oppressing others of
their kind.

VIII

Thus she him trayned, and thus she him
taught
In all the skill of deeming wrong and right,
Untill the ripenesse of mans yeares he raught ;
That even wilde beasts did feare his awfull sight,
And men admyr'd his over-ruling might ;
Ne any liv'd on ground that durst withstand
His dreadfull heast, much lesse him match in
fight,
Or bide the horror of his wreakfull hand,
When so he list in wrath lift up his steely
brand,

IX

Which steely brand, to make him dreaded
more,
She gave unto him, gotten by her slight
And earnest search, where it was kept in store
In Joves eternall house, unwist of wight,
Since he himselfe it us'd in that great fight
Against the Titans, that whylome rebelled
Gainst highest heaven : Chrysaor it was hight ;
Chrysaor, that all other swords excelled,
Well prov'd in that same day when Jove those
Gyants quelled :

X

For of most perfect metall it was made,
Tempred with Adamant amongst the same,
And garnisht all with gold upon the blade
In goodly wise, whereof it tooke his name,
And was of no lesse vertue then of fame ;
For there no substance was so firme and hard,
But it would pierce or cleave, where so it came,
Ne any armour could his dint out-ward ;
But wheresoever it did light, it throughly
shard.

XI

Now, when the world with sinne gan to a-
bournl,
Astræa loathing lenger here to space [found,
Mongst wicked men, in whom no truth she
Return'd to heaven, whence she deriv'd her
race ;
Where she hath now an everlasting place
Mongst those twelve signes, which nightly we
doe see
The heavens bright-shining baudricke to en-
And is the Virgin, sixt in her degree, [chace ;
And next her selfe her righteous ballance
hanging bee.

XII

But when she part'd hence she left her groomie
An yron man, which did on her attend

Alwayes to execute her stedfast doome,
And willed him with Artegall to wend,
And doe what ever thing he did intend:
His name was Talus, made of yron mould,
Immoveable, resistlesse, without end;
Who in his hand an yron fiale did hould,
With which he threst out falshood, and did
truth unfould.

XIII

He now went with him in this new inquest.
Him for to aide, if aide he chaunst to neede,
Against that cruell Tyrant, which opprest
The faire Irena with his foule misdeede.
And kept the crowne in which she should succeed:

And now together on their way they bin,
When as they saw a Squire in squallid weed
Lamenting sore his sorrowfull sad tyme,
With many bitter teares shed from his blub-
bered eyne.

XIV

To whom as they approached, they espide
A sorie sight as ever scene with eye.
An headlesse Ladie lying him beside
In her owne blood all wallow'd wofully.
That her gay clothes did in discolour die.
Much was he moved at that ruefull sight;
And flam'd with zeale of vengeance inwardly,
He askt who had that Dame so foully dight.
Or whether his owne hand, or whether other
wight?

XV

'Ah! woe is me, and well-away!' (quoth hee,
Bursting forth teares like springs out of a
banke),
'That ever I this dismall day did see!
Full farre was I from thinking such a prauke;
Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke,
If I should graynt that I have doen the same,
That I mote drinke the cup whereof he dranke,
But that I should die gultie of the blame
The which another did, who now is fled with
shame.'

XVI

'Who was it then,' (sayd Artegall) 'that
wrought?
And why? doe it declare unto me trew.'
'A knight,' (said he) 'if knight he may be
thought
That did his hand in Ladies bloud embrew,
And for no cause, but as I shall you shew.
This day as I in solace sate hereby
With a fayre love, whose losse I now do rew,
There came this knight, having in companie
This lucklesse Ladie which now here doth
headlesse lie.

XVII

'He, whether mine seem'd fayrer in his eye,
Or that he wexed weary of his owne,
Would change with me, but I did it denye,
So did the Ladies both, as may be knowne:
But he, whose spirit was with pride upblowne,
Would not so rest contented with his right;
But, having from his courser her downe
throwne,
From me reft mine away by lawlesse might,
And on his steed her set to beare her out of
sight.

XVIII

'Which when his Ladie saw, she follow'd fast,
And on him catching hold gan loud to crie
Not so to leave her, nor away to east,
But rather of his hand besought to die.
With that his sword he drew all wrathfully,
And at one stroke cropt off her head with
scorne.
In that same place whereas it now doth lie.
So he my love away with him hath borne,
And left me here both his and mine owne love
to morne.'

XIX

'Aread' (sayd he) 'which way then did he
make?
And by what markes may he be knowne againe?'
'To hope' (quoth he) 'him soone to overtake
That hence so long departed, is but vaine;
But yet he pricked over yonder plaine,
And, as I marked, bore upon his shield,
By which it's easie him to know againe,
A broken sword within a bloodie field;
Expressing well his nature which the same
did wield.'

XX

No sooner sayd, but straight he after sent
His yron page, who him pursew'd so light,
As that it seem'd above the ground he went;
For he was swift as swallow in her flight,
And strong as Lyon in his lordly might.
It was not long before he overtooke
Sir Sangher, (so cleeped was that Knight)
Whom at the first he ghesed by his looke,
And by the other markes which of his shield
he tooke.

XXI

He bad him stay, and backe with him retire,
Who, full of scorne to be commanded so,
The Lady to alight did eft require.
Whilest he reformed that unciwill fo,
And streight at him with all his force did go,
Who mov'd no more therewith, then when a
rocke
Is lightly stricken with some stones throw;

But to him leaping lent him such a knoecke,
That on the ground he layd him like a sence-
lesse blocke.

XXII

But, ere he could him selfe recure againe,
Him in his iron paw he seized had;
That when he wak't out of his warelesse paine,
He found him selfe unwist so ill bestad,
That him he could not wag: Thence he him
lad,

Bound like a beast appointed to the stall:
The sight whereof the Lady sore adrad,
And fain'd to fly for feare of being thrall;
But he her quickly stayd, and fowst to wend
withall.

XXIII

When to the place they came, where Artegall
By that same carefull Squire did then abide,
He gently gan him to demanda of all
That did betwixt him and that Squire betide:
Who with sterne countenance and indignant
pride

Did aunswere, that of all he guiltlesse stood,
And his accuser thereupon defide;
For neither he did shed that Ladies blood,
Nor tooke away his love, but his owne proper
good.

XXIV

Well did the Squire perceive him selfe too
weake

To aunswere his defiance in the field,
And rather chose his challenge off to breake,
Then to approve his right with speare and
shield,

And rather guilty chose himselfe to yield:
But Artegall by signes perceiving plaine
That he it was not which that Lady kild,
But that strange Knight, the fairer love to
gaîne,
Didst cast about by sleight the truth therout
to straine;

XXV

And said; 'Now sure this doubtfull causes
Can hardly but by Sacrament be tride, [right
Or else, by ordele, or by bloody fight,
That ill perhaps mote fall to either side;
But if ye please that I your cause decide,
Perhaps I may all further quarrell end,
So ye will sweare my judgement to abide.'
Thereto they both did frankly conscent,
And to his doome with listfull eares did both
attend.

XXVI

'Sith then,' (sayd he) 'ye both the dead
deny,
And both the living Lady claime your right,

Let both the dead and living equally
Devided be betwixt you here in sight,
And each of either take his share aright:
But looke, who does dissent from this my read,
He for a twelve moneths day shall in despite
Beare for his penance that same Ladies head,
'To witnessse to the world that she by him is
dead.'

XXVII

Well pleased with that doome was Sangliere,
And offred streight the Lady to be slaine;
But that same Squire, to whom she was more
dere,

When as he saw she should be cut in twaine,
Did yield she rather should with him remaine
Alive, then to him selfe be shared dead;
And rather then his love should suffer paine,
He chose with shame to beare that Ladies head:
'True love despiseth shame, when life is cold
in dread.

XXVIII

Whom when so willing Artegall perceaved;
'Not so, thou Squire,' (he sayd) 'but thine I
deeme

The living Lady, which from thee he reaved,
For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme.
And you, Sir Knight, that love so light es-
teeme,

As that ye would for little leave the same.
Take here your owne, that doth you best be-
seeme,

And with it beare the burden of defame,
Your owne dead Lades head, to tell abroad
your shame.'

XXIX

But Sangliere disdaind much his doome,
And sternly gan repine at his beheast;
Ne would for ought obey, as did become,
To beare that Ladies head before his breast,
Until that Talus had his pride represt,
And forced him, maulre, it up to reare.
Who when he saw it bootlesse to resist,
He tooke it up, and thence with him did beare,
As rated Spaniell takes his burden up for feare.

XXX

Much did that Squire Sir Artegall adore
For his great justice, held in high regard,
And as his Squire him offred evermore
To serve, for want of other meete reward,
And wend with him on his adventure hard;
But he thereto would by no meanes consent,
But leaving him forth on his journey far'd:
Ne wight with him but onely Talus went:
They two enough t' encounter an whole Regi-
ment'

CANTO II.

Artega^{ll} heares of Florimell,
Does with the Pagan fight :
Him slaines, drownes Lady Muncra,
Does race her castle quight.

I
 NOUGHT is more honorable to a knight,
Ne better doth besee me brave cheualry,
Then to defend the feeble in their right,
And wrong redresse in such as wend awry:
Whilome those great Heroes got thereby
Their greatest glory for their rightfull deedes,
And place deserved with the Gods on hy.
Herein the noblesse of this knight exceedes,
Who now to perils great for justice sake pro-
ceedes.

II
 To which as he now was uppon the way,
He chaunst to meet a Dwarfie in hasty counse,
Whom he requir'd his forward hast to stay,
Till he of tidings mote with him discourse.
Loth was the Dwarfie, yet did he stay per-
forse,
And gan of sundry newes his store to tell,
As to his memory they had recourse ;
But chiefly of the fairest Florimell,
How she was found againe, and spousesde to
Marinell.

III
 For this was Dony, Florinels owne Dwarfie,
Whom having lost, (as ye have heard why-
leare)
And finding in the way the scattred scarfe,
The fortune of her life long time did feare :
But of her heath when Artega^{ll} did heare,
And safe returne, he was full inly glad,
And askt him where and when her bridale
cheare
Should be solemniz'd; for, if time he had,
He would be there, and honor to her spousesall
ad.

IV
 'Within three daies,' (quoth he) 'as I do
here,
It will be at the Castle of the Strond ;
What time, if naught me let, I will be there
To doe her service so as I am bond :
But in my way, a little here beyond,
A cursed cruell Sarazin doth wonre,
That keeps a Bridges passage by strong
bond,

And many errant Knights bath there fordonne;
That makes all men for feare that passage for
to shonne.'

V
 'What mister wight,' (quoth he) 'and how
far hence
Is he, that doth to travellers such harmes ?'
'He is' (said he) 'a man of great defence,
Expert in battell and in deedes of armes ;
And more emboldned by the wicked charmes,
With which his daughter doth him still sup-
port ;
Having great Lordships got and goodly farmes,
Through strong oppression of his powre extort,
By which he stil them holds, and keepes with
strong effort.

VI
 'And dayly he his wrongs encreseth more ;
For never wight he lets to passe that way
Over his Bridge, albee he rich or poore,
But he him makes his passage-penny pay :
Else he doth hold him backe or beat away.
Thereto he hath a groomme of evill guise,
Whose scalp is bare, that bondage doth be-
wray,
Which pils and pils the poore in piteous wize ;
But he him self uppon the rich doth tyran-
nize.

VII
 'His name is hight Pollentè, rightly so,
For that he is so puissant and strong,
That with his powre he all doth overgo,
And makes them subject to his mighty wrong ;
And some by sleight he eke doth underfong.
For on a Bridge he custometh to fight,
Which is but narrow, but exceeding long ;
And in the same are many trap-fals pight,
Through which the rider downe doth fall
through oversight.

VIII
 'And underneath the same a river flowes
That is both swift and dangerous deepe with-
all ;
Into the which whom so he overthrowes,
All destitute of helpe doth headlong fall ;

But he him selfe through practise usuall,
Leapes forth into the flood, and there assaies
His foe confused through his sodaine fall,
That horse and man he equally dismaies,
And either both them drownes, or trayterous-
ly slaies.

IX

'Then doth he take the spoile of them at
will,
And to his daughter brings, that dwels thereby;
Who all that comes doth take, and therewith
The coffers of her wicked treasury, [fill
Which she with wrongs hath heaped up so hy
That many Princes she in wealth exceeds,
And purchast all the country lying ny
With the revenue of her plenteous meedes:
Her name is Munera, agreeing with her
deedes.

X

'Thereto she is full faire, and rich attired,
With golden hands and silver feete beside,
That many Lords have her to wife desired,
But she them all despiseth for great pride,
'Now by my life,' (sayd he) 'and God to guide,
None other way will I this day betake,
But by that Bridge whereas he doth abide:
Therefore me thither lead.' No more he spake,
But thitherward forthright his ready way did
make.

XI

Unto the place he came within a while,
Where on the Bridge he ready armed saw
The Sarazin, awayting for some spoile:
When as they to the passage gan to draw,
A villaine to them came with scull all raw,
That passage money did of them require,
According to the custome of their law: [hire;
To whom he aunswerd wroth, 'Loe! there thy
And with that word him strooke, that straight
he did expire.

XII

Which when the Pagan saw he waxed wroth,
And streight him selfe unto the sight addrest,
Ne was Sir Artegall behinde: so both
Together ran with ready speares in rest.
Right in the midst, whereas they brest to brest
Should meete, a trap was letten downe to fall
Into the flood: straight leapt the Carle unblest,
Well weening that his foe was false withall;
But he was well aware, and leapt before his
fall.

XIII

There being both together in the flood,
They each at other tyrannously flew;
Ne ought the water cooled their whot blood,
But rather in them kindled choler new:

But there the Paynim, who that use well knew
To fight in water, great advantage had,
That oftentimes him nigh he overthrew:
And eke the courser whereuppon he rad
Could swim like to a fish, whiles he his backe
bestrad.

XIV

Which oddes when as Sir Artegall espide,
He saw no way but close with him in hast;
And to him driving strongly downe the tide
Uppon his iron coller griped fast,
That with the straint his wesand nigh he brast.
There they together strove and struggled long
Either the other from his steede to cast;
Ne ever Artegall his griple strong [hong.
For any thing wold slacke, but still uppon him

XV

As when a Dolphin and a Sele are met
In the wide champion of the Ocean plaine,
With cruell chaufe their courages they whet,
The maysterdome of each by force to gaine,
And dreadfull battaile twixt them do darraine:
They snuf, they snort, they bounce, they rage,
they rore,
That all the sea, disturbd with their traine,
Doth frie with fume above the surges hore.
Such was betwixt these two the troublesome
upore.

XVI

So Artegall at length him forst forsake
His horses backe for dread of being drown'd,
And to his handy swimming him betake.
Eftsoones him selfe he from his hold unbond,
And then no ods at all in him he fownd;
For Artegall in swimming skilfull was,
And durst the depth of any water sownd.
So ought each Knight, that use of peril has,
In swimming be expert, through waters force
to pas.

XVII

Then very doubtfull was the warres event,
Uncertaine whether had the better side;
For both were skild in that experiment,
And both in armes well traind, and thoroughly
tride:
But Artegall was better breath'd beside,
And towards th' end grew greater in his might,
That his faint foe no longer could abide
His puissance, ne beare him selfe upright;
But from the water to the land betooke his
flight.

XVIII

But Artegall pursewd him still so neare
With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand,
That as his head he gan a litle reare
Above the brincke to tread upon the land,

He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand
It bit the earth for very fell despight,
And gnashed with his teeth, as if he band
High God, whose goodnesse he despaired quight,
Or curst the hand which did that vengeance
on him dight.

XIX

His corps was carried downe along the Lee,
Whose waters with his filthy bloud it stayned;
But his blasphemous head, that all might see,
He pitcht upon a pole on high ordayned;
Where many years it afterwards remayned,
To be a mirrour to all mighty men,
In whose right hands great power is containd,
That none of them the feeble over-ren,
But alwaies doe their powre within just com-
passe pen.

XX

That done, unto the Castle he did wend,
In which the Paynims daughter did abide,
Guarded of many which did her defend:
Of whom he entrance sought, but was denied,
And with reprochfull blasphemy defide.
Beaten with stones downe from the battilment,
That he was forced to withdraw aside,
And bad his servant Taffis to invent
Which way he enter might without endanger-
ment.

XXI

Eftsoones his Page drew to the Castle gate,
And with his iron flae at it let flie,
That all the warders it did sore amate.
The which erewhile spake so reprochfully,
And made them stoupe that looked earst so hie.
Yet still he bet and bounst upon the dore,
And thundred strokes thereon so hideouslie,
That all the peece he shook from the flore,
And filled all the house with feare and great
uprore.

XXII

With noise whereof the Lady forth appeared
Upon the Castle wall; and, when she saw
The dangerous state in which she stood, she
feared
The sad effect of her neare overthrow;
And gan entreat that iron man below
To cease his outrage, and him faire besought;
Sith neither force of stones which they did
throw, [wrought,
Nor powr of charms, which she against him
Might otherwise prevaile, or make him cease
for ought.

XXIII

But, when as yet she saw him to proceede
Unmov'd with praiers or with piteous thought,

She ment him to corrupt with goodly meede;
And causde great sakes with endlesse riches
Unto the battilment to be upbrought, [fraught
And powred forth over the Castle wall,
That she might win some time, though dearly
bought,

Whilest he to gathering of the gold did fall:
But he was nothing mov'd nor tempted
therewithall:

XXIV

But still continu'd his assault the more,
And layd on load with his huge yron faile,
That at the length he has yrent the dore,
And made way for his maister to assaile;
Who being entred, nought did then availe
For wight against his powre them selves to
reare.

Each one did flie; their hearts began to faile,
And hid them selves in corners here and there;
And eke their dame halfe dead did hide her
self for feare.

XXV

Long they her sought, yet no where could
they finde her,
That sure they ween'd she was escapt away;
But Talus, that could like a lime-hound wnde
her,
And all things secrete wisely could bewray,
At length found out whereas she hidden lay
Under an heape of gold. Thence he her drew
By the faire lockes, and sowly did array
Withouten pitty of her goodly hew,
That Artegall him selfe her seemeclesse plight
did rew.

XXVI

Yet for no pitty would he change the course
Of Justice, which in Talus hand did lye;
Who rudely layd her forth without remorse,
Still holding up her suppliant hands on hye,
And kneeling at his feete submissively:
But he hersuppliant hands, those hands of gold,
And eke her feete, those feete of silver trye,
Which sought unrighteousnesse, and justice
sold, [them behold.
Chopt off, and nayld on high that all might

XXVII

Her selfe then tooke he by the sclender wast,
In vaine loud crying, and into the flood
Over the Castle wall adowne her cast,
And there her drowned in the dirty mud;
But the streame washt away her guilty blood.
Thereafter all that mucky pelfe he tooke,
The spoile of peoples evil gotten good,
The which her sire had scrapt by hooke and
crooke, [brooke.
And burning all to ashes powr'd it downe the

XXVIII

And lastly all that Castle quite he raced,
Even from the sole of his foundation,
And all the hewen stones thereof defaced,
That there mote be no hope of reparation,
Nor memory thereof to any nation.
All which when Talus thoroughly had per-
foumed,
Sir Artegall undid the evill fashion,
And wicked customes of that Bridgerefourmed;
Which done, unto his former journey he re-
turned:

XXIX

In which they measur'd mickle weary way,
Till that at length nigh to the sea they drew;
By which as they did travell on a day,
They saw before them, far as they could vew,
Full many people gathered in a crew;
Whose great assembly they did much admire,
For never there the like resort they knew.
So towards them they coasted, to enquire
What thing so many nations met did there
desire.

XXX

There they beheld a mighty Gyant stand
Upon a rocke, and holding forth on hie
An huge great paire of ballance in his hand,
With which he boasted, in his surquedrie,
That all the world he would weigh equallie,
If ought he had the same to counterpoys;
For want whereof he weighed vanity,
And filld his ballaunce full of idle toys;
Yet was admired much of looles, women, and
boys.

XXXI

He sayd that he would all the earth uptake
And all the sea, divided each from either:
So would he of the fire one ballaunce make,
And one of th' ayre, without or wind or wether:
Then would he ballaunce heaven and hell
together,
And all that did within them all containe,
Of all whose weight he would not misse a
feather:
And looke what surplus did of each remaine,
He would to his owne part restore the same
again:

XXXII

For-why, he sayd, they all unequal were,
And had encroched upon others share;
Like as the sea (which plaine he shewed there)
Had worne the earth; so did the fire the aire;
So all the rest did others parts empire,
And so were realmes and nations run awry.
All which he undertooke for to repaire,
In sort as they were formed aunciently,
And all things would reduce unto equality.

XXXIII

Therefore the vulgar did about him flocke,
And cluster thicke unto his leasings vaine,
Like foolish flies about an hony-crooke;
In hope by him great benefite to gaine,
And uncontrolled freedome to obtaine.
All which when Artegall did see and heare,
How he mis-led the simple peoples traine,
In sdeignfull wize he drew unto him neare,
And thus unto him spake, without regard or
feare.

XXXIV

'Thou that presum'st to weigh the world
And all things to an equall to restore, [anew,
Instead of right me seemes great wrong
doest shew,
And far above thy forces pitch to sore;
For ere thou limit what is lesse or more
In every thing, thou oughtest first to know
What was the poys of every part of yore:
And looke then how much it doth overflow
Or faile thereof, so much is more then just to
trouv.

XXXV

'For at the first they all created were
In goodly measure by their Makers might;
And weighed out in ballaunces so nere,
That not a dram was missing of their right:
The earth was in the middle centre pight,
In which it doth immoveable abide,
Hem'd in with waters like a wall in sight,
And they with aire, that not a drop can slide:
Al which the heavens containe, and in their
courses guide.

XXXVI

'Such heavenly justice doth among them
raue,
That every one doe know their certaine bound,
In which they doe these many yeares remaine,
And amongst them al no change hath yet bene
found; [pound,
But if thou now shouldst weigh them new in
We are not sure they would so long remaine:
All change is perillous, and all chauce unsound.
Therefore leave off to weigh them al againe,
Till we may be assur'd they shall their course
reaine.'

XXXVII

'Thou foolishhe Elfe,' (said then the Gyant
wroth)
'Seest not how badly all things present bee,
And each estate quite out of order goth?
The sea it selfe doest thou not plainly see
Encroch upon the land there under thee?
And th' earth it selfe how daily its increast
By all that dying to it turned be.'

Were it not good that wrong were then surceast,
And from the most that some were given to the
least?

XXXVIII

'Therefore I will throw downe these moun-
taines hie,
And make them leuell with the lowly plaine;
These towring rocks, which reach unto the skie,
I will thrust downe into the deepest maine,
And, as they were, them equalize againe.
Tyrants, that make men subject to their law,
I will suppress, that they no more may raine;
And Lordings curbe that commons over-aw,
And all the wealth of rich men to the poore will
draw.'

XXXIX

'Of things unscene how canst thou deeme
aright,
Then answered the righteous Artegall, [sight?
'Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things in
What though the sea with waves continuall
Doe eate the earth, it is no more at all;
Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought,
For whatsoever from one place doth fall
Is with the tide unto another brought:
For there is nothing lost, that may be found if
sought.

XL

'Likewise the earth is not augmented more
By all that dying into it doe fade;
For of the earth they formed were of yore:
How ever gay their blossome or their blade
Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade.
What wrong then is it, if that when they die
They turne to that whereof they first were made?
All in the powre of their great Maker lie:
All creatures must obey the voice of the Most
Hie.

XLI

'They live, they die, like as he doth ordaine,
Ne ever any asketh reason why.
The hills doe not the lowly dales disdain,
The dales doe not the lofty hills envy.
He maketh Kings to sit in sovereignty;
He maketh subjects to their powre obey;
He pulleth downe, he setteth up on hy;
He gives to this, from that he takes away,
For all we have is his: what he list doe, he
may.

XLII

'What ever thing is done by him is donne,
Ne any may his mighty will withstand;
Ne any may his sovaine power shonne,
Ne loose that he hath bound with stedfast
band.

In vaine therefore doest thou now take in hand
To call to count, or weigh his workes anew,
Whose counsels depth thou canst not under-
stand;

Sith of things subject to thy daily vew
Thou doest not know the causes, nor their
courses dew.

XLIII

'For take thy ballaunce, if thou be so wise,
And weigh the winde that under heaven doth
blow;
Or weigh the light that in the East doth rise;
Or weigh the thought that from mans mind
doth flow:
But if the weight of these thou canst not show,
Weigh but one word which from thy lips doth
fall:

For how canst thou those greater secrets know,
That doest not know the least thing of them all?
Ill can he rule the great that cannot reach the
small.'

XLIV

'Therewith the Gyant much abashed sayd,
That he of little things made reckoning light;
Yet the least word that ever could be layd
Within his ballaunce he could way aright.
'Which is' (sayd he) 'more heavy then in
weight,

The right or wrong, the false or else the trew?'
He answered that he would try it straight;
So he the words into his ballaunce threw,
But straight the winged words out of his bal-
launce flew.

XLV

Wroth wext he then, and sayd that words
were light,
Ne would within his ballaunce well abide:
But he could justly weigh the wrong or right.
'Well then,' sayd Artegall, 'let it be tride:
First in one ballaunce set the true aside.'
He did so first, and then the false he layd
In the other scale; but still it downe did slide,
And by no meane could in the weight be stayd;
For by no means the false will with the truth
be wayd.

XLVI

'Now take the right likewise,' sayd Artegall,
'And counterpoise the same with so much
wrong.'

So first the right he put into one scale,
And then the Gyant strove with puissance
strong

To fill the other scale with so much wrong;
But all the wrongs that he therein could lay
Might not it peise; yet did he labour long,

And swat, and chauf'd, and proved every way :
Yet all the wrongs could not a little right downe
way.

XLVII

Which when he saw he greatly grew in rage,
And almost would his balances have broken ;
But Artogall him fairely gan asswage,
And said, ' Be not upon thy balance wroken,
For they doe nought but right or wrong be-
token ;

But in the mind the doome of right must bee :
And so likewise of words, the which be spoken,
The eare must be the ballance, to decree
And judge, whether with truth or falshood they
agree.

XLVIII

' But set the truth and set the right aside,
For they with wrong or falshood will not fare,
And put two wrongs together to be tride,
(Or else two falses, of each equall share,
And then together doe them both compare ;
For truth is one, and right is ever one.'
So did he ; and then plaine it did appeare,
Whether of them the greater were attone ;
But right sate in the midst of the beame
alone.

XLIX

But he the right from thence did thrust away,
For it was not the right which he did seeke,
But rather strove extremities to way,
Th' one to diminish, th' other for to eeke ;
For of the meane he greatly did misleeke.
Whom when so lewdly minded Talus found,
Approching nigh unto him, cheeke by cheeke,
He shouldered him from off the higher ground,
And, down the rock him throwing, in the sea
him dround.

L

Like as a ship, whom cruell tempest drives
Upon a rocke with horrible dismay,
Her shattered ribs in thousand peeces rive,
And spoyling all her geares and goodly ray
Does make her selfe misfortunes piteous pray.
So downe the cliffe the wretched Gyant tumbled ;

His battred ballances in peeces lay,
His timbered bones all broken rudely rumbled :
So was the high-aspyring with huge ruine
humbled.

LI

That when the people, which had there about
Long wayted, saw his sudden desolation,
They gan to gather in tumultuous rout,
And mutining to stirre up civill faction
For certaine losse of so great expectation :
For well they hoped to have got great good,
And wondrous riches by his innovation.
Therefore resolving to revenge his blood
They rose in armes, and all in battell order
stood.

LII

Which lawlesse multitude him comming too
In warlike wise when Artogall did vew,
He much was troubled, ne wist what to doo :
For loth he was his noble hands t' embrew
In the base blood of such a rascall crew ;
And otherwise, if that he should retire,
He fear'd least they with shame would him
pursew :
Therefore he Talus to them sent t' inquire
The cause of their array, and truce for to desire.

LIII

But soone as they him nigh approaching spide,
They gan with all their weapons him assay,
And rudely stroke at him on every side ;
Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought dis-
may :
But when at them he with his flaile gan lay,
He like a swarme of flyes them overthrew ;
Ne any of them durst come in his way,
But here and there before his presence flew,
And hid themselves in holes and bushes from
his vew.

LIV

As when a Faulcon hath with nimble flight
Flowne at a flush of Ducks fore by the brooke,
The trembling foule dismayd with dreadfull
sight
Of death, the which them almost overtooke,
Doe hide themselves from her astonying looke
Amongst the flags and covert round about.
When Talus saw they all the field forsooke,
And none appear'd of all that rascall rout,
To Artogall he turn'd and went with him
throughout.

CANTO III.

The spousals of faire Florimell,
Where turney many knights :
There Braggadochio is uncas'd
In all the Ladies sights.

I

AFTER long stormes and tempests overblowne
The sunne at length his joyous face doth cleare:
So when as fortune all her spight hath showne,
Some blisfull houres at last must needes appeare;
Else should afflicted wights oftymes despire:
So comes it now to Florimell by tourne,
After long sorrowes suffered whyleare,
In which captiv'd she many moneths did mourne,
To tast of joy, and to wont pleasures to re-tourne.

II

Who being freed from Proteus cruell band
By Marinell was unto him affide,
And by him brought againe to Faerie land,
Where he her spous'd, and made his joyous bride.
The time and place was blazed farre and wide,
And solemne feasts and giusts ordain'd there-fore:
To which there did resort from every side
Of Lords and Ladies infinite great store;
Ne any Knight was absent that brave courage bore.

III

To tell the glorie of the feast that day,
The goodly service, the devicefull sights,
The bridegromes state, the brides most rich aray,
The pride of Ladies, and the worth of knights,
The royall banquets, and the rare delights,
Were worke fit for an Herald, not for me:
But for so much as to my lot here lights,
That with this present treatise doth agree,
True vertue to advance, shall here recounted bee.

IV

When all men had with full satietie
Of meates and drinckes their appetites suffiz'd,
To deedes of armes and prooffe of chevalrie
They gan themselves addresse, full rich arrayz'd
As each one had his furnitures deviz'd.
And first of all issu'd Sir Marinell, [terpriz'd
And with him sixe knights more, which en-

To challenge all in right of Florimell,
And to maintaine that she all others did excell.

V

The first of them was hight Sir Orimont,
A noble Knight, and tride in hard assayes;
The second had to name Sir Bellisont,
But second onto none in prowess prayse;
The third was Brunell, famous in his dayes;
The fourth Ecastor, of exceeding might;
The fift Armeddan, skild in lovely layes;
The sixt was Lansack, a redoubted Knight;
All sixe well-seene in armes, and prov'd in many a fight.

VI

And them against came all that list to giust,
From every coast and cuntry under sunne:
None was debard, but all had leave that lust.
The trompets sound, then all together ronne.
Full many deeds of armes that day were donne,
And many knights unhorst, and many wounded,
As fortune fell; yet little lost or wonne:
But all that day the greatest prayse redounded
To Marinell, whose name the Heralds loud resounded.

VII

The second day, so soone as morrow light
Appear'd in heaven, into the field they came,
And there all day continew'd cruell fight,
With divers fortune fit for such a game,
In which all strove with perill to winne fame;
Yet whether side was victor note be ghest:
But at the last the trompets did proclame
That Marinell that day deserved best.
So they departed were, and all men went to rest.

VIII

The third day came, that should due tryall lend
Of all the rest; and then this warlike crew
Together met of all to make an end.
There Marinell great deeds of armes did shew,

And through the thickest like a Lyon flew,
Rashing off helmes, and ryving plates ason-
der,

That every one his daunger did eschew:
So terribly his dreadfull strokes did thonder,
That all men stood amaz'd, and at his might
did wonder.

IX

But what on earth can alwayes happie
stand?

The greater prowess greater perils find.
So farre he past amongst his enemies band,
That they have him enclosed so behind,
As by no means he can himselfe outwind:
And now perforce they have him prisoner
taken;
And now they doe with captive bands him bind;
And now they lead him thence, of all forsaken,
Unless some succour had in time him over-
taken.

X

It fortun'd, whylest they were thus ill
beset,
Sir Artegall into the Tilt-yard came,
With Braggadochio, whom he lately met
Upon the way with that his snowy Dame:
Where when he understood by common fame
What evil hap to Marinell betid,
He much was mov'd at so unworthie shame,
And streight that boaster prayd, with whom
he rid, [hid.
To change his shield with him, to be the better

XI

So forth he went, and soone them over-hent,
Where they were leading Marinell away;
Whom he assayld with dreadlesse hardiment,
And first the burden of their prize to stay.
They were an hundred knights of that array,
Of which th' one halfe upon himselfe did set,
The other stayd behind to gard the pray:
But he ere long the former fittie bet,
And from the other fittie soone the prisoner
fet.

XII

So backe he brought Sir Marinell againe;
Whom having quickly arm'd againe anew,
They both together joynd might and maine,
To set afresh on all the other crew:
Whom with sore hayocke soone they over-
threw,
And chased quite out of the field, that none
Against them durst his head to perill shew.
So were they left Lords of the field alone:
So Marinell by him was rescu'd from his
fone.

XIII

Which when he had perform'd, then backe
againc

To Braggadochio did his shield restore,
Who all this while behind him did remaine,
Keeping there close with him in pretious store
That his false Ladic, as ye heard afore.
Then did the trumpets sound, and Judges rose,
And all these knights, which that day armour
bore,
Came to the open hall to listen whose
The honour of the prize should be adjudg'd by
those.

XIV

And thether also came in open sight
Fayre Florimell, into the common hall,
To greet his guerdon unto every knight,
And best to him to whom the best should fall,
Then for that stranger knight they loud did call,
To whom that day they should the girlond
yield,
Who came not forth; but for Sir Artegall
Came Braggadochio, and did shew his shield,
Which bore the Sunne brode blazed in a gol-
den field.

XV

The sight whereof did all with gladnesse fill:
So unto him they did addeeme the prize
Of all that Tryumph. Then the trumpets
shrill
Don Braggadochios name resounded thrise:
So courage lent a cloke to cowardise.
And then to him came fayrest Florimell,
And goodly gan to greet his brave emprise,
And thousand thanks him yeeld, that had so
well
Approv'd that day that she all others did excell.

XVI

To whom the boaster, that all knights did blot
With proud disdainc did scornfull answer
make,
That what he did that day, he did it not
For her, but for his owne deare Ladies sake,
Whom on his perill he did undertake
Both her and eke all others to excell:
And further did uncomely speeches crake.
Much did his words the gentle Ladic quell,
And turn'd aside for shame to heare what he
did tell.

XVII

Then forth he brought his snowy Florimele,
Whom Trompart had in keeping there beside,
Covered from peoples gazement with a velle:
Whom when discovered they had throughly
sied,

With great amazement they were stupellid;
And said, that surely Florimell it was,
Or if it were not Florimell so tride,
That Florimell her selfe she then did pas.
So feeble skill of perfect things the vulgar has.

XXVIII

Which when as Marinell beheld likewise,
He was therewith exceedingly dismayd,
Ne wist he what to thinke, or to devise,
But, like as one whom feends had made affrayd,
He long astonisht stood, ne ought he sayd,
Ne ought he did, but with fast fixed eies
He gazed still upon that snowy mayd;
Whom ever as he did the more avize,
The more to be true Florimell he did surmise.

XIX

As when two sunnes appeare in the sure skye,
Mounted in Phoebus charret fierie bright,
Both darting forth faire beames to each mans
eye,
And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming light;
All that behold so strange prodigious sight,
Not knowing natures worke, nor what to weene,
Are rapt with wonder and with rare affright.
So stood Sir Marinell, when he had seene
The semblant of this false by his faire beauties
Queene.

XX

All which when Artegall, who all this while
Stood in the pousse close covered, well ad-
viewed,
And saw that boasters pride and gracelesse
guile,
He could no longer beare, but forth issewed,
And unto all himselfe there open shewed,
And to the boaster said; 'Thou lo-ell base,
That hast with borrowed plumes thy selfe en-
dewed,
And others worth with leasings doest deface,
When they are all restor'd thou shalt rest in
disgrace.

XXI

'That shield, which thou doest beare, was it
indeed
Which this dayes honour sav'd to Marinell:
But not that arme, nor thou the man, I reed,
Which didst that service unto Florimell.
For prooffe shew forth thy sword, and let it tell
What strokes, what dreadfull stoure, it stir'd
this day;
Or shew the wounds which unto thee befell;
Or shew the swerat with which thou diddest
sway
So sharpe a battell. that so many did dismay.

XXII

'But this the sword which wrought those
cruell wounds. [beare,
And this the arme the which that shield did
And these the signs' (so shewed forth his
wounds)

'By which that glorie gotten doth appeare,
As for this Ladie, which he sheweth here,
Is not (I wager) Florimell at all;
But some fayre Franion, fit for such a fere,
'That by misfortune in his hand did fall,'
For prooffe whereof he bad them Florimell
forth call.

XXIII

So forth the noble Ladie was brought,
Adorn'd with honor and all comely grace:
Whereto her bashful shamesfastnesse ywrought
A great increase in her faire blushing face,
As roses did with lilies interlace;
For of those words, the which that boaster
threw,
She inly yet conceived great disgrace:
Whom when as all the people such did vew,
They shouted loud, and signes of gladnesse all
did shew.

XXIV

Then did he set her by that snowy one,
Like the true saint beside the image set.
Of both their beauties to make paragone
And triall, whether should the honor get.
Streight-way, so soone as both together met,
Th' enchanted Damzell vanisht into nought:
Her snowy substance melted as with heat,
Ne of that goodly hew remayned ought,
But th' emptie girdle which about her wast was
wrought.

XXV

As when the daughter of Thaumantes faire
Hath in a watry cloud displayed wide
Her goodly bow, which paints the liquid ayre,
That all men wonder at her colours pride;
All suddenly, ere one can looke aside,
The glorious picture vanisheth away,
Ne any token doth thereof abide:
So did this Ladies goodly forme decay,
And into nothing goe, ere one could it bewray.

XXVI

Which when as all that present were beheld,
They stricken were with great astonishment,
And their faint harts with senselesse horror
quell,
To see the thung, that seem'd so excellent,
So stolen from their fancies wonderment
That what of it became none understood:
And Braggadochio selfe with dreriment

So daunted was in his despayring mood,
That like a lifelesse corse immoveable ne
stood.

XXVII

But Artegall that golden belt uptooke,
The which of all her spovle was onely left;
Which was not hers, as many it mistooke,
But Florimells owne girdle, from her rest
While she was flying, like a weary wett,
From that foule monster which did her com-
pell

To perils great; which he unbuckling eft
Presented to the fayrest Florimell,
Who round about her tender wast it fitted
well.

XXVIII

Full many Ladies often had assayed
About their middles that faine belt to knit;
And many a one suppos'd to be a mayd:
Yet it to none of all their loynes would fit,
Till Florimell about her fastned it.
Such power it had, that to no womans wast
By any skill or labour it would sit,
Unless that she were continent and chaste,
But it would love or breake, that many had
disgrast.

XXIX

Whilest thus they busied were bout Flori-
mell,
And boastfull Braggadochio to defame,
Sir Guyon, as by fortune then befell,
Forth from the thickest preasse of people
came, [elame;
His owne good steed, which he had stolne, to
And th' one hand seizing on his golden bit,
With th' other drew his sword; for with the
same
He ment the thiefe there deadly to have smit:
And, had he not bene held, he nought had
fayld of it.

XXX

Thereof great hurly-burly moved was
Throughout the hall for that same warlike
horse;
For Braggadochio would not let him pas,
And Guyon would him algates have perforce,
Or it approve upon his carion corse,
Which troublous stirre when Artegall per-
ceived,
He nigh them drew to stay th' avengers force.
And gan inquire how was that steed beceaved.
Whether by might extort, or else by slight
deceived?

XXXI

Who all that piteous storic, which befell
About that wofull couple which were slaine,

And their young bloodie babe to him gan tell,
With whom whiles he did in the wood re-
maine,

This horse purloyned was by subtil traine,
For which he chalenged the thiefe to fight:
But he for nought could him thereto con-
straine;

For as the death he hated such despyght,
And rather had to lose then trie in armes his
right.

XXXII

Which Artegall well hearing, (though no
more
By law of armes therē neede ones right to trie,
As was the wont of warlike knights of yore,
Then that his foe should him the field demy,)
Yet, further nigh by tokens to deserie,
He askt what privie tokens he did beare?
'If that' (said Guyon) 'may you satisfie,
Within his mouth a blacke spot doth appeare,
Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke it
there.'

XXXIII

Whereof to make due tryall, one did take
The horse in hand within his mouth to looke:
But with his becles so sorely he him strake,
That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke,
That never wold fion that day forth he spoke.
Another, that would seeme to have more wit,
Him by the bright embrodered hed-stall tooke;
But by the shoulder him so sore he bit,
That he him maymed quite, and all his
shoulder split.

XXXIV

Ne he his mouth would open unto wight,
Untill that Guyon selfe unto him spake,
And called Brigadoire, (so was he light,) Whose voice so soone as he did undertake,
Eftsoones he stood as still as any stake,
And suffed all his secret marke to see:
And, when as he him nam'd, for joy he brake
His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull glee,
And friskt, and stong aloft, and louted low on
knee.

XXXV

Thereby Sir Artegall did plaine areed
That unto him the horse belong'd, and sayd;
'Lo there! Sir Guyon, take to you the steed,
As he with golden saddle is arayd,
And let that losell, plainly now displayd,
Hence fare on foot, till he an horse have
gayned.'
But the proud boaster gan his doome upbrayd,
And him revil'd, and rated, and disdayned,
That judgement so unjust against him had
ordayned.

XXXVI

Much was the knight incenst with his lewd
word

To have revenged that his villeny;
And thrise did lay his hand upon his sword,
To have him alaine, or dearely doen aby:
But Guyon did his choler pacify,
Saying, 'Sir knight, it would dishonour bee
To you that are our judge of equity,
To wreake your wrath on such a carle as hee:
It's punishment enough that all his shame doe
see.'

XXXVII

So did he mitigate Sir Artegall;
But Talus by the backe the boaster hent,
And drawing him out of the open hall
Upon him did inflict this punishment:
First he his beard did shave, and fowly shent,
Then from him reft his shield, and it ren-
verst,

And blotted out his armes with falshood blent,
And himselfe baffuld, and his armes unherst,
And broke his sword in twaine, and all his
armour asperst.

XXXVIII

The whiles his guilefull grooms was fled away,
But vaine it was to thinke from him to fle;
Who overtaking him did disaray,
And all his face deform'd with infamie,

And out of court him scourged openly.
So ought all faytours that true knighthood
shame,
And arnes dishonour with base villanie,
From all brave knights be banisht with defame;
For oft their lewdnes blotteth good deserts
with blame.

XXXIX

Now when these counterfeits were thus un-
Out of the fore-side of their forgerie, [cased
And in the sight of all men cleane disgraced,
All gan to jest and gibe full meriue
At the remembrance of their knaaverie:
Ladies can laugh at Ladies, Knights at
Knights,
To thinke with how great vaunt of braverie
He them abused through his subtilt slyghts,
And what a glorious shew he made in all
their slyghts.

XL

There leave we them in pleasure and repast,
Spending their joyous dayes and gladfull
And taking asurie of time fore-past, [nights,
With all deare delices and rare delights,
Fit for such Ladies and such lovely knights;
And turne we here to this faire furrowes end
Our wearie yokes, to gather fresher sprights,
That, when as time to Artegall shall tend,
We on his first adventure may him forward
send.

CANTO IV.

Artegall dealeth right betwixt
Two brethren that doe strive:
Saves Terpine from the gallow tree
And doth from death reprove.

I

Whoso upon him selfe will take the skill
True Justice unto people to divide,
Had neede have mightie hands for to fulfill
That which he doth with righteous doome
decide,
And for to maister wrong and puissant pride:
For vaine it is to deeme of things aright,
And makes wrong doers justice to deride,
Unless it be perform'd with dreadlesse might:
For powre is the right hand of Justice truly
hight.

II

Therefore whylome to knights of great em-
prise
The charge of Justice given was in trust,

That they might execute her judgements
wise, [just,
And With their might beat downe licentious
Which proudly did impugne her sentence just:
Whereof no braver president this day
Remaines on earth, preserv'd from yron rust
Of rude oblivion and long times decay,
Then this of Artegall, which here we have
to say.

III

Who having lately left that lovely payre,
Enlincked fast in wedlockes loyall bond,
Bold Marinell with Florimell the fayre,
With whom great feast and goodly glee he
fond,
Departed from the Castile of the Strond

To follow his adventures first intent,
Which long agoe he taken had in bond :
Ne wight with him for his assistance went,
But that great yron groome, his gard and
government.

IV

With whom, as he did passe by the sea shore,
He chaunst to come whereas two comely
Squires,

Both brethren, whom one wombe together bore,
But stirred up with different desires,
Together strove, and kindled wrathfull fires :
And them beside two seemely damzells stood,
By all meanes seeking to assuage their ires,
Now with faire words, but words did little good,
Now with sharpe threats, but threats the more
increast their mood.

V

And there before them stood a Coffer strong
Fast bound on every side with iron bands,
But seeming to have suffred mickle wrong,
Either by being wreckt upon the sands,
Or being carried farre from forraigne lands.
Seem'd that for it these Squires at ods did
fall,

And bent against them selves their cruell
But evermore those Damzells did forestall
Their furious encounter, and their fiercenesse
pall.

VI

But firmly fixt they were with dint of sword
And batailles doubtfull prooffe their rights to
Ne other end their fury would afford, [try,
But what to them Fortune would justify :
So stood they both in readinesse thereby
To joyne the combate with cruell intent,
When Artegall, arriving happily,
Did stay a while their greedy bickermment,
Till he had questioned the cause of their
dissent.

VII

To whom the elder did this aunswere frame:
'Then weete ye, Sir, that we two brethren be,
To whom our sire, Milesio by name,
Did equally bequeath his lands in fee,
Two Ilands, which ye there before you see
Not farre in sea; of which the one appears
But like a little Mount of small degree,
Yet was as great and wide, ere many yeares.
As that same other Isle, that greater bredth
now beares.

VIII

'But tract of time, that all things doth
decay, [spare,
And this devouring Sea, that naught doth

The most part of my land hath washt away,
And throwne it up unto my brothers share:
So his encreased, but mine did empaire.
Before which time I lov'd, as was my lot,
That further mayd, hight Philtera the faire,
With whom a goodly doure I should have got,
And should have joynd bene to her in wed-
locks knot.

IX

'Then did my younger brother, Amidas,
Love that same other Damzell, Lucy bright,
To whom but little dowre allotted was :
Her vertue was the dowre that did delight.
What better dowre can to a daine be hight ?
But now, when Philtra saw my lands decay
And former livedd fayle, she left me quight,
And to my brother did ellope streight way,
Who, taking her from me, his owne love left
astray.

X

'She, seeing then her selfe forsaken so,
Through dolorous despaire which she con-
ceyved,
Into the Sea her selfe did headlong throw,
Thinking to have her grieve by death be-
reaved:

But see how much her purpose was deceaved !
Whilest thus, amidst the billowes beating of
her, [weaved;
Twixt life and death long to and fro she
She chaunst unwares to light upon this coffer,
Which to her in that daunger hope of life did
offer.

XI

'The wretched mayd, that earst desir'd to die,
When as the paine of death she tasted had,
And but halfe seene his ugly visnomie.
Gan to repent that she had beene so mad
For any death to change life, though most
bad :

And catching hold of this Sea-beaten chest,
(The lucky Pylot of her passage sad,)
After long tossing in the seas distrest,
Her weary barke at last upon mine Isle did
rest.

XII

'Where I by chance then wandring on the
shore
Did her espy, and through my good endeavour
From dreadfull mouth of death, which threat-
ned sore [her.
Her to have swallow'd up, did helpe to save
She then, in recompence of that great favour
Which I on her bestowed, bestowed on me
The portion of that good which Fortune gave
her,

Together with her selfe in dowry free;
Both goodly portions, but of both the better
she.

XIII

'Yet in this coffer which she with her brought
Great treasure sithence we did finde con-
tained,

Which as our owne we tooke, and so it thought;
But this same other Damzell since hath fained
That to her selfe that treasure appertained:
And that she did transport the same by sea,
To bring it to her husband new ordained,
But suffred cruell shipwracke by the way:
But whether it be so or no, I can not say.

XIV

'But, whethere it indeede be so or no,
This doe I say, that what so good or ill
Or God or Fortune unto me did throw,
Not wronging any other by my will,
I hold mine owne, and so will hold it still.
And though my land he first did winne away,
And then my love, (though now it little skill)
Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray,
But I will it defend whilst ever that I may.'

XV

So having sayd, the younger did ensew:
'Full true it is what so about our land
My brother here declared hath to you:
But not for it this ods twixt us doth stand,
But for this treasure throwne upon his
strand;
Which well I prove, as shall appeare by triall,
To be this maides with whom I fastned hand.
Known by good markes and perfect good
espiall:
Therefore it ought be rendred her without
[deniall.]

XVI

When they thus ended had, the Knight
began:
'Certes, your strife were easie to accord,
Would ye remit it to some righteous man.'
'Unto yourselfe,' said they, 'we give our
word,
To bide that judgement ye shall us afford.'
'Then for assurance to my doome to stand,
Under my foote let each lay downe his sword;
And then you shall my sentence understand.'
So each of them layd downe his sword out of
his hand.

XVII

Then Artegall thus to the younger sayd:
'Now tell me, Amidas, if that ye may,
Your brothers land the which the sea hath layd
Unto your part, and pluckt from his away,

By what good right doe you withhold this
day?'

'What other right,' (quoth he) 'should you
esteeme,

But that the sea it to my share did lay?'

'Your right is good,' (sayd he) 'and so I
deeme, [should seeme.]

That what the sea unto you sent your own

XVIII

Then turning to the elder thus he sayd:
'Now, Bracidas, let this likewise be shewen;
Your brothers treasure, which from him is
strayd,
Being the dowry of his wife well knowne,
By what right doe you claime to be your
owne?' [esteeme,
'What other right,' (quoth he) 'should you
But that the sea hath it unto me throwne?']
'Your right is good,' (sayd he) 'and so I
deeme, [should seeme.]
That what the sea unto you sent your own

XIX

'For equall right in equall things doth stand;
For what the mighty Sea hath once possest.
And plucked quite from all possessors hand,
Whether by rage of waves that never rest,
Or else by wracke that wretches hath distrest,
He may dispose by his imperiall might,
As thing at randon left, to whom he list.
So, Amidas, the land was yours first lught;
And so the treasure yours is, Bracidas, by
right.'

XX

When he his sentence thus pronounced had,
Both Amidas and Philtra were displeased;
But Bracidas and Lucy were right glad,
And on the treasure by that judgement
seased,

So was their discord by this doome appeased,
And each one had his right. Then Artegall,
When as their sharpe contention he had ceased,
Departed on his way, as did befall,
To follow his old quest, the which him forth
did call.

XXI

So as he travelled upon the way,
He chaunst to come, where happily he spide
A rout of many people farre away;
To whom his course he hastily applide,
To weete the cause of their assemblance wide:
To whom when he approched neare in sight,
(An uncouth sight) he plainly then descried
To be a troupe of women, warlike dight,
With weapons in their hands as ready for to
fight.

XXII

And in the midst of them he saw a Knight,
With both his hands behinde him pinnod hard,
And round about his necke an halter tight,
And ready for the gallow-tree prepar'd:
His face was covered, and his head was bar'd,
That who he was uneth was to desery;
And with full heavy heart with them he far'd.
Griev'd to the soule, and groning inwardly,
That he of womens hands so base a death
should dy.

XXIII

But they, like tyrants mercilesse, the more
Rejoyced at his miserable case.
And him reviled, and reproched sore
With bitter taunts and termes of vile disgrace.
Now when as Artegall, arriv'd in place,
Did aske what cause brought that man to
decay,
They round about him gan to swarme apace,
Meaning on him their cruell hands to lay,
And to have wrought unwares some villanous
assay.

XXIV

But he was soone aware of their ill minde,
And drawing backe deceived their intent:
Yet, though him selfe did shame on woman-
kinde
His mighty hand to shend, he Talus sent
To wrecke on them their tollies hardymnt:
Who with few sowces of his yron flae
Dispersed all their troupe incontinent,
And sent them home to tell a piteous tale
Of their vaine prowess turned to their proper
bale.

XXV

But that same wretched man, ordayned to
die,
They left behind them, glad to be so quit:
Him Talus tooke out of perplexitie,
And horror of fowle death for Knight unmet,
Who more then losse of life ydreaded it;
And, him restoring unto living light,
So brought unto his Lord, where he did sit
Beholding all that womanish weake fight;
Whom soone as he beheld he knew, and thus
belight:

XXVI

'Sir Turpine! haplesse man, what make you
here?' [tion,
Or have you lost your selfe and your discre-
That ever in this wretched case ye were?
Or have ye yielded you to proude oppression
Of womens powre, that boast of mens sub-
jection?
Or else what other deadly dismal day
Is false on you by heavens hard direction

That ye were runne so fondly far astray
As for to lead your selfe unto your owne
decay?'

XXVII

Much was the man confounded in his mind,
Partly with shame, and partly with dismay,
That all astonisht he him selfe did find,
And little had for his excuse to say,
But onely thus: 'Most haplesse well ye may
Me justly terme, that to this shame am
brought, [day:
And made the scorne of Knighthood this same
But who can scape what his owne fate hath
wrought?' [thought,
The worke of heavens will surpasseth humaine

XXVIII

'Right true: but faulty men use oftentimes
To attribute their folly unto fate,
And lay on heaven the guilt of their owne
But tell, Sir Terpin, ne let you amate [crimes.
Your misery, how fell ye in this state?'
'Then sith ye needs' (quoth he) 'will know
my shame,
And all the ill which chaunst to me of late,
I shortly will to you rehearse the same,
In hope ye will not ascriue misfortune to my
blame.

XXIX

'Being desirous (as all Knights are wont)
Through hard adventures deedes of armes to
And after fame and honour for to hunt, [try,
I heard report that farre abroad did fly,
That a proud Amazon did late defy
All the brave Knights that hold of Maidenhead,
And unto them wrought all the villany
That she could forge in her malicious head,
Which some hath put to shame, and many
done be dead.

XXX

'The cause, they say, of this her cruell hate
Is for the sake of Belodant the bold,
To whom she bore most fervent love of late,
And, wooed him by all the waies she could:
But when she saw at last that he ne would
For ought or nought be wonne unto her will,
She turn'd her love to hatred manifold,
And for his sake vow'd to doe all the ill
Which she coul'd doe to Knights; which now
she doth fulfill.

XXXI

'For all those Knights, the which by force
or guile
She doth subdue, she fowly doth entreate.
First, she doth them of warlike armes despoile,
And cloth in womens weedes: And then with
threat

Doth them compell to worke, to earne their
ment,
To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring;
Ne doth she give them other thing to eat
But bread and water or like feeble thing,
Them to disable from revenge adventuring.

XXXII

'But if through stout disdaine of manly
mind

Any her proud observaunce will withstand,
Upon that gibbet, which is there behind,
She causeth them be hang'd up out of hand;
In which condition I right now did stand:
For, being overcome by her in fight,
And put to that base service of her hand,
I rather chosd to die in lives despight,
Then lead that shamefull life, unworthily of a
Knight.'

XXXIII

'How hight that Amazon?' (sayd Artegall)
'And where and how far hence does she
abide?' [call]

'Her name' (quoth he) 'they Radigund doe
A Princess of great payre and greater pride,
And Queene of Amazons, in armes well tride
And sundry battels, which she hath achieved
With great successe, that her hath glorified,
And made her famous, more then is believed;
Ne would I it have ween'd, had I not late it
prieved.'

XXXIV

'Now sure,' (said he) 'and by the faith
that I

To Maydenhead and noble knighthood owe,
I will not rest till I her might doe trie,
And venge the shame that she to Knights
doth show.

Therefore, Sir Terpin, from you lightly throw
This squalid weede, the patterne of dispaire,
And wend with me, that ye may see and
know

How Fortune will your ruin'd name repaire
And knights of Maidenhead, whose praise she
would empaire.'

XXXV

With that, like one that hopelesse was de-
pry'd

From deathes dore at which he lately lay,
Those yron fetters wherewith he was gyv'd,
The badges of reproch, he threw away,
And nimble did him dight to guide the way
Unto the dwelling of that Amazone:

Which was from thence not past a mile or
tway,

A goodly city and a mighty one,
The which, of her owne name, she called
Radegone.

XXXVI

Where they arriving by the watchman were
Descried straight; who all the city warn'd
How that three warlike persons did appeare,
Of which the one him seem'd a Knight all
arned,
And th' other two well likely to have harmed.
Eftsommes the people all to harnessse ran,
And like a sort of Bees in clusters swarmed:
Ere long their Queene her selfe, halfe like a man,
Came forth into the rout, and them t' array
began.

XXXVII

And now the Knights, being arrived neare,
Did beat upon the gates to enter in;
And at the Porter, skorning them so few,
Threw many threats, if they the towne did
win,
To teare his flesh in peeces for his sin:
Which when as Radigund there comming
heard,
Her heart for rage did grate, and teeth did grin.
She bad that streight the gates should be unbar'd,
And to them way to make with weapons well
prepar'd.

XXXVIII

Soone as the gates were open to them set,
They pressed forward, entraunce to have
made;
But in the middle way they were ymet
With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which them
staid,
And better bad advise, ere they assaid
Unknownen perill of bold womens pride.
Then a'l that rout upon them rudely laid,
And heaped strokes so fast on every side,
And arrowes haild so thicke, that they could
not abide.

XXXIX

But Radigund her selfe, when she espide
Sir Terpin, from her direfull doome acquit,
So cruell doale amongst her maides divide
T' avenge that shame they did on him commit,
All sodainly enflam'd with furious fit
Like a fell Lionesse at him she flew,
And on his head-peece him so fiercely smit,
That to the ground him quite she overthrew,
Dismayd so with the stroke that he no colours
knew.

XL

Soone as she saw him on the ground to gro-
vell,
She lightly to him leapt; and in his necke

Her proud foote setting, at his head did leuell.
Weening at once her wrath on him to wreake
And his contempt, that did her judg'ment
breake.

As when a Beare hath sciz'd her cruell claws
Upon the carkasse of some beast too weake,
Proudly stands over, and a while doth pause
To heare the piteous beast pleading her plaint-
tiffe cause.

XLI

Whom when as Artegall in that distresse
By chaunce beheld, he left the bloudy slaugh-
ter

In which he swam, and ranne to his redresse:
There her assaying fiercely fresh, he raught
her [her

Such an hugestroke, that it of sence distraught
And had she not it warded warily,
It had depriv'd her mother of a daughter:
Nathlesse for all the powre she did apply
It made her stagger oft, and stare with ghastly
eye.

XLII

Like to an Eagle, in his kingly pride
Soring through his wide Empire of the aire
To weather his brode sailes, by chaunce hath
spide

A Goshauke, which hath seized for her share
Upon some fowle that should her feast pre-
pare;

With dreadfull force he flies at her bylive,
That with his souce, which none endure
dare,

Her from the quarrey he away doth drive,
And from her griping pounce the greedy prey
doth rive.

XLIII

But, soone as she her sence recover'd had,
She fiercely towards him her selfe gan fight,
Through vengefull wrath and sdeignfull pride
half mad;

For never had she suffred such despight:

But ere she could joyne hand with him to
fight,

Her warlike maides about her flockt so fast,
That they disparied them, m'agre their
might,

And with their troupes did far asunder cast;
But mongst the rest the fight did untill evening
last.

XLIV

And every while that mighty yron man
With his strange weapon, never wont in
warre,

Them sorely vext, and courst, and overran,
And broke their bowes, and did their shooting
marre,

That none of all the many once did darre
Him to assault, nor once approach him nie;
But like a sort of sheepe dispersed farr
For dread of their devouring enemy,
Through all the fields and vallies did before
him flie.

XLV

But when as daies faire shinie-beame, yelowd-
ed

With fearefull shadowes of deformed night,
Warn'd man and beast in quiet rest be shrowd-
ed,

Bold Radigund with sound of trumpe on hight,
Caused all her people to surcease from fight;
And gathering them unto her citties gate,
Made them all enter in before her sight;
And all the wounded, and the weake in state,
To be conveyed in, ere she would once retrate.

XLVI

When thus the field was voided all away,
And all things quieted, the Elfin Knight,
Weary of toile and travell of that day,
Caused his pavilion to be richly pight
Before the city gate, in open sight;
Where he him selfe did rest in safety
Together with Sir Terpin all that night:
But Talus usde, in times of jeopardy,
To keepe a nightly watch for dread of treach
ery.

XLVII

But Radigund, full of heart-gnawing griefe
For the rebuke which she sustain'd that day,
Could take no rest, ne would receive reliefe;
But tossed in her troublous munde what way
She mote revenge that blot which on her lay.
There she resolv'd her selfe in single fight
To try her Fortune, and his force assay,
Rather then see her people spoiled quight,
As she had seene that day, a disaventerous
sight.

XLVIII

She called forth to her a trusty mayd,
Whom she thought fittest for that businesse;
Her name was Clarin, and thus to her said:
'Goe, damzell, quickly, doe thy selfe addresse
To doe the message which I shall expresse.
Goe thou unto that stranger Faery Knight,
Who yester day drove us to such distresse:
Tell, that to morrow I with him wil fight,
And try in equall field whether hath greater
might.

XLIX

'But these conditions doe to him propound:
That if I vanquishe him, he shall obey
My law, and ever to my lore be bound;
And so will I, if me he vanquish may,

What ever he shall like to doe or say.
Goe streight, and take with thee to witnesse
Sixe of thy fellows of the best array, [it
And beare with you both wine and juncates fit,
And bid him eate: henceforth he oft shall
hungry sit.]

L

The Damzell streight obayd, and putting all
In readinesse, forth to the Towne-gate went;
Where, sounding loud a Trumpet from the wall,
Unto those warlike Knights she warning sent.
Then Talus forth issuing from the tent
Unto the wall his way did fearelesse take,
To weeten what that trumpets sounding
ment:

Where that same Damzell lowdly him bespake,
And shew'd that with his Lord she would
emparluance make.

LI

So he them streight conducted to his Lord;
Who, as he could, them goodly well did greet;
Till they had told their message word by word:
Which he accepting well, as he could weete,
Them fau'rely enterlaynd with curt'sies meete,
And gave them gifts and thungs of deare
delight. [feete;
So backe againe they homeward turnd their
But Artegall him selfe to rest did dight,
That he mote fresher be against the next
daies fight.]

CANTO V.

Artegall fights with Radigund,
And is subdewd by guile:
He is by her imprisoned,
But wrought by Clarins wile.

I

So soone as day forth dawning from the
East [withdrew,
Nights humid curtaine from the heavens
And earely calling forth both man and beast
Comau'ded them their daily workes renew,
These noble warriors, mindefull to pursue
The last daies purpose of their vowed fight,
Them selves thereto prepa'rd in order dew;
The Knight, as best was seeming for a Knight,
And th' Amazon, as best it likt her selfe to
dight.]

II

All in a Camis light of purple silke
Woven uppon with silver, subtilly wrought,
And quilted uppon sattin white as milke;
Trayled with ribbands diversly distraught,
Like as the workeman had their courses
taught;
Which was short tucked for light motion
Up to her ham; but, when she list, it raught
Downe to her lowest heele; and thes uppon
She wore for her defence a mayled habergeon.

III

And on her legs she painted buskins wore,
Basted with bends of gold on every side,
And mailles betweene, and laced close afore;
Uppon her thigh her Cemitare was tide
With an embro'ered belt of mickell pride;
And on her shoulder hung her shield, bedeckt
Uppon the bosse with stones that shined wide,

As the faire Moone in her most full aspect
That to the Moone it mote be like in each
respect.

IV

So forth she came out of the citty gate
With stately port and proud magnificence,
Guarded with many Damzels that did waite
Uppon her person for her sure defence.
Playing on shaumes and trumpets, that from
hence
Their sound did reach unto the heavens hight:
So forth into the field she marched thence,
Where was a rich Pavillion ready pight
Her to receive, till time they should begin
the fight.

V

Then forth came Artegall out of his tent,
All arm'd to point, and first the Lists did
enter:
Soone after eke came she, with fell intent
And countenance fierce, as having fully
bent her
That battells utmost trial to aduenter.
The Lists were closed fast, to barre the rout
From rudely pressing to the middle center;
Which in great heapes them circled all about,
Wayting how Fortune would resolve that
daungerous dount.

VI

The Trumpets sounded, and the field began;
With bitter strokes it both began and ended.

She at the first encounter on him ran
With furious rage, as if she had intended
Out of his breast the very heart have rended:
But he, that had like tempests often tride,
From that first flaw him selfe right well defended.

The more she rag'd, the more he did abide;
She lewd, she foynd, she lasht, she laid on
every side.

VII

Yet still her blowes he bore, and her forbore,
Weening at last to win advantage new;
Yet still her crueltie increased more,
And, though powre faild, her courage did accrew;

Which fayling, he gan fiercely her purswe.
Like as a Smith that to his cunning feat
The stubborn mettall seeketh to subdew,
Soone as he feelles it mollifie with heat,
With his great yron sledge doth strongly on
it beat.

VIII

So did Sir Artegall upon her lay,
As if she had an yron and vile beene,
That flakes of fire, bright as the sunny ray,
Out of her steely armes were flashing seene,
That all on fire ye would her surely weene;
But with her shield so well her selfe she warded
From the dread daunger of his weapon keene,
That all that while her life she safely garded;
But he that helpe from her against her will
discarded.

IX

For with his trenchant blade at the next
blow
Halfe of her shield he shared quite away,
That halfe her side it selfe did naked show,
And thenceforth unto daunger opened way.
Much was she moved with the mightie sway
Of that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she grew,
And, like a greedie Beare unto her pray,
With her sharpe Cemitare at him she flew,
That glauncing downe his thigh the purple
bloud forth drew.

X

Thereat she gan to triumph with great boast,
And to upbrayd that chauce which him misfell,
As if the prize she gotten had almost,
With spightfull speeches, sitting with her well;
That his great hart gan inwardly to swell
With indignation at her vaunting vaine,
And at her strooke with puissaunce fearefull
fell:

Yet with her shield she warded it againe,
That shattered all to peeces round about the
plaine.

XI

Having her thus disarmed of her shield,
Upon her helmet he againe her strooke,
That downe she fell upon the grassie field
In sencelesse swoone, as if her life forsooke,
And pangs of death her spirit overtooke.
Whom when he saw before his foote prostrated,
He to her leapt with deadly dreadfull looke,
And her sunshynie helmet soone unlaced,
Thinking at once both head and helmet to have
raced.

XII

But, when as he discovered had her face,
He saw, his senses straunge astonishment,
A miracle of natures goodly grace
In her faire visage void of ornament,
But bath'd in bloud and sweat together ment;
Which in the rudenesse of that evill plight
Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent:
Like as the Moone in foggie winters night
Doth seeme to be her selfe, though darkned be
her light.

XIII

At sight thereof his cruell minded hart
Empierced was with pittifull regard, [apart,
That his sharpe sword he threw from him
Cursing his hand that had that visage mard:
No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard,
But ruth of beautie will it mollifie.
By this, upstarting from her swoone, she star'd
A while about her with confused eye;
Like one that from his dreame is waked sud-
denlye.

XIV

Soone as the knight she there by her did spy
Standing with emptie hands all weaponlesse,
With fresh assault upon him she did fly,
And gan renew her former cruelties:
And though he still retyr'd, yet nathelesse
With huge redoubled strokes she on him layd;
And more increast her outrage mercilesse,
The more that he with meeke intreatie prayd
Her wrathfull hand from greedy vengeance to
have stayd.

XV

Like as a Puttocke having spyde in sight
A gentle Faulcon sitting on an hill, [flight,
Whose other wing, now made unmeet for
Was lately broken by some fortune ill;
The foolish Kyte, led with licentious will,
Doth beat upon the gentle bird in vaine,
With many idle stoups her troubling still:
Even so did Radigund with bootlesse paine
Annoy this noble Knight, and sorely him
constraine.

XVI

Nought could he do but shun the dred despight
Of her fierce wrath, and backward still retyre;
And with his single shield, well as he might,
Beare off the burden of her raging yre:
And evermore he gently did desyre
To stay her stroks, and he himselfe would yield;
Yet nould she hearke, ne let him once respyre,
Till he to her delivered had his shield,
And to her mercie him submitted in plaine field.

XVII

So was he overcome; not overcome,
But to her yeelded of his owne accord;
Yet was he justly damned by the doome
Of his owne mounth, that spake so warelesse
word,
To be her thrall and service her afford:
For though that he first victorie obtayned,
Yet after, by abandoning his sword,
He wilfull lost that he before attayned:
No fayrer conquest then that with goodwill is
gayned.

XVIII

Tho with her sword on him she flailing
strooke,
In signe of true subjection to her powre,
And as her vassall him to thraldome tooke:
But Terpine, borne to a more unhappy howre,
As he on whom the lucklesse stars did lowre,
She caused to be attacht, and forthwith led
Unto the crooke, t' abide the balefull stowre
From which he lately had through reskew fled:
Where he full shamefully was hang'd by the
hed.

XIX

But when they thought on Talus hands to lay,
He with his yron flaile amongst them thondred,
That they were fayne to let him scape away,
Glad from his companie to be so sondred:
Whose presence all their troups so much en-
combred, [and slay,
That th' heapes of those which he did wound
Besides the rest dismayd, might not be nombred:
Yet all that while he would not once assay
To reskew his owne Lord, but thought it just
t' obay.

XX

Then tooke the Amazon this noble knight,
Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame,
And caused him to be disarmed quight
Of all the ornaments of knightly name,
With which whylome he gotten had great
fame:
Instead whereof she made him to be dight
In womans weedes, that is to manhood shame,

And put before his lap a napron white,
Instead of Curiets and bases fit for fight.

XXI

So being clad she brought him from the field,
In which he had bene trayned many a day,
Into a long large chamber, which was seild
With monuments of many Knights decay,
By her subdued in victorious fray:
Amongst the which she caus'd his warlike
armes [wray;
Be hang'd on high, that mote his shame be-
And broke his sword, for feare of further harmes,
With which he wont to stirre up battailous
alarmes;

XXII

There entred in he round about him saw
Many brave knights, whose names right well
he knew,
There bound t' obay that Amazons proud law,
Spinning and carding all in comely rew,
That his bigge hart loth'd so unconcomly vew:
But they were forst, through penurie and pyne,
To doe those workes to them appointed dew;
For nought was given them to sup or dyne,
But what their hands could earne by twisting
linnen twyne.

XXIII

Amongst them all she placed him most low,
And in his hand a distaffe to him gave,
That he thereon should spin both flax and tow;
A sordid office for a mind so brave:
So hard it is to be a womans slave.
Yet he it tooke in his owne selves despight,
And thereto did himselfe right well behave
Her to obay, with his faith had plight
Her vassall to become, if she him wonne in
fight.

XXIV

Who had him scene imagine mote thereby
That whylome hath of Hercules bene told,
How for Iolas sake he did apply
His mightie hands the distaffe vile to hold
For his huge club, which had subdued of old
So many monsters which the world annoyed,
His Lyons skin chaungd to a pall of gold,
In which, forgetting warres, he onely joyed
In combats of sweet love, and with his mis-
tresse toyed.

XXV

Such is the crueltie of womenkynd,
When they have shaken off the shamefast
band, [bynd
With which wise Nature did them strongly
T' obay the heasts of mans well-ruling hand.

That then all rule and reason they withstand
To purchase a licentious libertie:
But vertuous women wisely understand,
That they were borne to base humilitie,
Unless the heavens them lift to lawfull sove-
raintie.

XXVI

Thus there long while continu'd Artegall.
Serving proud Radigund with true subjection,
How ever it his noble heart did gall
T' obey a womans tyrannous direction,
That might have had of life or death election:
But, having chosen, now he might not chaunge.
During which time the warlike Amazon,
Whose wandering fancie after lust did raunge,
Gan cast a secret liking to this captive
straunge.

XXVII

Which long concealing in her covert brest,
She chaw'd the cud of lover's carefull plight;
Yet could it not so thoroughly digest,
Being fast fixed in her wounded spright,
Yet tormented her both day and night:
Yet would she not thereto yeeld free accord
To serve the lowly vassall of her might,
And of her servant make her soverayne Lord:
So great her pride that she such basenesse
much abhord.

XXVIII

So much the greater still her anguish grew,
Through stubbornne handling of her lov-sicke
hart;
And still the more she strove it to subdew.
The more she still augmented her owne smart,
And wyder made the wound of th' hidden dart.
At last, when long she struggled had in vaine,
She gan to stoupe, and her proud mind convert
To meeke obeysance of loves mightie raine,
And him entreat for grace that had procur'd
her paine.

XXIX

Unto her selfe in secret she did call
Her nearest handmayd, whom she most did
trust,
And to her said: 'Clarinda, whom of all
I trust alive, sith I thee fostred first,
Now is the time that I untimely must
Thereof make tryall in my greatest need.
It is so hapned that the heavens unjust,
Spighting my happie freedome, have agreed
To thrall my looser life, or my last bale to
breed.'

XXX

With that she turn'd her head, as halfe
abashed,
To hide the blush which in her visage rose

And through her eyes like sudden lightning
flashed,
Decking her cheeke with a vermillion rose;
But soone she did her countenance compose,
And to her turning thus began againe:
'This griefes deepe wound I would to thee
disclose, [paine;
Thereto compelled through hart-murdring
But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth
still restraîne.'

XXXI

'Ah! my deare dread,' (said then the faith-
full Mayd) [withhold,
'Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart
That many hath with dread of death dismayd,
And dare even deathes most dreadfull face
behold?
Say on, my soverayne Ladie, and be bold:
Doth not your handmayds life at your foot
lie?'
Therewith much comforted she gan unfold
The cause of her conceived maladie,
As one that would confesse, yet faine would it
denie.

XXXII

'Clarinda,' (said she) 'thou seest yond Fayry
Knight,
Whom not my valour, but his owne brave mind
Subjected hath to my unequall might.
What right is it, that he should thraldome
find
For lending life to me, a wretch unkind,
That for such good him recompence with ill?
Therefore I cast how I may him unbind,
And by his freedome get his free goodwill;
Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still:

XXXIII

'Bound unto me but not with such hard
bands
(Of strong compulsion and streight violence,
As now in miserable state he stands;
But with sweet love and sure benevolence,
Voide of malicious mind or foule offence:
To which if thou canst win him any way
Without discoverie of my thoughts pretence,
Both goodly meede of him it purchase may,
And eke with grateful service me right well
apay.

XXXIV

'Which that thou mayst the better bring to
pas, [bee,
Loe! here this ring, which shall thy warrant
And token true to old Eumenias,
From time to time, when thou it best shalt
see,

That in and out thou mayst have passage free.
Goe now, Clarinda; well thy wits advise,
And all thy forces gather unto thee,
Armies of lovely lookes, and speeches wise,
With which thou canst even Jove himselfe to
love entise.'

XXXV

The trustie Mayd, conceiving her intent,
Did with sure promise of her good endeavour
Give her great comfort and some harts content.
So, from her parting, she thenceforth did
labour

By all the meanes she might to curry favour
With th' Elfin Knight, her Ladies best be-
loved:

With daily shew of courteous kind behaviour.
Even at the marke-white of his hart she loved,
And with wide-glauncing words one day she
thus him proved.

XXXVI

'Unhappie Knight! upon whose hopelesse
state

Fortune, envying good, hath felly frowned,
And cruell heavens have heapt an heavy fate:
I rewe that thus thy better dayes are drowned
In sad despaire, and all thy senses swooned
In stupid sorow, sith thy juster merit
Might else have with felicitie bene crowned:
Looke up at last, and wake thy dulled spirit
To thinke how this long death thou mightest
disinherit.'

XXXVII

Much did he marvell at her uncouth speech,
Whose hidden drift he could not well perceive;
And gan to doubt least she him sought t' ap-
peach

Of treason, or some guilefull traine did weave.
Through which she might his wretched life be-
reave. [her:

Both which to barre he with this answer met
'Faire Damzell, that with ruth (as I perceive)
Of my mishaps art mov'd to wish me better,
For such your kind regard I can but rest your
dettor.

XXXVIII

'Yet, weete ye well, that to a courage great
It is no lesse besecning well to beare
The storme of fortunes frowne or heavens threat,
Then in the sunshine of her countenance cleare
Timely to joy and carrie comely cheare:
For though this cloud have now me overcast,
Yet doe I not of better times despayre;
And though (unlike) they should for ever last,
Yet in my truthe assurance I rest fixed fast.'

XXXIX

'But what so stonie minde,' (she then re-
plyde)

'But if in his owne powre occasion lay,
Would to his hope a window open wyde,
And to his fortunes helpe make readie way?'
'Unworthy sure' (quoth he) 'of bettet day,
That will not take the offer of good hope,
And eke pursew, if he attaine it may.'
Which speeches she applying to the scope
Of her intent, this further purpose to him
shope.

XL

'Then why doest not, thou ill advized man,
Make meanes to win thy libertie forlorne,
And try if thou by faire entreatie can [worne
Move Itadigund? who, though she still have
Her dayes in warre, yet (weest thou) was not
borne

Of Beares and Tygres, nor so salvage mynded
As that, albe all love of men she scorne,
She yet forgets that she of men was kynded:
And sooth oft seene, that proudest harts base
love hath blynded.'

XLI

'Certes, Clarinda, not of caner'd will,'
(Sayd he) 'nor obstinate disdainefull mind,
I have forbore this ductie to fulfill:
For well I may this weene by that I fynd,
That she a Queene, and come of Princely kynd,
Both worthy is for to be sewd unto,
(Chiefly by him whose life her law doth bynd,
And eke of powre her owne doome to undo,
And also of princely grace to be inclyn'd there-
to.

XLII

'But want of meanes hath bene mine onely
let

From seeking favour where it doth abound;
Which if I might by your good office get,
I to your selfe should rest for ever bound,
And readie to deserve what grace I found.'
She, feeling him thus bite upon the bayt,
Yet doubting least his hold was but unsound
And not well fastened, would not strike him
strayt,

But drew him on with hope fit leasure to awayt.

XLIII

But, foolish Mayd! whyles heedlesse of the
hooke

She thus oft times was beating off and on.
Through slipperie footing fell into the brooke,
And there was caught to her confusion:
For, seeking thus to save the Amazon,
She wounded was with her deceits owne dart,
And gan thenceforth to cast affection,

Conceivd close in her beguiled hart,
To Artegall, through pittie of his causelesse
smart.

XLIV

Yet durst she not disclose her fancies wound,
Ne to himselfe, for doubt of being sdayned,
Ne yet to any other wight on ground,
For feare her mistresse shold have knowledge
But to her selfe it secretly retayned [gayned;
Within the closet of her covert brest,
The more thereby her tender hart was payned;
Yet to awayt fit time she weened best,
And fairly did dissemble her sad thoughts un-
rest.

XLV

One day her Ladie, calling her apart,
Gan to demand of her some tydings good,
Touching her loves successe, her lingring
smart.

Therewith she gan at first to change her mood,
As one adaw'd, and halfe confused stode;
But quickly she it overpast, so soone
As she her face had wypt to fresh her blood:
Tho gan she tell her all that she had donne,
And all the wayes she sought his love for to
have wonne:

XLVI

But sayd that he was obstinate and sterne,
Scorning her offers and conditions vaine;
Ne would be taught with any termes to lerne
So fond a lesson as to love againe:
Die rather would he in penurious paine,
And his abridgd dayes in dolour wast,
Then his foes love or liking entertaine.
His resolution was, both first and last,
His bodie was her thrall, his hart was freely
plast.

XLVII

Which when the cruell Amazon perceived,
She gan to storme, and rage, and reyd her gull,
For very fell despyght which she conceived,
To be so scorned of a base-borne thrall,
Whose life did lie in her least eye-lis fall;
Of which she vow'd, with many a cursed threat,
That she therefore would him ere long forstall.
Nathlesse, when calmed was her furious heat,
She chang'd that threatfull mood, and mildly
gan entreat:

XLVIII

'What now is left, Clarinda? what remains,
That we may compass this our enterprize?
Great shame to lose so long employed paines,
And greater shame t' abide so great misprize,
With which he dares our offers thus despize:
Yet that his guilt the greater may appeare,
And more my gracious mercie by this wize,

I will a while with his first folly beare,
Till thou have tride againe, and tempted him
more neare.

XLIX

'Say and do all that may thereto prevaile;
Leave nought unpromist that may him per-
swade,
Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great availe,
With which the Gods themselves are mykler
made:

Thereto adde art, even womens watty trade,
The art of mightie words that men can charme;
With which in case thou canst him not invade,
Let him feele hardnesse of thy heaveie arme:
Who will not stoupe with good shall be made
stoupe with harme.

L

'Some of his diet doe from him withdraw,
For I him find to be too proudly fed:
Give him more labour, and with streighter law,
That he with worke may be foreward:
Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed,
That may pull downe the courage of his pride;
And lay upon him, for his greater dread,
Cold yron chaines with which let him be tide;
And let what ever he desires be him denide.

LI

'When thou hast all this doen, then bring me
newes
Of his demeaner: thenceforth not like a lover,
But like a rebell stout, I will him use;
For I resolve this siege not to give over,
Till I the conquest of my will recover.'
So she departed full of grieve and sdaine,
Which iuly did to great impatience move her:
But the false mayden shortly turn'd againe
Unto the prison, where her hart did thrall re-
maine.

LII

There all her subtile nets she did unfold,
And all the engins of her wit display;
In which she meant him warelesse to enfold,
And of his innocence to make her pray.
So cunningly she wrought her crafts assay,
That both her Ladie, and her selfe withall,
And eke the knight attonce she did betray;
But most the knight, whom she with guilefull
call

Did cast for to allure into her trap to fall.

LIII

As a bad Nurse, which, fayning to receive
In her owne mouth the food ment for her chyld,
Withholdes it to her selfe, and doeth deceive
The infant, so for want of nourture spoyld;

Even so Clarinda her owne Dame beguylde,
And turn'd the trust which was in her affyde,
To feeding of her private fire, which boylde
Her inward brest, and in her entrayles fryde,
The more that she it sought to cover and to
hyde.

LIV

For, comming to this knight, she purpose
fayned,
How earnest suit she carst for him had made
Unto her Queene, his freedome to have gayned,
But by no meanes could her thereto perswade;
But that instead thereof she sternely bade
His miserie to be augmented more,
And many yron bands on him to lade:
All which natklesse she for his love forbore;
So praying him t' accept her service evermore.

LV

And, more then that, she promist that she
would,
In case she might finde favour in his eye,
Devise how to enlarge him out of hould.
The Fayrie, glad to gaine his libertie,
Can yeeld great thanks for such her curtesie;
And with faire words, fit for the time and
place,
To feede the humour of her maladic,

Promist, if she would free him from that case,
He wold, by all good means he might, deserve
such grace.

LVI

So daily he faire semblant did her shew,
Yet never meant he in his noble mind,
To his owne absent love to be untrew:
Ne ever did deceitfull Clarin find
In her false hart his bondage to unbind,
But rather how she mote him faster tye.
Therefore unto her mistresse most unkind
She daily told her love he did defye;
And him she told her Dame his freedome did
deny.

LVII

Yet thus much friendship she to him did show,
That his scarce diet somewhat was amended,
And his worke lessened, that his love mote
grow:
Yet to her Dame him still she discommended,
That she with him mote be the more offended.
Thus he long while in thraldome there re-
mayned,
Of both beloved well, but little frended,
Untill his owne true love his freedome gayned:
Which in an other Canto will be best con-
tayned.

CANTO VI.

Talus brings newes to Britomart
Of Artegals mishap:
She goes to seeke him, Dolon meetes,
Who seekes her to entrap.

I

SOME men, I wote, will deeme in Artegall
Great weakness, and report of him much ill,
For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall
To th' insolent command of womens will;
That all his former praise doth fowly spill:
But he the man, that say or doe so dare,
Be well adviz'd that he stand stedfast still;
For never yet was wight so well aware,
But he, at first or last, was trapt in womens
snare.

II

Yet 'in the streightnesse of that captive state
This gentle knight himselfe so well behaved,
That notwithstanding all the subtil bait
With which those Amazons his love still
craved,
To his owne love his loialtie he saved:
Whose character in th' Adamantine mould
Of his true hart so firmly was engraved,

That no new loves impression ever could
Bereave it thence: such blot his honour
blemish should.

III

Yet his owne love, the noble Britomart,
Scarse so conceived in her jealous thought,
What time sad tydings of his balefull smart
In womans bondage Talus to her brought;
Brought in untimely houre, ere it was sought:
For, after that the utmost date assynde
For his returne she waited had for nought,
She gan to cast in her misdoubtfull mynde
A thousand feares, that love-sicke fancies faine
to fynde.

IV

Sometime she feared least some hard mishap
Had him misfaine in his adventurous quest;
Sometime least his false foe did him entrap
In traytrous traine, or had unwares opprest;

But most she did her troubled mynd molest,
And secretly afflict with jealous feare,
Least some new love had him from her possesst :
Yet loth she was, since she no ill did heare,
To thinke of him so ill; yet could she not for-
beare.

V

One while she blam'd her selfe; another
while
She him condemn'd as trustlesse and untrew;
And then, her griefe with errour to beguyle,
She fayn'd to count the time againe anew,
As if before she had not counted trew:
For houres, but dayes; for weekes that passed
were, [more few;
She told but moneths, to make them seeme
Yet when she reckned them, still drawing neare.
Each hour did seeme a moneth, and every
moneth a yeare.

VI

But when as yet she saw him not returne,
She thought to send some one to seeke him
out;

But none she found so fit to serve that turne,
As her owne selfe, to ease her selfe of dout.
Now she deviz'd, amongst the warlike rout
Of errant Knights, to seeke her errant Knight:
And then againe resolv'd to hunt him out
Amongst loose Ladies lapped in delight:
And then both Knights envide, and Ladies
eke did spight.

VII

One day when as she long had sought for ease
In every place, and every place thought best,
Yet found no place that could her liking please,
She to a window came that opened West,
Towards which coast her love his way address:
There looking forth, shee in her heart did find
Many vaine fancies working her unrest;
And sent her winged thoughts, more swift then
wind,
To beare unto her love the message of her mind.

VIII

There as she looked long, at last she spide
One comming towards her with hasty speede.
Well weend she then, ere him she plaine de-
scribe,
That it was one sent from her love indeede;
Who when he nigh approcht, shee mote arede
That it was Talus, Artegall his groome:
Whereat her heart was fild with hope and
drede,
Ne would she stay till he in place could come,
But ran to meete him forth to know his tidings
somme.

IX

Even in the dore him meeting, she begun:
'And where is he thy Lord, and how far hence?
Declare at once: and hath he lost or wun?'
The yron man, albe he wanted sence
And sorrowes feeling, yet, with conscience
Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake,
And stood still mute, as one in great suspence;
As if that by his silence he would make
Her rather reade his meaning then him selfe
it spake.

X

Till she againe thus sayd: 'Talus, be bold,
And tell what ever it be, good or bad, [hold.'
That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth
To whom he thus at length: 'The tidings sad,
That, I would hide, will needs, I see, be rad.
My Lord, your love, by hard mishap doth lie
In wretched bondage, wofully bestad.'
'Ay me,' (quoth she) 'what wicked destinie!
And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy?'

XI

'Not by that Tyrant, his intended foe,
But by a Tyrannesse,' (he then replide)
'That him captived hath in haplesse woe.'
'Cease, thou bad newes-man! badly doest
thou hide
Thy maisters shame, in harlots bondage tide:
The rest my selfe too readily can spell.'
With that in rage she turn'd from him aside,
Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell;
And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

XII

There she began to make her monefull plaint
Against her Knight for being so untrew;
And him to touch with falshoods fowle attainit,
That all his other honour overthrow.
Oft did she blame her selfe, and often rew,
For yeelding to a straungers love so light,
Whose life and manners straunge she never
knew;
And evermore she did him sharply twight
For breach of faith to her, which he had firmly
plight.

XIII

And then she in her wrathfull will did cast
How to revenge that blot of honour blent,
To fight with him, and goodly die her last.
And then againe she did her selfe torment,
Inflicting on her selfe his punishment. [threw
A while she walkt, and chaufft; a while she
Her selfe upon her bed, and did lament:
Yet did she not lament with loude alew,
As women wont, but with deepe sighes and
singults few

XIV

Like as a wayward childe, whose sounder sleepe
Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright,
With froward will doth set him selfe to weepe,
Ne can be still for all his nurses might,
But kicks, and squals, and shrieks for fell
despight; [using,
Now scratching her, and her loose locks mis-
Now seeking darknesse, and now seeking light,
Then craving sucke, and then the sucke re-
fusing: [accusing.
Such was this Ladies fit in her loves fond

XV

But when she had with such unquiet fits
Her selfe there close afflicted long in vaine,
Yet found no casement in her troubled wits,
She unto Talus forth return'd againe,
By change of place seeking to ease her paine;
And gan enquire of him with mylder mood
The certaine cause of Artegals detaine,
And what he did, and in what state he stood,
And whether he did woo, or whether he were
woo'd?

XVI

'Ah wellaway!' (sayd then the yron man)
'That he is not the while in state to woo;
But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and wan,
Not by strong hand compelled thereunto,
But his owne doome, that none can now undoe.'
'Sayd I not then' (quoth shee), 'erwhile a-
right,
That this is things compacte betwixt you two,
Me to deceive of faith unto me plight,
Since that he was not forst, nor overcome in
fight?'

XVII

With that he gan at large to her dilate
The whole discourse of his captivance sad,
In sort as ye have heard the same of late:
All which when she with hard enduraunce had
Heard to the end, she was right sore bestad,
With sodaine stounds of wrath and griefe
attone;
Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made,
But streight her selfe did dight, and armor don,
And mounting to her steede bad Talus guide
her on.

XVIII

So forth she rode upon her ready way,
To seeke her Knight, as Talus her did guide.
Sadly she rode, and never word did say
Nor good nor bad, ne ever lookt aside, [hide
But still right downe; and in her thought did
The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent
To fierce avengement of that womans pride,

Which had her Lord in her base prison pent,
And so great honour with so fowle reproch had
blent.

XIX

So as she thus melancholicke did ride,
Chawing the cud of griefe and inward paine,
She chaunst to meete, toward the even-tide,
A Knight that softly paced on the plaine,
As if him selfe to solace he were faine:
Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rather bent
To peace then needlesse trouble to constraine,
As well by view of that his vestiment,
As by his modest semblant that no evill ment.

XX

He comming heare gan gently her salute
With curteous words, in the most comely wize;
Who though desirous rather to rest mute,
Then termes to entertaine of common guize,
Yet rather then she kindness would despize,
She would her selfe displease, so him requite.
Then gan the other further to devise
Of things abroad, as next to hand did light,
And many things demaund, to which she
answer'd light.

XXI

For litle lust had she to talke of ought,
Or ought to heare that mote delightfull bee:
Her minde was whole possessed of one thought,
That gave none other place. Which when as
he
By outward signes (as well he might) did see,
He list no longer to use lothfull speach,
But her besought to take it well in gree,
Sith shady dampe had dimd the heavens reach,
To lodge with him that night, unless good
cause empeach.

XXII

The Championesse, now seeing night at dore,
Was glad to yeeld unto his good request,
And with him went without gaine-saying
more.
Not farre away, but little wide by West,
His dwelling was, to which he him address:
Where soone arriving they received were
In seemely wise, as them besemed best;
For he, their host, them goodly well did cheare,
And talk't of pleasant things the night away
to weare.

XXIII

Thus passing th' evening well, till time of
rest,
Then Britomart unto a bowre was brought,
Where groomes awayted her to have undrest;
But she ne would undressed be for ought,

Ne doffe her armes, though he her much be-
sought:

For she had vow'd, she sayd, not to forgo
Those warlike weedes, till she revenge had
wrought

Of a late wrong upon a mortall foe,
Which she would sure performe, betide her
wele or wo.

XXIV

Which when their Host perceiv'd, right dis-
content

In minde he grew, for feare least by that art
He should his purpose misse, which close he
ment.

Yet taking leave of her he did depart.
There all that night remained Britomart,
Restlesse, recomfortlesse, with heart deepe
grieved,

Nor suffering the least twimckling sleepe to
Into her eye, which th' heart mote have re-
lieved,

But if the least appear'd, her eyes she streight

XXV

'Ye guilty eyes,' (sayd she) 'the which with
guyle

My heart at first betrayd, will ye betray
My life now too, for which a little while
Ye will not watch? false watches, wellaway!
I wote when ye did watch both night and day
Unto your losse; and now needes will ye
sleepe?

Now ye have made my heart to wake alway,
Now will ye sleepe? ah! wake, and rather
weepe [ye waking keepe,
To thinke of your nights want, that should

XXVI

Thus did she watch, and weare the weary
night

In wayfull plaints that none was to appease,
Now walking soft, now sitting still upright,
As sundry chaunge her seemed best to cme.
Ne leasse did Talus suffer sleepe to seaze
His eye-lids sad, but watcht continually,
Lying without her dore in great disease:
Like to a Spanell wayting carefully
Least any should betray his Lady treacherously.

XXVII

What time the native Belman of the night,
The bird that warn'd Peter of his fall,
First rings his silver Bell t' each sleepy wight,
That should their mindes up to devotion call,
She heard a wondrous noise below the hall:
All sodainely the bed, where she should lie,
By a false trap was let adowne to fall

Into a lower roome, and by and by
The loft was rayst againe, that no man could
it spie.

XXVIII

With sight whereof she was dismayd right
sore,
Perceiuing well the treason which was ment;
Yet stirred not at all for doubt of more,
But kept her place with courage confident,
Wayting what would ensue of that event.
It was not long before she heard the sound
Of armed men comming with close intent
Towards her chamber, at which dreadfull
stound [about her bound.
She quickly caught her sword, and shield

XXIX

With that there came unto her chamber dore
Two Knights all armed ready for to fight;
And after them full many other more,
A raskall rout, with weapons rudely dight.
Whom soone as Talus spide by glims of
night,
He started up, there where on ground he lay,
And in his hand his thrasher ready keight,
They seeing that let fve at him streightway,
And round about him preace in riotous aray.

XXX

But, soone as he began to lay about
With his rude yron haile, they gan to flic,
Both armed Knights and eke unarmed rout;
Yet Talus after them apace did plie,
Where ever in the darke he could them spie,
That here and there like scattred sheepe they
lay:

Then, backe returning where his Dame did lie,
He to her told the story of that fray,
And all that treason there intended did bewray.

XXXI

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and inly
burning
To be avenged for so fowle a deede,
Yet being forst to abide the daies returning,
Shethere remain'd; but with right wary heede,
Least any more such practise should proceede.
Now mote ye know (that which to Britomart
Unknown was) whence all this did proceede;
And for what cause so great mischievous smart
Was went to her that never evill ment in
hart.

XXXII

The Goodman of this house was Dolon hight;
A man of subtil wit and wicked minde,
That whilome in his youth had bene a Knight,
Aud armes had borne, but little good could
finde,

And much lesse honour by that warlike kinde
Of life: for he was nothing valorous,
But with slie shiftes and wiles did underminde
All noble Knights, which were adventurous,
And many brought to shame by treason treacherous.

XXXIII

He had three sonnes, all three like fathers
sonnes,
Like treacherous, like full of fraud and guile,
Of all that of this earthly compasse wonnes;
The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile
By Artgall, through his owne guilty wile:
His name was Guizor; whose untimely fate
For to avenge, full many treasons vile
His father Dolon had devis'd of late
With these his wicked sons, and shew'd his
cankred hate.

XXXIV

For sure he weend that this his present guest
Was Artgall, by many tokens plaine;
But chiefly by that yron page he ghest,
Which still was wont with Artgall remaine;
And therefore ment him surely to have slaine:
But by Gods grace, and her good heedynesse,
She was preserved from their traytrous traine,
Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnessse,
Ne suffred slothfull sleepe her eyelids to op-
presse.

XXXV

The morrow next, so soone as dawning houre
Discovered had the light to living eye,
She forth yssew'd out of her loathed bowre,
With full intent t' avenge that villany
On that vilde man and all his family;
And, coming down to seeke them where
they wond,
Nor sire, nor sonnes, nor any could she spie:
Each rowme she sought, but them all empty
fond. [nether kond.
They all were fled for feare; but whether,

XXXVI

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay,
But tooke her steede; and thereon mounting
light
Gan her addresse unto her former way.
She had not rid the mountenance of a flight,
But that she saw there present in her sight
Those two false brethren on that perillous
Bridge,
On which Pollente with Artgall did fight.

Streight was the passage, like a ploughed
ridge, [the lidge,
That, if two met, the one mote needes fall over

XXXVII

There they did thinke them selves on her to
wroake;
Who as she nigh unto them drew, the one
These vile reproches gan unto her speake:
'Thou recreant false traytor, that with lone
Of armes hast knighthood stolne, yet Knight
art none,
No more shall now the darkenesse of the night
Defend thee from the vengeance of thy fone;
But with thy blood thou shalt appease the
spright' [sight.
Of Guizor by thee slaine, and mured by thy

XXXVIII

Strange were the wonds in Britomartis eare,
Yet stayd she not for them, but forward fared,
Till to the perillous Bridge she came; and there
Talus desir'd that he might have prepared
The way to her, and those two losels scared;
But she thereat was wroth, that for despite
The glauncing sparkles through her bever
glared,
And from her eies did flash out fiery light,
Likes coles that through a silver Censer spar-
kle bright.

XXXIX

She stayd not to advise which way to take,
But putting spurres unto her fiery beast,
Thorough the midst of them she way did make,
The one of them, which most her wrath in-
creast,
Upon her speare she bore before her breast,
Till to the Bridges further end she past;
Where falling downe his challenge he releast:
The other over side the Bridge she cast
Into the river, where he drunke his deadly last.

XL

As when the flashing Levin haps to light
Upon two stubborne oakes, which stand so
neare
That way betwixt them none appears in sight;
The Engin, fiercely flying forth, doth teare
Th' one from the earth, and through the aire
doth beare;
The other it with force doth overthrow
Upon one side, and from his rootes doth reare:
So did the Championesse those two there strow,
And to their sire their carcasses left to bestow.

CANTO VII.

Britomart comes to Isis Church,
Where shée strange visions sees :
She fights with Radigund, her slaies,
And Artegall thence frees.

I

NOUGHT is on earth more sacred or divine,
That Gods and men doe equally adore,
Then this same vertue that doth right define :
For th' heavens themselves, whence mortal men
implore
Right in their wrongs, are rul'd by righteous
lore
Of highest Jove, who doth true justice deale
To his inferiour Gods, and evermore
Therewith contains his heavenly Common-
weale : [reveale
The skill whereof to Princes hearts he doth

II

Well therefore did the antique world invent
That Justice was a God of soveraine grace,
And altars unto him and temples lent,
And heavenly honours in the highest place ;
Calling him great Osyris, of the race
Of th' old Egyptian Kings that whylome were,
With fayned colours shading a true case ;
For that Osyris, whilst he lived here,
The justest man alive and truest did appeare.

III

His wife was Isis ; whom they likewise made
A Goddess of great powre and soverainty,
And in her person cunningly did shade .
That part of Justice which is Equity,
Whereof I have to treat here presently :
Unto whose temple when as Britomart
Arrived, shée with great humility
Did enter in, ne would that night depart ;
But Talus mote not be admitted to her part.

IV

There she received was in goodly wize
Of many Priests, which duely did attend
Upon the rites and daily sacrifice,
All clad in linnen robes with silver hemd ;
And on their heads, with long locks comely
kemd,
They wore rich Mitres shaped like the Moone,
To shew that Isis doth the Moone portend ;

Like as Osyris signifies the Sunne :
For that they both like race in equall justice
runne.

V

The Championesse them greetiſg, as she could,
Was thence by them into the Temple led ;
Whose goodly building when she did behould,
Borne upon stately pillours, all disprede
With shining gold, and arched over head,
She wondred at the workemaſs passing skill.
Whose like before she never saw nor red ;
And thereupon long while stood gazing still,
But thought that she thereon could never gaze
her fill.

VI

Thence forth unto the Idoll they her brought ;
The which was framed all of silver fine,
So well as could with cunning hand be wrought,
And clothed all in garments made of line,
Hemd all about with fringe of silver twine :
Upon her head she wore a Crowne of gold ;
To shew that she had powre in things divine :
And at her feete a Crocodile was rold,
That with her wreathed taile her middle did
enfold.

VII

One foote was set upon the Crocodile,
And on the ground the other fast did stand ;
So meaning to suppress both forged guile
And open force : and in her other hand
She stretched forth a long white sclender wand.
Such was the Goddess ; whom when Brito-
mart
Had long beheld, her selfe upon the land
She did prostrate, and with right humble hart
Unto her selfe her silent prayers did impart.

VIII

To which the Idoll, as it were inclining,
Her wand did move with amiable looke,
By outward shew her inward sence desining :
Who well perceiving how her wand sheshooke,
It as a token of good fortune tooke.
By this the day with dampe was overcast,
And joyous light the house of Jove forsooke ;

Which when she saw her helmet she unlaste,
And by the altars side her selfe to slumber
plaste.

IX

For other beds the Priests there used none,
But on their mother Earths deare lap did lie,
And bake their sides upon the cold hard stone,
T^e enure them selves to sufferance thereby,
And proud rebellious flesh to mortify:
For by the vow of their religion,
They tied were to stedfast chastity
And continence of life, that, all forgon,
They mote the better tend to their devotion.

X

Therefore they mote not taste of fleshly food,
Ne feed on ought the which doth blood con-
taine,

Ne drinke of wine; for wine, they say, is blood,
Even the bloud of Gyants, which were slaine
By thundring Jove in the Philegrean plaine:
For which the earth (as they the story tell)
Wroth with the Gods, which to perpetuall paine
Had damnd her sonnes which gainst them did
rebell,

With inward griefe and rage did against them
swell.

XI

And of their vitall blood, the which was shed
Into her pregnant bosome, forth she brought
The fruitfull vine; whose liquor bloudy red,
Having the mindes of men with fury fraught,
Mote in them stirre up old rebellious thought
To make new warre against the Gods againe.
Such is the powre of that same fruit, that
nought

The fell contagion may thereof retrainie,
Ne with reasons rule her madding mood
containe.

XII

There did the warlike Maide her selfe repose,
Under the wings of Isis all that night;
And with sweetest rest her heavy eyes did close,
After that long daies toile and weary plight:
Where whilst her earthly parts with soft
delight

Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie,
There did appeare unto her heavenly spright
A wondrous vision, which did close impleie
The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

XIII

Her seem'd, as she was doing sacrifice
To Isis, deckt with Mitre on her hed
And linnen stole after those Priests guise,
All sodainly she saw transfigured

Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red,
And Moore-like Mitre to a Crowne of gold;
That even she her selfe much wondered
At such a chaunge, and joyed to behold
Her selfe adorn'd with gems and jewels
manifold.

XIV

And, in the midst of her felicity,
An hideous tempest seemed from below.
To rise through all the Temple sodainely,
That from the Altar all about did blow
The holy fire, and all the embers strow
Upon the ground; which, kindled privily,
Into outrageous flames unwarres did grow,
That all the Temple put in jeopardy
Of flaming, and her selfe in great perplexity.

XV

With that the Crocodile, which sleeping lay
Under the Idols feete in fearelesse bowre,
Seem'd to awake in horrible dismay,
As being troubled with that stormy stowre;
And gaping greedy wide did streight devoure
Both flames and tempest: with which growen
great, powre,
And swolne with pride of his owne peerlesse
He gan to threaten her likewise to eat.
But that the Goddess with her rod him
backe did beat.

XVI

Tho turning all his pride to humblesse
knecke,
Him selfe before her feete he lowly threw,
And gan for grace and love of her to seeke;
Which she accepting, he so neare her drew
That of his game she soone entwombed grew,
And forth did bring a Lion of great might,
That shortly did all other beasts subdew.
With that she waked full of fearefull fright,
And doubtfull dismay through that so un-
couth sight.

XVII

So thereupon long while she musing lay,
With thousand thoughts feeding her fantasie,
Untill she spide the lampe of light some day
Up-lifted in the porch of heaven hie:
Then up she rose fraught with melancholy,
And forth into the lower parts did pas,
Whereas the Priests she found full busily
About their holy things for morrow Mas;
Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted was:

XVIII

But by the change of her unchearefull looke,
They might perceive she was not well in
plight,

Or that some pensivenesse to heart she tooke:
Therefore thus one of them, who seem'd in
sight

To be the greatest and the gravest wight,
To her bespake: 'Sir Knight, it seemes to me
That, thorough evill rest of this last night,
Or ill apayd or much dismayd ye be; [see.]
That by your change of cheare is easie for to

XIX

'Certes,' (sayd she) 'sith ye so well have
spide

The troublous passion of my pensive mind,
I will not seeke the same from you to hide;
But will my cares unfold, in hope to find
Your aide to guide me out of exour blind.'
'Say on' (quoth he) 'the secret of your hart
For, by the holy vow which me doth bind,
I am adjurd best counsell to impart
To all that shall require my comfort in their
smart.'

XX

Then gan she to declare the whole di-course
Of all that vision which to her appeared,
As well as to her minde it had recourse.
All which when he unto the end had heard,
Like to a weake faint-hearted man he fared
Through great astonishment of that strange
sight;

And, with long locks up-standing, stiffly stared
Like one adawed with some dreadfull spright:
So, fild with heavenly fury, thus he her be-
hight.

XXI

'Magnifick Virgin, that in queint di-guise
Of British armes doest maske thy royall blood,
So to pursue a perillous emprize,
How couldst thou weene, through that dis-
guized hood,

To hide thy state from being understood?
Can from thy 'state' immortall Gods ought hidden
bee?

They doe thy linage, and thy Lordly brood,
They doe thy sere lamenting sore for thee,
They doe thy love forlorne in womens thral-
dome see.

XXII

'The end whereof, and all the long event,
They do to thee in this same dreame discover:
For that same Crocodile doth represent
The righteous Knight that is thy faithfull
Like to Osyris in all just endever: [lover,
For that same Crocodile Osyris is,
That under Isis feete doth sleepe for ever;
To shew that clemencie oft, in things amis.
Restraignes those sterne behests and cruell
doomes of his.

XXIII

'That Knight shall all the troublous stormes
asswage

And raging flames, that many foes shall reare
To hinder thee from the just heritage [deare:
Of thy sires Crowne, and from thy countrey
Then shalt thou take him to thy loved fere,
And joyne in equall portion of thy realme;
And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare,
That Lion-like shall shew his powre extream.
So blesse thee God, and give thee joyance of
thy dreame!

XXIV

All which when she unto the end had heard,
She much was eased in her troublous thought,
And on those Priests bestowed rich reward;
And royall gifts of gold and silver wrought
She for a present to their Goddesse brought.
Then taking leave of them, she forward went
To seeke her love, where he was to be sought:
Ne rested till she came without relent
Unto the land of Amazons, as she was bent.

XXV

Whereof when newes to Radigund was
brought,

Not with amaze, as women wonted bee,
She was confused in her troublous thought;
But fild with courage and with joyous glee,
As glad to heare of armes, the which now she
Had long surceast, she bad to open bold,
That she the face of her new foe might see:
But when they of that yron man had told,
Which late her folke had slaine, she bad them
forth to hold.

XXVI

So there without the gate, (as seemed best)
She caused her Pavilion be pight;
In which stout Britomart her selfe did rest,
Whiles Talus watched at the dore all night.
All night likewise they of the towne in flight
Upon their wall good watch and ward did
keepe.

The morrow next, so soone as dawning light
Bad doe away the damp of drouzie sleepe,
The warlike Amazon out of her bowre did
peepe.

XXVII

And caused streight a Trumpet loud to shrill
To warne her foe to battell soone be prest:
Who, long before awoke, (for she ful ill
Could sleepe all night, that in unquiet brest
Did closely harbour such a jealous guest)
Was to the battell whilome ready dight.
Eftsoones that warriouresse with haughty
crest

Did forth issue all ready for the fight:
On th' other side her foe appeared soone in
sight.

XXXVIII

But ere they reared hand the Amazone
Began the streight conditions to propound,
With which she used still to tye her fone,
To serve her so as she the rest had bound:
Which when the other heard, she sternly
frownd

For high disdain of such indignity,
And would no lenger treat, but bad them
sound;

For her no other termes should ever tie
Then what prescribed were by lawes of che-
valrie.

XXXIX

The Trumpets sound, and they together run
With greedy rage, and with their faulchins
smot;

Ne either sought the others strokes to shun,
But through great fury both their skill forgot,
And practice use in armes; ne spared not
Their dainty parts, which nature had created
So faire and tender without staine or spot
For other uses then they them translated;
Which they now hackt and hewd as if such use
they hated.

XXX

As when a Tygre and a Lionesse
Are met at spoyle of some hungry pray,
Both challenge it with equall greedinesse:
But first the Tygre claws thereon did lay,
And therefore, loth to loose her right away,
Doth in defence thereof full stoutly stond:
To which the Lion strongly doth game-ay,
That she to hunt the beast first tooke in bond:
And therefore ought it have where ever she it
fond.

XXXI

Full fiercely la de the Amazon about,
And dealt her blowes unmercifully sore;
Which Britomart with-tood with courage stout,
And them repaide againe with double more.
So long they fought, that all the grassie flore
Was fild with blood which from their side did
flow,

And gushed through their armes, that all in gore
They trode, and on the ground their lives did
strow, [should grow]
Like fruitles seede, of which untimely death

XXXII

At last proud Radigund, with fell despight,
Having by chauce episode advantage neare,
Let drive at her with all her dreadfull might,
And thus upbrayding said: 'This token beare

Unto the man whom thou doest love so deare;
And tell him for his sake thy life thou gavest.'
Which spitefull words she, sore engriev'd to
heare, [pravest,
Thus answer'd: 'Lewdly thou my love de-
Who shortly must repent that now so vainly
bravest.'

XXXIII

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell passage found,
That glauncing on her shoulder-plate it bit
Unto the bone, and made a griesly wound,
That she her shield, through raging smart of it,
Could scarce uphold: yet soone she it requit;
For, having force increast through furious
paine,
She her so ruelly on the helmet smit
That it empierced to the very braine,
And her proud person low prostrated on the
plaine.

XXXIV

Where being layd, the wrothfull Britonesse
Stayd not till she came to her selfe againe,
But in revenge both of her loves distresse
And her late vile reproch though vaunted vaine,
And also of her wound which sore did paine.
She with one stroke both head and helmet cleft.
Which dreadfull sight when all her warlike
traîne
There present saw, each one of sence bereft
Fled fast into the towne, and her sole victor
left.

XXXV

But yet so fast they could not home retrate,
But that swift Talus did the formost win;
And, pressing through the preace unto the
gate,
Pelmell with them attonce did enter in.
There then a piteous slaughter did begin;
For all that ever came within his reach
He with his yron flae did thresh so thin,
That he no worke at all left for the leach:
Like to an hideous storme, which nothing may
• empeach.

XXXVI

And now by this the noble Conquerresse
Her selfe came in, her glory to partake:
Where, though revengefull vow she did pro-
fesse, [make
Yet when she saw the heapes which he did
Of slaughtered carcasses, her heart did quake
For very ruth, which did it almost rive,
That she his fury willed him to slake:
For else he sure had left not one alive,
But all, in his revenge, of spirite would de-
prive.

XXXVII

Tho, when she had his execution stayd,
She for that yron prison did enquire,
In which her wretched love was captive layd:
Which breaking open with indignant ire,
She entred into all the partes entire:
Where when she saw that lothly uncouth
sight

Of men disguiz'd in womanishe attire,
Her heart gan grudge for very deepe despight
Of so unmanly maske in misery misdight.

XXXVIII

At last when as to her owne Love she came,
Whom like disguise no lesse deformed had,
At sight thereof abasht with secreete shame
She turnd her head aside, as nothing glad
To have beheld a spectacle so bad:
And then too well believ'd that which tofore
Jealous suspect as true untruely drad
Which vaine conceipt now nourishing no more.
She sought with ruth to salve his sad misfor-
tunes sore.

XXXIX

Not so great wonder and astonishment
Did the most chaste Penelope possesse
To see her Lord, that was reported drent
And dead long since in dolorous distresse.
Come home to her in piteous wretchednesse,
After long travell of full twenty yeares,
That she knew not his favours likeliness.
For many scarres and many hoary heares,
But stood long staring on him mongst uncer-
taine feares.

XL

'Ah, my deare Lord! what sight is this?'
quoth she,
'What May-game hath misfortune made of you?
Where is that dreadfull manly looke? where be
Those mighty palmes, the which ye wont t'
embrew
In bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew?
Could ought on earth so wondrous change have
wrought,
As to have robde you of that manly hew?
Could so great courage stouped have to ought?
Then, farewell fleshly force! I see thy pride is
nought.'

XLI

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him
brought,
And causd him those uncomely weedes undight;
And in their steede for other rayment sought,
Whereof there was great store, and armors
bright,

Which had bene reft from many a noble Knight,
Whom that proud Amazon subdued had,
Whilest Fortune favoured her successe in
sight:

In which when as she him anew had clad,
She was reviv'd, and joyd much in his sem-
blance glad.

XLII

So there a while they afterwards remained,
Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale:
During which space she there as l'princess
rained,

And changing all that forme of common-weale
The liberty of women did repeale, [toring
Which they had long usurpt; and, them res-
To mens subjection, did true Justice deale,
That all they, as a Goddesses her adoring,
Her wisdoms did admire, and hearkned to
her loring.

XLIII

For all those Knights, which long in captive
shade
Had shrowded bene, she did from thralldome
And magistrats of all that city made.
And gave to them great living and large fee:
And that they should for ever faithfull bee,
Made them swaie fealty to Artegall;
Who when him selfe now well recurd did see,
He purposed to proceed, what so befall,
Upon his first adventure which him forth did
call.

XLIV

Full sad and sorrowfull was Britomart
For his departure, her new cause of griefe;
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,
Consisted much in that adventures priefe:
The care whereof, and hope of his successe,
Gave unto her great comfort and reliefe;
That womanish complaints she did repress,
And tempered for the time her present heavi-
nesse.

XLV

There she continu'd for a certaine space,
Till through his want her woe did more
increase:
Then hoping that the change of aire and place
Would change her paine, and sorrow some-
what ease,
She parted thence her anguish to appease.
Meane-while her noble Lord, sir Artegall,
Went on his way; ne ever howe did cease
Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall:
That for another Canto will more fitly fall.

CANTO VIII.

Prince Arthure and Sir Artegall
Free Samient from feare :
They slay the Soudan, drive his wife
Adicia to despaire.

I
NOUGHT under heaven so strongly doth allure
The sence of man, and all his minde possesse,
As beauties lovely baite, that doth procure
Great warriours oft their rigour to repressse,
And mighty hands forget their manlinesse;
Drawne with the powre of an heart-robbing
And wrapt in fetters of a golden tresse, [eye,
That can with melting pleasance mollifye
Their hardned hearts, enur'd to bloud and
cruelty.

II
So whylome learnd that mighty Jewish
swaine, [right,
Each of whose lockes did match a man in
To lay his spoiles before his lemans traine:
So also did that great Ocean Knight
For his loves sake his Lions skin undight;
And so did warlike Antony neglect
The worlds whole rule for Cleopatras sight.
Such wondrous powre hath womens faire aspect
To captive men, and make them all the world
reject.

III
Yet could it not sterne Artegall retaine,
Nor hold from suite of his avowed quest,
Which he had undertane to Gloriane;
But left his love, albe her strong request,
Faire Britomart to languor and unrest,
And role him selfe upon his first intent,
Ne day nor night did ever idly rest;
Ne wight but onely Talus with him went,
The true guide of his way and vertuous go-
vernment.

IV
So travelling, he chaunst far off to heed
A Damzell, dying on a palfrey fast
Before two Knights that after her did speed
With all their powre, and her full fiercely
In hope to have her overhent at last: [chast
Yet fled she fast, and both them farre outwent,
Carried with wings of feare, like fowle aghast,
With locks all loose, and rayment all to-rent;
And ever as she rode her eye was backward
bent.

V
Soone after these he saw another Knight,
That after those two former rode apace
With speare in rest, and prickt with all his
might.
So ran they all, as they had bene at bace,
They being phased that did others chase.
At length he saw the hundmost overtake
One of those two, and force him turne his face;
However loth he were his way to slake,
Yet mote he algates now abide, and answer
make.

VI
But th'other still pursu'd the fearefull Mayd;
Who still from him as fast away did the,
Ne once for ought her speedy passage stayd,
Till that at length she did before her spie
Sir Artegall: to whom she straight did he
With gladfull hast, in hope of him to get
Succour against her greedy enemy:
Who seeing her approach gan forward set
To save her from her feare, and him from force
to let.

VII
But he, like hound full greedy of his pray,
Being impatient of impediment,
Centinu'd still his course, and by the way
Thought with his speare him quight have
So both together, ylike felly bent. [overwent.
Like fiercely met. But Artegall was stronger,
And better skild in Tilt and Turnament,
And bore him quite out of his saddle, longer
Therf two speares length: So mischiefe over-
matcht the wronger.

VIII
And in his fall misfortune him mistooke;
For on his head unhappily he pight, [broke,
That his owne waight his necke asunder
And left there dead. Meane-while the other
Knight
Defeated had the other faytour quight,
And all his bowels in his body brast:
Whom leaving there in that dispiteous plight,
He ran still on, thinking to follow fast
His other fellow Pagan which before him past.

IX

Instead of whom finding there ready prest
Sir Artegall, without discretion
He at him ran with ready speare in rest;
Who, seeing him come still so fiercely on,
Against him made againe. So both anon
Together met, and strongly either strooke
And broke their speares; yet neither has
forgon

His horses backs, yet to and fro long shooke
And tottered, like two towres which through
a tempest quooke.

X

But, when againe they had recovered sence,
They drew their swords, in mind to make
amends [pretence:
For what their speares had fayld of their
Which when the Damzell, who those deadly
ends [friends
Of both her foes had seene, and now her
For her beginning a more fearefull fray,
She to them runnes in hast, and her haire
rends,
Crying to them their cruell hands to stay,
Untill they both doe heare what she to them
will say.

XI

They sayd their hands, when she thus gan
to speake: [unwise
'Ah gentle Knights! what meane ye thus
Upon your selves anothers wrong to wreake?
I am the wrong'd, whom ye did enterprise
Both to redresse, and both redrest likewise:
Witness the Paynims both, whom ye may see
There dead on ground. What doe ye then
devise
Of more revenge? if more, then I am shee
Which was the roote of all: end your revenge
on mee.'

XII

Whom when they heard so say, they lookt
about
To weete if it were true as she had told;
Where when they saw their foes dead out of
doubt, [hold.
Eftsoones they gan their wrothfull hands to
And Ventails reare each other to behold.
Tho when as Artegall did Arthure vew,
So faire a creature and so wondrous bold,
He much admired both his heart and hew,
And toucht with intire affection nigh him
drew;

XIII

Saying, 'Sir Knight, of pardon I you pray,
Shat all unweeting have you wrong'd thus
sore,

Suffring my hand against my heart to stray;
Which if ye please forgive, I will therefore
Yeeld for amends my selfe yours evermore,
Or what so penaunce shall by you be red.'
To whom the Prince: 'Certes me needeth
more

To crave the same; whom errour so misled,
As that I did mistake the living for the ded.

XIV

'But, sith ye please that both our blames
shall die,
Amends may for the trespassse soone be made,
Since neither is endamag'd much thereby.'
So can they both them selves full eath per-
swade

To faire accordaunce, and both faults to shade,
Either embracing other lovingly,
And swearing faith to either on his blade,
Never thenceforth to nourish enmity,
But either others cause to maintaine mutually.

XV

Then Artegall gan of the Prince enquire,
What were those knights which there on
ground were layd,
And had receiv'd them tollies worthy hire,
And for what cause they chased so that Mayd?
'Certes I wote not well,' (the Prince then
sayd)

'But by adventure found them faring so,
As by the way unweetingly I strayd: [grow,
And lo! the Damzell selfe, whence all did
Of whom we may at will the whole occasion
know.'

XVI

Then they that Damzell called to them nie,
And asked her what were those two her fone,
From whom she carst so fast away did flie:
And what was she her selfe so woe-begone,
And for what cause pursu'd of them atone.
To whom she thus: 'Then wote ye well, that I
Doe serve a Queene that not far hence doth
wone,

A Princesse of great powre and majestic,
Famous through all the world, and honor'd
far and ne.

XVII

'Her name Mercilla most men use to call,
That is a mayden Queene of high renowne,
For her great bounty knownen over all
And soveraine grace, with which her royall
crowne

She doth support, and strongly beateth downe
The malice of her foes, which her envy
And at her happinesse do fret and frowne;
Yet she her selfe the more doth magnify,
And even to her foes her mercies multiply.

XVIII

'Mongst many which maligne her happy
state,

There is a mighty man, which wonnes hereby,
That with most fell despight and deadly hate
Seekes to subvert her Crowne and dignity,
And all his powre doth thereunto apply:
And her good Knights, of which so brave a
band

Serves her as any Princesse under sky,
He either spoiles, if they aggrit him stand,
Or to his part allures, and bribeth under hand.

XIX

'Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill,
Which he unto her people does each day;
But that he seekes by traytrous traines to spill
Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay?
That, O ye Heavens, defend! and turne away
From her unto the mi-creeant him selfe;
That neither hath religion nor fay,
But makes his God of his ungodly pelfe,
And Idols serves: so let his Idols serve the
Else!

XX

'To all which cruell ~~man~~anny, they say
He is provokt, and stir'd up day and night
By his bad wife that hight Adicia;
Who counsels him, through confidence of might,
To breake all bonds of law and rules of right:
For she her selfe professeth mortall foe
To Justice, and against her still doth fight,
Working to all that love her deadly woe,
And making all her Knights and people to doe
so.

XXI

'Which my liege Lady seeing, thought it
best

With that his wife in friendly wise to deale,
For stint of strife and stablishment of rest
Both to her selfe and to her common-weale,
And all forepast displeasures to repeale.
So me in message unto her she sent,
To treat with her, by way of enterdeale,
Of finall peace and faire attonement
Which might concluded be by mutuall con-
sent.

XXII

'All times have wont safe passage to afford
To messengers that come for causes just:
But this proude Dame, disdayning all accord,
Not onely into bitter termes forth brist,
Reviling me and rayling as she lust,
But lastly, to make proofe of utmost shame,
Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust,
Miscalling me by many a bitter name,
That never did her ill, ne once deserved blame.

XXIII

'And lastly, that no shame might wanting be,
When I was gone, soone after me she sent
These two false Knights, whom there ye lying
see,

To be by them dishonoured and shent:
But, thank't be God, and your good hardiment,
They have the price of their owne folly payd.
So said this Damzell, that hight Samient,
And to those knights for their so noble ayd
Her selfe most gratefull shew'd, and heaped
thanks repayd.

XXIV

But they now having thoroughly heard and
seene [complained
Al those great wrongs, the which that mayd
To have bene done against her Lady Queene
By that proud dame which her so much dis-
dained, [fained
Were moved much thereat; and twist them
With all their force to worke avengement
strong
Upon the Souldan selfe, which it mayntained,
And on his Lady, th' author of that wrong,
And upon all those Knights that did to her
belong.

XXV

But, thinking best by counterfet disguise
To their desaigne to make the easier way,
They did this complot twist them selves devise:
First, that Sir Artegall should him array
Like one of those two Knights which dead
there lay;
And then that Damzell, the sad Samient,
Should as his purchast prize with him convey
Unto the Souldans court, her to present
Unto his scornefull Lady that for her had sent.

XXVI

So as they had devis'd, Sir Artegall
Him clad in th' armour of a Pagan knight,
And taking with him, as his vanquish't thrall,
That Damzell, led her to the Souldans right:
Where soone as his proud wife of her had sight,
Forth of her window as she looking lay,
She weened straight it was her Paynim Knight,
Which brought that Damzell as his purchast
pray; [way.
And sent to him a Page that mote direct his

XXVII

Who bringing them to their appointed place,
Offred his service to disarm the Knight;
But he refusing him to let unlance,
For doubt to be discovered by his sight,

Kept himselfe still in his straunge armour
dight:

Soone after whom the Prince arrived there,
And sending to the Souldan in despight
A bold defiance, did of him requere
That Damsell whom he held as wrongfull
prisoner.

XXVIII

Wherewith the Souldan all with furie fraught,
Swearing and banning most blasphemously,
Commaunded straight his armour to be
brought;

And, mounting straight upon a charret hyc,
(With yron wheelles and hookes arm'd dread-
fully,

And drawne of cruell steedes which he had led
With flesh of men, whom through fell tyranny
He slaughtred had, and ere they were halfe ded
Their bodies to his beastes for provender did
spred,)

XXIX

So forth he came, all in a cote of plate
Burnisht with bloudie rust; whiles on the
greene

The Briton Prince him readie did awayte,
In glistering armes right goodly well-beseene,
That shone as bright as doth the heaven
sheene:

And by his stirrup Talus did attend,
Playing his pages part, as he had bene
Before directed by his Lord; to th' end
He should his fiale to final execution bend.

XXX

Thus goe they both together to their geare,
With like fierce minds, but meanings different;
For the proud Souldan, with presumptuous
cheare

And countenance sublime and insolent
Sought onely slaughter and avengement;
But the brave Prince for honour and for right,
Gainst tortious powre and lawlesse regiment,
In the behalfe of wronged weake did fight:
More in his causes truth he trusted then in
might.

XXXI

Like to the Thracian Tyrant, who they say
Unto his horses gave his guests for meat,
Till he himselfe was made their greedie pray,
And torne in pieces by Alcides great;
So thought the Souldan, in his follies threat,
Either the Prince in peeces to have torne
With his sharp wheelles, in his first rages heat,
Or under his fierce horses feet have borne,
And trampled downe in dust his thoughts dis-
dained scorne,

XXXII

But the bold child that perill well espying,
If he too rashly to his charret drew,
Gave way unto his horses speedie flying,
And their resistlesse rigour did eschew:
Yet, as he passed by, the Pagan threw
A shivering dart with so impetuous force,
That had he not it shunn'd with heedfull vew,
It had himselfe translixed or his horse,
Or made them both one masse withouten more
remorse.

XXXIII

Oft drew the Prince unto his charret nigh,
In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare,
But he was mounted in his seat so high,
And his wingfooted coursers him did beare
So fast away that, ere his readie speare
He could advance, he farre was gone and past:
Yet still he him did follow every where,
And followed was of him likewise full fast,
So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did
last.

XXXIV

Againe the Pagan threw another dart,
Of which he had with him abundant store
On every side of his unbatteld cart,
And of all other weapons lesse or more,
Which warlike uses had devis'd of yore:
The wicked shaft, guyded through th' ayrie
wyde
By some bad spirit that it to mischief bore,
Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde,
And made a griesly wound in his enriven side.

XXXV

Much was he grieved with that haplesse
throre,
That opened had the welspring of his blood;
But much the more, that to his hatefull foe
He mote not come to wreake his wrathfull
mood:
That made him rave, like to a Lyon wood,
Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand
Cannot come neare him in the covert wood,
Where he with boughes hath built his shady
stand, [brand.
And fensd himselfe about with many a flaming

XXXVI

Still when he sought t' approach unto him ny
His charret wheelles about him whirled round,
And made him backe againe as fast to fly;
And eke his steedes, like to an hungry hound
That hunting after game hath carrion found,
So cruelly did him pursew and chace,
That his good steed, all were he much re-
round

For noble courage and for hardie race,
Durst not endure their sight, but fled from
place to place.

XXXVII

Thus long they trast and travers to and fro,
Seeking by every way to make some breach;
Yet could the Prince not nigh unto him goe,
That one sure stroke he might unto him reach,
Whereby his strengthes assay he might him
teach.

At last from his victorious shield he drew
The vaile, which did his powrefull light em-
peach,
And comming full before his horses vew,
As they upon him prest, it plaine to them did
shew.

XXXVIII

Like lightening flash that hath the gazer
burned,
So did the sight thereof their sense dismay,
That backe againe upon themselves they
turned,

And with their ryder ranne perforce away:
Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay
With raynes or wonted rule, as well he knew:
Nought feared they what he could do or say,
But th' onely feare that was before their vew,
From which like mazed deare dismayfully they
flew.

XXXIX

Fast did they fly as them their feete could
beare
High over hilles, and lowly over dales,
As they were follow'd of their former teare.
In vaine the Pagan bannes, and swears, and
rayles,

And backe with both his hands unto him hayles
The resty raynes, regarded now no more:
He to them cals and speaks, yet nought
avayles;
They heare him not, they have forgot his lore,
But go which way they list, their guide they
have forlore.

XL

As when the fire-mouthed steedes, which
drew
The Sunnes bright wayne to Phaetons decay,
Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew
With ugly craples crawling in their way,
The dreadful sight did them so sore affray,
That their well-known courses they forwent;
And, leading th' ever-burning lampe astray,
This lower world nigh all to ashes brent,
And left their scorched path yet in the firma-
ment.

XLI

Such was the furie of these head-strong
steeds,
Soone as the infants sunlike shield they saw,
That all obedience both to worls and deeds
They quite forgot, and scord all former law:
Through woods, and rocks, and mountaineys
they did draw
The yron charet, and the wheelles did teare,
And to't the Paynim without feare or awe;
From side to side they tost him here and there,
Crying to them in vaine that nould his crying
heare.

XLII

Yet still the Prince pursw'd him close behind,
Oft making offer him to smite, but found
No ensie meanes according to his mind:
At last they have all overthrowne to ground
Quite topside turvey, and the Pagan bound
Amongst the yron hookes and graples keene
Torne all to rags, and rent with many a
wound;
That no whole peece of him was to be seene,
But scattred all about, and strow'd upon the
greene.

XLIII

Like as the cursed son of Theseus,
That following his chace in dewy morne,
To fly his stepdames loves outrageous,
Of his owne steedes was all to peeces torne,
And his faire limbs left in the woods forlorne;
That for his sake Diana did lament,
And all the wooddy Nymphes did wayle and
mourne.
So was this Souldan rapt and all to-rent,
That of his shape appear'd no litle monument.

XLIV

Onely his shield and armour, which there lay,
Though nothing whole, but all to-brusd and
broken,
Heeip did take, and with him brought away,
That mote remaine for an eternall token
To all mongst whom this storie should be
spoken,
How worthily, by heavens high decree,
Justice that day of wrong her selfe had wroken;
That all men, which that spectacle did see,
By like ensample mote for ever warned bee.

XLV

So on a tree before the Tyrants dore
He caused them be hang in all mens sight,
To be a moniment for evermore.
Which when his Ladie from the castles hight

Beheld, it much appald her troubled spright :
Yet not, as women wont, in dolefull fit
She was dismayd, or faynted through affright,
But gathered unto her her troubled wit,
And gan eftsouones devise to be aveng'd for it.

XLVI

Streight downe she ranne, like an enraged
cow
That is robbed of her youngling dere,
With knife in hand, and fatall did vow
To wreake her on that mayden messengere,
Whom she had causd be kept as prisonere
By Artegall, miswene'd for her owne Knight,
That brought her backe: And, comming present
there,

She at her ran with all her force and might,
All flaming with revenge and furious despight.

XLVII

Like raging Ino, when with knife in hand
She threw her husbands murdered infant out ;
Or fell Medea, when on Colchicke strand
Her brothers bones she scattered all about ;
Or as that madding mother, mongst the rout
Of Bacchus Priests, her owne deare flesh did
teare :

Yet neither Ino, nor Medea stout,
Nor all the Mœnades so furious were,
As this bold woman when she saw that
Danzell there.

XLVIII

But Artegall, being thereof aware,
Did stay her cruell hand ere she her raught ;
And, as she did her selfe to strike prepare,
Out of her fist the wicked weapon caught :
With that, like one enfelon'd or distraught,
She forth did come whether her rage her bore,
With franticke passion and with furie fraught ;

And, breaking forth out at a postene dore,
Unto the wyld wood ranne, her dolours to de-
plore.

XLIX

As a mad bytch, when as the franticke fit
Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath,
Doth runne at randon, and with furious bit
Snatching at every thing doth wreake her
wrath

On man and beast that commeth in her path.
There they doe say that she transformed was
Into a Tygre, and that Tygres scath
In crueltie and outrage she did pas, [has.
To prove her surname true, that she imposed

L

Then Artegall, himselfe discovering plaine,
Did issue forth gainst all that warlike rout
Of knights and armed men, which did main-
taine

That Ladies part, and to the Souldan lout :
All which he did assault with courage stout,
All were they nigh an hundred knights of name,
And like wyld Goates them chased all about,
Flying from place to place with cowheard
shame ;

So that with fiall force them all he overcame

LI

Then caused he the gates be opened wyde ;
And there the Prince, as victour of that day,
With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde,
Presenting him with all the rich array
And roiall pompe, which there long hidden lay,
Purchast through lawlesse powre and tortious
wrong
Of that proud Souldan whom he earst did slay.
So both, for rest, there having stayd not long,
Marcht with that mayd ; fit matter for another
song.

CANTO IX.

Arthur and Artegall catch Gnyle,
Whom Talus doth dismay :
They to Mercillaes pallace come,
And see her rich array.

I

WHAT Tygre, or what other salvage wight,
Is so exceeding furious and fell [might?
As wrong, when it hath arm'd it selfe with
Not fit mongst men that doe with reason mell,
But mongst wyld beasts, and salvage woods,
to dwell ; [voure,
Where still the stronger doth the weake de-
And they that most in boldnesse doe excell

Are dreaddad most, and feared for their powre ;
Fit for Adicia there to build her wicked bowre.

II

There let her wonne, farre from resort of men,
Where righteous Artegall her late exyled ;
There let her ever keepe her damued den,
Where none may be with her lewd parts de-
fyled,

Z

Nor none but beasts may be of her despoyled;
And turne we to the noble Prince, where late
We did him leave, after that he had foyled
The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull fate
Had utterly subverted his unrighteous state.

III

Where having with Sir Artegal a space
Well solast in that Souldans late delight,
They both, resolving now to leave the place,
Both it and all the wealth therein behight
Unto that Damzell in her Ladies right,
And so would have departed on their way;
But she them wou'd, by all the meanes she
might,
And earnestly besought to wend that day
With her, to see her Ladie thence not farre
away.

IV

By whose entreatie both they overcommen
Agree to goe with her: and by the way,
(As often falles) of sundry things did commen:
Mongst which that Damzell did to them be-
wray [lay;
A strange adventure, which not farre thence
To weet, a wicked villaine, bold and stout,
Which wonned in a rocke not farre away,
That robbed all the countrie there about,
And brought the pillage home, whence none
could get it out.

V

Thereto both his owne wylie wit, (she sayd)
And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place,
Both unassaylable, gave him great ayde:
For he so crafty was to forge and face,
So light of hand, and nymble of his pace,
So smooth of tongue, and subtile in his tale,
That could deceive one looking in his face:
Therefore by name Malengin they him call,
Well known by his feates, and famous over-
all.

VI

Through these his slights he many doth con-
found:
And eke the rocke, in which he wents to dwell,
Is wondrous strong and hewen farre under
ground,
A dreadfull depth; how deepe no man can tell,
But some doe say it gueth downe to hell:
And all within it full of wyndings is [smell
And hidden wayes, that scarce an hound by
Can follow out those false footsteps of his,
Ne none can backe retorne that once are gone
amis.

VII

Which when those knights had heard, their
harts gan earne
To understand that villains dwelling place,
And greatly it desir'd of her to learne,
And by which way they towards it should
trace, [pate
'Were not' (sayd she) 'that it should let your
Towards my Ladies presence, by you ment,
I would you guyde directly to the place.'
'Then let not that' (said they) 'stay your in-
tent; [have hent.'
For neither will one foot, till we that carle

VIII

So forth they past, till they approached ny
Unto the rocke where was the villains won:
Which when the Damzell neare at hand did
spy, [upon
She warn'd the knights thereof; who there-
Gan to advize what best were to be done.
So both agreed to send that mayd afore,
Where she might sit nigh to the den alone,
Wayling, and raying pittifull upore,
As if she did some great calamitie deplore.

IX

With noyse whereof when as the caytive
carle
Should issue forth, in hope to find some spoyle,
They in awayt would closely him ensnarle,
Ere to his den he backward could recoyle,
And so would hope him easily to foyle.
The Damzell straight went, as she was directed,
Unto the rocke; and there, upon the soyle
Having her selfe in wretched wize abjected,
Gan weep and wayle, as if great griefe had
her afflicted.

X

The cry whereof entring the hollow cave
Eftsoones brought forth the villaine, as they
ment,
With hope of her some wishfull boot to have.
Full dreadfull wight he was as ever went
Upon the earth, with hollow eyes deepe pent,
And long curld locks that downe his shoulders
shagged;
And on his backe an uncouth vestiment
Made of strange stuffe, but all to-worne and
ragged, [jagged.
And underneath, his breech was all to-torne and

XI

And in his hand an huge long staffe he held,
Whose top was arm'd with many an yron
hooke,
Fit to catch hold of all that he could weld,

Or in the compasse of his clouches tooke ;
And ever round about he cast his looke :
Als at his backe a great wyde net he bore,
With which he seldome fished at the brooke,
But usd to fish for fooles on the dry shore,
Of which he in faire weather wont to take
great store.

XII-

Him when the damzell saw fast by her side,
So ugly creature, she was nigh dismayd,
And now for helpe aloud in earnest cride:
But when the villaine saw her so affrayd,
He gan with guilefull words her to perswade
To banish feare; and, with Sardonian smyle
Laughing on her, his false intent to shade,
Gan forth to lay his bayte her to beguyle,
That from her self unwares he might her
steale the whyle.

XIII

Like as the fouler on his guilefull pype
Charmes to the birds full many a pleasant lay,
That they the whiles may take lesse heedie
keepe

How he his nets doth for their ruine lay:
So did the villaine to her prate and play,
And many pleasant trickes before her show,
To turne her eyes from his intent away;
For he in slights and juggling feates did flow,
And of legierlemayne the mysteries did know.

XIV

To which whilst she lent her intente mind,
He suddenly his net upon her threw,
That oversprad her like a puffe of wind;
And snatching her soone up, ere well she knew,
Ran with her fast away unto his mew,
Crying in helpe aloud: But when as ny
He came unto his cave, and there did vew
The armed knights stopping his passage by.
He threw his burden downe, and fast away did
fly.

XV

But Artegall him after did pursue,
The whiles the Prince there kept the entrance
still,

Up to the rocke he ran, and thereon flew
Like a wyld Gote, leaping from hill to hill,
And dancring on the craggy cliffes at will;
That deadly daunger seem'd in all mens sight
To tempt such steps, where footing was so ill;
Ne ought avayled for the armed knight
To thinke to follow him that was so swift and
light.

XVI

Which when he saw, his yron man he sent
To follow him; for he was swift in chace.

He him pursewd where ever that he went;
Both over rockes, and hilles, and every place
Where so he fled, he followd him apace;
So that he shortly first him to forsake
The hight, and downe descend unto the base:
There he him courst a-fresh, and soone did make
To leave his proper forme, and other shape to
take.

XVII

Into a Foxe himselfe he first did tourne;
But he him hunted like a Foxe full fast:
Then to a bush himselfe he did transforme;
But he the bush did beat, till that at last
Into a bird it chaung'd, and from him past,
Flying from tree to tree, from wand to wand;
But he then stones at it so long did cast,
That like a stone it fell upon the land;
But he then tooke it up, and hold fast in his
hand.

XVIII

So he it brought with him unto the knights,
And to his Lord Sir Artegall it lent,
Warning him hold it fast for feare of slights:
Who whilst in hand it grying hard he hent,
Into a Hedgehogge all unwares it went,
And prickt him so that he away it threw:
Then ganne it runne away incontinent,
Being returned to his former hew;
But Talus soone him overtooke, and back-
ward drew.

XIX

But, when as he would to a snake againe
Have turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle
Gan drive at him with so huge might and
maine,
That all his bones as small as sandy grayle
He broke, and did his bowels disentrayle,
Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was past:
So did deceive the selfe-deceiver fayle.
There they him left a carriag outcast | repast.
For beasts and foules to feede upon for their

XX

Thence forth they passed with that gentle
Mayd
To see her Ladie, as they did agree;
To which when she approached, thus she sayd:
'Loe! now, right noble knights, arriv'd ye bee
Nigh to the place which ye desir'd to see:
There shall ye see my soverayne Lady Queene,
Most sacred wight, most debonayre and free,
That ever yet upon this earth was seene,
Or that with Diademe hath ever crowned
beene.'

XXI

The gentle knights rejoyced much to heare
The prayses of that Prince so manifold;

And, passing litle further, commen were
Where they a stately pallace did behold
Of pompous show, much more then she had
told ;

With many towres, and tarra^s mounted hye,
And all their tops bright glistering with gold,
That seemed to outshine the dimmed skye,
And with their brightnesse daz'd the straunge
beholders eye.

XXII

There they flihting by that Damzell were
Directed in, and shewed all the sight ;
Whose porch, that most magnificke did ap-
peare,

Stood open wyde to all men day and night ;
Yet warded well by one of mickle might
That sate thereby, with gyantlike resemblance,
To keepe out guyle, and malice, and despyght,
That under shew oftymes of fayned semblance
Are wont in Princes courts to worke great
scath and hindrance :

XXIII

His name was Awe ; by whom they passing
in

Went up the hall, that was a large wyde roome,
All full of people making troublous din [some
And wondrous noyse, as if that there were
Which unto them was dealing righteous
doome :

By whom they passing through the thickest
The marshall of the hall to them did come,
His name hight Order ; who, commaunding
peace, [clamors ceasse.

Them guyded through the throng, that did their

XXIV

They ceast their clamors upon them to gaze ;
Whom seeing all in armour bright as day,
Strange there to see, it did them much amaze,
And with unworkt terror halfe affray,
For never saw they there the like array ;
Ne ever was the name of warre there spoken,
But joyous peace and quietnesse alway
Dealing just judgements, that mote not be
broken [wroken.

For any brybes, or threatens of any to be

XXV

There, as they entred at the Sciene, they saw
Some one whose tongue was for his trespass
vyle

Nayld to a post, adjudged so by law ;
For that therewith he falsely did revyle
And foule blasphemie that Queene for forged
guyle,

Both with bold speaches which he blazed had,
And with lewd poems which he did cumpyle ;

For the bold title of a poet bad [had sprad.
He on himselfe had ta'en, and rayling rymes

XXVI

Thus there he stood, whylest high over his
head
There written was the purport of his sin,
In cyphers strange, that few could rightly read,
Bon Font ; but *Bon*, that once had written
bin,

Was raced out, and *Mal* was now put in :
So now *Malfont* was plainly to be red,
Eyther for th' evill which he did therein,
Or that he likened was to a welshed [shed.
Of evill words, and wicked sclaunders by him

XXVII

They, passing by, were guyded by decree
Unto the pre-nence of that gracious Queene ;
Who sate on high, that she might all men see
And might of all men royally be seene,
U'pon a throne of gold full bright and sheene,
Adorned all with gemmes of endlesse price,
As either might for wealth have gotten bene,
Or could be tram'd by workmans rare device ;
And all embost with Lyons and with Flour-
delice.

XXVIII

All over her a cloth of state was spred,
Not of rich tisew, nor of cloth of gold,
Nor of ought else that may be ri-hest red,
But like a cloud, as likest may be told.

That her brode-spreading wings did wyde
unfold ; [becames,

Whose skirts were borded with bright sunny
Glistring like gold amongst the plights enrold,
And here and there shooting forth silver
streames. [glittering gleames.

Mongst which crept litle Angels through the

XXIX

Seemed those litle Angels did uphold
The cloth of state, and on their purpled wings
Did beare the pendants through their nim-
blesse bold :

Besides, a thousand more of such as sings
Hymns to high God, and carols heavenly
things,

Encompassed the throne on which she sate,—
She, Angel-like, the heyre of ancient kings
And mightie Conquerors, in royall state,
Whylest kings and kesars at her feet did them
prostrate.

XXX

Thus she did sit in soverayne Majestic,
Holding a Scepter in her royall hand,
The sacred pledge of peace and clemencie,
With which high God had blest her happie land,

Maugre so many foes which did withstand :
But at her feet her sword was likewise layde,
Whose long rest rusted the bright steely
brand; [ayde,
Yet when as foes enforst, or friends sought
She could it sternely draw, that all the world
dismayde.

XXXI

And round about before her feet there sate
A bevie of faire Virgins clad in white,
That goodly seem'd t' adorne her royall state;
All lovely daughters of high Jove, that hight
Lita, by him begot in loves delight
Upon the righteous Themis; those, they say,
Upon Joves judgement-seat wayt day and
night; [decay,
And, when in wrath he threaws the world,
They doe his anger calme, and cruell ven-
geance stay.

XXXII

They also doe, by his divine permission,
Upon the throne of mortall Princes tend,
And often treat for pardon and remission
To suppliants, through fraytie which offend:
Those did upon Mercillaes throne attend,
Just Dice, wise Eunomie, myld Eirene;
And them amongst, her glorie to commend,
Sate goodly Temperance in garments clete,
And sacred Reverence yborne of heavenly
strene.

XXXIII

Thus did she sit in royall rich estate,
Admyr'd of many, honoured of all; [sate,
Whylest underneath her feet, there as she
An huge great Lyon lay, that mote appall
An hardie courage, like captived thrall
With a strong yron chaine and collar bound.
That once he could not move, nor quich at all
Yet did he murmur with rebellious sound,
And softly royne, when salvage choler gan
redound.

XXXIV

So sitting high in dreadd soverayntie,
Those two strange knights were to her pre-
sence brought;
Who, bowing low before her Majestie,
Dil to her myld obeysance, as they ought,
And meekest boone that they imagine mought:
To whom she eke inclyning her withall,
As a faire stoupe of her high soaring thought,
A chearefull countenance on them let fall.
Yet tempred with some majestie imperiall.

XXXV

As the bright sunne, what time his fierie
teme
Towards the western brim begins to draw,

Gins to abate the brightnesse of his beame,
And fervour of his flames somewhat adaw
So did this mightie Ladie, when she saw
Those two strange knights such homage to
her make,
Bate somewhat of that Majestie and awe
That whylome wont to doe so many quake,
And with more myld aspect those two to
entertake.

XXXVI

Now at that instant, as occasion fell,
When these two stranger knights arriv'd in
She was about affaires of common-wele, [place,
Dealing with Justice with indifferent grace,
And hearing pleas of people meane and base:
Mongst which, as then, there was for to be
heard
The tryall of a great and weightie case,
Which on both sides was then debating hard;
But at the sight of these those were awhile
debard.

XXXVII

But, after all her princely entertayne,
To th' hearing of that former cause in hand
Her selfe elssoones gan convert againe:
Which that those knights likewise mote under-
stand,
And witnesse forth aright in forrain land,
Taking them up unto her stately throne,
Where they mote heare the matter thoroughly
scand
On either part, she placed th' one on th' one,
The other on the other side, and neare them
none.

XXXVIII

Then was there brought, as prisoner to the
A Ladie of great countenance and place, [barre,
But that she it with foule abuse did marie;
Yet did appeare rare beantie in her face,
But blotted with condition vile and base,
That all her other honour did obscure,
And titles of nobilitie deface:
Yet in that wretched semblant she did sure
The peoples great compassion unto her allure.

XXXIX

Then up arose a person of deepe reach,
And rare in-sight hard matters to revele;
That well could charme his tongue, and time
his speach
To all assayes; his name was called Zele.
He gan that Ladie strongly to appele
Of many haynous crymes by her enured;
And with sharp reasons rang her such a peale,
That those, whom she to pitie had allured,
He now t' abhorre and loath her person had
procured.

XL

First gan he tell how this, that seem'd so faire
And royally arayd, Duessa hight;
That false Duessa, which had wrought great
care

And mickle mischief unto many a knight,
By her beguyled and confounded quight:
But not for those she now in question came,
Though also those mote question'd be aright,
But for yild treasons and outrageous shame,
Which she against the dred Mercilla oft did
frame.

XLI

For she whylome (as ye mote yet right well
Remember) had, her counsels false conspyred
With faithlesse Blandamour and Paridell,
(Both two her paramours, both by her hyted,
And both with hope of shadowes vaine in-
spyred)

And with them practiz'd, how for to deprive
Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred,
That she might it unto her selfe deryve,
And triumph in their blood whom she to death
did dryve.

XLII

But through high heavens grace, which favour
The wicked driftes of trayterous desynes [not
Gainst loiall Princes, all this cursed plot,
Ere prooffe it tooke, discovered was betymes,
And th' actours won the meede meet for their
crymes.

Such be the meede of all that by such mene
Unto the type of kingdomes title clymes!
But false Duessa, now untitled Queene,
Was brought to her sad doome, as here was
to be seene.

XLIII

Strongly did Zele her haynous fact enforce,
And many other crimes of foule defame
Against her brought, to banish all remorse,
And aggravate the horror of her blame:
And with him, to make part against her, came
Many grave persons that against her pled.
First was a sage old Syre, that had to name
The Kingdome Care, with a white sil'ver hed,
That many high regards and reasons gainst
her red.

XLIV

Then gan Authority her to appose
With preemtorie powre, that made all mute;
And then the Law of Nations gainst her rose,
And reasons brought that no man could refute:
Next gan Religion gainst her to impute
High Gods behest, and powre of holy lawes;
Then gan the Peoples cry and Commons sute

Importune care of their owne publicke cause;
And lastly Justice charged her with breach of
lawes.

XLV

But then, for her, on the contrarie part,
Rose many advocates for her to plead:
First there came Pittie with full tender hart,
And with her joyn'd Regard of womanhead;
And then came Daunger, threatening hidden
And high alliance unto forren powre; [dread
Then came Nobilitie of birth, that bread
Great ruth through her misfortunes tragicke
stowre; [forth powre.
And lastly Griefe did plead, and many teares

XLVI

With the neare touch whereof in tender hart
The Briton Prince was sore empassionate,
And woxe inclined much unto her part,
Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate,
And wretched ruine of so high estate;
That for great ruth his courage gan relent:
Which when his Zele perceived to abate,
He gan his earnest fervour to augment,
And many fearefull objects to them to present.

XLVII

He gan t' efforce the evidence anew,
And new accusations to produce in place:
He brought forth that old hag of hellish hew,
The cursed Atè, brought her face to face,
Who privie was and partie in the case:
She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay,
Did her appeach; and, to her more disgrace,
The plot of all her practise did display,
And all her traynes and all her treasons forth
did lay.

XLVIII

Then brought he forth with griesly grim as-
pect
Abhorred Murder, who, with bloudie knyfe
Yet dropping fresh in hand, did her detect,
And there with guiltie bloudshed charged
ryfe: [stryfe
Then brought he forth Sedition, breeding
In troublous wits, and mutinous uprore:
Then brought he forth Incontinence of lyfe,
Even foule Adulterie her face before,
And lewd Impietie, that her accused sore.

XLIX

All which when as the Prince had heard and
His former fancies ruth he gan repent, [seene,
And from her partie eftswoons was drawn
cleene:
But Artegall, with constant firme intent

For zeale of Justice, was against her bent:
So was she guiltie deemed of them all.
Then Zele began to urge her punishment,
And to their Queene for judgement loudly call,
Unto Mercilla myld, for Justice gainst the
thrall.

L

But she, whose Princely brest was touched
nere
With piteous ruth of her so wretched plight,

Though plaine she saw, by all that she did
heare,
That she of death was guiltie found by right,
Yet would not let just vengeance on her light;
But rather let, instead thereof, to fall
Few perling drops from her faire lampes of
light;
The which she covering with her purple pall
Would have the passion hid, and up arose with-
all.

CANTO X.

Prince Arthur takes the enterprize

For Belgec for to fight :

Gerioneos Seneschall

He slayes in Belges right.

I

SOME Clarkes doe doubt in their devicefull
art

Whether this heavenly thing whereof I treat,
To weeten Mercie, be of Justice part,
Or drawne forth from her by divine extreate:
This well I wote, that sure she is as great,
And meriteth to have as high a place,
Sith in th' Almighties everlasting scat
She first was bred, and borne of heavenly race,
From thence pour'd down on men by influence
of grace.

II

For if that Vertue be of so great might
Which from just verdict will for nothing start,
But to preserve inviolated right
Oft spillies the principall to save the part;
So much more, then, is that of powre and art
That seekes to save the subject of her skill,
Yet never doth from doome of right depart,
As it is greater prayse to save then spill,
And better to reforme then to cut off the ill.

III

Who then can thee, Mercilla, throughly
prayse,
That herein doest all earthly Princes pas?
What hea:nenly Muse shall thy great honour
rayse
Up to the skies, whence first deriv'd it was,
And now on earth it selfe enlarged has
From th' utmost brinke of the Arnericke shore
Unto the margent of the Molucas?
Those Nations farre thy justice doe adore;
But thine owne people do thy mercy prayse
much more.

IV

Much more it praysed was of those two
knights,

The noble Prince and righteous Artegall,
When they had seene and heard her doome

a-rights

Against Duessa, damned by them all;
But by her tempered without grieve or gall,
Till strong constraint did her thereto enforce:
And yet even then ruing her wilfull fall
With more then needfull naturall remorse,
And yeelding the last honour to her wretched
corse.

V

During all which, those knights continu'd
Both doing and receiving curtisies [there
Of that great Ladie, who with goodly chere
Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities,
Approving davy to their noble eyes
Royall examples of her merces rare
And wortheie paterns of her clemencies;
Which till this day mongst many living are,
Who them to their posterities doe still declare.

VI

Amongst the rest, which in that space befell,
There came two Springalls of full tender yeares,
Farre thence from forrein land where they did
dwell,
To seeke for succour of her and her Peares,
With humble prayers and intreatfull teares;
Sent by their mother, who, a widow, was
Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares
By a strong Tyrant, who invaded has
Her land, and slaine her children ruefully,
alas!

VII

Her name was Belge; who in former age
A Ladie of great worth and wealth had beene,
And mother of a frutefull heritage,
Even seventene goodly sonnes; which who
had scene

In their first flowre, before this fatall teene
Them overtooke and their faire blossomes
blasted,
More happie mother would her surely weene
Then famous Niobe, before she tasted
Latonaes childrens wrath that all her issue
wasted.

VIII

But this fell Tyrant, through his tortious
powre,
Had left her now but five of all that brood:
For twelve of them he did by times devoure,
And to his Idols sacrifice their blood,
Whylest he of none was stopped nor withstood:
For soothly he was one of matchlesse might,
Of horrible aspect and dreadfull mood,
And had three bodies in one wast empight,
And th' armes and legs of three to succour him
in fight.

IX

And sooth they say that he was borne and
bred
Of Gyants race, the sonne of Geryon;
He that whylome in Spaine so sore was dred
For his huge powre and great oppression.
Which brought that land to his subjection.
Through his three bodies powre in one com-
bynd;
And eke all strangers, in that region
Arryving, to his kyne for food assaynd;
The fayrest kyne alive, but of the fiercest
kynd:

X

For they were all, they say, of purple hew,
Kept by a cowheard, hight Eurytion,
A cruell carle, the which all strangers slew,
Ne day nor night did sleepe attend them on,
But walkt about them ever and anon
With his two-headed dogge that Orthrus
hight;
Orthrus begotten by great Typhaon
And foule Echidna in the house of night:
But Hercules them all did overcome in fight.

XI

His sonne was this Geryoneo hight;
Who, after that his monstrous father fell
Under Alcides club, streight tooke his flight
From that sad land where he his syre did
quell,

And came to this, where Belge then did dwell
And flourish in all wealth and happinesse,
Being then new made widow (as befell)
After her Noble husbands late decesse;
Which gave beginning to her woe and wretch-
ednesse.

XII

Then this bold Tyrant, of her widowed
Taking advantage, and her yet fresh woes,
Himselle and service to her offered,
Her to defend against all forrein foes
That should their powre against her right op-
pose:
Whereof she glad, now needing strong defence,
Him entertayn'd and did her champion chose;
Which long he us'd with carefull diligence,
The better to confirme her fearelesse confi-
dence.

XIII

By meanes whereof she did at last commit
All to his hands, and gave him sovaine
powre
To doe whatever he thought good or fit:
Which having got, he gan forth from that
howre
To stirre up strife and many a tragicke stowre;
Giving her dearest children one by one
Unto a dreadfull Monster to devoure,
And setting up an Idole of his owne,
The image of his monstrous parent Geryone.

XIV

So tyrannizing and oppressing all,
The woefull widow had no meanes now left,
But unto gracious great Mercilla call
For ayde against that cruell Tyrants theft,
Ere all her children he from her had reft:
Therefore these two, her eldest sonnes, she
sent
To seeke for succour of this Ladies gift;
To whom their sute they humbly did present
In th' hearing of full many Knights and
Ladies gent.

XV

Amongst the which then fortun'd to bee
The noble Briton Prince with his brave Peare;
Who when he none of all those knights did
Hastily bent that enterprise to heare, [see
Nor undertake the same for cowheard feare,
He stepped forth with courage bold and great,
Admyr'd of all the rest in presence there,
And humbly gan that mightie Queene entreat
To graunt him that adventure for his former
feat.

XVI

She gladly graunted it: then he straightway
Himselle unto his journey gan prepare,

And all his armours readie dight that day,
That nought the morrow next mote stay his
fare.

The morrow next appear'd with purple hayre
Yet dropping fresh out of the Indian fount,
And bringing light into the heavens sayre,
When he was readie to his steede to mount
Unto his way, which now was all his care and
count.

XVII

Then taking humble leave of that great
Queene,

Who gave him roiall giftes and riches rare,
As tokens of her thankfull mind bescene,
And leaving Artigall to his owne care,
Upon his voyage forth he gan to fare
With those two gentle youtthes, which him
did guide

And all his way before him still prepare.
Ne after him did Artigall abide, [ride,
But on his first adventure forward forth did

XVIII

It was not long till that the Prince arrived
Within the land where dwelt that Ladie sad;
Whereof that Tyrant had her now deprived,
And into moores and marshes banisht had,
Out of the pleasant soyle and cities glad,
In which she went to harbour happily:
But now his cruelty so sore she drad,
That to those fennes for fastnesse she did fly.
And there her selfe did hyde from his hard
tyranny.

XIX

There he her found in sorrow and dismay,
All solitarie without living wight;
For all her other children, through affray,
Had hid themselves, or taken further flight:
And eke her selfe, through sudden strange
affright

When one in armes she saw, began to fly,
But, when her owne two sonnes she had in sight,
She gan take hart and looke up joyfully:
For well she wist this knight came succour to
supply.

XX

And, running unto them with greedy joyes,
Fell straight about their neckes as they did
kneele, [boyes,
And bursting forth in teares, 'Ah! my sweet
(Sayd she) 'yet now I gin new life to feele;
And feeble spirits, that gan faint and reele,
Now rise againe at this your joyous sight.
Alreadie seemes that fortunes headlong wheele
Begins to turne, and sunne to shine more bright
Then it was wont, through comfort of this noble
knight.'

XXI

Then turning unto him; 'And you, Sirknight,'
(Said she) 'that taken have this toylesome
paine
For wretched woman, miserable wight,
May you in heaven immortall guerdon gaine
For so great travell as you doe sustaine!
For other meede may hope for none of mee,
To whom nought else but bare life doth re-
maine;

And that so wretched one, as ye do see,
Is liker lingring death then loathed life to bee.'

XXII

Much was he moved with her piteous plight,
And low dismounting from his loftie steede
Gan to comfort her all that he might,
Seeking to drive away deepe-rooted drede
With hope of helpe in that her greatest neede.
So thence he wished her with him to wend
Unto some place where they mote rest and
feede,

And she take comfort which God now did send:
Good hart in evils doth the evils much amend.

XXIII

'Ay me!' (sayd she) 'and whether shall I
goe?
Are not all places full of forraine powres?
My pallaces possessed of my foe,
My cities sackt, and their sky-threatening towres
Raced and made smooth fields now full of
flowres?

Onely these marshes and myrie bogs,
In which the fearefull ewties do build their
bowres,
Yeeld me an hostry mongst the croking frogs,
And harbour here in safety from those raven-
ous dogs.'

XXIV

'Nathlesse,' (said he) 'deare Ladie, with me
goe;
Some place shall us receive and harbour yield;
If not, we will it force, mauge your foe,
And purchase it to us with speare and shield:
And if all fayle, yet fareweill open field;
The earth to all her creatures lodging lends.'
With such his chearefull speaches he doth
wield

Her mind so well, that to his will she bends;
And, bynding up her locks and weeds, forth
with him wends.

XXV

They came unto a Citie farre up land,
The which whylome that Ladies owne had
bene;

But now by force extort out of her hand
By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene
Her stately towres and buildings sunny
sheene,

Shut up her haven, mard her marchants trade,
Robbed her people that full rich had bene,
And in her necke a Castle huge had made,
The which did her commaund without needing
perswade.

XXVI

That Castle was the strength of all that state,
Untill that state by strength was pulled
downe;

And that same citie, so now ruinate,
Had bene the keye of all that kingdomes
croune;

Both goodly Castle, and both goodly Towne,
Till that th' offended heavens list to lowre
Upon their blisse, and balefull fortune frowne:
When those gainst states and kingdomes do
conjure, [recure]
Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine to

XXVII

But he had brought it now in servile bond,
And made it beare the yoke of Inquisition,
Stryving long time in vaine it to withstond;
Yet glad at last to make most base submis-
sion,

And life enjoy for any composition:
So now he hath new lawes and orders new
Imposd on it with many a hard condition,
And forced it, the honour that is dew
To God, to doe unto his Idole most untrew.

XXVIII

To him he hath before this Castle greene
Built a faire Chappell, and an Altar framed
Of costly Ivory full rich besene,
On which that cursed Idole, farre proclaimed,
He hath set up, and him his God hath
Offered to him in sinfull sacrifice [named];
The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse
framed,

And pouring forth their bloud in brutishe wize,
That any yron eyes to see it would agrize.

XXIX

And, for more horror and more crueltie,
Under that cursed Idols altar-stone
An hideous monster doth in darkness lie,
Whose dreadfull shape was never seene of
none

That lives on earth; but unto those alone
The which unto him sacrificed bee:
Those he deuoures, they say, both flesh and
bone.

What else they have is all the Tyrants fee;
So that no whit of them remayning one may
see.

XXX

There eke he placed a strong garrison,
And set a Seneschall of dreaded might,
That by his powre oppressed every one,
And vanquished all ventrous knights in fight;
To whom he wont shew all the shame he
might,

After that them in battell he had wonne:
To which when now they gan approach in
sight,

The Ladie counsell him the place to shonne,
Where as so many knights had foully bene
fordinne.

XXXI

Her fearefull speaches nought he did regard,
But, ryding streight under the Castle wall,
Called aloud unto the watchfull ward
Which there did wayte, willing them forth to
call

Into the field their Tyrants Seneschall:
To whom when tydings thereof came, he
streight

Cals for his armes, and arming him withall
Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his might,
And gan with courage fierce addresse him to
the fight.

XXXII

They both encounter in the middle plaine,
And their sharpe speares doe both together
smite [maine]
Amid their shields, with so huge might and
That seem'd their soules they wold have
ryven quight

Out of their breasts with furious despight:
Yet could the Seneschall no entrance find
Into the Princes shield where it empight,
(So pure the metall was and well refynd.)
But shivered all about, and scattered in the
wynd:

XXXIII

Not so the Princes, but with restless force
Into his shield it readie passage found.
Both through his habergeon and eke his corse;
Which tumbling downe upon the senselesse
ground

Gave leave unto his ghost from thraldome bound
To wander in the griesly shades of night.
There did the Prince him leave in deadly
swoond,

And thence unto the castle marched right,
To see if entrance there as yet obtaine he
might.

XXXIV

But, as he nigher drew, three knights he
spyde,
All arm'd to point, issuing forth apace,
Which towards him with all their powre did
ryde,
And meeting him right in the middle race
Did all their speares attonce on him enchace.
As three great Culverings for battrie bent,
And level'd all against one certaine place,
Doe all attonce their thunders rage forth rent,
That makes the wals to stagger with astonish-
ment :

XXXV

So all attonce they on the Prince did
thonder,
Who from his saddle swarved nought asyde,
Ne to their force gave way, that was great
wonder;
But like a bulwarke firmly did abyde,
Rebutting him, which in the midst did ryde,
With so huge rigour, that his mortall speare
Past through his shield and picquet through
either syde;
That downe he fell upon his mother deare,
And powred forth his wretched life in deadly
dreare.

XXXVI

Whom when his other fellowes saw, they
fled
As fast as feete could carry them away;
And after them the Prince as swiftly sped,
To be aveng'd of their unknighly play.
There, whilst they entring th' one did th'
other stay,
The hindmost in the gate he overhent,
And, as he pressed in, him there did slay :
His carkasse, tumbling on the threshold, sent
His groning soule unto her place of punish-
ment.

XXXVII

The other which was entred laboured fast
To sperre the gate; but that same lump of
clay,
Whose grudging ghost was thereout fled ^{[past,}
Nigh in the midst of the threshold lay,
'That it the Posterne did from closing stay :
The whiles the Prince hard preased in betweene,
And entraunce wonne: Streight th' other
fled away,
And ran into the Hall, where he did weene
Him selfe to save; but he there slew him at
the skreene.

XXXVIII

Then all the rest which in that Castle were,
Seeing that sad ensample them before,
Durst not abide, but fled away for feare,
And them convayd out at a Posterne dore.
Long sought the Prince; but when he found
no more
T' oppose against his powre he forth issued
Unto that Lady, where he her had lore,
And her gan cheare with what she there had
vewed, ^{[shewed :}
And what she had not weene within unto her

XXXIX

Who with right humble thanks he goodly
greeting
For so great prowesse as he there had proved,
Much greater then was ever in her weeting,
With great admiraunce inwardly was moved,
And honoured him with all that her behoved.
Thenceforth into that Castle he her led
With her two sonnes, right deare of her be-
loved,
Where all that night them selves they cherished,
And from her balefull minde all care he ban-
ished.

CANTO XI.

Prince Arthur overcomes the great
Gerieon in fight :
Doth slay the Monster, and restore
Belge unto her right.

I

It often fals, in course of common life,
That right long time is overborne of wrong
Through avarice, or powre, or guile, or strife,
That weakens her, and makes her party strong;
But Justice, though her dome she doe prolong,

Yet at the last she will her owne cause right :
As by sad Belge seemes : whose wrongs though
long
She suffred, yet at length she did requight,
And sent redresse thereof by this brave Briton
Knight.

II

Whereof when newes was to that Tyrant
brought,

How that the Lady Belgè now had found
A Champion, that had with his Champion
fought,

And laid his Seneschall low on the ground,
And eke him selfe did threaten to confound;
He gan to burne in rage, and friese in feare,
Doubting sad end of principle unsound:
Yet, sith he heard but one that did appeare,
He did him selfe encourage and take better
cheare.

III

Nathelasse him selfe he armed all in hast,
And forth he far'd with all his many bad,
Ne stayed step, till that he came at last
Unto the Castle which they conquerd had:
There with huge terrour, to be more y-drad,
He sternely marcht before the Castle gate,
And, with bold vaunts and ydle threatning, bad
Deliver him his owne, ere yet too late,
To which they had no right, nor any wrong-
full state.

IV

The Prince staid not his aunswere to devise,
But, opening streight the Sparre, forth to him
came,

Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize;
And asked him, if that he were the same,
Who all that wrong unto that wofull Dame
So long had done, and from her native land
Exiled her, that all the world spake shame.
He boldly aunswerd him, He there did stand
That would his doings justifie with his owne
hand.

V

With that so furiously at him he flew,
As if he would have over-run him streight;
And with his huge great yron axe gan hew
So hideously upon his armour bright,
As he to peeces would have chopt it quight,
That the bold Prince was forced foote to give
To his first rage, and yeeld to his despight;
The whilst at him so dreadfully he drive,
That seem'd a marble rocke asunder could
have rive.

VI

Thereto a great advantage eke he has
Through his three double hands thrise multi-
plyde, [was:
Beside the double strength which in them
For stil, when fit occasion did betyde,
He could his weapon shift from side to syde,
From hand to hand; and with such nimblesse
Could wield about, that, ere it were espide,

The wicked stroke did wound his enemy
Behinde, beside, before, as he it list apply.

VII

Which uncouth use when as the Prince per-
ceived,

He gan to watch the wielding of his hand,
Least by such slight he were unwares deceived;
And ever, ere he saw the stroke to land,
He would it meete and warily withstand.
One time when he his weapon faynd to shift,
As he was wont, and chang'd from hand to
hand,

He met him with a counterstroke so swift,
That quite suit off his arme as he it up did
lift.

VIII

Therewith all fraught with fury and disdaine,
He brayd aloud for very fell despight;
And sodainely, 't' avenge him selfe againe
Gan into one assemble all the might
Of all his hands, and heaved them on hight,
Thinking to pay him with that one for all:
But the sad steele seizd not, where it was hight,
Upon the childe, but somewhat short did fall,
And lighting on his horses head him quite did
mall.

IX

Downe streight to ground fell his astonisht
steed,
And eke to th' earth his burden with him bare;
But he him selfe full lightly from him freed,
And gan him selfe to fight on foote prepare:
Whereof when as the Gyant was aware,
He wox right blyth, as he had got thereby,
And laughd so loud, that all his teeth wide
bare

One might have scene enraung'd disorderly,
Like to a rancke of piles that pitched are awry.

X

Estsoones againe his axe he raught on hie,
Ere he were thoroughly buckled to his gearre,
And can let drive at him so dreadfullie,
That had he chaunced not his shield to reare,
Ere that huge stroke arrived on him neare,
He had him surely cloven quite in twaine:
But th' Adamantine shield which he did beare
So well was tempred, that for all his maine
It would no passage yeeld unto his purpose
vaine.

XI

Yet was the stroke so forcibly applide,
That made him stagger with uncertaine sway,
As if he would have tottered to one side:
Wherewith full wroth he fiercely gan assay

That curtsie with like kindnesse to repay,
And smote at him with so importune might,
That two more of his armes did fall away,
Like fruitlesse branches, which the haichets
slight [quight,
Hath pruned from the native tree, and cropped

XII

With that all mad and furious he grew,
Like a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,
And curst, and band, and blasphemies forth
threw
Against his Gods, and fire to them did threat,
And hell unto him selfe with horreur great.
Thenceforth he car'd no more which way he
strooke, [sweat,
Nor where it light; but gan to chaufe and
And gnasht his teeth, and his head at him
shooke, [looke.
And sternely him beheld with grim and ghastly

XIII

Nought fear'd the childe his lookes, ne yet
his threats,
But onely waxed now the more aware
To save him selfe from those his furious heats,
And watch advauntage how to worke his care,
The which good Fortune to him offred faire;
For as he in his rage him overstrooke,
He, ere he could his weapon backe repaire,
His side all bare and naked overtooke,
And with his mortal steel quite through the
body strooke.

XIV

Through all three bodies he him strooke at-
tonce,
That all the three attonce fell on the plaine,
Else should he thrise have needed for the nonce
Them to have stricken, and thrise to have
slaine.
So now all three on sencelesse lumpes remaine,
Enwallow'd in his owne blacke bloody gore,
And byting th' earth for very deaths disdain;
Who, with a cloud of night him covering, bore
Downe to the house of dole, his daies there to
deplore.

XV

Which when the Lady from the Castle saw,
Where she with her two sonnes did looking
stand,
She towards him in hast her selfe did draw
To greet him the good fortune of his hand:
And all the people, both of towne and land,
Which there stood gazing from the Citties wall
Upon these warriours, greedily t' understand
To whether should the victory befall,
Now when they saw it false, they eke him
greeted all.

XVI

But Belgè, with her sonnes, prostrated low
Before his feete in all that peoples sight,
Mongst joyes mixing some tears, mongst wele
some wo,
Him thus bespake: 'O most redoubted Knight.
The which hast me, of all most wretched wight,
That earst was dead, restor'd to life againe,
And these weakeimpes replanted by thy might,
What guerdon can I give thee for thy paine,
But even that which thou savedst thine still
to remaine?'

XVII

He tooke her up forby the lilly hand,
And her recomforted the best he might,
Saying: 'Deare Lady, deedes ought not be
scand
By th' authors manhood, nor the doers might,
But by their trueth and by the causes right:
That same is it which fought for you this day.
What other meed, then, need me to requight,
But that which yeeldethiethi vertues meed alway?
That is, the vertue selfe, which her reward doth
pay.'

XVIII

She humbly thank't him for that wondrous
grace, [please,
And further said: 'Ah! Sir, but mote ye
Sith ye thus farre have tendred my poore case,
As from my chiefeest foe me to release,
That your victorious arme will not yet cease,
Till ye have rooted all the reliques out
Of that vilde race, and established my peace.
'What is there else' (sayd he) 'left of their
rout? [dout.
Declare it boldly, Dame, and doe not stand in

XIX

'Then wote you, Sir, that in this Church
hereby
There stands an Idole of great note and name,
The which this Gyant reared first on hie,
And of his owne vaine fancies thought did
frame:
To whom, for endlesse horreur of his shame,
He offred up for daily sacrifice
My children and my people, burnt in flame
With all the tortures that he could devise,
The more t' aggrate his God with such his
bloudly giue.

XX

'And underneath this Idoll there doth lie
An hideous monster that doth it defend,
And feedes on all the carcases that die
In sacrifice unto that cursed feend;

Whose ugly shape none ever saw, nor kend,
That ever scap'd : for of a man, they say,
It has the voice, that speeches forth doth send,
Even blasphemous words, which she doth bray
Out of her poysonous entrails fraught with dire
decay.

XXI

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart
gan earne

For great desire that Monster to assay,
And pray'd the place of her abode to learne ;
Which being shew'd, he gan him selfe streight-
way

Thereto addresse, and his bright shield display.
So to the Church he came, where it was told
The Monster underneath the Altar lay :
There he that Idoll saw of massy gold
Most richly made, but there no Monster did
behold.

XXII

Upon the Image with his naked blade
Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke ;
And the third time out of an hidden shade
There forth issewd from under th' Altars smooke
A dreadfull feend with fowle deformed looke,
That stretcht it selfe as it had long lycd still ;
And her long taile and fethers strongly shooke,
That all the Temple did with terrour fill ;
Yet him nought terrified that feared nothing
ill.

XXIII

An huge great Beast it was, when it in length
Was stretched forth, that nigh filld all the place,
And seem'd to be of infinite great strength :
Horrible, hideous, and of hellish race,
Borne of the brooding of Echidna base,
Or other like infernall furies kinde ;
For of a Mayd she had the outward face,
To hide the horror which did lurke behinde,
The better to beguile whom she so found did
finde.

XXIV

-Thereto the body of a dog she had,
Full of fell ravin and fierce greedinesse ;
A Lions claws, with powre and rigour clad,
To rend and teare what so she can oppresse ;
A Dragons taile, whose sting without redresse
Full deadly wounds where so it is empight ;
And Eagles wings, for scope and speedinesse,
That nothing may escape her reaching might,
Whereto she ever list to make her hardy flight.

XXV

Much like in foulnesse and deformity
Unto that Monster, whom the Theban Knight,
The father of that fatall progeny,
Made kill her selfe for very hearts despight

That he had red her Riddle, which no wight
Could ever loose but suffred deadly doole :
So also did this Monster use like slight
To many a one which came unto her schoole,
Whom she did put to death, deceived like a
foole.

XXVI

She comming forth, when as she first beheld
The armed Prince with shield so blazing bright
Her ready to assaile, was greatly queld,
And much dismayd with that dismayfull sight,
That backe she would have turn'd for great
affright :

But he gan her with courage fierce assay,
That first her turne againe in her despight
To save her selfe, least that he did her slay ;
And sure he had her slaine, had she not turn'd
her way.

XXVII

Tho, when she saw that she was forst to fight,
She flew at him like to an hellish feend,
And on his shield tooke hold with all her might,
As if that it she would in peeces rend,
Or reave out of the hand that did it hend :
Strongly he strove out of her greedy gripe
To loose his shield, and long while did contend ;
But, when he could not quite it, with one stripe
Her Lions clawes he from her feete away did
wipe,

XXVIII

With that aloude she gan to bray and yell,
And fowle blasphemous speeches forth did cast,
And bitter curses, horrible to tell ;
That even the Temple, wherein she was plast,
Did quake to heare, and nigh asunder brast :
Tho with her huge long taile she at him strooke,
That made him stagger and stand halfe agast,
With trembling joynts, as he for terrour
shooke ; [tooke]
Who nought was terrifide, but greater courage

XXIX

As when the Mast of some well-timbred hulke
Is with the blast of some outrageous storme
Blowne downe, it shakes the bottome of the
bulke,
And makes her ribs to cracke as they were torne ;
Whilest still she stands, as stoniasht and for-
lorne :
So was he stound with stroke of her huge taile ;
But, ere that it she backe againe had borne,
He with his sword it strooke, that without faile
He jointed it, and mard the swinging of her
flaile.

XXX

Then gan she cry much louder then afore,
That all the people there without it heard,

And Belgè se, e was therewith stonied sore,
As if the onely sound thereof she feard.
But then the feend her selfe more fiercely reard
Upon her wide great wings, and strongly flew
With all her body at his head and beard,
That had he not foreseene with heedfull vew,
And thrown his shield atween, she had him
done to rew.

XXXI

But, as she prest on him with heavy sway,
Under her wombe his fatall sword he thrust,
And for her entrailes made an open way
To issue forth; the which, once being brust,
Like to a great Mill-damb forth fiercely gusht,
And powred out of her infernall sinke
Most ugly filth; and poyson threw with rusht,
That him nigh choked with the deadly stinke.
Such loathly matter were small lest to speake
or thinke.

XXXII

Then downe to ground fell that deformed
Masse,
Breathing out clouds of sulphure fowle and
In which a puddle of contagion was, [blacke,
More loathed then Lerna, or then Stygian lake,
That any man would nigh awlaped make:
Whom when he saw on ground, he was full
glad, { take
And straight went forth his gladnesse to par-
With Belgè, who watcht all this while full sad,
Wayting what end would be of that same
danger drad.

XXXIII

Whom when she saw so joyously come forth,
She gan rejoyce and shew triumphant chere,
Lauding and praying his renowned worth
By all the names that honorable were.
Then in he brought her, and her shewed there
The present of his paines, that Monsters spoyle,
And eke that Idoll deern'd so costly dere,
Whom he did all to peeces breake, and soyle
In filthy durt, and left so in the loathely soyle.

XXXIV

Then all the people which beheld that day
Gan shout aloud, hat unto heaven it rong;
And all the damzels of that towne in ray
Come dauncing forth, and joyous carrols song:
So him they ied through all their streetes along
Crowned with girlonds of immortall baies;
And all the vulgar did about them throng
To see the man, whose everlasting praise
They all were bound to all posterities to raise.

XXXV

There he with Belgè did awhile remaine
Making great feast and joyous merriment,

Untill he had her settled in her raine
With safe assurance and establishment:
Then to his first emprise his mind he lent,
Full loath to Belgè and to all the rest;
Of whom yet taking leave thenceforth he went,
And to his former journey him address;
On which long way he rode, ne ever day did
rest.

XXXVI

But turne we now to noble Artegall;
Who, having left Mercilla, straight way went
On his first quest, the which him forth did call,
To weet, to worke Irenæes franchisement,
And eke Grantortoes worthy punishment.
So forth he fared, as his manner was,
With onely Talus wayting diligent,
Through many perils; and much way did pas,
Till nigh unto the place at length approcht he
has.

XXXVII

There as he traveld by the way, he met
An aged wight wayfaring all alone, [set
Who through his yeares long since aside had
The use of armes, and battell quite forgone:
To whom as he approcht, he knew anone
That it was he which whilome did attend
On faire Irene in her affliction,
When first to Faery court he saw her wend,
Unto his sovaine Queene her suite for to com-
mend.

XXXVIII

Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan:
'Haile, good Sir Sergis, truest Knight alive,
Well tride in all thy Ladies troubles than
When her that Tyrant did of Crowne deprive;
What new occasion doth thee hither drive,
Whiles she alone is left, and thou here found?
'Or is she thrall, or doth she not survive?'
To whom he thus: 'She liveth sure and sound,
But by that Tyrant is in wretched thralldome
bound:

XXXIX

'For she presuming on th' appointed tyde,
In which ye promist, as ye were a Knight,
To meete her at the salvage Ilands syde,
And then and there for triall of her right
With her unrighteous enemy to fight,
Did thither come; where she, afrajd of nought,
By guilefull treason and by subtilt slight
Surprized was, and to Grantorto brought,
Who her imprisond hath, and her life often
sought.

XL

'And now he hath to her prefixt a day,
By which if that no champion doe appeare,
Which will her cause in battailous array
Against him justifie, and prove her cleare

Of all those crimes that he gainst her doth
reare,
She death shall sure aby.' Those tidings said
Did much abash Sir Artegall to heare,
And grieved sore that through his fault she had
Fallen into that Tyrants hand and usage bad.

XLI

Then thus replide: 'Now sure and by my
life,
Too much am I too blame for that faire Maide,
That have her drawne to all this troublous
strife,
Through promise to afford her timely aide,
Which by default I have not yet defraide:
But wnesse unto me, ye heavens! that know
How cleare I am from blame of this upbraide;
For ye into like thraldome me did throw,
And kept from compassing the faith which I
did owe.

XLII

'But now aread, Sir Sergis, how long space
Hath he her lent a Champion to provide?'
'Ten daies,' (quoth he) 'he graunted hath of
grace,

For that he weeneth well before that tide:
None can have tidings to assist her side:
For all the shores, which to the sea accoste,
He day and night doth ward both farre and
wide,
That none can there arrive without an hoste:
So her he deemes already but a damned
ghoste.'

XLIII

'Now turne againe,' (Sir Artegall then sayd)
'For, if I live till those ten daies have end,
Assure your selfe, Sir Knight, she shall have
ayd,

Though I this dearest life for her doe spend.'
So backward he attone with him did wend:
Tho, as they rolle together on their way,
A rout of people they before them kend,
Flocking together in confusd array;
As if that there were some tumultuous affray.

XLIV

To which as they approch the cause to know,
They saw a Knight in dangerous distresse
Of a rude rout him chasing to and fro,
That sought with lawlesse powre him to op-
presse,
And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse:
And farre away, amid their rakehell bands,
They spide a Lady left all succourlesse,
Crying, and holding up her wretched hands
To him for aide, who long in vaine their rage
withstands.

XLV

Yet still he strives, ne any perill spares,
To reskue her from their rude violence;
And like a Lion wood amongst them fares,
Dealing his dreadfull blowes with large dis-
pence, [fence;
Gainst which the pallid death findes no de-
But all in vaine: their numbers are so great,
That naught may boot to banishe them from
thence;
For soone as he their outrage backe doth beat,
They turne afresh, and out renew their former
threat.

XLVI

And now they doe so sharply him assay,
That they his shield in peeces battred have,
And forced him to throw it quite away,
Fro dangers dread his doubtfull life to save;
Albe that it most safety to him gave,
And much did magnifie his noble name:
For, from the day that he thus did it leave,
Amongst all Knights he blotted was with
blame, [les shame.
And counted but a recreant Knight with end-

XLVII

Whom when they thus distressed did behold,
They drew unto his aide; but that rude rout
Them also gan assaile with outrage bold,
And forced them, how ever strong and stout
They were, as well approv'd in many a doubt,
Backe to recule: untill that yron man
With his huge flaile began to lay about;
From whose sterne presence they diffused ran,
Like scatted chaffe the which the wind away
doth fan.

XLVIII

So when that Knight from perill cleare was
freed,
He drawing neare began to greete them faire,
And yeeld great thanks for their so goodly
In saving him from dangerous despaire [deed,
Of those which sought his life for to empaire:
Of whom Sir Artegall gan then enquire
The whole occasion of his late misfare,
And who he was, and what those villaines were,
The which with mortall malice him pursu'd so
nere.

XLIX

To whom he thus: 'My name is Burbon
hight,
Well knowne, and far renowned heretofore,
Untill late mischiefe did upon me light,
That all my former praise hath blemisht sore:
And that faire Lady, which in that upore
Ye with those caytives saw, Flourdelis hight,
Is mine owne love, though me she have forlore,

Whether withheld from me by wrongfull might,
Or with her owne good will, I cannot read
aright.

L

'But sure to me her faith she first did plight
To be my love, and take me for her Lord;
Till that a Tyrant, which Grandtorto hight,
With golden giftes and many a guilefull word
Entyce her to him for to accord. [tempted?
O! who may not with gifts and words be
Sith which she hath me ever since abhord,
And to my foe hath guilefully consented:
Ay lie, that ever guyle in wemen was invented!

LI

'And now he hath this troupe of villains sent
By open force to fetch her quite away:
Gainst whom my selfe I long in vaine have
To rescue her, and daily meanes assay; [bent
Yet rescue her thence by no meanes I may,
For they doe me with multitude oppresse,
And with unequall might doe overlay,
That oft I driven am to great distresse,
And forced to forgoe th' attempt remedlesse.'

LII

'But why have ye' (said Artegall) 'forborne
Your owne good shield in dangerous dismay?
That is the greatest shame and foulest scorne,
Which unto any knight behappen may,
To loose the badge that should his deedes display.' [shame:
To whom Sir Burbon, blushing haffe for
'That shall I unto you' (quoth he) 'bewray,
Least ye therefore mote happily me blame,
And deeme it doen of will, that through in-
forcement came.

LIII

'True is that I at first was dubbed knight
By a good knight, the knight of the Red-
crosse; [right.
Who, when he gave me armes in field to
Gave me a shield, in which he did endosse
His deare Redcemers badge upon the bosse:
The same long while I bore, and therewithall
Fought many battels without wound or losse;
Therewith Grandtorto selfe I did appall,
And made him oftentimes in field before
me fall.

LIV

'But for that many did that shield envie,
And cruell enemies increased more,
To stint all strife and troublous enmitie,
That bloudie scutchin, being battered sore,
I layd aside, and have of late forborne,
Hoping thereby to have my love obtayned;
Yet can I not my love have nathemore,

For she by force is still from me detayned,
And with corruptfull brybes is to untruth
mis-trayned.'

LV

To whom thus Artegall: 'Certes, Sir knight,
Hard is the case the which ye doe complaine;
Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may light
That it to such a streight mote you constraine)
As to abandon that which doth containe
Your honours stile, that is, your warlike shield.
All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all paine
Then losse of fame in disaventrous field:
Dye, rather then doe ought that mote dishonour yield.'

LVI

'Not so,' (quoth he) 'for yet, when time
doth serve,
My former shield I may resume againe:
To temporize is not from truth to swerve,
Ne for advantage terme to entertaine,
When as necessitie doth it constraine.'
'Fie on such forgerie!' (sayd Artegall)
'Under one hood to shadow faces twaine:
Knights ought be true, and truth is one in all:
Of all things, to dissemble, foully may befall!'

LVII

'Yet let me you of courtesie request'
(Said Burbon) 'to assist me now at need
Against these pesants which have me opprest,
And forced me to so infamous deed,
That yet my love may from their hands be
Sir Artegall, abbe he earst did wyte [freed.
His wavering mind, yet to his aide agreed,
And, buckling him eftsoones unto the fight,
Did set upon those troupes with all his powre
and might.

LVIII

Who flocking round about them, as a swarme
Of flies upon a birchen bough, doth cluster,
Did them assault with terrible allarme;
And over all the fields themselves did muster,
With bills and glayves making a dreadfull
luster, [retyre:
That first at first those knights backe to
As when the wrathfull Boreas doth bluster,
Nought may abide the tempest of his yre;
Both man and beast doe fly, and succour doe
inquire.

LIX

But, when as overblowen was that brunt,
Those knights began afresh them to assayle,
And all about the fields like Squirrels hunt;
But chiefly Talus with his yron flayle,
Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote awayle,
Made cruell havocke of the baser crew,
And chased them both over hill and dale.

A A

The raskall manie soone they overthrew;
But the two knights themselves their captains
did subdew.

LX

At last they came whereas that Ladie bode,
Whom now her keepers had forsaken quight
To save themselves, and scattered were abroad.
Her halfe dismayd they found in doubtfull
plight,

As neither glad nor sorie for their sight;
Yet wondrous faire she was, and richly clad
In roiall robes, and many jewels dight;
But that those villens through their usage bad
Then foully rent, and shamefully defaced had.

LXI

But Burbon, streight dismounting from his
Unto her ran with greedie great desyre, [steed,
And catching her fast by her ragged weed
Would have embraced her with hart entyre;
But she backstarting with disdainfull yre
Had him avault, ne would unto his lore
Allured be for prayer nor for meed: [forlore
Whom when those knights so froward and
Beheld, they her rebuked and upbrayded sore.

LXII

Sayd Artegall: 'What foule disgrace is this
To so faire Ladie, as ye seeme in sight,
To blot your beantie, that unblemisht is,
With so foule blame as breach of faith once
plight,

Or change of love for any worlds delight!
Is ought on earth so pretious or deare
As praysse and honour? Or is ought so bright
And beautifull as glories beames appeare,
Whose goodly light then Phoebus lampe doth
shine more cleare?

LXIII

'Why then will ye, fond Dame, attempted
Unto a strangers love, so lightly placed, [bee
For guiftes of gold or any worldly glee,
To leave the love that ye before embraced,
And let your fame with falshood be defaced?
Fie on the pelfe for which good name is sold,
And honour with indignitie debased!
Dearer is love then life, and fame then gold;
Bat dearer then them both your faith once
plighted hold.'

LXIV

Much was the Ladie in her gentle mind
Abash't at his rebuke, that bit her neare,
Ne ought to answer thereunto did find -
But, hanging down her head with heavie
cheare,
Stood long amaz'd as she amated weare:
Which Burbon seeing her againe assayd;
And, clasping twixt his armes, her up did
reare [sayd:
Upon his steele, whiles she so whit gaine-
So bore her quite away, nor well nor ill
apayd.

LXV

Nathlesse the yron man did still pursew
That raskall many with unpitied spoyle,
Ne ceased not, till all their scattred crew
Into the sea he drove quite from that soyle,
The which they troubled had with great tur-
moyle.

But Artegall, seeing his cruell deed,
Commaunded him from slaughter to recoyle,
And to his voyage gan againe proceed;
For that the terme, approaching fast, required
speed.

CANTO XII.

Artegall doth Sir Burbon aide,
And blames for changing shield:
He with the great Grantorto fights,
And slaieth him in field.

I

O SACRED hunger of ambitious mindes,
And impotent desire of men to raine!
Whom neither dread of God, that devils bindes,
Nor lawes of men, that common-weales con-
taine, [straine,
Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes re-
Can keepe from outrage and from doing wrong,
Where they may hope a kingdome to obtaine:

No faith so firme, no trust can be so strong,
No love so lasting then, that may enduren
long.

II

Witnessse may Burbon be; whom all the
bands
Which may a Knight assure had surely bound,
Untill the love of Lordship and of lands
Made him become most faithless and unsound:

And witness be Gerioneo found,
Who for like cause faire Belge did oppresse,
And right and wrong most cruelly confound:
And so be now Grantorto, who no lesse
Then all the rest burst out to all outrageous-
nesse.

III

Gainst whom Sir Artegall, long having since
Taken in hand th' exploit, (being theretoo
Appointed by that mightie Faerie Prince,
Great Gloriane, that Tyrant to fordoo,)
Through other great adventures hethertoo
Had it forslackt: But now time drawing ny
To him assynd her high beheast to doo,
To the sea-shore he gan his way apply,
To weete if shipping readie he mote there
descry.

IV

Tho when they came to the sea coast they
found
A ship all readie (as good fortune fell)
To put to sea, with whom they dyl compound
To passe them over where them list to tell.
The winde and weather served them so well,
That in one day they with the coast did fall;
Whereas they readie found, them to repell,
Great hostes of men in order martiall,
Which them forbad to land, and footing did
forstall.

V

But nathemore would they from land reffaine:
But, when as nigh unto the shore they drew
That foot of man might sound the bottome
plaine,
Talus into the sea did forth is-cw [him threw:
Though darts from shore and stones they at
And wading through the waves with steadfast
sway,
Maugre the might of all those troupes in yew.
Did win the shore; whence he them chast away.
And made to fly like doves whom the Eagle
doth affray.

VI

The whyles Sir Artegall with that old knight
Did forth descend, there being none them neare,
And forward marched to a towne in sight.
By this came tydings to the Tyrants eare,
By those which earst did fly away for feare,
Of their arrival: wherewith troubled sore
He all his forces streight to him did reare,
And forth issuing with his scouts afore,
Meant them to have encountred ere they left
the shore:

VII

But ere he marched farre he with them met,
And fiercely charged them with all his force:

But Talus sternely did upon them set,
And brusht and batted them without remorse,
That on the ground he left full many a corse;
Ne any able was him to withstand,
But he them overthrew both man and horse,
That they lay scattred over all the land, [hand:
As thicke as doth the secde after the sowers

VIII

Till Artegall him seeing so to rage
Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did make:
To which all harkning did a while asswage
Their forces furie, and their terror slake;
Till he an Herauld cald, and to him spake,
Willing him wend unto the Tyrant streight,
And tell him that not for such slaughters sake
He thither came, but for to trie the right
Of Iayre Irenaes cause with him in single fight:

IX

And willed him for to reclayme with speed
His scattred people, ere they all were slaine,
And time and place convenient to areed,
In which they two the combat might darraigne.
Which message when Grantorto heard, full
• fayne
And glad he was the slaughter so to stay;
And pointed for the combat twixt them twayne
The morrow next, ne gave him longer day:
So sounded the retraite, and drew his folke
away.

X

That night Sir Artegall did cause his tent
There to be pitched on the open plaine;
For he had given streight commaundement
That none should dare him once to entertaine;
Which none durst breake, though many would
right faine
For faire Irena, whom they loved deare:
But yet old Sergis did so well him paine,
That from close friends, that dar'd not to ap-
peare, [full weare,
He all things did purvay which for them need-

XI

The morrow next, that was the dismall day
Appointed for Irenas death before,
So soone as it did to the world display
His chearefull face, and light to men restore,
The heavy Mayd, to whom none tydings bore
Of Artegals arryvall her to free,
Lookt up with eyes full sad and hart full sore,
Weening her lifes last howre then neare to bee,
Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare nor
see.

XII

Then up she rose, and on her selfe did dight
Most squalid garments, fit for such a day;

And with dull countenance and with dolefull
spright

She forth was brought in sorrowfull dismay
For to receive the doome of her decay :
But coming to the place, and finding there
Sir Artegall, in battailous array
Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart cheare,
And new life to her lent in midst of deadly
feare.

XIII

Like as a tender Rose in open plaine,
That with untimely drought nigh withered was,
And hung the head, soone as few drops of raine
Thereon distill and deaw her dauntie face,
Gins to looke up, and with fresh wonted grace
Disprede the glorie of her leaves gay ;
Such was Irenas countenance, such her case,
When Artegall she saw in that array,
There wayting for the Tyrant till it was farre
day.

XIV

Who came at length with proud presumptuous
gate

Into the field, as if he fearelesse were,
All armed in a cote of yron plate
Of great defence to ward the deadly feare ;
And on his head a steele-cap he did weare
Of colour rustie-browne, but sure and strong ;
And in his hand a huge Polaxe did beare,
Whose steule was yron-studded, but not long,
With which he went to fight to justifie his
wrong :

XV

Of stature huge and hideous he was,
Like to a Giant for his monstrous hight,
And did in strength most sorts of men surpas,
Ne ever any found his match in might ;
Thereto he had great skill in single fight :
His face was ugly and his countenance sterne,
That could have frayd one with the very sight,
And gaped like a gulfe when he diderne ;
That whether man or monster one could scarce
discerne.

XVI

Soone as he did within the listes appeare,
With dreadfull looke he Artegall beheld,
As if he would have daunted him with feare ;
And, grinning griesly, did against him weld
His deadly weapon which in hand he held :
But th' Elfin swayne, that oft had seene like
sight,
Was with his ghastly count'nance nothing
queld ;
But gan him streight to buckle to the fight,
And cast his shield about to be in readie
plight.

XVII

The trumpets sound, and they together goe
With dreadfull terror and with fell intent ;
And their huge strokes full daungerously be-
stow,
To doe most dammage where as most they ment ;
But with such force and furie violent
The Tyrant thundred his thicke blowes so fast,
That through the yron walles their way they
And even to the vitall parts they past, [rent,
Ne ought could them endure, but all they cleft
or brast.

XVIII

Which cruell outrage when as Artegall
Did well avize, thenceforth with warie heed
He shund his strokes, where ever they did fall,
And way did give unto their gracelesse speed :
As when a skilfull Marrner doth reed
A storme approching that doth perill threat,
He will not bide the daunger of such dread,
But strikes his sayles, and vereth his main-
sheat, [beat,
And lends wite it leave the emptie ayre to

XIX

So did the Faerie knight himselfe abear,
And stouped oft his head from shame to shield :
No shame to stoupe, ones head more high to
reare ;
And, much to gaine, a litle for to yield :
So stoutest knights doen oftentimes in field,
But still the tyrant sternely at him layd,
And did his yron axe so nimble wield,
That many wounds into his flesh it made,
And with his burdenous blowes him sore did
overlade.

XX

Yet when as fit advantage he did spy,
The whiles the cursed felon high did reare
His cruell hand to smite him mortally,
Under his stroke he to him stepping neare
Right in the flanke him strooke with deadly
dreare,
That the gore-bloud thence gushing grievously
Did underneath him like a pond appeare,
And all his armour did with purple dye :
Thereat he brayed loud, and yelled dreadfully.

XXI

Yet the huge stroke, which he before intended,
Kept on his course as he did it direct,
And with such monstrous poise adowne de-
cended, [protect ;
That seemed nought could him from death
But he it well did ward with wise respect,
And twixt him and the blow his shield did cast,
Which thereon seizing tooke no great effect ;

But, byting deepe therein did sticke so fast
That by no meanes it backe againe he forth
could wrast.

XXII

Long while he tug'd and strove to get it out,
And all his powre applyed thereunto,
That he therewith the knight drew all about
Nathlesse, for all that ever he could doe,
His axe he could not from his shield undoe;
Which Artegall perceiving strooke no more,
But loosing soone his shield did it forgoe;
And, whiles he combed was therewith so sore,
He gan at him let drive more fiercely then
afore.

XXIII

So well he him pursw'd, that at the last
He stroke him with Chrysaor on the hed,
That with the souse thereof full sore aghist
He staggered to and fro in doubtfull sted.
Againe, whiles he him saw so ill bested,
He did him smite with all his might and
maine,
That, falling on his mother earth he fed:
Whom when he saw prostrated on the plaine,
He lightly reft his head to ease him of his
paine.

XXIV

Which when the people round about him
saw,
They shouted all for joy of his successe,
Glad to be quit from that proud Tyrants awe,
Which with strong powre did them long time
opresse;
And, running all with greedie joyfulness
To faire Irena, at her feet dut fall,
And her adored with due humblenesse
As their true Liege and Princesse naturall;
And eke her champions glorie sounded over-
all.

XXV

Who streight her leading with meete majestie
Unto the pallace where their kings did rayne,
Did her therein establish peaceablie,
And to her kingdoms seat restore agayne:
And all such persons, as did late maintayne
That Tyrants part with close or open ayde,
He sorely punished with heavie payne;
That in short space, whiles there with her he
stayd, [obayd,
Not one was left that durst her once have dis-

XXVI

During which time that he did there remayne,
His studie was true Justice how to deale,
And day and night employ'd his busie paine
How to reforme that ragged common-weale:

And that same yron man, which could reveale
All hidden crimes, through all that realme he
sent

To search out those that usd to rob and steale,
Or did rebell gainst lawfull government;
On whom he did inflict most grievous punish-
ment.

XXVII

But, ere he coulede reforme it thoroughly,
He through occasion called was away
To Faerie Court, that of necessity
His course of Justice he was forst to stay,
And Talus to revoke from the right way
In which he was that Realme for to redresse:
But envies cloud still dimmeth vertues ray.
So, having freed Irena from distresse,
He tooke his leave of her there left in heavi-
nesse.

XXVIII

Tho, as he backe returned from that land,
And there arriv'd againe whence forth he set,
He had not passed farre upon the strand,
When as two old ill favour'd Hags he met,
By the way side being together set;
Two griesly creatures: and, to that their faces
Most foule and filthy were, their garments
yet,
Being all rag'd and tatter'd, their disgraces
Did much the more augment, and made most
ugly cases.

XXIX

The one of them, that elder did appeare,
With her dull eyes did seeme to looke askew,
That her mis-shape much helpt; and her foule
heare
Hung loose and loathsomely: Thereto her hew
Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew,
And all her bones might through her cheekes
be red:
Her lips were, like raw lethow, pale and blew:
And as she spake therewith she slavered;
Yet spake she seldom, but thought more the
lesse she sed.

XXX

Her hands were foule and durtic, never
washt
In all her life, with long nayles over-raught,
Like puttocks clawes; with th' one of which
she scracht
Her cursed head, although it itched naught:
The other held a snake with venime fraught,
On which she fed and gnawed hungrily,
As if that long she had not eaten ought;
That round about het jawes one might descry
The bloudie gore and poyson dropping loth-
somerly.

XXXI

Her name was Envie, known well thereby,
Whose nature is to grieve and grudge at all
That ever she sees doen prays-worthily;
Whose sight to her is greatest crosse may fall,
And vexeth so that makes her eat her gall;
For, when she wanteth other thing to eat,
She feedes on her owne maw unnaturall,
And of her owne foule entrayles makes her
meat;
Meat fit for such a monsters monstrous dyecat:

XXXII

And if she hapt of any good to heare,
That had to any happily betid,
Then would she inly fret, and grieve, and
teare
Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid:
But if she heard of ill that any did,
Or harme that any had, then would she make
Great cheare, like one unto a banquet bid,
And in anothers losse great pleasure take,
As she had got thereby and gayned a great
stake.

XXXIII

The other nothing better was then shee,
Agreeing in bad will and cancred kynd;
But in bad manner they did disagree,
For what so Envie good or bad did fynd
She did conceale, and murder her owne
mynd;
But this, what ever ill she conceived,
Did spred abroad and throw in th' open
wynd:
Yet this in all her words might be perceived,
That all she sought was mens good name to
have bereaved.

XXXIV

For, whatsoever good by any sayd
Or doen she heard, she would strightwayes
invent
How to deprave or slaundersously upbrayd,
Or to misconstrue of a mans intent,
And turne to ill the thing that well was
ment.
Therefore she used often to resort
To common haunts, and companies frequent,
To hearke what any one did good report,
To blot the same with blame, or wrest in
wicked sort.

XXXV

And if that any ill she heard of any,
She would it eeke, and make much worse by
telling,
And take great joy to publish it to many.
That every matter worse was for her melling:

Her name was hight Detraction, and her
dwelling
Was neare to Envie, even her neighbour next;
A wicked hag, and Envy selfe excelling
In mischief; for her selfe she only vext,
But this same both her selfe and others eke
perplexit.

XXXVI

Her face was ugly, and her mouth distort.
Foning with poyson round about her gils,
In which her cursed tongue, full sharpe and
short,
Appear'd like Aspis sting that closely kills,
Or cruelly does wound whom so she wil:
A distaffe in her other hand she had,
Upon the which she litle spinnes, but spils;
And faynes to weave false tales and leasings bad,
To throw amongst the good which others had
disprall.

XXXVII

These two now had themselves combynd in
one,
And linckt together gainst Sir Artegall:
For whom they wayted as his mortall fone,
How they might make him into mischief
fall,
For freeing from their snares Irena thrall:
Besides, unto themselves they gotten had
A monster, which the Blatant Beast men
call,
A dreadfull feend, of gods and men ydrad,
Whom they by slights allur'd, and to their
purpose lad.

XXXVIII

Such were these Hags, and so unhandsome
drest:
Who when they nigh approching had espyde
Sir Artegall, return'd from his late quest,
They both arose, and at him loudly cryde,
As it had bene two shepheards curres had
scryde | flockes:
A ravenous Wolfe amongst the scattered
And Envie first, as she that first him cyde,
Towardes him runs, and, with rude flaring lockes
About her cares, does beat her brest and for-
head knockes.

XXXIX

Then from her mouth the gobbet she does
take,
The which whileare she was so greedily
Devouring, even that halfe-gnawen snake,
And at him throwes it most despightfully:
The cursed Serpent, though she hungrily
Earst chawd thereon, yet was not all so dead
But that some life remayned secretly;

And, as he past afore withouten dread,
Bit him behind, that long the marke was to
be read.

XL

Then th' other coming neare gan him re-
vile,
And foully rayle with all she could invent;
Saying that he had, with unmanly guile
And foule abusion, both his honour blent,
And that bright sword, the sword of Justice
Had stayned with reprochfull crueltie [lent,
In guiltlesse blood of many an innocent:
As for Grandtorto, him with treacherie
And traynes having surpriz'd, he foully did
to die.

XLI

There to the Blatant Beast, by them set on,
At him began aloud to barke and bay
With bitter rage and fell contention, [way
That all the woods and rockes nigh to that
Began to quake and tremble with dismay;
And all the aire rebellowed againe,
So dreadfully his hundred tongues did bray:
And evermore those hags them selves did paine
To s harpen him, and their owne cursed tonges
did straine.

XLII

And still among most bitter wordes they spake,
Most shamefull, most unrighteous, most un-
trew,
That they the mildest man alive would make
Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeance
dew
To her, that so false sclaunders at him threw:
And more, to make them pierce and wound
more deepe, [grew
She with the sting which in her vile tongue
Did sharpen them, and in fresh poyson steepe:
Yet he past on, and seem'd of them to take no
keepe.

XLIII

But Talus, hearing her so lewdly raile,
And speake so ill of him that well deserved,
Would her have chastiz'd with his yron flaile,
If her Sir Artegall had not preserved,
And him forbidden, who his heast observed:
So much the more at him still did she scold,
And stones did cast; yet he for nought would
swerve
From his right course, but still the way did hold
To Faerie Court; where what him fell shall
else be told. • •

THE SIXTE BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAINING THE LEGEND OF SIR CALIDORE, OR COURTESIE.

I

THE waies, through which my weary steps I
In this delightfull land of Faery, [guyde
Are so exceeding spacious and wyde,
And sprinckled with such sweet variety
Of all that pleasant is to eare or eye, [light,
That I, nigh ravisht with rare thoughts de-
My tedious travell doe forget thereby;
And, when I gin to feelee decay of might,
It strength to me supplies, and chears my
dulled spright.

II

Such secret comfort and such heavenly
pleasures,
Ye sacred imps, that on Parnasso dwell,
And there the keeping have of learnings
treasures
Which doe all worldly riches farre excell.
Into the mindes of mortall men doe well,
And goodly fury into them infuse,
Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me well
In these strange waies where never foote did
use, [the Muse.
Ne none can find but who was taught them by

III

Revele to me the sacred nourery
Of vertue, which with you doth there re-
maine,
Where it in silver bowre does hidden ly
From view of men, and wicked worlds dis-
daine;
Since it at first was by the Gods with paine
Planted in earth, being derived at first
From heavenly seedes of bounty soveraine,
And by them long with carefull labour nurst,
Till it to ripenesse grew, and forth to honour
burst.

IV

Amongst them all growes not a fayrer
flowre
Then is the bloosme of comely courtesie;
Which though it on a lowly stalke doe bowre,
Yet brancheth forth in brave nobilitie,
And spreads it selfe through all civilitie:
Of which though present age doe plenteous
seeme,
Yet, being matcht with plaine Antiquitie,
Ye will them all but fayned shewes esteeme,
Which carry colours faire that feeble eies mis-
deeme.

V

But, in the triall of true curtesie,
Its now so farre from that which then it was,
That it indeed is nought but forgerie.
Fashion'd to please the eies of them that pas,
Which see not perfect things but in a glas:
Yet is that glasse so gay, that it can blynd
The wisest sight to thinke gold that is bras;
But vertues seat is deepe within the mynd,
And not in outward shows, but inward thoughts
defynd.

VI

But where shall I in all Antiquity
So faire a patterne finde, where may be seene
The goodly praise of Princely curtesie,
As in your selfe, O soveraine Lady Queene?
In whose pure minde, as in a mirrour sheene,
It shoves, and with her brightnesse doth in-
flame
The eyes of all which thereon fixed beene,
But meriteth indeede an higher name:
Yet so from low to high uplifted is your fame.

VII

Then pardon me, most dreaded Sovaine,
That from your selfe I doe this vertue bring,

And to your selfe doe it returne againe.
So from the Ocean all rivers spring,
And tribute backe repay as to their King:
Right so from you all goodly vertues well

Into the rest which round about you ring,
Faire Lords and Ladies which about you dwell,
And doe adorne your Court where courtesies
excell.

CANTO I.

Calidore saves from Malefort
A Damzell used vylde:
Doth vanquish Crudor; and doth make
Briana wexe more mylde.

I
OF Court, it seemes, men Courtesie doe call,
For that it there most useth to abound;
And well becometh that in Princes hall
That vertue should be plentifully found,
Which of all goodly manners is the ground,
And roote of civill conversation:
Right so in Faery court it did redound. [won
Where courteous Knights and Ladies most did
Of all on earth, and made a matchlesse paragon.

II
But mongst them all was none more courteous
Then Calidore, beloved over-all, [Knight
In whom, it seemes, that gentlenesse of spirit
And manners mylde were planted naturall;
To which he adding comely guize withall
And gracious speach, did steale mens hearts
away:

Nathlesse thereto he was full stout and tall,
And well approv'd in batteilous affray,
That him did much renowme, and far his fame
display.

III
Ne was there Knight ne was there Lady
found

In Faery court, but him did deare embrace
For his faire usage and conditions sound,
The which in all mens liking gayned place,
And with the greatest purchast greatest grace:
Which he could wisely use, and well apply,
To please the best, and th' evill to embase;
For he loathd leasing and base flattery,
And loved simple truth and stedfast honesty.

IV
And now he was in travell on his way,
Upon an hard adventure sore bestad,
Whenas by chance he met upon a day
With Artegall, returning yet halfe sad
From his late conquest which he gotten had:
Who whenas each of other had a sight,
They knew them selves, and both their per-
sons rad;

When Calidore thus first. 'Haile, noblest
Knight
Of all this day on ground that breathen living
spright!

V
'Now tell, if please you, of the good successe
Which ye have had in your late enterprize.'
To whom Sir Artegall gan to expresse
His whole exploite and valorous emprise,
In order as it did to him arise.
'Now, happy man,' (sayd then Sir Calidore)
'Which have, so goodly as ye can devise,
Atchiev'd so hard a quest, as few before;
That shall you most renowmed make for ever-
more.

VI
'But where ye ended have, now I begin
To tread an endlesse trace, withouten guyde
Or good direction how to enter in,
Or how to issue forth in waies untryde,
In perils strange, in labours long and wide;
In which although good Fortune me befall,
Yet shall it not by none be testifyde.'
'What is that quest,' (quoth then Sir Artegall)
'That you into such perils presently doth call?'

VII
'The Blatant Beast' (quoth he) 'I doe pursue,
And through the world incessantly doe chase,
Till I him overtake, or else subdew:
Yet know I not or how, or in what place
To find him out, yet still I forward trace.'
'What is that Blatant Beast?' (then he re-
plaid.)
'It is a Monster bred of hellishe race,'
(Then answered he) 'which often hath annoyd
Good Knights and Ladies true, and many else
destroyd.

VIII
'Of Cerberus whilome he was begot
And fell Chimæra, in her darkesome den,
Through fowle commixture of his filthy blot;
Where he was fostred long in Stygian fen,

Till he to perfect ripenesse grew; and then
 Into this wicked world he forth was sent
 To be the plague and scourge of wretched men,
 Whom with vile tongue and venomous intent
 He sore doth wound, and bite, and cruely torment.'

IX

'Then, since the salvage Island I did leave,'
 Sayd Artegall, 'I such a Beast did see,
 The which did seeme a thousand tongues to
 have,
 That all in spite and malice did agree;
 With which he bayd and loudly barked at mee,
 As if that he attence would me devour:
 But I, that knew my selfe from perill free,
 Did nought regard his malice nor his powre;
 But he the more his wicked poyson forth did
 poure.'

X

'That surely is that Beast' (saide Calidore)
 Which I pursue, of whom I am right glad
 To heare these tidings, which of none afore
 Through all my weary travell I have had;
 Yet now some hope your words unto me add.
 'Now God you speed,' (quoth then Sir Arte-
 gall)
 'And keepe your body from the daunger drad,
 For ye have much adoe to deale withall.'
 So both tooke goodly leave, and parted severall.

XI

Sir Calidore thence travelled not long,
 When as by chaunce a comely Squire he found,
 That thorough some more mighty enemies
 wrong
 Both hand and foote unto a tree was bound;
 Who, seeing him from farre, with piteous
 sound
 Of his shrill cries him called to his aide:
 To whom approching, in that painefull stound
 When he him saw, for no demands he staide,
 But first him losde, and afterwards thus to him
 saide.

XII

'Unhappy Squire! what hard mishap thee
 Into this bay of perill and disgrace? I brought
 What cruell hand thy wretched thraldome
 wrought,
 And thee captivd in this shamefull place?'
 To whom he answered thus: 'My haplesse
 case
 Is not occasiond through my misdesert,
 But through misfortune, which did me abase
 Unto this shame, and my young hope subvert,
 Ere that I in her guilefull traines was well
 expert.

XIII

'Not farre from hence, uppon yond rocky hill,
 Hard by a streight, there stands a castle strong,
 Which doth observe a custome lewd and ill,
 And it hath long mayntaind with mighty
 wrong:
 For may no Knight nor Lady passe along
 That way, (and yet they needs must passe
 that way,
 By reason of the streight, and rocks among)
 But they that Ladies lockes doe shave away,
 And that knights berd, for toll which they for
 passage pay.'

XIV

'A shamefull use as ever I did heare,'
 Sayd Calidore, 'and to be overthrowne.
 But by what meanes did they at first it reare,
 And for what cause? tell, if thou have it
 knowie,' [owne
 Sayd then that Squire; 'The Lady, which doth
 This Castle, is by name Briana hight.
 Then which a prouder Lady loveth none:
 She long time hath deare lov'd a doughty
 Knight, [she might.
 And sought to win his love by all the meanes

XV

'His name is Crudor; who, through high dis-
 daine
 And proud despight of his selfe-pleasing mynd,
 Refused hath to yeeld her love againe,
 Untill a Mantle she for him doe fynd [lynd:
 With beards of Knights and lockes of Ladies
 Which to provide she hath this Castle dight,
 And therein hath a Seneschall assynd,
 Cald Maleffort, a man of mickle might,
 Who executes her wicked will with worse de-
 spight.

XVI

'He, this same day, as I that way did come
 With a faire Damzell, my beloved deare,
 In execution of her lawlesse doome
 Did set upon us flying both for feare;
 For little bootes against him hand to reare,
 Me first he tooke unable to withstand,
 And whiles he her pursued every where,
 Till his returne unto this tree he bond;
 Newote I surely whether he yet have fond.'

XVII

Thus whiles they spake they heard a ruefull
 shriek
 Of one loud crying, which they straightway [ghest
 That it was she the which for helpe did seeke.
 Tho, looking up unto the cry to lest, [unblest
 They saw that Carle from farre, with hand
 Hayling that mayden by the yellow heare,
 That all her garments from her snowy brest,

And from her head her lockes he nigh did teare,
Ne would he spare for pittie, nor refraine for
fearc.

XVIII

Which haynous sight when Calidore beheld,
Eftsoones he loosed that Squire, and so him left
With hearts dismay and inward dolour queld,
For to pursue that villaine, which had reft
That piteous spoile by so injurious theft;
Whom overtaking, loude to him he cryde:
'Leave, faytor, quickly that misgotten weft
To him that bath it better justifie,
And turne thee soone to him of whom thou art
defyde.'

XIX

Who, hearkning to that voice, him selfe up-
reard,
And seeing him so fiercely towardes make,
Against him stoutly ran, as nought afear'd,
But rather more enrag'd for those words sake:
And with sterne count'naunce thus unto him
spake:
'Art thou the caytive that defyest me?
And for this Mayd, whose party thou dost take,
Wilt give thy beard, though it but litle bee?
Yet shall it not her lockes for raunsome fro me
free.'

XX

With that he fiercely at him flew, and layd
On hideous strokes with most importune might,
That oft he made him stagger as unstayd,
And oft recuile to shunne his sharpe despight:
But Calidore, that was well skild in fight,
Him long forbore, and still his spirite spar'd,
Lying in waite how him he damage might;
But when he felt him shrinke, and come to
ward, [hard,
He greater grew, and gan to drive at him more

XXI

Like as a water-streame, whose swelling course
Shall drive a Mill, within strong bancks is pent,
And long restrayned of his ready course, ●
So soone as passage is unto him lent,
Breakes forth, and makes his way more violent;
Such was the fury of Sir Calidore:
When once he felt his foeman to relent,
He fiercely him pursu'd, and pressed sore;
Who as he still decayd so he encreased more.

XXII

The heavy burden of whose dreadfull might
Whenas the Carle no longer could sustaine,
His heart gan faint, and straight he tooke his
flight
Toward the Castie, where, if need constraind,

His hope of refuge used to remaine:
Whom Calidore perceiuing fast to flie,
He him pursu'd and chaced through the plaine,
That he for dread of death gan loude to crie
Unto the ward to open to him hastilie.

XXIII

They, from the wall him seeing so aghast,
The gate soone opened to receive him in;
But Calidore did follow him so fast,
That even in the Porch he him did win,
And cleft his head asunder to his chin.
The carkasse tumbling downe within the dore
Did choke the entraunce with a lump of sm.
That it could not be shut; whilst Calidore
Did enter in, and slew the Porter on the flore.

XXIV

With that the rest the which the Castle kept
About him flockt, and hard at him did lay;
But he them all from him full lightly swept,
As doth a Steare, in heat of sommers day,
With his long taile the bryzes brush away.
Thence passing forth into the hall he came,
Where of the Lady selfe in sad dismay
He was ymett, who with unconely shame
Gan him salute, and fowle upbrayd with faulty
blame.

XXV

'False traytor Knight!' (said she) 'no Knight
at all,
But scorne of armes, that hast with guilty hand
Murdred my men, and slaine my Seneschall,
Now comest thou to rob my house unmand,
And spoile my selfe that can not thee with-
stand?
Yet doubt thou not, but that some better Knight
Then thou, that shall thy treason understand,
Will it avenge, and pay thee with thy right;
And if none do, yet shame shall thee with shame
requight.'

XXVI

Much was the Knight abashed at that word
Yet answer'd thus: 'Not unto me the shame,
But to the shamefull doer it afford.
Bloud is no blemish, for it is no blame
To punish those that doe deserve the same;
But they that breake bands of civilitie,
And wicked customes make, those doe defame
Both noble armes and gentle curtesie.
No greater shame to man then inhumanitie.

XXVII

'Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame, for-
goe
This evill manner which ye here maintaine,
And doe instead thereof mild curt'sie showe
To all that passe: That shall you glory gaine

More then his love, which thus ye seeke t' obtaine.'

Wherewith all full of wrath she thus replyde:
'Vile recreant! know that I doe much disdaine
Thy courteous lore, that doest my love deride,
Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee be
defyde.'

XXVIII

'To take defiance at a Ladies word
(Quoth he) 'I hold it no indignity;
But were he here, that would it with his sword
Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby.'
'Cowherd!' (quoth she) 'were not that thou
wouldst fly

Ere he doe come, he should be soone in place.'
'If I doe so,' (sayd he) 'then liberty
I leave to you for aye me to disgrace
With all those shames, that erst ye spake me
to deface.'

XXIX

With that a Dwarf she cald to her in hast,
And taking from her hand a ring of gould,
A privy token which betwene them past,
Bad him to flie with all the speed he could
To Crudor; and desire him that he would
Vouchsafe to reskue her against a Knight,
Who through strong powre had now her self
in hould,
Having late slaine her Seneschall in fight,
And all her people murdred with outrageous
might:

XXX

The Dwarf he his way did hast, and went all
night;
But Calidore did with her there abyde
The coming of that so much threatned
Knight; [pryde
Where that discourteous Dame with scornfull
And fowle entreaty him indignifyde,
That yron heart it hardly could sustaine:
Yet he, that could his wrath full wisely guyde,
Did well endure her womanish disdain,
And did him selfe from fraile impatience re-
fraine.

XXXI

The morrow next, before the lampe of light
Above the earth upreard his flaming head,
The Dwarf, which bore that message to her
knight, [bread
Brought aunswere backe, that ere he tasted
He would her succour, and alive or dead
Her foe deliver up into her hand:
Therefore he wild her doe away all dread;
And, that of him she mote assured stand,
He sent to her his paset as a faithfull
band.

XXXII

Thereof full blyth the Lady streight became,
And gan t' augment her bitterness much
more;
Yet no whit more appalled for the same,
Ne ought dismayed was Sir Calidore,
But rather did more chearefull seeme there-
fore:
And having soone his armes about him dight,
Did issue forth to meete his foe afore;
Where long he stayed not, when as a Knight
He spide come pricking on with all his powre
and might.

XXXIII

Well weend he streight that he should be the
same
Which tooke in hand her quarrell to maintaine;
Ne stayd to aske if it were he by name,
But coucht his speare, and ran at him amaine.
They bene ymett in midst of the plaine
With so fell fury and dispiteous forse,
That neither could the others stroke sustaine,
But rudely fowld to ground, both man and
horse,
Neither of other taking pittie nor remorse.

XXXIV

But Calidore uprose againe full light,
Whiles yet his foe lay fast in sencelesse sround;
Yet would he not him hurt although he might;
For shame he weend a sleeping wight to wound.
But when Briana saw that drery stound,
There where she stood upon the Castle wall,
She deem'd him sure to have bene dead on
ground;
And made such piteous mourning therewithall,
That from the battlements she ready seem'd
to fall.

XXXV

Nathlesse at length him selfe he did upreare
In lustlesse wise; as if against his will,
Ere he had slept his fill, he wakened were,
And gan to stretch his limbs; which feeling ill
Of his late fall, awhile he rested still:
But, when he saw his foe before in vew,
He shooke off luskishnesse; and courage chill
Kindling afresh, gan battell to renew. [enew.
To prove if better foote then horsebacke would

XXXVI

There then began a fearefull cruell fray
Betwixt them two for maystery of might;
For both were wondrous practicke in that play.
And passing well expert in single fight,
And both inflam'd with furious despight;
Which as it still encreast, so still increast
Their cruell strokes and terrible affright;

Ne once for ruth their rigour they releast,
Ne once to breath awhile their angers tempest
ceast.

XXXVII

Thus long they trac'd and traverst to and fro,
And tryde all waies how each mote entrance
make

Into the life of his malignant foe : [brake,
They hew'd their helmes, and plates asunder
As they had potshares bene ; for nought mote
slake

Their greedy vengeaunces but goary blood,
That at the last like to a purple lake
Of bloody gore congeal'd about them stood,
Which from their riven sides forth gushed like
a flood.

XXXVIII

At length it chaunst that both their hands on
hie

At once did heave with all their powre and
Thinking the utmost of their force to trie,
And prove the finall fortune of the fight ;
But Calidore, that was more quicke of sight
And nimbler handed then his enemy,
Prevented him before his stroke could light,
And on the helmet smote him formerlie,
That made him stoupe to ground with meeke
humilitie :

XXXIX

And, ere he could recover foote againe,
He, following that faire advantage fast,
His stroke redoubled with such might and
maine,

That him upon the ground he groveling cast ;
And leaping to him light would have unlust
His Helme, to make unto his vengeance way :
Who, seeing in what daunger he was plust,
Cryde out ; ' Ah mercie, Sir ! doe me not slay,
But save my life, which lot before your foot
doth lay.'

XL

With that his mortall hand a while he stayd ;
And, having somewhat calm'd his wrathfull
heat

With goodly patience, thus he to him sayd :
' And is the boast of that proud Ladies threat,
That menaced me from the field to beat.
Now brought to this ? By this now may ye
learne

Strangers no more so rudely to entreat,
But put away proud looks and usage sterne,
The which shal nought to you but foule dis-
honor yearne.

XLI

' For nothing is more blamefull to a knight,
That court'sie doth as well as armes professe,

However strong and fortunate in fight,
Then the reproch of pride and cruellnesse.
In vaine he seeketh others to suppress,
Who hath not leard him selfe first to subdew :
All flesh is frayle and full of ficklenesse,
Subject to fortunes chance, still chaunging new :
What haps to day to me to morrow may to
you.

XLII

' Who will not mercie unto others shew,
How can he mercy ever hope to have ?
To pay each with his owne is right and dew ;
Yet since ye mercie now doe need to crave,
I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to save,
With these conditions which I will propound :
First, that ye better shall your selfe behave
Unto all errant knights, whereso on ground ;
Next, that ye Ladies ayde in every stead and
stound.'

XLIII

The wretched man, that all this while did
dwell

In dread of death, his heasts did gladly heare,
And promist to performe his precept well,
And whatsoever else he would require.
So, stuffing him to rise, he made him sweare
By his owne sword, and by the crosse thereon,
To take Briana for his loving fere
Withouten dowre or composition ;
But to release his former foule condition.

XLIV

All which accepting, and with faithfull oth
Bynding himselfe most firmly to obay,
He up arose, however lief or loth,
And swore to him true fealtie for aye.
Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay
The sad Briana which all this beheld ;
Who comming forth yet full of late affray
Sir Calidore upheard, and to her told
All this accord to which he Crudor had com-
peld.

XLV

Whereof she now more glad then sory carst,
All overcome with infinite affect
For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst
Her stubborne hart with inward deepe effect,
Before his feet her selfe she did project ;
And him adoring as her lives deare Lord,
With all due thankes and dutifull respect,
Her selfe acknowledg'd bound for that accord,
By which he had to her both life and love re-
stord.

XLVI

So all returning to the Castle glad,
Most joyfully she them did enttaine ;

Where goodly glee and feast to them she made,
To show her thankfull mind and meaning faine,
By all the meanes she mote it best explaine:
And, after all, unto Sir Calidore
She freely gave that Castle for his paine,
And her selfe bound to him for evermore;
So wondrously now chaung'd from that she was
afore.

XLVII

But Calidore himselfe would not retaine
Nor land nor fee for hyre of his good deede,

But gave them streight unto that Squire
again,
Whom from her Seneschall he lately freed,
And to his damzell, as their rightfull meed
For recompence of all their former wrong.
There he remaind with them right well
agreed,
Till of his wounds he waxed hole and strong;
And then to his first quest he passed forth
along.

CANTO II.

Calidore sees young Tristram slay
A proud discourteous knight:
He makes him Squire, and of him learns
His state and present plight.

I

WHAT vertue is so fitting for a knight,
Or for a Ladie whom a knight should love,
As Courtesie; to beare themselves aright
To all of each degree as doth behove?
For whether they be placed high above
Or low beneath, yet ought they well to know
Their good; that none them rightly may re-
prove
Of rudenesse for not yeelding what they owe:
Great skill it is such duties timely to bestow.

II

Thereto great helpe dame Nature selfe doth
lend;
For some so goodly gracious are by kind,
That every action doth them much commend,
And in the eyes of men great liking find,
Which others that have greater skill in mind,
Though they enforce themselves, cannot at-
taine;
For everie thing to which one is inclin'd
Doth best become and greatest grace doth
game:
Yet praise likewise deserve good thewes enforst
with paine.

III

That well in courteous Calidore appears:
Whose every deed and word, that he did say,
Was like enchantment, that through both the
eares
And both the eyes did steale the hart away.
He now againe is on his former way
To follow his first quest, when as he spyde
A tall young man, from thence not farre away,
Fighting on foot, as well he him descryde,
Against an armed knight that did on horse-
backe ryde.

IV

And them beside a Ladie faire he saw
Standing alone on foot in foule array:
To whom himselfe he hastily did draw
To weet the cause of so uncomely tray,
And to depart them, if so be he may:
But, ere he came in place, that youth had kild
That armed knight, that low on ground he lay:
Which when he saw, his hart was mylde child
With great amazement, and his thought with
wonder filld.

V

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to bee
A goodly youth of amiable grace,
Yet but a slender shyp, that scarce did see
Yet seventene yeares, but tall and faire of face,
That sure he deem'd him borne of noble race:
All in a woodmans jacket he was clad
Of Lincoln greene, belayd with silver lace;
And on his head an hood with aglets sprad,
And by his side his hunters horne he hanging
had.

VI

Buckins he wore of costliest cordwayne,
Pinckt upon gold, and paled part per part,
As then the guize was for each gentle swayne:
In his right hand he held a trembling dart,
Whose fellow he before had sent apart;
And in his left he held a sharpe bore-speare,
With which he wont to launch the salvage
hart
Of many a Lyon and of many a Beare,
That first unto his hand in chase did happen
neare.

VII

Whom Calidore awhile well having vewed
At length bespake; 'What meanes this, gentle
Swaine.

Why hath thy hand too bold it selfe embrewed
In blood of knight, the which by thee is slaine,
By thee no knight; which armes impugne
plaine?

'Certes,' (said he) 'loth were I to have broken
The law of armes: yet breake it should againe.
Rather then let my selfe of wight be stroken,
So long as these two armies were able to be
wroken.

VIII

'For not I him, as this his Ladie here
May witness well, did offer first to wrong,
Ne surely thus unarm'd I likely were; [strong
But he ine first through pride and puissance
Assayld, not knowing what to armes doth long.
'Perdie great blame' (then said Sir Calidore)
'For armed knight a wight unarm'd to wrong:
But then aread, thou gentle chyld, wherefore
Betwixt you two began this strife and sterne
uprore.'

IX

'That shall I, sooth,' (said he) 'to you de-
clare.

I, whose unryper yeares are yet unfit
For thing of weight or worke of greater care,
Doe spend my dayes and bend my carelesse wit
To salvage chace, where I thereon may hit
In all this forrest and wyld wooddie raine:
Where, as this day I was enraunging it, [slaine,
I chaunst to meete this knight, who there lyes
Together with this Ladie, passing on the plaine.

X

'The knight, as ye did see, on horsebacke was,
And this his Ladie (that him ill became)
On her faire feet by his horse side did pas
Through thicke and thin, unfit for any Dame:
Yet not content, more to increase his shame,
When so she lagged, as she needs mote so,
He with his speare, that was to him great blame,
Would thumpe her forward and inforce to goe,
Weeping to him in vaine and making piteous
woe.

XI

Which when I saw, as they me passed by,
Much was I moved in indignant mind,
And gan to blame him for such cruelty
Towards a Ladie, whom with usage kind
He rather should have taken up behind;
Wherewith he wroth, and full of proud disdain.
Tooke in foule scorne that I such fault did find,
And me in heu thereof revild againe, [pertaine.
Threatning to chastize me, as doth t'a chyld

XII

'Which I no lesse disdayning, backe returned
His scornfull taunts unto his teeth againe,

That he streightway with haughtie choler
burned, [twaine;
And with his speare strooke me one stroke or
Which I, enforst to beare though to my
paine,
Cast to requite; and with a slender dart,
Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine,
Strooke him, as seemeth, underneath the hart,
That through the wound his spirit shortly
did depart.'

XIII

Much did Sir Calidore admyre his speach
Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke
That through the mayles had made so strong
a breach
Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke
His wrath on him that first occasion broke;
Yet rested not, but further gan inquire
Of that same Ladie, whether what he spoke
Were soothly so, and that th' unrighteous ire
Of her owne knight had given him his owne
due hire?

XIV

Of all which when as she could nought deny,
But cleard that strypling of th' imputed
blame,
Sayd then Sir Calidore; 'Neither will I
Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite
clame:
For what he spake, for you he spake it, Dame;
And what he did, he did him selfe to save:
Against both which that knight wrought
knightlesse shame;
For knights and all men this by nature have,
Towards all womenkind them kindly to be-
have.

XV

'But, sith that he is gone irrevocable,
Please it you, Ladie, to us to aread
What cause could make him so dishonourable
To drive you so on foot, unfit to tread
And lackey by him, gainst all womanhead.'
'Certes, Sir knight,' (sayd she) 'full loth I
were

To ravse a lyving blame against the dead;
But since it me concerns my selfe to clere,
I will the truth discover as it chaunst whyl-
ere.

XVI

'This day, as he and I together roade
Upon our way to which we weren bent,
We chaunst to come foreby a covert glade
Within a wood, whereas a Ladie gent
Sate with a knight in joyous jolliment
Of their franke loves, free from all gealous
spyes.
Faire was the Ladie, sure, that mote content

An hart not carried with too curious eyes,
And unto him did shew all lovely courtesyes.

XVII

'Whom when my knight did see so lovely
faire,
He inly gan her lover to envy,
And wish that he part of his spoyles might
share:

Whereto when as my presence he did spy
To be a let, he bad me by and by
For to alight: but when as I was loth
My loves owne part to leave so suddenly,
He with strong hand downe from his steed me
throw' th

And with preumptuous powre against that
knight steight go' th.

XVIII

'Unarm'd all was the knight, as then more
meete

For Ladies service, and for loves delight,
Then fearing any foeman there to meete:
Whereof he taking oodles, steight bids him
dight

Himselfe to yeeld his Love, or else to fight:
Whereat the other starting up dismayd,
Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might,
To leave his love he should be ill apayd,
In which he had good right gaynst all that it
gainesayd.

XIX

'Yet since he was not presently in plight
Her to defend, or his to justifie,
He him requested, as he was a knight,
To lend him day his better right to trie,
Or stay till he his armes, which were thereby,
Might lightly fetch: But he was fierce and
whot,

Ne time would give, nor any termes aby,
But at him flew, and with his speare him smot;
From which to thinke to save himselfe it
booted not.

XX

'Meane while his Ladie, which this outrage
saw,

Whilst they together for the quarry strove,
Into the covert did her selfe withdraw,
And closely hid her selfe within the grove.
My knight hers soone, as seemes, to daunger
drove,

And left sore wounded: but, when her he mist,
He woxe halfe mad; and in that rage gan
rove

And range through all the wood, where so he
She hidden was, and sought her so long as him
list.

XXI

'But, when as her he by no meanes could
find,

After long search and chauff he turned backe
Unto the place where me he left behind:
There gan he me to curse and ban, for lacke,
Of that faire bootie, and with bitter wracke
To wreake on me the guilt of his owne wrong:
Of all which I yet glad to beare the packe
Strove to appease him, and perswaded long;
But still his passion grew more violent and
strong.

XXII

'Then, as it were t' avenge his wrath on mee,
When forward we should fare he flat refused
To take me up (as this young man did see)
Upon his steed, for no just cause accused,
But forst to trot on foot, and foule misused,
Pouching me with the butt end of his speare,
In vaine complayning to be so abused;
For he regarded neither playnt nor teare,
But more enfornt my paine, the more my plaints
to heare.

XXIII

'So passed we till this young man us met;
And being mov'd with pittie of my plight
Spake, as was meet, for ease of my regret:
Whereof befell what now is in your sight.'
'Now sure,' (then said Sir Calidore) 'and
right,

Me seemes, that him befell by his owne fault:
Who ever thinckes through confidence of
might, [haule,
Or through support of count'nance proud and
To wrong the weaker, oft falles in his owne
assault.'

XXIV

Then turning backe unto that gentle boy,
Which had himselfe so stoutly well acquit,
Seeing his face so lovely sterne and coy,
And hearing th' answeres of his pregnant wit,
He prayd it much, and much admeyd it;
That sure he wend him borne of noble blood,
With whom those graces did so goodly fit:
And when he long had him beholding stood,
He burst into these wordes, as to him seemed
good:

XXV

'Faire gentleswayne, and yet as stout as sayre,
That in these woods amongst the Nymphs
dost wonne,
Which daily may to thy sweete lookes repayre,
As they are wont unto Latonaes sonne
After his chace on woodie Cynthus donne;
Well may I, certes, such an one thee read,
As by thy worth thou worthily hast wonne,

Or surely borne of some Heroicke sead,
That in thy face appears and gracious goodly-
head.

XXVI

But, should it not displease thee it to tell,
(Unlesse thou in these woods thy selfe conceale

For love amongst the woodie Gods to dwell)
I would thy selfe require thee to reveale,
For deare affection and unfayned zeale
Which to thy noble personage I beare,
And wish thee grow in worship and great
weale;

For, since the day that armes I first did reare,
I never saw in any greater hope appeare.'

XXVII

To whom then thus the noble Youth: 'May
be,

Sir knight, that, by discovering my estate,
Harme may arise unweeting unto me;
Nathelesse, sith ye so courteous seemed late,
To you I will not feare it to relate.
Then wote ye that I am a Briton borne,
Sonne of a King, (how ever thorough fate
Or fortune I my countrie have forloque,
And lost the crowne which should my head
by right adorne,)

XXVIII

'And Tristram is my name, the onely heire
Of good king Meliograss which did rayne
In Cornewale, till that he through lives despeire

Untimely dyde, before I did attaine
Ripe yeares of reason my right to maintaine:
After whose death his brother, seeing mee
An infant, weake a kingdome to sustaine,
Upon him tooke the roiall high degree,
And sent me, where him list, instructed for to
bec.

XXIX

'The widow Queene my mother, which then
hight

Faire Emilline, conceiving then great feare
Of my fraile safetie, resting in the night
Of him that did the kingly Scepter beare,
Whose jealous dread induring not a peare
Is wont to cut off all that doubt may breed,
Thought best away me to remove somewhere
Into some forrein land, where as no need
Of dreaded danger might his doubtfull hum-
mor feed.

XXX

'So, taking counsell of a wise man red,
She was by him adviz'd to send me quight

Out of the countrie wherein I was bred,
The which the fertile Lionesse is hight,
Into the land of Faerie, where no wight
Should weet of me, nor worke me any wrong:
To whose wise read she hearkning sent me
streight'

Into this land, where I have wond thus long
Since I was ten yeares old, now grown to
stature strong.

XXXI

'All which my daies I have not lewdly
spent,

Nor spilt the blossom of my tender yeares
In ydlesse; but, as was convenient,
Have trayned bene with many noble feres
In gentle thewes and such like seemly leres:
Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies
been

To hunt the salvage chace, amongst my peres,
Of all that raungeth in the Forrest greene,
Of which none is to me unknowne that ev'r
was seene.

XXXII

'Ne is there hauke which mantleth her on
pearch,

Whether high trowing or accoasting low,
But I the measure of her flight doe search,
And all her pray and all her diet know.
Such be our joyes which in these Forrests grow:
Onely the use of armes, which most I joy,
And fittest most for noble swayne to know,
I have not tasted yet; yet past a boy, [to imploy.
And being now high time these strong joynts

XXXIII

'Therefore, good Sir, sith now occasion fit
Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome may,
Let me this crave, unworthy though of it,
That ye will make me Squire without delay,
That from henceforth in battellous array
I may beare armes, and learne to use them right;
The rather, since that fortune hath this day
Given to me the spoile of this dead knight,
These goodly gilden armes which I have won
in fight.'

XXXIV

All which when well Sir Calidore had heard,
Him much more now then earst he gan admire
For the rare hope which in his yeares appear'd,
And thus replide: 'Faire chyld, the high de-
sire

To love of armes, which in you doth aspire,
I may not, certes, without blame denie,
But rather wish that some more noble hire
(Though none more noble then is chevalrie)
I had, you to reward with greater dignitie.'

XXXV

There him he causd to kneele, and made to sweare
Faith to his knight, and truth to Ladies all,
And never to be recrant for feare
Of perill, or of ought that might befall:
So he him dubbed, and his Squire did call.
Full glad and joyous then young Tristram grew;
Like as a flowre, whose silken leaves small
Long shut up in the bud from heavens vew,
At length breakes forth, and biode displayes
his mylking hew.

XXXVI

Thus when they long had treated to and fro,
And Calidore bejooke him to depart, [goe
Chyld Tristram prayd that he with him might
On his adventure. vowing not to start,
But wayt on him in every place and part:
Whereat Sir Calidore did much delight,
And greatly joy'd at his so noble hart,
In hope he sure would prove a doughtie knight:
Yet for the time this answeere he to him behight.

XXXVII

'Glad would I surely be, thou courteous Squire,
To have thy presence in my present quest,
That mote thy kindled courage set on fire,
And flame forth honour in thy noble brest;
But I am bound by vow, which I protest
To my dread Sovereaine, when I it assayd,
That in atchievement of her high behest
I should no creature joyne unto mine ayde:
For thy I may not graunt that ye so greatly
prayde.

XXXVIII

'But since this Ladie is all desolate,
And needeth safegard now upon her way,
Ye may doe well, in this her needfull state,
To succour her from daunger of dismay,
That thankfull gerdon may to you repay.'
The noble ympe, of such new service fayne,
It gladly did accept, as he did say:
So taking courteous leave they parted twayne,
And Calidore forth passed to his former payne.

XXXIX

But Tristram, then despoyling that dead knight
Of all those goodly implements of prayse,
Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire sight
Of the bright metall shyning like Sunne rayes,
Handling and turning them a thousand wayes:
And, after having them upon him dight,
He tooke that Ladie, and her up did rayse
Upon the steed of her owne late dead knight;
So with her marched forth, as she did him
behight.

XL

There to their fortune leave we them awhile,
And turne we backe to good Sir Calidore;
Who, ere he thence had traveld many a mile,
Came to the place whereas ye heard afore [sore
This knight, whom Tristram slew, had wounded
Another knight in his despitous pryde:
There he that knight found lying on the flore
With many wounds full perillous and wyde,
That all his garments and the grasse in vermeill
dyde.

XLI

And there beside him sate upon the ground
His wofull Ladie, piteously complayning
With loud lamentes that most unluckie sound,
And her sad selfe with careful hand constrayning,
To wype his wounds, and ease their bitter
payning.
Which sorie sight when Calidore did vew
With heavey eyne, from teares uneth refrayning,
His mightie hart their mournfull case can rew,
And for their better comfort to them nigher
drew.

XLII

Then speaking to the Ladie thus he said:
'Ye dolefull Dame, let not your grieffe empeach
To tell what cruell hand hath thus arayed
This knight unarm'd with so unknighly breach
Of armes, that, if I yet him nigh may reach,
I may avenge him of so foule despyght.'
The Ladie, hearing his so courteous speach,
Gan reare her eyes as to the chearefull light,
And from her sory hart few heavey words forth
sight:

XLIII

In which she shew'd, how that discourteous
knight,
(Whom Tristram slew) them in that shadow
found
Joying together in unblam'd delight;
And him unarm'd, as now he lay on ground,
Charg'd with his speare, and mortally did
wound,
Withouten cause, but onely her to reave
From him to whom she was for ever bound:
Yet when she fled into that covert greave,
He, her not finding, both them thus nigh dead
did leave.

XLIV

When Calidore this ruefull storie had
Well understood, he gan of her demand,
What manner wight he was, and how yclad,
Which had this outrage wrought with wicked
haud.

She then, like as she best could understand,
Him thus describ'd ; to be of stature large,
Clad all in gilden armes, with azure band
Quartred athwart, and bearing in his targe
A Ladie on rough waves row'd in a sommer
barge.

XLV

Then gan Sir Calidore to ghesse streight-
way,
By many signes which she described had,
That this was he whom Tristram earst did
slay,
And to her said : ' Dame, be no longer sad ;
For he, that hath your Knight so ill bestad,
Is now him selfe in much more wretched plight :
These eyes him saw upon the cold earth sprad,
The meede of his desert for that despight,
Which to your selfe he wrought and to your
loved knight.

XLVI

' Therefore, faire Lady, lay aside this griefe,
Which ye have gathered to your gentle hart
For that displeasure, and thinke what reliefe
Were best devise for this your lovers smart ;
And how ye may him hence, and to what part,
Convey to be recur'd.' She thank't him deare
Both for that newes he did to her impart,

And for the courteous care which he did beare
Both to her love and to her selfe in that sad
dreare.

XLVII

Yet could she not devise by any wit, [place ;
How thence she might convey him to some
For him to trouble she it thought unfit,
That was a straunger to her wretched case ;
And him to beare she thought it thing too base
Which when as he perceiv'd he thus bespake :
' Faire Lady, let it not you seeme disgrace
To beare this burden on your dainty backe ;
My selfe will beare a part, coportion of your
packe.'

XLVIII

So off he did his shield, and downward layd
Upon the ground, like to an hollow beare ;
And powring balme, which he had long pur-
vayd,
Into his wounds, him up thereon did reare,
And twixt them both with parted paines did
beare, [donne.
Twixt life and death, not knowing what was
Thence they him carried to a Castle neare,
In which a worthy ancient Knight did wonne :
Where what ensu'd shall in next Canto be be-
gonne.

CANTO III.

Calidore brings Priscilla home ;
Pursues the Blatant Beast :
Saves Serena, whilst Calopine
By Turpine is oppress.

I

TRUE is, that whilome that good Poet sayd,
The gentle minde by gentle deeds is knowne :
For a man by nothing is so well bewrayd.
As by his manners ; in which plaine is
showne

Of what degree and what race he is growing :
For seldome seene a trotting Stallion get
An ambling Colt, that is his proper owne :
So seldome seene that one in basenesse set
Doth noble courage shew with courteous man-
ners met.

II

But evermore contrary hath bene tryde,
That gentle blood will gentle manners breed ;
As well may be in Calidore descryde,
By late ensample of that courteous deed
Done to that wounded Knight in his great
need, [brought
Whom on his backe he bore, till he him
Unto the Castle where they had decreed :

There of the Knight, the which that Castle
ought, [besought.
To make abode that night he greatly was

III

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares,
That in his youth had beene of mickle might,
And borne great sway in armes amongst his
peares ;
But now weake age had dimd his candle-light :
Yet was he courteous still to every wight,
And loved all that did to armes incline ;
And was the Father of that wounded Knight,
Whom Calidore thus carried on his chine ;
And Aldus was his name ; and his sonnes,
Aladine.

IV

Who when he saw his sonne so ill bedight
With bleeding wounds, brought home upon a
beare
By a faire Lady and a straunger Knight,

Was inly touched with compassion deare,
And deare affection of so dolefull dreare,
That he these words burst forth: 'Ah, sory
boy!

Is this the hope that to my hoary heare
Thou brings? aie me! is this the timely joy,
Which I expected long, now turned to sad
annoy?

V

'Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope,
So tickle is the state of earthly things,
That, ere they come unto their aymed scope,
They fall too short of our fraile reckonings,
And bring us bale and bitter sorrowings,
Instead of comfort which we should embrace:
This is the stat^e of Keasars and of Kings!
Let none therefore, that is in meaner place,
Too greatly grieve at any his unlucky case.'

VI

So well and wisely did that good old Knight
Temper his griefe, and turned it to cheare,
To cheare his guests whom he had sayd
that night,
And make their welcome to them well appeare.
That to Sir Calidore was easie geare;
But that faire Lady would be cheard for
nought,
But sigh'd and sorrow'd for her lover deare,
And inly did afflict her pensive thought
With thinking to what case her name should
now be brought:

VII

For she was daughter to a noble Lord
Which dwelt thereby, who sought her to
affy
To a great pere; but she did disaccord,
Ne could her liking to his love apply,
But lov'd this fresh young Knight who dwelt
her ny,
The lusty Aladine, though meaner borne
And of lesse liveood and hability,
Yet full of valour the which did adorne
His meanesse much, and make her th' others
riches scorne.

VIII

So, having both found fit occasion,
They met together in that lucklesse glade;
Where that proud Knight in his presumption
The gentle Aladine did earst invade,
Being unarm'd and set in secret shade.
Whereof she now bethinking, gan t' advize
How great a hazard she at earst had made
Of her good fame; and further gan devize
How she the blame might salve with coloured
disguize.

IX

But Calidore with all good courtesie
Fain'd her to frolicke, and to put away
The pensive fit of her melancholie;
And that old Knight by all meanes did assay
To make them both as merry as he may.
So they the evening past till time of rest;
When Calidore in seemly good array
Unto his bowre was brought, and there undrest
Did sleepe all night through weary travell of
his quest.

X

But faire Priscilla (so that Lady light)
Would to no bed, nor take no kindly sleepe,
But by her wounded love did watch all night,
And all the night for bitter anguish weepe,
And with her teares his wounds did wash and
steepe: [wacht him,
So well she washt them, and so well she
That of the deadly swound, in which full deepe
He drenched was, she at the length dispaht
him, [attacht him,
And drove away the stound which mortally

XI

The morrow next, when day gan to uplooke,
He also gan uplooke with dreary eye,
Like one that out of deadly dreame awooke:
Where when he saw his faire Priscilla by,
He deeply sigh'd, and groaned inwardly,
To thinke of this ill state in which she stood;
To which she for his sake had weetingly
Now brought her selfe, and blam'd her noble
blood:
For first, next after life, he tendered her good.

XII

Which she perceiving did with plenteous
teares
His care more then her owne compassionate,
Forgetfull of her owne to minde his feares:
So both conspiring gan to intimate
Each others griefe with zeale affectionate,
And twixt them twaine with equall care to
cast
How to save hole her hazarded estate;
For which the unely helpe now left them last
Seem'd to be Calidore: all other helpes were
past.

XIII

Him they did deeme, as sure to them he
seemed,
A courteous Knight and full of faithfull trust;
Therefore to him their cause they best es-
teemed
Whole to commit, and to his dealing just,

Earely, so soone as Titans beames forth brust
Through the thicke clouds in which they
steeped lay

All night in darkenesse, duld with yron rust,
Calidore rising up as fresh as day
Gan freshly him addresse unto his former way.

XIV

But first him seemed fit that wounded
Knight

To visite, after this nights perillous passe,
And to salute him, if he were in plight,
And eke that Lady, his faire lovely lasse.
There he him found much better then he was;
And moved speach to him of things of course,
The anguish of his paine to overpasse:
Mongst which he namely did to him discourse
Of former daies mishap, his sorrowes wicked
course.

XV

Of which occasion Aldine taking hold
Gan breake to him the fortunes of his love,
And all his disadvantages to unfold,
That Calidore it dearly deepe did move:
In th' end, his kyndly courtesie to prove,
He him by all the bands of love beought,
And as it mote a faithfull friend behove,
To safe-conduct his love, and not for ought
To leave, till to her fathers house he had her
brought.

XVI

Sir Calidore his faith thereto did plight
It to performe: so after little stay,
That she her selfe had to the journey dight,
He passed forth with her in faire array,
Fearlesse who ought did thinke or ought did
say, [from wite:
Sith his own thought he knew most cleare
So, as they past together on their way,
He can devise this counter-cast of slight,
To give faire colour to that Ladies cause in
sight.

XVII

Streight to the carkasse of that Knight he
went,

The cause of all this evill, who was slaine
The day before by just avengement
Of noble Tristram, where it did remaine:
There he the necke thereof did cut in twaine,
And tooke with him the head, the signe of
shame.

So forth he passed thorough that daies paine,
Till to that Ladies fathers house he came;
Most pensive man, through feare what of his
childe became.

XVIII

There he arriving boldly did present
The fearefull Lady to her father deare,
Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent
Of blame, as he did on his Knighthood sweare,
Since first he saw her, and did free from feare
Of a discourteous Knight, who her had rest
And by outrageous force away did beare:
Witness thereof he shew'd his head there left,
And wretched life forlorne for vengeance of
his theft.

XIX

Most joyfull man her sire was her to see,
And heare th' adventure of her late mis-
chance;
And thousand thanks to Calidore for fee
Of his large paines in her deliverance
Did yeeld: Ne lesse the Lady did advance.
Thus having her restored trustily,
As he had vow'd, some small continuance
He there did make, and then most carefully
Unto his first exploite he did him selfe apply.

XX

So, as he was pursuing of his quest,
He shaunst to come whereas a jolly Knight
In covert shade him selfe did safely rest,
To solace with his Lady in delight:
His warlike armes he had from him undight,
For that him selfe he thought from daunger
free, [spight;
And far from envious eyes that mote him
And eke the Lady was full faire to see,
And courteous withall, becomming her degree.

XXI

To whom Sir Calidore approaching nye,
Ere they were well aware of living wight,
Them much abasht, but more him selfe
thereby,
That he so rudely did upon them light,
And troubled had their quiet loves delight:
Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault,
Him selfe thereof he labour'd to acquite,
And pardon crav'd for his so rash default,
That he gainst courtesie so fowly did default.

XXII

With which his gentle words and goodly wit
He soone allayd that Knights conceiv'd dis-
pleasure,
That he beought him downe by him to sit,
That they mote treat of things abroad at
leasure,
And of adventures, which had in his measure
Of so long waies to him befallen late.
So downe he sate, and with delightfull pleasure

His long adventures gan to him relate,
Which he endured had through daungerous
debate :

XXVIII

Of which whilst they discoursed both to-
gether,
The faire Serena (so his Lady hight)
Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether
And plesaunce of the place, the which was
dight
With diuers flowres distinct with rare delight,
Wandred about the fields, as liking led
Her wavering lust after her wandring sight,
To make a garland to adorne her hed,
Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden dred.

XXIV

All sodainely out of the Forrest nere
The Blatant Beast forth rushing unaware
Caught her, thus loosely wandring here and
there,
And in his wide great mouth away her bare
Crying aloud to shew her sad misfare
Unto the Knights, and calling oft for ayde ;
Who with the horrour of her haplesse care
Hastily starting up, like men dismayde,
Ran after fast to reskue the distressed mayde.

XXV

The Beast, with their pursuit incited more,
Into the wood was bearing her apace
For to have spoyled her, when Calidore,
Who was more light of foote and swift in chace,
Him overtooke in midst of his race ;
And, fiercely charging him with all his might,
Forst to forgoe his pray there in the place,
And to betake him selfe to fearefull flight ;
For he durst not abide with Calidore to fight.

XXVI

Who nathelesse, when he the Lady saw
There left on ground, though in full evill plight,
Yet knowing that her Knight now neare did
draw,
Staide not to succour her in that affright,
But follow'd fast the Monster in his flight :
Through woods and hills he follow'd him so fast,
That he would let him breath, nor gather
spright,
But forst him gape and gaspe, with dread aghast,
As if his lungs and lites were nigh asunder
brast.

XXVII

And now by this Sir Calepine (so hight)
Came to the place where he his Lady found
In dolorous dismay and deadly plight,
All in gore bloud there tumbled on the ground,

Having both sides through grypt with griesly
wound.

His weapons soone from him he threw away,
And stouping downe to her in drey s wound
Uprear'd her from the ground wher on she lay,
And in his tender armes her forced up to stay.

XXVIII

So well he did his busie paines apply,
That the faint sprite he did revoke againe
To her fraile mansion of mortality :
Then up he tooke her twixt his armes twaine,
And setting on his steede her did sustaine
With carefull hands, soft footing her beside ;
Till to some place of rest they mote attaine,
Where she in safe assurance mote abide,
Till she recured were of those her woundes wide.

XXIX

Now when as Phœbus with his fiery waine
Unto his Inne began to draw apace ;
Tho waxing weary of that toylesome paine,
In travelling on foote so long a space,
Not wont on foote with heavy armes to trace,
Downe in a dale forby a rivers syde
He chaunst to spie a faire and stately place,
To which he meant his weary steps to guyde,
In hope there for his love some succour to
provyde.

XXX

But, comming to the rivers side, he found
That hardly passable on foote it was ;
Therefore there still he stood as in a stound,
Ne wist which way he through the foord mote
pas :
Thus whilst he was in this distressed case,
Devising what to doe, he nigh espyde
An armed Knight approaching to the place
With a faire Lady lincked by his syde,
The which themselves prepard thorough the
foord to ride.

XXXI

Whom Calepine saluting (as became)
Besought of courtesie, in that his neede,
For safe conducting of his sickely Dame
Through that same perillous foord with better
heede,
To take him up behinde upon his steed ;
To whom that other did this taunt returne :
'Perdy, thou peasant Knight mightst rightly
Me then to be full bare and evill borne, [reel
If I would beare behinde a burden of such scorne.

XXXII

'But, as thou hast thy steed forlorne with
shame,
So fare on foote till thou another gayne,

And let thy Lady likewise doe the same,
Or beare her on thy backe with pleasing payne,
And prove thy manhood on the billowes vayne.
With which rude speach his Lady much displeased

Did him reprove, yet could him not restrayne,
And would on her owne Palfrey him have eased,
For pittie of his Dame whom she saw so diseased.

XXXIII

Sir Calepine her thanekt; yet, inly wroth
Against her Knight, her gentleness refused,
And carelesly into the river goth,
As in despiht to be so fowle abused
Of a rude churle, whom often he accused
Of fowle discourtesie, unfit for Knight,
And, strongly wading through the waves unused.
With speare in th' one hand staid him selfe
upright, | might.
With th' other staide his Lady up with steady

XXXIV

And all the while that same discourteous
Knight
Stood on the further bancke beholding him;
At whose calamity, for more despiht,
He laught, and mockt to see him like to swim:
But when as Calepine came to the brim,
And saw his carriage past that perill well,
Looking at that same Carle with count'nance
grim,
His heart with vengeance inwardly did swell,
And forth at last did breake in speeches sharpe
and fell:

XXXV

'Unknightly Knight, the blemish of that
name,
And blot of all that armes upon them take,
Which is the badge of honour and of fame,
Loe! I defie thee; and here challenge make,
That thou for ever doe those armes forsake,
And be for ever held a recreant Knight,
Unless thou dare, for thy deare Ladies sake
And for thine owne defence, on foote alight
To justifie thy fault gainst me in equal fight.'

XXXVI

The dastard, that did heare him selfe defyde,
Seem'd not to weigh his threatfull words at all,
But laught them out, as if his greater pryde
Did scorne the challenge of so base a thrall;
Or had no courage, or else had no gall.
So much the more was Calepine offended,
That him to no revenge he forth could call,
But both his challenge and him selfe contemned,
Ne cared as a coward so to be condemned.

XXXVII

But he, nought weighing what he sayd or did,
Turned his steede about another way,
And with his Lady to the Castle rid,
Where was his won: ne did the other stay,
But after went directly as he may, [seeke;
For his sicke charge some harbour there to
Where he arriving with the fall of day
Drew to the gate, and there with prayers meeke
And myld entreaty lodging did for her beseeke.

XXXVIII

But the rude Porter that no manners had
Did shut the gate against him in his face,
And entraunce boldly unto him forbad:
Nathelless the Knight, now in so needy case,
Gan him entreat even with submission base,
And humbly praied to let them in that night;
Who to him answer'd, that there was no place
Of lodging fit for any errant Knight,
Unless that with his Lord he formerly did fight.

XXXIX

'Full loth am I,' (quoth he) 'as now at earst
When day is spent, and rest us needeth most,
And that this Lady, both whose sides are pearst
With wounds, is ready to forgo the ghost;
Ne would I gladly combat with mine host.
That should to me such curtesie afford,
Unless that I were thereunto enforst:
But yet aread to me, how hight thy Lord,
That doth thus strongly ward the Castle of the
Fort?'

XL

'His name,' (quoth he) 'if that thou list to
learne,
Is hight Sir Turpine, one of mickle might
And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne
In all assaies to every errant Knight,
Because of one that wrought him fowle
despiht.'
'Ill seemes,' (sayd he) 'if he so valiaunt be,
That he should be so stern to stranger wight;
For seldome yet did living creature see
That curtesie and manhood ever disagree.

XLI

'But go thy waies to him, and fro me say,
That here is at his gate an errant Knight,
That house-rome craves; yet would be loth to
assay
The prooffe of battell now in doubtfull night,
Or curtesie with rudenesse to requite:
Yet, if he needes will fight, crave leave till
morne,
And tell with all the lamentable plight

In which this Lady languisheth forlorne,
That pittie craves, as he of woman was yborne.

XLII

The grooms went streight way in, and to his
Lord [move:
Declar'd the message which that Knight did
Who, sitting with his Lady then at bord,
Not onely did not his demaund approve,
But both himselfe revild and eke his love;
Albe his Lady, that Blandina hight,
Him of ungentle usage did reprove,
And earnestly entreated, that they might
Finde favour to be lodged there for that same
night.

XLIII

Yet would he not perswaded be for ought,
Ne from his currish will a whit reclame.
Which answer when the grooms returning
To Calepine, his heart did inly flame [brought
With wrathfull fury for so foule a shame,
That he could not thereof avenged bee;
But most for pittie of his dearest Dame,
Whom now in deadly daunger he did see,
Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure her
glee.

XLIV

But all in vaine; for why no remedy
He saw the present mischiefe to redresse,
But th' utmost end perforce for to aby,
Which that nights fortune would for him
addresse.
So downe he tooke his Lady in distresse,
And layd her underneath a bush to sleepe,
Cover'd with cold, and wrapt in wretchednesse;
Whiles he him selfe all night did nought but
weepe, [keepe.
And wary watch about her for her safegard

XLV

The morrow next, so soone as joyous day
Did shew it selfe in sunny beames bedight,
Serena full of dolorous dismay, [light,
Twixt darkenesse dread and hope of living
Uppear'd her head to see that cheerefull sight.
Then Calepine, however inly wroth,
And greedy to avenge that vile despight,
Yet for the feeble Ladies sake, full loth
To make there lenger stay, forth on his journey
goth.

XLVI

He goth on foote all armed by her side,
Upstaying still her selfe upon her steede,
Being unhable else alone to ride,
So sore her sides, so much her wounds did bleed;
Till that at length, in his extreamest neede,
He chaunst far off an armed Knight to spy
Pursuing him apace with greedy speede;

Whom well he wist to be some enemy,
That meant to make advantage of his misery.

XLVII

Wherefore he stayd, till that he nearer drew,
To weat what issue would thereof betyde:
Tho, whenas he approached nigh in vew,
By certaine signes he plainly him descryde
To be the man that with such scornfull pryde
Had him abused and shamed yesterday;
Therefore, misdoubting least he should mis-
guyde
His former malice to some new assay,
He cast to keepe him selfe so safely as he may.

XLVIII

By this the other came in place likewise,
And couching close his speare and all his powre,
As bent to some malicious enterprise,
He had him stand t' abide the bitter stoure
Of this sore vengeance, or to make avoure [done:
Of the lewd words and deedes which he had
With that ran at him, as he would devoure
His life attonge; who nought could do but shun
The perill of his pride, or else be over-run.

XLIX

Yet he him still pursew'd from place to place,
With full intent him cruely to kill,
And like a wilde goate round about did chace
Flying the fury of his bloody will:
But his best succour and refuge was still
Behind his Ladies back; who to him cryde,
And called oft with prayers loud and shrill,
As ever he to Lady was affyde,
To spare her Knight, and rest with reason
pacifyde:

L

But he the more thereby enraged was,
And with more eager felnesse him pursew'd;
So that at length, after long weary chace,
Having by chauce a close advantage vew'd,
He over raught him, having long eschew'd
His violence in vaine; and with his spere
Strooke through his shoulder, that the blood en-
In great abundance, as a well it were [sew'd
That forth out of an hill fresh gushing did
appere.

LI

Yet ceast he not for all that cruell wound,
But chaste him still for all his Ladies cry;
Not satisfide till on the fatall ground
He saw his life powrd forth despitously;
The which was certes in great jeopardy,
Had not a wondrous chauce his reskue
And saved from his cruell villany. [wrought,
Such chances oft exceed all humane thought!
That in another Canto shall to end be brought.

CANTO IV.

Calepine by a salvage man
From Turpine roskeued is;
And, whylest an Infant from a Beare
He saves, his love doth misse.

LIKE as a ship with dreadfull storme long tost,
Having spent all her mastes and her ground-
hold,
Now farre from harbour likely to be lost,
At last some fisher-barke doth neare behold,
That giveth comfort to her courage cold:
Such was the state of this most courteous knight
Being oppressed by that faytour bold,
That he remayned in most perilous plight,
And his sad Ladie left in pitifull affright:

II

Till that, by fortune passing all foresight,
A salvage man, which in those woods did wonne,
Drawne with that Ladies loud and piteous
shriekt,
Toward the same incessantly did runne
To understand what there was to be donne:
There he this most discourteous craven found,
As fiercely yet as when he first begonne,
Chasing the gentle Calepine around,
Ne sparing him the more for all his grievous
wound.

III

The salvage man, that never till this houre
Did taste of pittie, neither gentlesse knew.
Seeing his sharpe assault and cruell stoure,
Was much emmowed at his perils vew.
That even his ruder hart began to rew,
And feeble compassion of his evill plight,
Against his foe that did him so pursew;
From whom he meant to free him, if he might,
And him avenge of that so villenous despight.

IV

Yet armes or weapon had he none to fight,
Ne knew the use of warlike instruments;
Save such as sudden rage him lent to smite;
But naked, without needfull vestiments
To clad his corpse with meete habiliments,
He cared not for dint of sword nor speere,
No more then for the stroke of straws or
bents:
For from his mothers wombe, which him did
He was invulnerable made by Magicke leare.

V

He stayed not t' advize which way were best
His foe t' assayle, or how himselfe to gard,
But with fierce fury and with force infest
Upon him ran; who being well prepar'd
His first assault full warily did ward,
And with the push of his sharp-pointed speare
Full on the breast him strooke, so strong and
hard
That forst him backe recoyle and reele areare,
Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud
appeare.

VI

With that the wyld man more enraged grew,
Like to a Tygre that hath mist his pray.
And with mad moode againe upon him flew,
Regarding neither speare that mote him slay,
Nor his fierce steed that mote him much dis-
may:
The salvage nation doth all dread despize,
Tho on his shield he griple hold did lay,
And held the same so hard, that by no wize
He could him force to loose, or leave his en-
terprize.

VII

Long did he wrest and wring it to and fro,
And every way did try, but all in vaine;
For he would not his greedie grype forgoe,
But hayld and puld with all his might and
maine,
That from his steed him nigh he drew againe:
Who having now no use of his long speare
So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to straine.
Both speare and shield, as things that need-
lesse were, [feare,
He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away for

VIII

But after him the wyld man ran apace,
And him pursewed with importune speed,
(For he was swift as any Bucke in chase)
And, had he not in his extremest need
Bene helped through the swiftnesse of his
He had him overtaken in his flight. [steed,
Who, ever as he saw him nigh succeed,

Gan cry aloud with horrible affright,
And shrieked out, a thin^r uncomefly for a
knight.

IX

But, when the Salvage saw his labour vaine
In following of him that fled so fast,
He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe
With speede unto the place, whereas he last
Had left that couple nere their utmost cast:
There he that knight full sorely bleeding found,
And eke the Ladie fearefully aghast,
Both for the perill of the present stound,
And also for the sharpnesse of her rankling
wound:

X

For though she were right glad so rid to bee
From that vile lozell which her late offended;
Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see.
And perill, by this salvage man pretended,
Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be de-
fended,
By reason that her knight was wounded sore:
Therefore her selfe she wholly recommended
To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft implore
To send her succour, being of all hope forloze.

XI

But the wyld man, contrarie to her feare,
Came to her creeping like a lawning hound,
And by rude tokens made to her appeare
His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound,
Kissing his hands, and crouching to the
ground:

For other language had he none, nor speech,
But a soft murmure and confused sound
Of senselesse words, which nature did him
teach [empeach].
T^e expresse his passions, which his reason did

XII

And, comming^e likewise to the wounded
knight,
When he beheld the streames of purple blood
Yet flowing fresh, as moved with the sight,
He made great mone after his salvage mood,
And, running streight into the thickest wood,
A certaine herbe from thence unto him
brought,
Whose vertue he by use well understood;
The iuyce whereof into his wound he wrought,
And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it
staunched thought.

XIII

Then taking up that Recreants shield and
speare,
Which earst he left, he signes unto them made

With him to wend unto his winning neare;
To which he easily did them perswade.
Farre in the forest, by a hollow glade [brode
Covered with mossie shrubs, which spreading
Did underneath them make a gloomy shade,
Where foot of living creature never trode,
Ne scarce wyld beasts durst come, there was
this wights abode.

XIV

Thether he brought these unacquainted guests,
To whom faire semblance, as he could, he
shewed
By signes, by lookes, and all his other gests;
But the bare ground with hoarie mosse
bestrowed
Must be their bed; their pillow was unsowed:
And the frutes of the Forrest was their feast;
For their baird Stuard neither plough'd nor
sowed,
Ne fed on flesh, ne ever of wyld beast
Did taste the bloud, obaying natures first
behest.

XV

Yet, howsoever base and meane it were,
They tooke it well, and thanked God for all,
Which had them freed from that deadly feare,
And sav'd from being to that caytive thrall.
Here they of force (as fortune now did fall)
Compelled were themselves awhile to rest,
Glad of that easement, though it were but
small;
That having there their wounds awhile redrest,
They mote the abler be to passe unto the rest.

XVI

During which tyme that wyld man did apply
His best endeavour and his daily paine
In seeking all the woods both farre and nye
For herbes to dresse their wounds; still seeming
faine
Which ought he did, that did their lykinggaine.
So as ere long he had that knightes wound
Requred well, and made him whole againe;
But that same Ladies hurt no herbe he found
Which could redresse, for it was inwardly
unsound.

XVII

Now when as Calepine was woxen strong,
Upon a day he cast abroad to wend,
To take the ayre and heare the thrushes song,
Unarm'd, as fearing neither foe nor frend,
And without sword his person to defend:
There him befell, unlooked for before,
An harl adventure with unhappie end,
A cruell Beare, the which an infant bore [gore.
Betwixt his bloodie jawes, besprinkled all with

XVIII

The litle babe did loudly srike and squall,
And all the woods with piteous plaints did fill,
As if his cry did meane for helpe to call
To Calepine, whose eares those shrieches shrill,
Percing his hart, with pities point did thrill;
That after him he ran with zealous haste
To rescue th' infant, ere he did him kill:
Whom though he saw now somewhat overpast,
Yet by the cry he follow'd, and pursewed fast.

XIX

Well then him chaunst his heavy armes to
want, [speed,
Whose burden mote empeach his needfull;
And hunder him from libertie to pant;
For having long time, as his daily weed, [need,
Them wont to weare, and wend on foot for
Now wanting them he felt himselfe so light,
That like an Hauke, which feeling her selfe
freed
From bels and jesses which did let her flight,
Him seem'd his feet did fly and in their speed
dehght.

XX

So well he sped him, that the wearie Beare
Ere long he overtooke and forst to stay;
And without weapon him assaying neare,
Compeld him soone the spoyle adowne to lay.
Wherewith the beast enrag'd to loose his pray
Upon him turned, and, with greedie force
And furie to be crossed in his way,
Gaping full wyde, did thinke without remorse
To be aveng'd on him and to devoure his corse.

XXI

But the bold knight no whit thereat dismayd,
But catching up in hand a ragged stone
Which lay thereby (so fortune him did ayde)
Upon him ran, and thrust it all attone
Into his gaping throte, that made him grone
And gaspe for breath, that he nigh choked was,
Being unable to digest that bone;
Ne could it upward come, nor downward passe,
Ne could he brooke the coldnesse of the stony
masse.

XXII

Whom when as he thus combred did behold,
Stryving in vaine that nigh his bowels brast,
He with him closd, and, laying mightie hold
Upon his throte, did gripe his gorge so fast,
That wanting breath him downe to ground he
cast;
And, then oppressing him with urgent paine,
Ere long enforst to breath his utmost blast,
Gnashing his cruell teeth at him in vaine,
And threatning his sharpe clawes, now wanting
powre to traine.

XXIII

Then tooke he up betwixt his armes twaine
The litle babe, sweet reliques of his pray;
Whom pitying to heare so sore complaine,
From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away,
And from his face the filth that did it ray;
And every litle limbe he searcht around,
And every part that under sweath-bands lay,
Least that the beasts sharpe teeth had any
wound
Made in his tender flesh; but whole them all
he found.

XXIV

So, having all his hands againe uptyde,
He with him thought backe to retorne againe;
But when he lookt about on every syde,
To weet which way were best to entertaine
To bring him to the place where he would fame,
He could no path nor tract of foot descry,
Ne by inquirie learne, nor ghesse by ayme;
For nought but woods and forrests farre and
nye, [eye,
That all about did close the compasse of his

XXV

Much was he then encombred, ne could tell
Which way to take? now West he went a-
while,
Then North, then neither, but as fortune tell:
So up and downe he wandred many a mile
With weary travell and uncertaine toile,
Yet nought the nearer to his journeyes end,
And evermore his lovely litle spoile
Crying for food did greatly him offend:
So all that day in wandring vainely he did
spend.

XXVI

At last, about the setting of the Sunne,
Him selfe out of the forest he did wynd,
And by good fortune the plaine champion
wonne:
Where, looking all about where he mote fynd
Some place of succour to content his mynd,
At length he heard under the forrests syde
A voice, that seemed of some woman kynd,
Which to her selfe lamenting loudly cryde,
And oft complayn'd of fate, and fortune oft
defyde.

XXVII

To whom approching, when as she perceived
A stranger wight in place, her plaint she
stayd,
As if she doubted to have bene deceived,
Or loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd:
Whom when as Calepine saw so dismayd,
He to her drew, and with faire blandishment
Her chearing up, thus gently to her sayd:

'What be you, wofull Dame, which thus lament,
And for what cause, declare; so mote ye not

XXVIII

To whom she thus: 'What need me, Sir, to tell

That which your selfe have earst aared so
A wofull dame ye have me termed well;
So much more wofull, as my wofull plight
Cannot redressed be by living wight!

'Nathlesse, (quoth he) 'if need doe not you bynd,

Doc it disclose to ease your grieved spright:
Oftimes it haps that sorrowes of the mynd
Find remedie unsought, which seeking cannot
synd.'

XXIX

Then thus began the lamentable Dame:
'Sith then ye needs will know the griefe I hoord,

I am th' unfortunate Matilde by name,
The wife of bold Sir Bruin, who is Lord
Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword
From a great Gyant, called Cormoraunt,
Whom he did overthrow by yonder foord;
And in three battailes did so deadly daunt,
That he dare not returne for all his daily
vaunt.

XXX

'So is my Lord now seiz'd of all the land,
As in his fee, with peaceable estate,
And quietly doth hold it in his hand,
Ne any dares with him for it debate.
And to these happie fortunes cruell fate
Hath joyn'd one evill, which doth overthrow
All these our joyes, and all our blisse abate;
And like in time to further ill to grow,
And all this land with endlesse losse to over-
flow.

XXXI

'For th' heavens, envying our prosperitie,
Have not vouchsaf't to graunt unto us twaine
The gladfull blessing of posteritie,
Which we might see after our selves remaine
In th' heritage of our unhappie paine:
So that for want of heires it to defend,
All is in time like to returne againe,
To that foule feend, who dayly doth attend
To leape into the same after our lives end

XXXII

'But most my Lord is grieved herewithall,
And makes exceeding mone, when he does thinke
That all this land unto his foe shall fall,
For which he long in vaine did sweate and
swinke,

That now the same he greatly doth forthinke.
Yet was it sayd, there should to him a sonne
Be gotten, not begotten; which should drinke
And dry up all the water which doth runne
In the next brooke, by whom that feend should
be fordonne.

XXXIII

'Well hop't he then, when this was prophesie,
That from his sides some noble chyld should
The which through fame should farre be magni-
fide,

And this proud gyant should with brave emprize
Quite overthrow; who now gynes to despise
The good Sir Bruin growing farre in yeares,
Who thinks from me his sorrow all doth rize.
Lo! this my cause of griefe to you appears;
For which I thus doe mourne, and poure forth
ceaselesse teares.'

XXXIV

Which when he heard, he inly touched was
With tender ruth for her unworthy griefe;
And, when life had devized of her case,
He gan in mind conceive a fit reliefe
For all her paine, if please her make the priefe;
And, having cheared her, thus said: 'Fairst
Dame,

In evils counsell is the comfort chiefe;
Which though I be not wise enough to frame,
Yet, as I well it meane, vouchsafe it without
blame.

XXXV

'If that the cause of this your languishment
Be lacke of children to supply your place,
Lo! how good fortune doth to you present
This little babe, of sweete and lovely face,
And spotlesse spirkt in which ye may enchace
Whatever formes ye list thereto apply,
Being now soft and fit them to embrace;
Whether ye list him traine in chevalry,
Or nurse up in lore of learn'd Philosophy.

XXXVI

'And, certes, it hath oftentimes bene scene,
That of the like, whose linage was unknowne,
More brave and noble knights have rayseed
bene
(As their victorious deedes have often shoven,
Being with fame through many Nations
blown.)
Then those which have bene dandled in the
Therefore some thought that those brave imps
were sown
Here by the Gods, and fed with heavenly sap,
That made them grow so hight t' all honorable
hap.'

XXXVII

The Ladie, hearkning to his sensefull speech,
Found nothing that he said unmeet nor
geason,
Having oft seene it tryde as he did teach :
Therefore inclyning to his goodly reason,
Agreeing well both with the place and season,
She gladly did of that same babe accept,
As of her owne by liverie and seisin ;
And, having over it a litle wept,
She bore it thence, and ever as her owne it
kept.

XXXVIII

Right glad was Calepine to be so rid
Of his young charge whereof he skilled
nought,
Ne she lesse glad ; for she so wisely did,
And with her husband under hand so
wrought,
That, when that infant unto him she brought,
She made him think it surely was his owne ;
And it in goodly thewes so well upbrought,
That it became a famous knight well knowne,

And did right noble deedes : the which els
where are showne.

XXXIX

But Calepine, now being left alone
Under the grenewoods side in sorie plight,
Withouten armes or steede to ride upon,
Or house to hide his head from heavens sight,
Albe that Dame, by all the meanes she might,
Him oft desired home with her to wend,
And offred him, his courtesie to requite,
Both horse and arnes and what so else to lend,
Yet he them all refusd, though thankt her as
a freind ;

XL

And, for exceeding grieve which inly grew
That he his love so lucklesse now had lost,
On the cold ground maugre himselfe he threw
For fell despight to be so sorely crosd ;
And there all night himselfe in anguish tost,
Vowing that never he in bed againe
His limbes would rest, ne lig in ease embost,
Till that his Ladies sight he mote attaine,
Or understand that she in safetie did remaine

CANTO V.

The salvage serves Serena well,
Till she Prince Arthure fynd ;
Who her, together with his Squire,
With th' Hermit leaves behynd.

I

O WHAT an easie thing is to descry
The gentle bloud, how ever it be wrapt
In sad misfortunes foule deformity
And wretched sorrowes, which have often hapt !
For howsoever it may grow mis-shapt,
Like this wyld man being undisciplynd, •
That to all vertue it may seeme unapt,
Yet will it shew some sparkes of gentle mynd.
And at the last breake forth in his owne proper
kynd.

II

That plainly may in this wyld man be red,
Who, though he were still in this desert wood,
Mongst salvage beasts both rudely borne and
bred,
Ne ever saw faire guise, ne learned good,
Yet shewd some token of his gentle blood
By gentle usage of that wretched Dame :
For certes he was borne of noble blood,
How ever by hard hap he hether came,
As ye may know when time shall be to tell the
same.

III

Who, when as now long time he lacked had
The good Sir Calepine, that farre was strайд,
Did wepe exceeding sorrowfull and sad,
As he of some misfortune were afraid ;
And, leaving there this Ladie all dismayd,
Went forth streightway into the Forrest wyde
To seeke if he perchance asleep were layd,
Or what so else were unto him betyde :
He sought him farre and neare, yet him no
where he spyde.

IV

Tho, backe returning to that sorie Dame,
He shewed semblant of exceeding mone
By speaking signes, as he them best could
frame,
Now wringing both his wretched hands in one,
Now beating his hard head upon a stone,
That ruth it was to see him so lament :
By which she well perceiving what was done,
Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments rent,
And beat her breast, and piteously her selfe
torment,

V

Upon the ground her selfe she fiercely threw,
 Regardless of her wounds yet bleeding rife,
 That with their bloud did all the flore imbrow,
 As if her breast, new launche with murtherous
 knife,
 Would straight dislodge the wretched wearie
 life. | lay;
 There she long groveling and deepe grooming
 As if her vitall powers were at strife
 With strong death, and leared their decay:
 Such were this Ladies pangs and dolorous
 assay.

VI

Whom when the Salvage saw so sore distrest,
 He reared her up from the bloudie ground,
 And sought by all the meanes that he could
 best
 Her to recure out of that stony s wound,
 And staunch the bleeding of her dreary wound:
 Yet nould she be recomforted for nought,
 Nor cease her sorrow and impatient stound,
 But day and night did vex her carefull
 thought, | wrought.
 And ever more and more her owne affliction

VII

At length, when as no hope of his retourn
 She saw now left, she cast to leave the place,
 And wend abroad, though feeble and forlorne,
 To seeke some comfort in that sorie case.
 His steede, now strong through rest so long a
 space,
 Well as she could she got, and did bedight;
 And being thereon mounted forth did pace
 Withouten guide her to conduct aright,
 Or gard her to defend from bold oppressors
 might.

VIII

Whom when her Host saw readie to depart,
 He would not suffer her alone to fare,
 But gan himselfe addresse to take her part.
 Those warlike armes which Calpeine whyleare
 Had left behind he gan cftsoones prepare,
 And put them all about himselfe unfit,
 His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare;
 But without sword upon his thigh to sit:
 Sir Calpeine himselfe away had hudden it.

IX

So forth they traveld, an uneven payre
 That mote to all men seeme an uncouth sight;
 A salvage man matcht with a Ladie fayre,
 That rather seem'd the conquest of his might,
 Gotten by spoyle then purchased aright:
 But he did her attend most carefully,
 And faithfully did serve both day and night

Withouten thought of shame or villeny,
 Ne ever shewed signe of foule disloyalty.

X

Upon a day, as on their way they went,
 It chaunst some furniture about her steed,
 To be disordred by some accident,
 Which to redresse she did th' assistance need
 Of this her groome; which he by signes did
 reede,
 And streight his combrous armes aside did lay
 Upon the ground withouten doubt or dreed;
 And in his homely wize began to assay
 T' amend what was amisse, and put in right
 aray.

XI

Bout which whilest he was busied thus hard,
 Lo! where a knight, together with his squire,
 All arm'd to point came ryding thetherward;
 Which seemed, by their portance and attire,
 To be two errant knights, that did inquire
 After adventures, where they mote them get.
 Those were to weet (if that ye it requere)
 Prince Arthur and young Timias, which met
 By straunge occasion that here needs forth be
 set.

XII

After that Timias had againe recured
 The favour of Belphebe (as ye heard)
 And of her grace did stand againe assured,
 To happie blisse he was full high uprear'd,
 Nether of envy nor of change afear'd:
 Though many foes did him maligue therefore,
 And with unjust detraction him did beard,
 Yet he himselfe so well and wisely bore,
 That in her soveraine lyking he dwelt evermore

XIII

But of them all which did his ruine seeke,
 Three mightie enemies did him most despight,
 Three mightie ones, and cruell minded eeke,
 That him not onely sought by open might
 To overthrow, but to supplant by slight:
 The first of them by name was calld Despetto,
 Exceeding all the rest in powre and hight;
 The second, not so strong but wise, Decetto;
 The third, nor strong nor wise, but spightfullest,
 Defetto.

XIV

Oftimes their sundry powres they did employ,
 And several deceipts, but all in vaine;
 For neither they by force could him destroy,
 Ne yet entrap in treasons subtil traine.
 Therefore, conspiring all together plaine,
 They did their counsels now in one compound:
 Where singled forces faile, conjoynd may gaine.

The Blatant Beast the fittest meanes they found
To worke his utter shame, and throughly him
confound.

XV

Upon a day, as they the time did waite,
When he did raunge the wood for salvage game,
They sent that Blatant Beast to be a baite
To draw him from his deare beloved dame
Unwares into the daunger of defaunc;
For well they wist that Squire to be so bold,
That no one beast in forrest, wyld or tame,
Met him in chase but he it challenge would,
And plucke the pray oftymes out of their greedy
hould.

XVI

The hardy boy, as they devised had,
Seeing the ugly Monster passing by,
Upon him set, of perill nought afraid,
Ne skilfull of the uncouth jeopardy;
And charged him so fierce and furiously,
That his great force unable to endure,
He forced was to turne from him and fly:
Yet ere he fled he with his tooth impure
Him heedlesse bit, the whiles he was thereof
secure.

XVII

Securely he did after him pursue,
Thinking by speed to overtake his flight;
Who through thicke woods and brakes and
briers him drew,
To weary him the more and waste his spight,
So that he now has almost spent his spight,
Till that at length unto a woody glade
He came, whose covert stopt his further sight:
There his three foes shrowded in guilefull shade
Out of their ambush broke, and gan him to
invade.

XVIII

Sharply they all attonce did him assaile,
Burning with inward rancour and despight,
And heaped strokes did round about him chaile
With so huge force, that seemed nothing might
Bears off their blows from percing thorough
quite:
Yet he them all so warily did ward,
That none of them in his soft flesh did bite:
And all the while his backe for best safeguard
He lent against a tree, that backward onset
bard.

XIX

Like a wyld Bull, that, being at a bay,
Is bayted of a mastiffe and a hound
And a curre-dog, that doe him sharpe assay
On every side, and beat about him round:
But most that curie, barking with bitter-sownd,
And creeping still behinde, doth him incoumber,
That in his chauffe he digs the trampled ground,

And threats his horns, and bellows like the
thunder:
So did that Squire his foes disperse and drive

XX

Him well beloved so; for his three foes
Sought to encompass him on every side,
And dangerously did round about enclose:
But most of all Defetto him annoyde,
Creeping behinde him still to have destroyde;
So did Decetto eke him circumvent;
But stout Despetto in his greater pryde
Did front him, face to face against him bent:
Yet he them all withstood, and often made
relent.

XXI

Till that at length, nigh tyrd with former
chace,
And weary now with carefull keeping ward,
He gan to shrinke and somewhat to give place,
Full like ere long to have escaped hard;
When as unwares he in the forrest heard
A trampling steede, that with his neighing fast
Did warne his rider be uppon his gard;
With noise whereof the Squire, now nigh
aghast,
Revived was, and sad dispaire away did cast.

XXII

Eftsoones he spide a Knight approaching
nye;
Who, seeing one in so great daunger set
Mongst many foes, him selfe did faster hie
To reskue him, and his weake part abet,
For pity so to see him overset:
Whom soone as his three enemies did vew,
They fled, and fast into the wood did get.
Him bootet not to thinke them to pursue,
The covert was so thicke that did no passage
shew.

XXIII

Then turning to that swaine him well he knew
To be his Timias, his owne true Squire;
Whereof exceeding glad he to him drew,
And, him embracing twixt his armes entire,
Him thus bespake: 'My liefie, my lifes desire,
Why have ye me alone thus long yleft?
Tell me what worlds despight, or heavens yre,
Hath you thus long away from me berett?
Where have ye all this while bin wandring,
where bene weft?'

XXIV

With that he sighed deepe for inward tyne:
To whom the Squire nought aunswerd againe,
But, shedding few soft teares from tender eyne,
His deare affect with silence did restraine,
And shut up all his plaint in privy paine,

There they awhile some gracious speachesspent,
As to them seemed fit time to entertaine;
After all which up to their steedes they went,
And forth together rode, a comely couplement.

XXV

So now they be arrived both in sight
Of this wyld man, whom they full busie found,
About the sad Serena things to dight,
With those brave armours lying on the ground,
That seem'd he spoile of some right well re-
nownd :

[stept
Which when that Squire beheld, he to them
Thinking to take them from that hylding
hound;
But he it seeing lightly to him lept,
And sternely with strong hand it from his
handling kept.

XXVI

Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly
looke,
And sparkling fire out of his furious eyne,
Him with his fist unwares on th' head he
strooke,

That made him down unto the earth enjine :
Whence soone upstarting much he gan repine,
And laying hand upon his wrathfull blade
Thought therewithall forthwith him to have
slaine ;

Who it perceiving hand upon him layd,
And greedily him griping his avengement
stayd.

XXVII

With that aloude the faire Serena cryde
Unto the Knight, them to dispart in twaine ;
Who to them stepping did them soone divide,
And did from further violence restraine,
Albe the wyld-man hardly would refrain.
Then gan the Prince of her for to demand
What and from whence she was, and by what
traine

She fell into that salvage villaines hand ?
And whether free with him she now were, or
in band ?

XXVIII

To whom she thus : ' I am, as now ye see,
The wretchedst Dame that lives this day on
ground ;

Who both in minde, the which most grieveth
And body have receiv'd a mortall wound, [me,
That hath me driven to this drey stound.
I was erwhile the love of Calepine ;
Who whether he alive be to be found,
Or by some deadly chaunce be done to pine
Since I him lately lost, uneach is to define.

XXX

' In salvage Forrest I him lost of late,
Where I had surely long ere this bene dead,
Or else remained in most wretched state,
Had not this wykle man in that wofull stead
Kept and delivered me from deadly dread.
In such a salvage wight, of brutish kynd,
Amongst wilde beastes in desert Forrests bred,
It is most straunge and wonderfull to fynd
So milde humanity and perfect gentle mynd.

XXXI

' Let me therefore this favour for him finde,
That ye will not your wrath upon him wreake,
Sith he cannot expresse his simple minde,
Ne yours conceive, ne but by tokens speake :
Small praise to prove your powre on wight so
weake, [swage,
With such faire words she did their heat as-
And the strong course of their displeasure
breake,
That they to pitty turnd their former rage,
And each sought to supply the office of her page.

XXXII

So having all things well about her dight,
She on her way cast forward to proceede,
And they her forth conducted, where they
might
Finde harbour fit to comfort her great neede ;
For now her wounds corruption gan to breed :
And eke this Squire, who likewise wounded was
Of that same Monster late, for lacke of heed
Now gan to faint, and further could not pas
Through feeblenesse, which all his limbes op-
pressed has.

XXXIII

So forth they rode together all in troupe
To seeke some place the which mote yeeld
some ease [droupe :
To these sicke twaine, that now began to
And all the way the Prince sought to appease
The bitter anguish of their sharpe disease
By all the courteous meanes he could invent ;
Somewhile with merry purpose, fit to please,
And otherwhile with good encouragement
To make them to endure the pains did them
torment.

XXXIII

Mongst which Serena did to him relate
The foule discourtesies and unknighly parts,
Which Turpine had unto her shewed late,
Without compassion of her cruell smarts :
Although Blandina did with all her arts
Him otherwise perswade all that she might,
Yet he of malice, without her desarts,

Not onely her excluded late at night,
But also trayterously did wound her weary
Knight.

XXXIV

Wherewith the Princesore moved there avoud
That soone as he returned backe againe,
He would avenge th' abuses of that proud
And shamefull Knight of whom she did com-
plaine.

This wize did they each other entertaîne
To passe the tedious travell of the way,
Till towards night they came unto a plaine,
By which a little Hermitage there lay,
F'r from all neighbourhood the which annoy
it may.

XXXV

And nigh thereto a little Chappell stooode,
Which being all with Yvy overspred
Deckt all the rooffe, and, shadowing the roote,
Seem'd like a grove faire braunched over-hed:
Therein the Hermite, which his life here led
In streight observaunce of religious vow,
Was wont his howres and holy things to bed;
And therein he likewise was praying now,
Whenas these Knights arriv'd, they wist not
where nor how.

XXXVI

They stayd not there, but streightway in did
pas:

Whom when the Hermite present saw in place,
From his devotion streight he troubled was;
Which breaking off he toward them did pace
With stayed steps and grave beseeching grace:
For well it seem'd that whilome he had bene
Some goodly person, and of gentle race,
That could his good to all; and well did
weene [scene.

How each to entertaîne with curt'sie well be-

XXXVII

And soothly it was sayd by common fame,
So long as age enabled him thereto,
That he had bene a man of mickle name,
Renowned much in armes and derring doe;
But being aged now, and weary to
Of warres delight and worlds contentious toyle,
The name of knighthood he did disavow;
And, hanging up his armes and warlike spoyle,
From all this worlds incombraunce did himselfe
assoyle.

XXXVIII

He thence them led into his Hermitage,
Letting their steedes to graze upon the greene,
Small was his house, and like a little cage,
For his owne turne, yet inly neate and clene,
Deckt with greene boughes and flowers gay
besene:

Therein he them full faire did entertaîne
Not with such forged showes, as fitter beene
For courting fooles that curtesies would faine,
But with entire affection and appearance
plaine.

XXXIX

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee
Did use his feeble body to sustaine,
The which full gladly they did take in gree,
Such as it was, ne did of waite complaine,
But being well suffiz'd them rested faine.
But fair Serene all night could take no rest,
Ne yet that gentle Squire, for grievous paine
Of their late woundes, the which the Blatant
Beast

Had given them, whose griefe through suf-
fraunce sore increast.

So all that night they past in great disease,
Till that the morning, bringing earely light
To guide mens labours, brought them also ease,
And some asswagement of their painefull plight.
Then up they rose, and gan them selves to dight
Unto their journey; but that Squire and Dame
So faint and feeble were, that they ne might
Endure to travell, nor one foote to frame:
Their hearts were sicke; their sides were sore,
their feete were lame.

XL

Therefore the Prince, whom great affaires in
mynd
Would not permit to mak^e there lenger stay,
Was forced there to leave them both behynd
In that good Hermits charge; whom he did
pray
To tend them well. So forth he went his way,
And with him eke the salvage, (that whyleare
Seeing his royall usage and array
Was greatly growne in love of that brave pere,)
Would needes depart; as shall declared be else-
where.

CANTO VI.

The Hermit heales both Squire and dame
Of their sore maladies :
He Turpine doth defeat, and shame
For his late villanies.

I

No wound, which warlike hand of enemy
Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore doth
light
As doth the poysonous sting, which infamy
Infixeth in the name of noble wight:
For by no art, nor any leaches might,
It ever can rectified be againe;
Ne all the skill, which that immortall spright
Of Podalyrius did in it retaine,
Can remedy such hurts: such hurts are hellish
paine.

II

Such were the wounds the which that Blatant
Beast
Made in the bodies of that Squire and Dame;
And, being such, were flow much more increase
For want of taking heede unto the same,
That now corrupt and curelesse they became:
Howbe that carefull Hermite did his best,
With many kindes of medicines meete, to
tame
The poysonous humour which did most infect
Their ranckling wounds, and every day them
duely drest.

III

For he right well in Leaches craft was seene;
And through the long experience of his dayes,
Which had in many fortunes tossed beene
And past through many perillous a-sayes,
He knew the diverse went of mortall wayes,
And in the mindes of men had great insight;
Which with sage counsell, when they went
astray,
He could enforme, and them reduce aright,
And all the passions heale which wound the
weaker spright.

IV

For whylome he had bene a doughty Knight,
As any one that lived in his daies,
And proved oft in many perillous fight,
Of which he grace and glory wonne alwaies,
And in all battels bore away the baies:
But being now attacht with timely age,
And weary of this worlds unquiet waies,

He tooke him selfe unto this Hermitage,
In which he liv'd alone, like carelesse bird in
cage.

V

One day, as he was searching of their
wounds,
He found that they had festred privily;
And ranckling inward with unruly stounds,
The inner parts now gan to putrify,
That quite they seem'd past helpe of surgery;
And rather needed to be disciplinde
With wholesome reede of sad sobriety,
To rule the stubborne rage of passion blinde:
Give salves to every sore, but counsell to the
minde.

VI

So, taking them apart into his cell,
He to that point fit speeches gan to frame,
As he the art of words knew wondrous well,
And eke could doe as well as say the same;
And thus he to them sayd: 'Faire daughter
Dame, [now lie
And you, faire Sonne, which here thus long
In piteous languor since ye hither came,
In vaine of me ye hope for remedie,
And I likewise in vaine doe salves to you
applie:

VII

'For in your selfe your onely helpe doth lie
To heale your selves, and must proceed alone
From your owne will to cure your maladie.
Who can him cure that will be cur'd of none?
If therefore health ye seeke, observe this one:
First learne your outward senses to refraine
From things that stirre up fraile affection;
Your eies, your eares, your tongue, your talk
restraine [containe.
From that they most affect, and in due termes

VIII

'For from those outward senses, ill affected,
The seede of all this evill first doth spring,
Which at the first, before it had infected,
Mote easie be suppress with little thing;
But being growen strong it forth doth bring
Sorrow, and anguish, and impatient paine,
In th' inner parts; and lastly, scattering

Contagious poyson close through every vaine,
It never rests till it have wrought his finall
bane.

IX

'For that beastes teeth, which wounded you
tofore,
Are so exceeding venomous and keene,
Made all of rusty yron rancelling sore,
That where they bite it booteth not to weene
With salve, or antidote, or other mene,
It ever to amend : ne marvaile ought,
For that same beast was bred of hellish strene,
And long in darksome Stygian den upbrought,
Begot of foule Echidna, as in bookes is
taught.

X

'Echidna is a Monster direfull dred,
Whom Gods doe hate, and heavens abhor to
see ;
So hideous is her shape, so huge her hed,
That even the hellish fiends affrighted bee
At sight thereof, and from her presence flee :
Yet did her face and former parts professe
A faire young Mayden, full of comely glee ;
But all her hinder parts did plaine expresse
A monstrous Dragon, full of fearefull ugliness.

XI

'To her the Gods, for her so dreadfull face,
In fearefull darknesse, furthest from the skie
And from the earth, appointed have her place
Mongst rocks and caves, where she enrold
doth lie
In hideous horreur and obscurity,
Wasting the strength of her immortall age :
There did Typhaon with her company ;
Cruell Typhaon, whose tempestuous rage
Makes th' heavens tremble oft, and him with
vowes asswage.

XII

'Of that commixtion they did then beget
This hellish Dog, that hight the Blatant
Beast ;
A wicked Monster, that his tongue doth whet
Gainst all, both good and bad, both most and
least,
And pours his poysonous gall forth to infest
The noblest wights with notable defame :
Ne ever Knight that bore so lofty creast,
Ne ever Lady of so honest name,
But he them spotted with reproch, or secrete
shame.

XIII

'In vaine therefore it were with medicine
To goe about to salve such kynd of sore,

That rather needes wise read and discipline,
Then outward salves that may augment it
more.'

'Aye me !' (sayd then Serena, sighing sore)
'What hope of helpe doth then for us remaine,
If that no ~~salves~~ may us to health restore ?'
'But sith we need good counsell,' (sayd the
swaine) [sustaine,
'Aread, good Sire, some counsell that may us

XIV

'The best' (sayd he) 'that I can you advize,
Is to avoide the occasion of the ill :
For when the cause, whence evill doth arise,
Removed is, th' effect surceaseth still. [will ;
Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your
Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight ;
Use scantied diet, and forbear your fill ;
Shun secresie, and talke in open sight :
So shall you soone repaire your present evill
plight.'

XV

Thus having sayd, his sickely patients
Did gladly hearken to his grave behest,
And kept so well his wise commandements,
That in short space their malady was ceast,
And eke the biting of that harmefull Beast
Was thoroughly heal'd. Tho when they did
perceave
Their wounds recur'd, and forces reinceast,
Of that good Hermite both they tooke their
leave, [leave :
And went both on their way, ne ech would other

XVI

But each the other vow'd t' accompany :
The Lady, for that she was much in dred,
Now left alone in great extremity ;
The Squire, for that he courteous was indeed,
Would not her leave alone in her great need.
So both together traveld, till they met
With a faire Mayden clad in mourning weed,
Upon a mangy jade unmeetely set,
And a lewd foole her leading thorough dry
and wet.

XVII

But by what meanes that shame to her
befell,
And how thereof her selfe she did acquite,
I must awhile forbear to you to tell ;
Till that, as comes by course. I doe recite
What fortune to the Briton Prince did lye,
Pursuing that proud Knight, the which
whileare
Wrought to Sir Calepine so foule despight ;
And eke his Lady, though she sickely were,
So lowly had abuse, as ye did lately heare.

XVIII

The Prince, according to the former token
Which faire Serene to him delivered had,
Pursu'd him streight; in mynd to bene ywro-
Of all the vile demaunce and usage bad, [ken
With which he had those two still bestad:
Ne wight with him on that adventure went,
But that wyld man; whom though he oft
forbad,

Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent,
Would he regrayned be from his attendement.

XIX

Arriving there, as did by chauce befall,
He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode,
Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall:
Where soft dismounting, like a weary lode,
Upon the ground with feeble feete he trode,
As he unable were for very neede
To move one foote, but there must make
abode:

The whiles the salvage man did take his steede,
And in some stable neare did set him up to
feede.

XX

Ere long to him a homely groomer there came,
That in rude wise him asked, what he was
That durst so boldly, without let or shame,
Into his Lords forbidden hall to passe?
To whom the Prince, him fawning to embase,
Myde answer made, he was an errant Knight,
The which was fall'n into this feeble case
Through many wounds, which lately he in
flight

Received had, and prayd to pittie his ill plight.

XXI

But he, the more outrageous and bold,
Sternely did bid him quickly thence avaunt,
Or deare aby; for-why his Lord of old
Did hate all errant Knights which there did
haunt,

Ne lodging would to any of them graunt;
And therefore lightly had him packe away,
Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt,
And therewithall rude hand on him did lay,
To thrust him out of dore doing his worst assay.

XXII

Which when the Salvage, coming now in
place,

Beheld, eftsounes he all enraged grew,
And, running streight upon that villaine base,
Like a fell Lion at him fiercely flew,
And with his teeth and nailes, in present vew,
Him rudely rent and all to peeces tore;
So miserably him all helpelesse slew,

That with the noise, whilst he did loudly rore,
The people of the house rose forth in great up-
rore,

XXIII

Who when on ground they saw their fellow
slaine, [by,
And that same Knight and Salvage standing
Upon them two they fell with might and
And on them layd so huge and horribly, [maine,
As if they would have slaine them presently:
But the bold Prince defended him so well,
And their assault withstood so mightily,
That, maugre all their might, he did repell
And beat them back, whilst many underneath
him fell.

XXIV

Yet he them still so sharply did pursew,
That few of them he left alive, which fled
Those evill tidings to their Lord to shew:
Who, hearing how his people badly sped,
Came forth in hast; where, when as with the
dead [Knight
He saw the ground all strow'd, and that same
And salvage with their bloud fresh steeming
red, [spight,
He woxe nigh mad with wrath and fell de-
And with reprochfull words him thus bespake
on light.

XXV

'Art thou he, traytor, that with treason vile
Hast slaine my men in this unmanly manner,
And now triumphest in the piteous spoile
Of these poore folk, whose soules with black
dishonor

And foule defame doe decke thy bloudy baner?
The meede whereof, shall shortly be thy shame,
And wretched end which still attendeth on her.'
With that him selfe to battell he did frame;
So did his forty yeomen, which there with him
came.

XXVI

With dreadfull force they all did him assaile,
And round about with boystrous strokes op-
• presse,
That on his shield did rattle like to haile
In a great tempest; that in such distresse
He wist not to which side him to addresse:
And evermore that craven cowerd Knight
Was at his backe with heartlesse heedinesse,
Wayting if he unwaies him murther might;
For cowardize doth still in villany delight.

XXVII

Whereof whenas the Prince was well aware,
He to him turnd with furious intent,
And him against his powre gan to prepare;
Like a fierce Bull, that being busie bent

To fight with many foes about him ment,
Feeling some curre behinde his heeles to bite,
Turnes him about with fell avengement:
So likewise turnde the Prince upon the Knight,
And layd at him amaine with all his will and
might.

XXVIII

Who, when he once his dreadfull strokes had
Durst not the furie of his force abyde, [tasted,
But turn'd abacke, and to retyre him hasted
Through the thicke prease, there thinking him
to hyde:

But, when the Prince had once him plainely
He foot by foot him followed alway,
Ne would him suffer once to shrinke asyde,
But joyning close huge lode at him did lay:
Who flying still did ward, and warding fly
away.

XXIX

But, when his foe he still so eager saw,
Unto his heeles, himselfe he did betake,
Hoping unto some refuge to withdraw:
Ne would the Prince him ever foot forsake
Where so he went, but after him did make.
He fled from roome to roome, from place to place,
Whylest every joynt for dread of death did
quake,
Still looking after him that did him chace,
That made him evermore increase his speedie
pace.

XXX

At last he up into the chamber came,
Whereas his love was sitting all alone,
Wayting what tydings of her folke became.
There did the Prince him overtake anone,
Crying in vaine to her him to bemoane;
And with his sword him on the head did smyte,
That to the ground he fell in senselesse swone:
Yet, whether thwart or flatly it did lyte.
The tempredd steele did not into his braynepum
byte.

XXXI

Which when the Ladie saw, with great af-
fright
She starting up began to shrieke aloud;
And with her garment covering him from sight,
Seem'd under her protection him to shroud;
And falling lowly at his feet her bowd
Upon her knee, intrating him for grace,
And often him besought, and prayd, and vowd,
That with the ruth of her so wretched case,
He stayd his second strooke, and did his hand
abase.

XXXII

Her weed she then withdrawing did him dis-
cover;
Who now come to himselfe yet would not rise,

But still did lie as dead, and quake, and quiver,
That even the Prince his basenesse did de-
spize;

And eke his Dame, him seeing in such guize,
Gan him recomfort and from ground to reare:
Who rising up at last in ghastly wize,
Like troubled ghost, did dreadfully appeare,
As one that had no life him left through for-
mer feare.

XXXIII

Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dismayd,
He for such basenesse shamefully him shent,
And with sharpe words did bitterly upbraid:
'Vile cowheard dogge! now doe I much repent,
That ever I this life unto thee lent,
Whereof thou, caytive, so unworthie art,
That both thy love, for lacke of hardiment,
And eke thy selfe, for want of manly hart,
And eke all knights hast shamed with this
knightlesse part.

XXXIV

'Yet further hast thou heaped shame to shame,
And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard
feare:

For first, it was to thee reprochfull blame
To erect this wicked custome, which I heare
Gainst errant Knights and Ladies thou dost
reare;
Whom when thou mayst thou dost of arms de-
Or of their upper garment hey weare;
Yet dost thou not with manhood, but with guile,
Maintaine this evil use, thy foes thereby to
foile.

XXXV

'And lastly, in approyance of thy wrong,
To shew such faintnesse and foule cowardize
Is greatest shame; for oft it falles, that strong
And valiant Knights doe rashly enterprize
Either for fame, or else for exercise,
A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight;
Yet have through prowesse and their brave
emprize
Gotten great worship in this worldes sight:
For greater force there needs to maintaine
wrong then right.

XXXVI

'Yet, since thy life unto this Ladie sayre
I given have, live in reproch and scorne,
Ne ever armes ne ever knighthood dare
Hence to professe; for shame is to adorne
With so brave badges one so basely borne:
But onely breath, sith that I did forgive.'
So having from his craven bodie torne
Those goodly armes, he them away did give,
And onely suffred him this wretched life to live.

XXXVII

There whilest he thus was setting things above,
Atwene that Ladie myld and recreant knight,
To whom his life he graunted for her love,
He gan bebinke him in what perilous plight
He had behynd him left that salvage wight
Amongst so many foes, whom sure he thought
By this quite slaine in so unequal fight:
Therefore descending backe in haste he sought
If yet he were alive, or to destruction brought.

XXXVIII

There he him found environed about [slaine,
With slaughtred bodies which his hand had
And laying yet afresh, with courage stout,
Upon the rest that did alive remaine;
Whom he likewise right sorely did constraine,
Like scattered sheepe, to seeke for safetie,
After he gotten had with busie paine
Some of their weapons which thereby did lie,
With which he layd about, and made them fast
to file.

XXXIX

Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage,
Approching to him neare, his hand he stayd,
And sought by making signes him to asswage:
Who them perceiving streight to him obeyd,
As to his Lord, and downe his weapons layd,
As if he long had to his hearts bene trayned,
Thence he him brought away, and up conveyd
Into the chamber, where that Dame remainyd
With her unworthy knight, who ill him enter-
tainyd.

XL

Whom when the Salvage saw from daunger
Sitting beside his Ladie there at ease, [free,
He well remembered that the same was hee,
Which lately sought his Lord for to displease:
Tho all in rage he on him streight did seaze,
As if he would in peeces him have rent:
And, were not that the Prince did him appeaze,
He had not left one limbe of him unrent:
But streight he held his hand at his com-
maundement.

XLI

Thus having all things well in peace ordayned,
The Prince himselfe there all that night did rest;

Where him Blandina sayrely entertayned
With all the courteous glee and goodly feast
The which for him she could imagine best:
For well she knew the wayes to win good will
Of every wight, that were not too infest;
And how to please the minds of good and ill,
Through tempering of her words and lookes by
wondrous skill.

XLII

Yet were her words and lookes but false and
fayned,
To some hid end to make more easie way,
Or to allure such fondlings whom she trayned
Into her trap unto their owne decay:
Thereto, when needed, she could weepe and
pray,
And when her listed she could fawne and flatter;
Now smyling smoothly, like to sommers day,
Now glooming sadly, so to cloke her matter;
Yet were her words but wynd, and all her teares
but water.

XLIII

Whether such grace were given her by kynd,
As women wont their guilefull wits to guyde,
Or learn'd the art to please, I doe not fynd:
This well I wote, that she so well applyde
Her pleasing tongue, that soone she pacifyde
The wrathfull Prince, and wrought her hus-
bands peace:
Who nathelesse, not therewith satisfyde,
His rancorous despight did not releasse,
Ne secretly from thought of fell revenge
surcasse:

XLIV

For all that night, the whyles the Prince did
rest
In carelesse couch, not weeting what was ment,
He watcht in close awayt with weapons prest,
Willing to worke his villenous intent
On him that had so shamefully him shent:
Yet durst he not for very cowardize
Effect the same, whylest all the night was
spent.
The morrow next the Prince did early rize,
And passed forth to follow his first enter-
prize.

CANTO VII.

Turpine is baffuld; his two knights
 Doe gaine their treasons meed :
 Fyre Mirabellaes punishment
 For Loves disdain decreed.

I

LIKE as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes
 In doing gentle deedes with franke delight,
 Even so the baser mind it selfe displays
 In cankerd malice and revengefull spight :
 For to maligne, t' envie, t' use shifting slight.
 Be arguments of a vile donghill mind,
 Which, what it dare not doe by open might,
 To worke by wicked treason wayes doth find,
 By such di-courteous deedes discovering his base
 kind.

II

That well appears in this discourteous knight,
 The coward Turpine, whereof now I treat ;
 Who notwithstanding that in forme fight
 He of the Prince his life received late,
 Yet in his mind, malicious and ingrate,
 He gan devise to be aveng'd anew
 For all that shame, which kindled inward hate :
 Therefore, so soone as he was out of view,
 Himselfe in hast he arm'd, and did him fast
 persew.

III

Well did he tract his steps as he did ryde,
 Yet would not neare approach in daungers eye,
 But kept aloofe for dread to be descryde.
 Untill sit time and place he mote espy.
 Where he mote worke him seath and villeny.
 At last he met two knights to him unknowne,
 The which were armed both agreeably,
 And both combynd, whatever chaunce were
 blowne
 Betwixt them to divide, and each to make his
 owne.

IV

To whom false Turpine comming courteously,
 To cloke the mischief which he inly ment,
 Gan to complaine of great discourtesie,
 Which a straunge knight, that neare afore him
 went,
 Had doen to him, and his deare Ladie shent :
 Which if they would afford him ayde at need
 For to avenge in time convenient,
 They should accomplish both a knightly deed,
 And for their paines obtaine of him a goodly
 meed.

V

The knights beleev'd that all he sayd was
 trew ;
 And being fresh and full of youthly spright,
 Were glad to heare of that adventure new,
 In which they mote make triall of their might
 Which never yet they had approv'd in fight,
 And eke desirous of the offered meed :
 Said then the one of them ; ' Where is that wight
 The which hath doen to thee this wrongfull deed.
 That we may it avenge, and punish him with
 speed ? '

VI

' Herides ' (said Turpine) ' there not farre afore
 With a wyld man soft footing by his syde ;
 That, if ye list to haste a litle more,
 Ye may him overtake in timelv tyde.'
 Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward pryde,
 And, ere that ltle while they ridden had,
 The gentle Prince not farre away they spyde,
 Ryding a softly pace with portance sad,
 Devizing of his love more then of daunger drad.

VII

Then one of them aloud unto him cryde,
 Bidding him turne againe, false traytour
 knight,
 Foule woman-wronger, for he him defyde.
 With that they both at once with equall spight
 Did bend their speares, and both with equall
 might
 Against him ran ; but th' one did misse his
 And being carried with his force forthright
 Glaunst swiftly by ; like to that heavenly
 sparke,
 Which glyding through the ayre lights all the
 heavens darke.

VIII

But th' other, aying better, did him smite
 Full in the shield with so impetuous powre,
 That all his launce in peeces shivered quite,
 And scattered all about fell on the floure :
 But the stout Prince, with much more steddly
 stowre,
 Full on his bever did him strike so sore,

That the cold steele, through piercing, did devowre

His vitall breath, and to the ground him bore,
Where still he bathed lay in his owne bloody gore.

IX

As when a cast of Faulcons make their flight
At an Herneshaw, that lyes aloft on wing,
The whyles they strike at him with heedlesse might,

The warie foule his bill doth backward wring;
On which the first, whose force her first doth bring,
Her selfe quite through the bodie doth engore.
And falleth downe to ground like senselesse
But th' other, not so swift as she before, [thing;
Fayles of her souse, and passing by doth hurt
no more.

X

By this the other, which was passed by,
Himselfe recovering was return'd to fight,
Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly,
He much was daunted with so dismall sight;
Yet, nought abating of his former spight,
Let drive at him with so malicious mynd,
As if he would have passed through him quight;
But the steele-head no stedlast hold could fynd,
But glauncing by deceiv'd him of that he desynd.

XI

Not so the Prince; for his well-learned speare
Tooke surer hould, and from his horses backe
Above a launces length him forth did beare,
And gainst the cold hard earth so sore him strake.

That all his bones in peeces nigh he brake.
Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed,
And to him leaping vengeance thought to take
Of him for all his former follies meed, [breed.
With flaming sword in hand his terror more to

XII

The fearfull wayne beholding death so nie,
Cryde out aloud for mercie, him to save;
In lieu whereof he would to him descrie
Great treason to him meant, his life to reave.
The Prince soone hearkned, and his life forgave.
Then thus said he: 'There is a straunger knight,
The which, for promise of great meed, us drave
To this attempt to wreake his hid despight,
For that himselfe thereto did want sufficient might.'

XIII

The Prince much mused at such villenie,
And said: 'Now sure ye well have earn'd
your meed;

For th' one is dead, and th' other soone shall die,
Unless to me thou hether bring with speed
The wretch that hyr'd you to this wicked deed.'
He glad of life, and willing eke to wreake
The guilt on him which did this mischiefe breed,

Swore by his sword, that neither day nor weeke
He would surceasse, but him where so he were
would seeke.

XIV

So up he rose, and forth streightway he went
Backe to the place where Turpine late he lore;
There he him found in great astonishment,
To see him so bedight with bloodie gore,
And grisly wounds that him appalled sore;
Yet thus at length he said: 'Ilow now, Sir knight,

What meaneth this which here I see before?
How fortuneth this foule uncomely plight,
So different from that which earst ye seem'd
in sight?'

XV

'Perdie,' (said he) 'in evill houre it fell,
That ever I for meed did undertake
So hard a taske as life for hyre to sell;
The which I earst adventur'd for your sake:
Witnessse the wounds, and this wyde bloudie lake,

Which ye may see yet all about me steeme.
Therefore now yee'd, as ye did promise make,
My due reward, the which right well I deeme
I yeamed have, that life so dearly did re-
deeme.'

XVI

'But where then is' (quoth he halfe wroth-
fully) [bought,
'Where is the honte, which therefore I
That cursed caytive, my strong enemy,
That recreant knight, whose hated life I
sought? [ought?'

And where is eke your friend which halfe it
'He lyes' (said he) 'upon the cold bare ground,
Slayne of that errant knight with whom he
fought;
Whom afterwards my selfe with many a wound
Did slay againe, as ye may see there in the
stound.'

XVII

Thereof false Turpin was full glad and faine,
And needs with him streight to the place
would ryde,

Where he himselfe might see his foeman alaine;
For else his feare could not be satisfide.
So as they rode he saw the way all dyde
With streames of bloud; which tracting by
the traile,
Ere long they came, whereas in evill tyde

That other swayne, like ashes deadly pale,
Lay in the lap of death, rewing his wretched
bale.

XVIII

Much did the Craven seeme to mone his
case,
That for his sake his deare life had forgone;
And, him bewayling with affection base,
Did counterfeit kind pittie where was none:
For wheres no courage, theres no ruth nor
mone.

Thence passing forth, not farre away he found
Whereas the Prince himselfe lay all alone,
Loosely displayd upon the grassie ground,
Possessed of sweete sleepe that luld him soft
in swound.

XIX

Wearie of travell in his former fight,
He there in shade himselfe had layd to rest,
Having his armes and warlike things undight,
Fearlesse of foes that mote his peace molest;
The whyles his salvage page, that wont be
prest,
Was wandred in the wood another way,
To doe some thing that seemed to him best;
The whyles his Lord in silver slomber lay,
Like to the Evening starre adorn'd with dewy
ray.

XX

Whom when as Turpin saw so loosely layd,
He weened well that he in deed was dead,
Like as that other knight to him had sayd;
But, when he nigh approacht, he mote aread
Plaine signes in him of life and livelihead:
Whereat, much griev'd against that stranger
knight,

That him too light of credence did mislead,
He would have backe rettyred from that sight,
That was to him on earth the deadliest despyght.

XXI

But that same knight would not once let
him start,
But plainly gan to him declare the case
Of all his mischief and late lucklesse smart;
How both he and his fellow there in place
Were vanquished, and put to foule disgrace;
And how that he, in lieu of life him lent,
Had vow'd unto the victor him to trace
And follow through the world where so he
went,
Till that he him delivered to his punishment.

XXII

He, therewith much abashed and affrayd,
Began to tremble every limbe and vaine;

And, softly whispering him, entyrelly prayd
T' advize him better then by such a traine
Him to betray unto a stranger swaine:
Yet rather counsell'd him contrarywise,
Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine,
To joyne with him and vengeance to devise,
Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping to
surprize.

XXIII

Nathelesse, for all his speech, the gentle
knight
Would not be tempted to such villenie,
Regarding more his faith which he did plight,
All were it to his mortall enemye,
Then to entrap him by false treacherie:
Great shame in lieges blood to be embrew'd!
Thus whylest they were debating diverslie,
The Salvage forth out of the wood issew'd
Backe to the place, whereas his Lord he sleep-
ing vew'd.

XXIV

There when he saw those two so neare him
stand, [bee]
He doubted much what mote their meaning
And throwing downe his load out of his hand,
(To weete, great store of Forrest frute which hee
Had for his food late gathered from the tree,)
Himselfe unto his weapon he betooke,
That was an oaken plant, which lately hee
Rent by the root; which he so sternely shooke,
That like an hazell wand it quivered and
quooke.

XXV

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde
The traytour Turpin with that other knight,
He started up; and snatching neare his syde
His trustie sword, the servant of his might,
Like a fell Lyon leaped to him light,
And his left hand upon his collar layd.
Therewith the cowheard, denc'd with affright,
Fell flat to ground, ne word unto him sayd,
But, holding up his hands, with silence mercie
prayd.

XXVI

But he so full of indignation was,
That to his prayer nought he would incline,
But, as he lay upon the humbled gras,
His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe
Of servile yoke, that nobler harts repine:
Then, letting him arise like abject thrall,
He gan to him object his baynous crime,
And to revile, and rate, and recreant call,
And lastly to despoyle of knightly bannerall.

XXVII

And after all, for greater infamie,
He by the heeles him hung upon a tree,

And baffuld so, that all which passed by
The picture of his punishment might see,
And by the like ensample warned bee,
How ever they through treason doe trespassse.
But turne we now backe to that Ladie free,
Whom late we left ryding upon an Asse,
Led by a Carle and foole which by her side did
passe.

XXVIII

She was a Ladie of great dignitie,
And lifted up to honorable place,
Famous through all the land of Faerie:
Though of meane parentage and kindred base,
Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of natures grace,
That all men did her person much admire,
And praise the feature of her goodly face;
The beames whereof did kindle lovely fire
In th' harts of many a knight, and many a
gentle squire.

XXIX

But she thereof grew proud and insolent,
That none she worthie thought to be her fere,
But scordd them all that love unto her ment:
Yet was she lov'd of many a worthy pere:
Unworthy she to be lov'd so dere,
That could not weigh of worthinesse aight;
For beautie is more glorious bright and clere,
The more it is admir'd of many a wight,
And noblest she that served is of noblest
knight.

XXX

But this coy Damzell thought contrariwise,
That such proud looks would make her prayesd
more;
And that, the more she did all love despize,
The more would wretched lovers her adore.
What cared she who sighed for her sore,
Or who did wayle or watch the wearie night?
Let them that list their lucklesse lot deplore,
She was borne free, not bound to any wight,
And so would ever live, and love her owne de-
light.

XXXI

Through such her stubborne stiffnesse and hard
Many a wretch for want of remedie [hart,
Did languish long in life-consuming smart,
And at the last through dreary dolour die:
Whylest she, the Ladie of her libertie,
Did boast her beautie had such sovaine might,
That with the orely twinkle of her eye
She could or save or spill whom she would hight:
What could the Gods doe more, but doe it more
aright?

XXXII

But loe! the Gods, that mortall follies vew,
Did worthily revenge this maydens pride;

And, nought regarding her so goodly hew,
Did laugh at her that many did deride,
Whilest she did weepe, of no man mercifide:
For on a day, when Cupid kept his court,
As he is wont at each Saint Valentide,
Unto the which all lovers doe resort,
That of their loves successe they there may
make report;

XXXIII

It fortun'd then, that when the roules were
red [fyled,
In which the names of all loves folke were
That many there were mis-ing, which were ded,
Or kept in bands, or from their loves exyled,
Or by some other violence despoyled:
Which when as Cupid heard, he waxed wroth;
And doubting to be wronged or beguyled,
He bad his eyes to be unblindfold both,
That he might see his men, and muster them
by oth.

XXXIV

Then found he many missing of his crew,
Which wont doe suit and service to his might,
Of whom what was becomen no man knew.
Therefore a June was unpaneld streight
T' enquire of them, whether by force, or sleight,
Or then owne guilt, they were away conveyd?
To whom foule Infame and fell Despight
Gave evidence, that they were all betrayd
And murthered cruelly by a rebellious Mayd.

XXXV

Fayre Mirabella was her name, whereby
Of ad those cryme she there indited was:
All which when Cupid heard, he by and by
In great displeasure wild a Capias
Should issue forth, t' attach that scornfull
lasse.

The warrant straight was made, and there-
withall
A Bayleffe-erant forth in post did passe,
Whom they by name there Portamore did call;
He which doth summon lovers to loves judge-
ment hall

XXXVI

The damzell was attacht, and shortly brought
Unto the barre whereas she was arrayned;
But she theretoould plead, nor answer ought,
Even for stubborne pride which her re-strayned.
So judgement past, as is by law ordayned
In cases like; which when at last she saw,
Her stubborne hart, which love before dis-
dained,
Gan stoupe; and, falling downe with humble
awe,
Cryde mercie, to abate the extremitie of law.

XXXVII

The sonne of Venus, who is myld by kynd
But where he is provokt with peevishnesse,
Unto her prayers piteously enclynd,
And did the rigour of his doome repressse;
Yet not so freely, but that nathelasse
He unto her a penance did impose,
Which was, that through this worlds wyde
wildernes

She wander should in companie of those,
Till she had sav'd so many loves as she did lose.

XXXVIII

So now she had bene wandering two whole
ycares

Throughout the world in this uncomely case,
Wasting her goodly hew in heaveie teares,
And her good dayes in dolorous disgrace:
Yet had she not in all these two ycares space
Sav'd but two, yet in two ycares before,
Through her spiteous pride, whilst love
lackt place,

She had destroyed two and twenty more.
Aie me! how could her love make half amends
therefore?

XXXIX

And now she was upon the weary way,
When as the gentle Squire, with faire Serene,
Met her in such misseeming foule array;
The whiles that mighty man did her demean
With all the evill terme, and cruell meane
That he could make: And ecke that angry boole
Which follow'd her, with cursed hands uncleane
Whipping her horse, did with his smarting tooles
Oft whip her dainty selfe, and much augment
her doole.

XL

Ne ought it mote avails her to entreat
The one or th' other better her to use;
For both so wilfull were and obstinate
That all her piteous plaint they did refuse.
And rather did the more her beate and bruse:
But most the former villaine, which did lead
Her tyeling jade, was bent her to abuse;
Who, though she were with wearinesse nigh
dead,
Yet would not let her lye, nor rest a little stead.

XLI

For he was sterne and terrible by nature,
And ecke of person huge and hideous,
Exceeding much the measure of mans stature,
And rather like a Gyant monstrous:
For sooth he was descended of the hous
Of those old Gyants, which did warres darraigne
Against the heaven in order battailous.

And sib to great Orgolio, which was slaine
By Arthure, when as Unas Knight he did
maintaine.

XLII

His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery cies,
Like two great Beacons, glared bright and wyde,
Glauncing askew, as if his enemies
He scorned in his overweening pryde;
And stalking stately, like a Crane, did stryde
At every step upon the tiptoes hig;
And, all the way he went, on every syde
He gaz'd about and stared horrible,
As if he with his lookes would all men terrifie.

XLIII

He wore no armour, ne for none did care.
As no whitt dreading any living wight;
But in a Jacket, quilted richly rare
Upon checklatten, he was strangely dight;
And on his head a roll of linnen plight,
Like to the Mores of Malaber, he wore,
With which his locks, as blacke as pitchy night,
Were bound about and voyded from before;
And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

XLIV

This was Disdaine, who led that Ladies horse
Through thick and thin, through mountains
and through plains,
Compelling her, wher she would not, by force,
Haling her palfrey by the hempen runes:
But that same foule, which most increast her
paines,
Was Scorne; who having in his hand a whip,
Her therewith yirks; and still, when she com-
plaines,
The more he laughs, and does her closely quip.
To see her sore lament and bite her tender lip.

XLV

Whose cruell handling when that Squire be-
hekl,
And saw those villaines her so vildely use,
His gentle heart with indignation sweld,
And could no lenger beare so great abuse
As such a Lady so to beate and bruse;
But, to himstepping, such a stroke him lent,
That forst him th' halter from his hand to loose,
And maugre all his might backe to relent:
Else had he surely there bene slaine, or fowly
shent.

XLVI

The villaine, wroth for greeting him so sore,
Gathered him selfe together soone againe,
And with his yron batton which he bore
Let drive at him so dreadfully amaine,

That for his safety he did him constraîne
To give him ground, and shift to every side,
Rather then once his burden to sustaine:
For bootlesse thing him seemed to abide
So mighty blowes, or prove the puissance of
his pride.

XLVII

Like as a Mastiffe having at a bay
A salvage Bull, whose cruell hornes doe threat
Desperate daunger, if he them assay,
Traceth his ground, and round about doth beat,
To spy where he may some advauntage get,
The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly rore;
So did the Squire, the whiles the Carle did fret
And fume in his disdaine full mynd the more,
And oftentimes by Turmagant and Mahound
swore.

XLVIII

Nathelesse so sharply still he him pursewd,
That at advantage him at last he took,
When his foote slipt, (that slip he dearly
rewd)
And with his yron club to ground him strooke:
Where still he lay, ne out of swoone awooke,
Till heavy hand the Carle upon him layd,
And bound him fast: Tho, when he up did looke

And saw him selfe captiv'd, he was dismayd,
Ne powre had to withstand, ne hope of any
ayd.

XLIX

Then up he made him rise, and forward fare,
Led in a rope which both his hands did bynd;
Ne ought that foole for pittie did him spare,
But with his whip, him following behynd,
Him often scourg'd, and forst his feete to fynd:
And other-whiles with bitter mockes and mowes
He would him scorne, that to his gentle mynd
Was much more grievous then the others
blowes:
Wounds sharply wound, but greatest griefe of
scorning growes.

L

The faire Serena, when she saw him fall
Under that villaines club, then surely thought
That slaine he was, or made a wretched thrall,
And fled away with all the speede she mought,
To seeke for safety; which long time she sought,
And past through many perils by the way,
Ere she againe to Calepine was brought:
The which discourse as now I must delay,
Till Mirabellæ fortunes I doe further say.

CANTO VIII.

Prince Arthure overcomes Disdaine;
Quittes Mirabell from dreed:
Serena, found of Salvages,
By Calepine is freed.

I

Ye gentle Ladies, in whose soveraine powre
Love hath the glory of his kingdome left,
And th' hearts of men, as your eternall dowe,
In yron chains of liberty bereft,
Delivered hath into your hands by gift,
Be well aware how ye the same doe use,
That pride doe not to tyranny you lift;
Least, if men you of cruelty accuse,
He from you take that chiefedome which ye doe
abuse.

II

And as ye soft and tender are by kynde,
Adorn'd with goodly gifts of beauties grace,
So be ye soft and tender eke in mynde;
But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace,
That all your other praises will deface,
And from you turne the love of men to hate:
Ensamble take of Mirabellæ case,
Who from the high degree of happy state
Fell into wretched woes, which she repented
late.

III

Who after thraldome of the gentle Squire,
Which she beheld with lamentable eye,
Was touch'd with compassion entire,
And much lamented his calamity,
That for her sake fell into misery;
Which bootied nought for prayers nor for threat
To hope for to release or mollify,
For aye the more that she did them entreat,
The more they him misust, and cruelly did
beat.

IV

So as they forward on their way did pas,
Him still reviling and afflicting sore,
They met Prince Arthure with Sir Enias,
(That was that courteous Knight, whom he
before
Having subdew'd yet did to life restore;
To whom as they approacht, they gan augment
Their cruelty, and him to punish more,
Scourging and haling him more vehement;
As if it them should grieve to see his punishment.

V

The Squire him selfe, when as he saw his Lord
The witness of his wretchednesse in place,
Was much asham'd that with an hempen cord
He like a dog was led in captive case,
And did his head for bashfulness abase,
As loth to see or to be seene at all:
Shame would be hid. But whenas Enias
Beheld two such, of two such villaines thrall,
His manly mynde was much emmoued there-
withall;

VI

And to the Prince thus sayd: 'See you, Sir
Knight,
The greatest shame that ever eye yet saw,
Yond Lady and her Squire with foule despight
Abuse, against all reason and all law,
Without regard of pitty or of awe?
See, how they doe that Squire beat and reuile!
See, how they doe the Lady hale and draw!
But, if ye please to lend me leave awhile,
I will them soone acquite, and both of blame
assoile.'

VII

The Prince assented; and then he, streight-
way
Dismounting light, his shield about him threw,
With which approaching thus he gan to say:
'Abide, ye captive trechetours untrew,
That haue with treason thralld unto you
These two, unworthy of your wretched bands,
And now your crime with cruelty pursew!
Abide, and from them lay your loathly hands,
Or else abide the death that hard before you
stands.'

VIII

The villaine stayd not answer to invent,
But with his yron club preparing way,
His mindes sad message backe unto him sent;
The which descended with such dreadfull sway,
That seemed nought the course thereof could
stay,
No more then lightening from the lofty sky:
Ne list the Knight the powre thereof assay,
Whose doome was death; but, lightly slipping
by,
Unwares defrauded his intended destiny:

IX

And, to requite him with the like againe,
With his sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew,
And strooke so strongly, that the Carle with
paine
Saved him selfe but that he there him slew;
Yet sav'd not so, but that the blood it drew,
And gave his foe good hope of victory:
Who therewith fleht upon him set anew,

And with the second stroke thought certainly
To haue supplyde the first, and paid the usury.

X

But Fortune aunswerd not unto his call;
For, as his hand was heaved up on high,
The villaine met him in the middle fall,
And with his club bet backe his brondyr on
bright
So forcibly, that with his owne hands might,
Rebeaten backe upon himselfe againe,
He driven was to ground in selfe despight;
From whence ere he recovery could gaine,
He in his necke had set his foote with fell dis-
daine.

XI

With that the foole, which did that end awayte,
Came running in; and, whilst on ground he
lay,
Laide heavy hands on him and held so straye,
That downe he kept him with his scornfull
sway,
So as he could not weld him any way:
The whyles that other villaine went about
Him to haue bound and thralld without delay;
The whyles the foole did him reuile and flout,
Threatning to yoke them two and tame their
corage stout.

XII

As when a sturdy ploughman with his hynde
By strength haue overthrowne a stubborne
steare, [bynde,
They downe him hold, and fast with coris do
Till they him force the buxome yoke to beare:
So did these two this Knight oft tug and teare.
Which when the Prince beheld, there standing
by,
He left his lofty steede to aide him neare;
And, buckling soone him selfe, gan fiercely fly
Upon that Carle to save his friend from
jeopardy.

XIII

The villaine, leaving him unto his mate
To be captiv'd and handled as he list,
Himselfe addrest unto this new debate,
And with his club him all about so blist,
That he which way to turne him scarcely wist:
Sometimes aloft he layd, sometimes alow,
Now here, now there, and oft him neare he
mist;
So doubtfully, that hardly one could know
Whether more wary were to give or ward the
blow.

XIV

But yet the Prince so well enured was
With such huge strokes, approved oft in fight,

That way to them he gave forth right to pas;
Ne would endure the daunger of their might,
But wayt advantage when they downe did
light.

At last the caytive, after long discourse,
When all his strokes he saw a^uoyded quite,
Resolved in one t^e assemble all his force,
And make one end of him without ruth or re-
morse.

XV

His dreadfull hand he heaved up aloft,
And with his dreadfull instrument of yre
Thought sure have pownded him to powder
soft.

Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre:
But Fortune did not with his will conspire;
For, ere his stroke attayned his intent,
The noble childe, preventing his desire,
Under his club with wary boldnesse went,
And smote him on the knee that never yet was
bent.

XVI

It never yet was bent, ne bent it now,
Albe the stroke so strong and pussant were,
That seem'd a marb'd pillour it could bow;
But all that leg, which did his body beare,
It crackt throughout, (yet did no bloud ap-
peare.)

So as it was unable to support
So huge a burden on such broken geare,
But fell to ground, like to a lumpe of durt:
Whence he assayd to rise, but could not for his
hurt.

XVII

Eftsoones the Prince to him full nimble stopt,
And least he should recover foote againe,
His head meant from his shoulders to have
swept.

Which when the Lady saw, she cryde amaine,
'Stay, stay, Sir Knight! for love of God
abstaine

From that unwares ye weettlesse doe intend;
Slay not that Carle, though worthy to be
slaine,

For more on him doth then him selfe depend:
My life will by his death have lamentable end.

XVIII

He staide his hand according her desire,
Yet nathemore him suffred to arise;
But, still suppressing, gan of her inquire,
What meaning mote those uncouth words
comprize,
That in that villaine health her safety lies;
That, were no might in man, nor heart in
Knights,

Which durst her dreaded reskue enterprize,
Yet heavens them selves, that favour feeble
rights,
Would for it selfe redresse, and punish such
despights.

XIX

Then bursting forth in teares, which gushed
fast

Like many water streames, awhile she stayd;
Till the sharpe passion being overpast,
Her tongue to her restord, then thus she sayd:
'Nor heavens, nor men, can me, most wretched
mayd.

Deliver from the doome of my desert,
The which the God of love hath on me layd,
And damned to endure this dretfull smart,
For penance of my proud and hard rebellious
han!

XX

'In prime of youthly yeares, when first the
flowre

Of beauty gan to bud, and bloosme delight,
And Nature me endu'd with plenteous dowre
Of all her gifts, that please each living sight,
I was belov'd of many a gentle Knight,
And suet and sought with all the service dew:
Full many a one for me deepe ground and
sight,

And to the dore of death for sorrow drew,
Complaining out on me that would not on
them rew.

XXI

'But let them love that list, or live or die,
Me list not die for any lovers doole;
Ne list me leave my loved libertie
To pittie him that list to play the foole;
To love my selfe I learned had in schoole.
Thus I triumphed long in lovers paine,
And, sitting carelesse on the scornors stoole,
Did laugh at those that did lament and
plaine;

But all is now repayd with interest againe.

XXII

'For loe! the winged God that woundeth
harts

Cause me be called to accompt therefore;
And for revengement of those wrongfull
smarts,

Which I to others did inflict afore,
Addeem'd me to endure this penance sore;
That in this wize, and this unmeete array,
With these two lewd companions, and no more,
Disdaine and Scorne, I through the world
should stray,

Till I have sav'd so many as I earst did slay.'

XXIII

'Certes,' (sayd then the Prince) 'the God is
just,
That taketh vengeance of his peoples spoile;
For were no law in love, but all that lust
Might them oppresse, and painfully turmoile,
His kingdome would continue but a while.
But tell me, Lady, wherefore doe you beare
This bottle thus before you with such toile,
And eeke this wallet at your backe arreare,
That for these Carles to carry much more
comely were?'

XXIV

'Here in this bottle' (sayd the sory Mayd)
'I put the tears of my contrition,
Till to the brim I have it full defrayd:
And in this bag, which I behude me don,
I put repentance for things past and gon.
Yet is the bottle leake, and bag so torne,
That all which I put in fals out anon,
And is behude me trodden downe of Scorne.
Who mocketh all my paine, and laughs the
more I mourn.'

XXV

The Infant hearkned wisely to her tale,
And wondred much at Cupid-judgment wise,
That could so meekly make proud hearts
avale,
And wreake him selfe on them that him despise.
Then suffred he Disdaine up to arise,
Who was not able up him selfe to reare,
By meanes his leg, through his late luckelesse
prise,
Was crackt in twaine, but by his foolish feare
Was holpen up, who him supported standing
neare.

XXVI

But being up he lookt againe aloft,
As if he never had received fall;
And with sterne eye-browes stared at him oft,
As if he would have daunted him withall:
And standing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall,
Downe on his golden fete he often gazed,
As if such pride the other could apall;
Who was so far from being ought amazed,
That he his lookes despised, and his boast
dispraizd.

XXVII

Then turning backe unto that captive thrall,
Who all this while stood there beside them
bound,
Unwilling to be knowne or seene at all,
He from those bands weend him to have un-
wound;

But when approaching neare he plainly found
It was his owne true groome, the gentle Squire,
He thereat wext exceedingly astound,
And him did oft embrace, and oft admire,
Ne could with seeing satisfie his great desire.

XXVIII

Meane-while the Salvage man, when he be-
held [Knight,
That huge great foole oppressing th' other
Whom with his weight unweldy downe he
held,
He flew upon him like a greedy kight
Unto some carrion offered to his sight;
And, downe him plucking, with his nayles and
teeth
Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch, and bite;
And, from him taking his owne whip, therewith
So sore him scourgeth that the bloud downe
followeth.

XXIX

And sure I weene, had not the Ladies cry
Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to stay,
He would with whipping him have done to
dye;
But being cheekt he did abstaine streightway,
And let him rise. Then thus the Prince gan
say:
'Now, Lady, sith your fortunes thus dispose,
That if ye list have liberty ye may;
Unto your selfe I freely leave to chose,
Whether I shall you leave, or from these vil-
laines lose.'

XXX

'Ah! nay, Sir Knight,' (said she) 'it may
not be,
But that I needes must by all meanes fulfill
This penance, which enjoyned is to me,
Least unto me betide a greater ill;
Yet no lesse thanks to you for our good will.'
So humbly taking leave she turnd aside;
But Arthure with the rest went onward still
On his first quest, in which did him betide
A great adventure, which did him from them
devide.

XXXI

But first it falleth me by course to tell
Of faire Serena; who, as earst you heard,
When first the gentle Squire at variance fell
With those two Carles, fled fast away, afeard
Of villany to be to her inferd:
So flesh the image of her former dread.
Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeard,
That every foote did tremble which did tread,
And every body two, and two she foure did
read.

XXXII

Through hills and dales, through bushes and
through brakes,
Long thus she fled, till that at last she thought
Her selfe now past the perill of her feares:
Then looking round about, and seeing nought
Which doubt of daunger to her offer mought,
She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine;
And, sitting downe, her selfe awhile bethought
Of her long travell and tummyling paine;
And often did of love, and of lucke complaine.

XXXIII

And evermore she blamed Calepine,
The good Sir Calepine, her owne true Knight,
As th' onely Author of her wofull time;
For being of his love to her so light,
As her to leave in such a piteous plight:
Yet never Turtle truer to his make,
Then he was true to his Lady bright;
Who all this while endured for her sake
Great perill of his life, and restlesse paines did
take.

XXXIV

Tho when as all her plaints she had displayd,
And well disburdened her engrieved brest,
Upon the grasse her selfe adowne she layd;
Where, being tyrd with travell, and opprest
With sorrow, she betooke her selfe to rest:
There whilst in Morpheus bosome safe she lay,
Fearelesse of ought that mote her peace molest,
False Fortune did her safety betray
Unto a strange mischaunce that menac'd her
decay.

XXXV

In these wyld deserts where she now abode,
There dwelt a salvage nation, which did live
Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly rode
Into their neighbours borders; ne did give
Them selves any trade, (as for to drive
The painefull plough, or cattell for to breed,
Or by adventrous marchandize to thrive,)
But on the labours of poore men to feed,
And serve their owne necessities with others
need.

XXXVI

Thereto they use one most accursed order,
To eate the flesh of men whom they mote fynde,
And straungers to devour, which on their
border
Were brought by error or by wreckfull wynde;
A monstrous cruelty gainst course of kynde!
They, towards evening wandering every way
To seeke for booty, came by fortune blynde
Whereas this Lady like a sheepe astray,
Now drowned in the depth of sleepe all fearelesse
lay.

XXXVII

Soone as they spide her, Lord! what gladfull
glee
They made amongst them selves; but when
her face
Like the faire yvory shining they did see,
Each gan his fellow solace and embrace
For joy of such good hap by heavenly grace.
Then gan they to devise what course to take;
Whether to slay her there upon the place,
Or suffer her out of her sleepe to wake,
And then her eate at once, or many meales to
make.

XXXVIII

The best advizement was, of bad, to let her
Sleepe out her fill without encomberment;
For sleepe, they sayd, would make her battill
better:
Then when she wakt they all gave one consent
That, since by grace of God she there was sent,
Unto their God they would her sacrifice,
Whose share, her guiltlesse bloud, they would
present;
But of her dainty flesh they did devise
To make a common feast, and feed with gurn-
mandize.

XXXIX

So round about her they them selves did place
Upon the grasse, and diversely dispose | space:
As each thought best to spend the lingring
Some with their eyes the daintiest morsels chose;
Some praise her paps; some praise her lips and
nose;
Some whet their knives, and strip their elboes
bare:
The Priest him selfe a garland doth compose
Of finest flowers, and with full busie care
His bloody vessels wash, and holy fire prepare.

XL

The Damzell wakes; then all at once upstart,
And round about her flocke, like many flies,
Whooping and hallowing on every part,
As if they would have rent the brassen skies,
Which when she sees with ghastly grievell eies,
Her heart does quake, and deadly pallid hew
Benumbes her cheekes: Then out aloud she
cries,
Where none is nigh to heare that will her rew,
And rends her golden locks, and snowy breasts
embrew.

XLI

But all bootes not; they hands upon her lay:
And first they spoile her of her jewels deare,
And afterwards of all her rich array;
The which amongst them they in peeces tear,

And of the pray each one a part doth beare.
Now being naked, to their sordid eyes
The goodly treasures of nature appeare :
Which as they view with lustfull fantasyes,
Each wisheth to him selfe, and to the rest
envyes :—

XLII

Her yvorie neck ; her alabaster brest ;
Her paps, which like white silken pillowes were
For love in soft delight thereon to rest ;
Her tender sides : her bellie white and clere,
Which like an Altar did it selfe upere
To offer sacrifice divine thereon ;
Her goodly thighes, whose glorie did appeare
Like a triumphall Arch, and thereupon
The spoiles of Princes hang'd which were in
battel won.

XLIII

Those daintie parts, the dearlings of delight,
Which mote not be prophand of common
eyes,
Those villains view'd with loose lascivious sight,
And closely tempted with their craftie spies ;
And some of them gan mongst themselves
devise

Thereof by force to take their beastly pleasure :
But them the Priest rebuking did advize
To dare not to pollute so sacred treasure
Vow'd to the gods : religion held even theeves
in measure.

XLIV

So, being stayd, they her from thence di-
rected
Unto a litle grove not farre a-ye,
In which an altar shortly they erected
To slay her on. And now the Eventyde
His brode black wings had through the heavens
wyde

By this dispred, that was the tyme ordayned
For such a dismall deed, their guilt to hyde :
Of few greene turfes an altar soone they fayned,
And deckt it all with flowres which they nigh
hand obtayned.

XLV

Tho, when as all things readie were aright,
The Damzell was before the altar set,
Being already dead with fearefull fright :
To whom the Priest with naked armes full net
Approching nigh, and murderous knife well
whet,
Gan mutter close a certaine secret charme,
With other divelish ceremonies met :
Which doen, he gan aloft t'advance his arme,
Whereat they shouted all, and made a loud
alarme.

XLVI

Then gan the bagpipes and the hornes to
shrill
And shriek aloud, that, with the people
Confused, did the ayre with terror fill,
And made the good to tremble at the noyce :
The whyles she wayld, the more they did
rejoyce.

Now mote ye understand that to this grove
Sir Calepine, by chaunce more then by choyce,
The selfe same evening fortune het her drove,
As he to seeke Serena through the woods did
rove.

XLVII

Long had he sought her, and through many
a soyle
Had traveld still on foot in heavie armes,
Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyle,
Ne ought was feared of his certaine harines :
And now, all weetlesse of the wretched stormes,
In which his love was lost, he slept full fast ;
Till, being waked with these loud alarmes,
He lightly started up like one aghast,
And, catching up his arms, streight to the
noise forth past.

XLVIII

There by th' uncertaine glims of starry night,
And, by the twinkling of their sacred fire,
He mote perceive a litle dawning sight
Of all which there was doing in that quire :
Mongst whom a woman spoyld of all attire
He spyde lamenting her unluckie strife,
And groning sore from grieved hart entire
Kist soones he saw one with a naked knife
Redde to launch her brest, and let out loved
life.

XLIX

With that he thrusts into the thickest throng
And, even as his right hand adwne descends,
He him preventing layes on earth along,
And sacrificeth to th' infernall feends :
Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he bends ;
Of whom he makes such havocke and such hew,
That swarmes of damned soules to hell he
sends :

The rest, that scape his sword and deatheschew,
Fly like a focke of doves before a Faulcon
vew.

L

From them returning to that Ladie backe,
Whom by the Altar he doth sitting find
Yet fearing death, and next to death the lacke
Of clothes to cover what they ought by kind,
He first her hands beginneth to unbind,
And then to question of her present woe,
And afterwards to cheare with speeches kind ;

But she, for nought that he could say or doe,
One word durst speake, or answere him awht
thereto.

I.I

So inward shame of her uncomely case
She did conceive, through care of womanhood,

That though the night did cover her disgrace,
Yet she in so unwomanly a mood
Would not bewray the state in which she stood.
So all that night to him unknowne she past;
But day, that doth discover bad and good,
Ensewing, made her knowne to him at last:
The end whereof Ile keepe untill another cast.

CANTO IX.

Calidore hostes with Melibee,
And loves fayre Pastoroll:
Coridon envies him, yet he
For ill rewards him well.

I

Now turne againe my time, thou jolly swayne,
Backe to the furrow which I lately left.
I lately left a furrow, one or twayne,
Unplough'd, the which my coulter hath not
cleft;
Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frutefull left.
As I it past: that were too grent a shame,
That so rich frute should be from us bereft;
Besides the great dishonour and defame,
Which should befall to Calidore immortal
name.

II

Great travell hath the gentle Calidore
And toyle endured, sith I left him last
Sewing the Blatant Beast; which I forbore
To finish then, for other present hast.
Full many pathes and perils he hath past,
Through hills, through dales, through forests,
and through plaines,
In that same quest which fortune on him cast,
Which he achieved to his owne great gaines,
Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse paines.

III

So sharply he the Monster did pursue,
That day nor night he suffred him to rest,
Ne rested he himselfe, but natures dew,
For dread of danger not to be redrest,
If he for slouth forslackt so famous quest.
Him first from court he to the citties coursed,
And from the citties to the townes him prest,
And from the townes into the countrie forsed,
And from the countrie back to private farmes
he scorsed.

IV

From thence into the open fields he fled,
Whereas the Heardes were keeping of their
neat,
And shepherds singing to their flockes (that
Layes of sweete love and youtthes delightfull
hent:

Him thether eke, for all his fearefull threat,
He followed fast, and chased him so nie,
That to the folds, where sheepe at night doe
seat,
And to the litle cots, where shepherds lie
In winters wrathfull time, he forced him to fie.

V

There on a day, as he pursue'd the chace,
He chaunst to spy a sort of shepheard groomes,
Playing on pipes and caroling apace,
The whiches their beasts there in the budded
broomes
Beside them fed, and nipt the tender bloomes;
For other worldly wealth they cared nought.
To whom Sir Calidore yet sweating comes,
And them to tell him courteously besought,
If such a beast they saw, which he had thether
brought.

VI

They answer'd him that no such beast they
Nor any wicked fecnd that mote offend [saw,
Their happie flockes, nor daunger to them draw;
But if that such there were (as none they kend)
They prayd high God them farre from them to
send.

Then one of them, him seeing so to sweat,
After his rusticke wise, that well he weend,
Offred him drunke to quench his thirstie heat,
And, if he hungry were, him offred eke to eat.

VII

The knight was nothing nice, where was no
need,
And tooke their gentle offer: so adowne
They prayd him sit, and gave him for to feed
Such homely what as serves the simple clowne,
That doth despise the dainties of the towne.
Tho, having fed his fill, he there besyde
Saw a faire damzell, which did weare a crowne
Of sundry flowres with silken ribbands tyde,
Yclad in home-made greene that her owne hands
had dyde.

VIII

Upon a litle hillocke she was placed
Higher then all the rest, and round about
Environ'd with a girland, goodly graced,
Of lovely lasses; and them all without
The lustie shepheard swaynes sate in a rout,
The which did pype and sing her praynes dew,
And oft rejoyce, and oft for wonder shout,
As if some miracle of heavenly hew
Were downe to them descended in that earthly
vew.

IX

And soothly sure she was full fayre of face,
And perfectly well shapt in every lim,
Which she did more augment with modest
grace
And comely carriage of her count'nance trim,
That all the rest like lesser lamps did dim:
Who, her admiring as some heavenly wight,
Did for their soveraine goddesses her esteeme,
And, caroling her name both day and night,
The fayrest Pastorella her by name did hight.

X

Ne was there heard, ne was there shepheards
swayne,
But her did honour; and eke many a one
Burnt in her love, and with sweet pleasing
payne
Full many a night for her did sigh and grone:
But most of all the shepheard Coridon
For her did languish, and his deare life spend;
Yet neither she for him nor other none
Did care a whit, ne any liking lend:
Though meane her lot, yet higher did her
mind ascend.

XI

Her whyles Sir Calidore there vewed well.
And markt her rare demeanure, which him
seemed
So farre the meane of shepheards to excell,
As that he in his mind her worthy deemed
To be a Princes Paragone esteemed,
He was unwares surprisid in subtil bands
Of the blynd boy; ne thence could he redeemed
By any skill out of his cruell hands;
Caught like the bird which gazing still on
others stands,

XII

So stood he still long gazing thereupon,
Ne any will had thence to move away,
Although his quest were farre afore him gon:
But after he had fed, yet did he stay
And sate there still, untill the flying day
Was farre forth spent, discoursing diversly
Of sundry things as fell, to worke delay;

And evermore his speach he did apply
To th' heards, but meant them to the damzels
fantasy.

XIII

By this the moystie night approching fast
Her dewy humour gan on th' earth to shed,
That warn'd the shepheards to their homes to
Their tender flocks, now being fully fed, [hast
For feare of wetting them before their bed.
Then came to them a good old aged syre,
Whose silver lockes bedeckt his beard and hed,
With shepheards hooke in hand, and fit attyre,
That wild the damzell rise; the day did now
expyre.

XIV

He was, to weet, by common voice esteemed
The father of the fayrest Pastorell,
And of her selfe in very deede so deemed;
Yet was not so; but, as old stories tell,
Found her by fortune, which to him befell,
In th' open fields an infant left alone;
And, taking up, brought home and noursed well
As his owne chylde; for other he had none:
That she in tract of time accompted was his
owne.

XV

She at his bidding meckely did arise,
And straight unto her litle flocke did fare:
Then all the rest about her rose likewise,
And each his sundrie sheepe with severall care
Gathered together, and them homeward bare:
Whylest everie one with helping hands did
strive, [share,
Amongst themselves, and did their labours
To helpe faire Pastorella home to drive
Her fleecie flocke; but Coridou most helpe did
give.

XVI

But Meliboe (so hight that good old man)
Now seeing Calidore left all alone,
And night arrived hard at hand, began
Him to invite unto his simple home;
Which though it were a cottage clad with lome,
And all things therein meane, yet better so
To lodge then in the salvage fields to rome.
The knight full gladly soone agreed thereto,
(Being his harts owne wish,) and home with
him did go.

XVII

There he was welcom'd of that honest syre
And of his aged Belkame homely well;
Who him besought himselfe to disattyre,
And rest himselfe till supper time befell;
By which home came the fayrest Pastorell,
After her flocke she in their fold had tyde:
And supper readie dight they to it fell

With small adoe, and nature satisfide,
The which doth litle crave contented to abyde.

XVIII

Tho when they had their hunger slaked well,
And the fayre mayd the table ip'ne away,
The gentle knight, as he that did excell
In courtesie and well could doe and say.
For so great kindnesse as he found that day
Gan greatly thanke his host and his good wife;
And drawing thence his speech another way,
Gan highly to commend the happie life
Which Shepheards lead, without debate or
bitter strife.

XIX

'How much ' (sayd he) 'more happie is the
state
In which y^e. father, here doe dwell at ease,
Leading a life so free and fortunate
From all the tempests of these worldly seas,
Which tosse the rest in dangerous disease;
Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked en-
mitie
Doe them afflict, which no man can appease;
That certes I your happinesse envie,
And wish my lot were past in such felicitie.'

XX

'Surely, my sonne,' (then answer'd he againe)
'If happie, then it is in this intent,
That having small yet doe I not complaine
Of want, ne wish for more it to augment.
But doe my selfe with that I have content:
So taught of nature, which doth litle need
Of forreine helps to lifes due nourishment:
The fields my food, my flocke my rayment
breed;
No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed.'

XXI

'Therefore I doe not any one envy,
Nor am envye of any one therefore:
They, that have much, feare much to loose
thereby,
And store of cares doth follow riches store.
The litle that I have grows dayly more
Without my care, but cnelly to attend it;
My lambes doe every yeare increase their score,
And my flockes father daily doth amend it.
What have I, but to praise th' Almighty that
doth send it!

XXII

'To them that list the worlds gay shewes I
leave,
And to great ones such follies doe forgive;
Which oft through pride do their owne perill
weave, [drive
And through ambition downe themselves doe

To sad decay, that might contented live.
Me no such cares nor combrous thoughts
offend,

Ne once my minds unmoved quiet grieve;
But all the night in silver sleepe I spend,
And all the day to what I list I doe attend.

XXIII

'Sometimes I hunt the Fox, the vowed foe
Unto my Lambes, and him dislodge away;
Sometime the fawne I practise from the Doe,
Or from the Goat her kidde, how to convey:
Another while I baytes and nets display
The birds to catch, or fishes to beguyle;
And when I wearie am, I downe doe lay
My limbes in every shade to rest from toyle,
And drinke of every brooke when thirst my
throate doth boyle.

XXIV

'The time was once, in my first prime of yeares,
When pride of youth forth pricked my desire,
That I disdain'd amongst mine equall peares
To follow sheepe and shepheards base attire:
For further fortune then I would inquire;
And, leaving home, to roiall court I sought,
Where I did sell my selfe for yearly hire,
And in the Princes gardin daily wrought:
There I beheld such vanenesse as I never
thought.

XXV

'With sight whereof soone cloyd, and long
• deluded
With idle hopes which them doe enttaine,
After I had ten yeares my selfe excludel
From native home, and spent my youth in vaine,
I gan my follies to my selfe to plaine,
And thus sweet peace, whose lacke did then
appeare.
Tho, backe returning to my sheepe againe,
I from thenceforth have learn'd to love more
deare
This lowly quiet life which I inherite here.'

XXVI

• Whylest thus he talkt, the knight with greedy
care
Hong still upon his melting mouth attent;
Whose sensefull words empierst his hart so
neare,
That he was rapt with double raviishment,
Both of his speech, that wrought him great
content,
And also of the object of his vew,
On which his hungry eye was alwayes bent;
That twixt his pleasing tongue, and her faire
hew, [grew.
He lost himselfe, and like one halfe entranced

XXVII

Yet to occasion meanes to worke his mind,
And to insinuate his harts desire,
He thus replyde: 'Now surely, syre, I find,
That all this worlds gay showes, which we
admire,
Be but vaine shadowes to this safe retyre
Of life, which here in lowlinesse ye lead,
Fearlesse of foes, or fortunes wrackfull yre
Which tosseth states, and under foot doth tread
The mightie ones, affrayd of every chaunges
dread.

XXVIII

'That even I, which daily doe behold
The glorie of the great mongst whom I won,
And now have prov'd what happinesse ye hold
In this small plot of your dominion,
Now loath great Lordship and ambition;
And wish th' heavens so much had graced mee,
As graunt me live in like condition;
Or that my fortunes might transposed bee
From pitch of higher place unto this low de-
gree.'

XXIX

'In vaine' (said then old Meliboe) 'doe men
The heavens of their fortunes fault accuse,
Sith they know best what is the best for them;
For they to each such fortune doe diffuse,
As they doe know each can most aptly use:
For not that which men covet most is best,
Nor that thing worst which men do most re-
But fittest is, that all contented rest [fuse];
With that they hold: each hath his fortune in
his brest.

XXX

'It is the mynd that maketh good or ill,
That maketh wretch or happie, rich or poore;
For some, that hath abundance at his will,
Hath not enough, but wants in greatest store,
And other, that hath litle, askes no more,
But in that litle is both rich and wise;
For wisdom is most riches: fooles therefore
They are which fortunes doe by vowes devize,
Sith each unto himselfe his life may fortuneize.'

XXXI

'Since then in each mans self' (said Calidore)
'It is to fashion his owne lyfes estate,
Give leave awchyle, good father, in this shore
To rest my barcke, which hath bene beaten late
With stormes of fortune and tempestuous fate
In seas of troubles and of toyle some paine;
That, whether quite from them for to retrate
I shall resolve, or backe to turne againe,
I may here with your selfe some small repose
obtaine.

XXXII

'Not that the burden of so bold a guest
Shall chargefull be, or chaunge to you at all:
For your meane food shall be my daily feast.
And this your cabin both my bowre and hall:
Besides, for recompence hereof I shall
You well reward, and golden guerdon give,
That may perhaps you better much withall,
And in this quiet make you safer live.'
So forth he drew much gold, and toward him
it drive.

XXXIII

But the good man, nought tempted with the
offer
Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away,
And thus bespake: 'Sir knight, your boun-
teous proffer
Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display
That mucky masse, the cause of mens decay,
That mote empaire my peace with daungers
But, if ye algates covet to assay [dread];
'This simple sort of life that shepherds lead,
Be it your owne: our rudenesse to your selfe
aread.'

XXXIV

So there that night Sir Calidore did dwell,
And long while after, whilst him list remaine,
Dayly beholding the faire Pastorell,
And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane:
During which time he did her entertaine
With all kind courtesies he could invent;
And every day, her companie to gaine,
When to the field she went he with her went:
So for to quench his fire he did it more aug-
ment.

XXXV

But she that never had acquainted beene
With such quaint usage, fit for Queenes and
Kings,
Ne ever had such knightly service seene,
But, being brd under base shepherds wings,
Had ever learn'd to love the lowly thing;
Did litle whit regard his courteous guize,
But cared more for Colins carolings
Then all that he could doe, or ever devize:
His layes, his loves, his looks, she did them
all despize.

XXXVI

Which Calidore perceiving, thought it best
To chaunge the manner of his lottie looke;
And doffing his bright armes himselfe addrest
In shepherds weed; and in his hand he tooke,
Instead of steele-head spear, a shepherds
hooke; [thought
That who had seene him then, would have be-
On Phrygian Paris by Plexippus brooke,

When he the love of fayre Oenone sought,
What time the golden apple was unto him
brought.

XXXVII

So being clad unto the fields he went
With the faire Pastorella every day,
And kept her sheepe with diligent attent,
Watching to drive the ravenous Wolfe away,
The whylest at pleasure she mote sport and
play;
And every evening helping them to fold:
And otherwhiles, for need, he did assay
In his strong hand their rugged teats to hold,
And out of them to presse the milke: love so
much could.

XXXVIII

Which seeing Coridon, who her likewise
Long time had lov'd, and hop'd her love to
gaine,

He much was troubled at that straungers guize,
And many gealous thoughts conceiv'd in vaine,
That this of all his labour and long paine
Should reap the harvest ere it ripened were:
That made him scoule, and pout, and oft com-
plaine
Of Pastorell to all the shepherds there,
That she did love a stranger swayne then him
more dere.

XXXIX

And ever, when he came in companie
Where Calidore was present, he would loure
And byte his lip, and even for gealousie
Was readie oft his owne heart to devoure,
Impatient of any paramoure:
Who, on the other side, did seeme so farre
From malicing, or grudging his good houre,
That all he could he graced him with her,
Ne ever shewed signe of rancour or of jarre.

XL

And oft, when Coridon unto her brought
Or litle sparrows stolen from their nest,
Or wanton squirrels in the woods farre sought,
Or other daintie thing for her address,
He would commend his guift, and make the
Yet she no whit his presents did regard, [best;
Ne him could find to fancie in her brest:
This new-come shepherd had his market mard.
Old love is litle worth when new is more
prefard.

XLI

One day, when as the shepherd swaynes
together [glee,
Were met to make their sports and merrie
As they are wont in faire sunshynie weather,
The whiles their flockes in shadowes shrouded
bee,

They fell to daunce: then did they all agree
That Colin Clout should pipe, as one most fit;
And Calidore should lead the ring, as hee
That most in Pastorellas grace did sit:
Thereat frown'd Coridon, and his lip closely
bit.

XLII

But Calidore, of courteous inclination,
Tooke Coridon and set him in his place,
That he should lead the daunce, as was his
fashion;
For Coridon could daunce, and trimly trace:
And when as Pastorella, him to grace,
Her flowry garland toke from her owne head,
And plast on his, he did it soone displace,
And did it put on Coridons instead:
Then Coridon woxe frolicke, that earst seemed
dead.

XLIII

Another time, when as they did dispose
To practise games and maisteries to try,
They for their Judge did Pastorella chose;
A garland was the meed of victory:
There Coridon forth stepping openly
Did chalenge Calidore to wrestling game;
For he, through long and perfect industry,
Therein well practised was, and in the same
Thought sure t'avenge his grudge, and worke
his foe great shame.

XLIV

But Calidore he greatly did mistake,
For he was strong and mightily stiffe pight,
That with one fall his necke he almost brake;
And had he not upon him fallen light,
His dearest joynt he sure had broken quight.
Then was the oaken crowne by Pastorell
Given to Calidore as his due right;
But he, that did in courtesie excell,
Gave it to Coridon, and said he wonne it well.

XLV

Thus did the gentle knight himselfe abare
Amongst that rusticke rout in all his deeds,
That even they, the which his rivals were,
Could not maligne him, but commend him
needs;
For courtesie amongst the rudest breeds
Good will and favour. So it surely wrought
With this faire Mayd, and in her mynde the
seeds
Of perfect love did sow, that last forth brought
The fruit of joy and blisse, though long time
dearly bought.

XLVI

Thus Calidore continu'd there long time
To winne the love of the faire Pastorell,

Which having got, he used without crime
Or blamefull blot; but menaged so well,
That he, of all the rest which there did dwell,
Was favoured and to her grace commended.

But what straunge fortunes unto him befell,
Ere he attain'd the point by him intended,
Shall more conveniently in other place be
ended.

CANTO X.

Calidore sees the Graces daunce
To Colins melody;
The whilles his Pastorell is led
Into captivity.

I

Who now does follow the foule Blatant
Beast,
Whilest Calidore does follow that faire Mayd,
Unmyndfull of his vow, and high behest
Which by the Faery Queene was on him layd,
That he should never leave, nor be delayd
From chacing hire, till he had it attchieved?
But now, entrapt of love, which him betrayd,
He mindeth more how he may be relieved
With grace from her, whose love his heart hath
sore enrieved.

II

That from henceforth he meanes no more to
sew
His former quest, so full of toile and paine:
Another quest, another game in vew
He hath, the guerdon of his love to gaine;
With whom he myndes for ever to remaine,
And set his rest amongst the rusticke sort,
Rather then hunt still after shadowes vaine
Of courtly favour, fed with light report
Of every blaste, and sayling alwaies in the
port.

III

Ne certes mote he greatly blamed be
From so high step to stoupe unto so low;
For who had tasted once (as oft did he)
The happy peace which there doth overflow,
And prov'd the perfect pleasures which doe
grow [dales,
Amongst poore hyndes, in hills, in woods, in
Would never more delight in painted show
Of such false blisse, as there is set for stales
T' entrap unwary fooles in their eternall
bales.

IV

For what hath all that goodly glorious gaze
Like to one sight which Calidore did vew?
The glauce whereof their dimmed eies would
daze,
That never more they should endure the shew

Of that sunne-shine that makes them looke
askew:

Ne ought, in all that world of beauties rare,
(Save onely Glorianaes heavenly hew,
To which what can compare?) can it compare;
The which, as cometh now by course, I will
declare.

V

One day, as he did raunge the fields abroad,
Whilest his faire Pastorella was elsewhere,
He chaunst to come, far from all people's trond,
Unto a place whose pleasures did appere
To passe all others on the earth which were:
For all that ever was by natures skill
Devised to worke delight was gathered there,
And there by her were poured forth at fill,
As if, this to adorne, she all the rest did pill.

VI

It was an hill plaste in an open plaine,
That round about was bordered with a wood
Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th' earth to
dislaine;
In which all trees of honour stately stood,
And did all winter as in sommer bud,
Spreading pavilions for the birds to bowre,
Which in their lower braunces sung aloud:
And in their tops the soring hauke did towre,
Sitting like King of fowles in majesty and
powre:

VII

And at the foote thereof a gentle fiud
His silver waves did softly tumble downe,
Unmard with ragged mosse or filthy mud;
Ne mote wyld beasts, ne mote the ruder
clowne,
Thereto approach; ne filth mote therein drowne:
But Nymphes and Faeries by the bancks did
sit [croune,
In the woods shade which did the waters
Keeping all noysome things away from it,
And to the waters fall tuning their accents
fit.

VIII

And on the top thereof a spacious plaine
Did spred it selfe, to serve to all delight,
Either to daunce, when they to daunce would
faine,

Or else to course about their bakcs light;
Ne ought there wanted which for pleasure
Desired be, or thence to banish bale, [might
So pleasantly the hill with equall hight
Did seeme to overlooke the lowly vale;
Therefore it rightly cleeped was mount Acidale.

IX

They say that Venus, when she did dispose
Her selfe to plesaunce, used to resort
Unto this place, and therein to repose
And rest her selfe as in a gladsome port,
Or with the Graces there to play and sport;
That even her owne Cytheron, though in it
She used most to keepe her royall court,
And in her soveraine Majesty to sit,
She in regard hereof refuſed and thought
unfit.

X

Unto this place when as the Elfin Knight
Approcht, him seemed that the merry sound
Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight,
And many feete fast thumping th' hollow
ground, [bound.
That through the woods their Echo did re-
He nigher drew to weete what mote it be:
There he a troupe of Ladies dauncing found
Full merrily, and naking gladfull glee,
And in the midst a Shepheard piping he did
see.

XI

He durst not enter into th' open greene,
For dread of them unwares to be descryde;
For breaking of their daunce, if he were seene;
But in the covert of the wood did byde,
Beholding all, yet of them unespide.
There he did see that pleased much his sight,
That even he him selfe his eyes envide,
An hundred naked maidens lily white
All raunged in a ring and dauncing in delight.

XII

All they without were raunged in a ring,
And daunced round: but in the midst of them
Three other Ladies did both daunce and sing,
The whitest the rest them round about did
hemme,
And like a girlond did in compasse stemme:
And in the midst of those same three was
placed
Another D'arnzell, as a precious gemme

Amidst a ring most richly well enchaced,
That with her goodly presence all the rest
much graced.

XIII

Looke! how the crowne, which Ariadne wore
Upon her yvory forehead, that same day
That Theseus her unto his bridale bore, [fray
When the bold Centaures made that bloody
With the fierce Lapithes which did them dis-
Being now placed in the firmament, [may,
Through the bright heaven doth her beams
display,

And is unto the starres an ornament, [lent.
Which round about her move in order excel-

XIV

Such was the beauty of this goodly band,
Whose sundry parts were here too long to tell;
But she that in the midst of them did stand
Seem'd all the rest in beauty to excell,
Crownd with a rosie girlond that right well
Did her beseme: And ever, as the crew
About her daunst, sweet flowres that far did
smell

And fragrant odours they uppon her threw:
But most of all those three did her with gifts
endew.

XV

Those were the Graces, daughters of delight,
Handmaides of Venus, which are wont to
haunt [night:
Uppon this hill, and daunce there day and
Those three to men all gifts of grace do graunt;
And all that Venus in her selfe doth vaunt
Is borrowed of them. But that faire one,
That in the midst was placed paravaunt,
Was she to whom that shepheard pypt alone;
That made him pipe so merrily, as never none.

XVI

She was, to weete, that jolly Shepheards
lasse,
Which piped there unto that merry rout;
That jolly shepheard, which there piped, was
Poore Colin Clout, (who knowes not Colin
Clout?)

He pypt apace, whilst they him daunst about.
Pypt, jolly shepheard, pypt thou now apace
Unto thy love that made thee low to lout:
Thy love is present there with thee in place;
Thy love is there advaunt to be another
Grace.

XVII

Much wondred Calidore at this straunge
sight,
Whose like before his eye had never seene;

And standing long astonished in spright,
And rapt with pleasure, wist not what to
weene;

Whether it were the traine of beauties Queene,
Or Nymphes, or Faeries, or enchanted show,
With which his eyes mote have deluded beene.
Therefore, resolving what it was to know,
Out of the wood he rose, and toward them did
go.

XVIII

But, soone as he appeared to their vew,
They vanisht all away out of his sight, [knew:
And cleane weie gone, which way he never
All save the shepheard, who, for fell despight
Of that displeasure, broke his bag-pipe quight,
And made great mone for that unhappy tune:
But Calidore, though no lesse sory wight
For that mishap, yet seeing him to mourne,
Drew neare, that he the truth of all by him
mote learne.

XIX

And, first him greeting, thus unto him spake:
'Haile, jolly shepheard, which thy joyous
dayes

Here ledest in this goodly merry make,
Frequented of these gentle Nymphes alwayes,
Which to thee flocke to heare thy lovely
layes!

Tell me, what mote these dainty Damzels be,
Which here with thee doe make their pleasant
playes?

Right happy thou that mayst them freely see!
But why, when I them saw, fled they away
from me?'

XX

'Not I so happy,' answered then that swaine,
'As thou unhappy, which them thence didst
chace,

Whom by no means thou canst recall againe;
For, being gone, none can them bring in place,
But whom they of them selves list so to grace.
'Right sory I,' (saide then Sir Calidore)
'That my ill fortune did them hence displace;
But since things passed none may now restore,
Tell me what were they all, whose lacke thee
grieves so sore?'

XXI

Thou gan that shepheard thus for to dilate:
'Then woe, thou shepheard, whatsoever thou
bee,

That all those Ladies, which thou sawest late,
Are Venus Damzels, all within her fee,
But differing in honour and degree:
They all are Graces which on her depend,
Besides a thousand more which ready bee

Her to adorne, when so she forth doth wend
But those three in the midst doe chiefe on her
attend.

XXII

'They are the daughters of sky-ruling Jove,
By him begot of faire Eurynome,
The Ocean daughter, in this pleasant grove,
As he, this way comming from feastfull glee
Of Thetis wedding with Æacidee,
In sommers shade him selfe here rested weary:
The first of them hight mylde Euphrosyne,
Next faire Aglaia, last Thalia merry;
Sweete Goddesses all three, which me in mirth
do cherry!

XXIII

'These three on men all gracious gifts bestow,
Which decke the body or adorne the mynde,
To make them lovely or well-favoured show;
As comely carriage, entertainment kynde,
Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that bynde,
And all the complements of curtesie:
They teach us how to each degree and kynde
We should our selves demean, to low, to hie,
To friends, to foes; which skill men call Civility.

XXIV

'Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme to
smile,
That we likewise should mylde and gentle be;
And also naked are, that without guile
Or false dissemblance all them plaine may see,
Simple and true, from covert malice free;
And eke them selves so in their daunce they
bore,
That two of them still froward seem'd to bee,
But one still towards shew'd her selfe afore;
That good should from us goe, then come, in
greater store.

XXV

'Such were those Goddesses which ye did see;
But that fourth Mayd, which there amidst them
traced,

Who can aread what creature mote she bee,
Whether a creature, or a goddesse graced
With heavenly gifts from heven first enrac'd?
But what so sure she was, she worthy was
To be the fourth with those three other placed:
Yet was she certes but a country lasse;
Yet she all other country lasses farre did
passe:

XXVI

'So farre, as doth the daughter of the day
All other lesser lights in light excell;
So farre doth she in beautyfull array
Above all other lasses beare the bell;

Ne lesse in vertue that becomes her well
Doth she exceede the rest of all her race,
For which the Graces, that here wont to dwell,
Have for more honor brought her to this place.
And graced her so much to be another Grace.

XXVII

'Another Grace she well deserves to be,
In whom so many Graces gathered are,
Excelling much the meane of her degree;
Divine resenblaunce, beauty soveraine rare,
Firme Chastity, that spight ne blemish dare:
All which she with such courtesie doth grace,
That all her peres cannot with her compare,
But quite are dimmed when she is in place:
She made me open pipe, and now to pipe apace.

XXVIII

'Sunne of the world, great glory of the sky,
That all the earth doest lighten with thy rayes,
Great Gloriana, greatest Majesty!
Pardon thy shepheard, mongst so many layes
As he hath sung of thee in all his dayes,
To make one minime of thy poore handmayd,
And underneath thy feete to place her prayse,
That when thy glory shall be farre displayd,
To future age, of her this mention may be
made!'

XXIX

When thus that shepheard ended had his
speech,
Sayd Calidore: 'Now sure it yrketh mee,
That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse breach,
As now the author of thy bale to be. [there:
Thus to bereave thy loves deare sight from
But, gentle Shepheard, pardon thou my shame,
Who rashly sought that which I mote not see.'
Thus did the courteous Knight excuse his
blame, [frame.
And to recomfort him all comely meanes did

XXX

In such discourses they together spent
Long time, as fit occasion forth them led;
With which the Knight him selfe did much
content,
And with delight his greedy fancy fed
Both of his words, which be with reason red,
And also of the place, whose pleasures rare
With such regard his senses ravished,
That thence he had no will away to fare,
But wisht that with that shepheard he mote
dwelling share.

XXXI

But that envenim'd sting, the which of yore
His poysonous point deepe fixed in his hart

Had left, now gan afresh to rancle sore,
And to renew the rigour of his smart;
Which to recure no skill of Leaches art
Mote him availle, but to returne againe
To his wounds worker, that with lovely dart
Dinting his brest had bred his restlesse paine;
Like as the wounded Whale to shore flies from
the maine.

XXXII

So, taking leave of that same gentle Swaine,
He backe returned to his rusticke wonne,
Where his faire Pastorella did remaine:
To whome, in sort as he at first begonne,
He daily did apply him selfe to doune
All dewfull service, voide of thoughts impure;
Ne any paines ne perill did he shonne,
By which he might her to his love allure,
And liking in her yet untamed heart procure.

XXXIII

And evermore the shepheard Coridon,
What ever thing he did her to aggrate,
Did strive to match with strong contention,
And all his paines did closely emulate;
Whether it were to caroll, as they sate
Keeping their sheepe, or games to exercise,
Or to present her with their labours late;
Through which if any grace chaunst to arise
To him, the Shepheard straight with jealousy
did frize.

XXXIV

One day, as they all three together went
To the greene wood to gather strawberies,
There chaunst to them a dangerous accident:
A Tigre forth out of the wood did rise,
That with fell claws full of fierce gournandize,
And greedy mouth wide gaping like hell-gate,
Did runne at Pastorell her to surprize;
Whom she beholding, now all desolate,
Gan cry to them aloud to helpe her all too late.

XXXV

Which Coridon first hearing ran in hast
To reskue her; but, when he saw the scend,
Through coward feare he fled away as fast,
Ne durst abide the danger of the end;
His life he steemed dearer then his friend:
But Calidore soone comming to her ayde,
When he the beast saw ready now to rend
His loves deare spoile, in which his heart was
prayed,
He ran at him enraged, instead of being frayde.

XXXVI

He had no weapon but his shepheards hooke
To serve the vengeance of his wrathfull will;

With which so sternely he the monster strooke,
That to the ground astonished he fell;
Whence, ere he could recou'r, he did him quell,
And, hewing off his head, he it presented
Before the fecte of the faire Pastorell;
Who, scarcely yet from former feare exempted,
A thousand times him thank't that had her
death prevented.

XXXVII

From that day forth she gan him to affect,
And daily more her favour to augment;
But Coridon for cowerdize reject,
Fit to keepe sheepe, unfit for loves content:
The gentle heart scornes base disparagement.
Yet Calidore did not despise him quight,
But usde him friendly for further intent,
That by his fellowship he colour might
Both his estate and love from skill of any wight.

XXXVIII

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought
her,
With humble service, and with daily sute,
That at the last unto his will he brought her;
Which he so wisely well did prosecute,
That of his love he reapt the timely frute,
And joyed long in close felicity, [brute,
Till fortune, fraught with malice, blinde and
That envies lovers long prosperity,
Blew up a bitter storme of foule adversity.

XXXIX

It fortun'd one day, when Calidore,
Was hunting in the woods, (as was his trade)
A lawlesse people, Brigants hight of yore,
That never usde to live by plough nor spade,
But fed on spoile and booty, which they made
Upon their neighbours which did nigh them
border,
The dwelling of these shepheards did invade,
And spoyld their houses, and them selves did
murder,
And drove away their flocks; with other much
disorder.

XL

Amongst the rest, the which they then did
They spoyld old Melibee of all he had, [pray,
And all his people captive led away; [lad,
Mongst which this lucklesse mayd away was
Faيرة Pastorella, sorrowfull and sad,
Most sorrowfull, most sad, that ever sight,
Now made the spoile of theeves and Brigants
bad,

Which was the conquest of the gentlest Knight
That ever liv'd, and th' onely glory of his
might.

XLI

With them also was taken Coridon,
And carried captive by those theeves away;
Who in the covert of the night, that none
Mote them descry, nor reskue from their pray,
Unto their dwelling did them close convey.
Their dwelling in a little Island was, [way
Covered with shrubby woods, in which no
Appeard for people in nor out to pas,
Nor any footing fynde for overgrown gras:

XLII

For underneath the ground their way was
made [cover
Through hollow caves, that no man mote dis-
For the thicke shrubs, which did them alwaies
shade
From view of living wight and covered over;
But darkenesse dred and daily night did hover
Through all the inner parts, wherein they
dwelt;
Ne lightned was with window, nor with lover,
But with continuall candle-light, which delt
A doubtfull sense of things, not so well scene
as felt.

XLIII

Hither those Brigants brought their present
pray, [ward;
And kept them with continuall watch and
Meaning, so soone as they convenient may,
For slaves to sell them for no small reward
To Merchants, which them kept in bondage
hard,
Or sold againe. Now when faire Pastorell
Into this place was brought, and kept with
gard
Of griesly theeves, she thought her self in hell,
Where with such damned fiends she should in
darknesse dwell.

XLIV

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment
And pittifull complaints which there she made,
Where day and night she nought did but la-
ment
Her wretched life shut up in deadly shade,
And waste her goodly beauty, which did fade
Like to a flowre that feelles no heate of sunne,
Which may her feeble leaves with comfort
glade—
And what befell her in that theevish wonne,
Will in another Canto better be begonne.

CANTO XI.

The Theeves fall out for Pastorell,
 Whilst Melibee is slaine:
 Her Calidore from them redeemes,
 And bringeth backe againe.

I

THE joyes of love, if they should ever last
 Without affliction or disquietnesse [cast,
 That worldly chaunces doe amongst them
 Would be on earth too great a blessednesse,
 Likier to heaven then mortall wretchednesse:
 Therefore the winged God, to let men weet
 That here on earth is no sure happinesse,
 A thousand sowres hath tempered with one
 sweet, [meet.
 To make it seeme more deare and dainty, as is

II

Like as is now befalne to this faire Mayd,
 Faire Pastorell, of whom is now my song:
 Who being now in dreadfull darknesse layd
 Amongst those theeves, which her in bondage
 strong
 Detaynd, yet Fortune. not with all this wrong
 Contented, greater mischief on her threw,
 And sorowes heapt on her in greater throng:
 That who so heares her heavinesse, would rew
 And pittie her sad plight, so chang'd from
 pleasaut hew.

III

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens re-
 mayned,
 Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts unrest,
 It so befell, (as Fortune had ordayned)
 That he which was their Capitaine profest,
 And had the chiefe commaund of all the rest,
 One day, as he did all his prisoners vew,
 With lustfull eyes beheld that lovely guest,
 Faire Pastorella. whose sad mournfull hew
 Like the faire Morning clad in misty fog did
 shew.

IV

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was
 fired,
 And inly burnt with flames most raging whot,
 That her alone he for his part desired
 (Of all the other pray which they had got,
 And her in mynde did to him selfe allot.
 From that day forth he kyndnesse to her
 showed, [mote;
 And sought her love by all the meanes he

With lookes, with words, with gifts he oft her
 wowed,
 And mixed threats among, and much unto her
 vowed.

V

But all that ever he could doe or say
 Her constant mynd could not a whit remove,
 Nor draw unto the lure of his lewd lay,
 To graunt hih favour or afford him love:
 Yet ceast he not to sew, and all waies prove,
 By which he mote accomplish his request,
 Saying and doing all that mote behove;
 Ne day nor night he suffred her to rest,
 But her all night did watch, and all the day
 molest.

VI

At last, when him she so importune saw,
 Fearing lest he at length the raines would
 lend
 Unto his lust, and make his will his law,
 Sith in his powre she was to foe or frend,
 She thought it best, for shadow to pretend
 Some shew of favour, by him gracing small,
 That she thereby mote either freely wend,
 Or at more ease continue there his thrall:
 A little well is leat that gaineth more withall.

VII

So from thenceforth, when love he to her
 made,
 With better tearmes she did him entertaine,
 Which gave him hope, and did him halfe per-
 swade,
 That he in time her joyance should obtaine:
 But when she saw through that small favours
 gaine,
 That further then she willing was he prest,
 She found no meanes to barre him, but to faine
 A sodaine sicknesse which her sore oppress.
 And made unfit to serve his lawlesse mindes
 behest.

VIII

By meanes whereof she would not him permit
 Once to approach to her in privacy,
 But onely amongst the rest by her to sit,
 Mourning the rigour of her malady,

And seeking all things meete for remedy;
But she resolv'd no remedy to fynde,
Nor better cheare to shew in misery,
Till Fortune would her captive bonds unbynde:
Her sicknesse was not of the body, but the
mynde.

IX

During which space that she thus sicke did
lie, wount
It chaunst a sort of merchants, which were
To skim those coastes for bondmen there to
buy.

And by such trafficke after gaines to hunt,
Arrived in this Isle, though bare and blunt,
T' inquire for slaves; where being readie met
By some of these same theeves at the instant
brunt,

Were brought unto their Capitaine, who was set
By his faire patients side with sorrowfull re-
gref.

X

To whom they shewed, how those marchants
were
Arriv'd in place their bondslaves for to buy;
And therefore prayd that those same captives
there

Mote to them for their most commodity
Be sold, and amongst them shared equally.
This their request the Capitaine much appalled,
Yet could he not their just demanda deny.
And willed straight the slaves should forth be
called,

And sold for most advantage, not to be for-
stalled.

XI

Then forth the good old Meliboe was brought,
And Coridon with many other moe, [caught;
Whom they before in diverse spoyles had
All which he to the marchants sale did shawe:
Till some, which did the sundry prisoners
knowe,

Gan to inquire for that faire shepherdesse,
Which with the rest they tooke not long agoe:
And gan her forme and feature to expresse.
The more t' augment her price through praise
of comlinesse.

XII

To whom the Capitaine in full angry wize
Made answer, that the mayd of whom they
spake

Was his owne purchase and his onely prize;
With which none had to doe, ne ought partake;
But he himselfe which did that conquest make:
Litle for him to have one silly lasso; [weake,
Besides, through sicknesse now so wan and

That nothing meet in merchandise to passe:
So shew'd them her, to prove how pale and
weake she was.

XIII

The sight of whom, though now decayd and
mard,
And eke but hardly seene by candle-light,
Yet, like a Diamond of rich regard,
In doubtfull shadow of the darkesome night
With starrie beames about her shining bright,
These marchants fixed eyes did so amaze,
That what through wonder, and what through
delight.
A while on her they greedily did gaze,
And did her greatly like, and did her greatly
praise.

XIV

At last when all the rest them offred were,
And prises to them placed at their pleasure,
They all refused in regard of her,
Ne ought would buy, how ever prisd with
measure, [sure
Withouten her, whose worth above all threa-
They did esteeme, and offred store of gold.
But then the Capitaine, fraught with more
displeasure,
Bad them be still; his love should not be sold;
The rest take if they would; he her to him
would hold.

XV

Therewith some other of the chiefest theeves
Boldly him bad such injurie forbear;
For that same mayd, how ever it him greeves,
Should with the rest be sold before him
there,

To make the prises of the rest more deare.
That with great rage he stoutly doth deny;
And, fiercely drawing forth his blade, doth
swear

That who so hardie hand on her doth lay,
It dearly shall aby, and death for handsell
pay.

XVI

Thus, as they words amongst them multiply,
They fall to strokes, the frute of too much
take.

And the mad steele about doth fiercely fly,
Not sparing wight, ne leaving any balke,
But making way for death at large to walke;
Who, in the horror of the griesly night,
In thousand dreadful shapes doth amongst them
stalke, [light
And makes huge havocke; whiles the candle-
Out quenched leaves no skill nor difference of
wight.

XVII

Like a sort of hungry dogs, ymet
About some carcase by the common way,
Doe fall together, stryving each to get
The greatest portion of the greedie pray,
All on confused heapes themselves assay,
And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug, and
teare;
That who them sees would wonder at their fray,
And who sees not would be affrayd to heare:
Such was the conflict of those cruell Brigants
there.

XVIII

But first of all their captives they doe kill,
Least they should joyne against the weaker
side,
Or rise against the remnant at their will:
Old Melibœ is slaine; and him beside
His aged wife, with many others wide;
But Coridon, escaping craftily, [hide,
Creepes forth of dories, whilst darknes him doth
And flies away as fast as he can hie,
Ne stayeth leave to take before his friends doe
dye.

XX.

But Pastorella, wofull wretched Elfe,
Was by the Captaine all this while defended,
Who, minding more her safety then himselfe,
His target alwayes over her pretended;
By means whereof, that mote not be amended,
He at the length was slaine and layd on
ground,
Yet holding fast twixt both his armes extended
Fayre Pastorell, who, with the selfe same
wound
Launcht through the arme, fell down with him
in dreerie swound.

XX

There lay she covered with confused preasse
Of carcases, which dying on her fell. [ceasse;
Tho, when as he was dead, the fray gan
And each to other calling did compell
To stay their cruell hands from slaughter fell,
Sith they: that were the cause of all were gone:
Thereto they all attonce agreed well;
And, lighting candles new, gan search anone,
How many of their friends were slaine, how
many fone.

XXI

Their Captaine there they cruelly found kild,
And in his armes the dreary dying mayd,
Like a sweet Angell twixt two clouds uphild;
Her lovely light was dimmed and decayd
With cloud of death upon her eyes displayd;

Yet did the cloud make even that dimmed
light
Seeme much more lovely in that darknesse layd,
And twixt the twinkling of her eye-lids bright
To sparke out litle beames, like starres in fog-
gie night.

XXII

But when they mov'd the carcases aside,
They found that life did yet in her remaine:
Then all their helpes they busily applyde
To call the soule backe to her home againe;
And wrought so well, with labour and long
That they to life recovered her at last: [paine,
Who, sighing sore, as if her hart in twaine
Had riven bene and all her hart-strings brast,
With dreerie drouping eyne lookt up like one
aghast.

XXIII

There she beheld, that sore her griev'd to see,
Her father and her friends about her lying,
Her selfe sole left a second spoyle to bee
Of those, that, having saved her from dying,
Renew'd her death by timely death denying.
What now is left her but to way'e and weepe,
Wringing her hands, and ruefully loud crying?
Ne cared she her wound in teares to steepe,
Albe with all their might those Brigants her
did keepe.

XXIV

But when they saw her now reliv'd againe,
They left her so, in charge of one, the best
Of many worst, who with unkind disdaine
And cruell rigour her did much molest;
Scarse yeelding her due food or timely rest,
And scarcely suffering her infested wound,
That sore her payn'd, by any to be drest.
So leave we her in wretched thralldome bound,
And turne we backe to Calidore where we him
found.

XXV

Who when he backe returned from the wood,
And saw his shepheards cottage spoyled
• quight,
And his love left away, he wexed wood
And halfe enraged at that ruefull sight;
That even his hart, for very fell despight,
And his owne flesh he readie was to teare:
He chaufft, he griev'd, he fretted, and he
And fared like a furious wyld Beare, [sight,
Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being
otherwise.

XXVI

Ne wight he found to whom he might com-
plaine,
Ne wight he found of whom he might inquire,

That more increast the anguish of his paine :
 He sought the woods, but no man could see
 there; [heare:
 He sought the plaines, but could no tydings
 The woods did nought but echoes vaine re-
 bound;
 The playnes all waste and emptie did appeare;
 Where wont the shepheards oft their pyper
 resound, [he found.
 And feed an hundred flocks, there now not one

XXVII

At last, as there he romed up and downe,
 He chaunst one comming towards him to spy;
 That seem'd to be some sorie simple clowne,
 With ragged weedes, and lockes upstaring
 As if he did from some late danger fly, [hye,
 And yet his feare did follow him behynd:
 Who as he unto him approached hye,
 He mote perceiue by signes which he did fynd,
 That Coridon it was, the silly shepherds
 hynd.

XXVIII

Tho, to him running fast, he did not stay
 To greet him first, but askt where were the
 rest?
 Where Pastorell?—Who full of fresh dismay,
 And gushing forth in teares, was so opprest,
 That he no word could speake, but smit his
 brest,
 And up to heauen his eyes fast-streming threw:
 Whereat the knight amaz'd yet did not rest,
 But askt againe, what ment that rufull hew:
 Where was his Pastorell? where all the other
 crew?

XXIX

'Ah, well-away!' (sayd he, then sighing
 sore)
 'That ever I did liue this day to see,
 This dismall day, and was not dead before,
 Before I saw faire Pastorella dye.'
 'Die? out alas!' then Calidore did cry,
 'How could the death dare ever her to quell?
 But read thou, shepheard, read what destiny
 Or other dyrefull hap from heauen or hell
 Hath wrought this wicked deed: doe feare
 away, and tell.'

XXX

Tho, when the Shepheard breathed had a-
 while, [mence
 He thus began: 'Where shall I then com-
 This wofull tale? or how those Brigants vyle,
 With cruell rage and dreadfull violence,
 Spoyld all our cots, and caried us from hence;
 Or how faire Pastorell should have bene sold
 To marchants, but was sav'd with strong de-
 fence;

Or how those theeues, whilst one sought her
 to hold, [and bold.
 Fell all at ods, and fought through fury fierce

XXXI

'In that sarge conflict (woe is me!) befell
 This fatal chauce, this dolefull accident,
 Whose heauy tydings now I haue to tell,
 First all the captives, which they here had
 hent,
 Were by them slaine by general consent:
 Old Melibæ and his good wife withall
 These eyes saw die, and dearely did lament;
 But, when the lot to Pastorell did fall,
 Their Captaine long withstood, and did her
 death forstall.

XXXII

'But what could he gainst all them doe alone?
 It could not boot: needs mote she die at last.
 I onely scapt through great confusione
 Of cryes and clamors which amongst them past,
 In dreadfull darknesse dreadfully aghast;
 That better were with them to haue bene dead,
 Then here to see all desolate and wast,
 Despoyled of those joyes and jolly-head,
 Which with those gentle shepherds here I
 wont to lead.'

XXXIII

When Calidore these ruefull newes had raught,
 His hart quite deaded was with anguish great,
 And all his wits with doole were nigh dis-
 traught,
 That he his face, his head, his brest did beat,
 And death it selfe unto himselfe did threat;
 Oft cursing th' heauens, that so cruell were
 To her, whose name he often did repeat;
 And wishing oft that he were present there
 When she was slaine, or had bene to her
 succour nere.

XXXIV

But after grieve awhile had had his course,
 And spent it selfe in mourning, he at last
 Began to mitigate his swelling sourse,
 And in his mind with better reason cast
 How he might save her life, if life did last:
 Or, if that dead, how he her death might
 wreake,
 Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past;
 Or if it to revenge he were too weake,
 Then for to die with her, and his lives threed
 to breake.

XXXV

Tho Coridon he prayd, sith he well knew
 The readie way unto that theevish wonne,
 To wend with him, and be his conluct trew
 Unto the place, to see what should be donne;

But he, whose hart through feare was late for-
donne,
Would not for ought be drawne to former drede,
But by all meanes the daunger knowne did
shonne:
Yet Calidore so well him wrought with meed,
And faire bespoke with words, that he at last
agreed.

XXXVI

So forth they goe together (God before)
Both clad in shepherds weeds agreeably,
And both with shepherds hookes: But
Calidore
Had, underneath, him armed privily.
Tho, to the place when they approched nye,
They chaunt, upon an hill not farre away,
Some flockes of sheepe and shepherds to
espy;
To whom they both agreed to take their way,
In hope there newes to learne, how they mote
best assay.

XXXVII

There did they find, that which they did not
feare, [had reft]
The selfe same flockes the, which those theeves
From Meliboe and from themselves whyldre;
And certaine of the theeves there by them left,
The which, for want of heards, themselves
then kept.
Right well knew Coridon his owne late sheepe,
And seeing them for tender pittie wept;
But when he saw the theeves which did them
keepe, [sheepe].
His hart gan fayle, albe he saw them all a-

XXXVIII

But Calidore recomforting his griefe,
Though not his feare, for nought may feare
disswade,
Him hardly forward drew, whereas the thiefe
Lay sleeping soundly in the bushes shade,
Whom Coridon him counseld to invade
Now all unware, and take the spoyle away;
But he, that in his mind had closely made
A further purpose, would not so them slay,
But gently waking them gave them the time
of day.

XXXIX

Tho, sitting downe by them upon the greene,
Of sundrie things he purpose gan to faine,
That he by them might certaine tydings weene
Of Pastorell, were she alive or slaine:
Mongst which the theeves them questioned
again, [were]:
What mister men, and eke from whence they
To whom they aunswer'd, as did appertaine,

That they were poore heardgroomes, the which
whyldre
Had from their maisters fled, and now sought
hyre elsewhere.

XL

Whereof right glad they seem'd, and offer
made [keepe];
To hyre them well if they their flockes would
For they themselves were evill groomes, they
sayd, [sheepe],
Unwont with heards to watch, or pasture
But to forray the land, or scoure the deepe.
Thereto they soone agreed, and earnest tooke
To keepe their flockes for litle hyre and chepe,
For they for better hyre did shortly looke:
So there all day they bode, till light the sky
forsooke.

XLI

Tho, when as towards darksome night it drew,
Unto their hellish dens those theeves them
brought;
Where shortly they in great acquaintance grew,
And all the secrets of their entrayles sought.
There did they find, contrarie to their thought,
That Pastorell yet liv'd; but all the rest
Were dead, right so as Coridon had taught:
Whereof they both full glad and blyth did rest,
But chiefly Calidore, whom griefe had most
possest.

XLII

At length, when they occasion fittest found.
In dead of night, when all the theeves did rest.
After a late forray, and slept full sound,
Sir Calidore him arm'd as he thought best,
Having of late by diligent inquest
Provided him a sword of meane sort;
With which he streight went to the Capitaines
nest:
But Coridon durst not with him consort,
Ne durst abide behind, for dread of worse effort.

XLIII

When to the Cave they came, they found it
fast:
But Calidore with huge resistlesse might
The dores assayled, and the locks upbrast:
With noyse whereof the thiefe awaking light
Unto the entrance ran; where the bold knight
Encountering him with small resistance slew,
The whiles faire Pastorell through great affright
Was almost dead, misdoubting least of new
Some upore were like that which lately she
did vew.

XLIV

But when as Calidore was comen in,
And gan aloud for Pastorell to call,

Knowing his voice, although not heard long
 sin,
 She sudden was revived therewithall,
 And wondrous joy felt in her spirits thrall:
 Like him that being long in tempest tost,
 Looking each houre into deathes mouth to fall,
 At length espyes at hand the happie cost,
 On which he safety hopes that earst feard to
 be lost.

XLV

Her gentle hart, that now long season past
 Had never joyance felt nor chearefull thought,
 Began some smacke of comfort new to tast,
 Like lyfull heat to nummed senses brought,
 And life to feele that long for death had sought.
 Ne lesse in hart rejoyced Calidore,
 When he her found; but, like to one distraught
 And robd of reason, towards her him bore;
 A thousand times embrast, and kist a thousand
 more.

XLVI

But now by this, with noyse of late uprore,
 The hue and cry was rayseed all about;
 And all the Brigants flocking in great store
 Unto the cave gan preasse, nought having
 dout
 Of that was doon, and entred in a rout:
 But Calidore in th' entry close did stand,
 And enterdayning them with courage stout,
 Still slew the forinost that came first to hand
 So long till all the entry was with bodies mand.

XLVII

Tho, when no more could nigh to him approh,
 He breath'd his sword, and rested him till day;
 Which when he spyde upon the earth t'
 encroch,
 Through the dead carcases he made his way,
 Mongst which he found a sword of better
 say,
 With which he forth went into th' open light,
 Where all the rest for him did readie stay,
 And, fierce assaying him, with all their might
 Gan all upon him lay: there gan a dreadfull
 fight.

XLVIII

How many flies, in whottest sommers day,
 Do seize upon some beast whose flesh is bare,
 That all the place with swarmes do overlay,
 And with their little stings right felly fare;
 So many theeves about him swarming are,
 All which do him assaile on every side,
 And sore oppresse, ne any him doth spare;
 But he doth with his raging brand divide
 Their thickest troups, and round about him
 scattreth wide.

XLIX

Like as a Lion mongst an heard of dere,
 Disperseth them to catch his choyssest pray;
 So did he fy amongst them here and there,
 And all that nere him came did hew and slay,
 Till he had strowd with bodies all the way;
 That none his danger daring to abide
 Fled from his wrath, and did themselves convey
 Into their caves, their heads from death to hide,
 Ne any left that victorie to him envide.

L

Then, backe returning to his dearest deare,
 He her gan to recon. for all he might
 With gladfull speaches and with lovely cheare;
 And forth her bringing to the joyous light,
 Whereof she long had lackt the wishfull sight,
 Deviz'd all goodly meanes from her to drive
 The sad remembrance of her wretched plight:
 So her uneath at last he did revive
 That long had lyen dead, and made again alive.

LI

This doon, into those theevish dens he went,
 And thence did all the spoyles and treasures
 take,
 Which they from many long had robd and rent,
 But fortune now the victors meed did make:
 Of which the best he did his love betake;
 And also all those flockes, which they before
 Had reft from Melibee and from his make,
 He did them all to Coridon restore:
 So drove them all away, and his love with
 him bore.

CANTO XII.

Faire Pastorella by great hap
Her parents understands.
Calidore doth the Blatant Beast
Subdew, and bynd in bands.

I

LIKE as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde
Directs her course unto one certaine cost,
Is met of many a counter winde and tyde,
With which her winged speed is let and crost,
And she her selfe in stormie surges tost:
Yet, making many a borde and many a bay,
Still winneth way, ne hath her compasse lost:
Right so it fares with me in this long way,
Whose course is often stayd, yet never is astray.

II

For all that hetherto hath long delayd
This gentle knight from sewing his first quest,
Though out of course, yet hath not bene mis-
To shew the courtesie by him profest [said,
Even unto the lowest and the least.
But now I come into my course againe,
To his atchievement of the Blatant Beast:
Who all this while at will did range and raine,
Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him to
re-straine.

III

Sir Calidore, when thus he now had raught
Faire Pastorella from those Brigants powre,
Unto the Castle of Belgard her brought,
Whereof was Lord the good Sir Bellamoure;
Who whylome was, in his youthe freshest
flowre,
A lustie knight he ever wielded speare.
And had endured many a dreadfull stoure
In bloody battell for a Ladie deare,
The fayrest Ladie then of all that living were:

IV

Her name was Claribell; whose father hight
The Lord of Many Ilands, farre renound
For his great riches and his greater might:
He, through the wealth wherein he did abound,
This daughter thought in wedlocke to have
bound
Unto the Prince of Picteland, bordering nere;
But she, whose sides before with secret wound
Of love to Bellamoure empierced were,
By all meanes shund to match with any for-
rein fere.

V

And Bellamour againe so well her pleased
With dayly service and attendance dew,
That of her love he was entyrelly seized,
And closely did her wed, but knowne to few:
Which when her father understood, he grew
In so great rage that them in dongeon deepe
Without compassion cruelly he threw:
Yet did so streightly them asunder keepe,
That neither could to company of th' other
creepe.

VI

Nathlesse Sir Bellamour, whether through
grace
Or secret guifts, so with his keepers wrought,
That to his love sometimes he came in place;
Whereof her wombe, unwist to wight, was
fraught, [brought:
And in dew time a mayden child forth
Which she streightway, (for dread least if her
syre [sought,)
Should know thereof to slay he would have
Delivered to her handmayd, that for hyre
She should it cause be fostred under straunge
attyre.

VII

The trustie damzell bearing it abroad
Into the empty fields, where living wight
Mote not bewray the secret of her lode,
She forth gan lay unto the open light
The litle babe, to take thereof a sight:
Whom whylest she did with watrie eyne
behold,
Upon the litle brest, like christall bright,
She mote perceive a litle purple mold,
That like a rose her silken leaves did faire
unfold.

VIII

Well she it markt, and pittied the more,
Yet could not remedie her wretched case;
But, closing it againe like as before,
Bedew'd with teares there left it in the place:
Yet left not quite, but drew a litle space
Behind the bushes, where she did her hyde,
To weet what mortall hand, or heavens grace

Would for the wretched infants helpe provyde;
For which it loudly cald, and pittifully cryde,

IX

At length a Shepheard, which there by did
keepe

His fleecie flock upon the playnes around,
Led with the infants cry that loud did weepe,
Came to the place; where, when he wrapped
found

Th' abandond spoyle, he softly it unbound;
And, seeing there that did him pittie sore,
He tooke it up and in his mantle wound;
So home unto his honest wife it bore,
Who as her owne it nurst (and named) ever-
more.

X

Thus long continu'd Claribell a thrall,
And Bellamour in bands: till that her syre
Departed life, and left unto them all:
Then all the stormes of fortunes former yre
Were turn'd, and they to freedomes did retyre.
Thenceforth they joy'd in happinesse together,
And lived long in peace and love entyre,
Without disquiet or dislike of ether,
Till time that Calidore brought Pastorella
thether.

XI

Both whom they goodly well did entertaine;
For Bellamour knew Calidore right well,
And loved for his prowess, sith they twaine
Long since had fought in field: Als Claribell
Ne lesse did tender the faire Pastorell, long.
Seeing her weake and wan through durance
There they a while together thus did dwell
In much delight, and many joyes among,
Untill the Damsell gan to wax more sound and
strong.

XII

The gan Sir Calidore him to advize
Of his first quest, which he had long forlore,
As ham'd to thinke how he that enterprize,
The which the Faery Queene had long afore
Bequeath'd to him, forslacked had so sore;
That much he feared least reprochfull blame
With foule dishonour him mote blot therefore;
Besides the losse of so much loos and fame,
As through the world thereby should glorifie
his name.

XIII

Therefore, resolving to returne in hast
Unto so great achievement, he bethought
To leave his love, now perill being past,
With Claribell; whylest he that monstersought
Throughout the world, and to destruction
brought.

So taking leave of his faire Pastorell,
Whom to recomfort all the meanes he wrought,
With thanks to Bellamour and Claribell,
He went forth on his quest, and did that him
befell.

XIV

But first, ere I doe his adventures tell
In this exploitte, me needeth to declare
What did betide to the faire Pastorell
During his absence, left in heavy care
Through daily mourning and nightly misfare:
Yet did that aunient matrone all she might,
To cherish her with all things choice and rare;
And her owne handmayd, that Melissa hight,
Appointed to attend her dewly day and night.

XV

Who in a morning, when this Maiden faire
Was dighting her, having her snowy brest
As yet not laced, nor her golden haire
Into their comely tresses dewly drest,
Chaunst to espy upon her yvory chest
The rosie marke, which she remembered well
That litle Infant had, which forth she kest,
The daughter of her Lady Claribell,
The which she bore the whiles in prison she
did dwell.

XVI

Which well avizing, streight she gan to cast
In her conceptfull mynd that this faire Mayd
Was that same infant, which so long sith past
She in the open fields had loosely layd
To fortunes spoile, unable it to ayd:
So, full of joy, streight forth she ran in hast
Unto her mistresse, being halfe dismayd,
To tell her how the heavens had her graste
To save her chyld, which in misfortunes
mouth was plaste.

XVII

The sober mother seeing such her mood,
Yet knowing not what meant that sodaine
thro,
Askt her, how mote her words be understood,
And what the matter was that mov'd her so?
'My lief,' (sayd she) 'ye know that long ygo,
Whilste ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gave
A litle mayde, the which ye chylded tho;
The same againe if now ye list to have,
The same is yonder Lady, whom high God did
save.'

XVIII

Much was the Lady troubled at that speech,
And gan to question streight, how she it knew?
'Most certaine markes' (sayd she) 'do me it
teach;

For on her brest I with these eyes did view
The little purple rose which thereon grew,
Wherof her name ye then to her did give.
Besides, her countenance and her likely hew,
Matched with equall years, do surely prieve
That yond same is your daughter sure, which
yet doth live.'

XIX

The matrone stayd no lenger to enquire,
But forth in hast ran to the straunger Mayd ;
Whom catch^{ing} greedily, for great desire
Rent up her brest, and bosome open layd,
In which that rose she plainly saw displayd :
Then, her embracing twixt her armes twaine,
She long so held, and softly weeping sayd ;
'And livest thou, my daughter, now againe ?
And art thou yet alive, whom dead I long did
faine ?'

XX

Tho further asking her of sundry things,
And times comparing with their accidents,
She found at last, by very certaine signes
And speaking markes of passed monuments,
That this young Mayd, whom chance to her
presents,
Is her owne daughter, her owne infant deare.
Tho, wondring long at those so straunge
events,
A thousand times she her embraced nere,
With many a joyfull kisse and many a melt-
ing teare.

XXI

Who ever is the mother of one chylde,
Which having thought long dead she fyndes
alive,
Let her by prooffe of that which she hath fylde
In her owne breast, this mothers joy describe ;
For other none such passion can contrive
In perfect forme, as this good Lady felt,
When she so faire a daughter saw survive,
As Pastorella was that nigh she swelt
For passing joy, which did all into pittie melt.

XXII

Thence running forth unto her loved Lord,
She unto him recounted all that fell ;
Who, joyning joy with her in one accord,
Acknowledg'd for his owne faire Pastorell.
There leave we them in joy, and let us tell
Of Calidore ; who, seeking all this while
That monstrous Beast by small force to quell,
Through every place with restlesse paine and
toile
Him follow'd by the tract of his outrageous spoile,

XXIII

Through all estates he found that he had
In which he many massacres had left, [past,

And to the Clergy now was come at last ;
In which such spoile, such havocke, and such
theft

He wrought, that thence all goodnesse he bereft,
That endlesse were to tell. The Elfin Knight,
Who now no place besides unsought had left,
At length into a Monastere did light,
Where he him found despoyling all with maine
and might.

XXIV

Into their cloysters now he broken had,
Through which the Monckes he chased here
and there,
And them pursu'd into their dortours sad,
And searched all their cels and secrets neare :
In which what filth and ordure did appeare,
Were yrkesome to report ; yet that foule Beast,
Nought sparing ; them, the more did tosse and
teare,
And ransacke all their dennes from most to least,
Regarding nought religion, nor their holy
heast.

XXV

From thence into the sacred Church he broke,
And robd the Chancell, and the desks downe
threw,
And Altars fouled, and blasphemy spoke,
And th' Images, for all their goodly hew,
Did cast to ground, whilst none was them to
rew ;

So all confounded and disordered there :
But, seeing Calidore, away he flew,
Knowing his fatall hand by former feare ;
But he him fast pursuing soone approached
neare.

XXVI

Him in a narrow place he overtooke,
And fierce assailing forst him turne againe :
Sternely he turnd againe, when he him
strooke
With his sharpe steele, and ran at him amaine
With open mouth, that seemed to containe
A full good peeke within the utmost brim,
All set with yron teeth in raunges twaine,
That terrifie his foes, and armed him,
Appearing like the mouth of Orcus griesly
grim :

XXVII

And therein were a thousand tongs empight
Of sundry kindes and sundry quality ;
Some were of dogs, that barked day and
night ;
And some of cats, that wrawling still did cry ;
And some of Beares, that groynd continually ;
And some of Tygres, that did seeme to gren
And snar at all that ever passed by .

But most of them were tongues of mortall men,
Which spake reprochfully, not caring where
nor when.

XXVIII

And them amongst were mingled here and there
[stings,
The tongues of Serpents, with three forked
That spat out poyson, and gore-bloudy gere,
At all that came within his ravenings;
And spake licentious words and hatefull
Of good and bad alike, of low and hie, [things
Ne Kesurs spared he a whit, nor Kings;
But either blotted them with infamie,
Or bit them with his banefull teeth of injury.

XXIX

But Calidore, thereof no whit afrajd,
Rencountred him with so impetuous might,
That th' outrage of his violence he stayd,
And bet abacke, threatning in vaine to bite,
And spitting forth the poyson of his spight
That fomed all about his bloody jawes:
Tho, rearing up his former feete on hight,
He rampt upon him with his ravenous pawes,
As if he would have rent him with his cruell
clawes:

XXX

But he, right well aware, his rage to ward
Did cast his shield atweene; and, therewithall
Putting his puissance forth, pursu'd so hard,
That backward he enforced him to fall;
And, being downe, ere he new helpe could call,
His shield he on him threw, and fast downe
held:

Like as a bullocke, that in bloudy stall
Of butchers balefull hand to ground is feld,
Is forcibly kept downe, till he be thoroughly
queld.

XXXI

Full cruelly the Beast did rage and rore
To be downe held, and maystred so with
might,
That he gan fret and fume out bloudy gore
Striving in vaine to rere him selfe upright:
For still, the more he strove, the more the
Knight

Did him suppress, and forcibly subdew,
That made him almost mad for fell despight:
He grind, hee bit, he scratcht, he venom threw,
And fared like a feend right horrible in hew:

XXXII

Or like the hell-borne Hydra, which they
faine

That great Alcides whilome overthrew,
After that he had labourd long in vaine
To crop his thousand heads, the which still new

Forth budded, and in greater number grew.
Such was the fury of this hellish Beast,
Whilest Calidore him under him downe threw;
Who nathemore his heavy load releast,
But aye, the more he rag'd, the more his
powre increast.

XXXIII

Tho, when the Beast saw he mote nought
availe
By force, he gan his hundred ~~teag~~gues apply,
And sharply at him to revile and raile
With bitter termes of shamefull infamy;
Of interlacing many a forged lie,
Whose like he never once did speake, nor heare,
Nor ever thought thing so unworthily:
Yet did he nought, for all that, him forbear.
But strained him so straightly that he chokt
him neare.

XXXIV

At last, when as he found his force to shrinke
And rage to quaille, he tooke a muzzel strong
Of surest yron, made with many a lincke:
Therewith he mured up his mouth along,
And therein shut up his blasphemous tong,
For never more defaming gentle Knight,
Or unto lovely Lady doing wrong;
And therunto a great long chaine he tight,
With which he drew him forth, even in his
own despight.

XXXV

Like as whylome that strong Tirynthian
swaine
Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog of
[hell,
Against his will fast bound in yron chaine,
And, roring horribly, did him compell
To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell
To griesly Pluto what on earth was donne,
And to the other damned ghosts which dwell
For aye in darkenesse, which day-light doth
shonne:
So led this Knight his captyve with like con-
quest wonne.

XXXVI

Yet greatly did the Beast repine at those
Strange bands, whose like till then he never
Ne ever any durst till then impose; [bore,
And chauffed inly, seeing now no more
His liberty was left aloud to rore:
Yet durst he not draw backe, nor once with-
stand
The proved powre of noble Calidore,
But trembled underneath his mighty hand,
And like a fearefull dog him followed through
the land.

TWO CANTOS OF
MUTABILITIE:

WHICH, BOTH FOR FORME AND MATTER, APPEARE TO BE PARCELL OF SOME
FOLLOWING BOOKE OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE,

UNDER

THE LEGEND OF CONSTANCIE.

CANTO VI.

Proud Change (not pleas'd in mortall things
Beneath the Moone to raigne)
Pretends as well of Gods as Men
To be the Sovereaine.

I

WHAT man that sees the ever-whirling wheele,
Of Change, the which all mortall things doth
sway,

But that thereby doth find, and plainly feele,
How MUTABILITY in them doth play
Her cruell sports to many mens decay?
Which that to all may better yet appeare,
I will rehearse that whylome I heard say,
How she at first her selfe began to reare
Gainst all the Gods, and th' empire sought
from them to beare.

II

But first, here falleth fittest to unfold
Her antique race and linage ancient,
As I have found it registred of old
In Faery Land amongst records permanent.
She was, to weet, a daughter by descent
Of those old Titans that did whylome strive
With Saturnes sonne for heavens regiment;
Whom though high Jove of kingdome did
deprive, [vive:
Yet many of their stemme long after did sur-

III

And many of them afterwards obtain'd
Great power of Jove, and high authority:
As Hecate, in whose almighty hand
He plac't all rule and principalitie,

To be by her disposed diversly
To Gods and men, as she them list divide;
And drad Bellona, that doth sound on hie
Warres and allarms unto Nations wide,
That makes both heaven and earth to tremble
at her pride.

IV

So likewise did this Titanesse aspire
Rule and dominion to her selfe to gaine;
That as a Goddess men might her admire,
And heavenly honors yield, as to them twaine:
And first, on earth she sought it to obtaine;
Where shee such proofe and sad examples
shewed
Of her great power, to many ones great paine,
That not men onely (whom shee soone subdued)
But eke all other creatures her bad dooings
rewed.

V

For she the face of earthly things so changed,
That all which Nature had establisht first
In good estate, and in meet order ranged,
She did pervert, and all their statutes burst:
And all the worlds faire frame (which none
yet durst
Of Gods or men to alter or misguide)
She alter'd quite; and made them all accurst
That God had blest, and did at first provide
In that still happy state for ever to abide.

vi

Ne shee the lawes of Nature onely brake,
But eke of Justice, and of Policie;
And wrong of right, and bad of good did make
And death for life exchanged foolishlie:
Since which all living wights have learn'd to
And all this world is woxen daily worse. [die,
O pittious worke of MUTABILITY,
By which we all are subject to that curse,
And death, instead of life, have sucked from
our curse!

vii

And now, when all the earth she thus had
brought
To her behest, and thrall'd to her might,
She gan to cast in her ambitious thought
T' attempt the empire of the heavens hight,
And Jove himselfe to shoulder from his right.
And first, she past the region of the ayre
And of the fire, whose substance thin and slight
Made no resistance, ne could her contraire,
But ready passage to her pleasure did prepare.

viii

Thence to the Circle of the Moone she clamb.
Where Cynthia raignes an everlasting glory,
To whose bright shining palace straight she
came,
All fairely deckt with heavens goodly storie;
Whose silver gates (by which there sate an hory
Old aged Sire, with hower-glasse in hand,
Hight Time,) she entred, were he life or sory;
Ne staide till she the highest stage had scand,
Where Cynthia did sit, that never still did
stand.

ix

Her sitting on an Ivory throne shee found,
Drawne of two steeds, th' one black, the other
white,
Environd with tenne thousand starres around
That duly her attentled day and night;
And by her side there ran her Page, that hight
Vesper, whom we the Evening-starre intend;
That with his Torche, still twinkling like
twilight, [wend,
Her lightened all the way where she should
And joy to weary wandring travellers did lend:

x

That when the hardy Titanesse beheld
The goodly building of her Palace bright,
Made of the heavens substance, and up-held
With thousand Crystall pillars of huge hight,
She gan to burne in her ambitious spright,
And t' envie her that in such glory raigned.
Eftsoones she cast by force and tortious might

Her to displace, and to her selfe to have gained
The kingdome of the Night, and waters by her
wained.

xi

Boldly shee bid the Goddesse downe descend,
And let her selfe into that Ivory throne;
For shee her selfe more worthy thereof wend,
And better able it to guide alone;
Whether to men, whose fall shee did bemone,
Or unto Gods, whose state shee did maligne,
Or to th' infernall Powers her need give lone
Of her faire light and bounty most benigne,
Her selfe of all that rule shee deemed most
condigne.

xii

But shee, that had to her that soveraigne seat
By highest Jove assigu'd, therein to beare
Nights burning lamp, regarded not her threat,
Ne yielded ought for favour or for feare;
But with sterne count'naunce and disdainfull
cheare,
Bending her horned browes, did put her back;
And, boldly blaming her for cymming there,
Bade her attonee from heavens coast to pack,
Or at her perill bide the wrathfull Thunders
wrack.

xiii

Yet nathemore the Giantesse forbare.
But boldly preacing-on raught forth her hand
To pluck her downe perforce from off her
chaire;
And, then, with lifting up her golden wand,
Threatned to strike her if shee did with-stand:
Where-at the starres, which round about her
blazed,
And eke the Moones bright wagon still did
stand.
All beeing with so bold attempt amazed,
And on her uncouth habit and sterne looke
still gazed.

xiv

Mean-while the lower World, which nothing
knew
Of all that chaunced heere, was darkned quite;
And eke the heavens, and all the heavenly
crew
Of happy wights, now unpurvaied of light,
Were much afraid, and wonderd at that sight;
Fearing least Chaos broken had his chaine,
And brought againe on them eternall night;
But chiefly Mercury, that next doth raigue,
Ran forth in haste unto the king of Gods to
plaine.

xv

All ran together with a great out-cry
To Joves faire palace fixt in heavens hight;

And, beating at his gates full earnestly,
Gan call to him aloud with all their might
To know what meant that suddaine lacke of
light.

The father of the Gods, when this he heard,
Was troubled much at their so strange affright,
Doubting least Typhon were againe uprear'd,
Or other his old foes that once him sorely
feard.

XVI

Eftsoones the sonne of Maia forth he sent
Downe to the Circle of the Moone, to knowe
The cause of this so strange astonishment,
And why she did her wonted course forslowe;
And if that any were on earth belowe
That did with charmes or Magick her molest,
Him to attache, and downe to hell to throwe;
But if from heaven it were, then to arrest
The Author, and him bring before his presence
prest.

XVII

The wing-foot God so fast his plumes did
beat,
That soone he came where-as the Titanesse
Was striving with faire Cynthia for her seat;
At whose strange sight and haughtie hardi-
nesse
He wondred much, and feared her no lesse:
Yet laying feare aside to doe his charge,
At last he bade her (with bold stedfastnesse)
Ceasse to molest the Moone to walke at large,
Or come before high Jove her dooings to dis-
charge.

XVIII

And there-with-all he on her shoulder laid
His snaky-wreathed Mace, whose awfull power
Doth make both Gods and helish fiends affraid:
Where-at the Titanesse did sternly lower,
And stoutly answer'd, that in evill hower
He from his Jove such message to her brought.
To bid her leave faire Cynthia's silver bower;
Sith shee his Jove and him esteemed nought,
No more then Cynthia's selfe; but all their
kingdoms sought.

XIX

The Heavens Herald staid not to reply,
But past away, his doings to relate
Unto his Lord; who now, in th' highest sky,
Was plac'd in his principall Estate,
With all the Gods about him congregat:
To whom when Hermes had his message told,
It did them all exceedingly amaze,
Save Jove; who, changing nought his count-
enance bold, {unfolds
Did unto them at length these speeches wise

HOWEAEH.

'Harken to mee awhile, yee heavenly
Powers!

Ye may remember since th' Earths cursed seed
Sought to assaile the heavens eternall towers,
And to us all exceeding feare did breed,
But, how we then defeated all their deed,
Yee all do knowe, and them destroyed quite;
Yet not so quite, but that there did succeed
An off-spring of their bloud, which did alite
Upon the fruitfull earth, which doth us yet
despite.

XXI

'Of that bad seed is this bold woman bred,
That now with bold presumption doth aspire
To thrust faire Phoebe from her silver bed,
And eke our selves from heavens high Empire,
If that her might were match to her desire.
Wherefore it now behoves us to advise
What way is best to drive her to retire,
Whether by open force, or counsell wise:
Areed, ye sonnes of God, as best as ye can de-
vise.

XXII

So having said, he ceas'd; and with his brow
(His black eye-brow, whose doomefull dreaded
Is wont to wield the world unto his vow, [beck
And even the highest Powers of heaven to
check)
Made signe to them in their degrees to speake,
Who straight gan cast their counsell grave
and wise. [nought did reck
Mean-while th' Earths daughter, thogh she
Of Hermes message, yet gan now advise
What course were best to take in this hot
bold emprise.

XXIII

Eftsoones she thus resolv'd; that whilst the
(After returne of Hermes Embassie) [Gods
Were troubled, and amongst themselves at
Before they could new counsels re-allie, [ods,
To set upon them in that extasie, [lend.
And take what fortune, time, and place would
So forth she rose, and through the purest sky
To Joves high Palace straight cast to ascend,
To prosecute her plot. Good on-set boads
good end.

XXIV

Shee there arriving boldly in did pass;
Where all the Gods she found in counsell
close,
All quite unarm'd, as then their manner was.
At sight of her they suddaine all arose
In great amaze, ne wist what way to chouse:

But Jove, all fearlesse, forc't them to aby;
And in his soveraine throne gan straight dispose
Himselfe, more full of grace and Majestie,
That mote encnare his friends, and foes mote
terrifie.

XXV

That when the haughty Titanesse beheld,
All were she fraught with pride and impu-
dence,
Yet with the sight thereof was almost queld;
And, inly quaking, seem'd as reft of sense
And voyd of speech in that drad audience,
Until that Jove himselfe her selfe bespake:
'Speake, thou fraile woman, speake with con-
fidence;
Whence art thou, and what doost thou here
What jille errand hast thou earths mansion to
forsake?'

XXVI

She, halfe confused with his great com-
maund,
Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride,
Him boldly answer'd thus to his demand:
'I am a daughter, by the mothers side,
Of her that is Graff-mother magnifice
Of all the Gods, great Earth, great Chaos
But by the fathers, (be it not envide) [child;
I greater am in bloud (whereon I build)
Then all the Gods, though wrongfully from
heaven exil'd.

XXVII

'For Titan (as ye all acknowledge must)
Was Saturnes elder brother by birth-right,
Both sonnes of Uranus; but by unjust [slight,
And guilefull meanes, through Corybantes
The younger thrust the elder from his right:
Since which thou, Jove, injuriously hast held
The Heavens rule from Titans sonnes by
might.
And them to hellish dungeons downe hast feld,
Witnesse, ye Heavens, the truth of all that I
have teld!'

XXVIII

Whil'st she thus spake, the Gods, that gave
good eare
To her bold words, and marked well her grace,
(Peering of stature tall as any there
Of all the Gods, and beautifull of face
As any of the Goddesses in place,)
Stood all astonied; like a sort of steeres,
Mongst whom some beast of strange and for-
raine race [peeres:
Unwares is chaunc't, far straying from his
So did their ghastly gaze bewray their hidden
feares.

XXIX

Till, having pauz'd awhile, Jove thus be-
spake:
'Will never mortall thoughts cease to aspire
In this bold sort to Heaven claime to make,
And touch celestiall seats with earthly mire?
I would have thought that bold Procrustes
Or Typhons fall, or proud Ixions paine, [hire,
Of great Prometheus tasting of our ire,
Would have suffiz'd the rest for to restraine,
And warn'd all men by their example to re-
taine.

XXX

'But now this off-scum of that cursed fry
Dare to renew the like bold enterprize,
And challenge th' heritage of this our skie;
Whom what should hinder, but that we like-
Should haffle as the rest of her allies, [wise
And thunder-drive to hell?' With that, he
shooke
His Nectar-deawed locks, with which theskyes
And all the world beneath for terror quooke,
And eft his burning levin-brond in hand he
tooke.

XXXI

But when he looked on her lovely face,
In which faire beames of beauty did appeare
That could the greatest wrath soone turne to
grace,
(Such sway doth beauty even in Heaven beare)
He staid his hand; and, having chang'd his
He thus againe in milder wise began: 'cheare,
'But ah! if Gods should strive with flesh
yvere,
Then shortly should the progeny of man
Be rooted out, if Jove should do still what he
can.

XXXII

'But thee, faire Titans child, I rather weene,
Through some vaine error, or inducement
light,
To see that mortall eyes have never secne;
Or through ensample of thy sisters might,
Bellona, whose great glory thou doost spight,
Since thou hast scene her dreadfull power be-
lowe, [affright)
Mongst wretched men (dismaide with her
To bandie Crownes, and Kingdoms to bestowe:
And sure thy worth no lesse then hers doth
seem to showe.

XXXIII

'But wote thou this, thou hardy Titanesse,
That not the worth of any living wight
May challenge ought in Heavens interesse;
Much lesse the Title of old Titans Right:

For we by conquest, of our soveraine might,
And by eternal doome of Fates decree,
Have wonne the Empire of the Heavens bright;
Which to our selves we hold, and to whom
wee
Shall worthy deeme partakers of our blisse to
bee.

XXXIV

'Then cease thy idle chaine, thou foolish
gerle;
And seeke by grace and goodnesse to obtaine
That place, from which by folly Titan fell:
There to thou maist perhaps, if so thou faine
Havest Jove thy gracious Lord and Soveraigne.
So having said, she thus to him replide:
'Ceasse, Saturnes sonne, to seeke by proffers
vaine
Of idle hopes t' allure me to thy side,
For to betray my Right before I have it tride.

XXXV

'But thee, O Jove! no equall Judge I deeme
Of my desert, or of my dewfull Right;
That in thine owne behalfe maist partiall seeme:
But to the highest him, that is beight
Father of Gods and men by equall might,
To weete, the God of Nature, I appeale.
There-at Jove waxed wroth, and in his spright
Did indly grudge, yet did it well conceale;
And bade Dan Phœbus scribe her Appellation
seale.

XXXVI

Eftsoones the time and place appointed were,
Where all, both heavenly Powers and earthly
wights,
Before great Natures presence should appeare,
For triall of their Titles and best Rights:
That was, to weete, upon the highest heights
Of Arlo-hill (Who knows not Arlo-hill?)
That is the highest head (in all mens sight)
Of my old father MOLE, whom Shepheards
quill [skill.
Renowned hath with hymnes fit for a rural

XXXVII

And, were it not ill fitting for this file
To sing of hilles and woods amongst warres and
Knights,
I would abate the sternenesse of my stile,
Mongst these sterne stounds to mingle soft
delights;
And tell how Arlo, through Dianaes sights,
(Reeing of old the best and fairest Hill
That was in all this holy Islands hights)
Was made the most unpleasant and most ill:
Meane-while, O Clio! lend Calliope thy quill.

XXXVIII

Whylome when IRELAND florished in fame
Of wealths and goodnesse, far above the rest
Of all that beare the British Islands name,
The gods then us'd (for pleasure and for rest)
Oft to resort thereto, when seem'd them best,
But none of all there-in more pleasure found
Then Cynthia, that is soveraine Queene profest
Of woods and Forrests which therein abound,
Sprinkled with wholsom waters more than most
on ground:

XXXIX

But amongst them all, as fittest for her game,
Eyth'er for chace of beasts with hound or boawe,
Or for to shrowde in shade from Phœbus flame,
Or bathe in fountaines that do freshly flowe
Or from high hilles or from the dales belowe,
She chose this Arlo; where she did resort
With all her Nymphes enrag'd on a rove,
With whom the woody Gods did oft consort,
For with the Nymphes the Satyres love to play
and sport.

XL

Amongst the which there was a Nymph that
Molanna; daughter of old Father Mole. [bright
And sister unto Mulla faire and bright,
Unto whose bed false Bregog whylome stole,
That Shepheard Colin dearly did condole, [be:
And made her lucklesse loves well knowne to
But this Molanna, were she not so shole,
Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee;
Yet, as she is, a tayrer flood may no man see.

XLI

For, first, she springs out of two marble Rocks,
On which a grove of Oakes high-mounted
growes,
That as a girland seemes to deck the locks
Of som faire Bride, brought forth with pom-
pous shewes
Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes:
So through the flowry Dales she tumbling
drowne
Through many woods and shady coverts flows,
(That on each side her silver channell crowne)
Till to the Plaine she come, whose Valleys
she doth drowne.

XLII

In her sweet streames Diana used oft
(After her sweaty chace and toylesome play)
To bathe her selfe; and, after, on the soft
And downy grasse her dainty limbes to lay
In covert shade, where none behold her may,
For much she hated sight of living eye.
Foolish god Faunus, though full many a day
He saw her clad, yet longed foolishly [vity,
To see her naked amongst her Nymphes in pri-

XLIII

No way he found to compasse his desire,
But to corrupt Molanna, this her maid,
Her to discover for some secret hire:
So her with flattering words he first assaid;
And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid,
Queene-apples, and red Cherries from the tree,
With which he her allured, and betrayd
To tell what time he might her Lady see
Where she her selfe did bathe, that he might
secret bee.

XLIV

There-to he promist, if shee would him
pleasure [better;
With this small boone, to quit her with a
To weat, that where-as shee had out of measure
Long lov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did
set her,
That he would undertake for this to get her
To be his Love, and of him liked well:
Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter
For many moe good turnes then he would tell,
The least of which this little pleasure should
excell.

XLV

The simple mayd did yield to him anone;
And eft him plac'd where he close might view
That never any saw, save onely one,
Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew,
Was of his hounds devour'd in Hunters hew.
Tho, as her manner was on sunny day,
Diana, with her Nymphes about her, drew
To this sweet spring; where, doffing her array,
She bath'd her lovely limbes, for Jove a likely
pray.

XLVI

There Faunus saw that pleased much his eye,
And made his hart to tickle in his brest,
That, for great joy of some-what he did spy,
He could him not containe in silent rest;
But, breaking forth in laughter, loud profest
His foolish thought: A foolish Faune indeed,
That couldst not hold thy selfe so hidden blest,
But wouldest needs thine owne conceit areed!
Babblers unworthy been of so divine a meed.

XLVII

The Goddesses, all abashed with that noise,
In haste forth started from the guilty brooke;
And, running straight where-as she heard his
voice,
Enclos'd the bush about, and there him tooke,
Like darred Larke, not daring up to looke
On her whose sight before so much he sought.
Thence forth they drew him by the hornes, and
shooke

Nigh all to peeces, that they left him nought;
And then into the open light they forth him
brought.

XLVIII

Like as an huswife, that with busie care
Thinks of her Dairy to make wondrous gaie,
Finding where-as some wicked beast unware
That breakes into her Dayr' house, there doth
draine [paine,
Her crawing pannes, and frustrate all her
Hath, in some snare or gin set close behind,
Entrapped him, and caught into her traine;
Then thinks what punishment were best
assign'd,
And thousand deathes deviseth in her venge-
full mind.

XLIX

So did Diana and her maydens all
Use silly Faunus, now within their baile:
They mocke and scorneth him, and him soule
miscall; [taile,
Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the
And by his goatish beard some did him haile:
Yet he (poore soule!) with patience all did
beare; [vaile:
For nought against their wils might counter-
Ne ought he said, what ever he did heare,
But, hanging downe his head, did like a Mome
appeare.

L

At length, when they had flouted him their
fill,
They gan to cast what penance him to give.
Some would have gelt him; but that same
would spill [live:
The Wood-gods breed, which must for ever
Others would through the river him have drive
And ducked deepe; but that seem'd penance
light:
But most agreed, and did this sentence give,
Him in Deares skin to clad; and in that plight
To hunt him with their hounds, him selfe save
how hee might.

LI

But Cynthia's selfe, more angry then the rest,
Thought not enough to punish him in sport,
And of her shame to make a gamesome jest;
But gan examine him in straighter sort,
Which of her Nymphes, or other close consort,
Him thither brought, and her to him betrayd?
He, much affraid, to her confessed short
That 'twas Molanna which her so bewraid.
Then all attonce their hands upon Molanna
laid.

LII

But him (according as they had decreed)
 With a Deeres-skin they covered, and then
 chaste
 With all their hounds that after him did speed;
 But he, more speedy, from them fled more
 fast
 Then any Deere, so sore him dread aghast.
 They after follow'd all with shrill out-cry,
 Shouting as they the heavens would have
 brast; [flie,
 That all the woods and dales, where he did
 Did ring againe, and loud re-echo to the skie.

LIII

So they him follow'd till they weary were;
 When, back returning to Molann' againe,
 They, by commaund'ment of Diana there
 Her whelm'd with stones. Yet Faunus (for
 her paine)
 Of her beloved Fanchin did obtaine,
 That her he would receive unto his bed:
 So now her waves passe through, a pleasant
 Plaine,
 Till with the Fanchin she her selfe do wed,
 And (both combin'd) themselves in cæ faire
 river spred.

LIV

Nath'lesse Diana, full of indignation,
 Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke,
 In whose sweet streame, before that bad oc-
 casion,
 So much delight to bathe her limbes she tooke:
 Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke
 All those faire forrests about Arlo hid;
 And all that Mountaine, which doth over-looke
 The richst champain that may else be hid;
 And the faire Shure, in which are thousand
 Salmons bred.

LV

Them all, and all that she so deare did way,
 Thence-forth she left; and, parting from the
 place,
 There-on an heavy haplesse curse did lay;
 To weet, that Wolves, where she was wont to
 space,
 Should harbour'd beand all those Woods deface,
 And Thieves should rob and spoile that Coast
 around: [Chase
 Since which, those Woods, and all that goodly
 Doth to this day with Wolves and Thieves a-
 bound: [since have found.
 Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers

CANTO VII.

Pealing from Jove to Nature's bar,
 Bold Alteration pleades
 Large Evidence: but Nature soone
 Her righteous Doome areads.

I

AN! whither doost thou now, thou greater
 Muse,
 Me from these woods and pleasing forrests
 And my fraile spirit, (that dooth oft refuse
 This too high flight, unfit for her weake wing)
 Lift up aloft, to tell of heavens King
 (Thy sovaine Sire) his fortunate successe;
 And victory in bigger notes to sing
 Which he obtain'd against that Titanesce,
 That him of heavens Empire sought to dis-
 possesse?

II

Yet, sith I needs must follow thy behest,
 Do thou my weaker wit with skill inspire,
 Fit for this turne; and in my feeble brest
 Kindle fresh sparks of that immortall fire
 Which learned minds inflameth with desyre

Of heavenly things: for who, but thou alone
 That art yborne of heaven and heavenly
 Sire,
 Can tell things doen in heaven so long ygone,
 So farre past memory of man that may be
 knowne?

III

Now, at the time that was before agreed,
 The gods assembled all on Arlo Hill;
 As well those that are sprung of heavenly seed,
 As those that all the other world do fill,
 And rule both sea and land unto their will:
 Onely th' infernall Powers might not appeare;
 As well for horror of their count'naunce ill,
 As for th' unruly fiends which they did
 feare;
 Yet Pluto and Proserpina were present
 there.

IV

And thither also came all other creatures,
What-ever life or motion do retaine,
According to their sundry kinds of features,
That Arlo scarcely could them all containe,
So full they filled every hill and Plaine;
And had not Natures Sergeant (that is Order)
Them well disposed by his busie paine,
And ranged farre abroad in every border,
They could have caused much confusion and
disorder.

V

Then forth issewed (great goddesse) great
dame Nature
With goodly port and gracious Majesty,
Being far greater and more tall of stature
Then any of the gods or Powers on lie:
Yet certes by her face and physnomy,
Whether she man or woman inly were,
That could not any creature well descry;
For with a veile, that wimpled every where,
Her head and face was hid that mote to none
appeare.

VI

That, some do say, was so by skill devized,
To hide the terror of her uncouth hew;
From mortall eyes that should be sore agrieved;
For that her face did like a Lion shew,
That eye of wight could not indure to view:
But others tell that it so beauteous was,
And round about such beames of splendor
threw,
That it the Sunne a thousand times did pass,
Ne could be scene but like an image in a glass.

VII

That well may seemen true; for well I
weene,
That this same day when she on Arlo sat,
Her garment was so bright and wondrous
sheene,
That my fraille wit cannot devise to what
It to compare, nor finde like stuffe to that:
As those three sacred Saints, though else most
wise,
Yet on mount Thabor quite their wits forgot,
When they their glorious Lord in strange dis-
guise
Transfigur'd sawe; his garments so did daze.

VIII

In a fayre Plaine upon an equall Hill
She placed was in a pavilion;
Not such as Craftes-men by their idle skill
Are wont for Princes states to fashion;
But th' Earth herselfe, of her owne motion,
Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe

Most dainty trees, that, shooting up anon,
Did seeme to bow their blooming heads full
lowe
For homage unto her, and like a throne did
showe.

IX

So hard it is for any living wight
All her array and vestiments to tell,
That old Dan Geffrey (in whose gentle spright,
The pure well head of Poesie did dwell)
In his *Foules parley* durst not with it mel,
But it transferd to Alane, who he thought
Had in his *Plaint of kinde* describ'd it well:
Which who will read set forth so as it ought,
Go seek he out that Alane where he may be
sought.

X

And all the earth far underneath her feete
Was dight with flowers that voluntary grew
Out of the ground, and sent forth odours sweet;
Tenne thousand mores of qundry sent and hew,
That might delight the smell, or please the view,
The which the Nymphes from all the brooks
thereby
Had gathered, they at her foot-stoole threw;
That richer seem'd then any tapestry,
That Princes bowres adorne with painted
imagery.

XI

And Mole himselfe, to honour her the more,
Did deck himselfe in freshest faire attire;
And his high head, that seemeth alwayes bore
With hardned frosts of former winters ire,
He with an Oaken girlond now did tire,
As if the love of some new Nymph, late scene,
Had in him kindled youthfull fresh desire,
And made him change his gray attire to greene:
Ah, gentle Mole! such joyance hath thee well
besene.

XII

Was never so great joyance since the day
That all the gods whylome assembled were
On Ilæmus hill in their divine array,
To celebrate the solemne bridall chaire
Twixt Pelcus and Dame Thetis pointed there;
Where Phœbus selfe, that god of Poets hight,
They say, did sing the spousall hymne full
cleere,
That all the gods were ravisht with delight
Of his celestall song, and Musicks wondrous
might.

XIII

This great Grandmother of all creatures bred,
Great Nature, ever young, yet full of eld;
Still mooving, yet unmoved from her sted;
Unseene of any, yet of all beheld;
Thus sitting in her throne, as I have told,

Before her came dame Mutability;
And, being lowe before her presence feld
With meek obaysance and humilitie,
Thus gan her plaintif Plea with words to
amplifie:

XIV

'To thee, O greatest Goddesses, onely great!
An humble suppliant loe! I lowely fly,
Seeking for Right, which I of thee entreat,
Who Right to all dost deale indifferently,
Damning all Wrong and tortious Injurie,
Which any of thy creatures do to other
(Oppressing them with power unequally),
Sith of them all thou art the equal mother,
And knittest each to each, as brother unto
brother.

XV

'To thee therefore of this same Jove I plaine.
And of his fellow gods that faine to be,
That challenge to themselves the whole worlds
raign,
Of which the greatest part is due to me,
And heaven it selfe by heritage in Fee:
For heaven and earth I both alike do deeme.
Sith heaven and earth are both alike to thee.
And gods no more then men thou dost esteeme;
For even the gods to thee, as men to gods, do
seeme.

XVI

'Then weigh, O soveraigne goddesses! by
what right
These gods do claime the worlds whole
sovereignty,
And that is onely dew unto thy might
Arrogate to themselves ambitiously:
As for the gods owne principality,
Which Jove usurpes unjustly, that to be
My heritage Jove's selfe cannot denie,
From my great Grandsire Titan unto mee
Deriv'd by dew descent; as is well knownen to
thee.

XVII

'Yet mauger Jove, and all his gods beside,
I do possesse the worlds most regiment;
As if ye please it into parts divide,
And every parts inholders to convent,
Shall to your eyes appeare incontinent.
And, first, the Earth (great mother of us all)
That only seemes unmov'd and permanent,
And unto Mutabilitie not thrall,
Yet is she chang'd in part, and eke in gene-

XVIII

'For all that from her springs, and is ybredde,
How-ever faire it flourish for a time,
Yet see we soone decay; and, being dead,
To turne againe unto their earthly slime:

Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime,
We daily see new creatures to arise,
And of their Winter spring another Prime,
Unlike in forme, and chang'd by strange dis-
guise: [lesse wise.
So turne they still about, and change in rest-

XIX

'As for her tenants, that is, man and beasts,
The beasts we daily see massacred dy
As thralls and vassals unto mens be-
casts;
And men themselves do change continually,
From youth to eld, from wealth to povertie,
From good to bad, from bad to worst of all:
Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly,
But eke their minds (which they immortall
call) [sions fall.
Still change and vary thoughts, as new ocea-

XX

'Ne is the water in more constant case,
Whether those same on high, or these belowe;
For th' Ocean moveth still from place to
place.
And every River still doth ebbe and flowe;
Ne any Lake, that seemes most still and slowe,
Ne Poble so small, that can his smoothnesse
holde
When any winde doth under heaven blowe;
With which the clouds are also tost and roll'd,
Now like great Hills, and streight like sluices
them unfold.

XXI

'So likewise are all watry living wights
Still tost and turned with continuall change,
Never abiding in their stedfast plights:
The fish, still floting, doe at random range,
And never rest, but evermore exchange
Their dwelling places, as the streames them
carrie:
Ne have the watry foules a certaine range
Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry;
But flitting still doe flie, and still their places
vary.

XXII

'Next is the Ayre; which who feelles not by
sense
(For of all sense it is the middle meane)
To sit still, and with subtile influence
Of his thin spirit all creatures to maintaine
In state of life? O weake life! that does
On thing so tickle as th' unsteady ayre, [leane
Which every howre is chang'd and altdred
cleane
With every blast that bloweth, fowle or faire:
The faire doth it prolong; the fowle doth it
impaire,

XXIII

'Therein the changes infinite beholde,
Which to her creatures every minute chaunce;
Now boyling hot, streight friezing deadly cold;
Now faire sun-shine, that makes all skip and
daunce; [tenance
Streight bitter stormes, and balefull coun-
That makes them all to shiver and to shake:
Rayne, haile, and snowe do pay them sad
[quake)
And dreadfull thunder-claps (that make them
With flames and flashing lights that thousand
changes make.

XXIV

'Last is the fire; which, though it live for
Necan be quenched quite, yet every day [ever,
We see his parts, so soone as they do sever,
To lose their heat and shortly to decay;
So makes himself his owne consuming pray:
Ne any living creatures doth he breed,
But all that are of others bredd doth slay;
And with their death his cruell life dooth feed:
Nought leaving but their barren ashes without
seede.

XXV

'Thus all these fower (the which the ground-
work bee
Of all the world and of all living wights)
To thousand sorts of Change we subject see:
Yet are they chang'd (by other wondrous
slights)
Into themselves, and lose their native might;
The Fire to Ayre, and th' Ayre to Water
sheere,
And Water into Earth; yet Water fights
With Fire, and Ayre with Earth, approaching
neere:
Yet all are in one body, and as one appeare.

XXVI

'So in them all raignes Mutabilitie;
How-ever these, that Gods themselves do call,
Of them do claime the rule and sovereignty;
As Vesta, of the fire æthereall;
Vulcan, of this with us so usuall;
Ops, of the earth; and Juno, of the ayre;
Neptune, of seas; and Nymphes, of Rivers all:
For all those Rivers to me subject are,
And all the rest, which they usurp, be all my
share.

XXVII

'Which to approven true, as I have told,
Vouchsafe, O Goddesse! to thy presence call
The rest which doe the world in being hold;
As times and seasons of the yeare that fall:

Of all the which demand in generall,
Or judge thyselfe, by verdit of thine eye,
Whether to me they are not subject all.
Nature did yeeld thereto; and by-and-by
Bade Order call them all before her Majesty.

XXVIII

So forth issew'd the Seasons of the yeare.
First, lusty Spring, all dight in leaves of
flowres [beare,
That freshly budded and new bloomes did
(In which a thousand birds had built their
bowres
That sweetly sung to call forth Paramours)
And in his hand a javelin he did beare,
And on his head (as fit for warlike stoures)
A guilt engraven morion he did weare:
That as soone did him love, so others did him
feare.

XXIX

Then came the jolly Sommer, being dight
In a thin silken cassock coloured greene,
That was unkn'd all, to be more light;
And on his head a girlond well besene
He wore, from which, as he had chauffed been,
The swear did drop; and in his hand he bore
A boawe and shaftes, as he in forrest greene
Had hunted late the Libbard or the Bore,
And now would bathe his limbes with labor
heated sore.

XXX

Then came the Autumne all in yellow clad,
As though he joyed in his plentious store,
Laden with fruits that made him laugh, full
glad
That he had banisht hunger, which to-fore
Had by the belly oft him pinched sore:
Upon his head a wreath, that was enrold
With ears of corne of every sort, he bore;
And in his hand a sickle he did holde,
To reape the ripened fruits the which the
earth had yold.

XXXI

Lastly, came Winter clothed all in frize,
Chattering his teeth for cold that did him
chill; [freese,
Whil'st on his hoary beard his breath did
And the dull drops, that from his purpled
bill
As from a limbeck did adown distill.
In his right hand a tipped staffe he held,
With which his feeble steps he stayed still;
For he was faint with cold, and weak with eld,
That scarce his loosed limbes he hable was to
weild.

XXXII

These, marching softly, thus in order went :
And after them the Monthes all riding came.
First, sturdy March, with brows full sternly
And armed strongly, rode upon a Ram, [bent
The same which over Hellespontus swam ;
Yet in his hand a spade he also hent,
And in a bag all sorts of seeds ysame,
Which on the earth he strowed as he went,
And filld her wombe with fruitfull hope of
nourishment.

XXXIII

Next came fresh April, full of lustyhed,
And wanton as a Kid whose hornes new buds :
Upon a Bull he rode, the same which led
Europa floating through th' Argolick fluds :
His hornes were gilden all with golden studs,
And garnished with garlands goodly dight
Of all the fairest flowres and freshest buds
Which th' earth brings forth ; and wet he
seem'd in sight [loves delight.
With waves, through which he waded for his

XXXIV

Then came faire May, the fayrest mayd on
ground,
Deckt all with dainties of her seasons pryde,
And throwing flowres out of her lap around :
Upon two brethren shoulders she did ride,
The twinnes of Leda ; which on cyther side
Supported her like to their soveraigne Queene :
Lord ! how all creatures laught when her they
saw,
And leapt and daunc't as they had raviht beene !
And Cupid selfe about her fluttrede all in
greene.

XXXV

And after her came jolly June, arrayd
All in greene leaves, as he a Player were ;
Yet in his time he wrought as well as playd,
That by his plough-yrons mote right well
appeare.
Upon a Crab he rode, that him did beare
With crooked crawling steps an uncouth pace.
And backward yode, as Bargeamen wont to
fare
Bending their force contrary to their face ;
Like that ungracious crew which faines demu-
rest grace.

XXXVI

Then came hot July boyling like to fire,
That all his garments he had cast away.
Upon a Lyon raging yet with ire
He boldly rode, and made him to obey :
It was the beast that whylome did array
The Nemean Forrest, till th' Amphitryonide
Him slew, and with his hide did him array.

Behinde his back a sithe, and by his side
Under his belt he bore a sickle circling wide.

XXXVII

The sixt was August, being rich arrayd
In garment all of gold downe to the ground ;
Yet rode he not, but led a lovely Mayd
Forth by the lilly hand, the which was cround
With eares of corne, and full her hand was
found :

That was the righteous Virgin, which of old
Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made abound ;
But after Wrong was lov'd, and Justice solde,
She left th' unrighteous world, and was to
heaven extold.

XXXVIII

Next him September march'd, ecke on foote,
Yet was he heavy laden with the spoyle
Of harvests riches, which he made his boot,
And him enrich with bounty of the soyle :
In his one hand, as fit for harvests toyle,
He held a knife-hook ; and in th' other hand
A paire of waights, with which he did assoyle
Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did
stand,
And equall gave to each as Justice duly scann'd.

XXXIX

Then came October full of merry glee ;
For yet his noule was totty of the must,
Which he was treading in the wine-fats see,
And of the joyous oyle, whose gentle gust
Made him so frolicke and so full of lust :
Upon a dreadfull Scorpion he did ride,
The same which by Dianæes doom unjust
Slew great Orion ; and ecke by his side [tyde,
He had his ploughing-share and coulter ready

XL

Next was November ; he full grosse and fat
As fed with lard, and that right well might
seeme ;
For he had been a fattening hogs of late, [steem,
That yet his browes with sweat did reek and
And yet the season was full sharp and breene :
In planting ecke he took no small delight.
Whereon he rode not easie was to deme ;
For it a dreadfull Centaure was in sight,
The seed of Saturne and faire Nais, Chiron
hight.

XLI

And after him came next the chill December :
Yet he, through merry feasting which he made
And great bonfires, did not the cold remember ;
His Saviour's birth his mind so much did glad.
Upon a shaggy-bearded Goat he rode,
The same wherewith Dan Jove in tender yeares,
They say, was nourisht by th' Idæan mayd ;

And in his hand a broad deepe boawle he beares,
Of which he freely drinks an health to all his
peeres.

XLII

Then came old January, wrapped well
In many weeds to keep the cold away;
Yet did he quake and quiver, like to quell,
And blowe his nayles to warme them if he may;
For they were numb'd with holding all the day
An hatche keene, with which he felled wood
And from the trees did lop the needlesse spray:
Upon an huge great Earth-pot steane he stood,
From whose wide mouth there flowed forth the
Romane Flood.

XLIII

And lastly came cold February, sitting
In an old wagon, for he could not ride,
Drawne of two fishes, for the season fitting,
Which through the flood before did softly slyde
And swim away: yet had he by his side
His plough and harness fit to till the ground,
And tooles to prune the trees, before the pride
Of hasting Prime did make them burgein
round.
So past the twelve Months forth, and their dew
places found.

XLIV

And after these there came the Day and
Night,
Riding together both with equall pase,
Th' one on a Palfrey blacke, the other white;
But Night had covered her uncomely face
With a blacke veile, and held in hand a mace,
On top whereof the moon and stars were pight;
And leeld and darknesse round about did
trace:
But Day did beare upon his scepters hight
The goodly Sun encompassed all with beames
bright.

XLV

Then came the Howres, faire daughters of high
Jove
And timely Night; the which were all endowed
With wondrous beauty fit to kindle love;
But they were virgins all, and love eschewed
That might forsack the charge to them fore-
shewed
By mighty Jove; who did them porters make
Of heavens gate (whence all the gods issued)
Which they did daily watch, and nightly wake
By even turnes, ne ever did their charge for-
sake.

XLVI

And after all came Life, and lastly Death;
Death with most grim and grisly visage
scene,

Yet is he nought but parting of the breath;
Ne ought to see, but like a shade to weene,
Unbodied, unsoul'd, unheard, unseene:
But Life was like a faire young lusty boy,
Such as they faine Dan Cupid to have beene,
Full of delightfull health and lively joy,
Deckt all with flowres, and wings of gold fit
to employ.

XLVII

When these were past, thus gan the Tita-
nesse:
'Lo! mighty mother, now be judge, and say
Whether in all thy creatures more or lesse
CHANGE doth not raigin and bear the greatest
sway;
For who sees not that Time on all doth pray?
But Times do change and move continually:
So nothing here long standeth in one stay:
Wherefore this lower world who can deny
But to be subject still to Mutability?'

XLVIII

Then thus gan Jove: 'Right true it is, that
these
And all things else that under heaven dwell
Are chang'd of Time, who doth them all
disceise
Of being: But who is it (to me tell) [pell
That Time himselfe doth move, and still com-
To keepe his course? Is not that namely wee
Which poure that vertue from our heavenly cell
That moves them all, and makes them changed
be?
So then we gods do rule, and in them also
these.

XLIX

To whom thus Mutability: 'The things,
Which we see not how they are mov'd and
swayd
Ye may attribute to your selves as Kings,
And say, they by your secret powre are made:
But what we see not, who shall us perswade?
But were they so, as ye them faine to be,
Mov'd by your might and ordered by your
Yet what if I can prove, that even yee [ayde,
Your selves are likewise chang'd, and subject
unto mee?

L

'And first, concerning her that is the first,
Even you, faire Cynthia; whom so much ye
make
Joves dearest darling, she was bred and nurst
On Cynthus hill, whence she her name did
take;
Then is she mortall borne, how-so ye crake:
Besides, her face and countenance every day
We changed see and sundry formes partake,

Now hornd, now round, now bright, now browne
and gray;
So that 'as changefull as the Moone' men use
to say.

LI

'Next Mercury; who though he lesse appeare
To change his hew, and alwayes seeme as one,
Yet he his course doth alter every yeare,
And is of late far out of order gone.
So Venus ceke, that goodly Paragone,
Though faire all night, yet is she darke all day:
And Phoebus selfe, who lightsome is alone,
Yet is he oft eclipsed by the way,
And fills the darkned world with terror and
dismay.

LII

'Now Mars, that valiant man, is changed
most;
For he sometimes so far runnes out of square,
That he his way doth seem quite to have lost,
And cleame without his usuall sphere to fare;
That even these Star-gazers stonish are
At sight thereof, and damne their lying bookes:
So likewise grim Sir Saturne oft doth spare
His sterne aspect, and calmes his crabbed looks.
So many turning cranks these have, so many
crookes.

LIII

'But you, Dan Jove, that only constant are,
And King of all the rest, as ye doe clame,
Are you not subject ceke to this misfare?
Then, let me aske you this withouten hame;
Where were ye borne? Some say in Crete by
name,
Others in Thebes, and others other-where;
But, wheresoever they comment the same,
They all consent that ye begotten were
And borne here in this world; ne other can
appeare.

LIV

'Then are ye mortall borne, and thrall to me
Unless the kingdome of the sky ye make
Immortall and unchangeable to be:
Besides, that power and vertue which ye spake,
That ye here worke, doth many changes take,
And your owne natures change; for each of
you,
That vertue have or this or that to make,
Is cheekt and changed from his nature trew.
By others opposition or obliquid view.

LV

'Besides, the sundry motions of your Spheares,
So sundry wayes and fashions as clerkes faine,
Some in short space, and some in longer
yeares,
What is the same but alteration plaine?

Onely the starry skie doth still remaine:
Yet do the Starres and Signes therein still
move,
And even itselfe is mov'd, as wizards saine.
But all that moveth doth mutation love;
Therefore both you and them to me I subject
prove.'

LVI

'Then, since within this wide great Universe
Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare,
But all things tost and turned by transverse,
What then should let, but I aloft should reare
My Trophee, and from all the triumph beare?
Now judge then, (O thou greatest goddesse
trew)

According as thy selfe doest see and heare,
And unto me addoom that is my dew;
That is, the rule of all, all being rul'd by you.'

LVII

So having ended, silence long enswed;
Ne Nature to or fro spake for a space,
But with firme eyes affixt the ground still
viewed.
Meane-while all creatures, looking in her face,
Expecting th' end of this so doubtfull case,
Did hang in long suspence what would enswed,
To whether side should fall the soveraine
place:
At length she, looking up with chearefull view,
The silence brake, and gave her doome in
speeches few.

LVIII

'I well consider all that ye have said,
And find that all things stedfastnesse do hate
And changed be; yet, being rightly wayd,
They are not changed from their first estate;
But by their change their being do dilate,
And turning to themselves at length againe,
Do worke their owne perfection so by fate:
Then over them Change doth not rule and
raigne,
But they raigne over Change, and do their
states maintaine.

LIX

'Cease therefore, daughter, further to aspire,
And thee content thus to be rul'd by mee,
For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire;
But time shall come that all shall changed bee,
And from thenceforth none no more change
shal see.'

So was the Titanesse put downe and whist,
And Jove confirm'd in his imperiall see.
Then was that whole assembly quite dismiss,
And Natur's selfe did vanish, whither no man
wist.

THE VIII. CANTO, UNPERFITE.

I	<p>WHEN I bethinke me on that speech why- Of Mutabilitie, and well it way! [leare Me seemes, that though she all unworthy were, Of the Heav'ns Rule; yet, very sooth to say, In all things else she beares the greatest away: Which makes me loath this state of life so tickle, And love of things so vaine to cast away; Whose flowring pride, so fading and so fickle, Short Time shall soon cut down with his con- suming sickle.</p>	II	<p>Then gin I thinke on that which Nature sayd, Of that same time when no more Change shall be, But stedfast rest of all things, firmly stayd Upon the pillours of Eternity, That is contrayr to Mutabilitie; For all that moveth doth in Change delight: But thence-forth all shall rest eternally With Him that is the God of Sabaoth hight: O! that great Sabaoth God, grant me that Sabaoths sight</p>
---	---	----	--

MISCELLANEOUS POEMS.

THE
SHEPHEARDES CALENDÉR:

CONTEYNING TWELVE ÆGLOGUES,

PROPORTIONABLE

TO THE TWELVE MONETHES.

• ENTITLED

To the noble and vertuous Gentleman, most worthy of
all titles both of learning and chevalrie,

MAISTER PHILIP SIDNEY.

TO HIS BOOKE.

*Goe, little booke! thy selfe present,
As child whose parent is unkent,
To him that is the president
Of Noblesse and of chetahce .
And if that Enue lurke at thee,
As sure it will, for succour flee
Under the shadow of his wing;
And asked who thee forth did bring,
A shepheards swaine, saye, did thee sing
All as his straying flocke he fedde:
And, when his honor has thee redde,
Crave pardon for my hardyhelde.
But, if that any aske thy name,
Say, thou wert base-begot with blame;
For-thy thereof thou takest shame.
And, when thou art past jeopardie,
Come tell me what was sayd of me,
And I will send more after thee.*

IMMERITO.

TO THE MOST EXCELLENT AND LEARNED.

BOTH ORATOR AND POETE,

MAYSTER GABRIELL HARVEY,

HIS VERIE SPECIAL AND SINGULAR GOOD FRIEND E. K. COMMANDETH THE GOOD LYKING OF THIS
HIS LABOUR, AND THE PATRONAGE OF THE NEW POETE.

Uncouth, unkiste, sayde the old famous Poete Chaucer: whom for his excellencie and wonderfull skil in making, his scholler Lidgate, a worthy scholler of so excellent a maister, calleth the Loadestarre of our Language: and whom our Colin Clout in his Æglogue calleth Tityrus the God of shepheards, comparing hym to the worthines of the Roman Tityrus, Virgile. Which proverbe, myne owne good friend Ma. Harvey, as in that good old Poete it served well Pandures purpose for the bolstering of his budy b. ocage, so very well taketh place in this our new Poete, who for that he is uncouth (as said Chaucer) is unkist, and unknown to most men, is regarded but of few. But I doubt not, so soone as his name shall come into the knowledge of men, and his worthines be sounded in the tromp of fame, but that he shall be not onely kiste, but also beloved of all, embraced of the most, and wondred at of the best. No lesse, I thinke, deserveth his wittinesse in devising, his pithinesse in uttering, his complaints of love so lovely, his discourses of pleasure so pleasantly, his pastoral rudenesse, his morall wisenesse, his dewe observing of Decorum every where, in personages, in seasons, in matter, in speech; and generally, in al seemely simplicitie of handling his matter, and framing his words: the which of many thinges which in him be straunge, I know will seeme the straungest, the words them selves being so auncient, the knitting of them so short and intricate, and the whole Periode and compasse of speache so delightfome for the roundnesse, and so grave for the straungenesse. And firste of the words to speuke, I grant

they be something hard, and of most men unused, yet both English, and also used of most excellent Authors, and most famous Poetes. In whom, whenas this our Poet hath bene much traveled and thoroughly redd, how could it be, (as that worthy Oratour sayde) but that walking in the sonne, although for other cause he walked, yet needes he mought be sunburnt; and, having the sound of those auncient Poetes still ringing in his eares, he mought needes, in singing, hit out some of theyr tunes. But whether he useth them by such casualltye and custome, or of set purpose and choyse, as thinking them fittest for such rusticall rudenesse of shepheards, eyther for that theyr rough sounde would make his rymes more ragged and rusticall, or els because such olde and obsolete wordes are most used of country folke, sure I thinke, and think I think not amisse, that they bring greif grace, and, as one would say, auctoritie to the verse. For albe, amongst many other faultes, it specially be objected of Valla against Livie, and of other against Saluste, that with over much stultie they affect antiquitie, as coveting thereby credence and honor of elder yeeres, yet I am of opinion, and eke the best learned are of the lyke, that those auncient solemne wordes are a great ornament, both in the one, and in the other; the one labouring to set forth in hys worke an eternall image of antiquitie, and the other carefully discoursing matters of gravitie and importance. For, if my memory faile not, Tullie, in that booke wherein he endeavourereth to set forth the puterne of a perfect Oratour, sayth that oftentimes an auncient worde maketh the style seeme grave, and as it were

reverend, no otherwise then we honour and reverence gray heares, for a certain religious regard, which we have of old age. Yet nether every where must old words be stuffed in, nor the common *Dialecte* and maner of speaking so corrupted thereby, that, as in old buildings, it seme disorderly and ruinous. But all us in most exquisite pictures they use to blaze and portraict not only the daintie lineaments of beautye, but also rounde about it to shadowe the rude timber and craggy cliffs, that, by the busenesse of such parts, more excellency may accrew to the principall; for oftentimes we fynde our selves, I knowe not how, singularly delighted with the shewe of such naturall rudenesse, and take great pleasure in that disorderly order. Even so doe those rough and harsh termes enlumine, and make more clearly to appeare, the brightnesse of brave and glorious words. So oftentimes a dischorde in Musick maketh a comely concordance: so great delight tooke the worthy Poete *Alceus* to behold a blemish in the joynt of a wel shaped body. But, if any will rashly blame such his purpose in choyse of old and uncounted words, him may I more justly blame and condempne, or of witlesse headnesse in judging, or of heedlesse hardnesse in condemning; for, not marking the compasse of hys bent, he wil judge of the length of his cast. for in my opinion it is one special prayse of many, which are dew to this Poete, that he hath laboured to restore, as to their rightfull heritage, such good and naturall English words, as have ben long time out of use, and almost cleave disherited. Which is the onely cause, that our Mother tongue, which truly of it self is both ful enough for prose, and stately enough for verse, hath long time ben counted most bare and barren of both. Which default whenns some endeavored to supply and recure, they patched up the holes with peeces and rags of other languages, borrowing here of the French, there of the Italian, every where of the Latine; not weighing how ill those tongues accorde with themselves, but much worse with ours: So now they have made our English tongue a gullimaufraz, or hodgepodge of al other speeches. Other some, not so wel seeing in the English tongue as perhaps in other languages, if they happen to here an olde word, albeit very naturall and significant, crye out straightway, that we speak no English, but gibbrish, or rather such as in old time *Evanders* mother spake: whose first shame is, that they are not ashamed, in their own mother tongue, to be counted straungers and aliens. The second shame no lesse then the first, that

what so they understand not, they streight way deeme to be senselesse, and not at al to be understode. Much like to the Mole in *Æsopes* fable, that, being bynd her selfe, would in no wise be perswaded that any beast could see. The last, more shamefull then both, that of their owne country and naturall speech, which together with their Nources milk they sucked, they have so base regard and bastard judgement, that they will not onely themselves not labor to garnish and beautifie it, but also repine, that of other it shold be embellished. Like to the dogge in the manger, that him selfe can eate no hay, and yet barketh at the hungry bullock, that so faine would feede: whose currish kind, though it cannot be kept from barking, yet cometh I them thanke that they refrain from byting.

Now, for the knitting of sentences, which they call the joynts and members thereof, and for al the compasse of the speech, it is round without roughnesse, and leawed without hardnes, such indeede as may be perceived of the leaste, understode of the moste, but judged onely of the learned. For what in most English wryters useth to be loose, and as it were ungyd, in this Authour is well grounded, finely framed, and strongly trussed up together. In regard wherof, I scorne and spue out the ruckellye route of our ragged ryimers (for so themselves use to hunt the letter) which without learning baste, without judgement jangle, without reason rage and fume, as if some instinct of Poeticall spirite had newly ravished them above the meanenesse of common capacite. And being, in the midst of all theyr bravery, suddenly, eyther for want of matter, or of ryme, or having forgotten theyr former conceipt, they seeme to be so pained and traveled in theyr remembrance, as it were a woman in childebirth, or as that same *Pythia*, when the trance came upon her: 'Os tabulum fera corda domans, &c.'

Nethelless, let them a Gods name feede on theyr owne folly, so they seeke not to darken the beames of others glory. As for *Colin*, under whose person the Authour selfe is shadowed, how furre he is from such wanted titles and glorious shewes, both him selfe sheweth, where he sayth,

'Of Muses Hobbins, I cometh no skill.

And

'Enough is me to paint out my unrest, &c.'

And also appeareth by the busenesse of the name, wherein it seemeth he chose rather to unfold great matter of argument covertly then,

professing it, not suffice thereto accordingly. Which moved him rather in *Æglogues* then other wise to write, doubting perhaps his habilitie, which he little needed, or mynding to furnish our tongue with this kinde, wherein it faulteth; or following the example of the best and most auncient Poetes, which devised this kind of wryting, being both so base for the matter, and homely for the manner, at the first to trye theyr habilitie; and as young birdes, that be newly crept out of the nest, by little first to prove theyr tender wyngs, before they make a greater flyght. So flew Theocritus, as you may perceiue he was all ready full fledged. So flew Virgile, as not yet well feeling his winges. So flew Mantuane, as not being full sound. So Petrarque. So Boccace. So Marot, Sanazarius, and also diuers other excellent both Italian and French Poetes, whose foting this Author every where followeth; yet so as few, but they be wel sented, can trace him out. So finally flyeth this our new Poete as a bird whose principals be scarce growen out, but yet as one that in time shall be able to keepe wing with the best.

Now, as touching the generall dryft and purpose of his *Æglogues*. I mind not to say much, him self labouring to conceale it. Onely this appeareth, that his unstayed yongth had long wandred in the common Labyrinth of Love, in which time to mitigate and allay the heate of his passion, or els to warne (as he sayth) the young shepheards, s. his equals and companions, of his unfortunate folly, he compiled these *Æglogues*, which, for that they be proportioned to the state of the *ix* monthes, he termeth the Shepheards Calendar, applying an olde name to a new worke. Hereunto have I added a certain Glossae, or schollion, for the exposition of old wordes, and harder phrases; which maner of glossing and commenting, well I wote, wil seme straunge and rare in our tongue: yet, for so much as I knew many excellent and proper devises, both in wordes and matter, would passe in the speedy cours. of reading, either as unknown, or as not marked, and that in this kind, as in other, we might be equal to the learned of other nations, I thought good to take the paines upon me, the rather for that by means of some familiar acquaintance I was made privie to his counsell and secret meaning in them, as also in sundry other works of his, which albeit I know he nothing so much hateth us to promulgate, yet thus much have I adventured upon his friendship, him self being for long time furthestraunged, hoping that this will the rather

occasion him to put forth diuers other excellent works of his, which slepe in silence; as his Dreames, his Legendes, his Court of Cupide, and sondry others, whose commendations to set out were verie vaine, the thinges though worthy of many, yet being knowne to few. These my present paynes, if to any they be pleasurable or profitable, be you judge, mine own good maister Harvey, to whom I have, both in respect of your worthinesse generally, and otherwise upon some particular and special considerations, vowed this my labour, and the maydenhead of this our common friends Poetrie; himselfe having already in the beginning dedicated it to the Noble and worthy Gentleman, the right worshipfull Ma. Phi. Sidney, a special favourer and maintainer of all kind of learning. Whose cause, I pray you, Sir, yf Envie shall stir up any wrongful accusation, defend with your mighty Rhetorick and other your rare gifts of learning, as you can, and shield with your good wil, as you ought, against the malice and outrage of so many enemies, as I know wil be set on fire with the sparks of his kindled glory. And thus recommending the Author unto you, as unto his most special good friend, and my selfe unto you both, as one making singular account of two so very good and so choise friends, I bid you both most hartely farewell, and commit you and your commendable studies to the tuition of the Greatest.

Your owne assuredly to be commaunded,

E. K.

Post scr.

NOW I trust, M. Harvey, that upon sight of your special friends and fellow Poets doings, or els for envie of so many unworthy Quidams, which catch at the garland which to you alone is due, you will be perswaded to pluck out of the hateful darknesse those so many excellent English poems of yours which lye hid, and bring them forth to eternall light. Trust me, you doe both them great wrong, in depriving them of the desired sonne; and also your selfe, in smothering your deserved prayes; and all men generally, in withholding from them so divine pleasures, which they might conceive of your gallant English verses, as they have already doen of your Latine Poemes, which, in my opinion, both for invention and Elocution are very delicate and superexcellent. And thus againe I take my leave of my good Master Harvey: from my lodging at London this 10. of April, 1579.

THE GENERALL ARGUMENT OF THE WHOLE BOOKE.

LITTLE, I hope, needeth me at large to discourse the first Originall of *Æglogues*, having already touched the same. But, for the word *Æglogues*, I know, is unknown to most, and also mistaken of some of the best learned (as they think,) I will say somewhat thereof, being not at all impertinent to my present purpose.

They were first of the Greekes, the inventours of them, called *Æglogai*, as it were *αἰγίων*, or *αἰγούμαλον λόγοι*, that is, Gotheards tales. For although in Virgile and others the speakers be more Shepheards then Gotheards, yet Theocritus, in whom is more ground of authoritie then in Virgile, this specially from that deriving, as from the first head and wellspring, the whole Invention of these *Æglogues*, maketh Gotheards the persons and authors of his tales. This being, who seeth not the grossenesse of such as by colour of learning would make us beleve that they are more rightly termed *Eclogui*, as they would say, extraordinary discourses of unnecessary matter: which definition albe in substance and meaning it agree with the nature of the thing, yet no whit answereth with the *ἀνάλυσις* and interpretation of the word. For they be not termed *Eclogues*, but *Æglogues*; which sentence this author very well observing, upon good judgement, though indeede few Gotheards have to doe herein, nethelasse doubteth not to cal them by the used and best known name. Other curious discourses hereof I reserve to greater occasion.

These xij *Æglogues*, every where answering to the seasons of the twelve monethes, may be well divided into three formes or ranckes. For eyther they be Plaintive, as the first, the sixth, the eleventh, and the twelfth; or Recreative, such as al those be, which containe matter of love, or commendation of special personages; or Moral, which for the most part be mixed with some Satyricall bitterness; namely, the second, of reverence dewe to old

age; the fifth, of coloured deceit; the seventh and ninth, of dissolute shepheards and pastours; the tenth, of contempt of Poetrie and pleasaunt wits. And to this division may every thing herein be reasonably applied: a few onely except, whose speciall purpose and meaning I am not privie to. And thus much generally of these xij *Æglogues*. Now will we speake particularly of all, and first of the first, which he calleth by the first monethes name, Januarie: wherein to some he may seeme fowly to have faulted, in that he erroneously beginneth with that moneth, which beginneth not the yeare. For it is wel known, and stoutely mainteyned with stronge reasons of the learned, that the yeare beginneth in March; for then the sonne reneweth his finished course, and the seasonable spring refresheth the earth, and the plessaunce thereof, being buried in the sadnesse of the dead winter now worne away, reliveth.

This opinion maynteine the olde Astrologers and Philosophers, namely, the reverend Andalo, and Macrobius in his holydayes of Saturne; which account also was generally observed both of Grecians and Romans. But, saving the leave of such learned heads, we mayntaine a custome of coumpting the seasons from the moneth January, upon a more speciall cause then the heathen Philosophers ever coulde conceive, that is, for the incarnation of our mighty Saviour, and eternall redeemer the L. Christ, who, as then renewing the state of the decayed world, and returning the compasse of expired yeres to theyr former date and first commencement, left to us his heires a memoriall of his birth in the ende of the last yeere and beginning of the next. Which reckoning, beside that eternall monument of our salvation, leaneth also upon good proofe of speciall judgement.

For albeit that in elder tymes, when as yet the coumpt of the yere was not perfected, as afterwarde it was by Julius Cæsar, they be-

gan to tel the monethes from Marches beginning, and according to the same God (as is sayd in Scripture) commaunded the people of the Jewes, to count the moneth Abib, that which we call March, for the first moneth, in remembraunce that in that moneth he brought them out of the land of Ægypt: yet, according to tradition of latter times, it hath bene otherwise observed, both in government of the Church and rule of Mightiest Realmes. For from Julius Cæsar who first observed the leape yeere, which he called *Bissextile Annum*, and brought into a more certain course the odde wandring dayes which of the Greekes were called *ὑπερβαλλοντες*, of the Romanes *intercalares*, (for in such matter of learning I am forced to use the termes of the learned,) the monethes have bene nombred xij, which in the first ordinance of Romulus were but tenne, counting but ccciiij dayes in every yeare, and beginning with March. But Numa Pompilius, who was the father of al the Romain ceremonies and religion, seeing that reckoning to agree neither with the course of the sonne nor of the moone, thereunto added two monethes, January and February; wherein it seemeth, that wise king minded, upon good reason, to begin the yeare

at Januarie, of him therefore so called *tantumquam Janua anni*, the gate and entraunce of the yere; or of the name of the god *Janus*, to which god for that the olde Paynims attributed the byrth and beginning of all creature new comming into the worlde, it seemeth that he therfore to him assigned the beginning and first entraunce of the yeare. Which account for the most part hath hetherto continued: Notwithstanding that the Ægyptians beginne theyr yeare at September for that, according to the opinion of the best Rabbinis and very purpose of the Scripture itselfe, God made the worlde in that Moneth, that is called of them *Tisri*. And therefore he commaunded them to keepe the feast of Pavilious in the end of the yeare, in the xv. day of the seventh moneth, which before that time was the first.

But our Authour respecting nether the subtiltie of thone part, nor the antiquitie of thother, thinketh it fittest, according to the simplicitie of common understanding, to begin with Januarie; wening it perhaps no decorum that Shepheards should be seene in matter of so deepe insight, or canvase a case of so doubtful judgment. So therefore beginneth he, and so continueth he throughout.

THE SHEPHEARDS CALENDER.

JANUARIE.

ÆGLOGA PRIMA. ARGUMENT.

In this fyrst Æglogue Colin Cloute, a shepherdes boy, complaineth him of his unfortunate love, being but newly (as he saith) enamoured of a cuntry lasse called Rosolinde with which strong affection being very sore traveled, he compareth his carefull case to the sadde season of the yeare, to the frostie ground, to the frozen trees, and to his owne winter-beaten flocke. And lastly, fynding himselfe robbed of all former pleasure and delights, hee breaketh his Pipe in peeces, and casteth him selfe to the ground.

COLIN CLOUTE.

A SHEPHEARDS boye, (no better doe him call,)
When Winters wastfull spight was almost
All in a sunneshine day, as did befall, [open,
Led forth his flock, that had bene long ypent :

So faynt they woxe, and feeble in the folde,
That now unnethe their feete could them
uphold.

All as the Sheepe, such was the shepheards
looke,
For pale and wanne he was, (alas the while!)
May seeme he lovd, or els some care he took;
Well couth he tune his pipe and frame his
stile :

Tho to a hill his faynting flocke he ledde,
And thus him playnd, the while his shepe
there fedde.

'Ye Gods of love, that pitie lovers payne,
(If any gods the paine of lovers pitie)
Looke from above, where you in joyes remaine,
And bowe your eares unto my dolefull dittie :
And, Pan, thou shepheards God that once
didst love, [prove.
Pitie the paines that thou thy selfe didst

'Thou barrein ground, whome winters wrath
bath wasted,
Art made a myrrhour to behold my plight :
Whilome thy fresh spring flouird, and after
hasted

Thy sommer prowde, with Daffadillies dight ;
And now is come thy wynters stormy state,
Thy mantle mard, wherein thou maskedst
late.

'Such rage as winters reigneth in my heart,
My life-bloud friesing with unkindly cold ;
Such stormy stoures do breede my balefull
smart,

As if my yeare were wast and woxen old ;
And yet, alas ! but now my spring begonne,
And yet, alas ! yt is already donne.

'You naked trees, whose shady leaves are lost,
Wherein the byrds were wont to build their
bowre, [frost,
And now are clothd with mosse and hoary
Insteade of blossomes, wherewith your buds did
flowre ; [raine,
I see your teares that from your boughes doe
Whose drops in drey yscles remaine.

'All so my lustfull leafe is drye and sere,
My finely buds with wayling all are wasted ;
The blossome which my branch of youth did
beare [blasted ;
With breathed sighes is blowne away and
And from mine eyes the drizzling teares de-
scend,
As on your boughes the yscles depend.

'Thou feeble flocke, whose fleece is rough and
rent, [fare,
Whose knees are weake through fast and evill
Mayst witness well, by thy ill government,
Thy maysters mind is overcome with care :
Thou weake, I wanne ; thou leane, I quite
forlorne :
With mourning pyne I ; you with pyning
mourne.

'A thousand sithes I curse that carefull hower
Wherein I longd the neighbour towne to see,
And eke tenne thousand sithes I blesse the
stoure

Wherein I sawe so fayre a sight as shee:

Yet all for naught: such sight hath bred
my bane. [and payne!

Ah, God! that love should breede both joy

'It is not Hobbinol wherefore I plaine,
Albee my love he seeke with dayly suit;
His clownish gifts and curtsies I disdaine,
His kiddes, his cracknelles, and his early fruit.

Ah, foolish Hobbinol! thy gyfts bene vayne;
Colin them gives to Rosalind againe.

'I love thilke lasse, (alas! why doe I love?)
And am forlorne, (alas! why am I lorne?)
Shee deignes not my good will, but doth re-
prove,

And of my rurall musicke holdeth scorne.

Shepheards devise she hateth as the snake,
And laughs the songs that Colin Clout doth
make.

'Wherefore, my pype, albee rude Pan thou
please,

Yet for thou pleasest not where most I would:
And thou, unflucky Muse, that wontst to ease
My musing mynd, yet canst not when thou
should;

Both pype and Muse shall sorge the while
abye,

So broke his oaten pype, and downe dyd ly e.

By that, the welked Phœbus gan availle
His weary waine; and nowe the frosty Night
Her mantle black through heavy gan overhaile:
Which seeme, the pensive boy, halfe in despaire,
Arose, and homeward drove his somned sheepe,
Whose hanging heads did seeme his careful
case to weepe.

COLINS EMBLEME.

Anchōra speme.

GLOSSE.

Colin Cloute, is a name not greatly used, and yet have I sene a Poesie of M. Skeltons under that title. But indeede the word *Colin* is Frenche, and used of the French Poete Marot (if he be worthy of the name of a Poete) in a certain *Éplogue*. Under which name this Poete secretly shadoweth himself, as sometimes did Virgil under the name of *Tityrus*, thinking it much fitter then such Latine names, for the great unlikelyhoode of language.

Cunethes, scarcely.

Conthe, cometh of the worbe *Conne*, that is, to know, or to have skill. As well interpreteth the same, the worthy Sir Tho. Smith, in his booke of government: wherof I have a perfect copie in wryting, lent me by his kinsman, and my very singular good freind, M. Gabriel Harvey: as also of some other his most grave and excellent wrytings.

Sythe, time.

Neighbour towne, the next towne: expressing the Latine *Vicina*.

Stoure, a fitt.

Sere, withered.

His clownish gyfts, imitateth Virgils verse.

'Rusticus es Corydon, nec munera curat Alexis.'

Hobbinol, is a fained country name, whereby, it being so commune and usuall, seemeth to be hidden the person of some his very speciall and most familiar freind, whom he entirely and extraordinarily beloved, as peradventure shall be more largely declared hereafter. In this place seemeth to be some savour of disorderly love, which the learned call *pederastice*; but it is gathered beside his mean-

ing. For who that hath red Plato his dialogue called *Alcybiades*, Xenophon, and Maximus Tyrius, of Socrates opinions, may easily perceive, that such love is much to be allowed and liked of, specially so meant, as Socrates used it: who sayth, that indeede he loved *Alcybiades* extremely, yet not *Alcybiades* person, but hys soule, which is *Alcybiades* owne selfe. And so is *pederastice* much to be preferred before *gynerastice*, that is, the love whiche enflameth men with lust toward womankind. But yet let no man thinke, that herein I stand with Lucian, or his devlish disciple Unico Aretino, in defence of execrable and horrible sinnes of forbidden and unlawful fleshlinesse. Whose abominable error is fully confuted of Perizonius, and others.

I love, a pretty *Epanorthosis* in these two verses; and withall a *Paronomasia* or playing with the word, where he sayth *I love thilke lasse alas*, &c.

Rosalinde, is also a feigned name, which, being wel ordered, will bewray the very name of hys love and mistresse, whom by that name he colourereth. So as Ovide shadoweth hys love under the name of *Corynna*, which of some is supposed to be *Julia*, theemperour Augustus his daughter, and wyfe to *Agryppa*. So doth *Aruntius Stella* every where call his Lady *Asteris* and *Ianthia*, albe it is wel known that her right name was *Violantilla*: as witnesseth Statius in his *Epithalamium*. And so the famous Paragone of Italy, *Madonna Ceelia*, in her letters envelopeth her selfe under the name of *Zima*: and *Petrona* under the name of *Bellochia*. And thus generaly hath bene a common custome of counterfeiting the names of secret Personages. *Anall*, bring downe
Overtaile, drawe over.

EMBLEME.

His embleme or Poesye is here under added in Italian, *Anchōra speme*: the meaning wherof is, that notwithstanding his extreme passion and lucklesse love, yet, leaning on hope, he is some what recomforted.

FEBRUARIE.

ÆGLOGA SECUNDA. ARGUMENT.

THIS Æglogue is rather morall and generall, then bent to any secret or particular purpose. It specially conteyneth a discourse of old age, in the person of Thenot, an olde Shepheard, who for his crookednesse and unlustinesse is scorned of Cuddie, an unhappy Heardmans bove. The matter very well accordieth with the season of the moneth, the yeare now dropping, and as it were drawing to his last age. For as in this time of yeare, so then in our bodies, there is a dry and withering cold, which congealeth the cruell blood, and fruseth the netherbeaten flesh with stormes of Fortune, and hoare frosts of Care. To which purpose the olde man telleth a tale of the Oake and the Bryer, so truly, and so feelingly, as, if the thing were set forth in some Picture before our eyes, more playfully could not appeare.

CUIDDIE.

Cuddie.

AH for pittie! wil rancke Winters rage
These bitter blasts never ginne tasswage?
The kene cold blowes through my beaten hyde,
All as I were through the body gryde:
My ragged rontes all shiver and shake,
As doen high Towers in an earthquake:
They went in the wind wagge their wrigle
tayles,
Perke as a Peacock; but now it aiales.

Thenot.

Lewdly complainest thou, laesie ladde,
Of Winters wracke for making thee sadde.
Must not the world wend in his commun course,
From good to badd, and from badd to worse,
From worse unto that is worst of all,
And then returne to his former fall?
Who will not suffer the stormy time,
Where will he live tyll the lusty prime?
Selfe have I worne out thrise threttie yeares,
Some in much joy, many in many teares,
Yet never complained of cold nor heate,
Of Sommers flame, nor of Winters threat,
Ne ever was to Fortune foeman,
But gently tooke that ungently came;
And ever my flocke was my chiefe care,
Winter or Sommer they mought well fare.

Cuddie.

No marveille, Thenot, if thou can beare
Cherefully the Winters wrathful cheare;
For Age and Winter accord full nie,
This chill, that cold: this crooked, that wrye;
And as the lowring Wether lookes downe,
So semest thou like Good Fryday to frowne:
But my flowing youth is foe to frost,
My shippe unwont in stormes to be tost.

THENOT.

Thenot.

The soveraigne of seas he blames in vaine,
That, once sea-beate, will to sea againe:
So loytring livd you little heardgroomes,
Keeping your beastes in the budded broomes:
And, when the shining sunne laugheth once,
You deemeth the Spring is come atonce;
Tho gynne you, fond flyes! the cold to
scorne,
And, crowing in pypes made of greene come,
You thinke to be Lords of the yeare;
But oft, when ye count you freed from feare,
Comes the braime Winter with chamfred browes,
Full of wrinkles and frostie furrowes,
Drerily shooting his stormy darte,
Which cruddles the blood and pricks the harte:
Then is your carelesse courage accorded,
Your carefull hearda with cold bene annoied:
Then paye you the price of your surquedrie,
With weeping, and wayling, and misery.

Cuddie.

Ah, foolish old man! I scorne thy skill,
That wouldest me my springing younght to
I deeme thy braine emperished bee
Through rusty ale, that hath rotted thee:
Or sicker thy head veray tottie is,
So on thy corbe shoulder it leanes amisse.
Now thy selfe hast lost both loope and topp,
Als my budding branch thou wouldest cropp;
But were thy yeares greene, as now bene myne,
To other delights they would incline:
Tho wouldest thou learne to caroll of Love,
And hery with hymnes thy lasses glove;
Tho wouldest thou pype of Phyllis prayse;
But Phyllis is myne for many dayes.
I wonne her with a gyrdle of gelt,
Embost with buegle about the belt:

Such an oneshepheards would make full faine;
Such an one would make thee younge againe.

Thenot.

Thou art a fon of thy love to bostē;
All that is lent to love wyll be lost.

Cuddie.

Seest howe brag yond Bullocke beares,
So smirke, so smoothe, his pricked eares?
His hornes bene as broad as Itainebowe bent,
His dewelap as lythe as lasse of Kent:
See howe he venteth into the wynd;
Weenest of love is not his mynd?
Seemeth thy flocke thy counsell can,
So lustlesse bene they, so weake, so wan;
Clothed with cold, and hoary wyth frost,
Thy flocks father his corage hath lost.
Thy Ewes, that wont to have blowne bags,
Like wailfull widowes hangen their crags;
The rather Lambes bene starved with cold,
All for their Maister is lustlesse and old.

Thenot.

Cuddie, I wote thou kenst little good.
So vainly tadvauce thy headlesse hood;
For youth is a bubble blown up with breath,
Whose witt is weakenesse, whose wage is death,
Whose way is wilderness, whose ynnē Penance,
And stoope-gallaunt Age, the hoste of Greave,
But shall I tel thee a tale of truth, [yauance.
Which I cond of Tityrus in my youth.
Keeping his sheepe on the hills of Kent?

Cuddie.

To nought more, Thenot, my mind is bent
Then to heare novells of his devise;
They bene so well-thewed, and so wise,
What ever that good old man bespake.

Thenot.

Many meete tales of youth did he make,
And some of love, and some of chevalrie;
But none titter then this to applie.
Now listen a while and hearken the end.
There grewe an aged Tree on the greene,
A goodly Oake sometime had it bene,
With armes full strong and largely displayd,
But of their leaves they were disarayde:
The bodie bigge, and mightely pight,
Thoroughly rooted, and of wonderous hight;
Whilome had bene the King of the field,
And moche mast to the husband did yelde,
And with his nuts larded many swine:
But now the gray moss marred his rine; yind.

Forzaud. farmer.

His bared boughes were beaten with stormes,
His toppe was bald, and wasted with wormes,
His honor decayed, his branches sere.

Hard by his side grewe a bragging Brere,
Which proudly thrust into Thelment,
And seemed to threat the Firmament:
It was embellisht with blossomes fayre,
And thereto we wonned to repayre
The shepheards daughters to gather flowres,
To peinet their girlonds with his colowres; pant
And in his small bushes used to shrowde
The sweete Nightingale singing so lowde;
Which made this foolish Brere wexe so bold,
That on a time he cast him to scold
And snubbe the good Oake, for he was old.
'Why standst there (quoth he) thou brutish
blocke?' [stocke;

Nor for fruit nor for shadowe serves thy
Seest how fresh my flowers bene spredde,
Dyed in Lilly white and Cremsin redde,
With Leaves engrained in lusty greene;
Colours meete to clothe a mayden Queene?
Thy wast bignes but combers the grownd,
And dirks the beauty of my blossomes rownd:
The mouldie mosse, which thee acclioeth,
My Sinamon smell too much annoieth:
Wherefore soone I red thee hence remove,
Least thou the price of my displeasure prove.
So spake this bold brere with great disdain:
Little him answered the Oake againe,
But yeilded, with shame and greefe adawed,
That of a weede he was overraved.

Yt chaunced after upon a day,
The Hus-bandman selfe to come that way,
Of custome for to surweh his grownd,
And his trees of state in compass rownd:
Him when the spitefull brere had espyed,
Causelesse complained, and lowdly cryed
Unto his lord, stirring up sterne strife.

'O, my liege Lord! the God of my life!
Pleaseth you ponder your Suppliants plaint,
Caused of wrong and cruell constraint,
Which I your poore Vassall dayly endure;
And, but your goodnes the same recure,
Am like for desperate doole to dye,
Through felonous force of mine enemie.'
Greatly agast with this piteous plea,
Him rested the Goodman on the lea,
And badde the Brere in his plaint proceede.
With painted words tho gan this proude weede
(As most usen Ambitious folke:)
His colowred crime with craft to cloke.
'Ah, my soveraigne! Lord of creatures all,
Thou placer of plants both humble and tall,
Was not I planted of thine owne hand,
To be the primrose of all thy land;
With flowring blossomes to furnish the prime,
And scarlot berries in Sommer time?

G G

How falls it then that this faded Oake,
Whose bodie is sere, whose branches broke,
Whose naked Armes stretch unto the fyre,
Unto such tyrannic doth aspire;
Hindring with his shade my lovely light,
And robbing me of the swete sonnes sight?
So beate his old boughes my taylor side,
That oft the blood springeth from woundes
Untimely my flowres forced to fall, [wyde;
That bene the honor of your Coronall:
And oft he lets his cancker-wormes light
Upon my branches, to worke me more spight;
And oft his hoarie locks downe doth cast,
Where-with my fresh flowretts bene defast:
For this, and many more such outrage,
Craving your goodhead to aswage
The ranckorous rigour of his might,
Nought aske I, but onely to hold my right;
Submitting me to your good sufferance,
And praying to be garded from greivance.'

To this the Oake cast him to replie
Well as he couth; but his enemye
Had kindled such coles of displeasure,
That the good man noulde stay his leasure,
But home him hasted with furious heate,
Encreasing his wrath with many a threat:
His harmefull Hatchet he hent in hand,
(Alas! that it so ready should stand!)
And to the field alone he speedeth,
(Ay little helpe to harme there needeth!)
Anger nould let him speake to the tree,
Lst Enaunter his rage mought cooled bee;
But to the roote bent his sturdy stroake,
And made many wounds in the wast Oake.
The Axes edge did oft turne againe,
As halfe unwilling to cutte the graine;
Semed, the sencelesse yron dyd feare,
Or to wrong holy eld did forbear;
For it had bene an auncient tree,
Sacred with many a mystere,
And often crost with the priestes crewe,
And often halowed with holy-water dewe:

But sike fancies weren foolerie,
And broughten this Oake to this miserie;
For nought mought they quiten him from
decay,
For fiercely the good man at him did laye.
The blocke oft groned under the blow,
And sighed to see his neare overthrow.
In fine, the steele had pierced his pith,
Tho downe to the earth he fell forthwith.
His wonderous weight made the ground to
quake,
Thearth shronke under him, and seemed to
shake:—
There lyeth the Oake, pitied of none!
Now stands the Brere like a lord alone,
Puffed up with pryde and vaine pleasure;
But all this glee had no continuance:
For estsones Winter gan to approche;
The blustering Boreas did enroche,
And beate upon the solitarie Brere;
For nowe no succoure was scene him nere.
Now gan he repent his pryde to late;
For, naked left and disconsolate,
The byting frost nipt his stalke dead,
The watry wette weighed downe his head,
And heaped snowe burnd him so sore,
That nowe spright he can stand no more;
And, being downe, is trodde in the durt
Of cattell, and brouzed, and sorely hurt.
Such was thend of this Ambitious brere,
For scorning Eld—

Cuddie.

Now I pray thee, shepherd, tel it not forth:
Here is a long tale, and little worth.
So longe have I listened to thy speche,
That grafted to the ground is my breche:
My hart-blood is wel nigh froene, I feele,
And my galage growne fast to my heele:
But little ease of thy lewd tale I tasted:
Hye thee home, shepherd, the day is nigh
• wasted.

THENOTS EMBLEM.

*Iddio, perche è vecchio,
Fu suoi al suo esempio.*

CUDDIES EMBLEM.

• *Nrino vecchio
Spaventa Iddio.*

GLOSSE.

Kene, sharpe.
Gride, perced: an olde word much used of Lid-
gate, but not found (that I know of) in Chaucer.
Ronts, young bullockes.
Wrucke, ruine or Violence, whence commeth

shipwracke: and not *wrecke*, that is vengeance or
wrath.

Poeman, a fox.

Thenot, the name of a shepherd in Marot his
Æglogues.

The sovereigne of Seas, is Neptune the God of the seas. The saying is borrowed of Mimius Publilianus, which used this proverb in a verse.

'Improbè Neptunum accusat, qui iterum naufragium facit.'

Heardgrones, Chancers verse almost whole.
Fond Flies, He comparcth carelesse sluggardes, or ill husbandmen, to flies that, so soone as the sunne shineth, or yt wexeth any thing warme, begin to flye abroad, when sodeinly they be overtaken with cold.

But oft when, a very excellent and lively description of Winter, so as may be indifferently taken, eyther for old Age, or for Winter season.

Brerne, chill, bitter.

Chamfred, chapt, or wrinkled.

Accoied, plucked downe and daunted.

Surquedrie, pryde.

Elde, olde age.

Secker, sure.

Tottie, wavering.

Corbe, crooked.

Herie, worship.

Phyllis, the name of some mayde unknowne, whom Cuddie, whose person is secrete, loved. The name is usual in Theocritus, Virgile, and Mantuane.

Belle, a girdle or wast-band.

A fon, a fool.

Lytte, soft and gentle.

Venteth, sunneth in the wind.

Thy flocks father, the Ramme.

Craggs, neckes.

Rather lambes, that be ewed early in the beginning of the yeare.

Youth is, a very moral and pittie Allegorie of youth, and the lustes thereof, compared to a wearie wayfaring man.

Tityrus, I suppose he meanes Chaucer, whose prayse for pleasaunt tales cannot dye, so long as the memorie of his name shal live, and the name of Poetrie shal endure.

Well-theued, that is, *Bene morate*, full of morall wisenesse.

There grese: This tale of the Oake and the Brere, he telleth as learned of Chaucer, but it is cleane in another kind, and rather like to Æsops fables. It

is very excellent for pleasaunt descriptions, being altogether a certaine leon, or Hypotyposis of disdainfull youngkers.

Embellisht, beautified and adorned.

To wonne, to haunt or frequent.

Sneb, checke.

Why standst, The speach is scornfull and very presumptuous.

Engrained, dyed in grain.

Accoied, encombreth.

Adaced, daunted and confounded.

Trees of state, taller trees, fitte for timber wood.

Sprynge drife, said Chancer, s. fell and sturdy.

O my liege, a maner of supplication, wherein is kindly coloured the affection and speache of Ambitious men.

Coronall, Garlande.

Flourets, yong blossomes.

The Primrose, the chiefe and worthiest.

Naked armes, metaphorically ment of the bare boughes, spoyled of leaves. This colourably he speaketh, as adjuvng hym to the fyre.

The blood, spoken of a blocke, as it were of a living creature, figuratively, and (as they say) κατ' εικασιν.

Hoarie lockes metaphorically for withered leaves.

Hent, caught.

Nould, for would not.

Ay, evermore.

Wounds, gashes.

Engaunter, leust that.

The priests crente, holy water pott, wherewith the popishe priest used to sprinkle and hallowe the trees from mischaunce. Such blindness was in those times, which the Poete suppeth to have bene the final decay of this ancient Oake.

The blocke oft groned, a lively figure, which giveth sence and feeling to unsensible creatures, as Virgile also sayeth: 'Saxa gemunt gravido, &c.'

Boreas, The Northerne wynd, that bringeth the mooste stormie weather.

Glee, chere and jollitie.

For scorning Eld, And minding (as shoulde seme) to have made ryme to the former verse, he is cunningly cutte off by Cuddie, as disdayning to here any more.

Galage, A startuppe or clownish shoe.

EMBLEME.

This embleme is spoken of Thenot, as a moral of his former tale: namelye, that God, which is himselfe most aged, being before all ages, and without beginninge, maketh those, whom he loveth, like to himselfe, in heaping yeares unto theyre dayes, and blessing them with longe lyfe. For the blessing of age is not given to all, but unto those whome God will so blesse. And albeit that many evil men reache unto such fullnesse of yeares, and some also wexe old in myserie and thraldome, yet therefore is not age ever the lesse blessing. For even to such evil men such number of yeares is added, that they may in their last dayes repent, and come to their first home: So the old man checketh the rash-headed boy for despysing his gray and frosty heares.

Whom Cuddye doth counterbuff with abyting

and bitter proverbe, spoken indeede at the first in contempt of old age generally: for it was an old opinion, and yet is continued in some mens conceit, that men of yeares have no feare of God at all, or not so much as younger folke; for that being ryponed with long experience, and having passed many bitter brunts and blastes of vengeance, they dread no stormes of Fortune, nor wrath of God, nor daunger of menne, as being eyther by longe and ripe wisdoms armed against all mischaunces and adversaities, or with much trouble hardened against all troublesome tydes: lyke unto the Ape, of which is sayd in Æsops fables, that, oftentimes meeting the Lyon, he was at first sore aghast and dismayed at the grimmes and austeritie of his countenance, but at last, being acquainted with his lookes, he was so furre from fearing him, that

he would familiarly gybe and jest with him : Suche longe experience breedeth in some men securitie. Although it please Erasmus, a great clerke, and good old father, more fatherly and favourably to construe it, in his Adages, for his own behoofe, That by the proverbe, ' Nemo senex metuit Iuveni,' is not meant, that old men have no feare of God

at al, but that they be furre from superstition and Idolatrous regard of false Gods, as is Jupiter. But his grate learning notwithstanding, it is to plaine to be galsayd, that olde men are muche more enclined to such foud fooleries, then younger heades.

MARCH:

ÆGLOGA TERTIA. ARGUMENT.

In this Æglogue two shepheards boyes, taking occasion of the season, beegine to make purpose of love, and other pleasure which to spring time is most agreeable. The speciall meaning herof is, to give certaine markes and tokens to know Cupide, the Gods God of Love. But more particularlye, I thinke, in the person of Thomalin is meant some scerle friend, who scorned Love and his knights so long, till at length him selfe was entangled, and unles wounded with the dart of some beautifull regard, which is Cupides arrow.

WILLIE.

Wil. THOMALIN, why sytten we soe,
As weren overwent with woe,

Upon so fayre a morow ?
The joyous time now nighes fast,
That shall alegge this bitter blast,
And slake the winters sorowe.

Tho. Sicker, Willye, thou warnest well ;
For Winters wrath beegunnes to quell,

And pleasant spring appeareth :
The grasse nowe ginnes to be refreshit,
The Swallow peepes out of her nest,
And clowdie Welkin cleareth.

Wil. Seest not thilke same Haw thorne studdie,
How bragly it beegunnes to budde,
And utter his tender head ?

Flora now calleth forth eche flower,
And bids make readie Maies bowre,
That newe is upryst from bedde.

Tho shall we sporten in delight,
And learne with Lettice to wexe light,
That scornefully lookes askaunce ;

Tho will we little Love awake,
That nowe sleepeeth in Lethe lake,
And pray him leaden our daunce.

Tho. Willye, I wene thou bee assot ;
For lustie Love still sleepeeth not,
But is abroad at his game.

Wil. How kenst thou that he is awake ?
Or hast thy selfe his slomber broke,
Or made previe to the same ?

Tho. No ; but happily I hym spyde,
Where in a bush he did him hude,
With winges of purple and blew ;
And, were not that my sheepe would stray,
The previe marks I would bewray,
Whereby by chaunce I him knewe.

Wil. Thomalin, have no care for-thy ;
My selfe will have a double eye,
Ylike to my flocke and thine ;

THOMALIN.

For als at home I have a syre,
A stepdame eke, as whott as fyre,

That dewly adaves counts mine.

Tho. Nay, but thy seeing will not serve,
My sheepe for that may chaunce to swerve,
And fall into some mischiefe :

For sithens is but the third morowe
That I chaunst to fall a-sleepe with sorowe
And waked againe with griefe ;

The while thilke same unhappy Ewe,
Whose clouted legges her hurt doth shewe,
Fell headlong into a dell,

And there unjoynted both her bones :
Mought her necke bene joynted attones,
She shoulde have neede no more spell ;

Thel was so wanton and so wood,
(But now I trowe can better good,)

She mought ne gang on the greene.

Wil. Let be, as may be, that is past :

That is to come, let be forecast :

Now tell us what thou hast seene.

Tho. It was upon a holiday,
When shepheardes groomes han leave to playe
I cast to goe a shooting.

Long wandering up and downe the land,
With bowe and bolts in either hand,

For birds in bushes tooting,
At length within an Yvie tolde,
(There shrouded was the little God)

I heard a busie bustling.

I bent my bolt against the bush,
Listening if any thung did rushe,
But then heard no more rustling :

Tho, peeping close into the thicke,
Might see the moving of some quicke
Whose shape appeared not ;

But were it facrie, feend, or snake,
My courage ernd it to awake,
And manfully threat shotte.

With that sprong forth a naked swayne
 With spotted winges, like Peacocks trayne,
 And laughing lope to a tree;
 His gylden quiver at his backe,
 And silver bowe, which was but slacke,
 Which lightly he bent at me:
 That seeing, I levelde againe
 And shott at him with might and maine,
 As thicke as it had hayled.
 So long I shott, that al was spent;
 Tho pumie stones I hastily hent
 And threwe; but nought availed:
 He was so wumble and so wight,
 From bough to bough he lepped light,
 And oft the pummies latched.
 Therewith affrayd, I ranne away;
 But he, that earst seemd but to playe,
 A shaft in earnest snatched.
 And hit me running in the heele:
 For then I little smart did feele,

But soone it sore encreased;
 And now it ranckleth more and more,
 And inwardly it festreth sore,
 Ne wote I how to cease it.
Wil. Thomalin, I pittie thy plight,
 Perdic with Love thou diddest fight:
 I know him by a token;
 For once I heard my father say,
 How he him caught upon a day,
 (Whereof he wil be wroken) ●
 Entangled in a fowling net,
 Which he for carrion Crowes had set
 That in our Peere-tree haunted:
 Tho sayd, he was a winged lad,
 But bowe and shafts as then none had,
 Els had he sore be daunted.
 But see, the Welkin thicks apace,
 And stouping Phebus steepes his face:
 Yts time to hast us homeward.

WILLYES EMBLIME.

*To be wise, and eke to love,
 Is graunted scarce to Gods above.*

THOMALINS EMBLIME.

*Of Hony and of Gaule in love there is store;
 The Honye is much, but the Gaule is more.*

GLOSSE.

This Eglogue seemeth somewhat to resemble that same of Theocritus, wherein the boy likewise telling the old man, that he had shot at a winged boy in a tree, was by hym warned to beware of mischief to come.

Oeculent, overgone.

Alegge, to lessen or asswage.

To quell, to abate.

Welkin, the skie.

The scallow, which bird meth to be counted the messenger, and as it were, the forerunner, of springe.

Floia, the Goddess of flowres, but indeede (as saith Tacitus) a famous harlot, which, with the abuse of her body having gotten great riches, made the people of Rome her heyre: who, in remembrance of so great beneficence, appointed a yearly feste for the memoriall of her, calling her, not as she was, nor as some doe think, *Andronica*, but *Floia*; making her the Goddess of flowres, and doing yerely, to her solemne sacrifice.

Mauis bowe, that is, the pleasant field, or rather the Maye bushes. *Mauis* is a Goddess, and the mother of Mercurie, in honour of whome the moneth of Maye is of her name so called, as sayth Macrobius.

Lettice, the name of some country lasse.

Assuance, askewe, or assquint.

For-thy, therefore.

Lethe, is a lake in hell, which the Poetes call the lake of forgetfulness. For *Lethe* signifieth forget-

fulness. Wherein the soules being dipped did forget the cares of their former lyfe. So that by love sleeping in *Lethe* lake, he meaneth he was almost forgotten, and out of knowledge, by reason of winters hardness, when all pleasures, as it were, sleepe and weare oute of minde.

Aslotte, to dote.

His slomber, To breake Loves slomber is to exercise the delights of Love, and wanton pleasures.

Winges of purple, so is he foyned of the Poetes.

For als, he imitateth Virgils verse.

'Est mihi namque domi pater, est injusta no-veren, &c.'

A dell, a hole in the ground.

Spell, is a kinde of verse or charme, that in elder tymes they used often to say over every thing that they would have preserved, as the Nightspel for thieves, and the woodspell. And herence, I thinke, is named the gospel, as it were Gods spell, or worde. And so sayth Chaucer, Listeneth Lordings to my spell.

Gang, goe.

An 'rie tolde, a thicke bush.

Sleane, a boye: For so is he described of the Poetes to be a boye, s. alwayes freshe and lustie: blindfolded, because he maketh no difference of personages: wyth divers coloured winges, s. ful of flying fancies: with bowe and arrow, that is, with glaunce of beautye, which pryoketh as a forked arrowe. He is sayd also to have shafts, some leaden,

some golden : that is, both pleasure for the gracious and loved, and sorrow for the lover that is disdained or forsaken. But who lieth more at large to behold Cupids colours and furniture, let him reade ether Propertius, or Moschus his Idyllion of *winged love*, being now most excellently translated into Latine, by the singular learned man Angelus Politianus : whych worke I have scene, amongst other of thys Poets doings, very wel translated also into Englishe Rymes.

Wumble and wighte, Quickle and deliver.

In the heele is very poetically spoken, and not without speciall judgement. For I remember that in Homer it is sayd of Thetis, that shee tooke her young babe Achilles, being newly borne, and, holding him by the heele, dipped him in the River of Styx. The vertue wherof is, to defend and keepe the bodye washed therein from any mortall wound. So Achilles being washed all over, save onely his hele, by which his mother held, was in the rest invulnerable : therefore by Paris was feyned

to bee shotte with a poysoned arrowe in the heele, whiles he was busie about the marying of Polyxena in the Temple of Apollo : which mysticall fable Eustathius unfolding sayth : that by wounding in the heele is meant lustfull love. For from the heele (as say the best Phisitions) to the previe partes there passe certaine veines and slender synewes, as also the like come from the head, and are carryed lyke little pypes behynd the eares : so that (as sayth Hipocrates) yf those veynes there be cut asunder, the partie straighte becommeth cold and unfruitful. Which reason our Poete wel weighing, maketh this shepheards boye of purpose to be wounded by Love in the heele.

Latched, caught.

Wraken, revenged.

For once : In this tale is sette out the simplicitie of shepheards opinion of Love.

Shouping Phœbus, is a Periphrasis of the sunne setting.

EMBLEM.

Hereby is meant, that all the delights of Love, wherein wanton youth walloweth, be but follye mixt with bitterness, and sorrow sawced with repentance. For besides that the very affection of Love it selfe tormenteth the mynde, and vexeth the body many wayes, with unrestfulness all night, and wearines all day, seeking for that we cannot have, and fynding that we would not have :

even the selfe things which best before us lyked, in course of time, and chaung of ryper yeares, whiche also therewithall chaungeth our wonted lyking and former fantasies, will then seeme lothsome, and breede us aunoyance, when yongthes flowre is withered, and we fynde our bodies and wits unswyre not to suche vayne jollitie and lustfull pleasance.

APRIL.

ÆGLOGA QUARTA. ARGUMENT.

This Ælogue is purposely intended to the honor and prayse of our most gracious sovereigne, Queene Elizabeth. The speakers herein be Hobbinoll and Thenot, two shepherdes : the which Hobbinoll, being before mentioned greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth more largely, complainyng him of that bowes great misadventure in Love ; whereby his mynd was alienat and withdrawen not onely from him, who moste loved him, but also from all former delights and studies, as well in pleasance pyping, as conning ryming and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby he taketh occasion, for proofoe of his more excellencie and skill in poetrie, to recorde a songe, which the sayd Colin sometime made in honor of her Majestie, whom abruptly he termeth Elysa.

THENOT.

The. TELL me, good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greete ? [ytorne ?]

What ? hath some Wolfe thy tender Lambes Or is thy Bagpye broke, that soundes so sweete ?

Or art thou of thy loved lasse forlorne ?

Or bene thine eyes attempted to the yeaere, Quenching the gasping furrowes thirst with rayne ?

Like April shoure so stremes the trickling teares Adowne thy cheekes, to quenche thy thristye payne.

Hob. Nor thys, nor that, so muche doeth make me mourne, [deare, But for the ladde, whome long I lov'd so

HOBBINOLL.

Nowe loves a lasse that all his love doth scorne. He, plonge in payne, his tressed locks dooth teare.

Shepheards delights he dooth them all forswear ;

His pleasauit Pipe, whych made us meriment,

He wyllfully hath broke, and doth forbear
His wonted songe, wherein he all outwent.

The. What is he for a Ladde you so lament ?
Ys love such pinching payne to them that prove ?

And hath he skill to make so excellent,
Yet hath so little skill to brydle love ?

Hob. Colin thou kenst, the Southerne shep-
heardes boye: [darte:
Him Love hath wounded with a deadly
Whilome on him was all my care and joye,
Forcing with gyfts to winne his wanton heart.

But now from me hys madding mynd is starte,
And woes the Widdowes daughter of the
glenne;
So nowe fayre Rosalind hath bredde hys smart,
So now his frend is chaunged for a frenne.

The. But if hys ditties bene so trimly dight,
I pray thee, Hobbinoll, recorde some one,
The whilles our flockes do graze about in sight,
And we close shrowded in thys shade alone.

Hob. Contented I: then, will I singe his laye
Of fayre Elisa, Queene of shepheardes all,
Which once he made as by a spring he laye,
And tuned it unto the Waters fall.

'Ye dayntyng Nymphs, that in this blessed
Doe bathe your brest, [brooke
Forsake your watry bowres, and hether looke,
At my request:

And eke you Virgins, that on Parnasse dwell,
Whence floweth Helicon, the leaved well,
Helpe me to blaze
Her worthy praise,
Which in her sexe doth all excell.

'Of fayre Elisa be your silver song,
That blessed wight,
The flowre of Virgins: may shee flourish long
In princely plight!
For shee is Syrinx daughter without spotte,
Which Pan, the shepheards God, of her begot.
So sprong her grace
Of heavenly race,
No mortall blemishe may her blotte.

'See, where she sits upon the grassie greene,
(O seemely sight!)
Yclad in Scarlet, like a mayden Queene,
And ermines white:
Upon her head a Cremesin coronet,
With Damaske roses and Daffadillies set:
Bay leaves betwene,
And primroses greene,
Embellish the sweete Violet.

'Tell me, have ye seene her angelick face,
Like Phæbe fayre?
Her heavenly haveour, her princely grace,
Can you well compare?
The Redde rose medled with the White yfere,
In either cheekes depeincten lively chere:
Her modest eye,
Her Majestie,
Where have you seene the like but there?

'I sawe Phæbus thrust out his golden hedde,
Upon her to gaze: [spredde,
But, when he sawe how broad her beames did
It did him amaze.
He blusht to see another Sunne belowe,
Ne durst againe his fyrye face out shoue:
Let him, if he dare,
His brightnesse compare
With hers, to have the overthrowe.

'Shewe thyselfe, Cynthia, with thy silver rayes,
And be not abasht:
When shee the beames of her beauty displayes,
O, how art thou dasht!
But I will not match her with Latonaes seede,
Such follie great sorow to Njobe did breede:
Now she is a stone,
And makes dayly mone,
Warning all other to take heede.

'Pan may be proud that ever he begot
Such a Bellibone;
And Syrinx rejoyse that ever was her lot
To beare such an one.
Soone as my younglings cryen for the dam
To her will I offer a milkwhite Lamb:
Shee is my goddess, plainne,
And I her shepherds wayne,
Albee forsworne and forswatt I am.

'I see Calliope speede her to the place,
Where my Goddesses shines;
And after her the other Muses trace,
With their Violines. [beare,
Bene they not Bay branches which they do,
All for Elisa in her hand to weare?
So sweetely they play,
And sing all the way,
That it a heaven is to heare.

'Lo! how finely the Graces can it foote
To the Instrument:
They daunce deffily, and Anger soote,
In their meriment.
Wants not a fourth Grace, to make the daunce
even?

Let that rowme to my Lady be yeven:
Shee shal be a Grace,
To fyll the fourth place,
And reigne with the rest in heaven.

'And whither rennes this bevie of Ladies bright,
Rauaged in a rowe?
They bene all Ladies of the lake behight,
That unto her goe.
'Chloris, that is the chiefest Nymph of all,
Of Olive branches beares a Coronall:
Olives bene for peace,
When wars doe surcease:
Such for a Princesse bene principall.

'Ye shepheards daughters, that dwell on the greene,
 Hye you there apace:
 Let none come there but that Virgins bene,
 To adorne her grace:
 And, when you come whereas shee is in place,
 See that your rudenesse doe not you disgrace:
 Binde your fillets faste,
 And gird in your waste,
 For more fignesse, with a tawdric lace. •

'Bring hether the Pincke and purple Cullambine,
 With Gelliflowres;
 Bring Coronations, and Sops in wine,
 Worne of Paramoures:
 Strowe me the ground with: Daffadownillies,
 And Cowslips, and Kingcups, and loved Lillies:
 The pretie Pawnee,
 And the Chevisaunce,
 Shall match with the fayre flowre Delice.

'Now ryse up, Elisa, decked as thou art
 In royal aray;
 And now ye daintie Damsells may depart
 Eche one her way.
 I feare I have troubled your troupes to longe:
 Let dame Elisa thanke you for her song:
 And if you come hether
 When Damsines I gether,
 I will part them all you among.'

The. And was thilk same song of Colins
 owne making?
 Ah, foolish Boy! that is with love yblent:
 Great pittie is, he be in such taking,
 For naught caren that bene so lewdly bent.

Hob. Sicker I hold him for a greater son,
 That loves the thing he cannot purchase.
 But let us haweward, for night draweth on,
 And twinceling starres the daylight hence chase.

THEXOTS EMBLEME.

O quam te memorem Virgo! •

HOBBINOLS EMBLEME

O dea certe! •

GLOSSE.

Curs thee greete, causeth thee weep and complain.
Forlorne, left and forsaken.

Attempted to the yeare, agreeable to the season of the yeare, that is Aprill, which moneth is most bent to shoures and seasonable rayne: to quench, that is, to delaye the drought, caused through drynesse of March wyndes.

The Ladde, Colin Clout.

The Lasse, Rosalinda.

Tressed locks, wretched and curled.

Is he for a ladde? a straunge manner of speaking, s. what manner of Ladde is he?

To make, to rime and versifye. For in this word, *making*, our olde English Poetes were wont to comprehend all the skill of Poetrye, according to the Greeke woordes *poieiv*, to make, whence cometh the name of Poetes.

Colin thou kenst, knowest. Secineth hereby that Colin perteyneth to some Southern noble man, and perhaps in Surrye or Kent, the rather because he so often nameth the Kentish downes, and before, *As lythe as flasse of Kent*.

The Widowers. He calleth Rosalind the Widowers daughter of the glenne, that is, of a country Hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather sayde to colour and conceale the person, then simply spoken. For it is well knowne, even in spite of Colin and Hobbinoll, that shee is a Gentlewoman of no meane house, nor endew'd with anye vulgare and common gifts, both of nature and manners: but suche indeede, as neede nether Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hob-

binol be grieved, that so she should be commended to immortalitye for her rare and singular vertues: Speciallye deserving it no lesse, then eyther Myrto the most excellent Poete Theocritus his dearling, or Lauretta the divine Petrarches Goddesse, or Huera the worthy Poete Stersichorus his idol; upon whom he is sayd so much to have doted, that, in regard of her excellencie, he scorned and wrote against the beauty of Helena. For which his presumptions and unheede hardnesse, he is sayde by vengeance of the Gods, thereat being offended, to have lost both his eyes.

Pienne, a straunger. The word, I thinke, was first poetically put, and afterwarde used in common custome of speech for forene.

Light, adorned.

Laye, a songe, as Roundelays and Virelays.

In all this songe is not to be requered, what the worthinesse of her Majestie deserveth, nor what to the highnes of a Prince is agreeable, but what is moste comely for the meannesse of a shepheard witte, or to conceive, or to utter. And therefore he calleth her *Elysa*, as through rudenesse tripping in her name; and a shepheards daughter, it being very unfit, that a shepheards boy, brought up in the shepfold, should know, or ever seme to have heard of, a Queenes roialty.

'Ye daintie, is, as it were, an Exordium *ad preparandos animos*.

Virgins, the nine Muses, daughters of Apollo and Memorie, whose abode the Poets saie to be on Parnassus, a hill in Greece, for that in that

countrye specially florished the honor of all excellent studies.

Helicon is both the name of a fountaine at the foot of Parnassus, and also of a mountaine in Boeotia, out of which floweth the famous spring Castalia, dedicate also to the Muses: of which spring it is said, that, when Pegasus the winged horse of Perseus (whereby is meant fame and flying renowne) strooke the ground with his hoofe, sodenly there-out sprang a wel of moste cleare and pleasant water, which fro thenceforth was consecrate to the Muses and Ladies of learning.

Your silver song, seemeth to imitate the like in Hesiodus ἀργύριον μέλος.

Syrinx is the name of a Nympe of Arcadie, whom when Pan being in love pursued, she, flying from him, of the Gods was turned into a reede. So that Pan catching at the Reedes, in stede of the Damosell, and puffing hard, (for he was almost out of wind,) with hys breath made the Reedes to pype; which he seing, tooke of them, and, in remembrance of his lost love, made him a pype thereof. But here by Pan and Syrinx is not to bee thoughte, that the shepherde simplye meante those Poeticall Godd; but rather supposing (as seemeth) her graces progene to be divine and immortal (so as the Paynims were wont to judge of all Kinges and Princes, according to Homeres saying,

‘Θυμός δὲ μέγας ἐστὶ διωτρεφέος βασιλῆος,
‘Τιμὴ δ’ ἐκ Διὸς ἐστὶ, φίλει δὲ ἐκ μητρὸς Ζεῦς,)

could devise no parents in his judgement so worthy for her, as Pan the shepherds God, and his best beloved Syrinx. So that by Pan is here meant the most famous and victorious king, her highnesse Father, late of worthy memorye, K. Henry the eight. And by that name, oftymes (as hereafter appeareth) be noted kings and mighty Potentates: And in some place Christ himselfe, who is the verye Pan and god of Shepherdes.

Cremoisin coronet, he deviseth her crowne to be of the finest and most delicate flowers, instede of perles and precious stones, wherewith Princes Daimles use to bee adorned and embost.

Embellish, beautifye and set out.

Phoebe, the Moone, whom the Poets false to be sister unto Phoebus, that is, the Sunne.

Mixed, mingled.

I’ferr, together. By the mingling of the Redde rose and the White is meant the uniting of the two principall houses of Lancaster and Yorke: by whose longe discord and deadly debate this realm many yeares was sore travellid, and almost cleane decayed. Till the famous Henry the seventh, of the line of Lancaster, taking to wife the most vertuous Princess Elisabeth, daughter to the fourth Edward of the house of Yorke, begat the most royal Henry the eight aforesayde, in whom was the first union of the Whyte rose and the Redde.

Calliope, one of the nine Muses: to whome they assigne the honor of all Poeticall Invention, and the firste glorye of the Heroical verse. Other say, that shee is the Goddesse of Rethorick; but by Virgile it is manifeste, that they mistake the thing. For there, in hys Epigrams, that arte semeth to be attributed to Polymnia, saying,

‘Signat cuncta manu, loquiturque Polymnia gestu.’

Which seemeth specially to be meant of Action, and elocution, both special partes of Rethorick; besyde that her name, which (as some construe it) importeth great remembrance, containeth another part; but I holde rather with them, which call her Polymnia, or Polyhymnia, of her good singing.

Bay branches, be the signe of honor and victory, and therefore of mighty Conquerors worn in their triumphes, and eke of famous Poets, as saith Petrarch in hys Sonets,

‘Arbor vittoriosa triumphale,
‘Honor d’ Imperadori et di Poeti,’ &c.

The Graces be three sisters, the daughters of Jupiter, (whose names are Aglaia, Thalia, Euphrosyne; and Homer onely added a fourth, s. Pasithea) otherwise called Charites, that is, thanks: whom the Poets feyned to be the Goddeses of all bountie and comelines, which therefore (as sayth Theodotus) they make three, to wete, that men first ought to be gracious and bountifull to other freely; then to receive benefites at other mens hands curteously; and thirdly, to requite them thankfully; which are three sundry Actions in liberality. And Boccace saith, that they be painted naked (as they were indeede on the tombe of C. Julius Caesar) the one having her backe toward us, and her face fromwarde, as proceeding from us; the other two toward us, noting double thanke to be due to us for the benefite we have done.

Deffly, finelye and nimbly.

Soote, sweete.

Merment, mirth.

Bevie, a beavie of ladyes, is spoken figuratively for a company, or troupe: the terme is taken of Larkes. For they say a Bevie of Larkes, even as a Covey of Partridge, or an eye of Pheasaunts.

Ladies of the lake be Nymphes. For it was an olde opinion amongst the Auncient Heathen, that of every spring and fountaine was a goddesse the Sovereign. Whiche opinion stucke in the myndes of men not manie yeares sithence, by meanes of certain fine fablers, and lowd lyers, such as were the Authors of King Arthure the great, and such like, who toll many an unlawfull leasing of the Ladies of the Lake, that is, the Nymphes. For the word Nympe in Greeke, signifieth Well water, or otherwise, a Spouse or Brjde.

Behuht, called or named.

Cloris, the name of a Nympe, and signifieth greenesse; of whose is sayd, that Zephyrus, the Western wind, being in love with her, and coveting her to wyfe, gave her for a dowrie the chieffedome and soveraintye of all flowers, and greene herbes, growing on earth.

Olive bough. The Olive was wont to be the ensigne of Peace and quietnesse, eyther for that it cannot be planted and pruned, and so carefully looked to as it ought, but in time of peace; or els for that the Olive tree, they say, will not growe neare the Firre tree, which is dedicate to Mars the God of battaile, and used most for speares, and other instruments of warre. Whereupon is finelye feigned, that when Neptune and Minerva strove for the naming of the cite of Athens, Neptune striking the ground with his mace caused a horse to come

forth, that importeth warre, but at Minervaes stroke sprong out an Olive, to note that it should be a nurse of learning, and such peaceable studies.

Binde your, spoken rudely, and according to shepherdes simplicitie.

Bring, all these be names of flowers. *Sops in wine,* a flower in colour much like to a Coronation, but differing in smell and quantitie. *Flowre de luce,* that which they use to misterine flower de luce, being in Latine called *Flos deliciarum*.

A Hellbone, or a bonibell, homely spoken for a fayre mayde, or Bonilasse.

For swonck, and *for swett,* overlaboured and sunne-burnt.

I saw Phœbus, the sunne. A sensible narration, and present view of the thing mentioned, which they call *napovoria*.

Cynthia, the Moore, so called of *Cynthus* a hyll, where she was honoured.

Latonaes seede, Was Apollo and Diana. Whom, when as Niobe the Wife of Amphion scorned, in respect of the noble fruit of her wombe, namely her seven sonnes, and so many daughters, Latona, being therewith displeased, commaunded her sonne Phœbus to slea all the sonnes, and Diana all the daughters: wherat the unfortunate Niobe being sore dismayed, and lamenting out of measure, was feigned of the Pœtes to be turned into a stone, upon the sepulchre of her children: for which cause the shepherd sayth, he will not compare her to them, for feare of like misfortune.

Now rise, is the conclusion. For, having so decked her with prayses and comparisons, he returneth all the thank of hys labour to the excellencie of her Majesty.

When Damsels, A base reward of a clownish giver.

I blent, Y is a poeticall addition; *blent,* blinded.

EMBLEME.

This Poesye is taken out of Virgile, and there of him used in the person of Æneas to his mother Venus, appearing to him in likeness of one of Dianæes damocells: being there most divinely set forth. To which similitude of divinitie Hobbinoll, comparing the excellency of Elise, and being, through the worthynesse of Colins song, as it were, overcome with the hugeness of his imagination, trusteth

out in great admiration, (*O quam te memorem virgo*) being otherwise unable, then by sudden silence, to expresse the worthynesse of his concept. Whom Thenot answereth with another part of the like verse, as confirming by his graunt and approvanee, that Elise is no whit inferiour to the Majesty of her, of whome that Poete so boldly pronounced *O dea certe*.

MAYE.

ÆGLOGA QUINTA. ARGUMENT.

In this fift Æglogue, under the persons of two shepherdes Piers and Palinode, be represented two formes of pastoures or Ministers, or the Protestant and the Catholique: whose chiefe talke standeth in reasoning, whether the life of the one must be like the other: with whom having shewed, that it is dangerous to mainteine any fellowship, or give too much credit to their colourable and feigned good will, he telleth him a tale of the foze, that, by such a counterpoint of craftines, deceived and devoured the credulous kiddes.

PALINODE.

Palinode. Is not thilke the mery moneth of May, When love-lads masken in fresh aray? [May, How fallies it, then, we no merrier bene, Ylike as others, girl in gawdy greene? Our bloucket liveryes bene all to sadde For thilke same season, when all is ycladd With pleasaunce: the grownd with grasse, the Woods [buds, With greene leaves, the bushes with blooming Youghtes folke now flocken in every where, To gather May bus-kets and smelling bre: And home they hasten the postes to dight, And all the Kirke pillours eare day light, With Hawthorne buds, and swete Eglantine, And girlonds of roses, and Soppes in wine. Such merimake holy Saints doth queme, But we here sitten us drownd in a dreame.

Piers. For Younkens, Palinode, such follies But we tway bene men of elder witt. [fitte,

PIERS.

Pal. Sicker this morrowe, no lenger agoe, I sawe a shole of shepheardes outgoe With singing, and shouting, and jolly chere: Before them yode a lusty Tablere, That to the many a Home-pype playd, [mayd. Whereto they dauncen, ech one with his To see those folkes make such joyvsauce, Made my heart after the pype to dauce: Tho to the greene Wood they spedden hem all, To fetchen home May with their muscicall: And home they bringen in a royall throne, Crowned as king: and his Queene attone Was Lady Flora, on whom di attend A fayre flocke of Faeries, and a fresh bend Of lovely Nymphs. (O that I were there, To helpen the Ladyes their Maybush beare!) Ah! Piers, bene not thy teeth on edge, to thinke [swinck? How great sport they gaynen with little

Piers. Perdrie, so farre am I from envie,
That their fondnesse inly I pitie :
Those faytours little regarden their charge,
While they, letting their sheepe runne at large,
Passen their time, that should be sparely spent,
In lustihede and wanton meryment. [stedde,
Thilke same bene shepheardes for the Devils
That playen while their flockes be unfedde :
Well is it seene theyr sheepe bene not their
owne,

That letten them runne at randon alone ;
But they bene hyred for little pay
Of other, that caren as little as they
What fallen the flocke, so they han the fleece,
And get all the gayne, paying but a peece.
I muse, what account both these will make ;
The one for the hire which he doth take,
And thother for leaving his Lords taske, [aske.
When great Pan account of shepherdes shall

Pal. Sicker, now I see thou speakest of
spight,

All for thou lackest somedele their delight.
I (as I am) had rather be envied,
All were it of my foe, then forly pitied :
And yet, if neede were, pitied would be,
Rather then other should scorne at me :
For pittied is mishappe that nas remedie,
But scorned bene dexes of fond foolerie.
What shoulde shepheards other things tend,
Then, sith their God his good does them send,
Reapen the fruite thereof, that is pleasure,
The while they here liven at ease and leasure ?
For, when they bene dead, their good is ygone,
They shopen in rest, well as other moe :
Tho with them wends what they spent in cost,
But what they left behind them is lost.
Good is no good, but if it be spend ;
God giveth good for none other end.

Piers. Ah ! Palinodie, thou art a worldes
childe :

Who touches Pitch, nought needes be defilde ;
But shepheards (as Algrind used to say)
Mought not live ylike as men of the laye.
With them it sits to care for their heire,
Enaunter their heritage doe impaire. [aunce,
They must provide for meanes of mainten-
And to continue their wont countenance :
But shepheard must walke another way,
Sike worldly sovenance he must forsay.
The sonne of his loines why should he regard
To leave enriched with that he hath spard ?
Should not thilke God, that gaye him that
good,

Eke cherish his child, if in his wayes he stood ?
For if be mislive in leudnes and lust,
Little bootes all the welth and the trust,
That his father left by inheritance :
All will be soome wasted with misgovernance ;

But through this, and other their miscreaunce
They maken many a wrong chevisaunce,
Heaping up waves of welth and woe,
The flosses whereof shall them overflowe
Sike mens follie I cannot compare
Better then to the Apes folish care,
That is so enamoured of her young one,
(And yet, God wote, such cause hath she none)
That with her hard hold, and straight em-
bracing,

She stoppeth the breath of her yongling.

So often times, when as good is meant,
Evil ensueth of wrong entent.

The time was once, and may againe retorne,
(For ought may happen, that hath bene be-
borne)

When shepheards had none inheritance,
Ne of land, nor fee in sufferaunce,
But what might arise of the bare sheepe,
(Were it more or lesse) which they did keepe.
Well ywis was it with shepheards thoe :
Nought having, nought feared they to forgoe ;
For Pan himselfe was their inheritance,
And little them served for their mayntenance.
The shepheards God so wel them guided,
That of nought they were unprovided ;
Butter enough, honye, milke, and whay,
And their flockes fleeces them to araye :
But tract of time, and long prosperite,
That nource of vice, this of insolencie,
Lulled the shepheards in such securitie,
That, not content with all obaysaunce,
Some gan to gape for greedie governaunce,
And match them selfe with mighty potentates,
Lovers of Lordship, and troublers of states.
Tho gan shepheards swaines to looke aloft,
And leave to live hard, and learne to ligge
soft :

Tho, under colour of shepheards, sometime
There crept in Wolves, ful of fraude, and
That often devoured their owge sheepe, [guile,
And often the shepheards that did hem kee ; e
This was the first sourse of shepheards sorowe,
That now nill be quitt with baile nor borrowe.

Pal. Three thinges to beare bene very bur-
denous,

But the fourth to forbear is outrageous :
Wemen, that of Loves longing once lust,
Hardly forbearen, but have it they must :

So when choler is inflamed with rage,
Wanting revenge, is hard to asswage :
And who can counsell a thristie soule,
With patience to forbear the offred bowle ?
But of all burdens, that a man can beare,
Most is, a foolles talke to beare and to heare.
I wene the Geaunt has not such a weicht,
That beares on his shoulders the heavens
height.

Thou findest faulte where nys to be found,
And buildest strong warke upon a weake
ground :

Thou raylest on, right withouten reason,
And blamest hem much for small encheason.
How shouldest shepherdes live, if not so ?
What ! should they pynne in payne and woe ?
Nay, say I thereto, by my deare borrowe,
If I may rest, I will live in sorrowe.

Sorrowe ne neede be hastened on,
For he will come, without calling, anon.
While times endure of tranquillitie,
Usen we freely our felicitie ;
For, when appoche the stormie stowres,
We mought with our shoulders beare of the
sharpe showres ;
And, sooth to sayne, nought seemeth sike
strife,

That shepherdes so witen ech others life,
And layen her faults the world before,
The while their foes done cache of hem scorne.
Let none mislike of that may not be mended :
So conteeke soone by concord mought be ended :

Piers, Shepheard, I list none accordaunce
make [sake]
With shepheard that does the right way for-
And of the twaine, if choise were to me,
Had lever my foe then my freend be he ;
For what concord han light and darke sam ?
Or what peace has the Lion with the Lambe ?
Such fautors, when their false harts bene hidde,
Will doe as did the Foxe by the Kiddle.

Pal. Now, Piers, of felowship, tell us that
saying :

For the Laddie can keepe both our flocks from
[straying.]

Piers, Thilke same Kiddle (us I can well
Was too very foolish and unwise ; [devise])

For on a tyme, in Sommer season,
The Gate her dame, that had good reason,
Yode forth abroad unto the greene wood,
To brouze, or play, or what shee thought good :

But, for she had a motherly care
Of her young sonne, and wit to beware,
Shee set her youngling before her knee,
That was both fresh and lovely to see,
And full of favour as kiddle mought be.
His Vellet head began to shoote out,
And his wreathed hornes gan newly sprout :

The blossomes of lust to bud did bginne,
And spring forth rancly under his chinne.
'My Sonne,' (quoth she and with that gan
weepe,

For carefull thoughts in her heart did creepe)
'God! blesse thee, poore Orphaue! as he
mought me,

And send thee joy of thy jollitee.

Thy father, (that word she spake with payne,
For a sigh had nigh rent her heart in twaine)

'Thy father, had he lived this day,
To see the branche of his body dislaie,
How would he have joyed at this sweete sight !
But ah ! false Fortune such joy did him spight,
And cutte of hys dayes with untimely woe,
Betraying him into the traines of hys foe.

Now I, a wayfull widowe belight,
Of my old age have this one delight,
To see thee succede in thy fathers steade,
And florish in flowres of lusty-head :
For even so thy father his head upheld,
And so his hauty hornes did he weld.'

Tho marking him with melting eyes,
A thrilling throbbe from her hart did aryse,
And interrupted all her other speache
With some old sorowe that made a newe
breache :

Seemed shee sawe in the younglings face
The old lifements of his fathers grace.
At last her solein silence shee broke,
And gan his newe-budded beard to stroke.
'Kiddie, (quoth shee) thou kenst the great
care

I have of thy health and thy welfare,
Which many wyld beastes ligen in waite
For to entrap in thy tender state :
But most, he Foxe, maister of collusion :
For he has voned thy last confusion,
For thy, my Kiddie, be ruld by mee,
And never give trust to his trechereie :
And, if he chance come when I am abroad,
Sperre the yate fast for feare of fraude.
Ne for all his worst, nor for his best,
Open the dore at his request.'

So schooled the Gate her wanton soune,
That answerd his mother, all should be done.
Tho went the pensife Dame out of dore,
And chaunst to stopple at the threshold flore :
Her stombling steppe some what her amazed,
(For such, as signes of ill luck, bene dis-
praised :)

Yee forth shee yode, thereat halfe aghast :
And Kiddie the dore sperred after her fast.
It was not long, after shee was gone,
But the false Foxe came to the dore anone :
Not as a Foxe, for then he had be kend,
But all as a poore pedler he did wend,
Bearing a trusse of tryties at hys backe,
As bells, and babes, and glasses, in hys packe :
A Biggen he had got about his brayne,
For in his headpeace he felt a sore payne :
His hinder heele was wrapt in a clout,
For with great cold he had gotte the gout.
There at the dore he cast me downe hys pack,
And layd him downe, and groned, 'Alack !
Alack !

Ah, deare Lord ! and sweete Saint Charitee !
'That some good body woulde once pitie mee !'

Well heard Kiddie al this sore constraint,
And lengt to know the cause of his complaint:
Tho, creeping close behind the Wickets clunk,
Prevelie he peeped out through a chinck,
Yet not so prevelie but the Foxe him spyed;
For deceitfull meaning is double eyed.

'Ah, good young maister!' (then gan he crye)

'Jesus blesse that sweete face I espye,
And keepe your corpse from the carefull stounds
That in my carrion carcas abounds.'

The Kidd, pitying hys heaviness,
Asked the cause of his great distresse,
And also who, and whence that he were?

Tho he, that had well ycond his lere,
Thus medled his talke with many a teare:
'Sicke, sicke, alas! and little lack of dead,
But I be relieved by your beastly head.
I am a poore sheepe, albe my coloure donne,
For with long travelle I am brent in the sonne:
And, if that my Grandsire me sayd be true,
Sicker, I am very srbbe to you:
So be your goodlihead doe not disdayne
The base kinred of so simple swaine.
Of mercye and favour, then, I you pray
With your ayd to fore-stall my nere decay.'

Tho out of his packe a glasse heooke,
Wherein while Kiddie unwares did looke,
He was so enamored with the newell.
That nought he deemed deare for the jewell:
Tho opened he the dore, and in came
The false Foxe, as he were starke lame:
His tayle he clapt betwix his legs twayne,
Lest he should be descried by his trayne.

Being within, the Kidde made him good glee,
All for the love of the glasse he did see.

After his chere the Pedler can chat,
And tell many lesinges of this and that,
And how he could shewe many a fine knack:
Tho shewed his ware and opened his packe,
All save a bell, which he left behind
In the basket for the Kidde to fynd:

Which when the Kidde stooped downe to catch,
He popt him in, and his basket did latch:

Ne stayed he once the dore to make fast,
But ranne away with him in all hast. [hyde,
Horne when the doubtfull Damise had her

She mought see the dore stand open wyde.
All agast, lowdly she gan to call
Her Kidde; but he nould answer at all:
Tho on the flore she saw the merchaundise
Of which her sonne had sette to deere a prise
What helpe? her Kidde shee knewe well was gone:

Sheewept and wayled, and made great mone.
Such end had the Kidde, for he nould warned
Of craft, coloured with simplicitie: [be
And such end, perdie, does all hem remayne,
That of such falsers frendship bene sayne.

Pal. Truly, Piers, thou art beside thy wit,
Furthest fro the marke, weening it to hit.
Now, I pray thee, lette my tale borrowe
For our Sir Johu, to say to morrowe
At the Kerke, when it is holliday:
For well he meanes, but little can say.
But, and if foxes bene so crafty as so,
Much needeth all shepheards hem to knowe.

Piers. Of their falshood more could I recount,
But now the bright Sunne gynneth to dismount:
And, for the deawie night now doth nye,
I hold it best for us home to nye.

PALINODES EMBLEME.

Ἦας μὲν ἀνίστος ἀνίστει.

PIERS HIS EMBLEME.

Τὴς δ' ἀπα νίστος ἀνίστη;

GLOSSE.

Thulle, this same moneth. It is applyed to the season of the moneth, when all menne delight them selves with pleassance of felices, and gardens, and garments.

Blonket lveries, gray coates.

Yclad, arrayed, Y redoundeth, as before.

In every where, a straunge, yet proper kind of speaking.

Bushets, a diminutive, a little bushes of hawthorne.

Kirke, church.

Queme, please.

A shole, a multitude, taken of fische, whereof some,

going in great companies, are sayle to swynne in a shole.

Iode, went.

Joyssaunce, Joye.

Swinck, labour.

July, entirely.

Faytours, vagabonds.

Great Pan, is Christ, the very God of all shepheards, which calleth himselfe the greates, and good shepherd. The name is most rightly (methinks) applyed to him; for Pan signifieth all, or omnipotent, which is onely the Lord Jesus. And by that name (as I remember) he is called of Euse.

bliss, in his fiftē booke *De Preparat. Eoang*, who thereof telleth a proper storie to that purpose. Which story is first recorded of Plutarch, in his booke of the ceasing of Oracles: and of Iacvtere translated, in his booke of walking sprights; who sayth, that about the same time that our Lord suffered his most bitter passion, for the redemption of man, certain passengers sayling from Italy to Cyprus, and passing by certaine Isles called Paxre, heard a voyce calling aloude Thamns, Thamns! (now Thamns was the name of an Egyptian, which was Pilote of the ship) who, giving eare to the cry, was hidden, when he came to Palodes, to tel that the great Pan was dead: which he doubt- ing to doe, yet for that when he came to Palodes, there suddenly was such a calme of winde, that the shippe stode still in the sea unmoved, he was forced to cry aloud, that Pan was dead: where- withall there was heard suche pitous onteryes, and dreadfull shriking, as hath not bene the like. By whych Pan, though of some he understoode the great Satanas, whose kingdome at that time was by Christ conquered, the gates of hell broken up, and death by death delivered to eternall death, (for at that time, as he sayth, all Oracles sur- ceased, and enchanted spirites, that were wont to delude the people, thenceforth held theyr peace:) and also at the demand of the Emperoure Tibe- rius, who that Pan should be, answered was made him by the wisest and best learned, that it was the sonne of Mercurie, and Penelope: yet I thinke it more properly meant of the death of Christ, the onely and very Pan, then suffering for his flock.

I as I am, seemeth to imitate the common proverb, *Malum invidere mihi onnes, quam miseres- cere.*

Nas is a syncope, for *ne has*, or *has not*: as *nould* for *would not*.

Tho with them doth imitate the Epitaph of the rytous king Sardanapalus, which he caused to be written on his tombe in Greeke: which verses be thus translated by Tullie.

'Hæc habui quæ edi, quæque exaurata libido
'Hausit, at illa manent multa ac præclara re-
licta.'

Which may thus be turned into English.

'All that I ate did I joye, and all that I greedily
gorged:
'As for those many goodly matters left I for
others.'

Much like the Epitaph of a good olde Erie of De- vonshire, which though much more wisdomē be- wraeth then Sardanapalus, yet hath a smacke of his sensuall delights and beastlinesse; the rymes be these: *

'Ho, ho! who lies here?
'I the good Erie of Devonshire,
'And Maunde my wife that was ful deare:
'We lived together iv. yeare.
'That we spent, we had:
'That we gave, we have:
'That we left, we lost.'

A)grind, the name of a shepheard.

Men of the lay, Laymen.

Enaunter, least that.

Sovenance, remembrance.

Misceaunce, despire, or misbelieve.

Cheevance, sometime of Chaucer used for *gaine*: sometime of other for *spoyle*, or *bootie*, or *enter- prise*, and sometime for *chieftome*.

Pan himselfe, God: according as is sayd in Deu- teronomie. That, in division of the lande of Canaan to the tribe of Levie no portion of heritage should be allotted, for God himselfe was their inheri- tance.

Some gan, meant of the Pope, and his Antichris- tian prelates, which usurpe a tyrannical dominion in the Church, and with Peters counterfet keyes open a wide gate to all wickednesse and insolent government. Nought here spoken, as of purpose to deny fatherly rule and governance (as some maliciously of late have done, to the great unweate and hindrance of the Church) but to displaye the pride and disorder of such, as, in steade of feed- ing their shepe, misleade feede of theyr sheepe.

Source, wellspring and originall.

Forwaie, pledge or surtye.

The Geaunte is the grente Atlas, whom the poetes feign to be a huge geant, that beareth Heaven on his shoulders: being indeede a marvelous highe mountaine in Mauritania, that now is Barbarie, which, to many seeming, pereth the cloudes, and seemeth to touch the heavens. Other thinke, and they not amisse, that this fable was meant of one Atlas king of the same countrey, (of whome may bee, that that hil had his denomination) brother to Promethus, who (as the Greekes say) did first fynd out the hidden courses of the starres, by an excel- lent imagination: wherefore the poetes feigned, that he susteyned the firmament on his shoulders: Many other conjectures needlesse be told hereof.

Wayle, woeke.

Encheason, cause, occasion.

Deare borrow, that is our Saviour, the common pledge of all mens debts to death.

Wyten, blame.

Nought seemeth, is unseemly.

Contest, strife, contention.

Iler, theyr, as useth. Chaucer.

Ilan, for have.

Sam, together.

This tale is much like to that in Æsops fables, but the Catastrophe and end is farre different. By the Kilde may be understoode the simple sorte of the faythfull and true Christians. By hys dame Christe, that hath already with carefull watch- words (as heere doth the gote) warned her little ones, to beware of such doubting doct. By the Foxe, the false and faithlesse Papistes, to whom is no credit to be given, nor fellowship to be used.

The Gote, the Gote: Northernly spoken, to turne O into A.

Yode, went: afforesayd.

She sek, a figure called *Fictio*, which useth to attri- bute reasonable actions and speeches to unreason- able creatures.

The bloosmes of lust, be the yong and mossie heares, which then beginne to spronte and shoote forth, when lustfull heate beginneth to kinde.

And with, a very poetical *modus*.

Orphane, a youngling or pupill, that needeth a Tutour and governour.

That word, a patheticall parenthesis, to encrease a carefull hyperbaton.

The branch, of the fathers body, is the child.

For even so, Alluded to the saying of Andromache to Ascanius in Virgile.

'Sic oculos, sic ille manns, sic ora ferebat.'

A thrilling throb, a percing sighs.

Laggen, lye.

Maister of collusion, s. coloured guile, because the Foxe, of al beasts, is most wily and crafty.

Sperre the yate, shut the dore.

For such, the goates stombing is here noted as an evill signe. The like to be marked in all histories; and that not the lea-st of the Lorde Hastings in King Rycharde the thurd his dayes. For, beside his dangerous dreamie (whiche was a shrewde prophete of his mishap that folowed) it is sayd, that in the morning, ryding toward the tower of London, there to sitte upon matters of counsell, his horse stombled twice or thrise by the way: which, of some, that ryding with him in his company were privie to his neere destenie, was secretly marked, and afterward noted for memorie of his great mishap that ensued. For, being then as merye as man might be, and least doubting any mortall danger, he was, within two howres after, of the *Tyranne* put to a shameful death.

As belles, by such trifles are noted, the reliques and ragges of popish superstition, which put no

small religion in Belles, and Babes, s. Idoles, and glusses, s. Paxes, and such lyke trumperies.

Great cold, for they boast much of their outwar; putience, and voluntarie sufferance, as a worke of merite and holy humblence.

Sireete N. Charitie, The Catholiques common othe, and onely spenche, to have charitye alwayes in their mouth, and sometime in their outward Actions, but never inwardly in fayth and godly zeale.

Clucke, a keyhole. Whose diminutive is clicket, used of Chaucer for a Key.

Stomys, stites: aforesayde.

His lere, his lesson.

Meddled, mingled.

Bestthead, agreeing to the person of a beast.

Sibbe, of kinne.

Necell, a newe thing.

To forestall, to prevent.

Glee, chere: aforesayde.

Dear va price, his lyfe which he lost for those toys.

Such ende, is an Epiphonema, or rather the moral of the whole tale, whose purpose is to warne the protestant beware, how he giveth credit to the unfaithfull Catholique; wherof we have dayly proofes sufficient, but one moste famous of all practised of late yeares in France, by Charles the ny nth.

Fayne, gladd or desyrous.

Our sir John, a Popishe priest. A saying fit for the grossenesse of a shepherde, but spoken to taunte unlearned Priestes.

Dismount, descende or set.

Nye, draweth nere.

EMBLEME.

Both these Emblemes make one whole Hexametre. The first spoken of *Palinodie*, as in re-^{pro-}che of them that be distrustfull, is a peece of *Theognis* verse, intending, that who doth most mistrust is most false. For such experience in falschod breedeth mistrust in the mynd, thinking no lesse guile to lurke in others then in his selfe. But

Piers thereto strongly replyeth with an other peece of the same verse, saying, as in his former fable, what fayth then is there in the faythlesse? For if fayth be the ground of religion, which fayth they dayly false, what hold is then there of their religion? And thys is all that they saye.

JUNE.

ÆGLOGA SEXTA. ARGUMENT.

This Æglogue is wholly vowed to the complayning of Colins ill successe in his love. For being (as is aforesaid) enchaunted of a country lasse, Rosalind, and having (as seemeth) founde place in her heart, he lamenteth to his deare friend Hobbinoll, that he is now forsaken unfaithfully, and in his steede Menalcas, another shepheard, received disloyalty. And this is the whole Argument of this Æglogue.

HOBBINOLL.

Hob. Lo! Collin, here the place whose plesant syto
From other shades hath weand my wandring
Tell me, what wants me here to worke de-lyte?

The simple ayre, the gentle warbling wynde,
So calme, so coole, as no where else I fynde:
The grave ground with daintye Daysies
dight,

COLIN CLOUT.

The Bramble bush, where Byrds of evry kynd:
To the waters fall their tunes attemper right.
Col. O happy Hobbinoll! I blesse thy state,
That Paradise hast founde whych Adam
lost:

Here wander may thy flocke, early or late,
Withouten dreade of Wolves to bene ytoat:
Thy lovely layes here mayst thou freely
boate.

But I, unhappy man! whom cruell fate
And angry Gods pursue from coste to coste,
Can nowhere fynd to shroude my lucklesse
pate.

Hob. Then, if by me thou list advised be,
Forake the soyle that so doth thee bewitch:
Leave me those hilles where harbrough nis to
see,

Nor holy-bush, nor brere, nor winding witch:
And to the dales resort, where shepheards
ritely.

And fruitfull flocks, bene every where to see:
Here no night-ravens lodge, more black then
pitche,

Nor elvish ghosts, nor gastly owles doe flee.

But frendly Faeries, met with many Graces,
And lightfoote Nymphes, can chace the ling-
ring Night

With Heydeguyes, and trimly trodden traces,
Whilst systers nyne, which dwell on Parnasse
hight,

Doe make them musick for their more delight:
And Pan himselfe, to kisse their christall
faces,

Will pype and daunce when Phœbe shineth
Such pierlesse pleasures have we in these places.

Col. And I, whilst youth and course of
carelesse yeeres,

Did let me walke withouten lincks of love,
In such delights did joy amongst my peeres:
But ryper age such pleasures doth reprove:
My fancye eke from former follies move
To stayed steps; for time in passing weares,
(As garments doen, which wexen old above),
And draweth newe delightes with hoary
heares.

The couth I sing of love, and tune my pype
Unto my plaintive pleas in verses made:

Thou would I seeke for Queene-apples unrype,
To give my Roselind; and in Sommer shade
Dight gaudy Girlands was my common trade,
To crowne her golden locks: but yeeres more
rype,

And losse of her, whose love as lyfe I wayd,
Those weary wanton toyes away dyd wype,

Hob. Colin, to heare thy rymes and rounde-
layes,

Which thou wert wont on wastfull hylla to
I more delight then larke in Sommer dayes:
Whose Echo made the neyghbour groves to
ring,

And taught the byrds, which in the lower
Did shroude in shady leaves from sonny rayes,
Frame to thy songe their cheereful cheriping,
Or hold theyr peace, for shame of thy sweete
layes.

I sawe Calliope wyth Muses moe,
Soone as thy oaten pype began to sound,
Theyr yvory Luyts and Tamburins forgoe,
And from the fountaine, where they sat
around,

Renne after hastily thy silver sound;
But, when they came where thou thy skill
didst shoue, [sound
They drewe abacke, as halfe with shame con-
Sheheard to see them in theyr art outgoe.

Col. Of Muses, Hobbinol. I conne no skill,
For they bene daughters of the hyghest Jove,
And holden scorne of homely shepheards
quill:

For sith I heard that Pan with Phœbus strove,
Which him to much rebuke and Daunger
drove,

I never lyst presume to Parnasse hyll,
But, pyping lowe in shade of lowly grove,
I play to please myselfe, all be it ill.

Nought weigh I who my song doth prayse or
blame,

Ne strive to winne renowne, or passe the rest:
With shepheard sittes not followe flying fame,
But feede his flocke in fields where falls hem
best.

I wote my rymes bene rough, and rudely drest;
The fyttier they my carefull case to frame:
Enough is me to paint out my unrest,
And poore my piteous plaints out in the same.

The God of shepheards, Tityrus, is dead,
Who taught me homely, as I can, to make;
He, whilst he lived, was the soveraigne head
Of shepheards all that bene with love ytake:
Well couth he wayle his Woes, and lightly
slake [bredd,

The flames which love within his heart had
And tell us merv tales to keepe us wake,
The while our sheepe about us safely fedde,

Nowe dead he is, and lyeth wrapt in lead,
(O! why should Death on hym such outrage
showe?)

And all hys passing skil with him is fledde,
The fame whereof doth dayly greater growe.
But, if on me some little drops would flowe
Of that the spring was in his learned hedde,
I soone would learne these woods to wayle my
woe, [shedde,

And teachie the trees their trickling teares to
Then should my plaints, caused of discourtesee,
As messengers of this my painfull plight,
Flye to my love, where ever that she bee,
And pierce her heart with poynt of worth-
wight,

As shee deserves that wrought so deadly spight.
And thou, Menalcas, that by trecheres

Didst underfong my lasse to wexe so light,
Shouldst well be knowne for such thy
villance.

But since I am not as I wish I were,
Ye gentle Shepherds, which your flocks do
feede,

Whether on hylla, or dales, or other where,
Beare witness all of thys so wicked deede:
And tell the lasse, whose flowre is woxe a
weede,

And faultlesse fayth is turned to faithlesse
fere,

That she the truest shepherds hart made
bleede,
That lyves on earth, and loved her most chere.

Hob. O, carefull Colin ! I lament thy case;
Thy teares would make the hardest flint to flowe!
Ah, faithlesse Gosallind and voide of grace,
That art the roote of all this ruthfull woe!
But now is time, I gesse, homeward to goe :
Then ryse, ye blessed Flocks, and home apace,
Least with stealing steps doe you
forsloe, [trace,
And wett your tender Lambes that by you

COLIN'S EMBLEM.

Gra speme spenta.

GLOSSE.

Style, situation and place.

Paradise. A Paradise in Greeke, signifieth a Garden of pleasure, or place of delights. So he compareth the soyle, wherein Hobbinoll made his abode, to that cartilly Paradise, in scripture called Eden, wherein Adam in his first creation was placed : which of the most learned is thought to be in Mesopotamia, the most fertile pleasaunte country in the world (as may appeare by Diodorus Syculus description of it, in the historie of Alexanders conquest thereof,) lying betweene the two famous Rivers, (which are sayd in scripture to flowe out of Paradise) Tygris and Euphrates, whereof it is so denominate.

Forsooke the soyle. This is no Poetical fiction, but unfeignedly spoken of the Poete selfe, who for speciall occasion of private affaires, (as I have bene partly of himselfe inform'd) and for his more preferment, removing out of the Northparts, came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised him privately.

Those hylls, that is in the North countrye, where he dwelt.

Nis, is not.

The dales. The Southpartes, where he flowe abyedeth, which thoughte they be full of hylls and woodes (for Kent is very hyllye and woodye; and therefore so called, for *Kantish* in the Saxons tongue signifieth woodye,) yet in respect of the Northpartes they be called dales. For indeede the North is counted the higher countrye.

Night Ravens, &c. By such hatefull byrdes, hee meaneth all misfortunes (whereof they be tokens) flying every where.

Frendly faeries. The opinion of Faeries and elves is very old, and yet sticketh very religiously in the mynes of some. But to roote that rancke opinion of Elves out of mens hearts, the truth is, that there be no such things, nor yet the shadowes of the things, but only by a sort of beld Friars and knavish shavvings so feigned; which as in all other things, so in this, soughte to nonsell the common people in ignorance, leas't, being once acquainted with the truth of things, they would

in tyme smell out the untruth of theyr packed pelfe, and Masseperie religion. But the sooth is, that when all Italy was distracte into the Factions of the Guelphes and the Gibelins, being two famous houses in Florence, the name began through their great enmities and many outrages, to be so odious, or rather dreadfull, in the peoples eares, that, if theyr children at any time were frowarde and wanton, they would say to them that the Guelle or the Gibeline came. Which words nowe from them, (as many things els) he come into our usage, and, for Guelphes and Gibelines, we say Elfes and Goblins. No otherwise then the Frenchmen used to say of that valiant captain, the very scourge of France, the Lord Talbot, afterward Erie of Shrewsbury, whose noblesse bred such a terror in the hearts of the French, that oft times even great armies were defaicted and put to flight at the onely hearing of his name. In somuch that the French women, to affray their chyldren, would tell them that the Talbot commeth.

Many Graces, though there be indeede but three Graces or Charites (as afore is sayd) or at the utmost but foure, yet, in respect of many gyftes of bounty there may be sayde more. And so Musens sayth, that in Heroes eyther eye there sat a hundred Graces. And, by that authoritie, thys same Poete, in his Pageants, saith 'An hundred Graces on her eyehide sate.' &c.

Heydegues, A country dance or rownd. The conceipt is, that the Graces and Nymphes doe dance unto the Muses and Pan his muscke all night by Moonelight. To signifie the pleasauntnesse of the soyle.

Peewes. Equalls, and fellow shepherds.

Queene-apples unripe, imitating Virgils verse.

'Ipse ego cana legami tenera lanugine mala.'

Neighbour groves, a strannge phrase in English, but word for word expressing the Latine *vicina nemora*.

Spring, not of water, but of young trees springing. *Calliope,* afforesayde. Thys staffe is full of verie poetical invention.

Tamburines, an olde kind of instrument, which of some is supposed to be the Clarion.

Pan with *Phœbus*, the tale is well knowne, howe that Pan and Apollo, striving for excellencye in musicke, chose Midas for their iudge. Who, being corrupted wyth partiall affection, gave the victorie to Pan undeserved: for which *Phœbus* sette a payre of *Asses* eares upon hys head. &c.

Tityrus, That by *Tityrus* is meant Chaucer, hath bene already sufficiently sayde; and by thys more playne appeareth, that he sayth, he tolde merye tales. Such a be hys *Canterburie* tales, whom he calleth the God of Poetes for hys excellencie; so us

Tulle calleth *Lentulus*, *Deum vitæ suæ*, s. the God of hys life.

To make, to versifie.

Or why, A pretye Epanorthosis, or correction.

Discurteus: he meaneth the falsenesse of his lover *Iosalinde*, who forsaking hym hadde chosen another.

Poente of worthy wile, the pricke of deserved blame.

Ménalcas, the name of a shepherde in Virgile; but here is meant a person unknowne and secrete, aginst whome he often bitterly invaveth.

Underfonge, undermyne, and deceive by false suggestion.

EMBLEME.

You remember that in the fyrst *Æglogue* Colins Poesie was *Anchora speme*: for that as then there was hope of favour to be found in tyme. But now being cleane forlorne and rejected of her, as whose

hope, that was, is cleane extinguished and turned into despayre, he renounceth all comfort, and hope of goodnesse to come: which is all the meaning of thys Embleme.

JULYE.

ÆGLOGA SEPTIMA. ARGUMENT.

This Æglogue is made up the honour and commendation of good shepheardes, and to the shame and dyspraise of proud and ambitious Pastours: Such as Morrell is here imagined to be.

THOMALIN.

MORRELL.

Tho. Is not thilke same a gotheard prowde,
That sittes on yonder bancke,

Whose straying heard them selfe doth shrowde
Among the bushes rancke?

Mor. What, ho! thou jollye shepheards
Come up the hyl to me; [swayne,

Better is then the lowly playne,

Als for thy flocke and thee.

Thom. Ah! God shield, man, that I should
And learne to looke alofte; [clime,

This reede is ryfe, that oftentime

Great clymbers fall unsoft.

In humble dales is footing fast,

The trode is not so tickle:

And though one fall through heedlesse hast,

Yet is his misse not mickle.

And now the Sonne hath reared up

His fyerie-footed terna,

Making his way betwene the Cuppe

And golden Diademe:

The rampant Lyon hunts he fast,

With dogges of noysome breath,

Whose balefull barking bringes in hast

Pyne, plagues, and dreery death.

Agaynst his cruell scorching heate,

Where hast thou coverture?

The wastefull hylle unto his threate

Is a playne overture.

But, if thee lust to holden chat

With seely shepherds awayne,

Come downe, and learne the little what,
That Thomalin can sayne.

Mor. Syker, thous but a laesie loord,

And rekes much of thy swinck,

That with fond termes, and witlesse words,

To biera mine eyes doest thinke,

In evill houre thou hestent in hond

Thus holy hylles to blame,

For sacred unto saints they stond,

And of them han theyr name,

St. Michels Mount who does not know,

That wardes the Westerne coste?

And of St. Brigets bowre, I trow,

All Kent can rightly boaste:

And they that con of Muses skill

Sayne most-what, that they dwell

(As gotheards wont) upon a hill,

Beside a learned well,

And wonned not the great God Pan

Upon mount Olivet,

Feeding the blessed flocke of Dan,

Which dyd him selfe beget?

Thom. O blessed sheepe! O shepheard great!

That bought his flocke so deare,

And them did save with bloudy sweat

From Wolves that would them teare.

Mor. Besyde, as holy fathers sayne,

There is a hyllye place,

Where Titan ryseth from the mayne

To renne hys dayly race,

Upon whose toppes the starres bene stayed,
 And all the skie doth leane;
 There is the cave where Phœbe laye^d
 The shepheard long to dreame.
 Whilome there used shepheards all
 To feede theyr flockes at will,
 Till by his folly one did fall,
 That all the rest did spill.
 And, sithens shepheardes bene forsayd •
 From places of delight,
 For-thy I weene thou be affrayd
 To cline this hilles height.
 Of Synah can I tell thee more,
 And of our Ladyes bowre;
 But little needes to strow my store,
 Suffice this hill of our.
 Here han the holy Faunes recourse,
 And Sylvanes haunten rathe;
 Here has the salt Medway his sourese,
 Wherein the Nymphes doe bathe;
 The salt Medway, that trickling stremis
 Adowne the dales of Kent,
 Till with his elder brother Themis
 His brackish waves be meynl.
 Here growes Melampode every where,
 And Teribinth, good for Gotes:
 The one my madding kiddes to snere,
 The next to heale theyr throtes.
 Hereto, the hills bene nigher heaven,
 And thence the passage ethe;
 As well can prove the piercing levin,
 That seeldome falles bynethe.
 Thom. Syker, thou speakes lyke a Jewle
 Of Heaven to demen so; [lorrell,
 How be I am but rude and borrell,
 Yet nearer wayes I knowe.
 To Kerke the narre, from God more farre,
 Has bene an old-sayd sawe,
 And he, that strives to touch a starre,
 Oft stumbles at a strawe.
 Alsoone may shepheard clymbe to skye •
 That leades in lowly dales,
 As Goteherd prowd, that, sitting hye,
 Upon the Mountaine sayles.
 My seely sheepe like well belowe,
 They neede not Melampode:
 For they bene hale enough, I trowe,
 And liken theyr abode;
 But, if they with thy Gotes should yede,
 They soone myght be corrupted,
 Or like not of the frowie fede,
 Or with the weedes be glutted.
 The hylls where dwelled holy saints
 I reverence and adore:
 Not for themselves, but for the sayncts
 Which han be dead of yore.
 And nowe they bene to heaven forewent,
 Theyr good is with them goe:

Theyr sample onely to us lent,
 That als we mought doe soe.
 Shepheards they weren of the best,
 And lived in lowlye leas:
 And, sith theyr soules bene now at rest,
 Why done we them disease?
 Such one he was (as I have heard
 Old Algrind often sayne)
 That whilome was the first shepheard,
 And lived with little gayne:
 And meeke he was, as meeke mought be,
 Simple as simple sheepe;
 Humble, and like in eche degree
 The flocke which he did keepe,
 Often he used of hys keepe
 A sacrifice to bring,
 Nowe with a Kidde, now with a sheepe,
 The Altars hallowing.
 So lowted he unto hys Lord,
 Such favour couth he fynd,
 That sithens never was abhord
 The simple shepheards kynd.
 And such, I weene, the brethren were
 That came from Canaan:
 The brethren twelve, that kept yfere
 The flockes of mighty Pan.
 But nothing such thilk shepheard was
 Whom Ida hyll dyd beare,
 That left hys flocke to fetch a laase,
 Whose love he bought to deare;
 For he was proude, that ill was payd,
 (No such mought shepheards bee)
 And with lewde lust was overlaid:
 Tway things doen ill agree.
 But shepheard mought be meeke and mylde,
 Well-eyed, as Argus was,
 With fleshy follyes undefyled,
 And stoute as steede of brasse.
 Sike one (sayd Algrind) Moses was,
 That sawe hys makers face,
 His face, more cleare then Cristall glasse
 And spake to him in place.
 This had a brother (his name I knewe)
 The first of all his cote,
 A shepheard trewe, yet not so true
 As he that earst I hote.
 Whilome all these were lowe and lief,
 And loved their flocke to feede;
 They never strouen to be chiefe,
 And simple was theyr weede:
 But now (thanked be God therefore)
 The world is well amend,
 Their weedes bene not so nighly wore;
 Such simpleesse mought them shend •
 They bene yclad in purple and pall,
 So hath theyr god them blist;
 They reigne and rulen over all,
 And lord it as they list:

Ygyrt with belts of glitterand gold.
 (Mought they good sheepeheards bene?)
 Theyr Pan theyr sheepe to them has sold,
 I saye as some have scene.
 For Palinode (if thou him ken)
 Yode late on Pilgrimage
 To Rome, (if such be Rome) and then
 He saw thilke misusage;
 For shepheards (sayd he) there doen leade,
 As Lordes done other where;
 Theyr sheepe han crustes, and they the bread;
 The chippes, and they the chere:
 They han the fleece, and eke the flesh,
 (O, seely sheepe, the while!)
 The corne is theyrs, let other thresh,
 Their handes they may not file.
 They han great stores and thriftye stockes,
 Great freendes and feeble foes:
 What neede hem caren for their flockes,
 Theyr boyes can looke to those.
 These wisards welter in welthys waves,
 Pampred in pleasures deepe:
 They han fatte kernes, and leany knaves,
 Their fasting flockes to keepe.
 Sike mister men bene all mis-gone,
 They heapen hylles of wrath;
 Sike sylve shepheards han we none,
 They kepen all the path.

Mor. Here is a great deale of good matter
 Lost for lacke of telling:
 Now, sicker, I see thou doest but clatter,
 Harme may come of melling.
 Thou meddest more then shall have thanke,
 To wyten shepheards welth:
 When folke bene fat, and riches rancke,
 It is a signe of helth.
But say me, what is Algrind, he
 That is so oft bynempt?
Thom. He is a shepheard great in gree,
 But hath bene long ypent.
 One daye he sat upon a hyll,
 (As now thou wouldest me:
 But I am taught, by Algrinds ill,
 To love the lowe degre);
 For sitting so with bared scalpe,
 An Eagle sored hys,
 That, weening hys whyte head was chalke,
 A shell-fish downe let flye:
 She weend the shell-fishe to have broke,
 But therewith bruzd his brayne;
 So now, astoned with the stroke,
 He lyes in lingring payne.
Mor. Ah! good Algrind! his hap was ill,
 But shall be better in time.
 Now farwell, shepheard, with thys hyll
 Thou hast such doubt to climbe

THOMAS'S EMBLEM.

In medio virtus.

MORRIS'S EMBLEM.

In summo felicitas.

GLOSSE.

A Goteheard: by Gotes, in scripture, he represented the wicked and reprobate, whose pastour also must needs be such.

Bancd. is the state of honor.

Straying heard, which wander out of the waye of truth.

Als, for also.

Clymbe, spoken of Ambition.

Great clymbers, according to Seneca his verse.
 'Decidunt celsa, graviore lapsus.' *Miche.* in ch.

The sonne, A reason why he refuseth to dwell on Mountaines, because there is no shelter against the scorching Sunne, according to the time of the year, whiche is the whotest moneth of all.

The Cupp and Diademe, be two signes in the Firmament, through which the sonne maketh his course in the moneth of July.

Lion, Thys is poetically spoken, as if the Sunne did hunt a Lion with one dogge. The meaning whereof is, that in July the sonne is in Leo. At which time the Dogge starre, which is called Syrius, or Canicula, rigneth with immoderate heate, causing pestilence, droughth, and many diseases.

Overture, an open place. The word is borrowed of the French, and used in good writers.

To holden chaff, to talke and prate.

A loorde was wont among the old Britons to signifie a Lorde. And therefore the Danes, that long time usurped theyr Tyrannie here in Britayne, were called, for more dread then dignitie, *Lurdanes*, s. *Lord Danes*. At which time it is sayd, that the insolencie and pryde of that nation was so outrageous in thys Reame, that if it fortuned a Briton to be going over a bridge, and sawe the Dane set foote upon the same, he muste retorne backe, till the Dane were cleane over, or els elsyde the pryce of his displeasure, which was no lesse then present death. But being afterwarde expelled, that name of Lurdane became so odious unto the people, whom they had long oppressed, that even at this daye they use, for more reproche, to call the Quarantaine ague the Fever Lurdane.

Recks much of thy swinck, counts much of thy paynes.

Wertelasse, not understood.

S. Michels mount, is a promontorie in the West part of England.

A hill, Parnassus afforesayd.

Pan, Christ.

Dan, one trybe is put for the whole nation, per Synecdoches.

Where Titan, the Sonne. Which story is to be redde in Diodorus Syc. of the hyl Ida; from whence, he sayth, all night time is to be seene a mighty fire, as if the skye burned, which toward morning beynneth to gather into a rownd forme, and thereof ryseth the sonne, whome the Poetes call Titan.

The Shepheard is Endymion, whom the Poets fayne to have bene so beloved of Phæbe. s. the Moone, that he was by her kept asleepe in a cave by the space of xxv yeares, for to enjoye his companye.

There, that is, in Paradise, where, through errorr of the shepheards understanding, he sayth, that all shepheards did us to fawle theyr flocks, till one, (that is Adam,) by hys follye and disobedience, made all the rest of hys ofspring be debarred and shutt out from thence.

Sinai, a hill in Arabia, where God appeared.

Our Ladys bowre, a place of pleasure so called.

Faunes, or Sylvanes be of Poetes feigned to be Gods of the Woodes.

Medway, the name of a Rvver in Kent, which, running by Rochester, meeteth with Thames, whom he culleth his elder brother, both because he is greater, and also falleth sooner into the Sea.

Meynt, mingled

Melampode and Teichonh be hearles good to cure diseased Gotes: of thone speaketh Montane, and of thother Theocritus.

Τερμίνθου τράγην εικατον ακριμονα.

Nigher heaven: Note the shepheards simplenesse, which supposeth that from the hyls is nearer waye to heaven.

Levin, lightning, which he taketh for an argument to prove the nighnes to heaven, because the lightning loth commonly light on hygh mountaynes, according to the saying of the Poete:

'Feriantque summes fulmina montes.'

Lorrell, a losell.

A borrell, a playne fellowe.

Narre, nearer.

Hale, for hole.

Fede, goe.

Fronge, mustye or mossie.

Of yore, long agoe.

For ewent, gone afore.

The first shepheard, was Abel the righteous, who (as Scripture sayth) bent hys mind to keeping of sheepe, as did hys brother Cain to tilling the grownde.

His keepe, hys charge, s. his floske.

Loieted, did honour and reverence.

The brethren, the twelve sonnes of Jacob, which were shepe-maisters, and lyved ouelye thereupon.

Whom Ida, Paris, which being the sonne of Priamus king of Troy, for his mother Hecubus dreame, which, being with childe of hym, dreamed slic broughte forth a firebrand, that set all the towre of Ilium on fire, was cast forth on the hyl Ida, where being fostered of shepheards, he eke in tyme became a shepheard, and lastly came to the knowledge of his parentage.

A lasse, Helena, the wyfe of Menelans king of Lacedemonia, was by Venus, for the golden Aple to her geven, then promised to Paris who thereupon with a sorte of lustye Trojanes, stole her out of Lacedemonia, and kept her in Troye, which was the cause of the tenne yeres warre in Troye, and the moste famous citey of all Asia lamentably suckt and defuced.

Arkus, was of the Poets devised to be full of eyes, and therefore to hym was committed the keeping of the transformed Cow, lo: so called, because that, in the print of a Cowes foote, there is figured an I in the midst of an O.

His name, he meaneth Agon, whose name, for more Decorum, the shephearde sayth he hath forgot, lest his remembrance and skill in antiquities of holy writ should seeme to excede the memornesse of the Person.

Not so true, for Aaron, in the absence of Moses, started aside, and committed Idolatry.

In purple, spoken of the Popes and Cardinals, which use such tyrannical colours and pompous paynting.

Bells, Girdles.

Gitter and, gittering, a participle used sometime in Chaucer, but altogether in I. Gower.

Theyr Pan, that is, the Pope, whom they count theyr God and greatest shepheard.

Fulnode, a shephearde, of whose report he seemeth to speake all this.

Wards, grents learned heads.

Weller, wallowe.

Keene, a Churle or Farmer.

Sike nuster men, suche kinde of men.

Surly, stately and provido.

Melling, meddling.

Bell, better.

Rynempe, named.

Gree, for degree.

Agriand, the name of a shepheard afforesayde, whose myshap he alludeth to the chance that happened to the Poet Eschylus, that was brayned with a shell-fishe.

EMBLEME

By this poesy Thomalin confirmeth that, which in hys former speech by sondrye reasons he had proved; for being both hymselfe sequestred from all ambition, and also abhorring it in others of hys cote, he taketh occasion to prayse the meane and lowly state, as that wherein is safetie without feare, and quiet without daunger; according to the saying of olde Philosphers, that vertue dwelleth in the middist, being environed with two contrary vices: whereto Morrell is repleth with continuance of the same Philosphers opinion, that albeit all

bountye dwelleth in mediocritie, yet perfect felicity dwelleth in supremacie: for they say, and most true it is, that happinesse is placed in the highest degree, so as if any thing be higher or better, then that streight way causeth to be perfect happinesse. Much like to that which once I heard alleaged in defence of humilitey, out of a great doctour. 'Suorum Christus humillimus: ' which saying a gentle man in the companie taking at the rebownd, beate backe againe with a lyke saying of another doctoure, as he sayde 'Suorum Deus altissimus.'

AUGUST.

ÆGLOGA OCTAVA. ARGUMENT.

In this Æglogue is set forth a detestable controuersie, made in imitation of that in Theocritus: whereto also Virgile fashioned his third and seventh Æglogue. They choose for umpire of their strife, Cuddie, a shepherds boye; who, having ended their cause, reciteth also himselfe a proper song, whereof Colin, he sayth, was Authour.

WILLIE.

PERIGOT.

CUDDIE.

Wil. TELL me, Perigot, what shalbe the game,
Wherefore with myne thou dare thy musick
matche?

Or bene thy Baggyppes renne farre out of frame?
Or hath the Crampe thy joynts benomd with
ache?

Per. Ah! Willye, when the hart is ill assayde,
How can Baggyppes or joynts be well apayd?

Wil. What the foule evill hath thee so bes-
tadde?

Whilom thou was peregrall to the best,
And wont to make the jolly shepheards gladde,
With pyping and dauncing did passe the
rest.

Per. Ah! Willye, now I have learnd a newe
My old musick marl by a newe mischaunce.

Wil. Mischiefe mought to that mischaunce
befall,

That so hath rafus of our meriment.
But reede me what payne doth thee so appall;
Or lovest thou, or bene thy younglings mis-
went?

Per. Love hath misled both my younglings
I pyne for payne, and they my payne to see.

Wil. Perdie, and wellawaye, ill may they
thrive!

Never knew I lovers sheepe in good plight:
But, and if in ryynes with me thou dare strive,

Such fond fantasies shall soone be put to flight
Per. That shall I doe, though mocheill worse
I fared:

Never shall be sayde that Perigot was dared.
Wil. Then loe, Perigot, the Pledge which I
plight,

A mazer ywrought of the Maple warre,
Wherein is enchased many a fayre sight
Of Bess and Tygres, that maken fiers warre;
And over them spred a goodly wild vine,
Entrailed with a wanton Yvie twine.

Thereby is a Lambe in the Wolves jawes:
But see, how fast renneth the shepherd
swayne

To save the innocent from the beastes pawes,
And here with his shepe-hooke hath him
slayne.

Tell me, such a cup hast thou ever sene?
Well mought it beseme any harvest Queene.

Per. Thereto will I pawne yonder spotted
Lambe,

Of all my flocke there nis sike another,
For I brought him up without the Dambe:

But Colin Clout rafte me of his brother,
That he purchast of me in the playne field:

Sore against my will was I forst to yield.
Wil. Sicker, make like account of his brother.

But who shall judge the wager wonne or
lost?

Per. That shall yonder heardgrome, and none
Which over the pousse hetheward doth post.

Wil. But, for the Sunnebeame so sore doth us
beate,

Were not better to shunne the scorching heate?
Per. Well agreed, Willie: then, sitte thee
downe, swayne:

Sike a song never heardest thou but Colin
Cud. Gynne when ye lyst, ye jolly shepheards
twayne:

Sike a judge as Cuddie were for a king.
Per. 'It fell upon a holy eve,

Wil. Hey, ho, hollidaye!
Per. When holv fathers wont to shrieve;

Wil. Now gynneth this roundelay.
Per. Sitting upon a hill so hye,

Wil. Hey, ho, the high hyll!
Per. The while my flocke did feede thereby;

Wil. The while the shepherd selfe did
Per. I saw the bouncing Bellibone,

Wil. Hey, ho, Bonibell!
Per. Tripping over the dale alone,

Wil. She can trippe it very well.
Per. Well decked in a frocke of gray,

Wil. Hey, ho, gray is greetes!
Per. And in a Kirtle of greene saye,

Wil. The greene is for maydens meete.
Per. A chapelet on her head she wore,

Wil. Hey, ho, chapelet!
Per. Of sweete Violets therein was store,

Wil. She sweeter then the Violet.
Per. My sheepe did leave theyr wanted food,

Wil. Hey, ho, seely sheepe!

Per. And gazd on her as they were wood,

Wil. Wood as he that did them keepe.

Per. As the bonilasse passed bye,

Wil. Hey, ho, bonilasse!

Per. She rovde at me with glauncing eye,

Wil. As cleare as the christall glasse;

Per. All as the Sunnye beame so bright,

Wil. Hey, ho, the Sunne-beame!

Per. Glaunceth from Phoebus face forthright,

Wil. So love into thy hart did streame:

Per. Or as the thonder cleaves the cloudes,

Wil. Hey, ho, the Thonder!

Per. Wherein the lightsome levin shroudes,

Wil. So cleaves thy soule asonder:

Per. Or as Dame Cynthias silver raye,

Wil. Hey, ho, the Moonelight!

Per. Upon the glyttering wave doth playe,

Wil. Such play is a piteous plight.

Per. The glaunce into my heart did glide;

Wil. Hey, ho, the glyder!

Per. Therewith my soule was sharply gryde,

Wil. Such woundes soone wexen wider.

Per. Hasting to raunch the arrow out,

Wil. Hey, ho, Perigot!

Per. I left the head in my hart-roote,

Wil. It was a desperate shot.

Per. There it ranckleth, ay more, and more,

Wil. Hey, ho, the arrowe!

Per. Ne can I find salve for my sore:

Wil. Love is a curlesse sorrowe.

Per. And though my bale with death I bought,

Wil. Hey, ho, heave cheer!

Per. Yet should thilk lasse not frgm my thought,

Wil. So you may buye golde to deere.

Per. But whether in paynefull love I pyne,

Wil. Hey, ho, pinching payne!

Per. Or thrive in welth, she shalbe mine,

Wil. But if thou canst obtaine.

Per. And if for gracelesse greefe I dye,

Wil. Hey, ho, gracelesse grieffe!

Per. Witness shee slewe me with her eye,

Wil. Let thy follye be the prife.

Per. And you, that sawe it, simple shepe,

Wil. Hey, ho, the fayre flocke!

Per. For prife thereof, my death shall weep,

Wil. And mone with many a mocke.

Per. So leard I love on a holye eve,

Wil. Hey, ho, holidaye!

Per. That ever since my hart did greve,

Wil. Now endeth our roundelay.

Cud. Sicker, sike a rounde never heard I

Little lacketh Perigot of the best, [none:

And Willye is not greatly overgone,

So wren his under-songs well adrest.

Wil. Herdgrome, I fear me, thou have a squint eye:

Areede uprightly who has the victorye

Cud. Fayth of my soule, I deeme ech have gayned:

For-thy let the Lambe be Willye his owne:

And for Perigot, so well hath hye payned,

To him be the wroughten mazer alone.

Per. Perigot is well pleased with the doome:

Ne can Willye wite the witelesse herdgrome.

Wil. Never dempt more right of beautye, I

weene, [Queene.

The shepheard of Ida that judged beauties

Cud. But tell me, shepherds, should it not

yschend

Your roundels fresh, to heare a doolefull verse

Of Rosalend (who knowes not Rosalend?)

That Colin made? ylke can I you rehearse.

Per. Now say it, Cuddie, as thou art a ladde:

With mery thing its good to medle sadde.

Wil. Fayth of my soule, thou shalt yerounde

be

In Collins stede, if thou this song areede;

For never thing on earth so pleaseth me

As him to heare, or mæfter of his deede.

Cud. Then listneth ech unto my heavy laye,

And tune your pypes as ruthful as ye may.

'Ye wastefull Woodes' beare witness of my

woe,

Wherein my plaints did oftentimes resound:

Ye carelesse byrds are privie to my cries,

Which in your songs were wont to make a part:

Thou, pleasaunt spring, hast luld me oft asleepe,

Whose streames my tricklinge teares did ofte

augment.

'Resort of people doth my greefs augment,

The walled townes doe worke my greater woe;

The forest wide is fitter to resound

The hollow Echo of my carefull cries:

I hate the house, since thence my love did part,

Whose waylefull want debarrs myne eyes from

sleepe.

'Let stremes of teares supply the place of sleepe;

Let all, that sweete is, voyd: and all that may

augment [my woe

My doole, draw neare! More meete to wayle

Bene the wild woodes, my sorowes to resound,

Then bedde, or bowre, both which I fill with

cries,

When I them see so waist, and fynd no part

'Of pleasure past. Here will I dwell apart

In gastfull grove therefore, till my last sleepe

Doe close mine eyes: so shall I not augment

With sight of such as chaunge my restlesse woe.

Helpe me, ye banefull byrds, whose shrieking

sound

Ys signe of dreery death, my deadly cries

'Most ruthfully to tunc : And as my cryes
(Which of my woe cannot bewray least part)
You heare all night, when nature craveth sleepe,
Increase, so let your yrksome yells augment.
Thus all the night in plaints, the daye in woe,
I vowed have to wayt, till safe and sound

'She home returne, whose voyes silver sound
To cheerefull songs can chaunge my cherelesse
cryes.

Hence with the Nightingale will I take part,
That blessed hyrd, that spends her time of
sleepe [ment

In songs and plaintive pleas, the more taug-
The memory of hys misdeede that bred her woe.

And you that feele no woe,
When as the sound
Of these my nightly cryes
Ye heare apart,
Let breake your sounder sleepe,
And pitie augment.'

Per. O Colin, Colin ! the shepherds joye,
How I admire ech turning of thy verse !
And Cuddie, fresh Cuddie, the liefest boye,
How dolefully his doole thou didst re-
hearse !

Cud. Then blowe your pypes, shepherds, til
you be at home ;
The night nigheth fast, yts time to be gone.

PERIGOT HIS EMBLEME.

Vincenti gloria victi.

WILLYES EMBLEME.

Vinto non vitto.

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Felice chi pno.

'GLOSSE.

Bestadde, disposed, ordered.
Irrigall, equall.
Whilome, once.
Rafte, bereft, deprived.
Miscent, gon a strait.
Ill may, according to Virgile.

'Infelix o semper ovis pecus.'

A nazir : So also do Theocritus and Virgile
feigne pledges of their state.

Enchised, engraved. Such pretie descriptions
every where useth Theocritus to bring in his
Idyllia. For which speciall cause, indeede, he by
that name termineth his *Æglogues* ; for Idyllion in
Greeke signifieth the shap or picture of any
thyng, wherof his booke is full. And not, as I have
heard some fondly guess, that they be called not
Idyllia, but *Hædilia*, of the Goteheards in them.

Entrailed, wrought betwene.

Harvest Queene, The manner of country folke in
harvest tyme

Pousse, Pease.

It fell upon : Perigot maketh all hys song in

praise of his love, to whom Willy answereth every
undervorse. By Perigot who is meant, I can not
uprightly say : but if it be who is supposed, his love,
shee deserveth no lesse prayse then he giveth her.

Greete, weeping and complaint.

Chagel, a kinde of Garland lyke a crowne.

Leven, Lightning.

Cynthia, was sayd to be the Moone.

Grinde, pierced

But if, not unlesse.

Squint eye, partiall judgement.

Ech haxe, so saith Virgile,

'Et vitula tu dignus, et hic,' &c.

So by enterchange of gyfts Cuddie pleaseth both
partes.

Duome, judgement.

Dempt, for deemed, judged.

Wite the wilelesse, blame the blamelesse.

The shepherd of Ida, was sayd to be Paris.

Beauties Queene, Venns, to whome Paris ad-
judged the golden Apple, as the pryce of her
beautie.

EMBLEME.

The meaning hereof is very ambiguous : for
Perigot by his poeie claiming the conquest, and
Willye not yielding, Cuddie the arbiter of their
cause, and Patron of his own, someth to challenge

it, as his dew, saying, that he is happy which can,
so abruptly ending : but hee meaneth eyther him,
that can win the beste, or moderate him selfe being
best, and leave of with the best.

SEPTEMBER.

ÆGLOGA NONA. ARGUMENT.

HERFYN Diggon Davie is devised to be a shepheard that, in hope of more gayne, drove his sheepe into a faire countrye. The abuses whereof, and loose living of Popish prelates, by occasion of Hobbinols demaund, he discourseth at large.

HOBBINOL.

DIGGON DAVIE.

Hob. DIGGON DAVIE! I bidde her god
Or Diggon her is, or I mis-saye.

Dig. Her was her, while it was daye-light,
But now her is a most wretched wight:

For day, that was, is wightly past,
And now at earst the dirke night doth hast.

Hob. Diggon, areede who has thee so dight?
Never I wis thee in so poore a plight. [leade?
Where is the fayre flocke thou was wont to
Or bene they chaffred, or at mischief dead?

Dig. Ah! for love of that is to thee moste
leeffe,

Hobbinol, I pray thee, gall not my old griefe:
Sike question ripeth up cause of newe woe,
For one, opened, mote unfold many moe.

Hob. Nay, but sorrow close shrouded in hart,
I know, to kepe is a burdenous smart:
Eche thing imparted is more eath to beare:
When the rayne is fain, the cloudes wexen
clear.

And nowe, sithence I sawe thy head last,
Thrise three Moones bene fully spent and past:
Since wien thou hast measured much grownd,
And wandred, I wene, about the world round,
So as thou can many thinges relate;
But tell me first of thy flocks estate.

Dig. My sheepe bene wasted; (wae is me
therefore!)

The jolly shepheard that was of yore
Is nowe nor jollye, nor shepheard more.
In forrein costes men sayd was plentye;
And so there is, but all of miserye:
I dempt there much to have eeked my store,
But such eeking hath made my hart sore.
In tho count. yes, whereas I have bene,
No being for those that truly mene;
But for such, as of guile maken gayne,
No such countrye as there to remane;
They setten to sale their shops of shame,
And maken a Mart of theyr good name:
The shepherds there robben one another,
And layen baytes to beguile her brother;
Or they will buy his sheepe out of the cote,
Or they will carven the shepherds throte.
The shepherdes awayne you cannot wel ken,
But it be by his pryde, from other men:

They looken bigge as Bulls that bene bate,
And bearen the cragge so stiffe and so state,
As cocke on his dunghill crowing cranch.

Hob. Diggon, I am so stiffe and so stanch,
That uneth may I stand any more:

And nowe the Western wind bloweth sore,
That nowe is in his chiefe sovereigntee,
Beating the withered leafe from the tree,
Sitte we downe here under the hill;
Tho may we talke and tellen our fill,
And make a mocke at the blustering blast.
Now say on, Diggon, what ever thou hast.

Dig. Hobbin, ah Hobbin! I curse the
stounde

That ever I cast to have forne this grounde:

Wel-away the while I was so fonde
To leave the good, that I had in hande,
In hope of better that was uncouth!
So lost the Dogge the flesh in his mouth.

My seely sheepe (ah, seely sheepe!)
That here by there I whilome usd to keepe,
All wene they lustye as thou didst sec,
Bene all starved with pyne and penuree:
Hardly my selfe escaped thilke payne,
Driven for neede to come home agayne.

Hob. Ah son! now by thy losse art taught,
That seeldome chaunge the better brought:

Content who lives with tried state
Neede feare no chaunge of frowning fate;
But who will seeke for unknowne gayne.
Oft lives by losse, and leaves with payne.

Dig. I wote ne, Hobbin, how I was bewitcht
With vayne desire and hope to be enricht;
But, sicker, so it is, as the bright starre
Seemeth ay greater when it is farre:

I thought the soyle would have made me rich,
But nowe I wote it is nothing sich;
For eyther the shepherds bene ydle and still,
And ledde of theyr sheepe what way they wyll,
Or they bene false, and full of covetise,
And casten to compasse many wrong emprise:
But the more bene fraught with fraud and
spight,

Ne in good nor goodnes taken delight,
But kinde coales of conteck and yre,
Wherewith they sette all the world on fire;

Which when they thinke agayne to quench,
With holy water they doen hem all drench.
They saye they can to heauen the high-way,
But, by my soule, I dare undersaye
They neuer sette foote in that same troade,
But balk the right way, and strayen abroad.
They boast they han the deuill at commaund,
But aske hem therefore what they han paund:
Marrie! that great Pan bought with deare
borrow,

To quite it from the blacke bowre of sorowe.
But they han sold thilk same long agoe,
For-thy wouldest drawe with hem many moe.
But let hem gauge alone a Gods name;
As they han brewed, so let hem beate blame.

Hob. Diggon, I praye thee, speake not so dirke;

Such myster saying me seemeth to mirke.

Dig. Then, playnely to speake of shepheards
most what,

Badde is the best; (this English is flatt.)

Their ill haviour ggarres men missey

Both of their doctrine, and of theyr faye.

They sayne the world is much war then it wont,

All for her shepheards bene beastly and blont.

Other sayne, but how truly I note,

All for they holden shame of theyr cote:

Some sticke not to say, (whote cole on her
tongue!)

That sike mischiefe graseth hem emong,

All for they casten too much of worlds care,

To deck her Dame, and enrich her heyre;

For such encheason, if you goe nye,

Fewe chymuels reeking you shall espye:

The fatte Oxe, that wout ligge in the stal,

Is nowe fast stalled in her crumenall.

Thus chatten the people in theyr steads,

Ylike as a Monster of many heads;

But they that shooten neerest the pricke

Sayne, other the fat from their beards doen
lick:

For biggo Bulles of Basan brace hem about,

That with theyr hornes batten the more stoute;

But the leane soules treaden under foote,

And to seeke redresse mought little boote;

For liker bene they to pluck away more,

Then ought of the gotten good to restore:

For they bene like foule wagmoires overgrast,

That, if thy galage once sticketh fast,

The more to wind it out thou doest swinck,

Thou mought ay deeper aul deeper sinck.

Yet better leave of with a little losse,

Then by much wrestling to leese the grosse.

Hob. Nowe, Diggon, I see thou speakest

Better it were a little to feyne. [to plaine;

And cleanly cover that cannot be cured:

Such ill, as is forced, mought nedes be en-
dured.

But of sike pastoures howe done the flocks
creepe?

Dig. Sike as the shepheards, sike bene her
sheepe,

For they nill listen to the shepheards voyce,

But-if he call hem at theyr good cloyce;

They wander at wil and stay at pleasure;

And to theyr foldes yeed at their owne leasure!

But they had be better come at their cal;

For many han into mischiefe fall,

And bene of ravenous Wolves yrent,

All for they nould be buxome and bent.

Hob. Eyc on thee, Diggon, and all thy
foule leasung!

Well is knowne that sith the Saxon king

Never was Woolfe seene, many nor some,

Nor in all Kent, nor in Christendome;

But the fewer Woolves (the soth to sayne)

The more lone the Foxes that here remaine.

Dig. Yes, but they gang in more secrete wise,

And with sheepes clothing doen hem disguise.

They walke not widely as they were wont,

For feare of raungers and the great hunt,

But prively pulling to and froe,

Enaunter they mought be myn knowe.

Hob. Or prive or pert yf any bene,

We han great Bandogs will teare their skinne.

Dig. Indeede, thy Ball is a bold bigge curie,

And could make a jolly hole in theyr furre:

But not good Dogges hem needeth to chace,

But heedly shepheards to discerne their face;

For all their craft is in their countenance.

They bene so grave and full of mayntenance.

But shall I tell thee what my selfe knowe

Chaunced to Rosslyn not long ygoe?

Hob. Say it out, Diggon, whatever it hight,

For not but well mought him betight:

He is so meeke, wise, and merciable,

And with his word this worke is convenable.

Colin Clout, I wene, be his selfe boye,

(Ah, for Colm, he whilome my ioye!)

Shepheards sich, God mought us many send,

That doen so carefully theyr flocks tend.

Dig. Thilk same shepheard mought I well

He has a Dogge to byte or to barke; [marke,

Never had shepheard so kene a kurre,

That waketh and if but a leafe sturre.

Whilome there wonned a wicked Wolfe,

That with many a Lambe had glutted his gulfe,

And ever at night wont to repayre

Unto the flocke, when the Welkin shone faire,

Yeladde in clothing of seely sheepe,

When the good old man used to sleepe.

Tho at midnight he wold barke and ball,

(For he had eft learned a curre's call.)

As if a Woolfe were among the sheepe:

With that the shepheard wold breake his
sheepe,

And send out Lowder (for so his dog hote)
To raunge the fields with wide open throte.
The, when as Lowder was farre awaye,
This Wolvishe sheepe woulde catchen his pray,
A Lambe, or a Kidde, or a weanell wast;
With that to the wood would he speede him
Long time he used this slippery pranck, [fast.
Ere Roffy could for his labourer him thanck.
At end, the shepheard his practise spyed,
(For Roffy is wise, and as Argus eyed,)
And when at even he came to the flocke,
Fast in theyr folds he did them locke,
And tooke out the Woofe in his counterfect cote,
And let out the sheepes bloud at his throte.

*Hob. Marry, Diggon, what should him
To take his owne where ever it laye? [affraye
For, had his wesand bene a little widder,
He woulde have deuoured both hidder and
shidder.*

*Dig. Mischiefe light on him, and Gods
Too good for him had bene a great deale worse;
For it was a perillous beast above all,
And eke had he cond the shepherds call,
And oft in the night came to the shepe-cote,
And called Lowder, with a hollow throte,
As if it the old man selfe had bene:
The dog his maisters voice did wene,
Yet halfe in doubt he openel the dore,
And ranne out as he was wont of yore.
No sooner was out, but, swifter then thought,
Fast by the hyde the Wolfe Lowder caught;
And, had not Roffy renne to the steven,
Lowder had be slaine thilke same even.*

*Hob. God shield, man, he should so ill have
All for ne did his devoyr belive! [thrive,*

*If sike bene Wolves, as thou hast told,
How mought we, Diggon, hem be-holt?*

*Dig. How, but, with heede and watchfull-
nesse,*

*Forstallen hem of their wilnesse:
For-thy with shepheards sittes not playe,
Or sleepe, as some doen, all the long day;
But ever liggien in watch and ward,
From soddein force theyr flocks for to gard.*

*Hob. Ah, Diggon! thilke same rule were
too straight,*

*All the cold season to wach and waite;
We bene of fleshe, men as other bee,
Why should we be bound to such miserece?
Whatever thing lacketh chaungeable rest,
Mought needes decay, when it is at best.*

*Dig. Ah! but, Hobbinoll, all this long tale
Nought caseth the care that doth me forhaile;
What shall I doe? what way shall I wend,
My piteous plight and losse to amend?*

*Ah! good Hobbinoll, mought I thee praye
Of ayde or counsell in my decaye.*

*Hob. Now, by my soule, Diggon, I lament
The haplesse mischiefe that has thee hent;
Nethelless thou seest my lowly saile,
That froward fortune doth ever availle:*

*But, were Hobbinoll as God mought please,
Diggon should soone find favour and ease:
But if to my cotage thou wilt resort,
So as I can I wil thee comfort;*

*There mayst thou liggie in a vetchy bed,
Till fayrer Fortune shewe forth her head.*

*Dig. Ah, Hobbinoll! God mought it thee
requite;*

Diggon on fewe such freends did ever lite.

DIGGONS EMBLEME.

Inopem me copia fecit.

• GLOSSE.

The Dialecte and phraso of speache, in this Dialogue, seemeth somewhat to differ from the common The cause whereof is supposed to be, by occasion of the party herein meant, who, being very freend to the Author hereof, had bene long in forraim countreys, and there seene many disorders, which he here recounteth to Hobbinoll.

Bidde her. Bidde good morrow. For to bidde, is to praye, whereof cometh beades for prayers, and so they say, To bidde his beades, s. to saye his prayers.

Wightly, quickly, or sodenlye.

Chaffed, sold.

Dead at mischiefe, an unusuall speache, but much usurped of Lidgate, and sometime of Chaucer.

Leefe, deare.

Ethe, easie.

Thrus three moones, nine monethes.

Measured, for traveled.

Wae, woe, Northernly.

Eeked, encreased.

Charven, entte.

Kenne, know.

Cragge, neck.

Stale, stontely.

Stanch, wearie or fainte.

And now: he applieth it to the tyme of the yeare, which is in thend of harvest, which they call the fall of the lease; at which tyme the Westerne wynde beareth most swaye.

A mocke, Imitating Horace, *Debes ludibrium ventis.*

Lorne, lefts.

Soots, swete.

Uncouths, unknownen.

Hereby there, here and there.

As the brighte, translated out of Mantuane.

Enprise, for enterprise. Per Syncopen.

Conck, strife.

Trode, path.

Marrie that, that is, their soules, which by popish Exorcismes and practices they damne to hell.

Blacke, hell.

Gange, goo.

Mister, maner.

Murke, obscure.

Warre, worse.

Crumenall, purse.

Brace, compasse.

Encheson, occasion.

Ouer gras, overgrown with grasse.

Galage, shoe.

The grosse, the whole.

Buzome and bent, meeke and obedient.

Saron King, King Edgare that reigned here in Brytanye in the year of our Lord [957-975] which king caused all the Wolves, whereof then was store in this countrye, by a proper policie to be destroyed. So as never since that time there haue ben Wolves here founde, unlesse they were brought from other countryes. And therefore Hobbinoll rebuketh him of untruth, for saying that there be Wolves in England.

Nor in Christendome: this saying seemeth to be strange and unreasonable; but indeede it was wont to be an olde proverbe and common phrase. The original whereof was, for that most part of England in the reigne of King Ethelbert was christened, Kent onely except, which remayned long after in myseliefe and unchristened: So that Kent was counted no part of Christendome.

Great hunt, Executing of lawes and iustice.

Enaunter, least that.

Inly, inwardly: afforcsayde.

Prively or pert, openly, sayth Chaucer.

Roffy, the name of a shephearde in Marot his *Aglogue* of Robyn and the Kinge. Whome he here commendeth for greute care and wise governance of his flock.

Colin cloute: Now I thinke no man doubteth but by Colin is meant the Authour selfe, whose especial good freend Hobbinoll sayth hee is, or more rightly Mayster Gabriel Harvey: of whose speciall commendation, aswell in Poetrie as Ihetorike and other choyce learning, we have lately had a sufficient tryall in divers his workes, but specially in his *Musan um Lachryme*, and his late *Gratulationum Fahl-nensium*, which booke, in the progresse at Andley in Essex, he dedicated in writing to her Majestic, afterward presenting the same in print to her Highnesse at the worshipfull Maister Capella in Hertfordshire. Beside other his sundrye most rare and very notable writings, partly under unknown tytles, and partly under counterfayt names, as his *Turannomastix*, his *Ode Natalitia*, his *Ramendos*, and especially that parte of *Philomusus*, his divine *Anticognopolita*, and divers other of lyke importance. As also, by the name of other shepheardes, he covereth the persons of divers other his familiar freendes and best acquaintaunce.

This tale of Roffy seemeth to colourne some particular Action of his. But what, I certainly know not.

Woned, haunted.

Watkin, skie. afforesaid.

A weenell waste, a weened youngling.

Hudder and shudder, he and she. Male and Female.

Seven, noy-e.

Helve, quickly.

What erer, Ovids verse translated.

‘Quod caret alterna requie durabile non est.’

Forehaile, drawe or distresse.

Fetche, of Pease strawe.

EMBLEME.

This is the saying of Narcissus in Ovid. For when the foolish boy, by beholding hys face in the brooke, fell in love with his owne likeness, and not hable to content him selfe with much looking thereon, he cryed out, that plentye made him poore, meaning that much gazing had bereft him of sence.

But our Diggon useth it to other purpose, as who that by tryall of many wayes, had founde the worst, and through greute plentye was fallen into great penurie. This poesie I knowe to have bene much used of the authour, and to suche like effecte, as fyrste Narcissus spake it.

OCTOBER.

ÆGLOGA DECIMA. • ARGUMENT.

In Cuddie is set out the perfecte paterne of a Poete, whiche, finding no maintenance of his state and studies, complayneth of the contempne of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: Specially having bene in all ages, and even amongst the most barbarous, alwayes of singular account and honor, and being indeede so worthy and commendable an arte, or rather no arte, but a divine gift and heavenly instinct not to be gotten by labour and learning, but adorned with both; and poured into the veile by a certain ἑρθευσαυτος and reftall inspiration, as the Author hereof els where at large discourseth in his booke called The English Poete, which booke being lately come to my hands, I mynde also by Gods grace, upon further aduisement, to publish.

PIERCE.

CUDDIE.

Piers. CUDDIE, for shame! hold up thy
heavie head,
And let us cast with what delight to chace,
And weary thys long lingring Phœbus race.

Whilome thou wont the shepheards laddes
to leade
In rymes, in ridles, and in bydding base;
Now they in thee, and thou in sleepe art dead.

Cud. Piers, I have pyped erst so long with
payne,
That all mine Oten reedes bene rent and wore,
And my poore Muse hath spent her spared
store,
Yet little good hath got, and much lesse gayne.
Such pleasaunce makes the Grashopper so
poore,
And ligge so layd, when Winter doth her

The dapper ditties, that I wout devise
To feede youthes fancie, and the flocking fry,
Delighten much; what I the bett for-thy?
They han the pleasure, I a sclender prise;
I beate the bush, the byrds to them doe flye:
What good thereof to Cuddie can arise?

Piers. Cuddie, the prayse is better then the
price,
The glory eke much greater then the gayne:
O! what an honor is it, to restraine
The lust of lawlesse youth with good advice,
Or pricke them forth with pleasaunce of thy
vaine,
Whereto thou list thy trayned willes entice.

Soone as thou gynst to sette thy notes in frame,
O, how the rurall routes to thee doe cleave!
Seemeth thou dost their soule of sence bereave;
All as the shepheard that did fetch his daine
From Plutoes balefull bowre withouten leave,
His musicks might the hellish hound did tame.

Cud. So praysen babes the Peacocks spotted
traine,
And woudren at bright Argus blazing eye;
But who rewards him ere the more for-thy,
Or feedes him once the fuller by a graine?
Sike prayse is smoke, that sheddeth in the
skye;
Sike words bene wynd, and wasten soone in

Piers. Abandon, then, the base and viler
clowne;
Lyft up thy selfe out of the lowly dust,
And sing of bloody Mars, of wars, of giusts;
Turne thee to those that weld the awful crowne,
To doubted Knights, whose woundlesse armour
rusts,
And helmes unbruzed wexen dayly browne.
There may thy Muse display her fluttryng
wing,
And stretch her selfe at large from East to
Whither thou list in fayre Elisa rest, [West];
Or, if thee please in bigger notes to sing,
Advance the worthy whome shie loveth best.
That first the white beare to the stake did
bring.

And, when the stubborne stroke of stronger
stounds
Has somewhat slackt the tenor of thy string,
Of love and lustihead thou mayst thou sing,
And carroll lowde, and leade the Myllers
rownde,
All were Elisa one of thilke same ring;
So mought our Cuddies name to heaven sownde.

Cud. Indeepe the Romish Tityrus, I heare,
Through his Mecænas left his Oaten reede,
Whereon he earst had taught his flocks to
feede,
And laboured lauds to yeld the timely care,
And est did sing of warres and deadly drede,
So as the Heavens did quake his verse to here.

But ah! Mecænas is yclad in claye,
And great Augustus long y goe is dead,
And all the worthies liggen wrapt in leade,
That matter made for Poets on to play:
For ever, who in derring-doe were drede,
The loftie verse of hem was loved aye.

But after vertue gan for age to stoope,
And mightie manhode brought a bedde of ease,
The vaunting Poets found nought worth a
pease
To put in preace among the learned troupe:
Tho gan the streames of flowing wittes to cease,
And soone-bright honour pend in shamefull
coupe.

And if that any buddes of Poesie,
Yet of the old stocke, gan to shoote agayne,
Or it mens follies mote be forst to fayne,
And rolle with rest in rymes of ry baudrye;
Or, as it sprong, it wither must agayne:
Tom Piper makes us better melodie.

Piers. O pierlesse Poesye! where is then
thy place?
If nor in Princes pallace thou doe sitt,
(And yet is Princes pallace the most fitt.)
Ne brest of baser birth cloth thee embrace,
Then make thee winges of thine aspyring wit,
And, whence thou camst, flye backe to heaven
apace.

Cud. Ah, Percy! it is all to weake and
wanne,
So high to sore and make so large a flight;
Her peeced pyncons bene not so fly plight:
For Colin fittes such famous flight to seanne;
He, were he not with love so ill bedight,
Would mount as high, and sing as soote as
Swanne.

Piers. Ah, fon! for love does teach him
climbe so hie,
And lyftes him up out of the loathsome myre;

Such immortal mirrhor, as he doth admire,
Would rayse ones mynd above the starry skie,
And cause a caytive corage to aspire;
For lofty love doth loath a lowly eye.

Cud. All otherwise the state of Poet stands;
For lordly love is such a Tyranne fell,
That where he rules all power he doth expell;
The vaunted verse a vacant head demaundes,
Ne wont with crabbed care the Muses dwell:
Unwisely weaves, that takes two webbes in
hand.

Who ever casts to compasse weightye prise,
And thinks to throwe out thondring words of
threate,
Let powre in lawish cups and thriftie bitts of
meate,
For Bacchus fruite is frend to Phœbus wise;

And, when with Wine the braine begins to
sweate,
The numbers flowe as fast as spring doth ryse.

Thou kenst not, Percie, howe the ryne should
rage,
O! if my temples were distaind with wine,
And girt in girlonds of wild Yvie twine,
How I could reare the Muse on stately stage,
And teache her tread aloft in buskin fine,
With queint Bellona in her equipage!

But ah! my corage cooles ere it be warme:
For-thy content us in thys humble shade,
Where no such troublous tydes han us assayde;
Here we our slender pypes may safely charme.

Piers. And, when my Gates shall han their
bellies layd,
Cuddie shall have a Kidde to store his farne.

CUDDIES EMBLEM.

Agitante calescimus illo, &c.

GLOSSE.

This *Eglogue* is made in imitation of Theocritus his xvi. *Idyllion*, wherein he reproved the Tyranning Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towardie Poetes, in whome is the power to make men immortal for theyr good dedes, or shamefull for their naughty lyfe. And tho, lyke also is in Mantuane. The style hereof, as also that in Theocritus, is more lofty then the rest, and applyed to the heighte of Poeticall witte.

Cuddie. I doubte whether by Cuddie be specified the authour selfe, or some other. For in the eyght *Eglogue* the same person was brought in, singing a Cantion of Colins making, as he sayth. So that some doubt that the persons be different.

• *Whilome*, sometime.

Oaten reedes, *Avena*.

Lagge so layde, lye so faynt and unlustye.

Dapper, pretye.

Frye, is a bold Metaphore, forced from the spawning fishes; for the multitude of young fish he called the frye.

To restraine: This place seemeth to conspyre with Plato, who in his first booke de *Legibus* sayth, that the first invention of Poetry was of very vertuous intent. For at what time an infinite number of youth usually came to theyr great sollemne feastes called *Panegyrics*, which they used every five yeere to hold, some learned man, being more habile then the rest for speciall gyftes of wytte and Musicke, would take upon him to sing fine verses to the people, in prayse eyther of vertue or of victory, or of immortality, or such like. At whose wonderfull gyft all men being astonied, and as it were ravished with delight, thinking (as it was indeed) that he was inspired from above, called him *vatem*: which kinde of men afterward framing their verses to lighter musick (as of musick he many kinds, some

sadder, some lighter, some martiall, some heroical, and so diversely eke affect the mynds of men,) found out lighter matter of Poesie also, some playing wyth love, some scorning at mens fashions, some powred out in pleasures: and so were called Poetes or makers.

Sence bereave: what the secreete working of Musick is in the myndes of men, as well appeareth hereby, that some of the ancient Philosophers, and those the mooste wise, as Plato and Pythagoras, held for opinion, that the mynd was made of a certaine harmonie and musickall numbers, for the great compassion, and likenes of affection in thone and in the other, as also by that memorable history of Alexander: to whom when as Timotheus the great Musitian playd the Phrygian melody, it is said, that he was distraught with such unwonted fury, that, straightway rysing from the table in great rage, he caused himselfe to be armed, as ready to goe to warre, (for that musick is very warlike.) And immediatly when as the Musitian channeged his stroke into the Lydian and Ionique harmony, he was so furr from warring, that he sat as styll, as if he had bene in matters of counsell. Such might is in musick: wherefore Plato and Aristotle forbid the Arcadian Melodie from children and youth. For that being altogether on the fyft and vii tone, it is of great force to mollifie and quench the kindly courage, which useth to burne in yong breasts. So that it is not incredible which the Poete here sayth, that Musick can bereave the soule of sence.

The shepherd that, Orpheus: of whom is said, that by his excellent skil in Musick and Poetry, he recovered his wife Eurydice from hell.

Argus eyes: of Argus is before said, that Juno to him committed her husband Iupiter his Para-

gon Io, because he had an hundred eyes : but afterwards Mercury, with his Musick lulling Argus asleep, slew him and brought Io away, whose eyes it is said that Inno, for his eternall memory, placed in her byrd the Peacocks tale ; for those coloured spots indeede resemble eyes.

Woundlesse armour, unwounded in warre, doe rust through long peace.

Display, A poeticall metaphore, whereof the meaning is, that, if the Poet list shewe his skill in matter of more dignitie then is the homely *Æglogue*, good occasion is him offered of higher veynes and more Heroicall argument in the person of our most gracious sovereign, whom (as before) he calleth Eliza. Or if matter of knighthood and chevalrie please him better, that there he many Noble and valiant men, that are both worthy of his payne in theyr deserved prayes, and also favourers of his skill and faculty.

The worthy, he meaneth (as I gresse) the most honorable and renowned the Erie of Leycester, whom by his cognisance (although the same be also proper to other) rather then by his name he bewrayeth, being not likely that the names of worldly princes be known to country clowne.

Stact, that is when thou chaungest thy verse from stately discourse, to matter of more pleasaunce and delight.

The Millers, a kind of daunce.

Ring, company of dancers.

The Romish Thyrsus, well known to be Virgile, who by Mæcenas means was brought into the favour of the Emperor Augustus, and by him moved to write in loftier kinde then he erst had doen.

Whereon, in these three verses are the three severall workes of Virgil intended, for in teaching his flocke to feede, is meant his *Æglogues*. In labouring of lands, is his *Bucoliques*. In singing of wars and deadly dreade, is his divine *Æneis* figured.

In derring doe, In manhood and chevalrie.

For ever: He sheweth the cause why Poetes were wont to be had in such honor of noble men, that is, that by them their worthines and valor shold through theyr famous Poesies be commended to all posterities. Wherefore it is sayd, that Achilles had never bene so famous, as he is, but for Homeres immortal verse, which is the only advantage which he had of Hector. And also that Alexander the great, comming to his tombe in Sigens, with naturall teares blessed him, that ever was his hap to be honoured with so excellent a Poets work, as so renowned and ennobled only by his meanes. Which being declared in a most eloquent Oracion of Tullies, is of Petrarch no lesse worthily sett forth in a sonet.

'Giunto Alexandro a la famosa tomba

'Del fero Achille, sospirando disse:

'O fortunato, che si chiara tomba. Trouasti,' &c.

And that such account hath bene always made of Poetes, as well sheweth this, that the worthy Scipio, in all his varres against Carthage and Numantia, had evermore in his company, and that in a most familiar sort, the good olde poet Ennius ; as also that Alexander destroying Thebes, when he was enformed, that the famous Lyric poet Pindarus was borne in that citie, not onely commended

streightly, that no man should, upon payne of death, do any violence to that house, by fire or otherwise : but also specially spared most, and some highly rewarded, that were of his kinne. So favoured he the only name of a Poete, which praye otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, that when he came to ransacking of king Darius coffers, whom he lately had overthrown, he founde in a little coffer of silver the two bookes of Homers works, as layd up there for speciall jewels and riches, which he taking thence, put one of them dayly in his bosome, and thother every night layde under his pillowe. Such honor have Poetes always found in the sight of princes and noble men, which this author here very well sheweth, as els where more notably.

But after, He sheweth the cause of contempt of Poetry to be idleness, and businesse of mynd.

Pent, shut up in slouth, as in a coope or cage.

Tom paper, an ironicall Sarcasmus, spoken in derision of these rude wits, which make more account of a ryming ryband, then of skill grounded upon learning and judgment.

Ne brest, the meaner sort of men.

Her peece pincons, imperfect skil : Spoken with humble modestie.

As soote as Swanne : The comparison seemeth to be strange, for the swanne hath ever wonne small commendation for her swete singing : but it is sayd of the learned, that the swan, a little before his death, singeth most pleasantly, as prophesying by a secreete instinct her neere destinie. As well sayth the Poete elsew here in one of his sonets,

'The silver swanne doth sing before her dying day,

'As shew that feelles the deepe delight that is in death,' &c.

Immortall myrrhour, Beautie, which is an excellent object of Poeticall spirites, as appeareth by the worthy Petrarch, saying,

'Fiorir faceva il mio debile ingerno,

'A la sua ombra, et crescer ne gli affanni.'

A captive courage, a base and abject minde.

For lofty love, I thinke this playing with the letter, to be rather a fault then a figure, as wel in our English tongue, as it hath bene always in the Latine called *Cacozelon*.

A vacant, imitateth Mantuanes saying, 'vacuum curis divina cerebrum Poscit.'

Lavish cups, Resemblith the comen verse, 'Fucundi calices quom non fecere desertum.'

O if my, he seemeth here to be ravished with a Poeticall fume. For (if one rightly mark) the numbers rise so full, and the verse groweth so big, that it seemeth he had forgot the meannesse of shepherds state and stile.

Wild yrie, for it is dedicated to Bacchus, and therefore it is sayd, that the Menades (that is Bacchus franticke priestes) used in theyr sacrifice to carry Thyrsos, which were pointed staves or Javelins, wrapped about with yrie.

In buskin, it was the maner of Poetes and plaiers in tragedies to were buskins, as also in Comedies to use stockes and light shoes. So that the buskin in Poetry is used for tragical matter, as is said in Virgile, 'Sola Sophocleo tua carmina digna cothurno,'

And the like in Horace, 'Magnum loqui, nitique cothurno.'

Quint, strange. Delloona, the goddess of battle, that is, Pallas, which may therefore wel be called *quint*, for that (as Lacin saith) when Jupiter hir father was in traveile of her, he caused his sonne Vulcane with his axe to hew his head : Out of which leaped forth lustely a valiant dunsell armed at all poyntes, whom seeing Vulcane so faire

and comely, lightly leaping to her, proffered her some courtesie, which the Lady disdainng, shaked her speare at him, and threatned his sueticnesse. Therefore such strauingenesse is well applied to her. *Equipage*, order.

Tydes, seasons.

Charme, temper and order ; for Charms were wont to be made by verses, as Ovid sayth, 'Aut si carminibus,

EMBLEME.

Herby is meant, as also in the whole course of this *Eglogue*, that Poetry is a diuine instinct, and immutual rage, passing the reach of common reason.

Whom Piers answereth Epiphonematicos, as admitting the excellencye of the skylle, whereof in Cuddie hee hadde already hadde a taste.

NOVEMBER.

ÆGLOGA UNDECIMA. ARGUMENT.

In this xi. *Eglogue* hee bewaileth the death of some mayden of greate bloud, whom he calleth Dido. The personage is secret, and to me altogether unknowne, albe of him selfe I often requyred the same. This *Eglogue* is made in imitation of Marot his song, which he made vpon the death of Lous the Frenche Queene; but farre passing his reach, and in myne opinion all other the *Eglogues* of this booke.

THENOT

COLIN.

The. COLIN, my deare, when shall it please thee sing,

As thou were wont, songs of some iouis-aunce ?
Thy Muse to long slombreth in sorrowing,
Lulled a sleepe through loves mis-governance.
Now somewhat sing, whose endles soveraince
Emong the shepheards swaines may aye remaine,

Whether thee list thy loved lasse aduance,
Or honor Pan with hymnes of higher vaine.

Col. Thenot, now nis the time of merimake.

Nor Pan to herve, nor with love to playe;
Sike myrth in May is meetest for to make,
Or summer shade, under the cocked hay.

But nowe sadde Winter welked hath the day,
And Phœbus, weary of his yerely taske,
Ystabled hath his steedes in lowlye laye,
And taken up his ynn in Fishes haske.

Thilke solein season sadder plight doth aske,
And loatheth sike delights as thou doest praye:

The mornefull Muse in myrth now list ne maske,

As shee was wont in youngth and sommer
But if thou algate lust light viresayes,
And looser songs of love to underfong.

Who but thy selfe deserves sike Poetes praye?
Relieve thy Oaten pypes that sleepe long.

The. The Nightingale is sovereigne of song,
Before him sits the Titmouse silent bee;
And I, unfitte to thrust in skilfull thronge,
Should Colin make judge of my foolerree;

Nay, better learne of hem that learned bee,
And kan be watered at the Muses well;
The kindely dewe drops from the higher tree,
And wets the little plants that lowly dwell.

But if sadde winters wrathe, and season chill,
Accorde not with thy Muses meriment,
To sadder times thou mayst attune thy quill,
And sing of sorrowe and deathea dreeriment;
For deade is Dido, dead, alas! and drent;
Dido! the greacie shephearde his daughter sheene.

The fayrest May shee was that ever went,
Her like shee has not left behinde I weene:
And, if thou wilt bewayle my wofull tene,
I shall thee give yond Cosset for thy payne;
And, if thy rymes as rownde and rusill bene
As those that did thy Rosalind c'mplayne,
Mech greater gyfts for guerdon thou shalt gayne.

Then Kiddle or Cosset, which I thee bynempt.
Then up, I say, thou jolly shepheheard swayne,
Let not my small demand be so contempt.

Col. Thenot, to that I choose thou doest me tempt;

But ah! to well I wote my humble vaine,
And howe my rimes bene rugged and unkeempt;
Yet, as I coine, my conning I will strayne.

'Up, then, Melpomene! the mournefulst Muse
of nynce,
Such cause of mourning never hadst afore;

Up, grieslie ghostes ! and up my ruffull ryme !
Matter of myrth now shalt thou have no more ;
For dead shee is, that myrth thee made of yore.
Dido, my deare, alas ! is dead,
Dead, and lyeth wrapt in lead.
O heavie herse !
Let streaming teares be poured out in store ;
O carefull verse !

'Shepheards, that by your flocks on Kentish
downes abyde,
Waile ye this wofull waste of Natures warke ;
Waile we the wight whose presence was our
pryde ; [carke ;
Waile we the wight whose absence is our
The sonne of all the world is dimmie and darke :
The earth now lacks her wonted light,
And all we dwell in deadly night.
O heavie herse ! [Larke ;
Breake we our pypes, that shrild as lowde as
O carefull verse !

'Why doe we longer live, (ah ! why live we so
long ?) [woc ?
Whose better dayes death hath shut up in
The fayrest floure our gyrlond all among
Is faded quite, and into dust ygoe. [moe
Sing now, ye shepheards daughters, sing no
The songs that Colin made you in her praise,
But into weeping turne your wanton layes.
O heavie herse ! [ygoe :
Nowe is time to dye : Nay, time was long
O carefull verse !

'Whence is it, that the flouret of the field
doth fade,
And lyeth buried long in Winters bale ;
Yet, soone as spring his mantle hath displayde,
It floureth fresh, as it should never fayle ?
But thing on earth that is of most availle,
As vertues braunch and beauties budde,
Reliven not for any good.
O heavie herse !
The braunch once dead, the budde eke needes
O carefull verse ! [must quail ;

'She, while she was, (that was, a woful word
to sayne)
For beauties prayse and plesauce had no peere ;
So well she couth the shepherds entertayne
With cakes and cracknells, and such country
chere : [swaine ;
Ne would she scorne the simple shepheards
For she would cal him often heame,
And give him curds and clouted Creame.
O heavie herse !
Als Colin Cloute she would not once disdayne ;
O carefull verse !

'But nowe sike happy cheere is turnd to heavie
chaunce,
Such plesauce now displast by dolours dint :
All musick sleepes, where death doth leade the
daunce,
And shepherds wonted solace is extinct.
The blew in black, the greene in gray is tint ;
The gaudie girlonds deck her grave,
The faded flowres her corse embrace.
O heavie herse !
Morrie nowe, my Muse, now morrie with teares
O carefull verse ! [besprint ;
'O thou greate shepheard, Lobbin, how great
is thy griefe ! [thee ?
Where bene the nosegayes that she dight for
The coloured chaplets wrought with a chiefe,
The knotted rush-ringes, and gilte Rosemarce ?
For shee deemed nothing too deere for thea.
Ah ! they bene all yclad in clay ;
One bitter blast blew all away.
O heavie herse !
Thereof nought remainyes but the memoree ;
O carefull verse !

'Ayme ! that dreerie Death should strike so
mortall stroke,
That can undoe Dame Natures kindly course ;
The faded lockes fall from the loftie oke,
The floods do gaspe, for dried is theyr sourse,
And floods of teares flowe in theyr stead per-
force :
The mantled medowes mourne,
Theyr sondry colours tourne.
O heavie herse !
The heavens doe melt in teares without re-
O carefull verse ! [morse ;

'The feeble flocks in field refuse their former
foode, [to weepe ;
And hang theyr heads as they would learne
The beastes in forest wayle as they were woode,
Except the Wolves, that chase the wandring
sheepe,
Now she is gone that safely did hem keepe :
The Turtle on the bared braunch
Laments the wound that death did launch.
O heavie herse !
And Philomele her song with teares doth
O carefull verse ! [steape ;

'The water Nymphs, that wont with her to
sing and daunce,
And for her girlond Olive braunches beare,
Nowe balefull boughes of Cypres doen ad-
vance ; [weare,
The Muses, that were wont greene bayes to
Now bringen bitter Eldre braunches seare ;

The fatal sisters eke repent
Her vital threde so soone was spent.
O hevie herse!
Morne now, my Muse, now morne with heavy
O carefull verse! [cheare,

‘O! trustlesse state of earthly things, and
slipper hope [nought,
Of mortal men, that swincke an i sweate for
And, shooting wide, doe misse the marked
scope;
Now have I learnd (a lesson derely bought)
That nys on earth assurance to be sought;
For what might be in earthlie mould,
That did her buried body hould.
O hevie herse!
Yet saw I on the beare when it was brought;
O carefull verse!

‘But maugre death, and dreaded sisters
deadly spight,
And gates of hel, and fyrie furies forse,
She hath the bond^s broke of eternall night,
Her soule unbodied of the burdenous corpe.
Why then weepes Lobbin so without remorse?
O Lobb! thy losse no longer lament;
Dido nis dead, but into heaven hent.
O happye herse!
Cease now, my Muse, now cease thy sorrowes
O joyfull verse! [sourse;

‘Why wayle we then? why weary we the
Gods with pfaýnts,
As if some evill were to her betight?
She raignes a goddesse now among the saintes,
That whilome was the saynt of shepheards
light,
And is enstalled nowe in heavens hight.

I see thee, blessed soule, I see
Walke in Elisian fieldes so free.
O happy herse!
Might I once come to thee, (O that I might!)
O joyfull verse!

‘Unwise and wretched men, to weete what
good or ill,
Weede me of Death as doome of ill desert;
But knewe we, fooles, what it us bringes until,
Dye would we dayly, once it to expert!
No daunger there the shepheard can astert;
Fayre fieldes and pleasaunt layes there bene;
The fieldes ay fresh, the grasse ay greene.
O happy herse!
Make hast, ye shepheards, thether to revert:
O joyfull verse!

‘Dido is gane afore; (whose turne shall be the
next?)
There lives shee with the blessed Gods in blisse,
There drincks she Nectar with Ambrosia mixt,
And joyes enjoys that mortall men doe misse.
The honor now of highest gods she is.
That whilome was poore shepheards pryde,
While here on earth she did abyde
O happy herse!
Cease now, my song, my woe now wasted is;
O joyfull verse!

The. Ay, francke shepheard, how bene thy
verses meint
With doleful pleasaunce, so as I ne wotte
Whether rejoyce or weepe for great constraint.
Thyne be the cossette, well hast thou it gotte.
Up, Colin up! ynough thou morned hast;
Now gynnes to mizzle, hye we homeward fast.

COLINS EMBLEME.

La mort ny mord.

GLOSSE.

Jouissance, myrth.
Sovereignce, remembrance.
Herse, honour.
Welked, shortened or empayred. As the Moone
being in the waine is sayde of Lidgate to welk.
In lovly lay, according to the season of the
moneth November, when the sonne draweth low
in the South toward his Tropick or returne.
In fishes haake, the sonne reigneth, that is, in the
signe Places all November: a haake is a wicker pad,
wherein they use to cary fish.
Vrelater, a light kind of song.
Hee watred, for it is a saying of Poetes, that they
have dronk of the Muses well Castalias, whereof
was before sufficiently sayd.

Dreriment, dreery and heavy cheere.
The great shepheard, is some man of high degree,
and not, as some vainly suppose, God Pan. The
person both of the shephearde and of Dido is un-
known, and closely buried in the Authors conceipt.
But out of doubt I am, that it is not Rosalind, as
some imagin: for he speaketh soone after of her also.
Shene, fayre and shining.
May, for mayde.
Tene, sorrow.
Guerdon, reward.
Bynampt, bequeathed.
Cosset, a lamb brought up without the dam.
Unkempt, Incompt. Not comed, that is, rude
and unhansome.

Melpomene, The sadde and wayefull Muse, used of Poets in honor of Tragedies : as saith Virgile, 'Melpomene tragico proclamat moesta boatu.'

Up gruesly gasts, The maner of Tragical Poetes, to call for helpe of Furies, and damned ghostes : so is Hecuba of Euripides, and Tantalus brought in of Seneca. And the rest of the rest.

Here, is the solemne obsequie in funeralles.

Wast of, decay of so beautifull a peece.

Carke, care.

Ah why, an elegant Epunorthosis, as also soone after : nay, tyme was long ago.

Floure, a diminutive for a little floure. This is a notable and sententious comparison, 'A minore ad maius.'

Kelven not, live not againe, &c. not in theyr earthly bodies : for in heaven they enjoy their due reward.

The braunch, He meaneth Dido, who being as it were the mayne braunch now withered, the budde, that is, beautie (as he sayd afore) can no more flourish.

With cakes, fit for shepheards banquets.

Heame, for home, after the northerne pronouncing.

Tinct, dyed or stayngd.

The gaudie : the meaning is, that the things which were the ornaments of her life are made the honor of her funeral, as is used in burials.

Lobbin, the name of a shepherd, which seemeth so have bene the lover and deere frende of Dido.

Rushings, agreeable for such base gifts.

Faded lockes, dried leaves. As if Nature her seife bewayled the death of the Mayde.

Sourse, spring.

Mantled medowes, for the sondry flowres are like a Mantle or coverlet wrought with many colours.

Philomela, the Nightingale : whome the Poetes faine once to have bene a Ladye of great beauty, tall, being ravished by hir sisters husbände, she desired to be turned into a byrde of her name, whose complaints be very wel set forth of Ma. George Gascoine, a wittie gentleman, and the very chefe of our late rymers, who, and if some partes of learning wanted not (albee it is well knowne he altogether wanted not learning) no doubt would

have attayned to the excellencye of those famous Poets. For gifts of wit and naturall promptnesse appeare in hym abundantly.

Cypresse, used of the old Paynims in the furnishing of their funeral Pompe, and properly the signe of all sorrow and heavinesse.

The fatall sisters, Clotho, Lachesis, and Atropos, daughters of Hæbus and the Nighte, whom the Poetes fayne to spinne the life of man, as it were a long threde, which they drawe out in length, till his fatal howre and tyme death be come ; but if by other casualltie his dayes be abridged, then one of them, that is, Atropos, is sayde to have cut the threde in twain. Hereof commeth a common verse,

'Clotho colum bajulat, Lachesis trahit, Atropos occut.'

O trustlesse, a gallant exclamation, moralized with great wisdom, and passionate wyth great affection.

Beare, a frame, wheron they use to lay the dead corse.

Furies, of Poetes are feyned to be three, Persephone, Alecto, and Megera, which are sayd to be the Authours of all evill and mischiefe.

Eternall night, is death or darknesse of hell.

Delight, happened.

I see, a lively Icon or representation, as if he saw her in heavyn present.

Elysian felides, he devised of Poetes to be a place of pleasure like Paradise, where the happye soules doe rest in peace and eternall happynesse.

Dye would, the very expresse saying of Plato in Phædone.

Asert, befall unware.

Nectar and Ambrosia, be assigned to be the drink and foode of the gods : Ambrosia they liken to Manna in scripture, and Nectar to be white like Creme, whereof is a proper tale of Hebe, that spilt a cup of it, and stayned the heavens, as yet appeareth. But I have already discourst that at large in my Commentarie upon the Dreames of the same Authour.

Meynt, mingled.

EMBLEME.

Which is as much to say, as death byteth not. For although by course of nature we be borne to dye, and being ripened with age, as with a tyme harvest, we must be gathered in time, or els of our selves we fall like rotden ripe fruite from the tree : yet death is not to be counted for evill, nor (as the Poete sayd a little before) as doome of ill desert.

For though the trespass of the first man brought death into the world, as the gnerdon of sinne, yet being overcome by the death of one that dyed for al, it is now made (as Chaucer sayth) the grene path way to life. So that it agreeth well with that was sayd, that Death byteth not (that is) hurteth not at all.

DECEMBER.

ÆGLOGA DUODECIMA. ARGUMENT.

THIS Æglogue (even as the first beganne) is ended with a complaynte of Colin to God Pan ; wherein, as weary of his former wayes, hee proportioneth his life to the foure seasons of the yeare ; comparing his youth to the spring time, when he was fresh and free from loves follye. His manhood to the summer, which, he sayth, was consumed with greates heate and excessive drouth, caused throughe a Comet or blasse

starre, by which hee meaneth love; which passion is commonly compared to such flames and immoderate heate. His ripper yeares hee resembleth to an unseasonable harveste, wherein the fruites fall ere they be ripe. His latter age to winters chyll and frostie season, now drawing neare to his last ende.

THE gentle shepherd satte beside a springe,
All in the shadowe of a bushye brere,
That Colin hight, which wel could pype and
sing,
For he of Tityrus his songs did lere:
There, as he satte in secrete shade alone,
Thus gan he make of love his piteous rone.

'O soveraigne Pan! thou god of shepheards
all,
Which of our tender Lambkins takest keepe,
And, when our flocks into mischaunce mought
fall,
Doe'st save from mischief the unwary sheepe,
Als of their maisters hast no lesse regarde
Then of the flocks, which thou doest watch
and warde;

'I thee beseeche, as thou deigne to heare
Rude ditties, tunc to shepheards Oaten reede,
Or if I ever sonet song so cleare,
As it with pleasure mought thy fancie feede)
Hoarken awhile, from thy greene cabriet,
The rurall song of carefull Colinete.

'Whilome in youth, when flowrd my joyfull
spring,
Like Swallow swift I wandred here and there;
For heate of heedlesse lust me so did sting,
That I of doubted danger had no feare:
I went the wastefull woodes and forest wide,
Withouten drede of Wolves to bene espyd.

'I wont to raunge amydde the mazie thickette,
And gather nuttes to make me Christmas
game,
And joyed oft to chace the trembling Pricket,
Or hunt the hartlesse hare til shee were tame.
What recked I of wintrey ages waste?—
Thou deemed I my spring would ever laste.

'How often have I scaled the craggie Oke,
All to dialodge the Raven of her nest?
How have I wearied with many a stroke
The stately Walnut-trec, the while the rest
Under the tree fell all for nuts at strife?
For I like to me was libertee and lyfe.

'And for I was in thilke same looser yeares,
(Whether the Muse so wrought me from my
byrth,
Or I to much beleevd my shepherd peeres,)
Somedele ybent to song and musicks mirth,
A good old shepherde, Wrenock was his
name,
Made me by arte more cunning in the same.

'Fro thence I durst in derring-doe compare
With shepheards swayne what ever fedde in
field;
And, if that Hobbinol right judgement bare,
To Pan his owne selfe pype I neede not yield:
For, if the flocking Nymphes did folow Pan,
The wiser Muses after Colin ranne.

'But, ah! such pryde at length was ill re-
payde:
The shepheards God (perdie God was he none)
My hurtlesse pleasure did me ill upbraide;
My freedome lorne, my life he left to mone.
Love they him called that gave me check-
mate,
But better mought they have behote him
late.

'Tho gan my lovely Spring bid me farewell,
And Sommer season sped him to display
(For love then in the Lyons house did dwell)
The raging fyre that kindled at his ray.
A comett stird up that unkindly heate,
That reigned (as men sayd) in Venus seat.

'Forth was I ledde, not as I wont afore,
When choise I had to choose my wandring
waye,
But whether luck and loves unbridled lore
Woulde leade me forth on Fancies bitte to
playe:
The bush my bedde, the bramble was my
The Woodes can witnesse many a wofull
stowre.

'Where I was wont to seeke the honey Bee,
Working her formall rowmes in wexen frame,
The grieu'd Tode-stoole growne there mought
I see,
And loathed Paddocks lording on the same:
And where the chaunting birds luld me
asleepe,
'The ghastlie Owle her grievous ynnce doth
keepe.

'Then as the springe gives place to elder time,
And bringeth forth the fruites of sommers pryde;
Also my age, now passed youngthly pryde,
To thinges of ryper season selfe applyed,
And leard of lighter timber cotes to frame,
Such as might save my sheepe and me fro
shame.

'To make fine cages for the Nightingale,
And Baskets of bulrushes, was my wont:
Who to entrappe the fish in winding sale
Was better seene, or hurtful beastes to hunt?

I learned als the signes of heaven to ken,
How Phoebe fayles, where Venus sittes, and
when.

'And tryed time yet taught me greater thinges;
The sodain rysing of the raging seas,
The soothe of byrdes by beating of their
winges,

The power of herbes, both which can hurt and
And which be wont t' enrage the restlesse
sheepe,

And which be wont to worke eternall sleepe.

'But, ah! unwise and witlesse Colin Cloute,
That kydst the hidden kinds of many a wede,
Yet kydst not ene to cure thy sore hart-roote,
Whose ranckling wound as yet does rifelye
bleede.

Why livest thou stil, and yet hast thy deathes
Why dyest thou stil, and yet alive art
founde?

'Thus is my sommer worne away and wasted,
Thus is my harvest hastened all to rathe;
The eare that budded faire is burnt and blasted,
And all my hoped gaine is tufnd to scathe:

Of all the seede that in my youth was sowne
Was nought but brakes and brambles to be
mowne.

'My boughes with bloosmes that crowned
were at firste,

And promised of timely fruite such store,
Are left both bare and barrein now at erst;
The flattring fruite is fallen to grownd before,
And rotted ere they were halfe mellow ripe;
My harvest, wast, my hope away dyd wipe.

'The fragrant flowres, that in my garden grewe,
Bene withered, as they had bene gathered long;
Their rootes bene dried up for lacke of dewe,
Yet dewed with teares they han be ever
among.

Ah! who has wrought my Rosalind this
To spil the flowres that should her gylond
dight?

And I, that whilome wont to frame my pype
Unto the shifting of the shepherds foote,
Sike follies now have gathered as too ripe,
And cast hem out as rotten and unsote.

The loser Lasse I cast to please no more;
One if I please, enough is me therefore.

'And thus of all my harvest-hope I have
Nought reaped but a weedye crop of care;
Which, when I thought have thresht in swell
ing sheave,

Cockel for corne, and chaffe for barley, bare:
Soone as the chaffe should in the fan be fynd,
All was blowne away of the wavering wynd.

'So now my yeare drawes to his latter terme,
My spring is spent, my sommer burnt up quile;
My harveste hasts to stirre up Winter sterne,
And bids him clayme with rigorous rage hys
right:

So nowe he stormes with many a sturdy
So now his blustering blast eche coste dooth
scoure.

'The carefull cold hath nypt my rugged rynde,
And in my face deepe furrowes eld hath pight:
My head besprent with hoary frost I fynd,
And by myne eie the Crow his glawe dooth
wright:

Delight is layd abedde; and pleasure past;
No sonne now shines; cloudes han all over-
cast.

'Now leave, ye shepherds boyes, your merry
glee;

My Muse is hoarse and wearie of thys stounde;
Here will I hang my pype upon this tree:
Was never pype of reede, did better sounde.
Winter is come that blowes the bitter blaste,
And after Winter dreerie death does hast.

'Gather together ye my little flocke,
My little flock, that was to me so lief;
Let me, ah! lette me in your foldes ye lock,
Ere the breme Winter breeds you greater griefe.

Winter is come, that blowes the balefull
breath,

And after Winter commeth timely death.

Adieu, delights, that lulled me asleepe;
Adieu, my deare, whose love I bought so deare;
Adieu, my little Lambes and loved sheepe;
Adieu, ye Woodes, that oft my witness were:
Adieu, good Hobbinoll, that was so true,
Tell Rosalind, her Colin bids her adieu.'

COLINS EMBLEME.

Vivitur ingenio: cetera mortis erunt.

GLOSSE.

Tityrus, Chaucer, as hath bene oft sayd.

Lambkins, young lambes.

Als of their, seemeth to expresse Virgils verse.

'Pan curat oves oviumque magistros.'

Deigne, vouchsafe.

Cabinet, *Colinet*, diminutives.

Maze, for they be like to a maze whence it is hard
to get out agayne.

Feres, felowes and companions.

Musick, that is Poetry, as Terence sayth, 'Qui
artem tractant musicam,' speaking of Poetes.

Derring doe, aforesayd.

Lions house: he imagineth simply that Cupid, which is love, had his abode in the whote signe Leo, which is in the midst of somer; a prettie allegory; whereof the meaning is, that love in him wrought an extraordinarie heate of lust.

His ray, which is Cupides beame or flames of Love.

A comete, a blasing starre, nãant of beautie, which was the cause of his whote love.

Venus, the goddess of beauty or pleasure. Also a signe in heaven, as it is here taken. So he meaneth that beautie, which hath alwayes aspect to Venus, was the cause of his unquietnes in love.

Where I was: a fine description of the change of his life and liking, for all things nowe seemed to him to have altered their kindly course.

Lording: Spoken after the manner of Paddocks and Frogs sitting, which is indeed lordly, not removing nor looking once aside, unlesse they be sturred.

Then as: The second part, that is, his manhood. *Cotes*, Sheepcotes, for such be the exercises of shepheards.

Sal, or sallow, a kinde of woodde like Wyllow, fit to wreath and bynde in leapes to catch fish withall.

Phæbe fayles, The Eclipse of the Moone, which is alwayes in Cauda, or Capite Draconis, signes in heaven.

Venus, s. Venus starre, otherwise called Iesperus, and Vesper, and Lucifer, both because he seemeth to be one of the brightest starres, and also first ryseth, and seteth last. All which skill in starres being convenient for shepherdes to knowe, Theocritus and the rest use.

Raging seas: The cause of the swelling and ebbing of the sea commeth of the course of the Moone, sometime encreasing, sometime waining and decreasing.

Sooth of byrdes, A kind of soothsaying used in elder tymes, which they gathered by the flying of

byrds: First (as is sayd) invented by the Thuscans, and from them derived to the Romanes who, as it is sayd in Livie, were so superstitiously rooted in the same, that they agreed that every Noble man should put his sonne to the Thuscans, by them to be brought up in that knowledge.

Of herbes: That wonderous thinges be wrought by herbes, as well appeareth by the common working of them in our bodies, as also by the wonderful enchantments and sorceries that have bene wrought by them, inasmuch that it is sayde that Circe, a famous sorceresse, turned men into sondry kinds of beastes and Monsters, and onely by herbes: as the Poete sayth,

‘*Dec sava potentibus herbis, &c.*’

Kidst, knewest.

Eare, of corne.

Scathe, losse, hindrance.

The fragrant flowers, sundry studies and laudable partes of learning, whereun our Poet is scene, be they witnesses which are privie to this study.

Ever amongh, Ever and anone.

Thus is my, The thyrd part wherein is set forth his ripe yeeres as an untimely harvest that bringeth little fruite.

So now my yeere: The last part, wherein is described his age, by comparison of wyntre stormes.

Carefull cold, for care is sayd to coole the blood.

Glee, mirth.

Hoary frost, a metaphore of hoary heares scattered lyke ~~to~~ gray frost.

Breeme, sharpe and bitter.

Adieu delights, is a conclusion of all: where in sixe verses he comprehendeth briefly all that was touched in this booke. In the first verse his delights of youth generally: In the second, the love of Rosalind: In the thyrd, the keeping of sheepe, which is the argument of all the *Eclogues*: In the fourth, his complaints: And in the last two, his professed friendship and good will to his good friend Hobbinoll.

EMBLEM.

The meaning whereof is, that all thinges perish and come to theyr last end, but workes of learned wits and monuments of Poetry abide for ever. And therefore Horace of his Odes, a worke though full indeed of great wit and learning yet of no so great weight and importance, boldly sayth,

‘*Exegi monumentum ære perennius,*

‘*Quod nec imber edax, nec aquilo vorax.*’ &c.

*Loe! I have made a Calender for every
year,
That steale in strength, and time in durance,
shall outweare;
And, if I marked well the starres revolution,
It shall continue till the worlds dissolution,
To teach the ruder shepheard how to feede his
sheepe,
And from the fulcers fraude his folded flocke to
keepe.*

Therefore let not be envied, that this Poete in his Epilogue sayth, he hath made a Calendar that shall endure as long as time, &c. following the example of Horace and Ovid in the like.

‘*Grande opus exegi, quod nec Iovis ira, neo
ignis,*

‘*Nec ferum poterit nec edax abolere vetustas,*
&c.

*Goe, lyttle Calender! thou hast a free passe-
porte;
Goe but a lowly gate amongste the meaner sorte:
Dare not to match thy pype with Tityrus his
style.
Nor with the Pilgrim that the Ploughman playde
awhyle;
But followe them furre off, and their high steppes
adore:
The better please, the worse despise; I aske no
[more.]*

MERCÉ NON MERCEDE.

COMPLAINTS:
CONTAINING SUNDRIE SMALL POEMES
OF THE
WORLDS VANITIE.
WHEREOF THE NEXT PAGE MAKETH MENTION.
BY ED. SP.

A NOTE OF THE SUNDRIE POEMES CONTAINED IN THIS VOLUME.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>The Ruines of Time.</i> 2. <i>The Teares of the Muses.</i> 3. <i>Virgils Gnat.</i> 4. <i>Prosopopœia, or Mother Hubberds Tale.</i> 5. <i>The Ruines of Rome : by Bellay.</i> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 6. <i>Muopotmos, or The Tale of the Butter flie.</i> 7. <i>Visions of the Worlds Vanitie.</i> 8. <i>Bellayes Vision.</i> 9. <i>Petrarches Visions.</i> |
|--|---|

THE PRINTER TO THE GENTLE READER.

SINCE my late setting forth of the Faerie Queene, finding that it hath found a favourable passage amongst you, I have sithence endeavoured by all good meanes (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your delights,) to get into my handes such smale Poemes of the same Authors, as I heard were disperst abroad in sundrie hands, and not easie to bee come by, by himselfe; some of them having bene diverslie imbeziled and purloyned from him since his departure over Sea. Of the which I have, by good meanes, gathered together these fewe parcels present, which I have caused to bee imprinted altogether, for that they al seeme to containe like matter of argument in them; being all complaints and meditations of the worlds vanitie,

verie grave and profitable. To which effect I understand that he besides wrote sundrie others, namelie *Ecclesiastes* and *Canticum canticorum* translated, *A sennights slumber*, *The hell of lovers*, his *Purgatorie*, being all dedicated to Ladies; so as it may seeme he ment them all to one volume. Besides some other Pamphlets looselic scattered abroad: as *The dying Pellican*, *The howers of the Lord*, *The sacrifice of a sinner*, *The seven Psalmes*, &c. which when I can, either by himselfe or otherwise, attaine too, I meane likewise for your favour sake to set forth. In the meane time, praying you gentlie to accept of these, and graciously to entertaine the new Poet, I take leave.

THE RUINES OF TIME.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND BEAUTIFULL LADIE, *

THE LADIE MARIE,

COUNTESSE OF PEMBROOKE.

Most Honourable and bountifull Ladie, there bee long sithens deepe sowed in my brest the seede of most entire love and humble affection unto that most brave Knight, your noble brother deceased; which, taking roote, began in his life time some what to bud forth, and to shew themselves to him, as then in the weakenes of their first spring; And would in their riper strength (had it pleased high God till then to drawe out his daies) spired forth fruit of more perfection. But since God hath disdeigned the world of that most noble Spirit, which was the hope of all learned men, and the Patron of my young Muses, together with him both their hope of anie further fruit was cut off, and also the tender delight of those their first blossoms nipped and quite dead. Yet, sithens my late cumming into England, some frends of mine, (which might much prevaile with me, and indeede command me) knowing with howe straight bandes of duetie I was tied to him, as also bound unto that noble house, (of which

the chiefe hope then rested in him) have sought to revive them by upbraiding me, for that I have not shewed anie thankefull remembrance towards him or any of them, but suffer their names to sleepe in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieffie to satisfie, or els to avoide that fowle blot of unthankfulnessse, I have conceived this small Poeme, intituled by a generall name of *The Worlds Ruines*; yet speciallie intended to the renowning of that noble race, from which both you and he sprong, and to the eternizing of some of the chiefe of them late deceased. The which I dedicate unto your La. as whome it most speciallie concerneth; and to whome I acknowledge my selfe bounden by manie singular favours and great graces. I pray for your Honourable happinesse; and so humblye kisse your handes.

Your Ladiships ever
humblye at command.

E. S.

THE RUINES OF TIME.

It chaunced me on day beside the shore
Of silver streaming Thamesis to bee,
Nigh where the goodly Verlame stood of yore,
Of which there now remains no memorie,
Nor anie little monument to see,
By which the traveller, that fares that way,
'This once was she,' may warned be to say.

There, on the other side, I did behold
A Woman sitting, sorrowfullie wailing,
Bending her yeelow locks, like wyrie gold
About her shoulders careleslie downe trailing,

And streames of teares from her faire eyes
forth railing:

In her right hand a broken rod she held, I weld.
Which towards heaven shee seemd on high to

Whether she were one of that Rivers Nymphes,
Which did the losse of some dere love lament,
I doubt; or one of those three satall Impes
Which draw the dayes of men forth in extent:
Or th' auncient Genius of that Citie brant:
But, seeing her so piteouslie perplexed,
I (to her calling) askt what her so vexed.

'Ah! what delight (quoth she) in earthlie
thing,
Or comfort can I, wretched creature, have?
Whose happines the heavens envying,
From highest staire to lowest step me drave,
And have in mine owne bowels made my grave,
That of all Nations now I am forlorne,
The worlds sad spectacle, and fortunes scorne.'

Much was I mooved at her piteous plaint,
And felt my heart nigh riven in my brest
With tender ruth to see her sore constraint;
That, shedding teares a while, I still did rest,
And after did her name of her request.
'Name have I none (quoth she) nor anie being,
Bereft of both by Fates unjust decreeing.

'I was that Citie, which the garland wore
Of Britaines pride, delivered unto me
By Romane Victors, which it wonne of yore;
Though nought at all but ruines now I bee,
And lye in mine owne ashes, as ye see,
Verlame I was: what bootes it that I was,
Sith now I am but weedes and wastfull gras?

'O vaine worlds glorie! and unstedfast state
Of all that lives on face of sinfull earth!
Which, from their first untill their utmost date,
Taste no one hower of happines or merth;
But like as at the ingate of their berth
They crying creep out of their mothers wombe,
So wailing backe go to their wofull toomb.

'Why then dooth flesh, a bubble-glas of brenth,
Hunt after honour and advauncement vaine,
And reare a trophée for devouring death,
With so great labour and long lasting paine,
As if his daies for ever should remane?
Sith all that in this world is great or gaie
Doth as a vapour vanish, and decaie.

'Looke backe, who list, unto the former ages,
And call to count what is of them become:
Where be those learned wits and antique Sages,
Which of all wisdome knew the perfect
somme?

Where those great warriors, which did over-
come

The world with conquest of their might and
maine,

And made one meare of th' earth and of their
raine?

'What now is of th' Assyrian Lyonesse,
Of whome no footing now on earth appeares?
What of the Persian Beares outrageousnesse,
Whose memorie is quite worne out with yeares,
Who of the Grecian Libbard now ought heares,
That overran the East with greedie powre,
And left his whelps their kingdomes to de-
voure?

'And where is that same great seven-headed
beast,

That made all nations vassals of her pride,
To fall before her feete at her beheast,
And in the necke of all the world did ride?
Where doth she all that wondrous weith nowe
hide?

With her owne weight down pressed now shee
lies,

And by her heaps her hugeness testifies.

'O Rome! thy ruine I lament and rue,
And in thy fall my fatall overthrowe, [vewe
That whilom was, whilst heavens with equall
Deignd to behold me and their gifts bestowe,
The picture of thy pride in pompous shew:
And of the whole world as thou wast the Em-
presse,
So I of this small Northerne world was Prin-
cesse.

'To tell the beawtie of my buildings fayre,
Adorn'd with purest golde and precious stone;
To tell my riches, and endowments rare,
That by my foes are now all spent and gone;
To tell my forces, matchable to none,
Were but lost labour, that few would beleeeve,
And with rehearsing would me more agreeve.

'High towers, faire temples, goodly theaters,
Strong walls, rich porches, princelie pallaces,
Large streetes, brave houses, sacred sepulchers,
Sure gates, sweete gardens, stately galleries,
Wrought with faire pillowes and fine imageries;
All those (O pitie!) now are turnd to dust,
And overgrown with blacke oblivions rust.

'I heretoo for waklie power, and peoples store,
In Britannie was none to match with mee,
That manie often dill abie full sore;
Ne Troynovant, though elder sister shee,
With my great forces might compared bee:
Thak stout Peindragon to his perill felt,
Who in a siege seaven yeres about me dwelt.

'But long ere this, Bunduca, Britonnesse,
Her mightie hoast against my bulwarkes
Bunduca, that victorious conqueresse, brought,
That, lifting up her brave heroick thought
Bove womens weaknes, with the Romanes
fought, [vailed;
Fought, and in field against them thrice pre-
Yet was she foyld, when as she me assailed.

'And though at last by force I conquered
were
Of hardie Saxons, and became their thrall,
Yet was I with much bloodshed bought full
deere,
And pride with slaughter of their Generali;

The moniment of whose sad funerall,
For wonder of the world, long in me lasted,
But now to nought through spoyle of time is
wasted.

'Wasted it is, as if it never were ;
And all the rest, that me so honord made
And of the world admired ev'rie where,
Is turnd to smoake, that doth to nothing fade ;
And of that brightnes now appears no shade.
But greislie shades, such as doo haunt in hell
With fearfull fiends, that in deep darknes dwell.

'Where my high steeple whilom usde to stand,
On which the lordly Faulcon wont to towre
There now is but an heap of lyme and sand,
For the Shriche-owle to build her balefull bowre:
And where the Nightingale wont forth to powre
Her restles plaints, to comfort wakefull
Lovers, • [Plovers.

There now haunt yelling Mewes and whining

'And where the cristall Thamis wont to slide
In silver channell, downe along the Lee,
About whose flowrie bankes on either side
A thousand Nymphes, with mirthfull jollitee,
Were wont to play, from all annoyance free,
There now no rivers course is to be scene,
But moorish fennes, and marshes ever greene.

'Seemes, that that gentle River for great
griefe
Of my mishaps, which oft I to him plained,
Or for to shunne the horrible mischief,
With which he saw my cruell foes me pained,
And his pure streames with guiltles blood oft
stained ;

From my unhappie neighborhood farre fled,
And his sweete waters away with him led.

'There also, where the winged ships were scene
In liquid waves to cut their fomie waie,
And thousand Fishers numbred to have been,
In that wide lake looking for plenteous prae
Of fish, which they with baits usde to betraie,
Is now no lake, nor anie fishers store, •
Nor ever ship shall saile there anie more.

'They all are gone, and all with them is gone ;
Ne ought to me remaines, but to lament
My long decay, which no man els doth mone,
And mourne my fall with dolefull dreriment.
Yet it is comfort in great languishment,
To be bemoaned with compassion kinde,
And mitigates the anguish of the minde.

'But me no man bewaileth, but in game,
Ne sheddeth teares from lamentable eie ;
Nor anie lives that mentioneth my name
To be remembred of posteritie,

Save One that, maugre fortunes injurie,
And times decay, and envies cruell tort,
Hath writ my record in true-seeming sort.

'Cambden ! the nourice of antiquitie,
Arid lanterns unto late succeeding age,
To see the light of simple veritie
Buried in ruines, through the great outrage
Of her owne people led with warlike rage :
Cambden ! though Time all moniments obscure,
Yet thy just labours ever shall endure.

'But whie (unhappie wight !) doo I thus crie,
And grieve that my remembrance quite is raced
Out of the knowledge of posteritie,
And all my antique moniments defaced ?
Sith I doo daile see things highest placed,
So soone as Fates their vitall thred have shorne,
Forgotten quite as they were never borne.

'It is not long, since these two eyes beheld
A mightie Prince, of most renowned race,
Whom England high in gount of honour held,
And greatest ones did sue to gaine his grace ;
Of greatest ones he, greatest in his place,
Sate in the bosome of his Sovereaine,
And *Right and loyalty* his word maintaine.

'I saw him die, I saw him die, as one
Of the meane people, and brought forth on
beare ;

I saw him die, and no man left to mone
His dolefull fate, that lae him loved deare :
Scarse anie left to close his eyldis neare ;
Scarse anie left upon his lips to laie
The sacred sod, or Requiem to saie.

'O ! trustlesse state of miserable men,
That builde your blis on hope of earthly thing,
And vainly thinke your selves halfe happie then,
When painted faces with smooth flattering
Doo fawne on you, and your wide praises sing ;
And, when the courting masker louteth lowe,
Him true in heart and trustie to you trow

'All is but fained, and with oaker dide,
That everie shower will wash and wipe away ;
All things doo change that under heaven abide,
And after death all friendship doth decaie :
Therefore, what ever man bearest worldlie sway,
Living, on God and on thy selfe relie ;
For, when thou diest, all shall with thee die.

'He now is dead, and all is with him dead,
Save what in heavens storehouse he uplaid :
His hope is faild, and come to passe his dread,
And evill men, now dead, his deeds npbraid :
Spite bites the dead, that living never baid.
He now is gone, the whiles the Foxe is crept
Into the hole, the which the Badger swept.

'He now is dead, and all his glorie gone,
And all his greatnes rapoured to nought,
That as a glasse upon the water shone,
Which vanisht quite, so soone as it was sought:
His name is worne alreadie out of thought,
Ne anie Poet seekes him to revive,
Yet manie Poets honourd him, alive.

'Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloute,
Care now his idle bagpipe up to raise,
Ne tell his sorrow to the listning rout
Of shepherd groomes, which wont his songs to
praise:

Praise who so list, yet I will him dispraise,
Untill he quite him of this guiltie blame.
Wake, shepherds boy, at length awake for
shame!

'And who so els did goodnes by him gaine,
And who so els his bounteous minde did trie,
Whether he shepherd be, or shepherds
swaine,
(For manie did, whith doo it now denie,)
Awake, and to his Song a part applie:
And I, the whilest you mourne for his decess,
Will with my mourning plaints your plaint
increase.

'He dyde, and after him his brother dyde,
His brother Prince, his brother noble Peere,
That whilst he lived was of none envyde,
And dead is now, as living, counted deare,
Deare unto all that true affection beare:
But unto thee most deare, O dearest Dame!
His noble Spouse, and Paragon of fame.

'He, whilst he lived, happie was through thee,
And, being dead, is happie now much more;
Living, that lincked chaunst with thee to bee,
And dead, because him dead thou dost adore
As living, and thy lost deare love deplore.
So whilst that thou, faire flower of chastitie,
Dost live, by thee thy Lord shall never die.

'Thy Lord shall never die, the whiles this
verse

Shall live, and surely it shall live for ever:
For ever it shall live, and shall rehearse
His worthie praise, and vertues dying never,
Though death thy soule doo from his bodie
sever;

And thou thy selfe herein shalt also live:
Such grace the heavens doo to my verses give.

'Ne shall his sister, ne thy father die,
Thy father, that good Earle of rare renowne,
And noble Patrone of weake povertie;
Whose great good deeds, in country and in
towne,

Have purchast him in heaven an happie crowne,
Where he now liveth in eternall bliss,
And left his sonne t' ensue those steps of his.

'He, noble bud, his Grandsires livelie hayre,
Under the shadow of thy countenance
Now ginnes to shoote up fast, and flourish fayre
In learned artes, and goodlie governaunce,
That him to highest honour shall advance.
Brave Impe of Bedford! grow apace in bountie,
And count of wisdom more than of thy
Countie.

'Ne may I let thy husbands sister die,
That goodly Ladie, sith she eke did spring
Out of his stocke and famous familie,
Whose praises I to future age doo sing;
And forth out of her happie womb did bring
The sacred brood of learning and all honour;
In whom the heavens powde all their gifts
upon her.

'Most gentle spirite, breathed from above
Out of the bosome of the makers bliss,
In whom all bountie and all vertuous love
Appeared in their native propertie,
And did enrich that noble breast of his
With treasure, passing all this worldes worth,
Worthie of heaven it selfe, which brought it
forth.

'His blessed spirite, full of power divine
And influence of all celestial grace,
Loathing this sinfull earth and earthlie slime,
Fled back too soone unto his native place;
Too soone for all that did his love embrace,
Too soone for all this wretched world, whom he
Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

'Yet, ere his happie soule to heaven went
Out of this fleshlie gale, he did devise
Unto his heavenlie maker to present
His bodie, as a spotles sacrifice;
And chose that guiltie hands of enemies
Should powre forth th' offering of his guiltles
blood:
So life exchanging for his countries good.

'O noble spirite! live there ever blessed, [Joy;
The worlds late wonder, and the heavens new
Live ever there, and leave me here distressed
With mortall cares and cumberous worlds annoy!
But, where thou dost that happines enjoy,
Bid me, O! bid me quicklie come to thee,
That happie there I maie thee alwaies see.

'Yet, whilst the fates afford me vitall breath,
I will it spend in speaking of thy praise,
And sing to thee, untill that timelie death
By heavens doome doo ende my earthlie daies:

Thereto doo thou my humble spirite raise,
And into thee that sacred breath inspire,
Which thou there breathest perfect and entire.

'Then will I sing; but who can better sing
Than thine owne sister, peerles Ladie bright,
Which to thee sings with deep harts sorrowing,
Sorrowing tempered with deare delight,
That her to heare I feeble spright
Robbed of sense, and ravished with joy:
O sad joy, made of mourning and any!

'Yet will I sing; but who can better sing
Than thou thy selfe, thine owne selves valiance,
That, whilst thou livedst, madest the Forrests
ring, [daunce,
And fields resound, and flockes to leap and
And shepheards leave their lambs unto mis-
chance,

To runne thy shrill Arcadian Pipe to heare:
O, happie were those dayes, thrice happie were!

'But now, more happie thou, and wretched wee
Which want the wonted sweetnes of thy voice,
Whiles thou, now in Elisian fields so free,
With Orpheus, and with Linus, and the choice
Of all that ever did in rimes rejoice, [layes,
Conversest, and doost heare their heavenlie
And they heare thine, and thine doo better
praise.

'So there thou livest, singing evermore,
And here thou livest, being ever song
Of us, which living loved thee afore, [throng
And now thee worship mongst that blessed
Of heavenlie Poets and Heroes strong.
So thou both here and there immortal art,
And everie where through excellent desert.

'But such as neither of themselves can sing,
Nor yet are sung of others for reward,
Die in obscure oblivion, as the thing
Which never was, ne ever with regard.
Their names shall of the later age be heard,
But shall in rustie darknes ever lie,
Unless they mentiond be with infamie.

'What booteth it to have been rich alive?
What to be great? what to be gracious?
When after death no token doth survive
Of former being in this mortall hous,
But sleeps in dust, dead and inglorious,
Like beast whose breath but in his nostrils is,
And hath no hope of happinesse or blis.

'How manie great ones may remembered be,
Which in their daies most famouslie did flourish;
Of whome no word we heare, nor signe now
see,

But as things wipt out with a sponge to perishe,

Because they living cared not to cherishe
No gentle wits, through pride or covetize,
Which might their names for ever memorize.

Provide therefore (ye Princes) whilst ye live,
That of the Muses ye may friended bee,
Which unto men eternitie do give;
For they be daughters of Dame Memorie
And Jove, the father of eternitie,
And do those men in golden thrones repose,
Whose merits they to glorifie do chose.

'The sevenfold yron gates of grislie Hell,
And horrid house of sad Proserpina,
They able are with power of mightie spell
To breake, and thence the soules to bring awaie
Out of dread darknesse to eternall day, [die
And them immortal make, which els would
In foule forgetfulnesse, and nameles lie.

'So wilome raised they the puissant brood
Of golden girt Alcmena, for great merite,
Out of the dust, to which the Oetean wood
Had him consum'd, and spent his vitall spirite,
To highest heaven, where now he doth inherite
All happinesse in Helles silver bowre,
Chosen to be her dearest Paramoure.

'So raise they eke faire Ledaes warlick
twines,
And interchanged life unto them lent, [ginnes
That, when th' one dieth, th' other then be-
To shew in Heaven his brightnes orient;
And they, for pittie of the sad wayment
Which Orpheus for Eurydice did make,
Her back againe to life sent for his sake.

'So happie are they, and so fortunate,
Whom the Pierian sacred sisters love,
That freed from bands of impacable fate,
And power of death, they live for aye above,
Where mortall wreakes their blis may not re-
move;
But with the Gods, for former vertues meede,
On Nectar and Ambrosia do feede.

'For deeds doe die, how ever noble donne,
And thoughts of men do as themselves decay;
But wise wordes, taught in numbers for to
Recorded by the Muses, live for ay; [runne,
Ne may with storming showers be washt away,
Ne bitter-breathing winde with harmful blast,
Nor age, nor envie, shall them ever wast.

'In vaine doo earthly Princes, then, in vaine,
Seek, with Pyramides to heaven aspired,
Or huge Colosses built with costlie paine,
Or brasen Pillours never to be fired,
Or Shrines made of the mettall most desired,

To make their memories for ever live;
For how can mortal immortalitie give?

'Such one Mausolus made, the worlds great wonder,

But now no remnant doth thereof remaine:
Such one Marcellus, but was torne with thunder:

Such one Lisippus, but is worne with raine:
Such one King Edmond, but was rent for gaine.
All such vaine monimen'ts of earthlie masse,
Devour'd of Time, in time to nought doo passe.

'But Fame with golden wings aloft doth flie,
Above the reach of ruinous decay, [skie,
And with brave plumes doth beate the azure
Admir'd of base borne men from farre away:
Then, who so will with vertuous deeds assay
To mount to heaven, on Pegasus must ride,
And with sweete Poets verse be glorified.

'For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake,
Could save the sonne of Thetis from to die;
But that blinde bard did him immortall make
With verses, dipt in dew of Castalie:
Which made the Easterne Conquerour to crie,
O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue fould
So brave a Trompe, thy noble acts to sound!

'Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read
Good Melibe, that hath a Poet got
To sing his living praises being dead,
Deserving never here to be forgot,
In spite of envie that his deeds would spot:
Since whose decease, learning lies unregarded,
And men of armes doo wander unrewarded.

'Those two be those two great calamities,
That long agoe did grieve the noble spright
Of Salomon with great indignities,
Who whilome was alive the wisest wight:
But now his wisdome is disprooved quite;
For he, that now welds all things at his will,
Scorns th' one and th' other in his deeper skill.

'O griefe of griefes! O gall of all good heartes!
To see that vertue should dispised be
Of him, that first was raise'd for vertuous parts,
And now, broad spreading like an aged tree,
Lets none shoot up that nigh him planted be:
O let the man, of whom the Muse is scorned,
Nor alive nor dead be of the Muse adorned!

'O vile worlds trust! that with such vaine illusion
Hath so wise men bewitcht, and overkest,
That they see not the way of their confusion.
O vainesse! to be added to the rest,
That do my soule with inward griefe infest:

Let them behold the piteous fall of mee,
And in my case their owne ensample see.

'And who so els that sits in highest seate
Of this worlds glorie, worshipped of all,
Ne feareth change of time, nor fortunes threate,
Let him behold the horror of my fall,
And his owne end unto remembrance call;
That of like ruine he may warned be,
And in himselfe be mov'd to pittie mee.'

Thus having ended all her piteous plaint,
With dolefull shrikes shee vanished away,
That I, through inward sorrowe wexen faint,
And all astonished with deepe dismay,
For her departure, had no word to say;
But sate long time in sencelesse sad affright,
Looking still, if I might of her have sight.

Which when I missed, having looked long,
My thought returned greaved home againe,
Renewing her complaint with passion strong,
For ruth of that same womans piteous paine;
Whose wordes recording in my troubled braine,
I felt such anguish wound my feeble heart,
That frozen horror ran through everie part.

So inlie greying in my groning brest,
And deepe'lie mazing at her doubtfull speach,
Whose meaning much I labored forth to wreste,
Being above my slender reasons reach;
At length, by demonstration me to teach,
Before mine eyes strange sights presented were,
Like tragicke Pageants seeming to appeare.

I

I SAW an Image, all of massie gold,
Placed on high upon an Altare faire,
That all, which did the same from farre beholde,
Might worship it, and fall on lowest staire.
Not that great Idoll might with this compare,
To which th' Assyrian tyrant would have made
The holie brethren falslie to have praid.

But th' Altare, on the which this Image staid,
Was (O great pitie! built of bricke clay,
That shortly the foundation decayd,
With showres of heaven and tempests worne
away;
Then downe it fell, and low in ashes lay,
Scorned of everie one, which by it went;
That I, it seeing, dearelie did lament.

II

Next unto this statelie Towre appeared,
Built all of richest stone that might bee found,
And nigh unto the Heavens in height upreared,
But placed on a plot of sandie ground:
Not that great Towre, which is so much renowned

For tongues confusion in Holie Writ,
King Ninus worke, might be compar'd to it.

But O vaine labours of terrestriall wit,
That buidles so stronglie on so frayle a soyle,
As with each storme does fall away, and flit,
And gives the fruit of all your travailes toyle
To be the pray of Tyme. and Fortunes spoyle!
I saw this Towre fall sodainelie to dust,
That nigh with griefe thereof my heart was
brust.

III

Then did I see a pleasant Paradize,
Full of sweete flowres and daintiest delights,
Such as on earth man could not more devise,
With pleasures choyce to feed his cheerefull
sprights:

Not that, which Merlin by his magicke slights
Made for the gentle Squire, to evertaine
His fayre Belphebe, could this gardine
staine.

But O short pleasure, bought with lasting
paine!

Why will hereafter anie flesh delight
In earthlie blis, and joy in pleasures vaine,
Since that I sawe this gardine wasted quite,
That where it was scarce seemed anie sight?
That I, which once that beautie did beholde,
Could not from teares my melting eyes with-
holde.

IV

Soone after this a Giaunt came in place,
Of wondrous powre, and of exceeding stature,
That none durst vewe the horror of his face,
Yet was he milde of speech, and meeke of
nature:

Not he, which in despite of his Creatour
With railing tearmes defied the Jewish hoast,
Might with this mightie one in hugenes boast;

For from the one he could to th' other coast
Stretch his strong thighs, and th' Ocean
overstride,

And reach his hand into his enemies hoast.
But see the end of pompe and fleshlie pride!
One of his fete unwares from him did slide,
That downe hee fell into the deepe Abisse,
Where drownd with him is all his earthlie
blisse.

V

Then did I see a Bridge, made all of golde,
Over the Sea from one to other side,
Withouten prop or pillour it t' upholde,
But like the coloured Rainbowe arched wide:
Not that great Arche, which Trajan edified,
To be a wonder to all age ensuing,
Was matchable to this in equall vewing.

But (ah!) what bootes it to see earthlie thing
In glorie, or in greatnes to excell,
Sith time doth greatest things to ruine bring?
This goodlie bridge, one foote not fastned well,
Gan faile, and all the rest downe shortlie fell,
Ne of so brave a building ought remained,
That griefe thereof my spirite greatly pained.

VI

I saw two Beares, as white as anie milke,
Lying together in a mightie cave,
Of milde aspect, and haire as soft as silke,
That salvage nature seemed not to have,
Nor after greedie spoyle of bloud to crave:
Two fairer beasts might not elsewhere be found,
Although the compast world were sought
around.

But what can long abide above this ground
In state of blis, or steelfast happinesse?
The Cave, in which these Beares lay sleeping
sound, [nesse,
Was but earth, and with her owne weighti-
Upon them fell, and did unwares oppresse;
That, for great sorrow of their sudden fate,
Henceforth all worlds felicitie I hate.

¶ Much was I troubled in my heavie
spright,
At sight of these sad spectacles forepast,
That all my senses were bereaved quight,
And I in minde remained sore agast,
Distraught twixt feare and pitie; when at
last

I heard a voyce, which loudly to me called,
That with the suddain shrill I was appalled.

Behold (said it) and by ensample see,
That all is vanitie and griefe of minde,
Ne other comfort in this world can be,
But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclinde;
For all the rest must needs be left behinde:
With that it bad me, to the other side
To cast mine eye, where other sights I spide.

I

UPON that famous Rivers further shore,
There stood a snowie Swan of heavenly hiew,
And gentle kinde as ever Fowle afore;
A fairer one in all the goodlie crier
Of white Strimonian brood might no man
view:

There he most sweetly sung the prophecie
Of his owne death in dolefull Elegie.

At last, when all his mourning melody
He ended had, that both the shores resounded,
Feeling the fit that him forward to die,
With loftie flight above the earth he bounded,

And out of sight to highest heaven mounted,
Where now he is become an heavenly signe,
There now the joy is his, here sorrow mine.

II

Whilst thus I looked, loe! adowne the Lee
I sawe an Harpe stroong all with silver twyne,
And made of golde and costlie yvorie,
Swimming, that whylome seemed to have been
The Harpe on which Dan Orpheus was seene
Wylde beasts and forrests after him to leade,
But was th' Harpe of Philisides now dead.

At length out of the River it was reard
And borne above the cloudes to be divin'd,
Whilst all the way most heavenly noyse was
heard

Of the strings, stirred with the warbling wind,
That wrought both joy and sorrow in my
mind:

So now in heaven a signe it doth appeare,
The Harpe well knowne beside the Northern
Beare.

III

Soone after this I saw, on th' other side,
A curious Coffer made of Heben wood,
That in it did most precious treasure hide,
Exceeding all this baser world's good:
Yet through the overflowing of the flood
It almost drowned was, and done to nought,
That sight thereof much griev'd my pensive
thought.

At length, when most in peril it was brought,
Two Angels, downe descending with swift
flight,

Out of the swelling streame it lightly caught,
And twixt their blessed armes it carried
quight

Above the reach of anie living sight:
So now it is transform'd into that starre,
In which all heavenly treasures locked are.

IV

Looking aside I saw a stately Bed,
Adorned all with costly cloth of gold,
That might for anie Prince's couche be red,
And deckt with daintie flowres, as if it shold
Be for some bride, her joyous night to hold:
Therein a goodly Virgine sleeping lay;
A fairer wight saw never summers day.

I heard a voyce that called farre away,
And her awaking bad her quickly dight,
For lo! her Bridegrome was in readie ray
To come to her, and seeke her loves delight.

With that she started up with cherefull sight,
When suddenly both bed and all was gone,
And I in languor left there all alone.

V

Still as I gazed, I beheld where stood
A Knight all arm'd, upon a winged steed;
The same that bred was of Medusae's blood,
On which Dan Perseus, borne of heavenly seed,
The faire Andromeda from perill freed:
Full mortally this Knight ywounded was,
That streames of blood forth flowed on the
gras.

Yet was he deckt (small joy to him, alas!)
With manie garlands for his victories, [chas
And with rich spoyle, which late he did pur-
Through brave atcheivements from his enemies;
Fainting at last through long infirmities,
He smote his steed, that straight to heaven
him bore,

And left me here his losse for to deplore.

VI

Lastly I saw an Arke of purest golde
Upon a brazen pillour standing hie,
Which th' ashes seem'd of some great Prince
Enclosde therein for endles memorie [to hold,
Of him, whom all the world did glorifie:
Seemed the heavens with the earth did dis-
agree,

Whether should of those ashes keeper bee.

At last me seem'd wing-footed Mercurie,
From heaven descending to appease their strife,
The Arke did beare with him above the skie,
And to those ashes gave a second life,
To live in heaven where happines is rife:
At which the earth did grieve exceedingly,
And I for dole was almost like to die.

L' Envoy.

Immortall spirite of Philisides,
Which now art made the heavens ornament,
That whilome wast the world's chiefest riches,
Give leave to him that lov'd thee to lament
His losse, by lacke of thee to heaven bent,
And with last duties of this broken verse,
Broken with sighes, to decke thy sable Herse
And ye, faire Ladie, th' honour of your daies,
And glorie of the world your high thoughts
scorne,
Vouchsafe this monument of his last praise
With some few silver-dropping teares t' adorne;
And as ye be of heavenlie off-spring borne,
So unto heaven let your high minde aspire,
And loath this drosse of sinfull worlds desire!

THE TEARES OF THE MUSES.

BY ED. SP.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE

THE LADIE STRANGE.

MOST brave and noble Ladie, the things, that make ye so much honored of the world as ye bee, are such, as (without my simple lines testimonie) are throughlie known to all men; namely, your excellent beautie, your vertuous behavior, and your noble match with that most honourable Lord, the verie Paternie of right Nobilitie: But the causes for which ye have thus deserved of me to be honoured (if honour it be at all) are, both your particular bounties, and also some private bands of affinitie, which it hath pleased your Ladiship to acknowledge. Of which whenas I found my selfe in no part worthe, I devised this last slender meanes, both to

intimate my humble affection to your Ladiship, and also to make the same universallie known to the world; that by honouring you they might know me, and by knowing me they might honor you. Vouchsafe, noble Lady, to accept this simple remembrance, though not worthy of your self, yet such as, perhaps, by good acceptance thereof, ye may hereafter cull out a more meet and memorable evidence of your own excellent deserts. So, recommending the same to your Ladiships good liking, I humbly take leave.

Your La: humbly ever,
ED. SP.

THE TEARES OF THE MUSES.

REHEARSE to me, ye sacred Sisters nine,
The golden brood of great Apolloes wir,
Those piteous plaints and sorrowfull sad tine,
Which late ye powred forth as ye did sit
Beside the silver Springs of Helicone,
Making your musick of hart-breaking mone.

For since the time that Phœbus foolish
sonne
Ythundered, through Joves avengefull wrath,
For traversing the charret of the Sunne
Beyond the compasse of his pointed path,
Of you, his mournfull Sisters, was lamented,
Such mournfull tunes were never since in-
vented.

Nor since that faire Calliope did lose
Her loved Twinnes, the deardings of her joy,
Her Palici, whom her unkindly foes,
The fatal Sisters, did for spight destroy,
Whom all the Muses did bewaile long space,
Was ever heard such wayling in this place.

For all their groves, which with the heavenly
noyses
Of their sweete instruments were wont to sound,
And th' hollow hilla, from which their silver
voyces
Were wont redoubled Echoes to rebound,
Did now rebound with nought but rufull cries,
And yelling shrieks throwne up into the skies.

The trembling streames, which wont in chanel
cleare

To romble gently downe with murmur soft,
And were by them right tunefull taught to
beare

A Bases part amongst their consorts oft,
Now, forst to overflow with brackish teares,
With troublous noyse did dull their daintie
cares,

The joyous Nymphes and lightfoote Faeries
Which thether came to heare their musick
sweet,

And to the measure of their melodies
Did learne to move their nimble-shifting feete,
Now, hearing them so heavily lament,
Like heavily lamenting from them went.

And all that els was wont to worke delight
Through the divine infusion of their skill,
And all that els seemd faire and fresh in sight,
So made by nature for to serve their will,
Was turned now to dismal heavinesse,
Was turned now to dreadfull ugliness.

Ay me! what thing on earth, that all thing
breeds,

Might be the cause of so impatient plight?
What furie, or what feend with felon deeds
Hath stirred up so mischievous despight?
Can griefe then enter into heavenly harts,
And pierce immortall breasts with mortall
smarts?

Vouchsafe ye then, whom onely it concerns,
To me those secret causes to display;
For none but you, or who of you it learns,
Can rightfully aread so dolefull lay.
Begin, thou eldest Sister of the crew,
And let the rest in order thee ensue.

CLIO.

Hear, thou great Father of the Gods on hie,
That most art dreaded for thy thunder darts;
And thou, our Syre, that raigst in Castalie
And mount Parnasse, the God of goodly Arts:
Heare, and behold the miserable state
Of us, thy daughters, dolefull desolate.

Behold the fowle reproach and open shame,
The which is day by day unto us wrought
By such as hate the honour of our name,
The foes of learning and each gentle thought;
They, not contented us themselves to scorne,
Doo seeke to make us of the world forlorne,

Ne onely they that dwell in lowly dust,
The sonnes of darknes and of ignorance,
But they, whom thou, great Jove, by doome
unjust

Didst to the type of honour earst advance:

They now, puffed up with adseignfull insolence,
Despise the brood of blessed Sapience.

The sectaries of my celestiall skill,
That wont to be the worlds chiefe ornament,
And learned Impes that wont to shoote up still,
And grow to height of kingdomes government,
They underkeep, and with their spreading
armes

Do beat their buds, that perish through their
harmes,

It most behoves the honorable race
Of mightie Peeres true wisdom to sustaine,
And with their noble countenance to grace
The learned foreheads, without gifts or gaine;
Or rather learnd themselves behoves to bee,
That is the girland of Nobilitie.

But (ah!) all otherwise they doo esteeme
Of th' heavenly gift of wisdoms influence,
And to be leafed it a base thing deeme:
Base minded they that want intelligence;
For God himselfe for wisdom most is praised,
And men to God thereby are nighest raised.

But they doo onely strive themselves to raise
Through pompous pride, and foolish vanitie:
In th' eyes of people they put all their praise,
And onely boast of Armes and Auncestrie,
But vertuous deeds, which did those Armes
first give

To their Grandsyres, they care not to atchive.

So I, that doo all noble feates professe
To register, and sound in trump of gold, [nesse,
Through their bad dooings, or base slothful-
Finde nothing worthie to be writ, or told;
For better farre it were to hide their names,
Than telling them to blazon out their blames,

So shall succeeding ages have no light
Of things forepast, nor monuments of time;
And all that in this world is worthie light
Shall die in darknesse, and lie hid in slime:
Therefore I mourne with deep harts sorrowing,
Because I nothing noble have to sing.

With that she raynd such store of streaming
teares,

That could have made a stonie heart to weep;
And all her Sisters rent their golden beares,
And their faire faces with salt humour steep.
So ended shee; and then the next anew,
Began her grievous plaint as doth ensue.

MELPOMENE.

O! who shall powre into my swollen eyes
A sea of teares that never may be dryde,
A brasen voice that may with shrilling cries
Pierce the dull heavens and fill the ayre wide,
And yron sides that sighing may endure,
To waile the wretchednes of world impure?

Ah, wretched world! the den of wickednesse,
Deformd with filth and fowle iniquitie;
Ah, wretched world! the house of heavinesse,
Fild with the wreaks of mortall miserie;
Ah, wretched world! and all that is therein,
The vassals of Gods wrath, and slaves of sin.

Most miserable creature under sky
Man without understanding doth appeare;
For all this worlds affliction he thereby,
And Fortunes freakes, is wisely taught to beare:
Of wretched life the onely joy shee is,
And th' only comfort in calamities.

She armes the brest with constant patience
Against the bitter throwes of dolours darts:
She solaceth with rules of Sapience
The gentle minds, in midst of worldlie smart:
When he is sad, shee seeks to make him merie,
And doth refresh his sprights When they be
worie.

But he that is of seasons skill bereft,
And wants the staffe of wisdomo him to stay,
Is like a ship in midst of tempest left
Withouten helme or Pilot her to sway:
Full sad and dreadfull is that ships event;
So is the man that wants intendment.

Whie then doo foolish men so much despize
The precious store of this celestiaall riches?
Why doo they banish us, that patronize
The name of learning? Most unhappie
wretches!

The which lie drowned in deep wretchednes,
Yet doo not see their owne unhappiness.

My part it is and my professed skill
The Stage with Tragick buskin to adorne,
And fill the Scene with plaint, and outcries shrill
Of wretched persons to misfortune borne;
But none more tragick matter I can finde
Than this, of men depriv'd of sense and minde.

For all mans life me seemes a Tragedy,
Full of sad sights and sore Catastrophes;
First comming to the world with weeping eye,
Where all his dayes, like dolorous Trophies,
Are heapt with spoyle of fortune and of feare,
And he at last laid forth on balefull beare.

So all with rufull spectacles is filld,
Fit for Megera or Persephone;
But I that in true Tragedies am skilld,
The floure of wit, finde nought to busie me:
Therefore I mourne, and pitifully mone,
Because that mourning matter I have none.

Then gan she wofully to waile, and wring
Her wretched hands in lamentable wise;
And all her Sisters, thereto answering, [cries,
Threw forth lowd shrieks and drierie dolefull

So rested she; and then the next in rew
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensue.

THALIA.

Where be the sweete delights of learnings
treasure

That wont with Comick sock to beautifie
The painted Theaters, and fill with pleasure
The listners eyes and eares with melodic;
In which I late was wont to raine as Queene,
And maske in mirth with Graces well besene?

O! all is gone; and all that goodly glee,
Which wont to be the glorie of gay wits,
Is layd abed, and no where now to see;
And in her roome unseemly Sorrow sits,
With hollow browes and greifly countenance,
Marring my joyous gentle dalliance.

And him beside sits ugly Barbarisme,
And brutish Ignorance, yerept of late
Out of dredd darknes of the deepe Abysme,
Where being bredd, he light and heaven does
hate:

They in the mindes of men now tyrannize,
And the faire Scene with rudenes foule disguise.

All places they with folle have possessd,
And with vaine toys the vulgare entertaine;
But me have banished, with all the rest
That whilome wont to wait upon my traine,
Fine Counterfesaunce, and unhurtfull Sport,
Delight, and Laughter, deckt in seemly sort.

All these, and all that els the Comick Stage
With seasoned wit and goodly pleasaunce graced,
By which mans life in his likest image
Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced;
And those sweete wits, which wont the like to
frame,
Are now despizd, and made a laughing game.

And he, the man whom Nature selfe had made
To mock her selfe, and Truth to imitate,
With kindly counter under Mimick shade,
Our pleasant Willy, ah! is dead of late:
With whom all joy and jolly meriment
Is also deaded, and in dolour drent.

In stead thereof scoffing Scurrilitie,
And scornfull Follie with Contempt is crept,
Rolling in rymes of shameles ribaudrie
Without regard, or due Decorum kept;
Each idle wit at will presumes to make,
And doth the Learneds taske upon him take.

But that same gentle Spirit, from whose pen
Large streames of honnie and sweete Nectar
flowe,

Scorning the boldnes of such base-borne men,
Which dare their follies forth so rashlie throwe,

Doth rather choose to sit in idle Cell,
Than so himselfe to mockerie to sell.

So am I made the servant of the manie,
And laughing stocke of all that list to scorne;
Not honored nor cared for of anie,
But loath'd of losels as a thing forlorne:
Therefore I mourne and sorrow with the rest,
Untill my cause of sorrow be redrest.

Therewith she lowdly did lament and shrike,
Pouring forth streames of teares abundantly;
And all her Sisters, with compassion like,
The breaches of her singults did supply.
So rested shee; and then the next in rew
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensue.

EUTERPE.

Like as the dearling of the Summers pryde.
Faire Philomele, when winters stormie wrath
The goodly fields, that earst so gay were dyde
In colours divers, quite despoyled hath,
All comfortlesse doth hide her chearlesse head
During the time of that her widowhead:

So we, that earst were wont in sweet accord
All places with our pleasant notes to fill,
Whilest favourable times did us afford
Free libertie to chaunt our charmes at will,
All comfortlesse upon the bared bow,
Like wofull Culvers, doo sit wayling now,

For far more bitter storme than winters stowre
The beautie of the world hath lately wasted,
And those fresh buds, which wont so faire to
flowre, [blasted;
Hath marred quite, and all their blossoms
And those yong plants, which wont with fruit
t'abound,
Now without fruite or leaves are to be found.

A stonie coldnesse hath benumbd the sence
And livelie spirits of each living wight,
And dimd with darknesse their intelligence,
Darknesse more than Cymerians daylie night:
And monstrous error, flying in the ayre,
Hath mard the face of all that senced fayre.

Image of hellish horrour, Ignorance,
Borne in the bosome of the black Abyesse,
And fed with Furies milke for sustenance
Of his weake infancie, begot amisse
By yawning Sloth on his owne mother Night;
So hee his sonnes both Syre and brother hight.
He, arm'd with blindnesse and with boldnes
stout, [defaced;
(For blind is bold) hath our fayre light
And, gathering unto him a ragged rout
Of Fannes and Satyres, hath our dwellings
raced

And our chast bowers, in which all vertue
rained,
With brutishnesse and beastlie filth hath
stained.

The sacred springs of horsefoot Helicon,
So oft bedew'd with our learned layes,
And speaking streames of pure Castalion,
The famous witness of our wonted praise,
They trampled have with their fowle footings
trade,

And like to troubled puddles have them made.

Our pleasant groves, which planted were with
paines,

That with our musick wont so oft to ring,
And arbors sweet, in which the Shepheards
swaines

Were wont so oft their Pastoralls to sing,
They have cut downe, and all their pleasure
That now no pastorall is to bee hard. [mard,

Instead of them, fowle Goblins and Shriek-
owles

With fearfull howling do all places fill;
And feeble Echo now laments and howles
The dreadfull accents of their outcries shrill.
So all is turn'd into wilderness,
Whilest Ignorance the Muses doth oppresse.

And I, whose joy was earst with Spirit full
To teach the warbling pipe to sound aloft,
My spirits now dismayd with sorrow dull
Doo mone my miserie with silence soft:
Therefore I mourne and waile incessantly,
Till please the heavens afford me remedy.

Therewith shee wayled with exceeding woe,
And pitious lamentation did make;
And all her sisters, seeing her doo soe,
With equall plaints her sorrowe did partake.
So rested shee; and then the next in rew
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensue.

TERPSICHOE.

Whoso hath in the lap of soft delight
Beene long time luid, and fed with pleasures
sweet,

Feareles through his own fault or Fortunes
To tumble into sorrow and regret,
Yf chauce him fall into calamitie,
Findes greater burthen of his miserie.

So wee that earst in joyance did abound,
And in the bosome of all blis did sit,
Like virgin Queenes, with laurell garlands
croud

For vertues meed and ornament of wit,
Sith Ignorance our kingdome did confound,
Bee now become most wretched wightes on
ground.

And in our royall thrones, which lately stood
In th' hearts of men to rule them carefully,
He now hath placed his accursed brood,
By him begotten of fowle infamy;
Blind Error, scornfull Follie, and base Spight,
Who hold by wrong that wee should have by
right.

They to the vulgar sort now pipe and sing,
And make them merrie with their fooleries;
They cherele chaunt, and rymes at random
fling,
The fruitfull spawne of their ranke fantasies:
They feede the eares of fooles with flattery,
And good men blame, and losels magnify.

All places they doo with their toyes possesse,
And raigne in liking of the multitude;
The schooles they fill with fond new fangle-
nesse, [rude;
And sway in Court with pride and rashnes
Monst simple shepheards they do boast their
skill,
And say their musicke matcheth Phœbus quill.

The noble hearts to pleasures they allure,
And tell their Prince that learning is but vaine:
Faire Ladies loves they spot with thoughts
impure,
And gentle mindes with lewd delights distaine;
Clerks they to loathly idlenes entice,
And fill their bookes with discipline of vice.

So every where they rule, and tyrannize,
For their usurped kingdomes maintenaunce,
The whiles we silly Maides, whom they dispize
And with reprochfull scorne discountenaunce,
From our owne native heritage exile,
Walk through the world of every one revile.

Nor anie one doth care to call us in,
Or once vouchsafeth us to entertaine,
Unless some one perhaps of gentle kinf,
For pitties sake compassion our paine,
And yeeld us some reliefe in this distresse;
Yet to be so reliev'd is wretchednesse.

So wander we all carefull comfortlesse,
Yet none doth care to comfort us at all;
So seeke we helpe our sorrow to redresse,
Yet none vouchsafes to answer to our call;
Therefore we mourne and pittilesse complaine,
Because none living pittieeth our paine.

With that she wept and wofullie waymented,
That naught on earth her grieve might pacifie;
And all the rest her dolefull din augmented
With shrikes and groanes and grievous agonie.
So ended shee; and then the next in rew
Began her piteous plaint, as doth ensue.

ERATO.

Ye gentle Spirits, breathing from above,
Where ye in Venus silver bowre were bred,
Thoughts halfe devine, full of the fire of love,
With beawtie kindled, and with pleasure fed,
Which ye now in securitie possesse,
Forgetfull of your former heavinesse;

Now change the tenor of your joyous layes,
With which ye use your loves to deifie,
And blazon forth an earthlie beauties praise
Above the compasse of the arched skie;
Now change your praises into piteous cries,
And Eulogies turne into Elegies.

Such as ye wont, whenas those bitter stounds
Of raging love first gan you to torment,
And launch your hearts with lamentable
wounds

Of secret sorrow and sad languishment,
Before your Loves did take you unto grace;
Those now renew, as fitter for this place.

For I that rule in measure moderate
The tempest of that stormie passion,
And use to paint in times the troublous state
Of Lovers life in liket fashion,
Am put from practise of my kindlie skill,
Banisht by those that Love with leawdnes
fill.

Love wont to be schoolmaster of my skill,
And the devicefull matter of my song;
Sweete Love devoyd of villanie or ill,
But pure and spotles, as at first he sprong
Out of th' Almightyes bosome, where he nests;
From thence infused into mortall breasts.

Such high concept of that celestiall fire,
The base-borne brood of blindnes cannot
gesse,

Ne ever dare their dunghill thoughts aspire
Unto so loftie pitch of perfectnesse,
But rime at riot, and doo rage in love;
Yet little wote what doth thereto behove.

Faire Cytheree, the Mother of delight,
And Queene of beawtie, now thou maist go
pack;

For lo! thy Kingdome is defaced quight,
Thy scepter rent, and power put to wrack;
And thy gay Sonne, that winged God of Love,
May now goe prone his plumes like ruffed
Dove.

And ye three Twins, to light by Venus
brought,
The sweete companions of the Muses late,
From whom what ever thing is goodly
thought,
Doth borrow grace, the fancie to aggrate;

Go beg with us, and be companions still,
As heretofore of good, so now of ill.

For neither you nor we shall anie more
Find entertainment or in Court or Schoole;
For that which was accounted heretofore
The learneds meed is now lent to the foole:
He sings of love, and maketh loving layes,
And they him heare, and they him highly
praise.

With that she powred forth a brackish flood
Of bitter teares, and made exceeding mone;
And all her Sisters, seeing her sad mood,
With lowd laments her answered all at one.
So ended she; and then the next in rew
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensue.

CALLIOPE.

To whom shall I my evill case complaine,
Or tell the anguish of my inward smart,
Sith none is left to remedie my paine,
Or deignes to pitie a perplexed hart;
But rather seekes my sorrow to augment
With fowle reproach, and cruell banishment?

For they, to whom I used to applie
The faithfull service of my learned skill,
The goodly off-spring of Joves progenie,
That wont the world with famous acts to fill;
Whose living praises in heroick style,
It is my chiefe profession to compyle;

They, all corrupted through the rust of time
That doth all fairest things on earth deface,
Or through unnoble sloth, or sinfull crime,
That doth degenerate the noble race,
Have both desire of worthie deeds forlorne,
And name of learning utterly doo scorne.

Ne doo they care to have the auncestrie
Of th' old Heroës memorizd anew;
Ne doo they care that late posteritic [dew,
Should know their names, or speak their praises
But die forgot from whence at first they sprong,
As they themselves shalbe forgot ere long.

What bootes it then to come from glorious
Forefathers, or to have been nobly bredd?
What oddes twixt Irus and old Inachus,
Twixt best and worst, when both alike are
dadd;

If none of neither mention should make,
Nor out of dust their memories awake?

Or who would ever care to doo brave deed,
Or strive in vertue others to excell,
If none should yeeld him his deserved meed,
Due praise, that is the spur of dooing well?
For if good were not praised more than ill,
None would choose goodnes of his owne free-
will.

Therefore the nurse of vertue I am hight,
And golden Trompet of eternitie,
That lowly thoughts lift up to heavens hight.
And mortall men have powre to deifie:
Bacchus and Hercules I raised to heaven,
And Charlemaine amongst the Starris seaven,

But now I will my golden Clarion rend,
And will henceforth immortalize no more;
Sith I no more finde worthie to commend
For prize of value, or for learned lore:
For noble P'eres, whom I was wont to raise,
Now onely seekke for pleasure, nought for
praise.

Their great revenues all in sumptuous pride
They spend, that nought to learning they may
spare;

And the rich fee, which Poets wont divide,
Now Parasites and Sycophants doo share:
Therefore I mourne and endlesse sorrow make,
Both for my selfe and for my Sisters sake.

With that she loydly gan to waile and shriek,
And from her eyes a sea of teares did powre;
And all her sisters, with compassion like,
Did more increase the sharpnes of her showre.
So ended she; and then the next in rew
Began her plaint, as doth herein ensue.

URANIA.

What wrath of Gods, or wicked influence
Of Starres conspiring wretched men t' afflict,
Hath put on earth this noyous pestilence,
That mortall mindes doth inwardly infect
With love of blindnesse and of ignorance,
To dwell in darkenesse without soverance?

What difference twixt man and beast is left,
When th' heavenlie light of knowledge is put
out,

And th' ornaments of wisdom are bereft?
Then vandreth he in error and in doubt,
Unweeting of the danger hee is in,
Through fleshes frailtie, and decept of sin.

In this wide world in which they, wretches,
stray,

It is the onelie comfort which they have,
It is their light, their loadstarre, and their day;
But hell, and darkenesse, and the grislie grave,
Is ignorance, the enemy of grace, [debace.
That mindes of men borne heavenlie doth

Through knowledge we behold the worlds
creation,

How in his cradle first he fostred was;
And Judge of Natures cunning operation,
How things she formed of a formelesse mas:
By knowledge wee do learne our selves to knowe
And what to man, and what to God, wee owe

From hence wee mount aloft unto the skie,
And looke into the Christall firmament:
There we behold the heavens great Hierarchie,
The Starres pure light, the Spheres swift
movement,
The Spirites and Intelligences sayre, [chayre.
And Angels waighting on th' Almighties

And there, with humble minde and high in-
sight,
Th' eternall Makers majestie wee viewe,
His love, his truth, his glorie, and his might,
And mercie more than mortall men can vew.
O soveraigne Lord! O soveraigne happinesse,
To see thee, and thy mercie measurelesse!

Such happinesse have they that doo embrace
The precepts of my heavenlie discipline;
But shame and sorrow and accursed case
Have they that acorne the schoole of arts divine,
And banish me, which do professe the skill
To make men heavenly wise through humbled
will.

How ever yet they mee despise and spight,
I feede on sweet contentment of my thought,
And please my selfe with mine owne selfe-
delight,

In contemplation of things heavenlie wrought:
So, loathing earth, I looke up to the sky,
And, being driven hence, I thither fly.

Thence I behold the miserie of men, [breed,
Which want the blis that wisdom would them
And like brute beasts doo lie in loathsome den
Of ghosly darkenes, and of gastlie dreed;
For whom I mourne, and for my selfe com-
plaine,

And for my Sisters eake whom they disdaine.

With that shee wept and waild so pityouslie,
As if her eyes had beene two springing wells;
And all the rest, her sorrow to supplie,
Did throw forth shrieks and cries and dreery
yells.

So ended shee; and then the next in rew
Began her mournfull plaint, as doth ensue.

POLYHYMNIA.

A dolefull case desires a dolefull song,
Without vaine apt or curious complements;
And squallid Fortune, into basenes flong,
Doth scorne the pride of wonted ornaments:
Then fittest are these ragged rimes for mee,
To tell my sorrowes that exceeding bee.

For the sweet numbers and melodious measures,
With which I wont the winged words to tie,
And make a tunefull Diapase of pleasures,
Now being let to runne at libertie

By those which have no skill to rule them right,
Have now quite lost their naturall delight,

Heapes of huge wordes uphoorded hideously,
With horrid sound though having little sence,
They thinke to be chiefe praise of Poetry;
And, thereby wanting due intelligence,
Have mard the face of goodly Poësie,
And made a monster of their fantasie.

Whilom in ages past none might professe
But Princes and high Priests that secret skill;
The sacred lawes therein they wont expresse,
And with deepe Oracles their verses fill:
Then was shee held in soveraigne dignitie,
And made the noursling of Nobilitie.

But now nor Prince nor Priest doth her main-
taine,
But suffer her prophaned for to bee
Of the base vulgar, that with hands uncleane
Dares to pollute her hidden mysterie;
And treadeth under foot hir holie things,
Which was the care of Kesars and of Kings.

One onelic lives, her ages ornament,
And myrrour of her Makers majestie,
That with rich bountie, and deare cherishment,
Supports the praise of noble Poësie;
Ne onelic favours them which it professe,
But is her selfe a peereles Poetresse.

Most peereles Prince, most peereles Poetresse,
The true Pandora of all heavenly graces,
Divine Elisa, sacred Emperesse!
Live she for ever, and her royall P'laces
Be filld with praises of divinst wits,
That her eternize with their heavenlie writs!

Some few beside this sacred skill esteeme,
Admirers of her glorious excellence;
Which, being lightned with her beawties beme,
Are thereby filld with happie influence;
And lifted up above the worldes gaze,
To sing with Angels her immortall praise.

But all the rest, as borne of salvage brood,
And having beene with Acorns alwaies fed,
Can no whit savour this celestiall food,
But with base thoughts are into blindness led,
And kept from looking on the lightsome day:
For whome I waille and weepe all that I may.

Eftsoones such store of teares shee forth did
powre,
As if shee all to water would have gone;
And all her sisters, seeing her sad stowre,
Did weep and waille, and made exceeding mone,
And all their learned instruments did breake:
The rest untold no living tongue can speake.

0

VIRGILS GNAT.

LONG SINCE DEDICATED

TO THE MOST NOBLE AND EXCELLENT LORD,

THE EARLE OF LEICESTER,

LATE DECEASED.

Wrong'd yet not daring to express my paine,
To you (great Lord) the causer of my care,
In cloudie teares my case I thus complaine
Unto your selfe, that onely privie are:

But if that any Oedipus unware
Shall chaunce, through power of some divining spright,
To reade the secrete of this riddle rare,
And know the purpote of my evill plight,
Let him rest pleased with his owne insight,
Ne further seeke to glose upon the text;
For grieve enough it is to grieved wight
To feele his fault, and not be further vext.

But what so by my selfe may not be showen,
May by this Gnatts complaint be easily knownen.

VIRGILS GNAT.

We now have playde (Augustus) wantonly,
Tuning our song unto a tender Muse,
And, like a cobweb weaving slenderly,
Have onely playde: let thus much then excuse
This Gnats small Poeme, that th' whole history
Is but a jest, though envie it abuse: [blame,
But who such sports and sweet delights doth
Shall lighter seeme than this Gnats idle name.

Hereafter, when as season more secure
Shall bring forth fruit, this Muse shall speak
to thee

In bigger notes, that may thy sense allure,
And for thy worth frame some fit Poësie:
The golden offspring of Latona pure,
And ornament of great Joves progenie,
Phœbus, shall be the author of my song,
Playing on yvorie harp with silver strong.

He shall inspire my verse with gentie mood
Of Poëts Prince, whether he woon beside
Faire Xanthus sprinckled with Chimæras blood,
Or in the woods of Astery abide;
Or whereas mount Parnasse, the Muses brood,
Doth his broad forehead like two hornes divide,
And the sweete waves of sounding Castaly
With liquid foote doth slide downe easily.

Wherefore ye Sisters, which the glorie bee
Of the Pierian streames, sayre Naiades,
Go too, and, dauncing all in companie,
Adorne that God: and thou holie Pales,
To whome the honest care of husbandrie
Returneth by continuall successe,
Have care for to pursue his footing light
Through the wide woods and groves, with green
leaves dight.

Professing thee I lifted am aloft
Betwixt the Forrest wide and starrie sky:
And thou, most dread (Octavius), which oft
To learned wits givest courage worthily,
O come, (thou sacred childe) come sliding soft,
And favour my beginnings graciously;
For not these leaves do sing that dreadfull
stound, [ground.
When Giants bloud did staine Phleggean

Nor how th' halfe-horsy people, Centaures hight,
Fought with the bloudie Lapithaës at bori:
Nor how the East with tyrannous despight
Burnt th' Attick towres, and people slew with
sword,

Nor how mount Athos through exceeding might
Was digged downe, nor yron bands aboard
The Pontick sea by their huge Navy cast,
My volume shall renowne, so long since past.

Nor Hellespont trampled with horses feete,
When flocking Persians did the Greeks affray;
But my soft Muse, as for her power more meete,
Delights (with Phœbus friendly leave) to play
An easie running verse with tender feete.
And thou, (dread sacred child) to thee alway,
Let everlasting lightsome glory give,
Through the worlds endles ages to survive.

And let an happie roome remaine for thee
Mongst heavenly ranks, where blessed soules
do rest;

And let long lasting life with joyous glee,
As thy due meede that thou deservest best,
Hereafter many yeares remembered be
Amongst good men, of whom thou oft are blest;
Live thou for ever in all happinesse!
But let us turne to our first businesse.

The fiery Sun was mounted now on hight
Up to the heavenly towers, and shot each where
Out of his golden Charet glistering light;
And sayre Aurora, with her rosie heare,
The hatefull darknes now had put to flight;
When as the shepheard, seeing day appeare,
His little Goats can drive out of their stalls,
To feede abroad where pasture best befalls.

To an high mountaines top he with them
went,
Where thickest grasse did cloath the open hills.
They now amongst the woods and thickets
ment,

Now in the valleies wandring at their wills,
Spread themselves farre abroad through each
descent, [fills,

Some on the soft greene grasse feeding their
Some, clambing through the hollow cliffes on hy
Nibble the bushie shrubs which growe thereby.

Others the utmost boughs of trees doe crop,
And brouze the woodbine twiggies that freshly
bud;

This with full bit doth catch the utmost top
Of some soft Willow, or new grown studd;
This with sharpe teeth the bramble leaves
doth lop.

And chaw the tender prickles in her Cud;
The whiles another high doth overlooke
Her owne like image in a christall brooke.

O! the great happines, which shepheards have,
Who so loathes not too much the poore estate,
With minde that ill use doth before deprave,
Ne measures all things by the costly rate
Of riotise, and semblants outward brave!
No such sad cares, as wont to macerate
And rend the greedie mindes of covetous men,
Do ever creepe into the shepheards den.

Ne cares he if the fleece, which him arayes,
Be not twice steeped in Assyrian dye;
Ne glistering of golde, which underlayes
The summer beames, doe blinde his gazing
eye;

Ne pictures beautie, nor the glauncing rayes
Of precious stones, whence no good commeth
by;

Ne yet his cup embost with Imagery
Of Bætus or of Alcons vanity.

Ne ought the whelky peagles esteemeth hee,
Which are from Indian seas brought far away;
But with pure brest from carefull sorrow free,
On the soft grasse his limbs doth oft display,
In sweete spring time, when flowres varietie
With sundrie colours paints the sprinkled
lay;

There, lying all at ease from guile or spight,
With pype of fennie reedes doth him delight.

There he, Lord of himselfe, with palme be-
dight,
His looser locks doth wrap in wreath of vine:
There his milk-dropping Goats be his delight,
And fruitfull Pales, and the Forrest greene,
And darke some caves in pleasaunt vallies
pight,

Whereas continuall shade is to be seene,
And where fresh springing wells, as christall
neate,

Do alwayes flow to quench his thirstie heate.

O! who can lead, then, a more happie life
Than he, that with cleane minde, and heart
sincere,

No greedy riches knowes nor bloudie strife,
No deadly fight of warlick fleete doth feare;
Ne runs in perill of foes cruell knife,

That in the sacred temples he may reare
A trophee of his glittering spoyles and
treasure,
Or may abound in riches above measure.

Of him his God is worshipt with his sythe,
And not with skill of craftsman polished:
He joyes in groves, and makes himselfe full
blythe

With sundrie flowers in wilde fieldes gathered;
Ne frankincens he from Panchæa buyth:
Sweete quiet harbours in his harmeless head,
And perfect pleasure buildes her joyous bowre,
Free from sad cares that rich mens hearts
devowre.

This all his care, this all his whole endeavour,
To this his minde and senses he doth bend,
How he may flow in quiet matches treasure,
Content with any food that God doth send;
And how his limbs, resolv'd through idle
leisour,

Unto sweete sleepe he may securely lend
In some coole shadow from the scorching heat.
The whiles his flock their chawed cuds do
eate.

O flocks! O Faunes! and O ye pleasant Springs
Of times! where the country Nymphs, are
rife,

Through whose not costly care each shepheard
As merrie notes upon his rusticke Fife,
As that Ascrean bard, whose fame now rings
Through the wide world, and leads as joyfull
life;

Free from all troubles and from worldly toyle,
In which fond men doe all their dayes tur-
moyle.

In such delights whilst thus his carelesse time
This Shepheard drives, upleaning on his batt,
And on shrill reedes chaunting his rustick rime,
Hyperion, throwing forth his beames full
hott,

Into the highest top of heaven gan clime,
And, the world parting by an equall lott,
Did shed his whirling flames on either side,
As the great Ocean doth himselfe divide.

Then gan the shepheard gather into one
His stragling Goates, and drave them to a
foord,

Whose cærule streame, rombling in Pible stone,
Crept under mosse as greene as any goord.
Now had the Sun halfe heaven overgone,
When he his heard back from that water foord
Drove, from the force of Phœbus boyling ray,
Into thicke shadowes, there themselves to
lay.

Soone as he them plac'd in thy sacred wood
(O Delian Goddesses!) saw, to which of yore
Came the bad daughter of old Cadmus brood,
Cruell Agavè, flying vengeance sore
Of king Nictileus for the guiltie blood
Which she with cursed hands had shed before;
There she halfe frantick, having slaine her
sonne,
Disshrowd her selfe like punishment to shonne.

Here also playing on the grassy greene,
Woodgods, and Satyres, and swift Dryades,
With many Fairies oft were dauncing scene.
Not so much did Dan Orpheus repress
The streames of Hebrus with his songs, I
weene,
As that faire troupe of woodie Goddesses
Staid thee, (O Peneus!) pouring forth to thee
From cheerefull lookes great mirth and glad-
some glee.

The verie nature of the place, resounding
With gentle murmure of the breathing ayre,
A pleasant bowre with all delight abounding
In the fresh shadowe did for them prepayre,
To rest their limbs with wearines redounding.
For first the high Palme trees, with branches
Out of the lowly vallies did arise, [faire,
And high shoote up their heads into the skyes.

And them amongst the wicked Iotos grew,
Wicked for holding guilefully away
Ulysses men, whom rapt with sweetnes new,
Taking to hoste, it quite from him did stay;
And eke those trees, in whose transformed hew
The Sunnes sad daughters waylde the rash
decay

Of Phaeton, whose limbs, with lightening rent,
They, gathering up, with sweete teares did
lament.

And that same tree, in which Demophoon,
By his disloyalty lamented sore,
Eternall hurte left unto many one:
Whom als accompanied the Oke, of yore
Through fatal charmes transformd to such
an one;

The Oke, whose Acornes were our foode, before
That Ceres seede of mortall men were knowne,
Which first Triptoleme taught how to be
sowne.

Here also grew the rougher rinded Pine,
The great Argoan ships brave ornament,
Whom golden Fleece did make an heavenly
signe;
Which coveting, with his high tops extant,
To make the mountaines touch the starres
divine,
Decks all the Forrest with embellishment;

And the blacke Holme that loves the watrie
vale;
And the sweete Cypresse, signe of deadly bale.

Emongst the rest the clambring Yvie grew,
Knitting his wanton armes with grasping hold,
Least that the Poplar happely should rew
Her brothers strokes, whose boughes she doth
enfold

With her lythe twigs, till they the top surwey,
And paint with pallid greene her buds of gold.
Next did the Myrtle tree to her approach,
Not yet unmindfull of her olde reproach.

But the small Birds, in their wide boughs em-
bowring,
Chaunted their sundrie tunes with sweete
And under them a silver Spring, forth powring
His trickling streames, a gentle murmure sent;
Thereto the frogs, bred in the slime scowring
Of the moist moores, their jarring voyces bent,
And shrill grasshoppers chirped them around;
All which the ayrie Echo did resound.

In this so pleasant place this Siftpheards focke
Lay everie where, their wearie limbs to rest,
On everie bush, and everie hollow rocke,
Where breathe on them the whistling wind
mote best;

The whiles the Shepheard self, tending his
Sate by the fountaine side, in shade to rest.
Where gentle slumbring sleep oppressed him
Displaid on ground, and seized everie lim.

Of trecherie or traines nought tooke he keep,
But, loosely on the grassie greene dispredd,
His dearest life did trust to careless sleep;
Which, weighing down his drouping drowsie
hedd,

In quiet rest his molten heart did steep,
Devoid of care, and feare of all falshedd;
Had not inconstant fortune, bent to ill,
Bid strange mischance his quietnes to spill.

For at his wonted time in that same place
An huge great Serpent, all with speckles pide,
To drench himselfe in moorish slime did trace,
There from the boyling heate himselfe to hide;
He, passing by with rolling wreathed pace,
With brandisht tongue the emptie aire did
gride,

And wrapt his scalie boughts with fell despight,
That all things seem'd appalled at his sight.

Now, more and more having himselfe enrolde,
His glittering breast he lifeth up on hie,
And with proud vaunt his head aloft doth
holde;

His creste above, spotted with purple die,
On everie side did shine like scalie golde;
And his bright eyes, glauncing full dreadfullie,

Did seeme to flame out flakes of flashing fyre,
And with sterne lookes to threaten kindled yre.

Thus wise long time he did himselfe dispace
There round about, when as at last he spide,
Lying along before him in that place,
That flocks grad Capitaine and most trustie
guide

Kftsoones more fierce in visage, and in pace,
Throwing his fire eyes on everie side,
He commeth on, and all things in his way
Full stearnly rends that might his passage stay.

Much he disdaines that anie one should dare
To come unto his haunt; for which intent
He inly burns, and gins straight to prepare
The weapons, which Nature to him hath lent:
Fellie he hisseth, and doth fiercely stare,
And hath his jawes with angrie spirits rent,
That all his tract with bloudie drops is stained
And all his foldes are now in length outstrained.

Whom, thus at point prepared, to prevent,
A litle noursling of the humid ayre,
A Gnat, unto the sleepe Shepheard went;
And, marking where his eyes twincckling rare
Shewd the two pearles which sight unto him
lent,

Through their thin coverings appearing fayre,
His little needle there infixing deep,
Warnd him awake, from death himselfe to keep.

Wherewith enrag'd he fiercely gan upstart,
And with his hand him rashly bruizing slewe
As in avengement of his heedles smart,
That streight the spirite out of his senses flew,
And life out of his members did depart:
When, suddenly casting aside his vew,
He spide his foe with felonous intent,
And fervent eyes to his destruction bent.

All suddenly dismaid, and hartles quight,
He fled abacke, and catching^h hastie holde
Of a yong alder hard beside him pight,
It rent, and streight about him gan beholde
What God or Fortune would assist his might.
But whether God or Fortune made him bold
Its hard to read: yet hardie will he had
To overcome, that made him lesse adrad.

The scalie backe of that most hideous snake
Enwrapped round, oft faining to rewre
And oft him to assaile, he fiercely strake
Whereas his temples did his creast-front tyre;
And, for he was but slowe, did slowth off shake
And gazing ghastly on, (for feare and yre
Had blent so much his sense, that lesse he
feard)

Yet when he saw him slaine himselfe he
cheard.

By this the Night forth from the darksome
bowre

Of Herebus her teemed steedes gan call,
And laesie Vesper in his timely howre
From golden Oeta gan proceede withall;
Whenas the Shepheard after this sharpestowre,
Seeing the doubled shadowes low to fall,
Gathering his straying flocke, does homeward
fare,

And unto rest his wearie joynts prepare.

Into whose sense so soone as lighter sleepe
Was entered, and now loosing everie lim,
Sweete slumbring deaw in carelesnesse did
steepe,

The Image of that Gnat appeard to him,
And in sad teares gan sorrowfully weepe,
With greislie countenance and visage grim,
Wailing the wrong which he had done of late,
In steed of good, hastning his cruell fate.

Said he, 'What have I, wretch, deserv'd, that
Into this bitter ban I am outcast, [thus
Whilst that thy life more deare and precious
Was than mine owne, so long as it did last?
I now, in lieu of paines so gracious,
Am tost in th' ayre with everie windie blast:
Thou, safe delivered from sad decay,
Thy careles limbs in loose sleep do display.

'So livest thou; but my poore wretched ghost
Is forst to ferrie over Lethes river,
And spoyld of Chason too and fro am tost.
Seest thou not how all places quake and quiver,
Lightned with deadly lamps on everie post?
Tisiphone each where doth shake and shiver
Her flaming fire-brond, encountering me,
Whose lockes uncombed cruell adders be.

'And Cerberus, whose many mouthes doo bay
And barke out flames, as if on fire he fed;
Adowne whose necke, in terrible array,
Ten thousand snakes cralling about his hed
Doo hang in heapes, that horribly affray,
And bloodie eyes doo glister fire red;
He oftentimes me dreadfullie doth threaten
With painfull tormentes to be sorely beaten.

'Ay me! that thankes so much should faile of
meed;

For that I thee restor'd to life againe,
Even from the doore of death and deadlie dreed!
Where then is now the guerdon of my paine?
Where the reward of my so pitebus deed?
The praise of pitie vanaht is in vaine,
And th' antique faith of Justice long agoone
Out of the land is fled away and gone.

'I saw anothers fate approaching fast,
And left mine owne his selftie to tender;

Into the same mishap I now am cast,
And shun'd destruction doth destruction
render:

Not unto him that never hath trespass,
But punishment is due to the offender.
Yet let destruction be the punishment,
So long as thankfull will may it relent.

'I carried am into waste wilderness,
Waste wildernes, amongst Cymerian shades,
Where endles paines and hideous heaviness
Is round about me heapt in darksome glades;
For there huge Othos sits in sad distresse,
Fast bound with serpents that him oft invades;
Far of beholding Ephialtes tide,
Which once assai'd to burne this world so wide.

'And there is mournfull Tityus, mindefull yet
Of thy displeasure, O Latona faire!
Displeasur too implacable was it,
That made him meat for wild foules of the ayre.
Much do I feare among such fiends to sit;
Much do I feare back to them to repayre,
To the black shadowes of the Stygian shore,
Where wretched ghosts sit wailing evermore.

'There next the utmost brinck doth he abide,
That did the bankets of the Gods bewray,
Whose throat through thirst to nought nigh
being dride

His sense to seeke for ease turnes every way:
And he, that in avengement of his pride
For scorning to the sacred Gods to pray,
Against a mountaine rolls a mightie stone,
Calling in vaine for rest, and can have none.

Go ye with them, go, cursed damosells,
Whose bridale torches foule Erynnis tynde;
And Hymen, at your Spousalls sad, foretells
Tydings of death and massacre unkinde:
With them that cruell Colehid mother dwells,
The which conceiv'd in her revengfull minde
With bitter woundes her owne deere babes to
slay,

And murdred troupes upon great heapes to lay.

'There also those two Pandonian maides,
Calling on Itis, Itis! evermore,
Whom, wretched boy, they slew with guiltily
blades;

For whome the Thracian king lamenting sore,
Turn'd to a Lapwing, fowlie them upbraydes,
And fluttering round about them still does sore:
There now they all eternally complaine
Of others wrong, and suffer endles paine.

'But the two brethren borne of Cadmus blood,
Whilst each does for the Sovereignty contend,
Blinde through ambition, and with vengeance
wood,

Each doth against the others bodie bend

His cursed steele, of neither well withstood,
And with wide wounds their carcases doth rend;
That yet they both doe mortall foes remaine,
Sith each with brothers bloudie hand was slaine.

' Ah (waladay !) there is no end of paine,
Nor change of labour may intreated bee ;
Yet I beyond all these am carried faine,
Where other powers farre different I see,
And must passe over to th' Elisian plaine ?
There grim Persephone, encountering mee,
Doth urge her fellow Furies earnestlie
With their bright firebronds me to terrifie.

' There chaste Alceste lives inviolate,
Free from all care, for that her husbands daies
She did prolong by changing fate for fate.
Lo ! there lives also the immortall praise
Of womankind, most faithfull to her mate,
Penelope ; and from her farre awaies
A rulesse rout of yongmen which her woo'd,
All slaine with darts, lie wallowed in their
blood.

' And sad Eurydice thence now no more
Must turne to life, but there detained bee
For looking back, being forbid before :
Yet was the guilt thereof, Orpheus, in thee.
Bold sure he was, and wortheie spirite bore,
That durst those lowest shadowes goe to see,
And could believe that anie thing could please
Fell Cerberus, or Stygian powres appease :

' Ne feard the burning waves of Phlegeton,
Nor those same mournfull kingdomes, compassed
With rustie horror and fowle fashion ;
And deep digd vawtes ; and Tartar covered
With bloodie night, and darke confusion ;
And judgement seates, whose Judge is deadlie
dred,
A judge, that after death doth punish sore .
The faults which life hath trespassed before.

' But valiant fortune made Dan Orpheus bolde ;
For the swift running rivers still did stand,
And the wilde beasts their furie did withhold,
To follow Orpheus musicke through the land:
And th' Oke, deep grounded in the earthly
molde,
Did move, as if they could him understand ;
And the shrill woods, which were of sense be-
reav'd, [ceav'd,
Through their hard barke his silver sound re-

' And eke the Moone her hastie steedes did
stay,
Drawing in teemes along the starrie skie ;
And didst (O monthly Virgin !) thou delay
Thy nightly course, to heare his melodie ?

The same was able with like lovely lay
The Queene of hell to move as easily,
To yeeld Eurydice unto her fere
Backe to be borne, though it unlawfull were.

' She, (Ladie) having well before approved
The feends to be too cruell and severe,
Observ'd th' appointed way, as her behooved,
Ne ever did her ey-sight turne arere,
Ne ever spake, ne cause of speaking mooved ;
But, cruell Orpheus, thou much crueller,
Seeking to kisse her, brok'st the Gods decree,
And thereby mad'st her ever damn'd to be.

' Ah ! but sweete love of pardon worthie is,
And doth deserve to have small faults remitted,
If Hell at least things lightly done amis
Knew how to pardon, when ought is omitted ;
Yet are ye both received into blis,
And to the seates of happie soules admitted :
And you beside the honourable band
Of great Heroes doo in order stand.

' There be the two stout soones of Aeacus,
Fierce Peleus, and the hardie Telamon,
Both seeming now full glad and joyeous
Through their Syres dreadfull jurisdiction,
Being the Judge of all that horrid hous:
And both of them, by strange occasion,
Remown'd in choyce of happie marriage
Through Venus grace, and vertues cariage.

' For th' one was ravisht of his owne bond-
maide,
The faire Ixione captiv'd from Troy ;
But th' other was with Thetis love assaid,
Great Nereus his daughter and his joy.
On this side them there is a yongman layd,
Their match in glorie, mightie, fierce, and
coy ;
That from th' Argolick ships with furious yre
Bett back the furie of the Trojan fyre.

' O ! who would not recount the strong divorces
Of that great warre, which Trojanes oft be-
helede ?
And oft beheld the warlike Greekish forces,
When Teucrian soyle with bloodie rivers
swelde,
And wide Sigæan shores were spread with corses,
And Simois and Xanthus blood outwelde ;
Whilst Hector rag'd with outrageous minde,
Flames, weapons, wounds, in Greeks fleete to
have tynde.

' For Ida selfe, in ayde of that fierce fight,
Out of her mountaines ministred supplies ;
And, like a kindly nourse, did yeeld (for spight)
Store of firebronds out of her nourseries
Unto her foster children, that they might
Inflame the Navie of their enemies,

And all the Rhetæan shore to ashes turne,
Where lay the ships which they did seeke to
burne.

'Gainst which the noble sonne of Telamon
Oppos'd himselfe, and, thwarting his huge
shield,

Them battell bad, gainst whom appeared anon
Hector, the glorie of the Trojan field:
Both fierce and furious in contention [shrield,
Encountred, that their mightie strokes so
As the great clap of thunder which doth ryve
The rattling heavens, and cloudes asunder
dryve.

'So th' one with fire and weapons did contend
To cut the ships from turning home againe
To Argos; th' other strove for to defend
The force of Vulcane with his might and
maine.

Thus th' one Aeacide did his fame extend;
But th' other joy'd, that, on the Phrygian
playne

Having the blood of vanquisht Hector shedd,
He compast Troy thrice with his bodie dedd.

'Againe great dole on either partie growe,
That him to death unfaithfull Paris sent;
And also him that false Ulysses slewe,
Drawne into danger through close ambush-
ment;

Therefore from him Lærtæes sonne his vewe
Doth turne aside, and boasts his good event
In working of Stryffonian Rhesus fall,
And este in Dolons subtile surprisall.

'Againe the dreadfull Cycones him dismay,
And blacke Læstrigones, a people stout:
Then greedie Scilla, under whom there bay
Manie great bandogs which her gird about:
Then doo the Aetnean Cyclops him affray,
And deep Charybdis gulphing in and out:
Lastly the squalid lakes of Tartarie,
And griesly Feedds of hell him terrifie.

'There also goodly Agamemnon bosta,
The glorie of the stock of Tantalus,
And famous light of all the Greekish hosts;
Under whose conduct most victorious,
The Dorick flames consum'd the Iliack posts.
Ah! but the Greekes themselves, more dolo-
rous,

To thee, O Troy! paid penance for thy fall;
In th' Hellespont being nigh drowned all.

'Well may appeare by prooffe of their mis-
chance,

The chaungfull turning of mens slipperie state,
That none whom fortune freely doth ad-
vance

Himselfe therefore to heaven should elevate;

For loftie type of honour, through the glauce
Of envies dart, is downe in dust prostrate,
And all that vaunts in worldly vanitie
Shall fall through fortunes mutabilitie.

'Th' Argolicke power returning home againe,
Enrich with spoyles of th' Erichthion towre,
Did happie winde and weather enttaine,
And with good speed the somie billowes
& scowre:

No signe of storme, no feare of future paine,
Which soone ensued them with heavie stowre.
Nereis to the Seas a token gave, [clawe.
The whiles their crooked keeles the surges

'Suddenly, whether through the Gods decree,
Or haplesse rising of some froward starre,
The heavens on everie side enclouded bee:
Black stormes and fogs are blownen up from
farre;

That now the Pylote can no loadstarre see,
But skies and seas doo make most dreadfull
warre;

The billowes striving to the heavens to reach,
And th' heavens striving them for to impeach.

'And in avengement of their bold attempt,
Both Sun and starres and all the heavenly
powres

Conspire in one to wreake their rash contempt,
And downe on them to fall from highest
towres:

The skie, in peeces seeming to be rent,
Throwes lightning forth, and haile, and harm-
ful showres,

That death on everie side to them appeares
In thousand formes, to worke more ghastly
feares,

'Some in the greedie fouds are swaake and
drent;

Some on the rocks of Caphareus are throwne:
Some on th' Euboick Cliffs in peeces rent;
Some scattered on the Hercæan shores un-
knowne;

And manie lost, of whom no monument
Remaines, nor memorie is to be showne:

Whilst all the purchase of the Phrygian pray,
Tost on salt billowes, round about doth stray.

'Here manie other like Heroës bee,
Equall in honour to the former crue,
Whom ye in goodly seates may placed see,
Descended all from Rome by linage due;
From Rome, that holds the world in sove-
reignty,

And doth all Nations unto her subdue:
Here Fabii and Decii doo dwell,
Horatii that in vertue did excell.

'And here the antique fame of stout Camill
Doth ever live; and constant Curtius,
Who, stifly bent his vowed life to spill
For Countreyes health, a gulph most hideous
Amidst the Towne with his owne corps did fill,

T' appease the powers; and prduent Mutius,
Who in his flesh endur'd the scorching flame,
To daunt his foe by ensample of the same.

'And here wise Curius, companion
Of noble vertues, lives in endles rest;
And stout Flaminius, whose devotion
Taught him the fires scorn'd furie to detest;
And here the praise of either Scipion
Abides in highest place above the best,
To whom the ruin'd walls of Carthage vow'd,
Trembling their forces, sound their praises
lowd.

'Live they for ever through their lasting
praise!

But I, poore wretch, am forced to retourne
To the sad lakes that Phœbus sunnie rayes
Doo never see, where soules doo alwaies
mourne;

And by the wailing shores to waste my dayes,
Where Phlegeton with quenchles flames doth
burne; [sever
By which just Minos righteous soules doth
From wicked ones, to live in blisse for ever.

'Me therefore thus the cruell fiends of hell,
Girt with long snakes, and thousand yron
chaynes, [compell
Through doome of that their cruell Judge
With bitter torture, and impatient paines,
Cause of my death and just complaint to tell:
For thou art he whom my poore ghost com-
To be the author of her illeunwares, [plaines
That careles hear'st my intollerable cares.

'Them therefore as bequeathing to the winde,
I now depart, returning to thee never,
And leave this lamentable plaint behinde:
But doo thou haunt he soft downe-rolling
river, [minde;
And wilde greene woods and fruitful pastures
And let the flitting aire my vaine words sever.
Thus having said, he heavily departed
With piteous crie, that aunie would have
smarted.

Now, when the sloathfull fit of lifes sweete rest
Had left the hevie Shepheard, wondrous cares
His inly grieved minde full sore oppress;
That balefull sorrow he no longer beares

For that Gnats death, which deeply was
imprest,

But bends what ever power his aged yeares
Him lent, yet being such as through their
might

He lately slue his dreadfull foe in fight.

By that same River lurking under greene,
Eftsoones he gins to fashion forth a place;
And, squaring it in compasse well besene,
There plotteth out a tombe by measured
space:

His yron-headed spade tho making cleene,
To dig up sods out of the flowrie grasse,
His worke he shortly to good purpose brought,
Like as he had conceiv'd it in his thought.

An heape of earth he hoorded up on hie,
Enclosing it with banks on everie side,
And thereupon did raise full busily
A little mount, of greene turfs edifice,
And on the top of all, that passers by
Might it behold, the toombe he did provide
Of smoothest marble stone in order set,
That never might his luckie scape forget.

And round about he taught sweete flowres to
growe:

The Rose engrained in pure scarlet die;
The Lilly fresh, and Violet belowe;
The Marigolde, and cherefull Rosemarie;
The Spartan Mirtle, whence sweet gumb does
flowe;

The purple Hyacinthe, and fresh Costmarie;
And Saffron, sought for in Cilician soyle;
And Lawrell, th' ornament of Phœbus toyle.

Fresh Rhododaphne, and the Sabine flowre,
Matching the wealth of th' auncient Frank-
incence;

And pallid Yvie, building his owne bowre;
And Box, yet mindfull of his olde offence;
Red Amaranthus, lucklesse Paramour;
Oxeye still greene, and bitter Patience;
Ne wants there pale Narcisse, that, in a well
Seeing his beautie, in love with it fell.

And whatsoever other flowre of worth,
And whatso other hearb of lovely hew, [forth,
The joyous Spring out of the ground brings
To cloath her selfe in colours fresh and new,
He planted there, and reard a mount of earth,
In whose high front was writ as doth ensue.

To thee, small Gnat, in lieu of his life saved,
The Shepheard hath thy deaths record engraved.

PROSOPOPOIA:
OR
MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE.

BY ED. SP.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE, THE
LADIE COMPTON AND MOUNTEGLE.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE, THE
LADIE COMPTON AND MOUNTEGLE.

Most faire and vertuous Ladie; having, often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knowne to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull duetie, which I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare to that House, from whence yee spring, I have at length found occasion to remember the same, by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw concept of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooved to set them forth. Simple is

the device, and the composition meane, yet carrieth some delight, even the rather because of the simplicitie and meannesse thus personated. The same I beseech your Ladiship take in good part, as a pledge of that profession which I have made to you; and keepe with you untill, with some other more worthie labour, I do redeeme it out of your hands, and discharge my utmost dutie. Till then, wishing your Ladiship all increase of honour and happinesse, I humbly take leave.

Your La: ever humbly;

ED. SP.

PROSOPOPOIA: OR MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE

It was the month in which the righteous Maide,
That for disdaine of sinfull worlds upbraide
Fled back to heaven, whence she was first conceived,

Into her silver bowre the Sunne received;
And the hot Syrian Dog on him awayting,
After the chafed Lyons cruell bayting,
Corrupted had th' ayre with his noysome breath,

And powr'd on th' earth plague, pestilence, and
Emongst the rest a wicked maladie
Raign'd emongst men, that manie did to die,

Depriv'd of sense and ordinarie reason,
That it to Leaches seemed strange and geason.
My fortune was, mongst manie others moe,
To be partaker of their common woe;
And my weake bodie, set on fire with griefe,
Was rob'd of rest and naturall reliefe.
In this ill plight there came to visite mee
Some friends, who, sorie my sad case to see,
Began to comfort me in chearfull wise,
And meanes of gladsome solace to devise:
But seeing kindly sleep refuse to doe
His office, and my feeble eyes forgoe,

They sought my troubled sense how to deceave
With talke, that might unquiet fancies reave;
And, sitting all in seates about me round,
With pleasant tales (fit for that idle stound)
They cast in course to waste the wearie howres.
Some tolde of Ladies, and their Paramoures;
Some of brave Knights, and their renowned
Squires;

Some of the Faeries and their strange attires;
And some of Giaunts, hard to be beleevell;
That the delight thereof me much releevell.
Amongst the rest a good old woman was,
Hight Mother Hubberd, who did farre surpass
The rest in honest mirth, that seem'd her
well:

She, when her turne was come her tale to tell,
Tolde of a strange adventure, that betided
Betwixt the Foxe and th' Ape by him mis-
guided;

The which, for that my sense it greatly pleased,
All were my spirite heave and deseased,
He write in termes as she the same did say,
So well as I her words remember may.
No Muses aide me needes hegetoo to call;
Base is the style, and matter meane withall.

Whilome (said she) before the world was
civill,

The Foxe and th' Ape, disliking of their evill
And hard estate, determined to seeke [Iyeke,
Their fortunes furre abroad, Iyeke with his
For both were craftie and unhappie witted;
Two fellows might no where be better fitted.
The Foxe, that first this cause of griefe did finde,
Gan first thus plaine his case with words un-
kinde.

'Neighbour Ape, and my Gossip eke beside,
(Both two sure bands in friendship to be tide)
To whom may I more trustely complaine
The evill plight that doth me sore constraine,
And hope thereof to finde due remedie?

Heare, then, my paine and inward agonie.
Thus manie yeares I now have spent and yorne
In meane regard, and basest fortunes scorne,
Dooing my Countrey service as I might.
No lesse, I dare saie, than the proudest wight;
And still I hoped to be up advanced,
For my good parts; but still it has mischaunced.

Now therefore that no longer hope I see,
But froward fortune still to follow mee,
And losels lifted up on high, where I did looke,
I meane to turne the next leafe of the booke:
Yet, ere that anie way I doo betake,
I meane m^y Gossip privie first to make.'

'Ah! my deare Gossip, (answer'd then the
Ape)

Deeply doo your sad words my wits awhape,
Both for because your griefe doth great appeare,
And eke because my selfe am touched neare:

For I likewise have wasted much good time,
Still wayting to preferment up to clime,
Whilset others alwayes have before me slept,
And from my beard the fat away have swapt;
That now unto despaire I gin to growe,
And meane for better winde about to throwe.
Therefore to me, my trustie friend, aread
Thy counsell: two is better than one head.'

'Certes (said he) I meane me to disguise
In some straunge habit, after uncouth wize;
O^r like a Pilgrim, or a Lymiter,
Or like a Gipsen, or a Juggeler,
And so to wander to the worldes ende,
To seeke my fortune, where I may it mend:
For worse than that I have I cannot meete.
Wide is the world I wote, and everie streete
Is full of fortunes, and adventures straunge,
Continuallie subject unto chaunge.

Say, my faire brother now, if this device
Doth like you, or may you to like entice.'
'Surely (said th' Ape) it likes me wondrous
well;

And would ye not poore fellowship expell,
My selfe would offer you t' accompanie
In this adventures chauncefull jeopardie:
For to wexe olde at home in idlenesse
Is disadventrous, and quite fortunelesse;
Abroad, where change is good may gotten bee.'
'The Foxe was glad, and quickly did agree:
So both resolv'd, the morrow next ensuing,
So soone as day appeared to peoples vewing,
On their intended journey to proceede;
And over night whatso theretoo did neede
Each did prepare, in readines to bee.

The morrow next, so soone as one might see
Light out of heavens windowes forth to looke,
Both their habiliments unto them tooke,
And put themselves (a Gods name) on their
way;

Whenas the Ape, beginning well to wey
This hard adventure, thus began t' advise.
'Now read, Sir Reynold, as ye be right wise,
What course ye weene is best for us to take,
That for our selves we may a living make.
Whether shall we professe some trade or skill,
Or shall we varie our device at will,
Even as new occasion appeares?

Or shall we tie our selves for certaine yeares
To anie service, or to anie place?
For it beloves, ere that into the rage
We enter, to resolve first hereupon.'

'Now surely brother (said the Foxe anon)
Ye have this matter motioned in season;
For everie thing that is begun with reason
Will come by readie meanes unto his end,
But things miscounselled must needs miswend.
Thus therefore I advise upon the case,
That not to anie certaine trade or place,

Nor anie man, we should our selves applie;
 For why should he that is at libertie [borne,
 Make himselfe bond? sith then we are free
 Let us all servile base subjection scorne;
 And as we bee somes of the world so wide,
 Let us our fathers heritage divide,
 And challenge to our selves our portions dew
 Of all the patrimonie, which a few
 Now hold in hugger mugger in their hand,
 And all the rest doo rob of good and land.
 For now a few have all, and all have nought,
 Yet all be brethren ylike dearly bought:
 There is no right in this partition,
 Ne was it so by institution
 Ordained first, ne by the law of Nature.
 But that she gave like blessing to each creature,
 As well of worldly livelode as of life,
 That there might be no difference nor strife,
 Nor ought caid mine or thine: thrice happie
 then

Was the condition of mortall men.

That was the golde age of Saturne old.
 But this might better be the world of gold;
 For without golde now nothing wilbe got,
 Therefore (if please you) this shalbe our plot:
 We will not be of anie occupation;
 Let such vile vassals, borne to base vocation,
 Drudge in the world, and for their living
 droyle,
 Which have no wit to live withouten toyle;
 But we will walke about the world at pleasure
 Like two free men, and make our ease our
 treasure.

Free men some beggers call, but they be free,
 And they which call them so more beggers bee;
 For they doo swinke and sweate to feed th
 other, [gather,

Who live like Lords of that which they doo
 And yet doo never thanke them for the same,
 But as their due by Nature doo it claime.
 Such will we fashon both our selves to bee,
 Lords of the world; and so will wander free
 Where so us listeth, uncontrol'd of anie:
 Hard is our hap, if we (amongst so manie)
 Light not on some that may our state amend;
 Sildome but some good commeth ere the end.'

Well seemd the Ape to like this ordinance;
 Yet, well considering of the circumstance,
 As pausing in great doubt, awhile he staid,
 And afterwards with grave advizement said:
 'I cannot, my lief brother, like but well
 The purpose of the complot which ye tell;
 For well I wot (compar'd to all the rest
 Of each degree) that Beggers life is best; [all,
 And they, that thinke themselves the best of
 Oft-times to begging are content to fall.
 But this I wot withall, that we shal runne
 Into great daunger, like to bee undone,

Thus wildly to wander in the worlds eye,
 Withouten passport or good warrantye,
 For feare lest we like rogues should be re-
 puted,

And for care-marked beasts abroad be bruted.
 Therefore, I read that we our counsells call,
 How to prevent this mischief ere it fall,
 And how we may, with most securitie,
 Beg amongst those that beggers doo defie.'
 'Right well, deere Gossip, ye advized have,
 (Said then the Foxe) but I this doubt will
 For ere we farther passe I will devise [save;
 A passport for us both in fittest wize,
 And by the names of Souldiers us protect:
 That now is thought a civile begging sect.
 Be you the Souldier, for you likest are
 For manly semblance, and small skill in
 warre:

I will but waite on you, and, as occasion
 Falls out, my selfe fit for the same will
 fashon.'

The passport ended, both they forward went;
 The Ape clad Souldierlike, fit for th' intent,
 In a blew jacket with a crosse of redd
 And manie slits, as if that he had shedd
 Much blood through many wounds therein
 receaved,

Which had the use of his right arme bereaved.
 Upon his head an old Scotch cap he wore,
 With a plume feather all to peeces ture:
 His breeches were made after the new cut,
 At Portugese, loose like an emptie gut;
 And his hose broken high above the heeling,
 And his shooes beaten out with traveling.
 But neither sword nor dagger he did beare;
 Seemes that no foes revengement he did
 feare:

In stead of them a handsome bat he held,
 On which he leaned, as one farre in elde.
 Shame light on him, that through so false
 illusion,

Doth turne the name of Souldiers to abusion,
 And that, which is the noblest mysterie,
 Brings to reproach and common infamie!
 Lofe they thus travailed, yet never met
 Adventure which might them a working set;
 Yet manie waies they sought, and manie tried,
 Yet for their purposes none fit espied.

At last they chaunst to meet upon the way
 A simple husbandman in garments gray;
 Yet though his vesture were but meane and
 base,

A good yeoman he was of honest place,
 And more for thrift did care than for gay
 clothing: [loathing.

Gay without good is good hearts greatest
 The Foxe him spying, bad the Ape him dight
 To play his part, for loe! he was in sight

That (if he er'd not,) should them entertaine,
And yeld them timely profite for their paine.
Eftsoones the Ape himselfe gan up to reare,
And on his shoulders high his bat to beare,
As if good service he were fit to doo;
But little thrift for him he did it too:
And stoutly forward he his steps did straine,
That like a handsome swaine it him became.

When as they nigh approached, that good
man,
Seeing them wander loosly, first began
T' enquire of custome, what and whence they
To whom the Ape, 'I am a Souldiere, [were?
That late in warres have spent my dearest
blood,

And in long service lost both limbs and good;
And now, constrain'd that trade to overgive,
I driven am to seeke some meanes to live:
Which might it you in pitie please t' afford,
I would be readie, both in deed and word,
To doo you faithfull service all my dayes.
This yron world (that same he weeping sayes)
Brings downe the stowtest hearts to lowest
state;

For miserie doth bravest mindes abate,
And make them seeke for that they wont to
scorne,

Of fortune and of hope at once forlorne.
The honest man, that heard him thus com-
plaine,

Was griev'd as he had felt part of his paine;
And, well dispos'd him some reliefe to showe,
Askt if in husbandrie he ought did knowe,
To plough, to plant, to reap, to rake, to sowe,
To hedge, to ditch, to thrash, to thetch, to
mowe?

Or to what labour els he was prepar'd,
For husband's life is labourous and hard?
Whenas the Ape him hard so much to talke
Of labour, that did from his liking balke,
He would have slipt the collar handsomly,
And to him said: 'Good Sir, full glad am I,
To take what paines may anie living wight;
But my late maymed limbs lack wouted
might

To doo their kindly services as needeth.
Scarce this right hand the mouth with diet
feedeth,

So that it may no painfull worke endure,
Ne to strong labour can it selfe enure:
But if that anie other place you have,
Which asks small paines, but thriftines to
save,

Or care to overlooke, or trust to gather,
Ye may me trust as your owne ghostly
father.'

With that the husbandman gan him avize,
That it for him were fittest exercise

Cattell to keep, or grounds to oversee;
And asked him, if he could willing bee
To keep his sheepe, or to attend his swyne.
Or watch his mares, or take his charge of
kyne?

'Gladly (said he) what ever such like paine
Ye put on me, I will the same sustaine;
But gladliest I of your fleecie sheepe
(Might it you please) would take on me the
keep.

For ere that unto armes I me betooke,
Unto my fathers sheepe I usde to looke,
That yet the skill thereof I have not loste:
Thereto right well this Curlog, by my costle,
(Meaning the Foxe) will serve my sheepe to
gather,

And drive to follow after their Belwether.'
The Husbandman was meanly well content
Triall to make of his endeavourment;
And, home him leading, lent to him the charge
Of all his flocke, with libertie full large,
Giving accompt of th' annuall increce [fleece.
Both of their lambes, and of their woolly
Thus is this Ape become a shepheard swaine,
And the false Foxe his dog (God give them
paine!)

For ere the yeare have halfe his course out-run,
And doo retorne from whence he first begun,
They shall him make an ill accompt of thrift.
Now whenas Time, flying with winges swift,
Expired had the terme, that these two javels
Should render up a reckning of their travels
Unto their master, which it of them sought,
Exceedingly they troubled were in thought,
Ne wist what answer unto him to frame,
Ne how to scape great punishment, or shame,
For their false treason and vile theeverie:
For not a lambe of all their flockes supply
Had they to shew; but, ever as they bred,
They slue them, and upon their fleshies fed;
For that disguised Dog lov'd blood to spill,
And drew the wicked Shepheard to his will.
So twixt them both they not a lambe left,
And when lambes fail'd the old sheepes lives
they left;

That how t' acquite themselves unto their Lord
They were in doubt, and flatly set abord.
The Foxe then counsell'd th' Ape for to require
Respite till morrow t' answer his desire;
For times delay new hope of helpe still breeds.
The Goodman granted, doubting nought their
deeds,

And bad next day that all should readie be:
But they more subtil meaning had than he;
For the next morrowes meed they closely ment,
For feare of afterclaps, for to prevent:
And that same evening, when all shrowded were
In careles sleep, they without care or feare
* * *

Cruelly fell upon their flock in folde,
And of them slew at pleasure what they wolde.
Of which whenas they feasted had their fill,
For a full complement of all their ill,
They stole away, and tooke their hastie flight,
Carried in clowdes of all-concealing night.

So was the husbandman left to his losse,
And they unto their fortunes change to tosse:
After which sort they wandered long while,
Abusing manie through their cloaked guile,
That at the last they gan to be descryed
Of everie one, and all their sleights espyed.
So as their begging now them failed quyte,
For none would give, but all men would them
wyte:

Yet would they take no paines to get their
But seeke some other way to gaine by giving,
Much like to begging, but much better named,
For manie beg which are thereof ashamed.
And now the Foxe had gotten him a gowne,
And th' Ape a cassocke sidelong hanging downe;
For their occupation meant to change,
And now in other state abroad to range:
For, since their souldiers pas no better sped,
They forg'd another, as for Clerkes booke-redd.
Who passing forth, at their adventures fell,
Through manie haps, which needs not here to
tell,

At length chaunst with a formall Priest to
Whom they in civill manner first did greet,
And after askt an almes for Gods deare love.
The man straightway his choler up did move,
And with reproachfull tearmes gan them revile,
For following that trade so base and vile;
And askt what license, or what Pas they had?
'Ah! (said the Ape, as sighing wondrous sad)
Its an hard case, when men of good deserving
Must either driven be perforce to sterving,
Or asked for their pas by everie squib,
That list at will them to revile or snib:

And yet (God wote) small oddes I often see
Twixt them that aske, and them that asked bee.
Natheles, because you shall not us misdeeme,
But that we are as honest as we seeme,
Yee shall our passport at your pleasure see,
And then ye will (I hope) well mooved bee.
'Which when the Priest beheld, he wou'd it nere,
As if therein some text he studying were,
But little els (God wote) could thereof skill;
For read he could not evidence, nor will,
Ne tell a written word, ne write a letter,
Ne make one title worse, ne make one better:
Of such deep learning little had he neede,
Ne yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that breede
Doubts mongst Divines, and difference of texts,
From whence arise diversitie of sects,
And hatefull heresies, of God abho:d:
But this good Sir did follow the plaine word,

Ne medled with their controversies vaine;
All his care was, his service well to saine,
And to read Homelies upon holidayes;
When that was done, he might attend his
playes:

An easie life, and sit high God to please.
He, having overlookt their pas at ease,
Gan at the length them to rebuke againe,
That no good trade of life did entaine,
But lost their time in wandring loose abroad;
Seeing the world, in which they bootles boad,
Had wayes enough for all therein to live;
Such grace did God unto his creatures give.
Said then the Foxe: 'Who hath the world
not tride,

[wide:
From the right way full eath may wander
We are but Novices, new come abroad,
We have not yet the tract of anie troad,
Nor on us taken anie state of life.
But readie are of anie to make preife.
Therefore might please you, which the world
have proved,

Us to advise, which forth but lately moved,
Of some good course that we might under-
take;

Ye shall for ever us your bondmen make.'
The Priest gan wexe halfe proud to be so
praide,

And thereby willing to afford them aide;
'It seemes (said he) right well that ye be
Clerks,

Both by your wittie words, and by your werks.
Is not that name enough to make a living
To him that hath a whit of Natures giving?
How manie honest men see ye arize

Da, he thereby, and grow to goodly prize;
To Deanes, to Archdeacons, to Commissioners,
To Lords, to Principalls, to Prebendaries?

All jolly Prelates, worthe rule to beare,
Who ever them envie: yet spite bites neare.
Why should ye doubt, then, but that ye like-
Might unto some of those in tyme arise? [wise

In the meane-time to live in good estate,
Loving that love, and hating those that hate;
Being some honest Curate, or some Vicker
Content with little in condition sicker.

'Ah! but (said th' Ape) the charge is won-
drous great,
To feed mens soules, and hath an heavey threat.'

'To feede mens soules (quoth he) is not in man;
For they must feed themselves, doo what we can.
We are but charg'd to lay the meate before:
Eate they that list, we need to doo no more.
But God it is that feedes them with his grace,
The bread of life pow'd downe from heavenly
place.

Therefore said he, that with the budding rod
Did rule the Jewes, *All shalbe taught of God.*

That same hath Jesus Christ now to him
raught,

By whom the flock is rightly fed, and taught:
He is the Shepheard, and the Priest is hee;
We but his shepheard swaines ordain'd to bee.
Therefore herewith doo not your selfe dismay,
Ne is the paines so great, but beare ye may,
For not so great, as it was wont of yore,
It's now a dayes, ne halfe so streight and sore.
They whilome used duly everie day
Their service and their holie things to say,
At morne and even, besides their Anthemes
sweete,

Their penic Masses, and their Compynes meete,
Their Diriges, their Trentals, and their shrift,
Their memories, their singings, and their gifts.
Now all those needlesse works are laid away;
Now once a weeke, upon the Sabbath day,
It is enough to doo our small devotion,
And then to follow any merrie motion.
Ne are we tyde to fast, but when we list;
Ne to weare garments base of wollen twist,
But with the finest silkes us to aray,
That before God we may appeare more gay,
Resembling Aarons glorie in his place:
For farre unfit it is, that person base
Should with vile cloaths approach Gods
majestie,

Whom no uncleanes may approachen nie;
Or that all men, which anie master serve,
Good garments for their service should deserve;
But he that serves the Lord of hoasts most
high,

And that in highest place, t' approach him
nigh,

And all the peoples prayers to present
Before his throne, as on ambassage sent
Both too and fro, should not deserve to weare
A garment better than of wooll or heare.
Beside, we may have lying by our sides
Our lovely Lasses, or bright shining Brides:
We be not tyde to willfull chastitie,
But have the Gospell of free libertie.'

By that he ended had his ghostly sermon,
The Foxe was well induc'd to be a Parson,
And of the Priest eftsounes gan to enquire,
How to a Benefice he might aspire?

'Marie, there (said the Priest) is arte indeed:
Much good deep learning one therout may
reed;

For that the ground-werke is, and end of all,
How to obtaine a Beneficall.

First, therefore, when ye have in hand some wise
Your selfe attyred, as you can devise,
Then to some Noble-man your selfe applye,
Or other great one in the world's eye,
That hath a zealous disposition
To God, and so to his religion.

There must thou fashion eke a godly zeale,
Such as no carpers may contrayre reveale;
For each thing fauned ought more warie bee.
There thou must walke in sober gravitee,
And seeme as Sauthlike as Saint Radegund:
Fast much, pray oft, looke lowly on the ground,
And unto everie one doo curtesie meeke:
These lookes (nought saying) doo a benefice
seeke,

And be thou sure one not to lacke or long.
But if thee list unto the Court to throng,
And there to hunt after the hoped pray,
Then must thou thee dispose another way:
For there thou needs must learne to laugh, to
To face, to forge, to scoffe, to companie, [lie,
To crouche, to please, to let a beetle-stock
Of thy great Masters will, to scorne, or mock.
So maist thou chaunce mock out a Benefice,
Unless thou canst one conjure by device,
Or cast a figure for a Bi-hoprick;
And if one could, it were but a schoole trick.
These be the wayes by which without reward
Livings in Court be gotten, though full hard;
For nothing there is done without a fee:
The Courtier needs must recompenced bee
With a Benevolence, or have in gage
The Primitias of your Parsonage:

Scarce can a Bishoprick forpas them by,
But that it must be gelt in privie.
Doo not thou therefore seeke a living there,
But of more private persons seeke elsewhere,
Whereas thou maist compound a better penie,
Ne let thy learning question'd be of anie.
For some good Gentleman, that hath the right
Unto his Church for to present a wight,
Will cope with thee in reasonable wise;
That if the living yerely doo arise
To fortie pound, that then his yongest sonne
Shall twentie have, and twentie thou hast
wonne:

Thou hast it wonne, for it is of franke gift,
And he will care for all the rest to shift,
Both that the Bishop may admit of thee.
And that therein thou maist maintained bee.
This is the way for one that is unlearn'd
Living to get, and not to be discern'd.
But they, that are great Clerkes, have nearer
wayes,

For learning sake to living them to raise:
Yet manie eke of them (God wofe) are driven
T' accept a Benefice in peeces riven. [cours
How saist thou (friend) have I not well dis-
Upon this Common-place, (though plaine, not
wurst?)

Better a short tale than a bad long shriving:
Needes anie more to learne to get a living?

'Now sure, and by my hallidome, (quoth he)
Ye a great master are in your degree:

Great thanks I yeeld you for your discipline,
And doo not doubt but duly to encline
My wits thereto, as ye shall shortly heare.
The Priest him wisht good speed, and well to
fare:

So parted they, as eithers way them led.
But th' Ape and Foxe are long so well them
sped,

Through the Priests holesome counsell lately
tought, [wroghf.]

And thogh their owne faire handling wisely
That they a Benefice twixt them obtained;
And craftie Reynold was a Priest ordained.
And th' Ape his Parish Clarke procur'd to bee.
Then made they revell route and goodly glee;
But ere long time had passed, they so ill
Did order their affaires, that th' evill will
Of all their Parishners they had constraind;
Who to the Ordinarie of them complain'd,
How fowlie they their offices abus'd,
And them of crimes and heresies accus'd,
That Pursivants he often for them sent;
But they neglected his commaundement.
So long persisted obstinate and bolde,
Till at the length he published to holde
A Visitation, and them cyted thether:

Then was high time their wits about to
gather.

What did they then, but made a composition
With their next neighbor Priest, for light con-
dition,

To whom their living they resigned quight
For a few pence, and ran away by night.

So passing through the Countrey in disguise,
They fled farre off, where none might them
surprize;

And after that long straid here and there,
Through everie field and Forrest farre and nere,
Yet never found occasion for their tourne,
But almost sterv'd did much lament and
mourne.

At last they chaunt to meete upon the way
The Mule all deckt in goodly rich aray,
With bells and bosses that full lowdly rung,
And costly trappings that to ground downe
hung.

Lowly they him saluted in meeke wise;
But he through pride and fatnes gan despise
Their meanesse; scarce vouchsaft them to
requite.

Whereat the Foxe, deep groning in his sprite,
Said; 'Ah! sir Mule, now blessed be the day,
That I see you so goodly and so gay
In your attyres, and eke your silken hyde
Fild with round fiesh, that everie bone doth
hide.

Seemes that in fruitfull pastures ye doo live,
Or fortune doth you secret favour give.'

'Foolish Foxe (said the Mule) thy wretched
need

Praiseth the thing that doth thy sorrow breed:
For well I weene, thou canst not but envie
My wealth, compar'd to thine owne miserie,
That art so leane and meagre waxen late,
That scarce thy legs uphold thy feeble gate.'

'Ayme! (said then the Foxe) whom evill hap
Unwofly in such wretchednes doth wrap,
And makes the scorn of other beasts to bee:
But read (saire Sir. of grace) from whence come
ye;

Or what of tidings you abroad doo heare?
Newes may perhaps some good unweeting
beare.'

'From royall Court I lately came (said he)
Where all the braverie that eye may see,
And all the happinesse that heart desire,
Is to be found; he nothing can admire,
That hath not scene that heavens portraiture.
But tidings there is none, I you assure,
Save that which common is, and knowne to all.
That Courtiers, as the tide, doo rise and fall.'
'But tell us (said the Ape) we doo you pray,
Who now in Court doth beare the greatest sway,
That, if such fortune doo to us befall,
We make seek favour of the best of all?'

'Marie, (said he) the highest now in grace
Be the wilde beasts, that swiftest are in
chase;

For in their speedie course and nimble flight
The Lyon now doth take the most delight;
But chieflie joyes on foote them to beholde,
Enchaste with chaine and circulet of golde.
So wilde a beast so tame ytaught to bee,
And luxome to his bands, is joy to see;
So well his golden Circlet him becometh.
But his late chayne his Liege unmeete es-
teemeth;

For so brave beasts she loveth best to see
In the wilde Forrest raunging fresh and free.
Therefore if fortune thee in Court to live,
In case thou ever there wilt hope to thrive,
To some of these thou must thy selfe apply;
Els as a thistle-downe in th' ayre doth lie,
So vainly shalt thou too and fro be tost,
And loose thy labour and thy fruitles cost.
And yet full few which follow them, I see,
For vertues bare regard advanced bee,
But either for some gainfull benefit,

Or that they may for their owne turnes be fit.
Nath'les perhaps ye things may handle soe.
That ye may better thrive than thousands doe.'

'But (said the Ape) how shall we first
come in,

That after we may favour seeke to win?
'How els (said he) but with a good bold face,
And with big words, and with a stately pace,

That men may thinke of you in general,
That to be in you which is not at all :
For not by that which is, the world now
deemeth,

(As it was woth) but by that same that seemeth.
Ne do I doubt but that ye well can fashion
Your selves thereto, according to occasion.
So fare ye well ; good Courtiers may ye bee !
So, prouddie neighing, from them part hee.
Then gan this craftie couple to devise,
How for the Court themselves they might
aguize ;

For thither they themselves meant to addresse,
In hope to finde there happier successe.
So well they shifed, that the Ape anon
Himselfe had clothed like a Gentleman,
And the slie Foxe, as like to be his groomer,
That to the Court in seemly sort they come ;
Where the fond Ape, himselfe preparing hy
Upon his tiptoes, stalketh stately by,
As if he were some great Magnifico,
And boldlie doth amongst the boldest go ;
And his man Reynold, with fine counterfe-
saunce,

Supports his credite and his countenance.
Then gan the Courtiers gaze on everie side,
And stare on him, with big lookes basen wide,
Wondring what mister wight he was, and
whence :

For he was clad in strange accoutrements,
Fashion'd with quaint devises, never scene
In Court before, yet there all fashions beene ;
Yet he them in newfangleness did please.
But his behaviour altogether was

Alla Turchesca, much the more admyr'd :
And his lookes loftie, as if he aspyr'd
To dignitie, and adveign'd the low degree ; [see
That all which did such strangeness in him
By secret meanes gan of his state enquire.
And privily his servant thereto hire :
Who, thoroughly arm'd against such coverture,
Reported unto all, that he was sure
A noble Gentleman of high regard, [far'd,
Which through the world had with long travel
And scene the manners of all beasts on ground ;
Now here arriv'd, to see if like he found.

Thus did the Ape at first him credit gaine,
Which afterwards he wisely did maintaine
With gallant shoue, and daylie more arguent
Through his fine feates and Courtly comple-
ment ; [spring,

For he could play, and daunce, and vaute, and
And all that els pertaines to reveling.
Onely through kindly aptnes of his joynts.
Besides, he could doo manie other poynts,
The which in Court him served to good stead ;
For he amongst Ladies could their fortunes
read

Out of their hands, and merie leasings tell,
And juggle finely, that became him well.
But he so light was at legierdemaine,
That what he toucht came not to light againe ;
Yet would he laugh it out, and proudly looke,
And tell them that they greatly him mistooke.
So would he scoffe them out with mockerie,
For he therein had great felicitie ;
And with sharp quips joy'd others to deface.
Thinking that their disgracing did him grace :
So whilst that other like vaine wits he pleased,
And made to laugh, his heart was greatly eased,
But the right gentle minde would bite his lip,
To heare the Javell so good men to nip ;
For, though the vulgar yeeld an open eare,
And common Courtiers love to gybe and sleare
At everie thing which they heare spoken ill,
And the best speaches with ill meaning spill,
Yet the brave Courtier, in whose beauteous
thought

Regard of honour harbours more than ought,
Doth loath such base condition, to backbite
Anies good name for envie or despite :

He stands on tearmes of honourable minde,
Ne will be carried with the common winde
Of Courts inconstant mutabilitie,
Ne after everie tattling fable lye ;

But heares and sees the follies of the rest,
And thereof gathers for himselfe the best.

He will not creepe, nor crouche with fauned face,
But walkes upright with comely stedfast pace,
And unto all doth yeeld due curtesie ;

But not with kissed hand belowe the knee,
As that same Apish crue is wont to doo :
For he disdaines himselfe t' embase theretoo.

He hates fowle leasings, and vile flatterie,
Two filthie blots in noble gentrie ;
And lothefull idlenes he doth detest,

The canker worne of everie gentle brest ;
The which to banish with faire exercise
Of knightly feates, he dayle doth devise :

Now menaging the mouthes of stubborne
steedes,

Now practising the prooffe of warlike deedes,
Now his bright armes assaying, now his speare,
Now the nigh aymed ring away to beare.

At other times he casts to sew the chace
Of swift wilde beasts, or runne on foote a race,
T' enlarge his breath, (large breath in armes
most needfull)

Or els by wrestling to wex strong and heedfull,
Or his stiffe armes to stretch with Eughen
bowe,

And manly legs, still passing too and fro,
Without a gowned beast him fast beside,
A vaine ensample of the Persian pride ;
Who, after he had wonne th' Assyrian foe,
Did ever after scorne on foote to goe.

Thus when this Courtly Gentleman with
 toyle
 Himselfe hath wearied, he doth recoyle
 Unto his rest, and there with sweete delight
 Of Musicks skill revives his toyled spright;
 Or els with Loves, and Ladies gentle sports,
 The joy of youth, himselfe he recomforts;
 Or lastly, when the bodie list to pause,
 His minde unto the Muses he withdrawes:
 Sweete Ladie Muses, Ladies of delight,
 Delights of life, and ornaments of light!
 With whom he close confers with wise dis-
 course,
 Of Natures workes, of heavens continuall
 Of forreine lands, of people different,
 Of kingdomes change, of divers gouernment,
 Of dreadfull battailes of renowned Knights;
 With which he kindleth his ambitious sprights
 To like desire and praise of noble fame,
 The onely upshot whereto he doth ayme:
 For all his minde on honour fixed is,
 To which he levels all his purposis,
 And in his Princes service spends his dayes,
 Not so much for to gaine, or for to raise
 Himselfe to high degree, as for his grace,
 And in his liking to winne worthis place,
 Through due deserts and comely carriage,
 In whatso please employ his personage,
 That may be matter meete to gaine him praise:
 For he is fit to use in all assaies,
 Whether for Armes and warlike amenaunce,
 Or else for wise and civill gouernaunce.
 For he is practiz'd well in policie,
 And thereto doth his Courting most applie:
 To learne the enterdeale of Princes strange,
 To marke th' intent of Counsellis, and the
 change
 Of states, and eke of private men somehow,
 Supplanted by fine falshood and faire guile;
 Of all the which he gathereth what is fit
 To enrich the storehouse of his powerfull wit,
 Which through wise speeches and grave con-
 ference
 He daylie eekes, and brings to excellence.
 Such is the rightfull Courtier in his kinde,
 But unto such the Ape lent not his minde:
 Such were for him no fit companions,
 Such would descrie his lewd conditions;
 But the yong lustie gallants he did chuse
 To follow, meete to whom he might disclose
 His witlesse pleasance, and ill pleasing vaine.
 A thousand wayes he them could entertaine,
 With all the thrifles games that may be
 found;
 With mumming and w'th masking all around,
 With dice, with cards, with balliards farre
 unfit
 With shuttelcocks, misseeming manlic wit,

With courtizans, and costly riotize,
 Whercof still somewhat to his share did rize:
 Ne, them to pleasure, would he sometimes
 scorne
 A Pandares coate (so basely was he borne).
 Thereto he could fine loving verses frame,
 And play the Poet oft. But ah! for shame,
 Let not sweete Poets praise, whose onely pride
 Is virtue to aduance, and vice deride,
 Ne with the worke of losels wit defamed,
 Ne let such verses Poetrie be named!
 Yet he the name on him would rashly take,
 Maugre the sacred Muses, and it make
 A servant to the vile affection
 Of such, as he depended most upon;
 And with the sugrie sweete thereof allure
 Chast Ladies eares to fantasies impure.
 To such delights the noble wits he led
 Which him relieu'd, and their vaine humours
 fed
 With fruitles follies and unsound delights.
 But if perhaps into their noble sprights
 Desire of honor or brave thought of armes
 Did ever creepe, then with his wicked charmes
 And strong conceits he would it drive away,
 Ne suffer it to house there halfe a day.
 And whenso love of letters did inspire
 Their gentle wits, and kinde wise desire,
 That chieftie doth each noble minde adorne,
 Then he would scoffe at learning, and eke
 The Sectaries thereof, as people base | scorne
 And simple men, which never came in place
 Of worlds affaires, but in darke corners mewed,
 Muttred of matters as their bookes them
 shewd,
 Ne other knowledge ever did attaine,
 But with their gowned their gravitie maintaine.
 From them he would his impudent lewde
 speach
 Against Gods holie Ministers oft reach,
 And mocke Divines and their profession.
 What else then did he by progression,
 But mocke high God himselfe, whom they
 profess?
 But what car'd he for God, or godlinesse?
 All his care was himselfe how to aduance,
 And to uphold his courtly countenance
 By all the cunning meanes he could devise:
 Were it by honest wayes, or otherwise,
 He made small choyce; yet sure his honestie
 Got him small games, but shameles flatterie,
 And filthie brocage, and unseemly shifts,
 And borowe base, and some good Ladies gifts:
 But the best helpe, which chieftie him sustain'd,
 Was his man Raynolds purchase which he
 gain'd.
 For he was school'd by kinde in all the skill
 Of close conveyance, and each practise ill

Of coosinage and cleanly knaverie,
Which oft maintain'd his masters braverie.
Besides, he usde another slipprie sight,
In taking on himselfe, in common sight,
False personages fit for everie sted,
With which he thousands cleanly coosined :
Now like a Merchant, Merchants to deceave,
With whom his credite he did often leave
In gage for his gay Masters hopelesse dett.
Now like a Lawyer, when he land would lett,
Or sell fee-simples in his Masters name,
Which he had never, nor ought like the same
Then would he be a Broker, and draw in
Both wares and money, by exchange to win :
Then would he seeme a Farmer, that would
sell

Bargaines of woods, which he did lately fell,
Or corne, or cattle, or such other ware,
Thereby to coosin men not well aware :
Of all the which there came a secret fee, [bec.
To th' Ape, that he his countenance might
Besides all this, he us'd oft to beguile
Poore suters, that in Court did haunt some
while ;

For he would learne their busines secretly,
And then informe his Master hastily.
That he by meanes might cast them to pre-
vent,

And beg the sute the which the other ment.
Or otherwise false Reynold would abuse
The simple Suter, and wish him to chuse
His Master, being one of grent regard
In Court, to compas anie sute not hard,
In case his paines were recompent with
reason.

So would he worke the silly man by trenson
To buy his Masters frivolous good will,
That had not power to doe him good or ill.
So pitifull a thing is Suters state !
Most miserable man, whom wicked fate
Hath brought to Court, to sue for had ywist.
That few have found, and manie one hath
mist !

Full little knowest thou, that hast not tride,
What hell it is in suing long to bide :
To loose good dayes, that might be better
spent ;

To wast long nights in pensive discontent ;
To speed to day, to be put back to morrow ;
To feed on hope, to pine with feare and sorrow ;
To have thy Princes grace, yet want her
Peeres ;

To have thy asking, yet waite manie yeeres ;
To fret thy soule with crosses and with cares ;
To eate thy heart through comfortlesse dis-
paires ;

To fawne, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to
To spend, to give, to want, to be undonne.

Unhappie wight, borne to desastrous end,
That doth his life in so long tendance spend !

Who ever leaves sweete home, where meane
estate

In safe assurance, without strife or hate,
Findez all things needfull for contentment
meeke,

And will to Court for shadowes vaine to seeke,
Or hope to gaine, himselfe will a daw trie :
That curse God send unto mine enemy !

For none but such as this bold Ape, unblest,
Can ever thrive in that unluckie quest ;
O! such as hath a Reynold to his man,
That by his shifts his Master furnish can.
But yet this Foxe could not so closely hide
His craftie feates, but that they were descride

At length by such as sate in justice seate,
Who for the same him fowlie did entreate ;
And having worthily him punished,
Out of the Court for ever banished.

And now the Ape wanting his huckster man,
That wout provide his necessities, gan
To growe into great lacke, he could upholde
His countenance in those his garments olde ;
Ne new ones could he easily provide,
Though all men him unchosd gan deride,
Like as a Puppet placed in a play.

Whose part once past all men did take away :
So that he driven was to great distresse,
And shortly brought to hopelesse wretched-
nesse.

Then, closely as he might, he cast to leave
The Court, not asking any passe or leave ;
But ran away in his rent rags by night,
Ne ever stayd in place, ne spake to wight,
Till that the Foxe, his copesmate he had found,
To whome complayning his unhappy stound,
At last againe with him in travell joynd,
And with him far'd some better chauce to
fynde.

So in the world long time they wandered,
And mickle want and hardnesse suffered ;
That them repented much so foolishly
To come so farre to seeke for misery,
And leave the sweetnes of contented home,
Though eating hipps, and drinking watry fome.
Thus as they them complayned too and fro,
Whilst through the forest rechelesse they did
goe,

Lo ! where they spide, how, in a gloomy glade,
The Lyon sleeping lay in secret shade,
His Crowne and Scepter lying him beside,
And having doft for heate his dreadfull hide :
Which when they sawe, the Ape was sore
afrayde,

And would have fled with terror all dismayde,
But him the Foxe with hardy words did stay,
And bad him put all cowardize away :

For now was time (if ever they would hope)
To ayme their counsels to the fairest scope,
And them for ever highly to aduance,
In case the good, which their owne happie
chaunce

Them freely offred, they would wisely take.
Scarse could the Ape yet speake, so did he
quake;

Yet, as he could, he askt how good might
Where nought but dread and death do seeme
in show?

'Now, (sayd he) whiles the Lyon sleepe
May we his Crowne and Mace take from the
ground,

And eke his skinne, the terror of the wood,
Wherewith we may our selves (as we thinke
good)

Make Kings of Beasts, and Lords of forests all
Subject unto that powre imperiall.' [wretch,
'Ah! but (sayd the Ape) who is so bold a
That dare his hardy hand to those outstretch,
When as he knowes his meede, if he be spide,
To be a thousand deaths, and shame beside?'
'Fond Ape! (sayd then the Foxe) into whose
brest

Never crept thoughts of honor, nor brave gest,
Who will not venture life a King to be,
And rather rule and raigne in sovereign see,
Than dwell in dust inglorious and bace,
Where none shall name the number of his
place?

One joyous howre is blisfull happines,
I chose before a life of wretchednes.
Be therefore counselled herein by me,
And shake off this vile harted cowardree.
If he awake, yet is not death the next,
For we may couler it with some pretext
Of this, or that, that may excuse the crime:
Else we may flye; thou to a tree mayst clyme,
And I creepe under ground, both from his
reach:

Therefore be rul'd to doo as I doo teach.'

The Ape, that earst did nought but chill
and quake,

Now gan some courage unto him to take,
And was content to attempt that enterprise,
Tickled with glorie and rash covetise:
But first gan question, whether should assay
Those royall ornaments to steale away?
'Marie, that shall your selfe, (quoth he theretoo)
For ye be fine and nimble it to doo;
Of all the beasts, which in the Forrests lye,
Is not a titter for this turne than yee:
Therefore, my owne deare brother, take good
hart,

And ever thinke a Kingdome is your part.'
Loath was the Ape, though praised, to aduenter,
Yet faintly gan into his worke to enter,

Afraid of everie leafe that stir'd him by,
And everie stick that underneath did ly,
Upon his tiptoes nicely he up went,
For making noyse, and still his eare he lent
To everie sound that under heaven blew;
Now went, now stopt, now crept, now back-
ward drew,

That it good sport had been him to have cyde:
Yet at the last, (so well he him applyde)
Through his fine handling, and his cleanly play,
He all those royall signes had stolne away,
And with the Foxes helpe them borne aside
Into a secret corner unespide.

Whither whenas they came they fell at words,
Whether of them should be the Lord of Lords:
For th' Ape was stryfull, and ambitious;
And the Foxe guilefull, and most covetous;
That neither pleased was to have the rayne
Twixt them divided into even twaine,
But either (algates) would be Lords alone;
For Love and Lordship bide no paragone.
'I am most worthis, (sayd the Ape) sith I
For it did put my life in jeopardie:

Thereto I am in person and in stature
Most like a Man, the Lord of everie creature,
So that it seemeth I was made to raigue,
And borne to be a Kingly sovereigne.
'Nay (sayd the Foxe) Sir Ape, you are astray:
For though to steale the Diademe away
Were the worke of your numble hand, yet
Did first devise the plot by pollicie;
So that it wholly springeth from my wit:
For which also I claime my selfe more fit
Than you to rule; for government of state
Will without wisdom soon be ruinate.
And where ye claime your selfe for outward
shape

Most like a man, Man is not like an Ape
In his chiefe parts, that is, in wit and spirite;
But I therein most like to him doo merite,
For my she wyles and subtil craftinesse,
The title of the Kingdome to possesse.
Nathles (my brother) since we passed are
Unto this point, we will appease our jarre;
And I with reason meeete will rest content,
That ye shall have both crowne and govern-
ment,

Upon condition, that ye ruled bee
In all affaires, and counselled by mee;
And that ye let none other ever drawe
Your minde from me, but keepe this as a lawe:
And hereupon an oath unto me plight.'

The Ape was glad to end the strife so light,
And thereto swore; for who would not oft
swear,

And oft unswear, a Diademe to beare?
Then freely up those royall spoyles he tooke,
Yet at the Lyons skin he inly quooke;

But it dissembled, and upon his head
The Crowne, and on his backe the skin he did,
And the false Foxe him helped to array.
Then, when he was all dight, he tooke his way
Into the forest, that he might be scene
Of the wilde beasts in his new glory sheene.
There the two first whome he encountred were
The Sheepe and th' Asse, who, stricken both
with feare,

At sight of him, gan fast away to flye;
But unto them the Foxe alowd did cry,
And in the Kings name bad them both to stay,
Upon the payne that thereof follow may.
Hardly, naythles, were they restryaned so,
Till that the Foxe forth toward them did goe,
And there dissuaded them from needlesse feare,
For that the King did fawour to them beare;
And therefore dreadles bad them come to Corte,
For no wild beasts should do them any torte
There or abroad; ne would his majesty
Use them but well, with gracious clemencye,
As whome he knew to him both fast and true.
So he perswaded them, with homage due
Themselves to humble to the Ape prostrate,
Who, gently to them bowing in his gate,
Reccyved them with chearefull entertayne.
Thenceforth proceeding with his princely
trayne,

He shortly met the Tygre, and the Bore,
Which with the simple Camell ragged sore
In bitter words, seeking to take occasion
Upon his fleshy corpse to make invasion:
But, soone as they this mock-King did spy,
Their troublous strife they stinted by and by,
Thinking indeed that it the Lyon was.
He then, to prove whether his powre would pas
As currant, sent the Foxe to them straightway,
Commanding them their cause of strife be-
wray;

And, if that wrong on eyther side there were,
That he should warne the wronger to appeare
The morrow next at Court, it to defend: •
In the mean-time upon the King t' attend.
The subtile Foxe so well his message sayd,
That the proud beasts him readily obayd: •
Whereby the Ape in wondrous stomack woxe,
Strongly encourag'd by the crafty Foxe;
That King indeed himselfe he shortly thought,
And all the Beasts him feared as they ought,
And followed unto his palaise hye;
Where taking Congé, each one by and by
Departed to his home in dreadfull awe,
Full of the feared sight which late they
saw.

The Ape, thus seized of the Regall throne,
Eftsoones by counsell of the Foxe alone,
Gan to provide for all things in assurance,
That so his rule might lenger have endurance.

First to his Gate he pointed a strong gard,
That none might enter but with issue hard:
Then, for the safeguard of his personage,
He did appoint a warlike equipage
Of forreine beasts, not in the forest bred,
But part by land and part by water fed;
For tyrannie is with strange ayde supported.
Then unto him all monstrous beasts resorted
Bred of two kindes, as Griffons, Minotaures,
Crocodiles, Dragons, Beavers, and Centaures:
With those himselfe he strenghtned mightelie,
That feare he neede no force of enemye.
Then gan he rule and tyrannize at will,
Like as the Foxe did guide his graceles skill;
And all wyld beasts made vassals of his
pleasures, | treasures.
And with their spoyles enlarg'd his private
No care of justice, nor no rule of reason,
No temperance, nor no regard of season,
Did thenceforth ever enter in his minde;
But crueltie, the signe of currish kinde,
And sleighfull pride, and wilfull arrogance:
Such followes those whom fortune doth ad-
vance.

But the false Foxe most kindly plaid his
For whatsoever mother-wit or arte [part;
Could worke, he put in proofe: no practise slic,
No counterpoint of cunning policie,
No reach, no breach, that might him profit
bring,

But he the same did to his purpose wring.
Nought suffered he the Ape to give or graunt,
But through his hand must passe the Flaunt.
All offices, all leases by him leapt,
And of them all whatso he likte he kept.
Justice he solde injustice for to buy,
And for to purchase for his progeny.
Ill might it prosper that ill gotten was;
But, so he got it, litle did he pas.
He fed his cubs with fat of all the soyle,
And with the sweete of others sweating toyle;
He crammed them with crumbs of Benefices,
And filld their mouthes with meeds of male-
fices:

He clothed them with all colours, save white,
And loded them with lordships and with might,
So much as they were able well to beare,
That with the weight their backs nigh broken
were:

He chaffred Chayres in which Churchmen
were set,
And breach of lawes to privie ferme did let:
No statute so established might bee,
Nor ordinance so needfull, but that hee
Would violate, though not with violence,
Yet under colour of the confidence
The which the Ape repos'd in him alone,
And reckned him the kingdomes corner stone.

And ever, when he ought would bring to pas,
His long experience the platform was :
And, when he ought not pleasing would put by
The cloke was care of thrift, and husbandry,
For to encrease the common treasures store ;
But his owne treasure he encreased more,
And lifted up his lofty towres thereby,
That they began to threat the neighbour sky ;
The whiles the Princes pallaces fell fast
To ruine (for what thing can ever last ?)
And whilst the other Peeres, for povertrie,
Were forst their auncient houses to let lie,
And their olde Castles to the ground to fall,
Which their forefathers, famous over-all,
Had founded for the Kingdomes ornament,
And for their memories long moriment :
But he no count made of Nobilitie,
Nor the wilde beasts whom armes did glorifie,
The Realmes chiefe strength and girdle of
the crowne.

All these through fained crimes he thrust
Or made them dwell in darknes of disgrace ;
For none, but whom he list, might come in
place.

Of men of armes he had but small regard,
But kept them lowe, and straigned vowe hard.
For men of learning little he esteemed,
His wisdom he above their learning deem'd.
As for the rascall Commons least he cared,
For not so common was his bountie shared :
Let God, (said he) if please, care for the manie.
I for my selfe must care before els anie.
So did he good to none, to manie ill,
So did he all the kingdome rob and pill,
Yet none durst speake, ne none durst of him
plaine,

So great he was in grace, and rich through
Ne would he anie let to have accesse
Unto the Prince, but by his owne addresse,
For all that els did come were sure to faile.
Yet would he further none but for availle ;
For on a time the Sheepe, to whome of yore
The Foxe had promised of friendship store,
What time the Ape the kingdome first did
gaine,

Came to the Court, her case there to com-
[plaine ;
How that the Wolfe, her mortall enemye,
Had sithence slaine her Lambe most cruellie,
And therefore crav'd to come unto the King,
To let him knowe the order of the thing.
'Soft, Gooddies Sheepe! (then said the Foxe)
not soe :

Unto the King so rash ye may not goe ;
He is with greater matter busied
Than a Lambe, or the Lambes owne mothers
hed.

Ne, certes, may I take it well in part,
That ye my cousin Wolfe so fowly thwart,

And seeke with slaunders his good name to blot ;
For there was cause, els doo it he would not :
Therefore surcease, good Dame, and hence
depart.'

So went the Sheepe away with heavie hart :
So many moe, so everie one was used,
That to give largely to the boxe refused.

Now when high Jove, in whose almightie
hand
The care of Kings and power of Empires
Sitting one day within his turret hie, [eye,
From whence he vewes, with his black-lidded
Whatso the heaven in his wide vawte con-
taines,

And all that in the deepe earth remaines,
And troubled kingdome of wilde beasts be-
helde.

Whom not their kindly Sovereigne did welde,
But an usurping Ape, with guile suborn'd,
Had all subvert, he sdeignfully it scorn'd
In his great heart, and hardly did refrain,
But that with thunder bolts he had him slaine,
And driven downe to hell, his dearest meed :
But, him avizing, he that dreadful deed
Forbore, and rather chose with scornfull shame
Him to avenge, and blot his brutish name

Unto the world, that never after anie
Should of his race be voyd of infamie ;
And his false counsellor, the cause of all,
To damne to death, or dole perpetuall,
From whence he never should be quit, nor stal'd.

Forthwith he Mercurie unto him call'd,
And bad him flie with never-resting speed
Unto the forrest, where wilde beasts doo breed,
And there enquiring privily, to learne
What did of late chauce happen to the Lyon
stearne,

That he rul'd not the Empire, as he ought ?
And whence were all those plaints unto him
brought

Of wronges, and spoyles, by salvage beasts
committed ?

Which done, he bad the Lyon be remitted
Into his seate, and those same treachours vile
Be punished for their presumptuous guile.

The Sonne of Maia, soone as he receiv'd
That word, streight with his azure wings he
cleav'd

The liquid cloudes, and lucid firmament ;
Ne staid, till that he came with steep descent
Unto the place where his prescript did shewe.
There stouping, like an arrowe from a bowe,
He soft arriv'd on the grassie plaine,
And fairly paced forth with easie pauce,
Till that unto the Pallace nigh he came.

Then gan he to himselfe new shape to frame ;
And that faire face, and that Ambrosiall hew,
Which wons to decke the Gods immortall crew

And beautifie the shinie firmament,
 He doft, unfit for that rude rabblement.
 So, standing by the gates in strange disguise,
 He gan enquire of some in secret wize,
 Both of the King, and of his government,
 And of the Foxe, and his false blandishment :
 And evermore he heard each one complaine
 Of foule abuses both in realme and raine ;
 Which yet to prove more true he meant to see,
 And an ey-witnes of each thing to bee.
 Tho on his head his dreadfull hat he dight,
 Which maketh him invisible in sight,
 And mocketh th' eyes of all the lookers on,
 Making them thinke it but a vision.
 Through power of that he runnes through
 enemies swords : [herds
 Through power of that he passeth through the
 Of ravenous wilde beasts, and doth beguile
 Their greedie mouthes of the expected spoyle ;
 Through power of that his cunning theoveries
 He wons to worke, that none the same espies ;
 And, through the power of that, he putteth on
 What shape he list in apparition.
 That on his head he wore, and in his hand
 He tooke Caduceus, his snakie wand,
 With which the damned ghosts he governeth,
 And furies rules, and Tartare tempereth.
 With that he causeth sleep to seize the eyes,
 And feare the harts of all his enemyes ;
 And, when him list, an unives all night
 Throughout the world he makes on everie
 As when his Syre with Alcmena lay. | wight ;
 Thus went, into the Court he took his
 way. | scride,
 Both through the gard, which never him de-
 And through the watchmen, who him never
 spide :
 Thenceforth he past into each secrete part,
 Whereas he saw, that sorowly griev'd his hart,
 Each place abounding with fowle injuries,
 And filld with treasure rackt with robberyes ;
 Each place defilde with blood of guiltles
 beasts, | beheasts :
 Which had been slaine to serve the Apes,
 Gluttonie, malice, pride, and covetize, •
 And lawlesne raigning with riotize ;
 Besides the infinite extortions,
 Done through the Foxes great oppressions,
 That the complaints thereof could not be
 tolde.
 Which when he did with lothfull eyes beholde,
 He would no more endure, but came his way,
 And cast to seeke the Lion where he may,
 That he might worke the avengement for this
 shame [blame.
 On those two caytives, which had bred him
 And, seeking all the forrest busily,
 At last he found, where sleeping he did ly.

The wicked weed, which there the Foxe did
 lay,
 From underneath his head he tooke away,
 And then him waking, forced up to rize.
 The Lion looking up gan him avize,
 As one late in a trance, what had of long
 Become of him ; for fantasie is strong.
 ' Arise, (said Mercurie) thou sluggish beast,
 That here liest senseles, like the corpse deceast,
 The whilst thy kingdome from thy head is
 • rent,
 And thy throne royall with dishonour blent :
 Arise, and doo thyself redeeme from shame,
 And be aveng'd on those that breed thy
 blame.'
 Thereat enraged, soone he gan upstart,
 Grinding his teeth, and grating his great
 hart ;
 And, rousing up himselfe, for his rough hide
 He gan to reach, but no where it espide.
 Therewith he gan fall terribly to rore,
 And chafte at that indignitie right sore :
 But when his Crowne and scepter both he
 wanted, [panted ;
 Lord ! how he fum'd, and sweld, and rag'd, and
 And threatned death, and thousand deadly
 dolours, [honours.
 To them that had purloyn'd his Princely
 With that in hast, disroabed as he was,
 He toward his owne Pallace forth did pas ;
 And all the way he roared as he went,
 That all the forrest with astonishment
 Thereof did tremble, and the beasts therein
 Fled fast away from that so dreadfull din.
 At last he came unto his mansion,
 Where all the gates he found fast lockt anon,
 And manie warders round about them stood :
 With that he roar'd aloud, as he were wood,
 That all the Pallace quaked at the stound,
 As if it quite were riven from the ground,
 And all within were dead and hartles left :
 And th' Ape himselfe, as one whose wits were
 reft,
 Fled here and there, and everie corner sought,
 To hide himselfe from his owne feared thought.
 But the false Foxe, when he the Lion heard,
 Fled closely forth, streightway of death
 afraid,
 And to the Lion came, full lowly creeping,
 With fained face, and watrie cyne halfe
 weeping,
 T' excuse his former treason and abusion,
 And turning all unto the Apes confusion.
 Nath'les the royall Beast forbore beleaving,
 But bad him stay at ease till further preaving.
 Then, when he saw no entraunce to him
 graunted,
 Roaring yet lowerd that all harts it daunted,

Upon those gates with force he fiercely flew,
 And, rending them in pieces, felly slewe
 Those warders strange, and all that els he
 met. [get :
 But th' Ape still flying he no where might
 From rowme to rowme, from beam to beame
 he fled
 All breathles, and for feare now almost ded ;
 Yet him at last the Lyon spide, and caught,
 And forth with shame unto his judgement
 brought.
 Then all the beasts he caus'd assembled bee,
 To heare their doome, and sad ensample see.

The Foxe, first Author of that treacherie,
 He did uncase, and then away let fle :
 But th' Apes long taile (which then he had)
 he quight
 Cut off, and both eares pared of their hight ;
 Since which all Apes but halfe their eares
 have left,
 And of their tiales are utterlie bereft.
 So Mother Hubbard her discourse did end,
 Which pardon me, if I amisse have pend ;
 For weake was my remembrance it to hold,
 And bad her tongue that it so bluntly
 tolde.

THE RUINES OF ROME:

BY BELLAY.

I

YE heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie
 Under deep ruines, with huge walls opprest,
 But not your praise, the which shall never die
 Through your faire verses, ne in ashes rest ;
 If so be shrilling voyce of wight alive
 May reach from hence to depth of darkest hell,
 Then let those deep Abysses open rive,
 That ye may understand my shreiking yell.
 Thrice having seene under the heavens veale
 Your toombs devoted compassse over-all,
 Thrice unto you with lowd voyce I appeale,
 And for your antique furie here doo call,
 The whiles that I with sacred horror sing
 Your glorie, fairest of all earthly thing !

II

Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise,
 And sharped steeples high shot up in ayre ;
 Greece will the Olde Ephesian buildings blaze,
 And Nylus nurslings their Pyramides faire ;
 The same yet vaunting Greece will tell the storie
 Of Joves great Image in Olympus placed ;
 Mausolus worke will be the Carians glorie ;
 And Crete will boast the Labyrinth, now rased :
 The antique Rhodian will likewise set forth
 The great Colosse, erect to Memorie ;
 And what els in the world is of like-worth,
 Some greater learned wit will magnifie :
 But I will sing above all monuments
 Seven Romane Hills, the worlds Seven Won-
 derments.

III

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome here
 seekest,
 And nought of Rome in Rome perceiv'st at all,

These same olde walls, olde arches, which thou
 seest,
 Olde Palaces, is that which Rome men call.
 Beholde what wreake, what ruine, and what
 wast. [powre
 And how that she, which with her mightie
 Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd herselfe at
 last ; [devowre !
 The pray of time, which all things doth
 Rome now of Rome is th' onely funerall,
 And onely Rome of Rome hath victorie ;
 Ne ought save Tyber hastning to his fall
 Remaines of all. O worlds inconstancie !
 That which is firme doth flit and fall away,
 And that is slitting doth abide and stay.

IV

She, whose high top above the starres did sore,
 One foote on Thetis, th' other on the Morning,
 One hand on Scythia, th' other on the More,
 Both heaven and earth in roundnesse com-
 passing ;
 Joye fearing, least if she should greater growe,
 The Giants old should once again uprise,
 Her whelm'd with hills, these seven hills, which
 be nowe [skies :
 Tombes of her greatnes which did threaten the
 Upon her head he heapt Mount Saturnall,
 Upon her bellie th' antique Palatine,
 Upon her stomacke laid Mount Quirinal,
 On her left hand the noysome Esquiline,
 And Cælian on the right ; but both her feete
 Mount Viminal and Aventine doo meete.

V

Who lists to see what ever nature, arte, [see,
 And heaven could doo, O Rome ! thee let him

In case thy greatnes he can gesse in harte,
By that which but the picture is of thee.
Rome is no more: but if the shade of Rome
May of the bodie yeeld a seeming sight,
It's like a corse drawne forth out of the tombe
By Magicke skill out of eternall night.
The corpes of Rome in ashes is entomb'd,
And her great spirite, rejoynd to the spirite
Of this great masse, is in the same enwomb'd;
But her brave writings, which her famous
merite

In spite of time out of the dust doth reare,
Doo make her Idole through the world
appeare.

VI

Such as the Berecynthian Goddesses bright,
In her swift charret with high turrets crown'd,
Proud that so manie Gods she brought to light;
Such was this Citie in her good daies fownd:
This Citie, more than that great Phrygian
mother

Renown'd for fruite of famous progenie,
Whose greatnes by the greatnes of none other,
But by her selfe, her equall match could see.
Rome onely might to Rome compar'd bee,
And onely Rome could make great Rome to
tremble:

So did the Gods by heavenly doome decree,
That other earthlie power should not resemble
Her that did match the whole earths
puissance, [vaunce.

And did her courage to the heavens ad-

VII

Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights,
Which onely doo the name of Rome retaine,
Olde monuments, which of so famous sprights
The honour yet in ashes doo maintaine;
Triumphant Arcks, spyres, neighbours to the
skie,

That you to see doth th' heaven it selfe appall;
Alas! by little ye to nothing flie,
The peoples fable, and the spoyle of all:
And though your frames do for a time make
warre

Gainst time, yet time in time shall ruinate
Your workes and names, and your last reliques
marre.

My sad desires, rest therefore moderate;
For if that time make ende of things so sure,
It als will end the paine which I endure.

VIII

Through armes and vassals Rome the world
subdu'd, [strength
That one would weene that one sole Cities
Both land and sea in roundnes had survey'd,
To be the measure of her bredth and length:

This peoples vertue yet so fruitfull was
Of vertuous nephewes, that posteritie,
Striving in power their grandfathers to passe,
The lowest earth join'd to the heaven hic;
To th' end that, having all parts in their
power, [quight;
Nought from the Romane Empire might be
And that though time doth Commonwealths
devowre,

Yet no time should so low embase their hight,
That her head, earth'd in her foundations
deep,
Should not her name and endles honour
keep.

IX

Ye cruell warres, and eke ye Gods unkinde,
Heaven envious, and bitter stepdame Nature!
Be it by fortune, or by course of kinde,
That ye doo weld th' affaires of earthlie crea-
ture;

Why have your hands long sithence travel'd
To frame this world that doth endure so long?
Or why were not these Romane palaces
Made of some matter no less firme and strong?
I say not, as the common voyce doth say,
That all things which beneath the Moone have
Are temporall, and subject to decay: [being
But I say rather, though not all agreeing

With some that weene the contrarie in
thought,
That all this whole shall one day come to
nought.

X

As that brave sonne of Aeson, which by
charmes

Atcheiv'd the golden Fleece in Colchid land,
Out of the earth engendred men of armes
Of Dragons teeth, sowne in the sacred sand;
So this brave Towne, that in her youthlie daies
An Hydra was of warriors glorious,
Did fill with her renowned nourslings praise
The fire sunnes both one and other hous:
But they at last, there being then not living
An Hercules so ranke seed to repress,
Emongst themselves with cruell furie striving,
Mow'd downe themselves with slaughter mer-
cilesse;

Renewing in themselves that rage unkinde,
Which whilom did those earthborn brethren
blinde.

XI

Mars, shaming to have given so great head
To his off-spring, that mortall puissance head,
Pust up with pride of Romane hardiehead,
Seem'd above heavens powre it selfe to ad-
vaunce;

Cooling againe his former kindled heate,
With which he had those Romane spirits fild,
Did blowe new fire, and with enflamed breath
Into the Gothicke colde hot rage instil'd.

Then gan that Nation, th' earths new Giant
brood,

To dart abroad the thunder bolts of warre,
And, beating downe these walls with furious
mood

Into her mothers bosome, all did marre;
Toth' end that none, aM were it Jove his gire,
Should boast himselfe of the Romane Empire,

XII

Like as whilome the children of the earth
Heapt hills on hills to scale the starrie skie,
And fight against the Gods of heavenly berth,
Whiles Jove at them his thunderbolts let flie,
All suddenly with lightning overthrowne,
The furious squadrons downe to ground did
fall,

That th' earth under her childrens weight did
And th' heavens in glorie triumpht over all:
So did that haughtie front, which heaped was
On these seven Romane hills, it selfe upreare
Over the world, and lift her loftie face
Against the heaven, what gan her force to feare.

But now these scorned fields bemone her
fall.

And Gods secure feare not her force at all.

XIII

Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring,
Nor the deep wounds of victours raging blade,
Nor ruthlesse spoyle of souldiers blood-desiring,
The which so oft thee, (Rome) their conquest
Ne stroke on stroke of fortune variable, [made;
Ne rust of age hating continuance,
Nor wrath of Gods, nor spight of men unstable,
Nor thou oppos'd against thine owne puissance;
Nor th' horrible uprore of windes high blowing,
Nor swelling streames of that God snakie-
paced,

Which hath so often with his overflowing
Thee drenched, have thy pride so much abaced,

But that this nothing, which they have
thce left,

Makes the world wonder what they from thee

XIV

As men in Summer fearles passe the foord
Which is in Winter lord of all the plaine,
And with his tumbling streames doth beare
aboard

The ploughmans hope and shepherds labour
And as the coward beasts use to despise
The noble Lion after his lives end, [hardiee
Whetting their teeth, and with vaine fool-
Daring the foe that cannot him defend:

And as at Troy most dastards of the Greekes
Did brave about the corpses of Hector colde;
So those, which whilome wont with pallid
cheekes

The Romane triumphs glorie to behold, [vaine,
Now on these ashie tombes shew boldnesse
And, conquer'd, dare the Conquerour dis-
daine.

XV

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoasts,
Which, joying in the brightnes of your day,
Brought forth those signes of your presum-
ptuous boasts

Which now their dusty reliques do bewray;
Tell me, ye spirits, (sith the darksome river
Of Styx, not passable to soules returning,
Enclosing you in thrice three wards for ever,
Doo not restraine your images still mourning)
Tell me then, (for perhaps some one of you
Yet here above him secretly doth hide)

Doo ye not feelee your torments to accrewe,
When ye sometimes behold the ruin'd pride
Of these old Romane works, built with your
hands,

Now to become nought els but heaped sands?

XVI

Like as ye see the wrathfull Sea from farre
In a great mountaine heap't with hideous
noyse,

Eftsoones of thousand billowes shouldred narre
Against a Rocke to breake with dreadfull
poyse:

Like as ye see fell Boreas with sharpe blast
Tossing huge tempests through the troubled
skie,

Eftsoones having his wide wings spent in wast,
To stop his wearie cariare suddenly:

And as ye see huge flames spread diversalie,
Gathered in one up to the heavens to spyre,
Eftsoones consum'd to fall downe feebily,
So whilom did this Monarchie aspyre,

As waves, as winde, as fire, spread over all,
Till it by fatal doome adowne did fall.

XVII

So long as Joves great Bird did make his flight,
Bearing the fire with which heaven doth us fray,
Heaven had not feare of that presumptuous
might,

With which the Giaunts did the Gods assay;
But all so soone as scorching Sunne had bred
His wings which wont the earth to overspredd,
The earth out of her massie wombe forth sent
That antique horror, which made heaven
adredd.

Then was the Germane Raven in disguise
That Romane Eagle seeme to cleave asunder,

And towards heaven freshly to arise
Out of these mountaines, now consum'd to
pouder; [lightning,
In which the foule, that serves to beare the
Is now no more seen flying, nor alighting.

XVIII

These heapes of stones, these old wals, which
ye see,
Were first enclosures but of salvage soyle;
And these brave Pallaces, which maystred bee
Of time, were shepherds cottages sometime.
Then tooke the shepherds Kingly ornaments,
And the stout hynde arm'd his right hand with
steale:

Eftsoones their rule of yearly Presidents
Grew great, and sixe months greater a great
deale;

Which, made perpetuall, rose to so great might.
That thence th' Imperiall Eagle rooting tooke,
Till th' heaven it selfe, opposing gainst her
Her power to Peters successor betooke; [might,

Who, shepherdlke, (as fates the same
foreseeing)

Doth shew that all things turne to their first
being.

XIX

All that is perfect, which th' heaven beautifies;
All that's imperfect, borne belowe the Moone;
All that doth feede our spirits and our eies,
And all that doth consume our pleasures soone;
All the mishap the which our daies outweares.
All the good hap of th' oldest times afore,
Rome, 'n the time of her great ancesters,
Like a Pandora, locked long in store,
But destinie this huge Chaos turnoyling,
In which all good and evill was enclosed,
Their heavenly vertues from these woes as-
soyling,

Caried to heaven, from sinfull bondage losed;
But their great sinnes, the causers of their
paine,

Under these antique ruines yet remaine.

XX

No otherwise than raynie cloud, first fed
With earthly vapours gathered in the ayre,
Eftsoones in compas arch't, to steepe his bed,
Doth plunge himselfe in Tethys bosome faire;
And, mounting up againe from whence he came,
With his great bellie spreads the dimmed world,
Till at the last, dissolving his moist frame,
In raine, or snowe, or haile, he forth is hord;
This Citie, which was first but shepherds shade,
Uprising by degrees, grew to such height,
That Queene of land and sea her selfe she
made.

At last, not able to beare so great weight,

Her power, dispeast through all the world
did vade; [fade.
To shew that all in th' end to nought shall

XXI

The same, which Pyrrhus and the puissaunce
Of Afrike could not tame, that same brave Citie,
Which, with stout courage arm'd against mis-
chaunce,

Sustein'd the shocke of common enmitie;
If long as her ship, tost with so manie freakes,
Had all the world in armes against her bent,
Was never seene, that anie fortunes wreakes
Could breake her course begun with brave
intent.

But, when the object of her vertue failed,
Her power it selfe against it selfe did arme;
As he that having long in tempest sailed,
Faine would arrive, but cannot for the storme,
If too great winde against the port him drive,
Doth in the port it selfe his vessell rive.

XXII

When that brave honour of the Latine name,
Which meard' her rule with Africa, and Byze,
With Thames inhabitants of noble fame,
And they which see the dawning day arise;
Her nourslings did with mutinous uprore
Marten against her selfe her conquer'd spoile,
Which she had wonne from all the world
afore,

Of all the world was spoil'd within a while:
So, when the compact course of the universe
In sixe and thirtie thousand yeares is runne,
The bands of th' elements shall backe reverse
To their first discord, and be quite undonne:
The seedes, of which all things at first were
bred,

Shall in great Chaos wombe againe be hid.

XXIII

O! watie wisdom of the man, that would
That Carthage towres from spoile should be
forborne,

To th' end that his victorious people should
With cancring laisure not be overorne:
He well foresaw how that the Romane courage,
Impatient of pleasures faint desires,
Through idlenes would turne to civill rage,
And be her selfe the matter of her fires;
For, in a people given all to ease,
Ambition is engendred easily;
As, in a vicious bodie, grosse disease
Soone grows through humours superfluite,
That came to passe, when, swolne with
plenties pride,

Nor prince, nor peere, nor kin, they would
abide.

XXIV

If the blinde furie, which warres breedeth oft,
Wonts not t' enrage the hearts of equall beasts,
Whether they fare on foote, or flie aloft,
Or armed be with clawes, or scalie creasts,
What fell Erynnis, with hot burning tongs,
Did grype your hearts with woyesome rage
imbew'd,

That, each to other working cruell wrongs,
Your blades in your owne bowels you embrew'd?

Was this (ye Romanes) your hard destinie,
Or some old sinne, whose unappeased guilt
Pow'd foundacion forth on you eternallie?
Or brothers blood, the which at first was spilt
Upon your walls, ^{the} God might not endure
Upon the same to set foundation sure?

XXV

O that I had the Thracian Poets harpe,
For to awake out of th' infernall shade
Those antique Cæsars, sleeping long in darke,
The which this auncient Citie whilome made!
Or that I had Amphions instrument,
To quicken, with his vitall notes accord,
The stonie joynts of these old walls now rent,
By which th' Ausonian light might be restor'd!
Or that at least I could, with pencill fine,
Fashion the pourtraicts of these Palacis,
By paternes of great Virgils spirit divine!
I would assay with that which in me is,
To build, with leuell of my loftie style,
That which no hands can evermore compyle.

XXVI

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure,
Him needeth not to seeke for usage right
Of line, or lead, or rule, or squire, to measure
Her length, her breadth, her deepnes, or her
hight;
But him behooves to vew in compasse round
All that the Ocean graspes in his long armes;
Be it where the yerely starre doth scorch the
ground,
Or where colde Boreas blowes his hither stormes.
Rome was th' whole world, and all the world
was Rome;
And if things nam'd their names doo equalize,
When land and sea ye name, then name ye
Rome;
And, naming Rome, ye land and sea comprize:
For th' auncient Plot of Rome, displayed
plaine,
The map of all the wide world doth containe.

XXVII

Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold
The antique pride which menaced the skie,

These haughtie heapes, these palaces of olde,
These wals, these arcks, these baths, these
temples lie;

Judge, by these ample ruines vew, the rest
The which injurious time hath quite outworne,
Since of all workmen helde in reckning best;
Yet these olde fragments are for paternes borne.
Then also marke how Rome, from day to day,
Repaying her decayed fashion,
Renewes herselfe with buildings rich and gay;
That one would judge, that the Romaine Dæmon
Doth yet himselfe with fatall hand enforce,
Again on foote to reare her pouldred
corse.

XXVIII

He that hath seene a great Oke drie and dead,
Yet clad with reliques of some Trophies olde,
Lifting to heaven her aged hoarie head,
Whose foote in ground hath left but feeble
holde,
But halfe disbowel'd lies above the ground,
Shewing her wreathed rootes, and naked
armes,
And on her trunk, all rotten and unsound,
Onely supports herselfe for meate of wormes;
And, though she owe her fall to the first
Yet of the devout people is ador'd, [winde,
And manie yong plants spring out of her
rinde:

Who such an Oke hath seene, let him record
That such this Citie honour was of yore,
And amongst all Cities florished much more.

XXIX

All that which Aegypt whilome did devise,
All that which Greece their temples to em-
brave
After th' Ionicke, Atticke, Doricke guise;
Or Corinth skild in curious workes to grave;
All that Lysippus practike arte could forme,
Apelles wit, or Phidias his skill,
Was wont this auncient Citie to adorne, [fill.
And the heaven it selfe with her wide wonders
All that which Athens ever brought forth wise;
All that which Afrike ever brought forth
All that which Asie ever had of prise, [strange;
Was here to see. O marvelous great change!
Rome, living, was the worlds sole ornament,
And, dead, is now the worlds sole monument.

XXX

Like as the seeded field greene grasse first
showes, [spring,
Then from greene grasse into a stalke doth
And from a stalke into an eare forth-growes,
Which eare the frutefull graine doth shortly
bring;
And as in season due the husband mowes

The waving lockes of those faire yeallow
heares, [rowes,
Which, bound in sheaves, and layd in comely
Upon the naked fields in stackes he reares:
So grew the Romane Empire by degree,
Till that Barbarian hands it quite did spill,
And left of it but these olde markes to see,
Of which all passers by doo somewhat pill:
As they which gleane, the reliques use to
gather, [scatter
Which th' husbandman behind him chanst to

XXXI

That same is now nought but a champion
wide,
Where all this worlds pride once was situate,
No blame to thee, whosoever dost abide
By Nyle, or Gange, or Tygre, or Euphrate;
Ne Afrike thereof guiltie is, ne Spaine,
Nor the bolde people by the Thamis brincks,
Nor the brave warlike brood of Alemaine,
Nor the borne Souldier which Rhine running
drinks:
Thou onely cause, O Civill furie! art, [spight,
Which, sowing in th' Aemathian fields thy
Didst arme thy hand against thy proper hart;
To th' end that when thou wast in greatest
hight,
To greatness growne, through long prosperitie,
Thou then adowne might'st fall more hor-
riblic.

XXXII

Hope ye, my verses, that posteritie
Of age ensuing shall you ever read?

Hope ye, that ever immortalitie
So meane Harpes worke may chalenge for her
meed?
If under heaven anie endurance were,
These moniments, which not in paper writ,
But in Porphyre and Marble doo appeare,
Might well have hop'd to have obtained it.
Nath'les my Lute, whom Phœbus deign'd to
give,
Cease not to sound these olde antiquities;
For if that time doo let thy glorie live,
Well maist thou boast, how ever base thou
bee,
That thou art first, which of thy Nation song
Th' olde honour of the people gowned long.

L' Envoy.

Bellay, first garland of free Poesie
That France brought forth, though fruitfull of
brave wits,
Well worthe thou of immortalitie,
That long hast traveld, by thy learned writs,
Olde Rome out of her ashes to revive,
And give a second life to dead decayes!
Ngedes must he all eternitie survive,
That can to other give eternall dayes:
Thy dayes therefore are endles, and thy
praise
Excelling all that ever went before.
And, after thee, gins Bartas hie to rayse
His heavenly Muse, th' Almightie to adore.
Live, happie spirits, th' honour of your
name,
And fill the world with never dying fame!

MUIOPOTMOS,

OR THE

FATE OF THE BUTTERFLIE.

BY ED. SP.

DEDICATED TO THE MOST FAIRE AND VERTUOUS LADIE,
THE LADIE CAREY.

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND VERTUOUS LADIE,
THE LADIE CAREY.

MOST brave and bountifull La: for so excel-
lent favours as I have received at your sweet
handes, to offer these fewe leaves, as in re-
compence, should be as to offer flowers to the
Gods for their divine benefites. Therefore I
have determined to give my selfe wholly to
you, as quite abandoned from my selfe, and

absolutely vowed to your services: which in
all right is ever held for full recompence of
debt or damage, to have the person yeelded.
My person I wot wel how little worth it is,
But the faithfull minde and humble zeale
which I beare unto your La: may perhaps be
more of price, as may please you to account

M M 2

and use the poore service thereof; which taketh glory to advance your excellent partes and noble vertues, and to spend it selfe in honouring you: not so much for your great bounty to my self, which yet may not be unminded; nor for name or kindreds sake by you vouchsafed, being also regardable; as for that honourable name, which yee have by your brave deserts purchast to your self, and spread in the mouths of al men: with

which I have also presumed to grace my verses, and under your name to commend to the world this small Poëme, the which beseeching your La: to take in worth, and of all things therein according to your wonted graciounes to make a milie construction, I humbly pray for your happines.

Your La: ever humbly;
E. S.

MUIOPOTMOS: OR THE FATE OF THE BUTTERFLIE.

I SING of deadly dolorous debate,
Stir'd up through wrathfull Nemesis despight,
Betwixt two mightie Onies of great estate,
Drawne into armes, and prooffe of mortall fight,
Through proud ambition and hart-swelling hate,
Whilst neither could the others greater might
And sdeignfull scorn endure; that from small jarre
Their wraths at length broke into open warre.

The route whereof and tragick effect, [nyne]
Vouchsafe, O thou the mournfulst Muse of
That wilst the tragick stage for to direct,
In funerall complaints and wayfull tyne,
Reveale to me, and all the meanes defect,
Through which sad Clarion did at last decline
To lowest wretchednes. And is there then
Such rancour in the harts of mightie men?

Of all the race of silver-winged Fles
Which doo possesse the Empire of the aire,
Betwixt the centred earth and azure skies,
Was none more favourable, nor more faire,
Whilst heaven did favour his felicities,
Then Clarion, the eldest sonne and haire
Of Muscaroll; and in his fathers sight
Of all alive did seeme the fairest wight.

With fruitfull hope his aged breast he fed
Of future good, which his yong toward yeares,
Full of brave courage and bold hardyhed,
Above th' ensample of his equall peares,
Did largely promise, and to him fore-red,
(Whilst oft his heart did melt in tender teares)
That he in time would sure prove such an one,
As should be worthie of his fathers thone.

The fresh yong flie, in whom the kindly fire
Of lustfull yongth began to kindle fast,
Did much dislaine to subject his desire
To loathsome sloth, or houres in ease to wast,
But joy'd to range abroad in fresh attire,
Through the wide compas of the ayrie coast;
And, with unwearied wings, each part t' inquire
Of the wide rule of his renowned sire.

For he so swift and nimble was of flight,
That from this lower tract he dared to stie
Up to the cloudes, and thence with pineons
To mount aloft unto the Cristall skie, [light
To view the workmanslup of heavens hight:
Whence, down descending, he along would flie
Upon the streaming rivers, sport to finde;
And oft would dare to tempt the troublous winde.

So on a Summers day, when season milde
With gentle calme the world had quieted,
And high in heaven Hyperions fierie childe
Ascending did his beames abroad dispred,
Whiles all the heavens on lower creatures
smilde,
Yong Clarion, with vauntfull lustie head,
After his guize did cast abroad to fare:
And theretoo gan his furnitures prepare.

His breastplate first, that was of substance pure,
Before his noble heart he firmly bound,
That mought his life from yron death assure,
And ward his gentle corpes from cruell wound;
For it by arte was framed to endure
The bit of balcfull steele and bitter stownd,
No lesse than that which Vulcane made to sheild
Achilles life from fate of Troyan field.

And then about his shoulders broad he threw
An hairie hide of some wilde beast, whom hee
In salvage Forrest by adventure slew,
And rest the spoyle his ornament to bee;
Which, spreading all his backe, with dread-
full view

Made all that him so horrible did see
Thinke him Alcides with the Lyons skin,
When the Nemean Conquest he did win.

Upon his head his glistening Burganet,
The which was wrought by wonderous device
And curiously engraven, he did set:
The metall was of rare and passing price;
Not Bilbo steele, nor brasse from Corinth fet,
Nor costly Oricache from strange Phoenix,

But such as could both Phæbus arrowes ward,
And th' hayling darts of heaven beating hard.

Therein two deadly weapons fixt he bore,
Strongly outlaunced towards either side,
Like two sharpe speares his enemies to gore:
Like as a warlike Brigandine, applyde
To fight, layes forth her threatfull pikes afoe
The engines which in them sad death doe
hyde:

So did this flie outstretch his fearefull hornes,
Yet so as him their terrour more adorne.

Lastly his shinnie wings as silver bright,
Painted with thousand colours, passing farre
All Painters skill, he did about him dight:
Not halfe so manie sundrie colours arre
In Iris bowe; ne heaven doth shine so bright,
Distinguished with manie a twinkling starre;
Nor Juncos Bird in her ey-spotted traine
So many goodly colours doth containe.

Ne (may it be withouten perill spoken?)
The Archer God, the sonne of Cytheree,
That joys on wretched lovers to be wroken,
And heaped spoyles of bleeding harts to see,
Beares in his wings so manie a changefull
token.

Ah, my liege Lord! forgive it unto mee.
If ought against thine honour I have tolde;
Yet sure those wings were fairer manifolde.

Full many a Ladie faire, in Court full oft
B holding them, him secretly envide,
And wisht that two such faunes, so silken soft
And golden faire, her Love would her provide:
Or that, when them the gorgeous Flie had doft,
Some one, that would with grace be gratifide,
From him would steale them privily away,
And bring to her so precious a pray.

Report is, that dame Venus, on a day
In spring, when flowres doo clothe the fruitfull
ground,

Walking abroad with all her Nymphes to play,
Bad her faire damzels, flocking her arownd,
To gather flowres her forehead to array:
Ermongst the rest a gentle Nymph was found.
Hight Astery, excell'g all the crewe
In curteous usage and unstained hewe;

Who, beeing nimbler joynted than the rest,
And more industrious, gathered more store
Of the fields honour than the others best;
Which they in secret harts envying sore,
Tolde Venus, when her as the worstliest
She prais'd, that Cupide (as they heard before)
Did lend her secret aide, in gathering
Into her lap the children of the spring;

Whereof the Goddesses gathering jealous
feare,

Not yet unmindefull how not long agoe
Her sonne to Psyche secrete love did beare,
And long it close conceal'd, till mickle woe
Thereof arose, and manie a rutfull teare,
Reason with sudden rage did overgoe;
And, giving hasty credit to th' accuser,
Was led away of them that did abuse her.

Eftsoones that Damzell, by her heavenly
night,

She turn'd into a winged Butterflie,
In the wide aire to make her wandring flight;
And all those flowres, with which so plenteous-
lie

Her lap she filled had, that bred her spight,
She plac'd in her wings, for memorie
Of her pretended crime, though crime none
were:
Since which that flie them in her wings doth
beare.

Thus the fresh Clarion, being readie dight,
Unto his journey did himselle addresse,
And with good speed began to take his flight.
Over the fields, in his franke lustinesse,
And all the champain o're he soared light;
And all the cuntry wide he did possesse,
Feeding upon their pleasures bounteouslie,
That none gausaid, nor none did him envie.

The woods, the rivers, and the medowes
green,

With his aire-cutting wings he measured wide,
Ne did he leave the mountaines bare unscene,
Nor the ranke grassie fennes delights untride.
But none of these, how ever sweete they beene,
Mote please his fancie, nor him cause t' abide:
His choicfull sense with every change doth
thit:

No common things may please a wavering wit.

To the gay gardens his unstaid desire
Him wholly caried, to refresh his sprights:
There lavish Nature, in her best attire,
Powres forth sweete odors and alluring sights;
And Arte, with her contending, doth aspire
T' excell the naturall with made delights;
And all, that faire or pleasant may be found,
In riotous excesse doth there abound.

There he arriving round about doth flie,
From bed to bed, from one to other border,
And takes survey, with curious busie eye,
Of every flowre and herbe there set in order:
Now this, now that, he tasteth tenderly,
Yet none of them he rulely doth disorder,
Ne with his feete their silken leaves deface,
But pastures on the pleasures of each place.

And evermore, with most varietie
And change of sweetnesse, (for all change is
sweete)

He casts his glutton sense to satisfie,
Now sucking of the sap of herbe most meete,
Or of the dew which yet on them does lie,
Now in the same bathing his tender feete;
And then he pearcheth on some braunch
thereby,
To weather him, and his moyst wings to dry.

And then againe he turneth to his play,
To spoyle the pleasures of that Paradise;
The wholesome Saudge, and Lavender still
gray, [eyes,
Ranke-smelling Rue, and Cummin good for
The Roses reigning in the pride of May,
Sharpe Isope, good for greene wounds remedies,
Faire Marigoldes, and Bees-alluring Thyme
Sweet Marjoram, and Daysies decking prime:

Coolc Violets, and Orpine growing still,
Embathed Balme, and chearfull Galingale,
Fresh Costmarie, and breathfull Camomill,
Dull Poppie, and drink-quickning Setuale,
Veyne-healing Verven, and bed-purging Dill,
Sound Savoric, and Bazil hartie-hale,
Fat Colworts, and comforting Perseline,
Colde Lettuce, and refreshing Rosmarine.

And whatso else of verue good or ill
Grew in this Gardin, fetcht from farre away,
Of everie one he takes, and tastes at will,
And on their pleasures greedily doth pray.
Then, when he hath both plaid and fed his
fill,

In the warme Sunne he doth himselfe embay,
And there him rests in riotous suffisaunce
Of all his gladfulness, and kingly joyaunce.

What more felicitie can fall to creature
Then to enjoy delight with libertie,
And to be Lord of all the workes of Nature,
To raine in th' aire from th' earth to highest
skie, [ture,
To feed on flowres and weeds of glorious sea-
To take what ever thing doth please the eie?
Who rests not pleased with such happines,
Well worthy he to taste of wretchednes.

But what on earth can long abide in state,
Or who can him assure of happie day.
Sith morning faire may bring fowle evening
late,

And least mishap the most blisse alter may?
For thousand perills lie in close awaite
About us daylie, to worke our decay;
That none, except a God, or God him guide,
May them avoyde, or remedie provide.

And whatso heavens in their secret doome
Ordaigned have, how can fraile fleshy wight
Forecast, but it must needs to issue come?
The sea, the aire, the fire, the day, the night,
And th' armies of their creatures all and some
Do serve to them, and with importune might,
Warre against us, the vassalls of their will.
Who then can save what they dispose to spill?

Not thou, O Clarion! though fairest thou
Of all thy kinde, unhappie happie Flie,
Whose cruell fate is woven even now
Of Joves owne hand, to worke thy miserie.
Ne may thee help the manie hartie vow,
Which thy old Sire with sacred pietie
Hath powred forth for thee, and th' altars
sprent:
Nought may thee save from heavens avengè-
ment.

It fortun'd (as heavens had behight)
That in this gardin, where yong Clarion
Was wont to solace him, a wicked wight,
The foe of faire things, th' author of confusion,
The shame of Nature, the bondslave of spight,
Had lately built his hatefull mansion;
And, lurking elq,ely, in awayte now lay,
How he might anie in his trap betray.

But when he spide the joyous Butterflie
In this faire plot dispaicing too and fro,
Feareles of foes and hidden jeopardie,
Lord! how he gan for to bestirre him tho,
And to his wicked worke each part applie.
His heart did earne against his hated foe,
And bowels so with rackling poyson swelde,
That scarce the skyn the stroug contagion
helde.

The cause why he this Flie so maliced
Was (as in stories it is written found)
For that his mother, which him bore and
brod,

The most fine-fingred workwoman on ground,
Arachne, by his means was vanquished
Of Pála, and in her owne skill confound,
When she with her for excellence contended,
That wrought her shame, and sorrow never
ended.

For the Tritonian goddesses, having hard
Her blazed fame which all the world had fil'd,
Came downe to prove the truth, and due
reward

For her prais-worthie workmanship to yeild;
But the presumptuous Damzell rashly dar'd
The Goddesses selfe to chalenge to the field,
And to compare with her in curious skill
Of workes with loome, with needle, and with
quill.

Minerva did the challenge not refuse,
But deign'd with her the paragon to make:
So to their worke they sit, and each doth
chuse

What storie she will for her tapet take.
Arachne figur'd how Jove did abuse
Europa like a Bull, and on his backe
Her through the sea did beare; so lively
seene, [weene.
That it true Sea, and true Bull, ye would

She seem'd still backe unto the land to looke,
And her play-fellowes aide to call, and teare
The dashing of the waves, that up she tooke
Her dantie feete, and garments gathered neare;
But (Lord!) how she in everie member
shooke,

When as the land she saw no more appeare,
But a wilde wildernes of waters deepe:
Then gan she greatly to lament and weepe.

Before the Bull she pictur'd winged Love,
With his yong brother Sport, light fluttering
Upon the waves, as each had been a Dove;
The one his bowe and shafts, the other
Spring

A burning Teade about his head did move,
As in their Syres new love both triumphing:
And manie Nymphes about them flocking
round, [sound.
And manie Tritons which their hornes did

And round about her worke she did empale
With a faire border wrought of sundrie
flowres,

Enwoven with an Yvie-winding trayle:
A goodly worke, full fit for kingly bowres;
Such as Dame Pallas, such as Envie pale,
That al good things with venomous tooth
devowres, [bright
Could not accuse. Then gan the Goddessse
Her self likewise unto her worke to dight.

She made the storie of the olde debate
Which she with Neptune did for Athensoric:
Twelve Gods doo sit around in royall state,
And Jove in midst with awfull Majestic,
To judge the strife betweene them stirred
late:

Each of the Gods, by his like visnomic
Eathe to be known; but Jove above them
all,

By his great lookes and power Imperiall.

Before them stands the God of Seas in place,
Clayming that sea-coast Citle as his right.
And strikes the rockes with his three-forked
mace;

Whenceforth issues a warlike steed in sight,

The signe by which he chalenge the place;
That all the Gods, which saw his wondrous
Did surely deeme the victorie his due: [might,
But seldome seene, forejudgment proveth true.

Then to her selfe she gives her Aegide shield,
And steelled speare, and morion on her hedd,
Such as she oft is seene in warlike field:

Then sets she forth, how with her weapon
dredd [did yield
Shesmote the ground, the which streight fourth
A fruitfull Olyve tree, with berries spredd,
That all the Gods admir'd: then, all the storie
She compast with a wreath of Olyves hoarie.

Emongst these leaves she made a Butterflie,
With excellent device and wondrous slight,
Fluttering among the Olives wantonly,
That seem'd to live, so like it was in sight:
The velvet nap which on his wings doth lie,
The sulken downe with which his backe is
dight,

His broad outstretched hornes, his hayrie thies,
His glorious colours, and his glistering eies.

Which when Arachne saw, as overlaid
And mastered with workmanship so rare,
She stood astonied long, ne ought gaine said;
And with fast fixed eyes on her did stare,
And by her silence, signe of one dismayd,
The victorie did yield her as her share:
Yet did she inly fret and felly burne,
And all her blood to poysonous rancor turne:

That shortly from the shape of womanhed,
Such as she was when Pallas she attempted,
She grew to hideous shape of dryrined,
Pined with griefe of folly late repented:
Eftsoones her white straight legs were altered
To crooked crawling shankes, of marrowe
empt;

And her faire face to fowle and loathsome hewe,
And her fine corpes to a bag of venim grewe.

This cursed creature, mindfull of that olde
Enfested grudge, the which his mother felt,
So soone as Clarion he did beholde,
His heart with vengefull malice inly swelt;
And weaving straight a net with manie a fold
About the cave in which he lurking dwelt,
With fife small cords about it stretched wide,
So finely sponne that scarce they could be
spide.

Not anie damzell, which her vaunteth most
In skilfull knitting of soft silken twyne,
Nor anie weaver, which his worke doth boast
In dieper, in damaske, or in lyne,
Nor anie skil'd in workmanship embost,
Nor anie skil'd in loupes of fingring fine,

Might in their divers cunning ever dare
With this so curious networke to compare.

Ne doo I thinke, that that same subtil gin,
The which the Lemnian God framde craftily,
Mars sleeping with his wife to compass in,
That all the Gods with common mockerie
Might laugh at them, and scorne their shame-
full sin,

Was like to this. This same he did applie
For to entrap the careles Clarion,
That rang'd each where without suspition.

Suspition of friend, nor feare of foe
That hazarded his health, had he at all,
But walkt at will, and wandred too and fro,
In the pride of his freedome principall:
Little wist he his fatall future woe,
But was secure; the liker he to fall.
He likest is to fall into mischauyce,
That is regardles of his gouernaunce.

Yet still Aragnoll (so his foe was hight)
Lay lurking covertly him to surprise;
And all his gins, that him entangle might,
Drest in good order as he could devise.
At length, the foolish Flie, without foresight,
As he that did all daunger quite despise,
Toward those parts came flying carelesslie,
Where hidden was his hatefull enemy.

Who, seeing him, with secret joy therefore
Did tickle inwardly in euerie vaine;
And his false hart, fraught with all treasons
store,

Was fill'd with hope his purpose to obtaine:
Himselfe he close upgathered more and more
Into his den, that his deceitfull traine
By his there being might not be bewraid,
Ne anie noyse, ne anie motion made.

Like as a wily Foxe, that having spide
Where on a sunnie banke the Lambes doo play,

Full closely creeping by the hinder side,
Lyes in ambushment of his hoped pray,
Ne stirreth limbe; till, seeing readie tide,
He russeth forth, and snatcheth quite away
One of the litle younglings unawares:
So to his worke Aragnoll him prepares.

Who now shall give unto my heauie eyes
A well of teares, that all may overflow?
Or where shall I finde lamentable cryes,
And mournfull tunes enough my grieve to
show?

Helpe, O thou Tragick Muse! me to devise
Notes sad enough t' expresse this bitter throw:
For loe! the drierie stownd is now arrived,
That of all happines hath us deprived.

The luckles Clarion, whether cruell Fate
Or wicked Fortune faultles him misled,
Or some ungracious blast, out of the gate
Of Aeoles raine, perforce him drove on hed,
Was (O sad hap, and howe unfortunate!)
With violent swift flight forth caried
Into the cursed cobweb, which his foe
Had framed for his small overthroe.

There the fond Flie, entangled, strugled long,
Himselfe to free therout; but all in vaine:
For striving more, the more in laces strong,
Himselfe he tide, and wrapt his wings twaine
In lymic snares the subtil loupes among;
That in the ende he breathlesse did remaine,
And, all his youthly forces idly spent,
Him to the mercy of th' avenger lent.

Which when the greisly tyrant did espie,
Like a grimme Lyon rushing with fierce might
Out of his den, he seized greedelie
On the resistles pray; and, with fell spight,
Under the left wing stroke his weapon shie
Into his heart, that his deepe-groning spright
In bloodie streames fourth fled into the aere,
His bodie left the spectacle of care.

VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE.

One day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe,
My spirit shaking off her earthly prison,
Began to enter into meditation deepe
Of things exceeding reach of common reason;
Such as this age, in which all good is reason,
And all that humble is, and meane debaced,
Hath brought forth in her last declining sea-
son,

Griefe of good mindes, to see goodnesse
disgraced!
On which when as my thought was thoroughly
[placed,
Unto my eyes strange shewes presented were,
Picturing that which I in minde embraced,
That yet those sights compassion me full nere
Such as they were (faire Ladies!) take in worth,
That when time serves may bring things
better forth,

II

In summers day, when Phœbus fairly shone,
I saw a Bull as white as driven snowe,
With gilden hornes embowed like the Moone,
In a fresh flowring meadow lying owe:
Up to his eares the verdant grasse did growe,
And the gay floures did offer to be eaten;
But he with fatnes so did overflowe, [beaten,
That he all wallowed in the weedes downe
Ne car'd with them his dantie lips to sweeten:
Till that a Brize, a scorned little creature,
Through his faire hide his angrie sting did
threaten,

And vext so sore, that all his goodly feature
And all his plenteous pasture nought him
pleased:

So by the small the great is oft diseased.

III

Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile,
Upon a sunnie banke outstretched lay,
In monstrous length, a mightie Crocodile,
That, cram'd with guiltles blood and greedie pray
Of wretched people travailing that way, [pride,
Thought all things lesse than his disdainful
I saw a little Bird call'd Tedula,
The least of thousands which on earth abide,
That forst this hideous beast to open wide
The griesly gates of his devouring hell,
And let him feede, as Nature did provide,
Upon his jawes, that with blacke venime swell.

Why then should greatest things the least
disdaine,

St:th that so small so mightie can constraine?

IV

The kindly Bird, that beares Joves thunder-
clap,

One day did scorne the simple Scarabee.
Proud of his highest service, and good hap,
That made all other Fowles his thralls to bee:
The silly Flie, that no redresse did see,
Spide where the Eagle built his towring nest,
And, kindling fire within the hollow tree,
Burnt up his yong ones, and himselfe distem;
Ne suffred him in anie place to rest,
But drove in Joves owne lap his eggs to lay;
Where gathering also filth him to infest,
Forst with the filth his eggs to fling away:

For which when as the Foule was wroth,
said Jove.

'Lo! how the least the greatest may reprove.'

V

Toward the sea turning my troubled eye,
I saw the fish (if fish I may it clepe)
That makes the sea before his face to flye,
And with his flaggie finnes doth seeme to
sweepe

The fomie waves out of the dreadfull deep,
The huge Leviathan, dame Natures wonder,
Making his sport, that manie makes to weep:
A sword-fish small him from the rest did sunder,
That, in his throat him pricking softly under,
His wide Abyesse him forced forth to spewe,
That all the sea did roare like heavens thunder.
And all the waves were stain'd with filthie hewe.
Hereby I learned have not to despise
•Whatever thing seems small in common eyes.

VI

An hideous Dragon, dreadfull to behold,
Whose backe was arm'd against the dint of
spare • [golde,
With shields of brasse that shone like burnisht
And forked sting that death in it did beare,
Strove with a Spider his unequal pearie;
And bad defiance to his enemye.

The subtile vermin, creeping closely neare,
Did in his drinke shed poyson privlie;
Which, through his entrailes spreading di-
versely,

Made him to swell, that nigh his bowells brust,
And him enforst to yeeld the victorie,
That did so much in his owne greatnesse trust.
O! how great vainesse is it then to scorne
•The weake, that hath the strong so oft
forlorne!

VII

High on a hill a goodly Cedar grewe,
Of wondrous length, and streight proportion,
That farie abroad her daintie odours threwe;
Mongst all the daughters of proud Libanon,
Her match in beautie was not anie one.
Shortly within her most pith there bred
A little wicked worme, perceiv'd of none,
That on her sap and vitall moysture fed:
Thenceforth her garland so much honoured
Began to die, (O great ruth for the same!)
And her faire lockes fell from her lustre head,
That shortly balde and bared she became.
I, which this sight beheld, was much dis-
mayed

To see so goodly thing so soone decayed.

VIII

Soone after this I saw an Elephant,
Adorn'd with bells and bosses gorgeously
That on his backe did beare (as batteillant)
A gilden towre, which alone exceedinglie;
That he himselfe through foolish vanitie,
Both for his rich attire and goodly forme,
Was puffed up with passing surquedrie,
And shortly gan all other beasts to scorne.
Till that a little Ant, a silly worme,
Into his nostrils creeping, so him pained,

That, casting downe his towres, he did deforme
Both borrowed pride, and native beautie
stained.

Let therefore nought, that great is, therein
Sith so small thing his happines may varie.

IX

Looking far fourth into the Ocean wide,
A goodly ship with banners bravely dight,
And flag in her top-gallant, I espide
Through the maine sea unaking her merry flight
Fairst blew the winde into her bosome right;
And th' heavens looked lovely all the while,
That she did seeme to daunce, as in delight,
And at her owne felicitie did smile.

All sodainly there clove unto her keele
A little fish, that men called Remora,
Which stopt her course, and held her by the
heeles,

That winde nor tide could move her thence
Straunge thing, me seemeth, that so small
a thing

Should able be so great an one to wring.

X

A mighty Lyon, Lord of all the wood,
Having his hunger thoroughly satysfide
With pray of beasts and spoyle of living blood,
Safe in his dreadles den him thought to hid:
His sternesse was his prayse, his strength his
And all his glory in his cruell clawes. [pride,
I saw a wasp, that fiercely him defide,
And bad him battaile even to his jawes:
Sore he him stong, that it the blood forth
drawes,

And his proude heart is filld with fretting ire:
In vaine he threats his teeth, his tayle, his
pawes,
And from his bloodie eyes doth sparkle fire:

That dead himselfe he wisheth for despight.
So weakest may anoy the most of might!

XI

What time the Romaine Empire bore the raine
Of all the world and florist most in might,
The nations gan their soveraigntie disdaine,
And cast to quitt them from their bondage
quight:

So, when all shrouded were in silent night,
The Gallies were, by corrupting of a mayde,
Possest nigh of the Capitol through slight,
Had not a Goose the treachery bewrayde;
If then a Goose great Rome from ruine stayde,
And Jove himselfe, the patron of the place,
Preserved from being to his foes betrayde;
Why do vaine men mean things so much deface,
And in their might repose their most assur-
ance,

Sith nought on earth can chalenge long
endurance?

XII

When these sad sights were overpast and gone,
My spright was greatly moved in her rest,
With inward ruth and deare affection,
To see so great things by so small distres t
Thenceforth I gan in my enrieved brest
To scorne all difference of great and small,
Sith that the greatest often are oppress,
And unawares doe into daunger fall.
And ye, that read these ruines tragically,
Learne by their losse to love the low degree;
And, if that fortune chauce you up to call
To honours seat, forget not what you be:
For he, tha' of himselfe is most secure,
Shall finde his state most fickle and un-
sure.

•THE VISIONS OF BELLAY.

I

It was the time, when rest, soft sliding downe
From heavens light into mens heavy eyes,
In the forgetfulness of sleepe doth drowne
The carefull thoughts of mortall miseries;
Then did a Ghost before mine eyes appeare,
On that great rivers banck, that runnes by
Rome;

Which, calling me by name, bad me to reare
My lookes to heaven whence all good gifts do
come,

And crying lowd, Lo! now beholde (quoth
What under this great temple placed is:
Lo, all is nought but flying vanitie!
So I, that know this worlds inconstancies,

Sith onely God surmounts all times decay
God alone my confidence do stay.

II

On high hills top I saw a stately frame,
An hundred cubits high by just assize, [same,
With hundreth pillours fronting faire the
All wrought with Diamond after Dorick wize:
Nor brick nor marble was the wall in view,
But shining Christall, which from top to base
Out of her womb a thousand rayons threw
On hundred steps of Afrike golde enchase:
Golde was the parget; and the seeling bright
Did shine all scaly with great plates of golde;
The floore of Jasp and Emeraude was dight.
O worlds vainease! Whiles thus I did behold,

An earthquake shooke the hill from lowest
seat,
And overthrew this frame with ruine great.

III

Then did a sharped spyre of Diamond bright,
Ten fecte each way in square appeare to mee,
Justly proportion'd up unto his hight,
So far as Archer might his level see :
The top thereof a pot did seeme to beare,
Made of the mettall, which we most do honour;
And in this golden vessel couched weare
The ashes of a mightie Emperour:
Upon foure corners of the base were pight,
To beare the frame, foure great Lyons of gold;
A worthy tombe for such a worthy wight.
Alas, this world doth nought but grievance
hold!

I saw a tempest from the heave descend,
Which this brave monument with flash did
rend.

• IV

I saw raysde up on yvorie pillowes tall,
Whose bases were of richest mettalls warke,
The chapters Alabaster, the fryses christall,
The double front of a triumphall Arke:
On each side purtraid was a Victorie,
Clad like a Nimph, that wings of silver weares,
And in triumphant chayre was set on hie,
The auncient glory of the Romaine pearces.
No worke it seem'd of earthly craftsmans wit,
But rather wrought by his owne industry,
That thunder-dartes for Jove his syre doth fit,
Let me no more see faire thing under sky,
Sith that mine eyes have seene so faire a sight
With sodain fall to dust consumed quight.

V

Then was the faire Dodonian tree far seene,
Upon heaven hills to spread his gladsome
gleame,
And conquerours bedecked with his groffe,
Along the bancks of the Ausonian streame:
There many an auncient Trophée was adrest,
And many a spoyle, and many a goodly shew,
Which that brave races greatnes did attest,
That whilome from the Troyan blood did flow.
Ravish't I was so rare a thing to see;
When lo! a barbarous troupe of clownish fene
The honour of these noble boughs down threw:
Under the wedge I heard the tronck to grone;
And, since, I saw the roote in great disdain
A twinne of forked trees send forth againe.

VI

I saw a Wolfe under a rookie cave
Noursing two whelpes; I saw her litle ones
In wanton dalliance the teate to crave, [none
While she her neck wreath'd from them for the

I saw her raunge abroad to seeke her food,
And roming through the field with greedie
rage
T'embrew her teeth and claws with lukewarm
Of the small heards, her thirst for to asswage,
I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended
Downe from the mountaines bordring Lom-
bardie,
That with an hundred speares her flank wide
I saw her on the plaine outstretched lie,
Throwing out thousand throbs in her owne
soyle;
Soone on a tree uphang'd I saw her spoyle.

VII

I saw the Bird that can the sun endure,
With feeble wings assay to mount on hight;
By more and more she gan her wings t'assure
Following th' ensample of her mothers sight:
I saw her rise, and with a larger flight
To pierce the cloudes, and with wide pinneons
To measure the most haughtie mountaines
hight,
Untill she raught the Gods owne mansions:
There was she lost; when suddaine I behelde,
Where, tumbling through the ayre in fire fold,
All flaming downe she on the plaine was felde,
And soone her bodie turn'd to ashes colde.
I saw the foule, that doth the light dispise,
Out of her dust like to a worm arise.

VIII

I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes
Did wash the ground-work of an old great wall;
I saw it cover'd all with griesly shadowes,
That with black horror did the ayre appall:
Thereout a strange beast with seven heads
arose,
That townes and castles under her brest did
And seem'd both milder beasts and fiercer foes
Alike with equall ravine to devour.
Much was I mazzle, to see this monsters kinde
In hundred formes to change his fearefull hew;
When as at length I saw the wrathfull winde,
Which blows cold storms, burst out of Scithian
mew,
That sperst these cloudes; and, in so short
This dreadfull shape was vanisht to nought.

IX

Then all astonied with this mighty wghoast,
An hideous bodie big and strong I sawe,
With side-long beard, and locks down hang-
ing loast,
Sterne face, and front full of Saturnlike awe
Who, leaning on the belly of a pot,
Pourd forth a water, whose out gushing flood
Ran bathing all the creakie shore afloot,
Whereon the Troyan prince spilt Turnus blood

And at his feet a bitch wolfe suck did yceeld
To two young babes: His left the palme tree
stout,
His right hand did the peacefull olive wield;
And head with Lawrell garnisht was about.
Sudden both Palme and Olive fell away,
And faire greene Lawrell branch did quite
decay.

X

Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire, [throbs,
Folding her armes to Heaven with thousand
And outraging her cheekes and golden haire,
To falling rivers sound thus tun'd her sobs.
'Where is (quoth she) this whilom honoured
face?

Where the great Nereides and the auncient praise,
In which all worlds felicitie had place,
When Gods and men my honour up did raise?
Suffis'd it not that civill warres me made
The whole worlds spoile, but that this hydra
Of hundred Heracles to be assaide, [new,
With seven heads, budding monstrous crimes
So many Nereides and Caligulaes [anew,
Out of these crooked shores must dayly
rayse?

XI

Upon an hill a bright flame I did see
Waving aloft with triple point to skie,
Which, like incense of precious Cedar tree,
With balmie odours fill'd th' ayre farre and nie.
A Bird all white, well feathered on each wing,
Hereout up to the throne of Gods did flie,
And all the way most pleasant notes did sing,
Whilst in the smoake she unto heaven did stie.
Of this faire fire the scattered rayes forth threw
On everie side a thousand shining beames:
When sudden dropping of a silver dew
(O grievous chance!) gan quench those precious
flames;

That it, which canst so plea-sant sent did yeld,
Of nothing now but noyous sulphure smeld.

XII

I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle,
As cleare as Christall gainst the Sunnie beames,
The bottome yellow, like the golden grayle
That bright Pactolus washeth with his streames;
It seem'd that Art and Nature had assembled
All pleasure there, for which man's hart could
long;

And there a noyse alluring sleepe soft trembled,
Of manie accords more sweete than Mermaids
song:

The seates and benches shone as yvorie,
And hundred Nymphes sate side by side about;

When from high hills, with hideous outcrie,
A troupe of Satyres in the place did rout,
Which with their villaine feete the streame
did ray [Nymphes away.
Threw down the seats, and drove the

XIII

Much richer then that vessel seem'd to bee,
Which did to that sad Florentine appeare,
Casting mine eyes farre off, I chaunst to see
Upon the Latine Coast herselfe to reare:
But suddenly arose a tempest great,
Bearing close envie to these riches rare,
Which gan assaile this ship with dreadfull
threat,

This ship to which none other might compare:
And finally the storme impetuous
Sunke up these riches, second unto none,
Within the gulfes of greedie Nereus.
I saw both ship and mariners each one,
And all that treasure, drowned in the maine:
But I the ship saw after rais'd againe.

XIV

Long having deeply gron'd these Visions sad,
I saw a Citie like unto that same,
Which saw the messenger of tidings glad;
But that on sand was built the goodly frame:
It seem'd her top the firmament did rayse,
And, no lesse rich than faire, right worthie sure
(If ought here worthie) of immortall dayes,
Or if aught under heaven might firme endure.
Much wondred I to see so faire a wall:
When from the Northerne coast a storme arose,
Which, breathing furie from his inward gall
On all which did against his course oppose,
Into a clowde of dust sperst in the aire
The weale foundations of this citie faire.

XV

At length, even at the time, when Morpheus
Most trulie doth unto our eyes appeare,
Wearie to see the heavens still wavering thus,
I saw Typhceus sister comming neare,
Whose heat, full bravely with a morion hidd,
Did seeme to match the Gods in Majestie.
She, by a rivers bancke that swift downe slid,
Over all the world did raise a Trophee hie,
An hundred vanquish'd Kings under her lay,
With armes bound at their backs in shamefull
wize.

Whilst I thus mazed was with great affray,
I saw the heavens in warre against her rize:
Then downe she stricken fell with clap of
thunder, [wonder.
That with great noyse I wakte in sudden

THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH,

FORMERLY TRANSLATED. •

I •

BEING one day at my window all alone,
 So manie strange things happened me to see,
 As much it grieveth me to thinke thereon.
 At my right hand a Hynde appear'd to mee,
 So faire as mote the greatest god delite;
 Two eager dogs did her pursue in chace,
 Of which the one was blacke, the other white:
 With deadly force so in their cruell race
 They pincht the haunches of that gentle beast,
 That at the last, and in short time, I spide,
 Under a Rocke, where she, alas, oppress,
 Fell to the ground, and there untimely dide.
 Cruell death vanquishing so noble beautie,
 Oft makes me wayle so hard a destenie.

II •

After, at sea a tall ship did appeare,
 Made all of Heben and white Yvorie;
 The sailes of golde, of silke the tackle were:
 Milde was the winde, calmes seem'd the sea to bee,
 The skie eachwhere did show full bright and
 faire:
 With rich treasures this gay ship freighted was:
 But sudden storme did so turmoyle the aire,
 And tumbled up the sea, that she (alas)
 Strake on a rock, that under water lay,
 And perished past all recoverie.
 O, how great ruth, and sorrowfull assay,
 Doth vex my spirite with perplexitie,
 Thus in a moment to see lost and drown'd,
 So great riches as like cannot be found!

III •

The heavenly branches did I see arise
 Out of the fresh and lustie Lawrell tree,
 Amidst the yong greene wood; of Paradise
 Some noble plant I thought myselfe to see:
 Such store of birds therein yshrowded were,
 Chaunting in shade their sundrie melodie,
 That with their sweetnes I was ravish't nere.
 While on this Laurell fixed was mine eie,
 The skie gan everie where to overcast,
 And darkned was the welkin all about,
 When sudden flash of heavens fire out brast,
 And rent this royall tree quite by the roote;
 Which makes me much and ever to com-
 plaine;
 For no such shadow shalbe had againe,

IV •

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise
 A spring of water, mikkly rumbling downe,
 Wherto approached not in anie wise
 The homely shepheard, nor the ruder clowne;
 But manie Muses, and the Nymphes withall,
 That sweetly in accord did tune their voyce
 To the soft bounding of the waters fall:
 That my glad hart thereat did much rejoyce.
 But, while herein I tooke my chiefe delight,
 I saw (alas) the gaping earth devoure
 The spring, the place, and all cleane out of
 sight;
 Which yet agreeves my hart even to this
 And wounds my soule with rufull memorie,
 To see such pleasures gon so suddenly.

V •

I saw a Phoenix in the wood alone,
 With purple wings, and crest of golden hewe;
 Strange bird he was, whereby I thought anone,
 That of some heavenly wight I had the vowe;
 Untill he came unto the broken tree,
 And to the spring, that late devoured was.
 What say I more? each thing at last we see
 Doth passe away: the Phoenix there alas,
 Spying the tree destroid, the water dride,
 Himselfe smote with his beake, as in disdaine,
 And so forthwith in great despight he dide,
 That yet my heart burnes in exceeding paine,
 For ruth and pitie of so haples plight:
 O let mine eyes no more see such a sight!

VI •

At last so faire a Ladie did I spie,
 That thinking yet on her I burne and quake;
 On hearbs and flowres she walked pensively,
 Milde, but yet Love she proudly did forsake:
 White seem'd her robes, yet woven so they
 were,
 As snowe and golde together had been wrought:
 Above the wast a darke clowde shrouded her,
 A stinging serpent by the heele her taught;
 Wherewith she languisht as the gathered
 floure;
 And, well assur'd, she mounted up to joy.
 Alas, on earth so nothing doth endure,
 But bitter grieve and sorrowfull annoy:
 Which make this life wretched and miserable,
 Tossed with stormes of fortune variable!

VII

When I behold this tickle trustles state
Of vaine worlds glorie, flitting too and fro,
And mortall men tossed by troublous fate
In restles seas of wretchednes and woe;
I wish I might this wearie life forgoe,
And shortly turne unto my happie rest,
Where my free spirite might not anie moe
Be vext with sights, that doo her peace molest.

And ye, faire Ladie, in whose bounteous brest
All heavenly grace and vertue shrined is,
When ye, these rythmes doo read, and vew
the rest, [blis:
Loath this base world, and thinke of heavens
And though ye be the fairest of Gods
creatures,
Yet thinke, that death shall spoyle your
● goodly features.

DAPHNAÏDA:

AN ELEGIE

UPON THE DEATH OF THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS

DOUGLAS HOWARD,

DAUGHTER AND HEIRE OF HENRY LORD HOWARD, VISCOUNT BYNDON,
AND WIFE OF ARTHURE GORGES, ESQUIRE.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LADY

HELENA, MARQUESSE OF NORTHAMPTON.

By ED. SP.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADY
HELENA, MARQUESSE OF NORTH-HAMPTON.

I HAVE the rather presumed humbly to offer
unto your Honour the dedication of this little
Poëme, for that the noble and vertuous Gentle-
woman of whom it is written, was by match
neere alied, and in affection greatly devoted,
unto your Ladiship. The occasion why I wrote
the same, was as well the great good fame
which I heard of her decessed, as the par-
ticular goodwill which I bear unto her husband
Master Arthur Gorges, a lover of learning
and vertue, whose house, as your Ladiship by
marriage hath honoured, so doe I find the
name of them, by many notable records, to
be of great antiquitie in this Realme, and such
as have ever borne themselves with honour-
able reputation to the world, and unspotted
loyaltie to their Prince and Countrey: besides,

so lineally are they descended from the
Howards, as that the Lady Anne Howard,
eldest daughter to John Duke of Norfolkke,
was wife to Sir Edmund, mother to Sir
Edward, and grandmother to Sir William
and Sir Thomas Gorges, knightes: and there-
fore I doe assure my selfe that no due honour
done to the White Lyon, but will be most
gratefull to your Ladiship, whose husband
and children do so neerely participate with
the blood of that noble family. So in all
dutie I recomende this Pamphlet, and the
good acceptance thereof, to your honourable
favour and protection. London, this first of
Januarie, 1591.

Your Honours humbly ever.
ED. SP.

DAPHNAÏDA.

WHAT-EVER man be he whose heaueie minde,
With grieffe of moarnefull great mishap op-
prest,
Fit matter for his cares increase would finde,

Let reade the rufull plaint herein exprest,
Of one, (I weene), the wofulst man alive,
Even sad Alcyon. whose emperied brest
Sharpe sorrowe did in thousand peeces rive.

But whoso else in pleasure findeth sense,
Or in this wretched life dooth take delight,
Let him be banisht farre away from hence;
Ne let the sacred Sisters here be hight,
Though they of sorrowe heavilie can sing;
For even their heavie song would breede de-
light;

But here no tunes, save sobs and grones, shall
ring.

In stead of them, and their sweet harmonie,
Let those three fatal Sisters, whose sail hands
Doo weave the direfull threds of destinie,
And in their wrath breake off the vitall bands,
Approach hereto; and let the dreadfull Queene
Of Darkenes deepe come from the Stygian
strands,

And grisly Ghosts, to heare the dolefull teene.

In gloomie evening, when the warie Sun,
After his dayes long labour drew to rest,
And sweete steeds, now having overrun
The compast skie, gan water in the west,
I walke abroad to breath the freshing ayre
In open fields, whose flowring pride, opprest
With early frosts, had lost their beautie faire.

There came unto my minde a troublous thought,
Which dayly dooth my weaker wit possesse,
Ne lets it rest untill it forth have brought
Her long borne Infant, fruit of heaviness,
Which she conceived hath through meditation
Of this worlds vainesse and lifes wretched-
nesse,

That yet my soule it deeply doth empassion.

So as I mized on the miserie
In which men live, and I of many most
Most miserable man; I did espie
Where towards me a sory wight did cost,
Clad all in black, that mourning did bewray,
And Jaakob staffe in hand devoutlie crost,
Like to some Pilgrim come from farre away.

His carelesse locks uncombed and unshorne,
Hlong long adowne, and beard all overgrown,
That well he seemd to be sun wight forloffen;
Downe to the earth his heavie eyes were
throwne,

As loathing light; and ever as he went
He sighed soft, and nuly deepe did grone,
As if his heart in peeces would have rent.

Approaching nigh, his face I vewed nere,
And by the semblant of his countenance
Me seemd I had his person seene elsewhere,
Most like Alcyon seeming at a glance;
Alcyon he, the jollie Shepherd swaine
That wont full merrilie to pipe and daunce,
And fill with pleasaunce every wood and plaine.

Yet halfe in doubt, because of his disgrize,
I softlie sayd, Alcyon! There-with-all
He lookt aside as in disdainefull wise,
Yet stayed not, till I againe did call: [sound,
Then, turning back, he saide, with hollow
'Who is it that dooth name me, wofull thrall,
The wretchedst man that treads this day on
ground?

'One, whome like wofulnesse, impressed deepe,
Hath made fit mate thy wretched case to heare,
And given like cause with thee to waile and
weepe; [beare.
Griefe findes some ease by him that like does
Then stay, Alcyon, gentle shepheard! stay,
(Quoth I) till thou have to my trustie eare
Committed what thee doot! so ill apay.'

'Cease, foolish man!' (saide he, halfe wroth-
fully)

'To seeke to heare that which cannot be tolde,
For the huge anguish, which dooth multiplie
My dying paines, no tongue can well unfold;
Ne doo I care that any should bemoove
My hard mishap, or any weepe that would,
But seeke alone to weepe, and dye alone.'

'Then be it so,' (quoth I) 'that thou art bent
To die alone, unpitied, unplained;
Yet, ere thou die, it were convenient
To tell the cause which thee theretoo con-
strained,

Least that the world thee dead accuse of guilt,
And say, when thou of none shalt be main-
tained,

That thou for secret crime thy blood hast spilt.'

'Who life dooes loath, and longs to bee unbound
From the strong shackles of fraile flesh,'
quoth he, [ground,

'Nought cares at all what they, that live on
Deem the occasion of his death to bee;
Rather desires to be forgotten quight,
Than question made of his calamitie,
For harts deep sorrow hates both life and light.

'Yet since so much thou seemst to rue my
griefe, [nought,
And carest for one that for himselfe cares
(Signe of thy love, though nought for my reliefe,
For my reliefe exceedeth living thought;)
I will to thee this heavie case relate:
Then harken well till it to ende bee brought,
For never didst thou heare more haplesse fate.

'Whilome I use (as thou right well doest
know)
My little focke on western downes to keepe,
Not far from whence Sabrinas streame doth
flow,

And flowrie bankes with silver liquor steep;e;
Nought carde I then for worldly change or
chaunce,

For all my joy was on my gentle sheepe,
And to my pype to caroll and to daunce.

'It there befell, as I the fields did range
Fearlesse and free, a faire young Lionesse,
White as the native Rose before the chaunge
Which Venus blood did in her leaves presse,
I spied playing on the grassie playne
Her youthfull sports and kindlie wantonnesse;
That did all other Beasts in beawtie staine.

'Much was I moved at so goodly sight,
Whose like before mine eye had seldome
scene,

And gan to cast how I her compasse might,
And bring to hand that yet had never beene;
So well I wrought with mildnes and with
paine,

That I her caught disporting on the greene,
And brought away fast bound with silver
chaine.

'And afterwards I handled her so fayre,
That though by kinde shee stout and salvage
were,

For being borne an auncient Lions haire,
And of the race that all wild beastes do feare,
Yet I her fram'd, and wau so to my bent,
That shee became so meeke and milde of
cheare,

As the least lamb in all my flock that went :

'For shee in field, where-ever I did wend,
Would wend with me, and waite by me all day-
And all the night that I in watch did spend,
If cause requir'd, or els in sleepe, if nay,
Shee would all night by mee or watch or sleepe
And evermore when I did sleepe or play,
She of my flock would take full warie keepe.

'Safe then, and safest were my sillie sheepe,
Ne fear'd the Wolfe, ne fear'd the wildest beast,
All were I drown'd in carelesse quiet deepe;
My lovelie Lionesse without beheast
So carefull was for them, and for my good,
That when I waked, neither most nor least
I found miscaried or in plaine or wood.

'Ofte did the Shepheards, which my hap did
heafe,

And ofte their lasses, which my luck envide,
Daylie resort to me from farre and neare,
To see my Lionesse, whose praises wide
Were spread abroad; and when her worthinesse
Much greater than the rude report they tride,
They her did praise, and my good fortune
biesse.

'Long thus I joyed in my happinesse,
And well did hope my joy would have no end,
But oh, fond man! that in worlds ficklenesse
Reposedst hope, or weenedst her thy frend
That glories most in mortall miseries,
And dayhe doth her changefull counsels bend
To make new matter fit for Tragedies;

'For whilst I was thus without dread or dout,
A cruell Satyre with his murdrous dart,
Greedie of mischiefe, ranging all about,
Gave her the fatall wound of deadlie smart,
And reft fro me my sweete companion,
And reft fro me my love, my life, my hart:
My Lionesse (ah, woe is mee!) is gon!

'Out of the world thus was she reft awaie,
Out of the world, unworthie such a spoyle,
And borne to heaven, for heaven a fitter pray;
Much fitter than the Lyon, which with toyle
Alcides slew, and list in firmament;
Her now I seek throughout this carthlie soyle,
And seeking misse, and missing doe lament.'

Therewith he gan afresh to waile and weepe,
That I for pittie of his heaveie plight
Could not abstaine mine eyes with teares to
steepe;

But, when I saw the anguish of his spright
Some deale alaid, I him bespake againe;
'Certes, Alcyon, painfull is thy plight,
That it in me breeds almost equall paine.

'Yet doth not my dull wit well understand
The riddle of thy loved Lionesse;
For rare it seemes in reason to be skand,
That man, who doth the whole worlds rule
possesse,

Should to a beast his noble hart embase,
And be the vassall of his vassalesse; [case,
Therefore more plainie arcade this doubtfull

Then sighing sore, 'Daphne thou knewest,
quoth he,

'She now is dead;' ne more endured to say,
But fell to ground for great extremitie;
That I, beholding it, with deepe dismay
Was much appald, and, lightlie him uprearing,
Revoked life, that would have fled away,
All were my self, through griefe, in deadly
dreaung.

Then gan I him to comfort all my best,
And with milde counsaile strove to mitigate
The stormie passion of his troubled brest,
But he thereby was more empasseionate;
As stubborne steed, that is with curb re-
strained,
Becomes more fierce and fervent in his gate;
And, breaking forth at last, thus dearmelie
plained:

1
 'What man henceforth that breatheth vitall
 ayre

Will honour heaven, or heavenlie powers adore,
 Which so unjustlie doe their judgments share
 Mongst earthlie wightes, as to afflict so sore
 The innocent, as those which do transgresse,
 And do not spare the best or fayrest, more
 Than worst or fowlest, but doe both oppresse?

'If this be right, why did they then create
 The world so fayre, with fairenesse is neglected?
 Or whie be they themselves immaculate,
 If purest things be not by them respected?
 She faire, shee pure, most faire, most pure shee
 was,

Yet was by them as thing impure rejected;
 Yet shee in purenesse heaven it selfe did pas.

'In purenesse and in all celestia^l grace,
 That men admire in goodlie womankinde.
 Shee did excell, and seem'd of Angels race,
 Living on earth like Angell new divinde,
 Adorn'd with wisdom and with chastitie,
 And all the doweries of a noble mind,
 Which did her beautie much more beauntifie.

'No age hath bred (since fayre Astraea left
 The sinfull world) more vertue in a wight;
 And, when she parted hence, with her shee
 left. [quight.
 Great hope, and robd her race of bountie:
 Well may the shepheard lasses now lament;
 For dubble losse by her hath on them light,
 To loose both her and bounties ornament.

'Ne let Elisa, royall Shepheardesse,
 The praises of my parted love envy,
 For shee hath praises in all pleuteousnesse
 Pow'd upon her, like showers of Castaly,
 By her own Shepheard, Colin, her owne Shep-
 herl,
 That her with heavenly hymnes doth deifie,
 Of rustick muse full hardly to be betterd.

'Shee is the Rose, the glorie of the day,
 And mine the Primrose in the lowly shade:
 Mine, ah! not mine; amisse I mine did say:
 Not mine, but His, which mine awhile her
 made:

Mine to be His, with him to live for ay.
 O that so faire a flower so soone should fade,
 And through untimely tempest fall away!

'Shee fell away in her first ages spring,
 Whilst yet her leafe was Greene, and fresh her
 rinde, [did bring,
 And whilst her branch faire blossomes forth
 Shee fell away against all course of kinde.

For age to dye is right, but youth is wrong;
 Shee fell away like fruit blowne downe with
 winde.

Weepe, Shepheard! weepe, to make my under-
 song.

II

'What hart so stony hard but that would
 weepe,

And poure forth fountaines of incessant teares?
 What Timon but would let compassion creepe
 Into his brest, and pierce his frozen cares?
 In stead of teares, whose brackish bitter well,
 I wasted have, my heart-blood dropping
 wearers, [fell.

To thinke to ground how that faire blossome

'Yet fell shee not as one enforc'd to dye,
 Ne dyde with dread and grudging discontent,
 But as one toyl'd with travaile downe doth lye,
 So lay shee downe, as if to sleepe shee went,
 And closde her eyes with carelesse quietnesse;
 The whiles soft death away her spirit hent,
 And soule assoyld from sinfull fleshlinesse.

'Yet ere that life her lodging did forsake,
 Shee, all resolv'd, and ready to remove,
 Calling to me (ay me!) this wise bespake;
 "Aleyon! ah, my first and latest love!
 Ah! why does my Aleyon weepe and mourne,
 And grieve my ghost, that ill mote him be-
 hove,

As if to me had chanst some evill tourne!

"I, since the messenger is come for mee,
 That summons soules unto the bridale feast
 Of his great Lord, must needs depart from thee,
 And straight obey his soveraine behest;
 Why should Aleyon then so sore lament
 That I from miserie shall be releast,
 And freed from wretched long imprisonment!

"Our daies are full of dolor and disease,
 Our life afflicted with incessant paine,
 That nought on earth may lessen or appease;
 Why then should I desire here to remaine!
 Or why should he, that loves me, sorie bee
 For my deliverance, or at all complaine
 My good to heare, and toward joyes to see!

"I goe, and long desired have to goe;
 I goe with gladnesse to my wished rest,
 Whereas no worlds sad care nor wasting woe
 May cometheir happie quiet to molest;
 But Saints and Angels in celestia^l thrones
 Eternally Him praise that hath them blest;
 There shall I be amongst those blessed ones.

"Yet, ere I goe, a pledge I leave with thee
 Of the late love the which betwixt us past,
 My yong Ambrosia; in lieu of mee,
 Love her; so shall our love for ever last.

Thus, deare ! adieu, whom I expect ere long."—
So having said, away she softly past :
Weep, Shepheard ! weep, to make mine
undersong.

111

So oft as I record those piercing words,
Which yet are deepe engraven in my brest,
And those last deadly accents, which like swords
Did wound my heart, and rend my bleeding
chest,

With those sweet sugred speaches doo compare,
The which my soule first conquerd and possest,
The first beginners of my endles care :

' And when those pallid cheekes and ashy hew,
In which sad Death his pourtraicture had writ.
And when those hollow eyes and deadly view,
On which the clowde of ghastly night did sit,
I match with that sweet smile and chearfull
brow,

Which all the world subdued unto it,
How happie was I then, and wretched now !

' How happie was I when I saw her leade
The Shepheards daughters dauncing in a rownd !
How trimly would she trace and softly tread
The tender grasse, with rosie garland crown'd !
And when she list advance her heavenly voyce,
Both Nymphes and Muses nigh she made as-
tound,

And flocks and shepheards caused to rejoyce.

' But now, ye Shepheard lasses ! who shall
lead

Your wandring troupes, or sing your virelayes ?
Or who shall light your bowres, sith she is
dead

That was the Lady of your holy-dayes ?
Let now your blisse be turned into bale,
And into plaints convert your joyous playes,
And with the same fill every hill and dale.

' Let Bagpipe never more be heard to shrill,
That may allure the senses to delight,
Ne ever Shepheard sound his Oaten quill
Unto the many that provoke them might
To idle pleasure ; but let ghastlinesse
And dreary horror dim the chearfull light,
To make the image of true heavinessse :

' Let birds be silent on the naked spray,
And shady woods resound with dreadfull yells ;
Let streaming floods their hastic courses stay,
And parching droughth drie up the christall
wells ;

Let th' earth be barren, and bring forth no
flowres, [knells,

And th' ayre be filled with noyse of dolefull
And wandring spirits walke untimely howres.

' And Nature, nurse of every living thing,
Let rest her selfe from her long wearinesse,
And cease henceforth things kindly forth to
bring.

But hideous monsters full of uglinessse ;
For she it is that hath me done this wrong,
No nurse, but Stepdame, cruell, merclesse.
Weepe, Shepheard ! weepe, to make my under-
song.

IV

' My little flocke, whom earst I lov'd so well,
And wout to feede with finest grasse that grew,
Feede ye henceforth on bitter Astroffell,
And stinking Smallage, and unsaverie Rew ;
And, when your mawes are with those weeds
corrupted,

Be ye the pray of Wolves : ne will I rew
That with your carkasses wild beasts be glut-
ted.

' Ne worse to you, my sillie sheepe ! I pray,
Ne sorer vengeance wish on you to fall
Than to my selfe, for whose confusde decay
To careless heavens I doo daylie call ;
But heavens refuse to heare a wretches cry :
And cruell Death doth scorne to come at call,
Or graunt him boone that most desires to dye.

' The good and righteous he away doth take,
To plague th' unrighteous which alive remaine ;
But the ungodly ones he doth forsake,
By living long to multiplie their paine ;
Els surely death should be no punishment,
As the Great Judge at first did it ordaine,
But rather riddance from long languishment.

' Therefore, my Daphne they have tane away ;
For worthie of a better place was she :
But me unworthie willed here to stay.
That with her lacke I might tormented be.
Sith then they so have ordred, I will pay
Penance to her, according their decree,
And to her ghost doo service day by day.

' For I will walke this wandring pilgrimage,
Throughout the world from one to other end.
And in affliction wast my better age :
My bread shall be the anguish of my mind,
My drink the teares which fro mine eyes de-
raine,

My bed the ground that harlest I may finde ;
So will I wilfully increase my paine.

' And she, my love that was, my Saint that is
When she beholds from her celestiall throne
(In which shee joyeth in eternall blis)
My bitter penance, will my case bemove,
And pitie me that living thus doo die ;
For heavenly spirits have compassion
On mortall men, and rue their miserie.

'So when I have with sorowe satisfide
Th' importune fates, which vengeance on me
seeke,

And th' heavens with long languor pacifide,
She, for pure pitie of my sufferance meeke,
Will send for me; for which I daylie long;
And will till then my painful penance ceke.
Weep, Shepheard! weep, to make my under-
song.

V

'Henceforth I hate what ever Nature made,
And in her workmanship no pleasure finde,
For they be all but vaine, and quickly fade;
So soone as on them blowes the Northern winde,
They carrie not, but flit and fall away,
Leaving behind them nought but griefe of
minde,
And mocking such as thinke they long will
stay.

'I hate the heaven, because it doth withhold
Me from my love, and eke my love from me;
I hate the earth, because it is the mold
Of fleshy slime and fraile mortalitie;
I hate the fire, because to nought it flies;
I hate the Ayre, because sighes of it be;
I hate the Sea, because it teares supplies.

'I hate the day, because it lendeth light
To see all things, and not my love to see;
I hate the darknesse and the dreary night,
Because they breed sad balefulnesse in mee;
I hate all times, because, all times doo flye
So fast away, and may not stayed bee,
But as a speedie post that passeth by.

'I hate to speake, my voyce is spent with
crying; [cares;
I hate to heare, lowd plaints have duld mine
I hate to tast, for food withholds my dying;
I hate to see, mine eyes are dimd with teares;
I hate to smell, no sweet on earth is left;
I hate to feele, my flesh is numb'd with feares;
So all my senses from me are bereft.

'I hate all men, and shun all womankind;
The one, because as I they wretched are;
The other, for because I doo not finde
My love with them, that wont to be their
Starre:

And life I hate, because it will not last;
And death I hate, because it life doth marre;
And all I hate that is to come or past.

'So all the world, and all in it I hate,
Because it changeth ever too and fro,
And never standeth in one certaine state,
But still unstedfast, round about doth goe
Like a Mill-wheele in midst of miserie,
Driven with streames of wretchednesse and woe,
That dying lives, and living still does dye.

'So doo I live, so doo I daylie die.
And pine away in selfe-consuming paine!
Sith she that did my vitall powres supplie,
And feeble spirits in their force maintaine,
Is fetcht fro me, why seeke I to prolong
My wearie daies in dolor and disdain!
Weep, Shepheard! weep, to make my under-
song,

VI

'Why doo I longer live in lifes despight,
And doo not dye then in despight of death;
Why doo I longer see this loathsome light
And doo in darknesse not abridge my breath,
Sith all my sorrow should have end therby.
And cares finde quiet! Is it so unweath
To leave this life, or dolorous to dye?

'To live I finde it deadly dolorous,
For life drawes care, and care continuall woe;
Therefore to dye must needes be joyceous.
And wishfull thing this sad life to forgoe:
But I must stay; I may it not amend,
My Daphne hence departing bad me so:
She bad me stay, till she for me did send.

'Yet, whilst I in this wretched vale doo stay
My wearie feete shall ever wandering be,
That still I may be readie on my way
When as her messenger doth come for me;
Ne will I rest my feete for feeblenesse,
Ne will I rest my limmes for frailtie,
Ne will I rest mine eyes for heavinesse.

'But, as the mother of the Gods, that sought
For faire Eurydice, her daughter deere,
Throughout the world, with wofull heavie
thought;

So will I travell whilst I tarrie heere,
Ne will I lodge, ne will I ever lin,
Ne, when as drouping Titan draweth neere
To loose his teeme, will I take up my linn.

'Ne sleepe (the harbenger of wearie wights)
Shall ever lodge upon mine ey-lids more;
Ne shall with rest refresh my fainting sprights,
Nor failing force to former strength restore:
But I will wake and sorrow all the night
With Philumene, my fortune to deplore;
With Philumene, the partner of my plight.

'And ever as I see the starres to fall,
And under ground to goe to give them light
Which dwell in darknes, I to minde will call
How my fair Starre (that shinde on me so
Fell sodainly and faded under ground; [bright)
Since whose departure, day is turn'd to night,
And night without a Venus starre is found.

'But soone as day doth shew his deawie face,
And calls forth men unto their toylsome trade,

I will withdraw me to some darksome place,
Or some deepe cave, or solitarie shade;
There will I sigh, and sorrow all day long,
And the huge burden of my cares unlade.
Weep, Shepherd! weep, to make my under-song.

VII

‘Henceforth mine eyes shall never more behold

Faire thing on earth, ne feed on false delight
Of ought that framed is of mortall mould,
Sith that my fairest flower is faded quight;
For all I see is vaine and transitorie,
Ne will be helde in anie stedfast plight,
But in a moment loose their grace and glorie.

‘And ye fond men! on fortunes wheele that ride,

Or in ought under heaven repose assurance,
Be it riches, beautie, or honors pride,
Be sure that they shall have no long endurance,
But ere ye be aware will flit away; [usance
For nought of them is yours, but th’ onely
Of a small time, which none ascertainment may.

‘And ye, true Lovers! whom disastrous chance

Hath farre exiled from your Ladies grace,
To mourne in sorrow and sad sufferance,
When ye doo heare me in that desert place
Lamenting lowde my Daphnes Elegie,
Help me to wayle my miserable case,
And when life parts vouchsafe to close mine eye.

‘And ye, more happie Lovers! which enjoy
The presence of your dearest loves delight,
When ye doo heare my sorrowfull annoy,
Yet pittie me in your empassiond spright,
And thinke that such mishap, as chaunst to me,

May happen unto the most happiest wight;
For all mens states alike unstedfast be.

‘And ye, my fellow Shepherds! which do feed

Your carelesse flocks on hils and open plaines,
With better fortune than did me succeed,
Remember yet my undeserved paines;
And, when ye heare that I am dead or slaine,
Lament my lot, and tell your fellow-swaines
That sad Alecyon dyde in lifes disdaine.

‘And ye, faire Damsels! Shepherds dere
delights, [sesse,
That with your loves do their rude hearts posse,
When as my hearse shall happen to your
sightes,

Vouchsafe to deck the same with Cyparesse;
And ever sprinkle brackish teares among,
In pite of my undeserv’d distresse,
The which, I, wretch, endured have thus long.

‘And ye, poore Pilgrimes! that with restless toyle

Wearie your selves in wandring desert wayes,
Till that you come where ye your vowes
assoyle,

When passing by ye read these wofull layes,
On my grave written, rue my Daphnes wrong,
And mourne for me that languish out my
dayes. [song.]

Cease, Shepherd! cease, and end thy under-

Thus when he ended had his heaveie plaint,
The heaviciest plaint that ever I heard sound,
His cheekes waxt pale, and sprights began to
faint,

As if againe he would have fallen to ground;
Which when I saw, I (stepping to him light)
Amooved him out of his stonie swoound,
And gan him to recomfort as I might.

But he no waie recomforted would be,
Nor suffer solace to approach him nie,
But casting up a sdeinfull eie at me,
That in his traunce I would not let him lie,
Did fend his haire, and beat his blubbred face,
As one disposed wilfullie to die,
That I sore griev’d to see his wretched case.

Tho when the pang was somewhat overpast,
And the outrageous passion nigh appeased,
I him beside sith laie was overcast,
And darke night fast approached, to be pleased
To turne aside unto my Cabinet,
And staie with me, till he were better eased
Of that strong stownd which him so sore beset.

But by no meanes I could him win thereto,
Ne longer him intreate with me to staie,
But without taking leave he forth did goe
With staggering pace and dismall looks dismay,
As if that death he in the face had seene,
Or hellish hags had met upon the way;
But what of him became I cannot weene.

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME. AGAINE.

BY M^D. SPENCER.

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND NOBLE KNIGHT

SIR WALTER RALEIGH,

CAPTAIN OF HER MAJESTIES GUARD, LORD WARDEIN OF THE STANNERIES,
AND LIEUTENANT OF THE COUNTIE OF CORNWALL.

Sir,

THAT you may see that I am not alwaies ydle as yee thinke, though not greatly well occupied, nor altogether un dutifull, though not precisely officious, I make you present of this simple pastorall, unworthie of your higher conceit for the meanness of the stile, but agreeing with the truth in circumstance and matter. The which I humbly beseech you to accept in part of payment of the infinite debt in which I acknowledge my selfe

bounden unto you, for your singular favours and sundrie good turnes, shewed to me at my late being in England, and with your good countenance protect against the malice of evill mouthes, which are alwaies wide open to carpe at and misconstrue my simple meaning. I pray continually for your happinesse. From my house of Kilcolman, the 27. of December, 1591.

Yours very humbly.

ED. SR.

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

THE shepheards boy (best known by that name)

That after Tityrus first sung his lay,
Laies of sweet love, without rebuke or blame,
Sate (as his custome was) upon a day,
Charming his oaten pipe unto his peres,
The shepheard swaines that did about him play:
Who all the while, with greedie listfull eares,
Did stand astonisht at his curious skill,
Like hartlesse deare, dismayd with thunders
At last, when as he piped had his fill, [sound.
He rested him: and, sitting then around,
One of those groomes (a jolly groome was he,
As ever piped on an oaten reed,
And lov'd this shepheard dearest in degree,
Hight Hobbinol;) gan thus to him ared.

'Colin, my lief, my life, how great a losse
Had all the shepheards nation by thy lacke:
And I, poore swaine, of many, greatest crosse!
That, sith thy Muse first since thy turning
backe

Was heard to sound as she was wont on hye,
Hast made us all so blessed and so blythe.

Whilest thou wast hence, all dead in dole did lie:

[sythe,

The woods were heard to waile full many a
And all their birds with silence to complaine:
The fields with faded flowers did seem to
mourne,

And all their flocks from feeding to refraine:
The running waters wept for thy returne,
And all their fish with languor did lament:
But now both woods and fields and floods
revive,

Sith thou art come, their cause of meriment,
That us, late dead, has made againe alive:
But were it not too painfull to repeat
The passed fortunes, which to thee befell
In thy late voyage, we thee would entreat,
Now at thy leisure them to us to tell.'

To whom the shepheard gently answered
thus;

'Hobbin, thou temptest me to that I covet:
For of good passed newly to discuss,
By dubble usurie doth twice renew it,
And since I saw that Angels blessed eie,

Her worlds bright sun, her heavens fairest light,
My mind, full of my thoughts satietie,
Doth feed on sweet contentment of that sight:
Since that same day in nought I take delight,
Ne feeling have in any earthly pleasure,
But in remembrance of that glorious bright,
My lifes sole blisse, my heart's eternall threa-
sure.

Wake then, my pipe; my sleepeie Muse,
Till I have told her praises lasting long:
Hobbin desires, thou maist it not forsake;
Harke then, ye jolly shepherds, to my song.

With that they all gau throng about him
neare,

With hungrie eares to heare his harmonie:
The whilles their flocks, devoyd of daggers feare,
Did round about them feed at libertie.

One day (quoth he) I sat (as was my trade)
Under the foote of Mole, that mountaine hore,
Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade
Of the greene alders by the Mullas shore;
There a straunge shepherd chaunst to find
me out,

Whether allured with my pipes delight,
Whose pleasing sound ysyrilled far about,
(Or thither led by eunce, I know not right:
Whom when I asked from what place he came,
And how he hight, himselfe he did ycleepe;
The Shepheard of the Ocean by name,
And said he came far from the main-sea deepe,
He, sitting me beside in that same shade,
Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit;
And, when he heard the musicke which I made,
He found himselfe full greatly pleas'd at it:
Yet, annulling my pipe, he tooke in hond
My pipe, before that annuled of many,
And plaid thereon; (for well that skill he cond;)
Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any.
He pip'd, I sung; and, when he sung, I piped;
By change of turnes, each making other mery;
Neither envying other, nor envied,
So piped we, until we both were weary.

There interrupting him, a bonie swaine,
That Cuddy hight, him thus atweene bespake:
And, should it not thy readie course restraine,
I would request thee, Colin, for my sake,
To tell what thou didst sing, when he did
plaie;

For well I weene it worth recounting was,
Whether it were some hymne, or morall laie,
Or carol made to praise thy loved lasse.

Or nor of my love, nor of my lasse (quoth he),
I then did sing, as then occasion fell:
For love had me forlorne, forlorne of me,
That made me in that desert chose to dwell.
But of my river Bregogs love I soong,
Which to the shyny Mulla he did beare.
And yet doth beare, and ever will, so long

As water doth within his bancks appeare.

'Of fellowship (said then that bonie boy)
Record to us that lovely lay againe: [boy,
The staic whereof shall nought these eares
Who all that Colin makes do covet faine,

'Heare then (quoth he) the tenor of my tale.
In sort as I it to that shepheard told:
No leasing new, nor Grandams fable stale,
But uncunct truth confirm'd with credence old.

'Old father Mole, (Mole hight that moun-
tain gray

That walls the Northside of Armulla dale)
He had a daughter fresh as floure of May,
Which gave that name unto that pleasant vale:
Mulla, the daughter of old Mole, so hight
The Nymph, which of that water course has
charge,

That, springing out of Mole, doth run downe
To Buttevant, where, spreading forth at large,
It giveth name unto that ancient Cattie,
Which Kilnemullah cleped is of old; [puttie
Whose ragged runnes bred great ruth and
To travailers, which it from far behold.

Full faine she lov'd, and was belov'd full faine
Of her owne brother river, Bregog hight,
So hight because of this deceitfull traine,
Which he with Mulla wrought to win delight.
But her old sire more carefull of her good,
And meaning her much better to preferre,
Did thinke to match her with the neighbour
flood,

Which Allo hight, Broad-water called farre;
And wrought so well with his continuall paine,
That he that river for his daughter wonne:
The dowre agreed, the day assigned plaine,
The place appointed where it should be done.
Nath-lesse the Nymph her former liking held;
For love will not be drawne, but must be
ledde,

And Bregog did so well her fancie weld,
That her good will he got her first to wedde.
But for her father, sitting still on hie,
Did warily still watch which way she went,
And eke from far observ'd, with jealous eie,
Which way his course the wanton Bregog
bent;

Him to deceive, for all his watchfull ward,
The wily lover did devise this slight:
First into many parts his streame he shar'd,
That, whilst the one was watcht, the other
might

Passe unespide to meete her by the way;
And then, besides, those little streames so
broken

He under ground so closely did convey,
That of their passage doth appeare no token,
Till they into the Mullas water slide.
So secretly did he his love enjoy

Yet not so secret, but it was descride,
And told her father by a shepherds boy,
Who, wondrous wroth, for that so foule de-
spight,
In great avenge did roll downe from his hill
Huge mightie stones, the which encomber
might

His passage, and his water-courses spill.
So of a River, which he was of old,
He none was made, but scattred all to nought;
And, lost among those rocks into him rold,
Did lose his name: so deare his love he bought.

Which having said, him Thestylis bespake:
‘Now by my life this was a mery lay,
Worthie of Colin selfe, that did it make.
But read now eke, of friendship I thee pray,
What dittie did that other shepheard sing:
For I do covet most the same to heare,
As men use most to covet forrime thing.’

‘That shall I eke (quoth he) to you declare:
His song was all a lamentable lay
Of great unkindnesse, and of usage hard,
Of Cynthia the Ladie of the Sea,
Which from her presence faultlesse him debard.
And ever and anon, with singults rife,
He cryed out, to make his undersong;
Ah! my loves queene, and goddesse of my life.
Who shall me pittie, when thou doest me
wrong?’

Then gan a gentle bonylasse to speake,
That Marin hight; ‘Right well be sure did
plaine, [breake,
That could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure
And move to take him to her grace againe.
But tenn on further, Colin, as befell
Twixt him and thee, that thee did hence dis-
suade.’ [well,

‘When thus our pipes we both had wearied
(Quoth he) and each an end of singing made
He gan to cast great lyking to my lore,
And great dis-lyking to my lucklesse lot,
That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore,
Into that waste, where I was quite forgot.
The which to leave, thenceforth he counselld
mee, [full

Unmeet for man, in whom was ought regard-
And wend with him, his Cynthia to see;
Whose grace was great, and bounty most re-
wardfull.

Besides her peerlesse skill in making well,
And all the ornaments of wondrous wit,
Such as all womankynd did far-excell;
Such as the world admyrd, and praised it:
So what with hope of good, and hate of ill,
He me perswaded forth with him to fare.
Nought tooke I with me, but mine oaten quill:
Small needments else need shepheard to pre-
pare.

So to the sea we came; the sea, that is
A world of waters heaped up on hie,
Rolling like mountaines in wide wildernesse,
Horrible, hideous, roaring with hoarse crye.’

‘And is the sea (quoth Coridon) so fearful?’
‘Fearful much more (quoth he) then hart
can fear.’ [gaping dirfull

Thousand wyld beasts with deep mouthes
Therewith stil wait poore passengers to teare.
Who life doth loath, and longs death to behold,
Before he die, already dead with feare, [cold,
And yet would live with heart halfe stonie
Let him to sea, and he shall see it there.

And yet as ghastly dreadfull, as it seemes,
Bold men, presuming life for gaine to sell,
Dare tempt that gulf, and in those wandring
streames [hell.

Seek waies unknowne, waies leading down to
For, as we stood there waiting on the strond,
Behold! an huge great vessel to us came,
Dauncing upon the waters back to lond,
As if it scorned the daunger of the same;
Yet was it but a wooden frame and fraile,
Glewed together with some subtle matter.
Yet had it armes and wings, and head and
tail,

And life to move it selfe upon the water.
Strange thing! how bold and swift the mon-
ster was, [ruine,
That neither car’d for wynd, nor taile, nor
Nor swelling waves, but thorough them did
passe

So proudly, that she made them roare againe.
The same aboard us gently did receive,
And without harme us farre away did beare,
So farre that land, our mother, us did leave.
And nought but sea and heaven to us appeare.
Then hartlesse quite, and full of inward feare,
That shepheard I besought to me to tell,
Under what skie, or in what world we were,
In which I saw no living people dwell.
Who, me recomfoting all that he might,
Told me that that same was the Regiment
Of a great shepherdesse, that Cynthia hight,
His liege, his Lache, and his lifes Regent.—

‘If then (quoth I) a shepherdesse she bee,
Where be the flockes and herds, which she
doth keep?’

And where may I the hills and pastures see,
On which she useth for to feed her sheepe?’

‘These be the hills (quoth he) the surges
hie,

On which faire Cynthia her herds doth feed:
Her herds be thousand fishes with their frie,
Which in the bosome of the billowes breed.

Of them the shepheard which hath charge in
chief,
Is Triton, blowing loud his wreathed home:

At sound whereof, they all for their relief
Wend too and fro at evening and at morne.
And Proteus eke with him does drive his
heard

Of stinking Seales and Porcupises together,
With hoary head and dewy dropping beard,
Compelling them which way he list, and
whether.

And, I among the rest, of many least,
Have in the Ocean charge to me assignd;
Where I will live or die at her behest,
And serve and honour her with faithfull mind.
Besides an hundred Nymphs all heavenly borne,
And of immortall race, doo still attend
To wash faire Cynthia's sheep, when they be
shorne, [end.]

And fold them up, when they have made an
Those be the shepheards which my Cynthia
At sea, beside a thousand moe at land: [serve
For land and sea my Cynthia doth deserve
To have in her commaundement at hand.]

Thereat I wondred much, till, wondring
more

And more, at length we land far off descryde:
Which sight much gladed me; for much afore
I feard, least land we never should have syde:
Thereto our ship her course directly bent,
As if the way she perfectly had knowne.

We Lunday passe, by that same name is ment
An island, which the first to west was showne.
From thence another world of land we kend,
Floting amid the sea in jeopardie, [hemd,
And round about with mightie white rocks
Against the seas encroching crueltie. [fields

Those same, the shepheard told me, were the
In which dame Cynthia her landheards fed;
Fairst goodly fields, then which Armulla yields
None fairer, nor more fruitfull to be red:

The first, to which we nigh approached, was
An high headland thrust far into the sea,
Like to an horne, whereof the name it has,
Yet seemed to be a goodly pleasant lea:
There did a lofty mount at first us greet,
Which did a stately heape of stones upreare,
That seemed amid the surges for to fleet,
Much greater then that frame, which us did
beare;

There did our ship her fruitfull wombe unlade,
And put us all ashore on Cynthia's land.

'What land is that thou meant, (then Cuddy
sayd)

And is there other then whereon we stand?'

'Ah! Cuddy (then quoth Colin) thou a
son, [worke:

That hast not wene least part of natures
Much more there is unkend then thou doest
kon, [lurke.

And much more that does from mens knowledge

For that same land much larger is then this,
And other men and beasts and birds doth feed:
There fruitfull corne, faire trees, fresh herbage
is,

And all things else that living creatures need.
Besides most goodly rivers there appeare,
No whit inferiour to thy Fanchins praise,
Or unto Allo, or to Mulla cleare:
Nought hast thou, foolish boy, seene in thy
daies. [here,

'But if that land be there (quoth he) as
And is theyr heaven likewise there all one?
And, if like heaven, be heavenly graces there,
Like as in this same world where we do wone?'

'Both heaven and heavenly graces do much
more

(Quoth he) abound in that same land then this:
For there all happie peace and plenteous store
Conspire in o're to make contented blisse.

No wayling there nor wretchednesse is heard,
No bloodie issues nor no Leprosies,

No griesly famine, nor no faging sweard,
No nightly bordrags, nor no lue and cries;

The shepheards there abroad may safely lie,
On hills and downes, withouten dread or daun-
ger: [tray

No ravenous wolves the good mans hope des-
Nor outlawes sell affray the forest raunger.

There learned arts do flourish in great honor,
And Poets wits are had in peerlesse price:

Religion hath lay powre to rest upon her,
Advancing vertue and suppressing vice.

For eut, all good, all grace there freely growes,
Had people grace it gratefully to use:

For God his gifts there plenteously bestowes,
But gracelesse men them greatly do abuse.'

'But say on further (then said Corylas)
The rest of thine adventures, that betyded.'

'Foord on our voyage we by land did
passe,

(Quoth he) as that same shepheard still us
guyded,

Untill that we to Cynthiaes presence came:
Whose glorie greater then my simple thought,

I found much greater then the former fame,
Such greatnes I cannot compare to ought:

But if I her like ought on earth might read,
I would hee lyken to a crowne of lillies,

Upon a virgin brydes adorned head,
With Roses dight and Goulds and Daffadillies;

Or like the circlet of a Turtle true,
In which all colours of the rainbow bee;

Or like faire Phebes garland shining new,
In which all pure perfection one may see.

But vaine it is to thinke, by paragone
Of earthly things, to judge of things divine:

Her power, her mercy, her wisdom, none
Can deeme, but who the Godhead can define.

Why then do I, base shepheard, bold and blind,

Presume the things so sacred to prophane?
More fit it is t' adore, with humble mind,
The image of the heavens in shape humane.'

With that Alexis broke his tale asunder,
Saying; 'By wondring at thy Cynthias
praise,

Colin, thy selfe thou mak'st us more to wonder,
And her upraising doest thy selfe upraise.

But let us heare what grace she shewed thee,
And how that shepheard strange thy cause
advanced.'

'The Shepheard of the Ocean (quoth he)
Unto that Goddess grace me first enhanced,
And to mine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare,
That she thenceforth therein gan take de-
light;

And it desir'd at timely houres to heare,
All were my notes but rude and roughly
dight;

For not by measure of her owne great mynd,
And wondrous worth, she mott my simple
song,

But joyd that country shepheard ought could
Worth harkening to, amongst the learned
throng.'

'Why? (said Alexis then) what needeth
That is so great a shepheardesse her selfe,
And hath so many shepheards in her fee,
To heare thee sing, a simple silly Elfe?
Or be the shepheards which do serve her
laesie,

That they list not their mery pipes applie?
Or be their pipes untunable and craesie,
That they cannot her honour worthilie?"

'Ah! nay (said Colin) neither so, nor so:

For better shepheards be not under skie,
Nor better hable, when they list to blow
Their pipes aloud, her name to glorifie.

There is good Harpalus, now woxen aged
In faithfull service of faire Cynthia:

And there is Corydon though meanly waged,
Yet habtest wit of most I know this day.

And there is sad Alcyon bent to mourne,
Though fit to frame an everlastig dittie,

Whose gentle spright for Daphnes death
doth turn

Sweet layes of love to endlesse plaints of
pittie.

Ah! pensive boy, pursue that brave conceipt
In thy sweete Egplantine of Meriflure;
Lift up thy notes unto their wonted height,
That may thy Muse and mates to mirth allure.
There eke is Palin worthie of great praise,
Albe he envie at my rustick quill:

And there is pleasing Alcon, could he raise
His tunes from laies to matter of more skill.

And there is old Palemon free from spight
Whose carefull pipe may make the hearer
rew:

Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right,
That sung so long untill quite hoarse he grew.

And there is Alabaster throughly taught
In all this skill, though knowne yet to few;
Yet, were he knowne to Cynthia as he ought,
His Eliseis would be redde anew.

Who lives that can match that heroick song,
Which he hath of that mightie Princess
made?

O dreaded Dread, do not thy selfe that wrong,
To let thy fame lie so in hidden shade:

But call it forth, O call him forth to thee,

To end thy glorie which he hath begun:

That, when he finish hath as it should be,

No braver Poeme can be under Sun.

Nor Po nor Tyburs swans so much renowned,
Nor all the brood of Greece so highly praised,

Can match that Muse when it with bayes is
crowned.

And to the pitch of her perfection raised.

And there is a new shepheard late up sprung,

The which doth all afore him far surpass;

Appearing well in that well tuned song,

Which late he sung unto a scornfull lass.

Yet doth his trembling Muse but lowly flie,

As daring not too rashly mount on light,

And doth her tender plumes as yet but trie

In loves soft laies, and looser thoughts delight.

Then rouze thy feathers quickly, Daniell,

And to what course thou please thy selfe ad-
vance:

But most, me seemes, thy accent will excell

In Tragick plaunts and passionate mischance.

And there that Shepheard of the Ocean is,

That spends his wit in loves consuming
smart:

Full sweetly tempred is that Muse of his,

That can empierce a Princes mightie hart.

There also is (ah no, he is not now!)

But since I said he is, he quite is gone,

Amyntas quite is gone, and lies full low,

Having his Amaryllis left to mone.

Helpe, O ye shepheards, helpe ye all in this,

Helpe Amaryllis this her losse to mourne:

Her losse is yours, your losse Amyntas is,

Amyntas, floure of shepheards pride forlorne:

He whilst he lived was the noblest swaine,

That ever piped in an oaten quill!

Both did he other, which could pipe, main-
taine, [skill.

And eke could pipe himselfe with passing

And there, though last not least, is Action,

A gentler shepheard may no where be found:

Whose Muse, full of high thoughts invention,

Doth like himselfe Heroically sound.

All these, and many others mo remaine,
Now, after Astrofell is dead and gone :
But, while as Astrofell did live and raine,
Amongst all these was none his paragone.
All these do flourish in their sundry kynd,
And do their Cynthia immortall make :
Yet found I lyking in her royall mynd,
Not for my skill, but for that shepherds sake.

Then spake a lovely lasse, hight Lucida :
'Shepherd, enough of shepherds thou hast
Which favour thee, and honour Cynthia : [told,
But of so many Nymphs, which she doth hold
In her retinew, thou hast nothing sayd ;
That seems, with none of them thou favor
foundest,

Or art ingratefull to each gentle mayd,
That none of all their due deserts resoundest.'

'Ah far be it (quoth Colin Clout) fro me,
That I of gentle Mayds should ill deserve !
For that my selfe I do professe to be
Vassall to one, whom all my dayes I serve ;
The beame of beautie sparkled from above,
The floure of vertue and pure chastitie,
The blossome of sweet joy and perfect love,
The pearle of peerlesse grace and modestie :
To her my thoughts I daily dedicate,
To her my heart I nightly martyrize :
To her my love I lowly do prostrate,
To her my life I wholly sacrifice :
My thought, my heart, my love, my life is shee,
And I hers ever onely, ever one :
One ever I all vowed hers to be,
One ever I, and others never none.'

[Mayd,
Then thus Melissa said ; 'Thrise happie
Whom thou doest so enforce to deitie : I made
That woods, and hills, and valleys thou hast
Her name to echo unto heaven hie.

But say, who else vouchsafed thee of grace ?'
'They all (quoth he) me graced goodly well,
That all I praise ; but in the highest place,
Urania, sister unto Astrofell,
In whose brave mynd, as in a golden cofer,
All heavenly gifts and riches locked are ;
More rich then pearles of Ynde, or gold of Opher,
And in her sex more wonderfull and rare.
Ne lesse praise-worthie I Theana read, [dight
Whose goodly beames though they be over-
With mourning stole of carefull wydowhead,
Yet through that daisome vale do glister
bright :

She is the well of bountie and brave mynd,
Excelling most in glorie and great light :
She is the ornament of womankind,
And courts chief garland with all vertues dight,
Therefore great Cynthia her in chiefest grace
Doth hold, and neyt unto her selfe advance,
Well worthie of so honourable place,
For her great worth and noble governance ;

Ne lesse praise-worthie is her sister deare,
Faire Marian, the Muses onely darling :
Whose beautie shyneth as the morning cleare,
With silver dew upon the roses pearling.
Ne lesse praise-worthie is Mansilia, [traine:
Best knowne by bearing up great Cynthiaes
That same is she to whom Daphnida
Upon her neeces death I did complaine :
She is the paterne of true womanhead,
And onely mirrhor of feminitie :
Worthie next after Cynthia to tread,
As she is next her in nobilitie.

Ne lesse praise-worthie Galathea seemes,
Then best of all that honourable crew,
Faire Galathea with bright shining beames,
Inflaming feeble eyes that her do view.
She there then waited upon Cynthia,
Yet there is not her won ; but here with us
About the borders of our rich Cosma,
Now made of Maa, the Nymph delitious.
Ne lesse praise-worthie faire Neera is,
Neera ours, not theirs, though there she be ;
For of the famous Shure, the Nymph she is,
For high desert, advaunst to that degree.
She is the blossome of grace and curtesie,
Adorned with all honourable parts :
She is the braynch of true nobilitie,
Belov'd of high and low with faithfull harts.
Ne lesse praise-worthie Stella do I read,
Though nought my praises of her needed arre,
Whom verse of noblest shepherd lately dead
Hath prais'd and rais'd above each other starre.
Ne lesse praiseworthy are the sisters three,
The honor of the noble familie :

Of which I meenest boast my selfe to be,
And most that unto them I am so nie ;
Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis.
Phyllis, the faire, is eldest of the three :
The next to her is beautilfull Charillis :
But th' youngest is the highest in degree.
Phyllis, the floure of rare perfection,
Faire spreading forth her leaves with fresh
delight,

That, with their beauties amorous reflexion.
Beware of seuce each rash beholders sight.
But sweet Charillis is the Paragone
Of peerlesse price, and ornament of praise,
Admyr'd of all, yet envied of none,
Through the myld temperance of her goodly
ruies.

Thrise happie do I hold thee, noble swaine,
The which art of so rich a spoile possest,
And, it embracing deare without disdain,
Hast sole possession in so chaste a brest ! [hee,
Of all the shepherds daughters which there
And yet there be the fairest under skie,
Or that elsewhere I ever yet did see,
A fairer Nymph yet never saw mine cie :

She is the pride and primrose of the rest,
 Made by the Maker selfe to be admir'd;
 And like a goodly beacon high adrest,
 That is with sparks of hevenlie beautie fire.
 But Amaryllis, whether fortunate
 Or else unfortunate may I aread,
 That freck is from Cupids yoke by fate,
 Since which she doth new bands adventure
 dread;—

Shepherd, what ever thou hast heard to be
 In this or that pray'd diversly apart,
 In her thou maist them all assembled see,
 And seald up in the treasure of her hart.
 Ne thee lesse worthie, gentle Flavia,
 For thy chaste life and vertue I esteeme:
 Ne thee lesse worthie, courteous Candida,
 For thy true love and loyaltie I deeme.
 Besides yet many mo that Cynthia serve,
 Right noble Nymphs, and high to be com-
 mended:

But, if I all should praise as they deserve,
 This sun would faile me ere I halfe had ended:
 Therefore, in closure of a thankfull mynd,
 I deeme it best to hold eternally [shrynd,
 Their bounteous deeds and noble favours
 Then by discourse them to indigne.

So having said, Aglaura him bespake:
 • Colin, well worthie were those goodly favours
 Bestowd on thee, that so of them doest make,
 And then requitest with thy thankfull labours.
 But of great Cynthiaes goodnesse, and high
 grace,

Finish the storie which thou hast begunne.

• More eath (quoth he) it is in such a case
 How to begin, then know how to have done.
 For everie gift, and everie goodly need,
 Which she on me bestowd, demands a day;
 And everie day, in which she did a deed,
 Demands a yeaere it dely to display. [mg,

Her words were like a strame of honny fleet-
 The which doth softly trickle from the hive,
 Hable to melt the hearers heart unweeing,
 And eke to make the dead againe alive.
 Her deeds were like great clusters of ripe
 grapes,

Which load the branches of the fruitfull vine;
 Offring to fall into each mouth that gapes,
 And fill the same with store of timely wine.
 Her lookes were like beames of the morning

Sun,
 Forth looking through the windowes of the
 When first the floecie cattell have begun
 Upon the perled grasse to make their feast.
 Her thoughts are like the fume of Franckincence,
 Which from a golden Censer forth doth rise,
 And throwing forth sweet odours mounts fro
 thence

In rolling globes up to the vaulted skies.

There she beholds, with high aspiring thought,
 The cradle of her owne creation,
 Emongst the seats of Angels heavenly wrought
 Much like an Angell in all forme and fashion.
 • Colin, (said Cuddy then) thou hast forgot
 Thy selfe, me seemes, too much, to mount so
 hie:

Such loftie flight base shepheard seemeth not.
 From flocks and fields, to angels and to skie.

• True (answered he) but her great excellence
 Lifts me above the measure of my might:
 That, being filld with furious insolence,
 I feele my selfe like one yrap in spright.
 For when I thinke of her, as oft I ought,
 Then want I words to spake it fitly forth:
 And, when I speake of her what I have
 thought,

I cannot thinke according to her worth:
 Yet will I thinke of her, yet will I speake,
 So long as life my limbs doth hold together;
 And, when as death these vitall bands shall
 breake,

Her name recorded I will leave for ever.
 Her name in every tree I will endosse, [grow:
 That, as the trees do grow, her name may
 And in the ground each where will it engrosse,
 And fill with stones, that all men may it know.
 The speaking woods, and murmuring waters
 shall,

Her name Ile teach in knowen terms to frame:
 And eke my lambs, when for their dams they
 Ile teach to call for Cynthia by name. [call,
 And, long while after I am dead and rotten,
 Amongst the shepheards daughters dancing
 rownd,

My layes made of her shall not be forgotten,
 But sung by them with flowry gyrlonds crownd.
 And ye, who so ye be, that still survive,
 When as ye heare her memory renewed,
 Be witnessse of her bountie here alive, [shewed.
 Which she to Colin her poore shepheard

Much was the whole assembly of those heards
 Moov'd at his speech, so feelingly he spake:
 And stood awhile astonisht at his words,

Till Thestylis at last their silence brake,
 Saying: • Why Colin, since thou foundst such
 With Cynthia and all her noble crew; [grace
 Why didst thou ever leave that happie place,
 In which such wealth might unto thee accrew;
 And back returnedst to this barren soyle,
 Where cold and care and penury do dwell,
 Here to keep sheepe, with hunger and with
 toyle?

Most wretched he, that is and cannot tell.

• Happie indeed (said Colin) I him hold,
 That may that blessed presence still enjoy,
 Of fortune and of envy uncomptrold,
 Which still are wont most happie states t'annoy:

But I, by that which little while I proved,
Some part of those enormities did see,
The which in Court continually hooved,
And followd those which happie seemd to bee.
Therefore I, silly man, whose former dayes
Had in rude fields bene altogether spent,
Durst not adventure such unknown wayes,
Nor trust the guile of fortunes blandishment;
But rather chose back to my sheep to tourne,
Whose utmost hardnesse I before had tryde,
Then, having leard repentance late, to mourne
Emongst those wretches which I there de-
screde.' [spight]

'Shepherd, (said Thisydis) it seemes of
Thou speakest thus against their felicity,
Which thou enviest, rather then of right
That ought in them blameworthy thou doest
spie.' [will]

'Cause have I none (quoth he) of cancred
To quite them ill, that me demaund so well:
But selfe-regard of private good or ill
Moves me of each, for as I found, to tell [wit,
And eke to warne yong shepherds wandring
Which, through report of that lives painted
Abandon quiet home to seeke for it, [blisse,
And leave their lambs to losse, misled an.isse.
For, sooth to say, it is no sort of life,
For shepherd fit to lead in that same place,
Where each one seeks with malice, and with
strife,

To thrust downe other into foule disgrace,
Himselfe to raise: and he doth soonest rise
That best can handle his deceitfull wit
In subtil shifts, and finest sleights devise,
Either by slaundring his well-deemed name,
Through leasings lewd, and fained forgerie;
Or else by breeding him some blot of blame,
By creeping close into his secrecie;
To which him needs a guilefull hollow hart,
Masked with faire dissembling curtesie,
A fild toung, fursight with tearmes of art,
No art of schoole, but Courtiers schoolery.
For arts of schoole have there small counten-
ance,

Counted but toys to busie ydle braines;
And there professors find small maintenance,
But to be instruments of others gaines.
Ne is there place for any gentle wit,
Unless to please it selfe it can applie;
But shouldred is, or out of doore quite shit,
As base, or blunt, unmeet for melodie.
For each mans worth is measured by his weed,
As harts by hornes, or asses by their eares:
Yet asses beeu not all whose eares exceed,
Nor yet all harts that hornes the highest beares;
For highest looke: have not the highest mynd,
Nor haughtie words most full of highest
thoughts.

But are like bladders blown up with wynd,
That being prickt do vanish into noughts.
Even such is all their vaunted vanitie, [away
Nought else but smoke, and fumeth soon
Such is their glorie that in simple eie [gay.
Seeme greatest, when their garments are most
So they themselves for praise of fooles do sell,
And all their wealth for painting on a wall;
With price whereof they buy a golden bell,
And purchase highest rowmes in bowre and
Whiles single Truth and simple Honestie [hall:
Do wander up and downe despyd of all;
Their plaine attyre such glorious gallantry
Disdaines so much, that none them in doth
call.'

'Ah! Colin, (then said Hobbinol) the blame
Which thou imputest, is too general,
As if not any gentle wit of name
Nor honest mynd might there be found at all.
For well I wot, sith I my selfe was there,
To wait on Lobbin, (Lobbin well thou knewest),
Full many worthe ones then waiting were,
As ever else in Princes Court thou vewest.
Of which among you many yet remaine,
Whose names I cannot readily now ghesse:
Those that poore Sutors papers do retaine,
And those that skill of medicine profess,
And those that do to Cynthia expound
The ladden of straunge languages in charge:
For Cynthia doth in sciences abound,
And gives to their professors stipends large.
Therefore unjustly thou doest wyte them all,
For that which thou mislikedst in a few.'

'Blame is (quoth he) more blamelesse
generall,
Then that which private errors doth pursew;
For well I wot, that there amongst them bee
Full many persons of right worthe parts,
Both for report of spotlesse honestie,
And for profession of all learned arts,
Whose praise hereby no whit impaired is,
Though blame do light on those that faultie
bee;

For all the rest do most-what fare amis,
And yet their owne misfaring will not see:
For either they be puffed up with pride,
Or fraught with envie that their galls do swell,
Or they their dayes to ydlenesse divide,
Or drowned lie in pleasures wastefull well,
In which like Moldwarps nousing still they
lurke,
Unmindfull of chiefe parts of manlinesse;
And do themselves, for want of other worke,
Vaine votaries of laesie Love professe,
Whose service high so basely they enaew,
That Cupid selfe of them ashamed is,
And, musing all his men in Venus vew,
Denies them quite for servitors of his.'

'And is Love then (said Corylas) once knowne

In Court, and his sweet lore professed there?
I weened sure he was our God alone,
And only woond in fields and forests here.'

'Not so, (quoth he) Love most aboundeth there,

For all the walls and windows there are writ,
All full of love, and love, and love my deare,
And all their talke and studie is of it.

Ne any there doth brave or valiant seeme,
Unlesse that some gay Mistresse badge he beares:

Ne any one himselfe doth ought esteeme,
Unlesse he swim in love up to the eares.
But they of love, and of his sacred lere,
(As it should be) all otherwise devise,

'Then we poore shepherds are accustomed here,

And him do sue and serve all otherwise:

For with lewd speeches, and licentious deeds,
His mightie mysteries they do prophane,
And use his ylle name to other needs.

But as a complement for courtting vaine.

So him they do not serve as they professe,
But make him serve to them for sordid uses:

Ah! my dread Lord, that doest liege hearts possesse,

Avenge thy selfe on them for their abuses.

But we poore shepherds whether rightly so,

Or through our rudenesse into errour led,

Do make religion how we rashly go

To serve that God, that is so greatly dred;

For him the greatest of the Gods we leeme,

Borne without Syre or couples of one kynd;

For Venus selfe doth soly couples seeme,

Both male and fennale through commixture joynd:

So pure and spotlesse Cupid forth she brought,

And in the gardens of Adonis nurst:

Where growing he his owne perfection wrought,

And shortly was of all the Gods the first.

Then got he bow and shafts of gold and lead,

In which so fell and puissant he grew,

That Jove himselfe his powre began to dread,

And, taking up to heaven, him godded new.

From thence he shootes his arrowes every where

Into the world, at randon as he will,

On us fraile men, his wretched vassals here,

Like as himselfe us pleaseth save or spill.

So we him worship, so we him adore

With humble hearts to heaven uplifted hie,

That to true loves he may us evermore

Preferre, and of their grace us dignifie:

Ne is there shepherd, ne yet shepherds swaine,

What ever feeds in forest or in field,
That dare with evil deed or leasing vaine
BlaspHEME his powre, or termes unworthie yield.'

'Shepherd, it seemes that some celestiall Of Love (quoth Cuddy) is breath'd into thy brest,

That powreth forth these oracles so sage
Of that high powre, wherewith thou art possesst.

But never wist I till this present day,

Albe of love I alwayes humbly deemed,

That he was such an one as thou doest say,

And so religiously to be esteemed.

Well may it seeme, by this thy deep insight,

That of that God the Priest thou shoulddest be,

So well thou wot'st the mysterie of his might,
As if his godhead thou didst present see.'

'Of loves perfection perfectly to speake,

Or of his nature rightly to define,

Indeed (said Colin) passeth reasons reach,

And needs his priest to expresse his powre divine.

For long before the world he was ybore,

And bred above in Venus bosome deare:

For by his powre the world was made of yore,

And all that therein wondrous doth appeare,

For how should else things so far from attone,

And so great enemies as of them bee,

Be ever drawne together into one

And taught in such accordance to agree.'

Through him the cold began to covet heat,

And water fire; the light to mount on hie,

And th' heavie downe to peize; the hungry

And voydnesse to seeke full satietie. [t' eat,

So, being former foes, they waxed friends,

And gan by litle learne to love each other:

So, being knit, they brought forth other kynds,

Out of the fruitfull wombe of their great mother.

Then first gan heaven out of darknesse tread

For to appeare, and brought forth chearfull day:

Next gan the earth to shew her naked head,

Out of deep waters which her drown'd away:

And, shortly after, everie living wight

Crept forth like wormes out of her slimie nature,

Soone as on them the Suns life-giving-light

Had powred kindly heat and formall feature,

Thenceforth they gan each one his like to love,

And like himselfe desire for to beget:

The Lyon chose his mate, the Turtle Dove

Her deare, the Dolphin his owne Dolphinet;

But man, that had the sparke of reasons might

More then the rest to rule his passion,

Chose for his love the fairest in his sight.

Like as himselfe was fairest by creation:

For beautie is the hayt which with delight
Doth man allure for to enlarge his kynd;
Beautie, the burning lamp of heavens light,
Darting her beames into each feeble mynd:
Against whose powre, nor God nor man can
fynd

Defence, ne ward the daunger of the wound;
But, being hurt, seeke to be mended
Of her that first did stir that mortall stownd.

Then do they cry and call to love apace,
With praiers lowd importuning the skie, •
Whence he them heares; and, when he list
shew grace, [die.]

Does graunt them grace that otherwise would
So love is Lord of all the world by right,
And rules the creatures by his powerfull saw:
All being made the vassalls of his might,
Through secret sence which thereto doth them
draw.

Thus ought all lovers of their lord to deeme,
And with chaste heart to honor him alway.
But who so else doth otherwise esteeme,
Are outlawes, and his lore do disobay.
For their desire is base, and doth not me. it
The name of love, but of disloyall lust:
Ne mongst true lovers they shall place inherit,
But as Exuls out of his court be thrust.

So having said, Melissa spake at will;
• 'Colin, thou now full deeply hast divynd
Of Love and beautie; and, with wondrous skill,
Hast Cupid selfe depainted in his kynd,
To thee are all true lovers greatly bound.
That doest their cause so mightily defend:
But most, all women are thy debtors found,
That doest their bountie still so much commend.

• 'That ill (said Hobbinol) they him requite,
For having loved ever one most deare:
He is repayd with scorne and foule despite,
That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth
heare.'

• 'Indeed (said Lucid) I have often heard
Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed
For being to that swaine too cruell hard,
That her bright glorie she hath much defamed.
But who can tell what cause had that faire
To use him so that used her so well; [Mayd
Or who with blame can justify her upbrayd

For loving not? for who can love compell?
And, sooth to say, it is foolhardie thing,
Rashly to wyten creatures so divine;
For demigods they be and first did spring
From heaven, though graft in frailnesse femi-
nine.

And well I wote, that oft I heard it spoken,
How one, that fairest Helene did revile,
Through judgement of the gods to been
ywroken,

Lost both his eyes and so remaynd long while,
Till he recanted had his wicked rimes,
And made amends to her with treble praise.
Beware therefore, ye groomes, I read betimes,
How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise.'

• 'Ah! shepherds, (then said Colin) ye ne
weet

How great a guilt upon your heads ye draw,
To make so bold a doome, with words unmeet,
Of things celestiall which ye never saw.
For she is not like as the other crew [bee,
Of shepherds daughters which amongst you
But of divine regard and heavenly hew,
Excelling all that ever ye did see.

Not then to her that scorned thing so base,
But to my selfe the blame that lookt so hie:
So hie her thoughts as she her selfe have
place,

• And loath each lowly thing with loftie eie.
Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to grant
To simple swaine, sith her I may not love:
Yet that I may her honour paravant,
And praise her worth, though far my wit above.
Such graces shall be some guerdon for the griefe,
And long affliction which I have endured:
Such grace sometimes shall give me some re-
liefe,

And ease of paine which cannot be recured.
And ye, my fellow shepherds, which do see
And heare the languors of my too long dying,
Unto the world for ever witness bee,
That hars I die, nought to the world denying,
This simple trophé of her great conquest.'

• So, having ended, he from ground did rise,
And after him uprose eke all the rest:
All toth to part, but that the glooming skies
Ward them to draw their bleating flocks to
rest.

ASTROPHEL.

A PASTORALL ELEGIE,

UPON THE DEATH OF THE MOST NOBLE AND VALOROUS KNIGHT.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

DEDICATED TO THE MOST BEAUTIFULL AND VERTUOUS LADIE,

THE COUNTESS OF ESSEX.

SHEPHERDS, that wout, on pipes of oaten
reed, | smart:
Oft times to plaine your loves concealed
And with your piteous layes have learned to
breed

Compassion in a countrey lasses hart
Hearken, ye gentle shepherds, to my song,
And place my dolefull plant your plants
among.

To you alone I sing this mournfull verse,
The mournfullst verse that ever man heard tell:

To you whose softened hearts it may empiere
With dolours dart for death of Astrophel.
To you I sing and to none other wight,
For well I wot my rymes bene rudely dight.

Yet as they been, if any nyceer wit
Shall hap to heare, or covet them to read:
Thinke he, that such are for such ones most
fit,

Made not to please the living but the dead.
And if in him found pity ever place,
Let him be mov'd to pity such a case.

ASTROPHEL.

A GENTLE shepherd borne in Arcady,
Of gentlest race that ever shepherd bore,
About the grassie bancks of Ilamony
Did keepe his sheep, his litle stock and store:
Full carefully he kept them day and night,
In fairest fields; and Astrophel he hight.

Young Astrophel, the prid: of shepheards
praise,

Young Astrophel, the rusticke lasses love:
Far passing all the pastors of his daies,
In all that seemly shepherd might behove.
In one thing onely fayling of the best,
That he was not so happie as the rest.

For from the time that first the Nymph his
mother [feed:
Him forth did bring, and taught her lambs to
A selender swaine, excelling far each other,
In comely shape, like her that did him breed,
He grew up first in goodnesse and in grace,
And doubly faire wox both in mynd and face.

Which daily more and more he did augment,
With gentle usage and demeanure myld:
That all mens hearts with secret ravishment
He stole away, and wectingly beguyld.
Ne spight it selfe, that al good things doth
spill,

Found ought in him, that she could say was ill.

His sports were faire, his joyance innocent,
Sweet without sowre, and honny without gall:
And he himselfe seemed made for meriment,
Merily masking both in bowre and hall.
There was no pleasure nor delightfull play,
When Astrophel so ever was away.

For he could pipe, and daunce, and caroll sweet,
Emongst the shepheards in their shearing
feast;

As Somers larke that with her song doth greet
The dawning day forth comming from the
East.

And layes of love he also could compose:
Thrise happie she, whom he to praise did
chose.

Full many Maydens often did him woo,
Them to vouchsafe amongst his rimes to name,
Or make for them as he was wont to doo
For her that did his heart with love inflame.
For which they promised to dight for him
Gay chapelets of flowers and gyrlonds trim.

And many a Nymph both of the wood and
brooke,

Soone as his oaten pipe began to shrill,
Both christall wells and shadie groves forsooke,
To heare the charmes of his enchanting skill;
And brought him presents, flowers if it were
prime.

Or mellow fruit if it were harvest time.

But he for none of them did care a whit,
Yet woodgods for them often sighed sore:
Ne for their gifts unworthie of his wit,
Yet not unworthie of the countries store.
For one alone he cared, for one he sigh't,
His lifes desire, and his deare loves delight.

Stella the faire, the fairest star in skie,
As faire as Venus or the fairest faire,
(A fairer star saw never living eie),
Shot her sharp pointed beames through purest
aire.

Her he did love, her he alone did honor,
His thoughts, his rimes, his songs were all
upon her.

To her he vovd the service of his daies,
On her he spent the riches of his wit:
For her he made hymnes of inmortal praise,
Of onely her he sung, he thought, he writ.
Her. and but her, of love he worthe deemed;
For all the rest but litle he esteemed.

Ne her with ydle words alone he wowed,
And verses vaine, (yet verses are not vaine,)
But with brave deeds to her sole service vowed,
And bold atchievements her did entertaine.
For both in deeds and words he nourtred was,
Both wise and hartie, (too hardie, alas!)

In wrestling nimble, and in renning swift,
In shooting steddie, and in swimming strong:
Well made to strike, to throw, to leape, to lift,
And all the sports that shepherds are among.
In every one he vanquisht every one,
He vanquisht all, and vanquisht was of none.

Besides, in hunting such felicitie,
Or rather infelicitie, he found,
That every field and forest far away
He sought, where salvage beasts do most
abound.

No beast so salvage but he could it kill;
No chace so hard, but he therein had skill.

Such skill, matcht with such courage as he had,
Did prick him forth with proud desire of
praise

To seek abroad, of daunger nought ydrad,
His mistresse name, and his owne fame to
raise.

What needeth perill to be sought abroad,
Since round about us it doth make abroad!

It fortun'd as he that perilous game
In forreine soyle pursued far away,
Into a forest wide and waste he came,
Where store he heard to be of salvage pray.
So wide a forest and so waste as this,
Nor famous Ardeyn, nor fowle Arlo, is.

There his welwoven toyles, and subtil traines,
He laid the brutish nation to enwrap:
So well he wrought with practise and with
paines,

That he of them great troups did soone entrap.
Full happie man (misweening much) was hee,
So rich a spoile within his power to see.

Eftsoones, all heedlesse of his dearest hale,
Full greedily into the heard he thrust,
To slaughter them, and worke their finall bale,
Least that his toyle should of their troups be
brust.

Wide wounds amongst them many one he made,
Now with his sharp bore-spear, now with his
blade.

His care was all how he them all might kill,
That none might scape, (so partiall unto none:)
Ill mynd so much to mynd anothers ill,
As to become unmyndfull of his owne.
But pardon that unto the cruell skies,
That from himselfe to them withdrew his eies.

So as he rag'd amongst that beastly rout,
A cruell beast of most accursed brood [stout,]
Upon him turnd, (despeyre makes cowards
And, with fell tooth accustomed to blood,
Launched his thigh with so mischievous might,
That it both bone and muscles ryved quight.

So deadly was the dint and deep the wound,
And so huge streames of blood thereout did
That he endured not the direfull stound, [flow,
But on the cold deare earth himselfe did throw;
The whiles the captive heard his nets did rend,
And, having none to let, to wood did wend.

Ah! where were ye this while his shepherd
peares,

To whom alive was nought so deare as hee:
And ye fayre Mayds, the matches of his yeares,
Which in his grace did boast you most to bee!

Ah! where were ye, when he of you had need,
To stop his wound that wondrously did bleed!

Ah! wretched boy, the shape of dreryhead,
And sad ensample of mans suddain end:
Full little faileth but thou shalt be dead,
Unpitied, unplaynd, of foe or frend:
Whilist none is nigh, thine eylyds up to close,
And kisse thy lips like faded leaves of rose.

A sort of shepheards, sewing of the chace,
As they the forest raunged on a day,
By fate or fortune came unto the place,
Where as the lucklesse boy yet bleeding lay;
Yet bleeding lay, and yet would still have bled.
Had not good hap those shepheards thether led.

They stopt his wound, (too late to stop it was!)
And in their armes then softly did him reare:
Tho (as he wold) unto his loved lasse,
His dearest love, him dolefully did beare.
The dolefulst beare that ever man did see,
Was Astrophel, but dearest unto mee!

She, when she saw her love in such a plight,
With crudled blood and filthie gore deformed,
That wont to be with flowers and gyrlonds
dight,

And her deare favours dearly well adorned;
Her face, the fairest face that eye mote see,
She likewise did deforme, like him to bee.

Her yellow locks that shone so bright and long,
As Sunny beames in fairest somers day,
She fiersly tore, and with outragious wrong
From her red cheeks the roses rent away;
And her faire brest, the treasury of joy,
She spoyld thereof, and filled with annoy.

His palled face, impictured with death,
She bathed oft with teares, and dried oft:
And with sweet kisses suckt the wasting breath
Out of his lips like lilies pale and soft:
And oft she cald to him, who answerd nought,
But onely by his lookes did tell his thought.

The rest of her impatient regret,
And piteous mone the which she for him made,
No tongue can tell, nor any forth can set,
But he whose heart like sorrow did invade.
At last, when paine his vitall powres had spent,
His wasted life her wearie lodge forwent.

Which when she saw, she staied not a whit,
But after him did make untimely haste:
Forth-with her ghost out of her corps did flit,
And followed her make like turtle chaute,
To prove that death their hearts cannot divide,
Which living were in love so firmly tide.

The gods, which all things see, this same be-
held,

And, pittying this paire of lovers trow,
Transformed them, there lying on the field,
Into one flowre that is both red and blew;
It first growes red, and then to blew doth fade,
Like Astrophel, which thereinto was made.

And in the midst thereof a star appears,
As fairly formd as any star in skyes;
Resembling Stella in her freshest yeares.
Forth darting beames of beautie from her eyes:
And all the day it standeth full of dew,
Which is the teares, that from her eyes did flow.

That hearbe of some Starlight is cald by name,
Of others Penthia, though not so well:
But thou, where ever thou doest finde the same.
From this day forth do call it Astrophel:
And when so ever thou art up doest take,
Do pluck it softly for that shepheards sake.

Hereof when tydings far abroad did passe,
The shepheards all which loved him full deare,
And sure full deare of all he loved was,
Did thether flock to see what they did heare.
And when that pitteous spectacle they vewed,
The same with bitter teares they all bedewed.

And every one did make exceeding mone,
With inward anguish and great grieve opprest:
And every one did weep and waille, and mone,
And meanes devis'd to shew his sorrow best,
That from that houre, since first on grassie
greene [seen.

Shepheards kept sheep, was not like mourning

But first his sister that Clorinda hight,
The gentlest shepheardesse that lives this day,
And most resembling both in shape and spright
Her brother deare, began this dolefull lay.
Which, least I marre the sweetnesse of the
verse,

In sort as she it sung I will rehearse.

THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA.

*(These verses are supposed to have been written by Mary Countess of Pembroke,
sister to Sir Philip Sidney.)*

Al me, to whom shall I my case complaine,
That may compassion my impatient grieve!
Or where shall I unfold my inward paine,
That my enriuen heart may find reliefe!
Shall I unto the heavenly powres it show?
Or unto earthly men that dwell below?

To heavens? ah! they alas! the authors were,
And workers of my unremédied wo:
For they foresee what to us happens here,
And they foresaw, yet suffred this be so.

From them comes good, from them comes
also ill; [to spill?

That which they made, who can them warne

To men? ah! they alas! like wretched bee,
And subject to the heavens ordinance:
Bound to abide whatever they decree,
Their best redresse is their best sufferance.

How then can they, like wretched, comfort
mee,

The which no lesse need comforted to bee?

Then to my selfe will I my sorrow mourne,
Sith none alive like sorrowfull remains:
And to my selfe my plaints shall back retourne,
To pay their usury with doubled paines.

The woods, the hills, the rivers, shall resound
The mournfull accent of my sorrowes ground.

Woods, hills, and rivers, now are desolate,
Sith he is gone the which them all did grace:
And all the fields do waile their widow state,
Sith death their fairest flowre did late deface.

The fairest flowre in field that ever grew,
Was Astrophel; that was, we all may rew.

What cruell hand of cursed foe unknowne,
Hath cropt the stalke which bore so faire a
flowre?

Untimely cropt, before it well were growne,
And cleane defaced in untimely howre.

Great losse to all that ever him did see,
Great losse to all, but greatest losse to mee!

Breake now your gyrlonds, O ye shepheards
lasses, [gon:

Sith the fayre flowre, which them adorn'd, is

The flowre, which them adorn'd, is gone to
ashes,

Never againe let lasse put gyrlond on.

In stead of gyrlond, weare sad Cypres now,
And bitter Elder, broken from the bowe.

Ne ever sing the love-layes which he made;
Who ever made such layes of love as hee?

Ne ever read the riddles, which he sayd
Unto your selves, to make you mery glee.

Your mery glee is now laid all abed,
Your mery maker now alas! is dead.

Death, the devourer of all worlds delight,
Hath robbed you, and reft fro me my joy:
Both you and me, and all the world he quight
Hath robd of joyance, and left sad annoy.
Joy of the world, and shepheards pride was
hee!

Shepheards, hope never like againe to see!

Oh Death! thou hast us of such riches reft,
Tell us at least, what hast thou with it done?
What is become of him whose flowre here left
Is but the shadow of his likeness gone?
Scarse like the shadow of that which he was,
Nought like, but that he like a shade did
pas.

But that immortall spirit, which was deckt
With all the dowries of celestiall grace,
By soveraine choyce from th' heavenly quires
select,

And lineally deriv'd from Angels race,

Oh! what is now of it become aread.

Ay me! can so divine a thing be dead?

Ah! no: it is not dead, ne can it die,
But lives for aie, in blisfull Paradise:
Where like a new-borne babe it soft doth lie,
In bed of lillies wrapt in tender wise;
And compast all about with roses sweet,
And daintie violets from head to feet.

There thousand birds, all of celestiall brood,
To him do sweetly caroll day and night;
And with straunge notes, of him well under-
stood,

Lull him asleep in Angelick delight;

Whilest in sweet dreame to him presented
bee
Immortall beauties, which no eye may see.

But he them sees, and takes exceeding pleasure
Of their divine aspects, appearing plaine,
And kindling love in him above all measure;
Sweet love, still joyous, never feeling paine:
For what so goodly forme he there doth see,
He may enjoy from jealous rancor free

There liveth he in everlasting blis,
Sweet spirit never fearing more to die:
Ne dreading harme from any foes of his,
Ne fearing salvage beasts more crueltie.

Whilest we here, wretches, waile his private
lack,
And with vaine vowes do often call him back.

But live thou there, still happie, happie spirit,
And give us leave thee here thus to lament!

Not thee that doest thy heavens joy inherit,
But our owne selves that here in dole are drent
Thus do we weep and waile, and wear our
eies,
Mourning, in others, our own miseries.

WHICH when she ended had, another swaine
Of gentle wit and daintie sweet device,
Whom Astrophel full deare did entertaine,
Whilest here he liv'd, and held in passing price,
Hight Thestylis, began his mournfull tourne:
And made the Muses in his song to mourne.

And after him full many other moe,
As everie one in order lov'd him best,
Gan dight themselves t' expresse their inward
woe.

With dolefull layes unto the time address:
The which I here in order will rehearse,
As fittest flowres to deck his mournfull hearse.

THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS.

(This and the succeeding Poem are supposed to have been written by Lodowick Bryskett.)

Come forth, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake
your watry bowres, [ment:
Forsake your mossy caves, and help me to la-
Help me to tune my dolefull notes to gurgling
sound [teares of ours
Of Lillies tumbling streames: Come, let salt
Mix with his waters fresh, O come, let one
consent [deadly wound
Joyne us to mourne with wailfull plaints the
Which fatall clap hath made, decreed by higher
powres; [yrent
The dreery day in which they have from us
The noblest plant that might from East to
West be found.

Mourne, mourn, great Philips fall, mourne we
his wofull end, [from the tree,
Whom spitefull Death hath pluct untimely
Whiles yet his yeares in flowre did promise
worthie frute. [knight defend?

Ah dreadful Mars, why didst thou not thy
What wrathfull mood, what fault of ours, hath
moved thee
Of such a shining light to leave us destitute?
Thou with benigne aspect sometime didst us
behold, [old,

Thou hast in Britons valour tane delight of
And with thy presence oft vouchsatt to attri-
bute

Fame and renowme to us for glorious martiall
deeds.
But now thy ireful bemes have chill'd our
harts with cold; [our land:
Thou hast estrang'd thy self, and deignest not
Farre off to others now thy favour honour
breeds, [clime, (I feare:)
And high disdaine doth cause thee shun our
For hadst thou not bene wroth, or that time
neare at hand, [England made;
Thou wouldest have heard the cry that woful
Eke Zeland piteous plaints, and Hollands
toren heare, [mynd:
Would haply have appeas'd thy divine angry
Thou shouldst have seen the trees refuse to
yeeld their shade,
And waiting to let fall the honor of their head;
And birds in mournfull tunes lamenting in
their kinde.

Up from his tombe the mightie Corineus rose.
Who, cursing off the fates that this mishap had
bred, [unkinde.
His hoary locks he tare, calling the heavens
The Thames was heard to roare, the Seyne
and eke the Mose, [chance did rue,
The Scheld, the Danow selfe, this great mis-
With torment and with grief: their fountains
pure and cleere

Were troubled, and with swelling flouds de-
clar'd their woes.
The Muses comfortles, the Nymphs with
paled hue, [and neere,
The Silvan Gods likewise, came running farre
And all with teares bedewd, and eyes cast
up on hie; [to erie.
O help, O help, ye Gods, they ghastly gan
O chaunge the cruell fate of this so rare a
wight, [out his age,
And graunt that natures course may measure
The beasts their foode forsooke, and, trembling
fearfully, [so fright,
Each sought his cave or den, this cry did them
Out from amid the waves, by storme then
stirr'd to rage, [Ocean hoare,
This erie did cause to rise th' old father
Who grave with eld, and full of majestie in
sight, [teares and plaints,
Spake in this wise. 'Refrain (quoth he) your
Cease these, your idle words, make vaine
requests no more. [fixed stint
No humble speech, nor mone, may move the
Of destinie or death: Such is His will that
paints [with store
The earth with colour fresh; the darkest skies
Of starry lights: And though your teares a
hart of flint [will prevail,
Might tender make, yet nought herein they
Whiles thus he said, the noble knight, who
gan to feeble [dint
His vitall force to faint, and death with cruell
Of direfull dart his mortall bodie to assaile,
With eyes lift up to heav'n, and courage
franke as steele, [express,
With cheerfull face, where valour lively was
But humble mynd, he said: 'O Lord, if ought
this fraile [t' advance;
And earthly carcassee have thy service sought
If my desire have bene still to relieve th'
opprest; • [spent
If justice to maintaine that valour I have
Which thou me gav'st; or if henceforth I
might advance [if thou think best;
Thy name, thy truth, then spare me (Lord)
Forbeare these unripe yeares. But if thy will
be bent, [set;
If that prefixed time be come which thou hast
Through pure and fervent faith, I hope now
to be plast [blood
In th' everlasting blis, which with thy precious
Thou purchase didst for us.' With that a
sigh he fet,
And straight a cloudie mist his senses overcast;
His lips waxt pale and wan, like damaske
roses bud
Cast from the stalke, or like in field to purple
flowre,

Which languisheth being shred by culter as it
past. [veines, which were
A trembling chilly cold ran throgh their
With eies brimfull of teares to see his fatal
howre, [declare,
Whose blustering sighes at first their sorrow did
Next, murmuring ensue; at last they not
forbeare [enviously
Plain outcries, all against the heav'ns that
Depriv'd us of a spright so perfect and so
rare. [hide his face
The sun his lightsom beames did shrowd, and
For griefe, whereby the earth feard night
eternally: [turn'd their streames,
The mountaines eachwhere shooke, the rivers
And th' aire gan winterlike to rage and fret
apace: [ferie gleames,
And grisly ghosts by night were seene, and
Amid the clouds with claps of thunder, that
did seeme [beast asfear'd:
To rent the skies, and made both man and
The birds of ill presage this lucklesse chance
foretold, [made man deeme
By demfull noise; and dogs with howling
Some mischief was at hand: for such they do
esteem
As tokens of m' shap, and so have done of old.
Ah! that thou hadst but heard his lovely
Stella plaine [ing cheere,
Her greevous losse, or seene her heaveie mourn-
While she, with woe opprest, her sorrowes did
unfold. [shoulders twaine;
Her haire hung lose, neglect, about her
And from those two bright starres to him some-
time so deere, [foyson downe
Her heart sent drops of pearle, which fell in
Twixt lilly and the rose. She wroong her hands
with paine, [pheere,
And piteously gan say: 'My true and faithfull
Alas, and woe is me! why should my fortune
frowne
On me thus frowardly to rob me of my joy?
What cruell envious hand hath taken thee
away, [stay?
And with thee my content, my comfort, and my
Thou onlie wast the ease of trouble and annoy,
When they did me assaile; in thee my hopes
did rest. [day
Alas, what now is left but grief, that night and
Afflicts this wofull life, and with continuall
rage [brest!
Torments ten thousand waies my miserable
O greedie envious heav'n, what needed thee to
have
Enrich with such a jewell this unhappie age;
To take it back againe so soone! Alas, when
shall [since thy grave,
Mine eies see ought that may content them,

My only treasure hides, the joyes of my poore
 hart! [equal]
 As here with thee on earth I liv'd, even so
 Me thinks it were with thee in heav'n I did
 abide: [part]
 And as our troubles all we here on earth did
 So reason would that there of thy most happie
 state
 I had my share. Alas, if thou my trustie guide
 Were wont to be, how canst thou leave me thus
 alone [late]
 In darknesse and astray; weake, wearie, deso-
 Plung'd in a world of woe, refusing for to take
 Me with thee to the place of rest where thou
 art gone! [her toong;
 This said, she held her peace, for sorrow tide
 And instead of more words, seemd that her
 eies a lake [therefro:
 Of teares had bene. they flow'd so plenteously
 And, with her sobs and sighs, th' aire round
 about her roong. [slaine,
 If Venus, when she waild her deare Adonis
 Ought moov'd in thy fiers hart compassion of
 her woe, [among,
 His noble sisters plaints, her sighes and teares
 Would sure have made thee milde, and inly
 rue her paine:
 Aurora halfe so faire her selfe did never show,
 When, from old Tithons bed, shee weeping did
 arise, [of raine,
 The blinded Archer-boy, like larke in shewre
 Sat batling of his wings, and glad the time did
 spend [faire eies;
 Under those cristall drops, which fell from her
 And at their brightest beames him proynd in
 lovely wise. [amend,
 Yet, sorie for her grief, which he could not
 The gentle boy gan wipe her eies, and clear
 those lights,
 Those lights through which his glory and his
 conquests shine.
 The Graces tuckt her hair, which hung like
 threds of gold,
 Along her yorie brest, the treasure of delights.
 All things with her to weep, it seemed, did en-
 cline, [stones so cold.
 The trees, the hills, the dales, the caves, the
 The aire did help them mourne, with dark
 clouds, raine, and mist,
 Forbearing many a day to cleare it selfe againe;
 Which made them eftsoones feare the daies of
 Pirrha shold [untwist.
 Of creatures spoile the earth, their fatall threds
 For Phœbus gladsome raies were wished for in
 vaine,
 And with her quivering light Latonas daughter
 faire, [mans guide.
 And Charles-waine eke refus'd to be the ship-

On Neptune warre was made by Aeolus and
 his traine, [ed th' aire,
 Who, letting loose the winds, tost and torment-
 So that on ev'ry coast men shipwrack did
 abide,
 Or else were swallowed up in open sea with
 And such as came to shoare were beaten with
 despaire. [still to slide,
 The Medwaies silver streames, that wont so
 Were troubled now and wrothe; whose hidden
 hollow caves [mans eye,
 Along his banks with fog then shrowded from
 Ay Phillip did resound, aie Phillip they did
 crie. [still it craves)
 His nimphs were seen no more (thogh custom
 With haire spred to the wynd themselves to
 bath or sport,
 Or with the hooke or net, barefooted wantonly,
 The pleasant dantie fish to entangle or deceive.
 The shepheards left their wonted places of
 resort, [mery layes
 Their bagpipes now were still; their loving
 Were quite forgot; and now their flocks men
 might perceive
 To wander and to straine, all carelesly neglect,
 And in the stead of mirth and pleasure, nights
 and dayes [plaints, and mone,
 Nought els was to be heard, but woes, com-
 But thou (O blessed soule!) doest haply not
 respect [pure affect,
 These teares we shead, though full of loving
 Having affixt thine eyes on that most glorious
 throne, [reignes;
 Where full of majestie the High Creator
 In whose bright shining face thy joyes are all
 complete, [alwaies one,
 Whose love kindles thy spright; where happie
 Thou liv'st in blis that earthly passion never
 staines; [tar sweete
 Where from the purest spring the sacred Nec-
 Is thy continuall drinke; where thou doest
 gather now
 Of well employed life th' inestimable gaines,
 There Venus on thee smiles, Apollo gives thee
 place, [bow,
 And Mars in reverent wise doth to thy vertue
 And decks his fiery sphere, to do thee honour
 most.
 In highest part whereof, thy valour for to grace,
 A chaire of gold he sets to thee, and there doth
 tell [boast
 Thy noble acts arew, whereby even they that
 Themselves of aunient fame, as Pirrhus,
 Hanniball,
 Scipio, and Caesar, with the rest that did excell
 In martiall prowesse, high thy glorie do ad-
 mire. [tall,
 All haile, therefore, O worthie Phillip immor-

The flowre of Sydneys race, the honour of thy
name! [aspire,
Whose worthie praise to sing, thy Muses not
But sorrowfull and sad these teares to thee let
fall;

Yet wish their verses might so farre and wide
thy fame
Extend, that envies rage, nor time, might end
the same.

A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE

UPON THE

DEATH OF SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT, ETC.

LYCON.

COLIN.

LYCON.

COLIN, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd,
This wofull stownd, wherein all things com-
plaine

This great mishap, this greevous losse of owres.
Hear'st thou the Orowen? How with hollow
sownd

He slides away, and murmuring doth plaine,
And seemes to say unto the fading flowres,
Along his bankes, unto the bared trees,
Phyllisides is dead. Up jolly swaine,
Thou that with skill canst tune a dolefull lay,
Help him to mourn. My hart with grief doth
freese,

Hoarse is my voice with crying, else a part
Sure would I beare, though rude: but, as I may,
With sobs and sighes I second will thy song,
And so expresse the sorrowes of my hart.

Colin. Ah Lycon, Lycon! what need skill,
to teach

A grieved mynd powre forth his plaints? how
Hath the pore turtle gon to school (weenest
thou)

To learne to mourne her lost make! No, no,
Creature by nature can tell how to waile.

Seest not these flocks, how sad they wander
now?

Seemeth their leaders bell their bleating tunes
In dolefull sound. Like him, not one doth faile
With hanging head to shew a heave cheare.
What bird (I pray thee) hast thou seen, that
prunes

Himselfe of late? did any cheerfull note
Come to thine eares, or gladsome sight appeare
Unto thine eyes, since that same fatall howre?

Hath not the aire put on his mourning coat,
And testified his grief with flowing teares?
Sith then, it seemeth each thing to his powre

Doth us invite to make a sad consort; [theirs.
Come, let us joyne our roundfull song with
Griefe will endite, and sorrow will enforce,
Thy voice; and Echo will our words report.

Lycon. Though my rude rymes ill with thy
verses frame,

That others figure excell, yet will I force
My selfe to answer thee the best I can, [name.
And honor my base words with his high;
But if my plaints annoy thee where thou sit
In secret shade or cave; vouchsafe (O Pan)
To pardon me, and hear this hard constraint
With patience while I sing, and pittie it.

And eke ye rurall Muses, that do dwell
In these wilde woods: if ever piteous plaint
We did endite, or taught a wofull minde
With words of pure affect his griefe to tell,

Instruct me now. Now, Colin, then goe on,
And I wil follow thee, though farre behinde,

Colin. Phyllisides is dead. O harmful death,
O deadly harme! Unhappie Allion,

When shalt thou see, among thy shepheards all.
Any so sage, so perfect? Whom unneath
Envie could touch for virtuous life and skill;
Genteous, valiant, and liberal.

Behold the sacred Pales, where with haire
Untrust she sits, in shade of yonder hill.

And her faire face, bent sadly downe, doth send
A flood of teares to bathe the earth; and there

Doth call the heav'ns despightfull, envious,
Cruell his fate, that made so short an end

Of that same life, well worthie to have bene
Prolonged with many yeares, happie and
famous.

The Nymphs and Orondes her round about
Do sit lamenting on the grassie grene;

And with shrill cries, beating their whitest
breasts,

Accuse the direfull dart that death sent out
To give the fatal stroke. The starres they
blame,
That deafe or carelesse seeme at their request.
The pleasant shade of statly groves they shun;
They leave their cristall springs, where they
wont fraime

Sweet howres of Myrtel twigs and Lawrel faire,
Tosport themselves free from the scorching Sun.
And now the hollow caves where horror darke
Doth dwell, whence banisht is the glad some
aire, [their time
They seeke; and there in mourning spend
With wailfull tunes, whiles wolves do howle
and barke,

And seem to beare a bourdon to their plaint.

Lycon. Phillisides is dead. O dolefull ryme!
Why should my tooing expresse thee? who is
left

Now to uphold thy hopes, when they do faint,
Lycon, unfortunate! What spitefull fate,
What lucklesse destinie, hath thee bereft
Of thy chief comfort, of thy onely stay!
Where is become thy wonted happie state,
(Alas!) wherein through many a hill and dale,
Through pleasant woods, and many an un-
knowne way,

Along the bankes of many silver streames,
Thou with him yodest; and with him didst scale
The craggie rocks of th' Alpes and Appennine!
Still with the Muses sporting, while those
Of vertue kindled in his noble brest, [beames
Which after did so gloriously forth shine!
But (woe is me!) they now yquenched are
All suddenly, and death hath them opprest.
Loe, father Neptune, with sad countenance,
How he sits mourning on the strond now bare,
Yonder, where th' Ocean with his rolling waves
The white foete washeth (wailing this mis-
chance)

Of Dover clifffes. His sacred skirt about
The sea-gods all are set; from their moist caves
All for his comfort gathered there they be.
The Thamis rich, the Humber rough and stout,
The fruitfull Severne, with the rest are come
To helpe their lord to mourne, and eke to see
The dolefull sight, and sad pomp funerall,
Of the dead corps passing through his king-
dome. [crown'd,

And all their heads, with Cypres gyrlonds
With wofull shrikes salute him great and
small.

Eke wailfull Echo, forgetting her deare
Narcissus, their last accents doth resound.

Colin. Phillisides is dead. O lucklesse age!
O widow world! O brookes and fountains
cleere!

O hills, O dales, O woods! that oft have rung

With his sweet caroling, which could asswage
The fiercest wrath of Tygre or of Beare:

Ye Silvans, Fawnes, and Satyres, that among
These thickets oft have daunst after his pipe;
Ye Nymphs and Nayades with golden heare

That oft have left your purest cristall springs
To hearken to his layes, that coulde wipe
Away all griefe and sorrow from your harts!
Alas! who now is left that like him sings?

When shall you heare againe like harmonie?
So sweet a sound who to you now imparts
Loe where engraved by his hand yet lives
The name of Stella in yonder bay tree.

Happie name! happie tree! faire may you
grow, [gives

And spread your sacred branch, which honor
To famous Emperors and Poets crowne,
Unhappie flock that wander scattred now,
What marvell if through griefe you woxen leane,
Forsake your food, and hang your heads
adowne!

For such a shepheard never shall you guide,
Whose parting hath of weale bereft you cleane.
Lycon. Phillisides is dead. O happie sprite,
That now in heav'n with blessed soules doest
bide. [above,

Looke down a while from where thou sitst
And see how busie shepheards be to endite
Sad songs of grief, their sorrowes to declare,
And gratefull memory of their kynd love.
Behold my selfe with Colin, gentle swaine,
(Whose lerned muse thou cherisht most why-
leare.)

Where we, thy name recording, seeke to ease
The inward torment and tormenting paine,
That thy departure to us both hath bred;
Ne can each others sorrow yet appease.
Behold the fountains now left desolate,
And withered grasse with cypres boughes be
spred; [strew;

Behold these floures which on thy grave we
Which faded shew the give, faded state, [pure)
(Though eke they shew their fervent zeale and
Whose onely comfort on thy welfare grew.
Whose praies importune shall the heav'ns for
That, to thy ashes, rest they may assure: [ay,
That lerneist shepheards honor may thy name
With yeerly praises, and the Nymphs all
Thy tomb may deck with fresh and sweetest
howres;

And that for ever may endure thy fame.

Colin. The sun (lo!) hastned hath his face
to steep [showres

In western waves; and th' aire with stormy
Warnes us to drive homewards our silly sheep:
Lycon, let's rise, and take of them good keep.

Virtute summa: cetera fortuna

L. B.

AN ELEGIE,
OR
FRIENDS PASSION, FOR HIS ASTROPHEL.

WRITTEN UPON THE DEATH OF THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT,

LORD GOVERNOUR OF FLUSHING.

(*This Poem was written by Matthew Roydon.*)

As then, no winde at all there blew,
No swelling cloude c'coid the aire;
The skie, like glasse of watchet hew,
Reflected Phœbus golden haire;
The garnisht tree no pendant stird,
No voice was heard of anie bird.

There might you see the burly Beare,
The Lion king, the Elephant;
The maiden Unicorn was there,
So was Acteon's horned plant,
And what of wilde or tame are found,
Were coucht in order on the ground.

Alcides speckled poplar tree,
The palme that Monarchs do obtaine,
With love-juice staine the mulberie,
The fruit that dewes the poets braine;
And Phillis philbert there away,
Compared with mirtle and the bay.

The tree that coffins doth adorne,
With stately height threatning the skie;
And, for the bed of love forlorne,
The blacke and dolefull cbonie:
All in a circle compass were,
Like to an ampitheater.

Upon the branches of those trees,
The airie-winged people sat,
Distinguished in od degrees:
One sort is this, another that,
Here Philgell, that knowes full well,
What force and wit in love doth dwell.

The skie-bred Egle, roiall bird,
Percht there upon an oke above;
The Turtle by him never stird,
Example of immortall love.
The Swan that sings about to dy,
Leaving Meander stood thereby.

And, that which was of woonder most,
The Phoenix left sweet Arabic;
And, on a Cedar in this coast,
Built up her teinbe of spicerie,
As I conjecture, by the same
Prepared to take her dying flame.

In midst and center of this plot,
I saw one groveling on the grasse;
A man or stone, I knew not that:
No stone; of man the figure was,
And yet I could not count him one,
More than the image made of stone.

At length I might perceive him reare
His bodie on his elbow end:
Earthly and pale with gastly cheare,
Upon his knees he upward tend,
Seeming like one in uncouth stound,
To be ascending out the ground.

A grievous sigh forthwith he throwes,
As might have torne the vitall strings;
Then down his cheeks the teares so flows,
As doth the streame of many springs.
So thunder rends the cloud in twaine,
And makes a passage for the raine.

Incontinent, with trembling sound;
He wofully gan to complain;
Such were the accents as might wound,
And teare a diamond rocke in twaine:
After his throbs did somewhat stay,
Thus heavily he gan to say:

O sunne! (said he) seeing the sunne,
On wretched me why dost thou shine?
My star is false, my comfort done,
Out is the apple of my cine:
Shine upon those possessees delight,
And let me live in endless night.

O griefe that liest upon my soule,
As heaue as a mount of lead,
The remnant of my life controll,
Consort me quickly with the dead;
Halfe of this hart, this sprite, and will,
Di'de in the brest of Astrophill.

And you, compassionate of my wo,
Gentle birds, beasts, and shadie trees, •
I am assurde ye long to kno
What be the sorrowes me agreev's;
• Listen ye then to that insu'th.
And heare a tale of teares and rute.

You knew, who knew not Astrophill?
(That I should live to say I knew,
And have not in possession still!)
Things knowne permit me to renew;
Of him you know his merit such.
I cannot say, you heare, too much.

Within these woods of Arcadie
He chiefe delight and pleasure tooke,
And on the mountaine Parthenie,
Upon the chrystall liquid brooke,
The Muses met him ev'ry day
That taught him sing, to write, and say.

When he descended downe to the mount,
His personage seemed most divine.
A thousand graces one might count
Upon his lovely cheerfull eie;
To heare him speake and sweetly smile,
You were in Paradise the while.

A sweet attractive kinde of grace, •
A full assurance given by lookes,
Continuall comfort in a face,
The lineaments of Gospell bookes;
I trowe that countenance cannot lie
Whose thoughts are legible in the eie.

Was never eie did see that face,
Was never eare did heare that tong,
Was never minde did minde his grace;
That ever thought the travell long;
But eies, and eares, and ev'ry thought,
Were with his sweete perfections caught.

O God, that such a worthy man,
In whom so rare desarts did raigne,
Desired thus, must leave us than.
And we to wish for him in vaine!
O could the stars that bred that wit,
In force no longer fixed sit!

Then being fild with learned dew,
The Muses willed him to love;
That instrument can aptly shew,
How finely our conceits will move:
As Bacchus opes dissembled harts,
So Love sets out our better parts.

Stella, a Nymph within this wood,
Most rare and rich of heavenly blis,
The highest in his fancie stood,
And she could well demerite this:
Tis likely they acquainted some;
He was a Sun, and she a Moone.

Our Astrophill did Stella love;
O Stella, vaunt of Astrophill,
Albeit thy graces gods may move,
• Where wilt thou finde an Astrophill!
The rose and lillie have their prime,
And so hath beautie but a time.

Although thy beautie do exceed,
In common sight of ev'ry eie.
Yet in his Poesies when we reede,
It is apparant more thereby,
He that hath love and judgement too
Sees more than any other doo.

Then Astrophill hath honord thee;
For when thy bodie is extinct,
Thy graces shall eternall be
And live by vertue of his inke;
For by his verses he doth give
To short-livde beautie aye to live.

Above all others this is hee,
Which erst approved in his song,
• That love and honor might agree,
And that pure love will do no wrong.
Sweet saints! it is no sinne nor blame,
To love a man of vertuous name.

Did never love so sweetly breath
In any mortall brest before,
Did never Muse inspire beneath
A Poets braine with finer store:
He wrote of love with high conceit,
And beautie reard above her height.

Then Pallas afterward attyrde
Our Astrophill with her device,
Whom in his armor heaven admyrde,
As of the nation of the skies;
He sparkled in his armes afarrs,
As he were dight with sferie starrs.

The blaze whereof when Mars beheld,
(An envious eie doth see afar,)
Such majestie (quoth he) is seeld,
Such majestie my mart may mar;
Perhaps this may a suter be, •
To set Mars by his deitie.

In this surmize he made with speede
An iron cane, wherein he put
The thunder that in cloudes do breede
The flame and bolt together shut
With privie force burst out againe,
And so our Astrophill was slaine.

This word (was slaine) straightway did move,
And natures inward life strings twitch;
The skie immediately above
Was dimd with hideous clouds of pitch,
The wrastling winds from out the ground
Fild all the aire with rattling sound.

The bending trees exprest a grone,
And sigh'd the sorrow of his fall;
The Forrest beasts made ruthfull mone,
The birds did tune their mourning call,
And Philomell for Astrophill
Unto her notes annex a phill.

The Turtle dove with tunes of ruthe
Shewd feeling passion of his death;
Me thought she said, I tell thee truthe,
Was never he that drew in breath
Unto his love more trustie found,
Than he for whom our griefs abound.

The swan, that was in presence heere,
Began his funerall dirge to sing:
Good things (quoth he) may scarce appeere,
But passe away with speedie wing.
This mortall life as death is tide,
And death gives life; and so he dide.

The generall sorrow that was made,
Among the creatures of each kinde,
Fired the Phoenix where she laide,
Her ashes flying with the winde,

So as I might with reason see,
That such a Phoenix nere should bee.

Haply the cinders, driven about,
May breede an offspring nere that kinde
But hardly a peere to that, I doubt;
It cannot sinke into my minde,
That under branches ere can bee
Of worth and value as the tree.

The Eagle markt with pearcing sight
The mournfull habite of the place,
And parted thence with mounting flight
To signifie to Jove the case,
What sorrow nature doth sustaine
For Astrophill by envie slaine.

And while I followed with mine eie
The flight the Eagle upward tooke,
All things did vanish by and by,
And disappeared from my looke:
The trees, beasts, birds, and grove was
gone;
So was the friend that made this mone.

This spectacle had firmly wrought
A deepe compassion in my spright;
My molting hart issude, me thought,
In streames forth at mine eyes shrinkt:
And here my pen is ffirst to shrinke,
My teares discolleor so mine inke.

AN EPITAPH

UPON THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT,

LORD GOVERNOR OF FLUSHING.

• (*The Authors of the two following poems are unknown.*)

To praise thy life, or waile thy worthie death,
And want thy wit, thy wit high, pure, divine,
Is far beyond the powre of mortall line,
Nor any one hath worth that draweth breath.

Yet rich in zeale, though poore in learnings
lore,
And friendly care obscure in secret breast,
And love that envie in thy life suppress,
Thy deere life done, and death, hath doubled
more.

And I, that in thy time, and living state,
Did onely praise thy vertues in my thought,
As one that seed the rising sun hath sought,
With words and teares now waile thy time-
lesse fate.

Drawne was thy race aright from princely
line; [gave,
Nor lesse than such, (by gifts that nature
The common mother that all creatures have,)
Doth vertue show, and princely linage shine.

A king gave thee thy name; a kingly minde,
That God thee gave, who found it now too
deere
For this base world, and hath resumed it neere,
To sit in skies, and sort with powres divine.

Kent thy birth daies, and Oxford held thy
youth; [nor time;
The heavens made hast, and staid nor yeers,

The fruits of age grew ripe in thy first prime,
Thy will, thy words; thy words the seales of
truth.

Great gifts and wisdom rare imployd thee
thence, [kings;
To treat from kings with those more great than
Such hope men had to lay the highest things
On thy wise youth, to be transported hence!

Whence to sharpe wars sweet honor did thee
call,
Thy countries love, religion, and thy friends:
Of worthy men the marks, the lives, and
ends,
And her defence, for whom we labor all.

There didst thou vanquish shame and tedious
age, [might:
Griefe, sorrow, sicknes, and base fortunes
Thy rising day saw never wofull night,
But past with praise from of this worldly
stage.

Back to the campe, by thee that day was
brought, [fame;
First thine owne death, and after thy long
Teares to the soldiers, the proud Castilians
shame,
Vertue exprest, and honor truly taught.

What hath he lost, that such great grace hath
woon? [sure

Yong yeeres for endles yeeres, and hope un-
Of fortunes gifts for wealth that still shall
dure;

(Oh! happie race with so great praises run.

England doth hold thy lims that bred the
same,

Flaunders thy valure where it last was tried,
The Campe thy sorrow where thy bodie died;
Thy friends, thy want; the world, thy vertues
fame.

Nations thy wit, our mindes lay up thy love;
Letters thy learning, thy losse, yeeres long to
come;

In worthy harts sorrow hath made thy tombe;
Thy soule and spright enrich the heavens
above.

Thy liberall hart imbalmed in gratefull teares,
Yong sighes, sweet sighes, sage sighes, be-
ware thy fall.

Envie her sting, and spite hath left her gall;
Malice her selfe a mourning garment weares.

That day their Hanniball died, our Scipio fell;
Scipio, Cicero, and Petarch of our time! [rime,
Whose vertues, wounded by my worthlesse
Let Angels speake, and heaven thy praises tell.

ANOTHER OF THE SAME.

Sorrow augmenteth grief, writing increaseth
rage, [the wonder of our age;
Staid are my thoughts, which lov'd, and lost,
Yet quickned now with fire, though dead with
frost ere now. [quick, I know not how.

Enrag'de I write, I know not what: dead,

Hard harted mindes relent, and rigors teares
abound, [no fault she found;

And envie strangely rues his end, in whom
Knowledge her light hath lost, valor hath
staine her knight; [worlds delight.

Sidney is dead, dead is my friend, dead is the

Place pensive wailes his fall, whose presence
was her pride; [my spring tide:

Time crieth out, My ebbe is come; his life was
Fame mournes in that she lost the ground of
her reports; [sundry sorts.

Ech living wight laments his lacke, and all in

He was (wo worth that word!) to ech well
thinking minde [vertue ever shinde,

A spotlesse friend, a matches man, whose
Declaring in his thoughts, his life, and that
he wrt, [deepest works of wit.

Highest conceits, longest foresights, and

He, onely like himselfe, was second unto none,
Whose deth (though life) we rue, and wrong,
and al in vain do mone:

Their losse, not him, waile they, that fill the
world with cries; [ladder to the skies.

Death slue not him, but he made death his

Now sinke of sorrow I, who live; the more the
wrong; [thred is al to long,

Who wishing death, whom deth denies, whose
Who tied to wretched life, who looks for no
reliefe, [cuding griefe.

Must spend my ever dying daies in never

Harts ease and onely I, like parallels run on,
Whose equall length keep equall breidth, and
never meet in one; [sorrowes cell,

Yet for not wronging him, my thoughts, my
Shall not run out, though leake they will, fo
hiking him so well.

Farewell to you, my hopes, my wonted waking
dreames; [thy beames!

Farewell, sometimes enjoyed joy; eclipsed are
Farewell selfe pleasing thoughts which quiet-
nes brings forth; [minds of woorth.

And farewell friendships sacred league, uniting

And farewell mery hart, the gift of guiltlesse minde,	[assignes;	Now rime, the sonne of rage, which art no kin to skill,	[knowes not how to kill,
And all sports, which, for lives restore, varietie		And endlesse griefe, which deads my life, yet	
Let all, that sweete is, voyd; in me no mirth may dwell:	[content, farewell!	Go, seeke that haples tombe; which if ye hap to finde,	[so good a minde,
Phillip, the cause of all this woe, my lives		Salute the stones, that keep the lims that held	

AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION.

WRITTEN NOT LONG SINCE BY

EDMUNDE SPENSER.

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

SIR ROBERT NEEDHAM, KNIGHT.

SIR, to gratulate your safe return from Ireland, I had nothing so eadie, nor thought any thing so meete, as these sweete conceited Sonets, the deede of that wel deserving gentleman, maister Edmond Spenser: whose name sufficiently warranting the worthinesse of the work, I do more confidently presume to publish it in his absence, under your name, to whom (in my poore opinion) the patronage therof doth in some respectes properly appertaine. For, besides your judgement and delighte in learned poesie, this gentle Muse, for her former perfection long wished for in Englande, nowe at the length crossing the Seas in your happy companye, (though to your selfe unknowne) seemeth to make choyse of you, as meetest to give her deserved countenance, after her retourne: entertaine her, then, (Right worshipfull) in sorte best be-seeming your gentle minde, and her merite, and take in worth my good will herein, who seeke no more but to shew my selfe yours in all dutifull affection.

W. P.

TO THE AUTHOR.

DARK is the day, when Phœbus face is shrowded,
And weaker nights may wander soone astray:
But, when they see his glorious raies unclouded,
With steady steps they keepe the perfect way:
So, while this Muse in forraine landes doth stay,
Invention weepes, and pens are cast aside;
The time, like night, deprived of chearefull day;
And few do write, but (ah!) too soone may slide.
Then, hie thee home, that art our perfect guide,
And with thy wit illustrate Englands fame,
Dwelling thereby our neighbours aunient pride.
That do, for poesie, challenge chiefe name:
So that I live, and ages that succede,
With great applawse thy learned works shall reede.

G. W. SENIOR.

Ah! Colin, whether on the lowly plaine,
Pymping to shepherds thy sweete roundelayes:
Or together singing, in some lofty vaine,
Heroick deedes of past or present daies;
Or whether in thy lovely mistris praise,
Thou hast to exercise thy learned quill;
Thy muse hath got such grace and power to please,
With rare invention, bewtified by skill,
As who therein can ever joy their fill!
O! therefore let that happy muse proceede
To clime the height of Vertues sacred hill.
Where endless honour shall be made thy meede:
Because no malice of succeeding daies
Can ruse those records of thy lasting praise.

G. W. L.

I

HAPPY, ye leaves! when as those lilly hands,
Which hold my life in their dead-doing might,
Shall handle you, and hold in loves soft bands,
Lyke captives trembling at the victors sight.
And happy lines! on which, with starry light.
Those lamping eyes will deigne sometimes to
look,
And reade the sorrowes of my dying spright,
Written with teares in harts close-bleeding
book.

And happy rymes! bath'd in the sacred brooke
Of Helicon, whence she derived is;
When ye behold that Angels blessed looke,
My soules long-lacked food, my heavens blis;
Leaves, lines, and rymes, seeke her to please
alone,
Whom if ye please, I care for other none!

II

Unquiet thought! whom at the first I bred
Of th' inward bale of my love-pined hart;
And sithens have with sighes and sorrowes fed,
Till greater then my wombe thou woxen art:
Breake forth at length out of the inner part,
In which thou lurkest lyke to vipers brood;
And seeke some succour both to ease my smart,
And also to sustayne thy selfe with food.
But, if in presence of that fayrest proud
Thou chance to come, fall lowly at her feet;
And, with meeke humblesse and afflicted mood,
Pardon for thee, and grace for me. intreat:

Which if she graunt, then live, and my love
cherish: [perish.
If not, die soone; and I with thee will

III

The soverayne beauty which I doo admyre,
Witnessse the world how worthy to be prayzed!
The light whercof hath kindled heavenly fyre
In my fraile spirit, by her from basenesse
raysed: [dazed,
That, being now with her huge brightnesse
Base thing I can no more endure to view:
But, looking still on her, I stand amazed
At wondrous sight of so celestiall hew. [dow,
So when my toung would speak her praises
It stopped is with thoughts astonishment;
And, when my pen would write her titles true,
It raviast is with fancies wonderment:

Yet in my hart I then both speake and write
The wonder that my wit cannot endite.

IV

New yeare, forth looking out of Janus gate,
Doth seeme to promise hope of new delight:
And, bidding th' old Adieu, his passed date
Bids all old thoughts to die in dumphish spright:
And, calling forth out of sad Winters night

Fresh Love, that long hath slept in cheeriesse
bower,

Wils him awake, and soone about him dight
His wanton wings and darts of deadly power.
For lusty Spring now in his timely howre
Is ready to come forth, him to receive;
And warnes the Earth with divers-colored flowre
To decke hir selfe, and her faire mantle weave.
Then you, faire flowre! in whom fresh youth
doth raine,

• Prepare your selfe new love to entertaine.

V

Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts desire,
In finding fault with bar too portly pride:
The thing which I doo most in her admire,
Is of the world unworthy most envide:
For in those lofty lookes is close implide,
Scorn of base things, and sdeigne of foule dis-
honor:

Thretning rash eies which gaze on her so wide,
That loosely they ne dare to looke upon her.
Such pride is praise; such portlinesse is
honor;

That boldned innocence beares in hir eies;
And her faire countenance, like a goodly ban-
Spreds in defiance of all enemies. [ur,

• Was never in this world ought worthy tride,
Without some spark of such self-pleasing
pride.

VI

Be nought dismayd that her unmoved mind
Doth still persist in her rebellious pride:
Such love, not lyke to lusts of baser kynd,
The harder wonne, the firmer will abide.
The durefull Oake, whose sap is not yet dride,
Is long ere it conceive the kindling fyre;
But, when it once doth burne, it doth divide
(Great heat, and makes his flames to heaven
So hard it is to kindle new desire [aspire,
In gentle brest, that shall endure for ever:
Deepe is the wound, that dints the parts entire
With chast affects that naught but death can
sever;

Then thinke not long in taking litle paine
To knit the knot, that ever shall remaine.

VII

Fayre eyes! the myrroure of my mazed hart,
What wondrous vertue is containd in you,
The which both lyfe and death forth from you
Into the object of your mighty view? [dart,
For, when ye mildly looke with lovely hew,
Then is my soule with life and love inspired:
But when ye lowre, or looke on me askew,
Then doe I die, as one with lightning fyred.
But, since that lyfe is more then death desyred,

Looke ever lovely, as becomes you best;
That your bright beams, of my weak eies
admyred,

May kindle living fire within my brest.
Such life should be the honor of your light,
Such death the sad ensample of your might.

VIII

More then most faire, full of the living fire,
Kindled above unto the Maker neere;
No eies but joyes, in which all powers conspire,
That to the world naught else be counted
deare;

Thru' your bright beams doth not the blinded
Shoot out his darts to base affections wound;
But Angels come to lead fraile mindes to rest
In chaste desires, on heavenly beauty bound.

You frame my thoughts, and fashion me
within;

You stop my tounge, and teach my hart to
You calme the storme that passion did begin,
Strong thru' your cause, but by your vertue
weak.

Dark is the world, where your light shined
Well is he borne, that may behold you ever.

IX

Long-while I sought to what I might com-
pare

Those powrefull eies, which lighten my dark
Yet find I nought on earth, to which I dare
Resemble th' ymage of their goodly light.
Not to the Sun; for they doo shine by night;
Nor to the Moone; for they are changed never;
Nor to the Starres; for they have purer sight;
Nor to the Fire; for they consume not ever;
Nor to the Lightning; for they still persevere;
Nor to the Diamond; for they are more tender;
Nor unto Cristall; for nought may them sever;
Nor unto Glasse; such basenesse mought
offend her.

Then to the Maker selfe they likest be,
Whose light doth lighten all that here we see.

X

Unrighteous Lord of Love, what law is this,
That me thou makest thus tormented be,
The whiles she lordeth in licentious blisse
Of her freewill, scorning both thee and me?
See! how the Tyrannesse doth joy to see
The huge massacres which her eyes do make;
And humble harts brings captive unto thee,
That thou of them mayst mightie vengeance
take,

But her proud hart doe thou a little shake.
And that high look, with which she doth
comptroll

All this worlds pride, bow to a baser make,
And al her faults in thy black booke enroll:

That I may laugh at her in equall sort,
As she doth laugh at me, and makes my
pain her sport.

XI

Dayly when I do seeke and sew for peace,
And hostages doe offer for my truth;
She, cruell warrior, doth herselfe address
To battell, and the weary war renew'th;
Ne w^hbe moov'd with reason, or with rewth,
To graunt small respit to my restlesse toile;
But greedily her fell intent pourseweth.
Of my poore life to make unpittied spoile,
Yet my poore life, all sorrowes to assoyle,
I would her yeld, her wrath to pacify:
But then she seeks, with torment and turmoyle,
To force me live, and will not let me dy.

All pame hath end, and every war hath
peace;

But mine, no price nor prayer may surcease.

XII

One day I sought with her hart-thrilling eies
To make a truce, and termes to entertaine:
All feelelesse then of so false enimes,
Which sought me to entrap in treasons traine.
So, as I then disarmed did remaine,
A wicked ambush which lay hidden long
In the close covert of her guilefull eyen.

Thence breaking forth, did thicke about me
throng.

Too feeble I t'abide the brunt so strong,
Was forst to yeeld my selfe into their hands;
Who, we captiving streight with rigorous
wrong,

Have ever since me kept in cruell bands.
So, Ladie, now to you I doo complaine,
Against your eies, that justice I may gaine.

XIII

In that proud port, which her so goodly graceth,
Whiles her faire face she reares up to the skie,
And to the ground her eie-lids low embaseth,
Most goodly temperature ye may descry;
Myld humblesse, mixt with awfull majesty.
For, looking on the earth whence she was
Her minde remembreth her mortalitie, [borne,
Whatso is fayrest shall to earth returne.

But that same lofty countenance seemes to
scorne
Base thing, and thinke how she to heaven may
Treading downe earth as lothsome and for
lorne,

That hinders heavenly thoughts with drossy
Yet lowly still vouchsafe to looke on me;
Such lowliness shall make you lofty be.

XIV

Retourne agayne, my forces late dismayd,
Unto the siege by you abandon'd quite,

Great shame it is to leave, like one afayd,
So fayre a peece, for one repulse so light.
Gaynst such strong castles needeth greater
might [belay:]

Then those small forts which ye were wont
Such haughty mynds, enur'd to hardy fight,
Disdayne to yield unto the first assay.
Bring therefore all the forces that ye may,
And lay incessant battery to her heart; ●
Playnts, prayers, vowe, ruth, sorrow, and
dismay;

Those engins can the proudest love convert:
And, if those fayle, fall downe and dy before
her;
So dying live, and living do adore her.

XV

Ye tradefull Merchants, that, with weary
toyle, [gain;]
Do seeke most pretious things to make your
And both the Indias of their treasure spoile;
What needeth you to seeke so farre in vaine?
For loe, my love doth in her selfe containe
All this worlds riches that may farre be found:
If Saphyres, loe, her eies be Saphyres plaine;
If Rubies, loe, hir lips be Rubies sound;
If Pearles, hir teeth be Pearles, both pure and
If Yvorie, her forehead Yvory weene; [round;
If Gold, her locks are finest Gold on ground;
If Silver, her faire hands are Silver sheene:
But that which fairest is, but few behold,
Her mind adorned with vertues manifold.

XVI

One day as I unwarily did gaze [light;
On those fayre eyes, my loves immortal
The whiles my stonish't hart stood in amaze,
Through sweet illusion of her lookes delight;
I mote perceive how, in her glauncing sight,
Legions of loves with little wings did fly;
Darting their deadly arrowes, fyry bright,
At every rash beholder passing by.
One of those archers closely I did spy,
Ayming his arrow at my very hart:
When suddenly, with twincle of her eye, ●
The Damzell broke his misintended dart.
Had she not so doom, sure I had bene slayne;
Yet as it was, I hardly scap't with paine.

XVII

The glorious pourtraict of that Angels face,
Made to amaze weake mens confused skil,
And this worlds worthlesse glory to embase,
What pen, what pencill, can expresse her till?
For though he colours could devize at will,
And eke his learned hand at pleasure guide,
Least, trembling, it his workmanship should
spill;

Yet many wondrous things there are beside:
The sweet eye-glaunces, that like arrows
glide; [hart;
The charming smiles, that rob sence from the
The lovely plesance; and the lofty pride;
Cannot expressed be by any art. [needes,
A greater craftesmans hand thereto doth
That can expresse the life of things indeed.

XVIII

The rolling wheele that runneth often round,
The hardest steele, in tract of time doth teare:
And drizzling drops, that often doe redound,
The firmest flint doth in continuance weare:
Yet cannot I, with many a dropping teare
And long intreaty, soften her harl hart;
That she will once vouchsafe my plaint to
heare,
Or looke with pittie on my payneful smart;
But, when I pleade, she bids me play my part;
And, when I weep, she sayes, Teares are but
water,
And, when I sigh, she sayes, I know the art;
And, when I waile, she turnes hir selfe to
laughter. [vaine,
So do I weepe, and waile, and pleade in
Whiles she as steele and flint doth still re-
mayne.

XIX

The merry Cuckow, messenger of Spring,
His trompet shrill hath thrise already sounded,
That warnes al lovers wayt upon their king,
Who now is comming forth with girland
crowned.
With noyse whereof the quyre of Byrds re-
sounded,
Their antheimes sweet, devized of loves prayse,
That all the woods theyr echoes back re-
bounded,
As if they knew the meaning of their layes.
But mongst them all, which did Loves honor
rayse,
No word was heard of her that most it ought;
But she his precept proudly disobayes,
And doth his ydle message set at nought.
Therefore, O Love, unlesse she turne to thee
Ere Cuckow end, let her a rebell be!

XX

In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace,
And doe myne humbled hart before her poure;
The whiles her foot she in my necke doth place,
And tread my life downe in the lowly floure.
And yet the Lyon that is Lord of power,
And reigne over every beast in field,
In his most pride disdaineth to devoure
The silly lambe that to his might doth yield.
But she, more cruell, and more salvage wyde,

Then either Lyon or the Lyonesse;
Shames not to be with guiltlesse bloud de-
fyld,

But taketh glory in her cruellnesse.

Fayrer then fayrest! let none ever say,
That ye were blooded in a yeekled pray.

XXI

Was it the worke of Nature or of Art,
Which tempred so the feature of her face,
That pride and meeknesse, mixt by equal part,
Doe both appeare? adorne her beauties grace?
For with mild pleasance, which doth pride dis-
place,

She to her love doth lockers eyes allure;
And, with sterne countenance, back again doth
chace

Their looser looks that stir up lustes impure;
With such strange termes her eyes she doth
inure,

That, with one looke, she doth my life dismay;
And with another doth it streight recure;
Her smile me drawes; her frowne me drives
away.

Thus doth she traine and teach me with her
Such art of eyes I never read in bookes

XXII

This holy season, fit to fast and pray,
Men to devotion ought to be inclynd:
Therefore, I lykewise, on so holy day,
For my sweet Saynt some service fit will find.
Her temple fayre is built within my mind,
In which her glorious ymage placed is;
On which my thoughts doo day and night
attend,

Lyke sacred priests that never thinke amisse!
There I to her, as th' author of my blisse,
Will builde an altar to appease her ire;
And on the same my hart will sacrifice,
Burning in flames of pure and chaste desyre:

The which younsafe, O goddesse, to accept,
Amongst thy dearest relics to be kept.

XXIII

Penelope, for her Uliesses sake,
Deviz'd a Web her wooers to deceave;
In which the worke that she all day did make,
The same at night she did againe unreave:
Such subtile craft my Damzell doth conceave,
Th' importune suit of my desire to shonne:
For all that I in many dayes doo weave,
In one short houre I find by her undonne.
So, when I thinke to end that I begonne,
I must begin and never bring to end:
For with one looke she spils that long I sponne;
And with one word my whole years worke
doth rend.

Such labour like the Spyders web I fynd,
Whose fruitlesse worke is broken with least
wynd.

XXIV

When I behold that beauties wonderment,
And rare perfection of each goodly part;
Of natures skill the onely complement;
I honor and admire the Makers art.
But when I feele the bitter balefull smart,
Which her sayre eyes unware doe worke in
mee,

That death out of theyr shiny beames doe dart;
I thinke that I a new Pandora see,
Whom all the Gods in counsell did agree
Into this sinfull world from heaven to send;
That she to wicked men a scourge should
bee,

For all their faults with which they did offend.
But, since, ye are my scourge, I will in-
treat,

That for my faults ye will me gently beat.

XXV

How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure,
And know no end of her owne mysery,
But wast and weare away in termes unsure,
Twixt feare and hope depending doubtfully!
Yet better were attonce to let me die,
And shew the last ensample of your pride;
Then to torment me thus with cruelty,
To prove your powre, which I too well have
tride.

But yet if in your hardned brest ye hide
A close intent at last to shew me grace;
Then all the woes and wrecks which I abide,
As meanes or blisse I gladly wil embrace;
And wish that more and greater they might
be,

That greater meede at last may turne to mee.

XXVI

Sweet is the Rose, but growes upon a brere;
Sweet is the Junipere, but sharpe his bough;
Sweet is the Eglantine, but pricketh nere;
Sweet is the Firblomme, but his braunche
is rough;
Sweet is the Cypresse, but his rynd is tough;
Sweet is the Nut, but bitter is his pill;
Sweet is the Broome-flowre, but yet sowre
enough;

And sweet is Moly, but his root is ill.
So every sweet with soure is tempred still,
That maketh it be coveted the more:
For easie things, that may be got at will,
Most sorts of men doe set but little store.
Why then should I accompt of little paine.
That endless pleasure shall unto me gaine!

XXVII

Faire Proud! now tell me, why should faire
be proud,

Sith all worlds glorie is but drosse uncleane,
And in the shade of death it selfe shall shroud,
However now thereof ye little weene!

That goodly Idoll, now so gay besene,
Shall doffe her fleshs borrowd fayre attyre,
And be forgot as it had never beene;

That many now much worship and admire!
Ne any then shall after it inquire,
Ne any mention shall thereof remaine,

But what this verse, that never shall expyre,
Shall to your purchas with her thankes paine!
Faire! be no longer proud of that shall perish;

But that, which shall you make immortall,
cherish.

XXVIII

The laurel-leave, which you this day doe
weare,

Gives me great hope of your relenting mynd:
For since it is the badge which I doe beare,
Ye, bearing it, doe seeme to me inclin'd:

The powre thereof, which ofte in me I find,
Let it lykewise your gentle brest inspire
With sweet infusion, and put you in mind

Of that proud mayd, whom now those leaves
attyre:

Proud Daphne, scorning Phœbus lovely fyre,
On the Thessalian shore from him did flie:
For which the gods, in their revengefull fyre,
Did her transforme into a laurell-tree.

Then fly no more, sayre Love, from ^{me} Phœbus
chace,

But in your brest his leafe and love embrace.

XXIX

See! how the stubborne damzell doth de-
prave

My simple meaning with displayfull scorne;
And by the bay, which I unto her gave,
Accompts my self her captive quite forlorne.
The bay (quoith she) is of the victours borne,
Yielded them by the vanquisht as they meete,
And they therewith doe Pœtes heads adorne,
To sing the glory of their famous deedes.

But sith she will the conquest challenge needs,
Let her accept me as her faithfull thrall:

That her great triumph, which my skill ex-
ceeds,

I may in trump of fame blaze over-all.

Then would I decke her head with glorious
bayes, ^[praise]

And fill the world with her victorious

XXX

My love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre;
How comes it then that this her cold so great

Is not dissolv'd through my so hot desyre,
But harder growes the more I her intreat!
Or how comes it that my exceeding heat
Is not delayd by her hart-frozen cold;

But that I burne much more in boyling sweat,
And feele my flames augmented manifold!
What more miraculous thing may be told,
That fire, which all things melts, should harden
yse;

And yse, which is congeald with sencelesse cold,
Should kindle fyre by wonderfull devyse!

Such is the powre of love in gentle mind,
That it can alter all the course of kynd.

XXXI

Ah! why hath nature to so hard a hart
Given so goodly giftes of beauties grace!

Whose pryde depraves each other better part,
And all those pretious ornaments deface.

Sith to all other beastes of bloody race
A dreadfull countenance she given hath;

That with theyr terror al the rest may
chace,

And warne to shun the daunger of theyr wrath.
But my proud one doth worke the greater
scath,

Through sweet allurement of her lovely hew;
That she the better may in bloody bath

Of such poor thralls her cruell hands embrew.
But, did she know how ill these two accord
Such cruelty she would have soone abhord

XXXII

The paynefull smith, with force of fervent
heat,

The hardest yron soone doth mollify;
That with his heavy sledge he can it beat,

And fashion to what he it list apply.
Yet cannot all these flames, in which I fry,

Her hart more harde then yron soft a whit:
Ne all the playnts and prayers, with which I

Doe beat on th' andvile of her stubberne wit
But still, the more she servent sees my fit,

The more she frieseth in her wilfull pryde;
And harder growes, the harder she is smit

With all the playnts which to her be applyde.
What then remains but I to ashes burne,
And she to stones at length allfrozen turne!

XXXIII

Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny,
To that most sacred Emperesse, my dear dred,

Not finishing her Queene of Faëry,
That mote enlarge her living prayeses, dead.

But Lodwick, this of grace to me a read;
Do ye not thinck th' accomplishment of it

Sufficient worke for one mans simple head,
All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ?

How then should I, without another wit,
 Think ever to endure so tedious toyle!
 Sins that this one is tost with troublous fit
 Of a proud love, that doth my spirite spoyle.
 Ceasse then, till she vouchsafe to grawnt
 me rest;
 Or lend you me another living brest.

XXXIV

Lyke as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde,
 By conduct of some star, doth make her way;
 Whenas a storme hath dimd her trusty gyde,
 Out of her course doth wander far astray!
 So I, whose star, that wont with her bright
 ray
 Me to direct, with cloudes is over-cast,
 Doe wander now, in darknesse and dismay,
 Through hidden perils round about me plast;
 Yet hope I well that, when this storme is
 My Helice, the lodestar of my lyfe, [past,
 Will shine again, and looke on me at last,
 With lovely light to cleare my cloudy grief,
 Till then I wander carefull, comfortlesse,
 In secret sorow, and sad pensivenesse.

XXXV

My hungry eyes, through greedy covetize
 Still to behold the object of their paine,
 With no contentment can themselves suffice,
 But, having, pine; and, having not, com-
 plaine.
 For, lacking it, they cannot lyfe sustayne;
 And, having it, they gaze on it the more;
 In their amazement lyke Narcissus vaine,
 Whose eyes him starv'd: so plenty makes me
 poore.
 Yet are mine eyes so filled with the store
 Of that faire sight, that nothing else they
 brooke,
 But lothe the things which they did like before.
 And can no more endure on them to looke.
 All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to me,
 And all their shewes but shadowes, saving
 she.

XXXVI

Tell me, when shall these wearie woes have
 end,
 Or shall their ruthlesse torment never cease;
 But al my dayes in pining langour spend,
 Without hope of awagement or release?
 Is there no meanes for me to purchase peace,
 Or make agreement with her thrilling eyes;
 But that their cruelty doth still increase,
 And dayly more augment my miseries?
 But, when ye have shewd all extremities,
 Then thinke how little glory ye have gayned
 By slaying him, whose life, though ye despyse,
 Mote have your life in honour long maintayned.

But by his death, which some perhaps will
 mone,
 Ye shall condemned be of many a one.

XXXVII

What guyle is this, that those her golden
 She doth attyre under a net of gold; [tresses
 And with sly skill so cunningly them dresse,
 That which is gold, or heare, may scarce be
 gold?

Is it that mens frayle eyes, which gaze too bold,
 She may entangle in that golden snare;
 And, being caught, may craftily enfold
 Theyr weaker harts, which are not wel aware?
 Take heed, therefore, myne eyes, how ye doe
 stare

Henceforth too rashly on that guilefull net,
 In which, if ever ye entrapped are,
 Out of her bands ye by no meanes shall get.
 Fondnesse were for any, being free,
 To covet fetters, though they golden bee!

XXXVIII

Arion, when, through tempests cruel wracke,
 He forth was thrown into the greedy seas;
 Through the sweet musick, which his harp
 did make,
 Allur'd a Dolphin him from death to ease.
 But my rude musick, which was wont to please
 Some dainty cares, cannot, with any skill,
 The dreadfull tempest of her wrath appease,
 Nor move the Dolphin from her stubborn will,
 But in her pride she dooth persevere still.
 All careless how my life for her decays:
 Yet with one word she can it save or spill.
 To spill were pitty, but to save were prayse!
 Chose rather to be prayd for dooing good,
 Then to be blam'd for spilling guiltlesse
 blood.

XXXIX

Sweet Smile! the daughter of the Queene of
 Love,
 Expressing all thy mothers powrefull art.
 With which she wants to temper angry Jove,
 When all the gods he threats with thundering
 dart:
 Sweet is thy vertue, as thy selfe sweet art.
 For, when on me thou shinedst late in sadnesse,
 A melting pleasance ran through every part,
 And me revived with hart-robbing gladnesse.
 Whylest rapt with joy resembling heavenly
 madnes,
 My soule was ravisht quite as in a trance;
 And feeling thence, no more her sorowes
 sadnesse,
 Fed on the fulnesse of that chearefull glaunce,
 More sweet than Nectar, or Ambrosiall meat,
 Seemd every bit which thenceforth I did eat.

XL

Mark when she smiles with amiable cheare,
And tell me whereto can ye lyken it ;
When on each eyelid sweetly doe appeare
An hundred Graces as in shade to sit,
Lykest it seemeth, in my simple wit,
Unto the fayre sunshine in somers day ;
That, when a dreadfull storme away is flit,
Through the broad world doth spread his goodly
ray ;

At sight whereof, each bird that sits on spray,
And every beast that to his den was fled,
Comes forth afresh out of their late dismay,
And to the light lift up theyr drouping hed.

So my storme-beaten hart likewise is cheared
With that sunshine, when cloudy looks are
cleared.

XLI

Is it her nature, or is it her will,
To be so cruell to an humbled foe ?
If nature ; then she may it mend with skill :
If will ; then she at will may will forgoe.
But if her nature and her will be so, [most,
That she will plague the man that loves her
And take delight t' encrease a wretches woe ;
Then all her natures goodly gifts are lost :
And that same glorious beauties ydle boast
Is but a bayt such wretches to beguile,
As, being long in her loves tempest tost,
She meanes at last to make her pitious spoyle.
O fayrest fayre ! let never it be named,
That so fayre beauty was so fowly shamed.

XLII

The love which me so cruelly tormenteth,
So pleasing is in my extreamest paine,
That, all the more my sorrow it augmenteth,
The more I love and doe embrace my bane.
Ne doe I wish (for wishing were but vaine)
To be acquit fro my continual smart ;
But joy, her thrall for ever to remayne,
And yield for pledge my poore captiv'd hart ;
The which, that it from her may never start,
Let her, yf please her, bynd with adamant
chainne : [vart

And from all wandering loves, which mote per-
His safe assurance, strongly it restrayne.

Onely let her abstaine from cruelty.
And doe me not before my time to dy.

XLIII

Shall I then silent be, or shall I speake ?
And, if I speake, her wrath renew I shall ;
And, if I silent be, my hart will breake,
Or choked be with overflowing gall.
What tyranny is this, both my hart to thrall,
And eke my tounge with proud restraint to tie ;
That nether I may speake nor thinke at all,
But like a stupid stock in silence die !

Yet I my hart with silence secretly
Will teach to speak, and my just cause to plead ;
And eke mine eies, with meek humility,
Love-learned letters to her eyes to read ;

Which her deep wit, that true harts thought
can spel,

Will soon conceive, and learne to construe
well.

XLIV

When those renowned noble Peres of Greece,
Through stubborn pride, amongst themselves did
Forgetfull of the famous golden fleece ; [jar,
Then Orpheus with his harp theyr strife did bar.
But this continuall, cruell, civill warre,
The which my selfe against my selfe doe make ;
Whilost my weak powies of passions warreid
No skill can stint, nor reason can aslake. [arre ;
But, when in hand my tunelesse harp I take,
Then doe I more augment my foes despight ;
And griepe renew, and passions doe awake
To battaile, fresh against my selfe to fight.

Mongst whome the more I seeke to settle
peace,

The more I fynd their malice to increase.

XLV

Leave, lady ! in your glasse of cristall clene,
Your goodly selfe for evermore to vew :
And in my selfe, my inward selfe, I meane,
Most lively lyke behold your semblant trew.
Within my hart, though hardly it can shew
Thing so divine to vew of earthly eye,
The fayre Idea of your celestiall hew
And every part remains immortally :
And were it not that, through your cruelty,
With sorrow dimmed and deform'd it were,
The goodly ymage of your visnomy,
Clearer then cristall, would therein appere.

But, if your selfe in me ye playne will see,
Remove the cause by which your fayre
beames darkned be.

XLVI

When my abodes prefixed time is spent,
My cruell fayre streight bids me wend my way :
But then from heaven most hideous stormes
are sent,

As willing me against her will to stay.
Whom then shall I, or heaven or her, obey ?
The heavens know best what is the best for me.
But as she will, whose will my life doth sway.
My lower heaven, so it perforce must bee.
But ye high heavens, that all this sorowe see,
Sith all your tempests cannot hold me backe,
Aswage your storms ; or else both you, and she,
Will both together me too sorely wracke.

Enough it is for one man to sustaine
The stormes, which she alone on me doth
raine.

XLVII

Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes,
Untill ye have theyr guylefull traynes well
tryde:

For they are lyke but unto golden hookes,
That from the foolish fish theyr bayts doe hyde:
So she with flattering smyles weake harts doth
guyde

Unto her love, and tempte to theyr decay;
Whome, being caught, she kills with cruell
pryde,

And feeds at pleasure on the wretched pray:
Yet, even whylst her bloody hands them slay,
Her eyes looke lovely, and upon them smyle;
That they take pleasure in her cruell play,
And, dying, doe themselves of payne beguyle.

O mighty charm! which makes men love
theyr bane, [payne.

And thinck they dy with pleasure, live with

XLVIII

Innocent paper; wherem too cruell hand
Did make the matter to avenge her yre:
And, ere she could thy cause wel understand,
Did sacrifice unto the greedy fyre.

Well worthy thou to have found better hyre,
Then so bad end for hecetics ordayned;
Yet heresy nor treason didst conspire,

But plead thy mai-ters cause, unjustly payned
Whom she, all carelesse of his grieve con-
strayned

To utter forth the anguish of his hart:
And would not heare, when he to her complayned
The piteous passion of his dying smart.

Yet live for ever, though against her will.
And speake her good, though she requite it ill.

XLIX

Fayre cruell! why are ye so fierce and cruell?
Is it because your eyes have powre to kill?

Then know that mercy is the Mighties Jewell:
And greater glory shynke, to save then spill.

But if it be your pleasure, and proud will,
To shew the powre of your imperious eyes;

Then not on him that never thought you ill,
But bend your force against your enemyes:

Let them feele the utmost of your cruelties;
And kill with looks as Cockatrices doo:

But him, that at your footstoolle humbled lies,
With mercifull regard give mercy too.

Such mercy shall you make admyr'd to be;
So shall you live, by giving life to me.

L

Long languishing in double malady
Of my harts wound, and of my bodys grieve;
There came to me a leach, that would apply
Fit medicines for my bodys best reliefe.

Vayne man, quod I, that hast but little prife
In deep discovery of the mynds disease;

Is not the hart of all the body chiefe,
And rules the members as it selfe doth please?

Then, with some cordialls, seeke first to appease
The inward languor of my wounded hart,

And then my body shall have shortly ease:
But such sweet cordialls passe I'physitions' art.

Then, my lyfes Leach I doe your skill reveale;
And with one salve, both hart and body
heale.

LI

Doe I not see that fayrest ymages
Of hardest marble are of purpose made,

For that they should endure through many ages,
Ne let their famous moniments to fade?

Why then doe I, untrainde in lovers trade,
Her hardnes blame, which I should more com-

Sith neve rought was excellent assayde [mend?
Which was net hard t' atchieve and bring to
end.

Ne ought so hard, but he, that would attend,
Mote soften it and to his will allure:

So doe I hope her, stubborne hart to bend,
And that it then more stedfast will endure:

Onely my paines will be the more to get her;
But, having her, my joy will be the greater.

LII

So oft as homeward I from her depart,
I goe lyke one that, having lost the field,

Is prisoner led away with heavy hart,
Despoild of warlike armes and knownen shield.

So doe I now my selfe a prisoner yeeld
To sorrow and to solitary paine;

From presence of my dearest deare exyld,
Long-while alone in langour to remaine.

There let no thought of joy, or pleasure vaine,
Dare to approach, that may my solace breed;

But sudden dumps, and drery sad disdayne
Of all worlds gladnesse, more my torment feed.

So I her absens will my penance make,
That of her presens I my meed may take.

LIII

The Panther, knowing that his spotted hyde
Doth please all beasts, but that his looks them
fray;

Within a bush his dreadfull head doth hide,
To let them gaze, whylest he on them may pray:

Right so my cruell fayre with me doth play;
For, with the goodly semblant of her hew,

She doth allure me to mine owne decay,
And then no mercy will unto me shew.

Great shame it is, thing so divine in view,
Made for to be the worlds most ornament,

To make the bayte her gazers to embrow:
Good shames to be to ill an instrument!

But mercy doth with beautie best agree,
As in theyr Maker ye them best may see.

LIV

Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay,
My love, lyke the Spectator, ylly sits;
Beholding me, that all the pageants play,
Disguysing diversly my troubled wits,
Sometimes I joy when glad occasion fits,
And mask in myrth lyke to a Comedy:
Soone after, when my joy to sorrow flits,
I waile, and make my woes a Tragedy.
Yet she, beholding me with constant eye,
Delights not in my merrth, nor rues my smart:
But, when I laugh, she mocks; and, when I cry,
She laughs, and hardens evermore her hart.

What then can move her? if nor merrth nor
moue,
She is no woman, but a senselesse stone.

LV

So oft as I her beauty doe behold,
And therewith doe her cruelty compare,
I marvaile of what substance was the mould,
The which her made uttonce so cruell faire.
Not earth, for her high thoughts more heavenly
are:

Not water; for her love doth burne like fyre:
Not ayre; for she is not so light or rare:
Not fyre: for she doth friese with faint desire.
Then needs another Element inquire
Whereof she mote be made, that is, the skye.
For to the heaven her haughty lookes aspire:
And eke her mind is pure immortall hye.

Then, sith so heaven ye lykened are the best,
Be lyke in mercy as in all the rest.

LVI

Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and unkind,
As is a Tygre, that with greedinesse [and
Hunts after bloud; when he by chance doth
A feeble beast, doth felly him oppresse.
Fayre be ye sure, but proud and pittilesse,
As is a storme, that all things doth prostrate;
Finding a tree alone all comfortlesse,
Beats on it strongly, it to ruinate.
Fayre be ye sure, but hard and obstinate,
As is a rocke amidst the raging floods:
Gaynet which, a ship, of succour desolate,
Doth suffer wreck both of her selfe and goods.

That ship, that tree, and that same beast,
am I,

Whom ye doe wreck, doe ruine, and destroy.

LVII

Sweet warrior! when shall I have peace
with you?
High time it is this warre now ended were

Which I no lenger can endure to sue,
Ne your incessant battry more to beare:
So weake my powres, so sore my wounds,
appeare,
That wonder is how I should live a jot,
Seeing my hart through-launced every where
With thousand arrowes, which your cies have
shot:

Yet shoot ye sharply still, and spare me not,
But glory thinke to make these cruel stoures.
Ye cruell one! what glory can be got,
In slaying him that would live gladly yours!
Make peace therefore, and graunt me timely
grace,
That al my wounds will heale in little space.

LVIII

By her that is most assured to her selfe.

Weake is th' assurance that weake flesh re-
poseth

In her owne powre, and scorneth others ayde;
That soonest fals, when as she most supposeth
Her selfe as unli, and is of nought affrayd.
All flesh is frailte, and all her strength unstayd,
Like a vaine bubble blown up with ayre:
Devouring tyme and changefull chance have
prayd,

Her glories pride that none may it repayre.
Ne none so rich or wise, so strong or fayre,
But fayleth, trusting on his owne assurance;
And he, that standeth on the hyghest stayre,
Fals lowest; for on earth nought hath endur-
ance.

Why then doe ye, prond fayre, misdeeme
That to your selfe ye most assured are!

LIX

Thrise happie she! that is so well assured
Unto her selfe, and setled so in hart,
That nether will for better be allured,
Ne feard with worse to any chaunce to start;
But, like a steddy ship, doth strongly part
The raging waves, and keeps her course
aright;

Ne ought for tempest doth from it depart,
Ne ought for fayrer weathers false delight.
Such selfe-assurance need not feare the spight
Of grudging foes, ne favour seek of friends:
But, in the stay of her owne stedfast might,
Nether to one her selfe nor other bends.

Most happy she, that most assur'd doth rest;
But he most happy, who such one loves best.

LX

They, that in course of heavenly spheares are
skild,
To every planet point his sundry yeare:

In which her circles voyage is fulfilled,
As Mars in three-score yeares doth run his
sphaere.

So, since the winged god his planet cleare
Began in me to move, one yeare is spent :
The which doth longer unto me appeare,
Then all those forty which my life out-went.
Then by that count, which lovers books invent,
The sphaere of Cupid forty yeares contains :
Which I have wasted in long languishment,
That seemd the longer for my greater paines.

But let my loves fayre Planet short her
wayes,

This yeare ensuing, or else short my dayes.

LXI

The glorious image of the Makers beutie,
My soverayne saynt, the Idoll of my thought,
Dare not henceforth, above the bounds of
dewtie,

T^e accuse of pride, ~~ou~~rashly blame for ought.
For being, as she is, divinely wrought,
And of the brood of Angels heavenly borne;
And with the crew of blessed Saynts upbrought,
Each of which did her with theyr guifts adorne;
The bud of joy, the blossome of the morne,
The beame of light, whom mortal eyes admyre;
What reason is it then but she should scorne
Base things, that to her love too bold aspire !

Such heavenly formes ought rather worshipt
be,

Then dare be lov'd by men of meane degree.

LXII

The weary yeare his race now having run,
The new begins his compast course anew :
With shew of morning mylde he hath begun,
Betokening peace and plenty to ensue.

So let us, which this change of weather view,
Change eke our mynds, and former lives
amend;

The old yeares sinnes forepast let us eschew,
And fly the faults with which we did offend.
Then shall the new yeares joy forth freshly
send,

Into the glooming world, his gladsome ray :
And all these stormes, which now his beauty
blend,

Shall turne to caulmes, and tymely cleare away.

So, likewise, Love ! cheare you your heavy
spright,

And change old yeares annoy to new de-
light.

LXIII

After long stormes and tempests sad assay,
Which hardly I endured heretofore,

In dread of death, and daungerous dismay,
With which my silly barke was tossed sore :

I doe at length descry the happy shore,
In which I hope ere long for to arryve :

Fayre soyle it seemes from far, and fraught
with store

Of all that deare and daynty is alyve.

Most happy he ! that can at last atchyve

The joyous safety of so sweet a rest ;

Whose least delight sufficeth to deprive

Remembrance of all paines which him opprest.

■ All paines are nothing in respect of this ;

■ All sorrowes short that gaine eternall blisse.

LXIV

Comming to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found),

Me seemd, I smelt a garden of sweet flowres,

That dainty odours from them threw around,

For damzels fit to decke their lovers bowres.

Her lips did smell lyke unto Gilly-flowers ;

Her ruddy chackes, lyke unto Roses red ;

Her snowy browes, like budded Bellamoures ;

Her lovely eyes, lyke Pincks but newly spread ;

Her goodly bosome, lyke a Strawberry bed ;

Her neck, lyke to a bounch of Cullambynes ;

Her breast, lyke Lillyes, ere theyr leaves be

shed ;

Her nipples, lyke young blossomed Jessemynes :

Such fragrant flowers doe give most odorous

smell ;

But her sweet odour did them all excell.

LXV

The doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre love, is

That forldy feare to loose your liberty ; [vaine,

When, loosing one, two liberties ye gayne,

And make him bond that bondage earst dyd fly.

Sweet be the bands, the which true love doth

Without constraynt, or dread of any ill : [tyme

The gentle birde feesles no captivity

Within her cage ; but singes, and feeds her fill.

There pride dare not approach, nor discord spill

The league twixt them, that loyal love hath

bound :

But simple truth, and mutuall good-will,

Seekes with sweet peace, to salve each others

wound :

There Fayth doth fearlesse dwell in brasen

And spotlesse Pleasure builds her sacred

bovre.

LXV.

To all those happy blessings, which ye have

With plenteous hand by heaven upon you

thrown ;

This one disparagement they to you gave,

That ye your love lent to so meane a one.

Yee, whose high worths surpassing paragon

Could not on earth have found one fit for mate,

Ne but in heaven matchable to none,

Why did ye stup unto so lowly state ?

But ye thereby much greater glory gate,
Then had ye sorted with a princes pere :
For, now your light doth more itself dilate,
And, in my darknesse, greater doth appeare,
Yet, since your light hath once enlumin'd me,
With my reflex yours shall encreased be.

LXXVII

lyke as a huntsman after weary chace,
Seeing the game from him escapt away,
Sits downe to rest him in some shady place,
With panting hounds beguiled of their pray :
So, after long pursuit and vaine assay,
When I all weary had the chace forsooke,
The gentle deare returnd the selfe-same way,
Thinking to quench her thirst at the next
brooke :

There she, beholding me with mylder looke,
Sought not to fly, but searelesse still did bide;
Till I in hand her yet halfe trembling tooke,
And with her owne goodwill hir fyrmely tyde.

Strange thing, me seemd, to see a beast so
wyld,
So goodly wonne, with her owne will be-
guyl'd.

LXXVIII

Most glorious Lord of lyfe ! that, on this day,
Didst make thy triumph over death and sin ;
And, having harrowd hell, didst bring away
Captivity thence captive, us to win :
This joyous day, deare Lord, with joy begin ;
And grant that we, for whom thou didst dye,
Being with thy deare blood clene washt from
May live for ever in felicity ! [sin,

And that thy love we weighing worthily,
May likewise love thee for the same againe ;
And for thy sake, that all lyke deare didst
buy,

With love may one another entertayne !
So let us love, deare love, lyke as we ought :
Love is the lesson which the Lord us taught.

LXXIX

The famous warriors of anticke world • •
Used Trophees to erect in stately wize ;
In which they would the rrecords have enroll
Of theyr great deeds and valorous emprise.
What trophie then shall I most fit devise,
In which I may record the memory
Of my loves conquest, peerlesse beauties prise,
Adorn'd with honour, love, and chastity !
Even this verse, vowd to eternity,
Shall be thereof immortal monument ;
And tell her prayse to all posterity,
That may admire such worlds rare wonderment ;
The happy purchase of my glorious spoile,
Gotton at last with labour and long tye.

LXX

Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty king,
In whose cote-armour richly are displayd
All sorts of flowers, the which on earth do
In goodly colours gloriously arrayd ; [spring,
Goe to my love, where she is carelesse layd,
Yet in her winters bowre not well awake ;
Tell her the joyous time wil not be staid,
Unlesse she doe him by the forelock take ;
Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready make,
To wayt on Love amongst his lovely crew ;
Where every one, that misseth then her make,
Shall be by him amearst with penance dew.
Make hast, therefore, sweet love, whilst it
is prime ;

For none can call againe the passed time.

LXXI

I oye to see how, in your drawn work,
Your selfe unto the Bee ye doe compare ;
And me unto the Spyder, that doth lurke
In close awayt, to catch her unaware :
Right so your selfe were caught in cunning
snare

Of a deare foe, and thrall'd to his love ;
In whose streight banis ye now captivd are
So firmly, that ye never may remove.
But as your worke is wov'n all above
With woodbynd flowers and fragrant Eglan-
tine ;
So sweet your prison you in time shall prove,
With many deare delights bedecked fyne.
And all thensforth eternall peace shall see
Betwene the Spyder and the gentle Bee.

LXXII

Of, when my spirit doth spred her bolder
winges,

In mind to mount up to the purest sky ;
It down is weig'd with thought of earthly
And clodg with burden of mortality ; [things,
Where, when that soverayne beauty it doth
Resembling heavens glory in her light, [py,
Drawne with sweet pleasures bayt, it back
doth fly,

And unto heaven forgets her former flight.
There my fraile fancy, led with full delight,
Doth bath in blisse, and mantleth most at
ease ;

Ne thinks of other heaven, but how it might
Her hart desire with most contentment please.
Hart need not wish none other happinesse,
But here on earth to have such heavens
blisse.

LXXIII

Being my self captvyd here in care,
My hart, (whom none with servile bands can
tye,

But the fayre tresses of your golden hayre,
 Breaking his prison, forth to you doth fly.
 Lyke as a byrd, that in ones hand doth spy
 Desir'd food, to it doth make his flight:
 Even so my hart, that wont on your fayre
 eye

To feed his fill, flies backe unto your sight.
 Doe you him take, and in your bosome bright
 Gently encage, that he may be your thrall:
 Perhaps he there may learne, with rare de-
 light,

To sing your name and prayses over-all:
 That it hereafter may you not repent,
 Him lodging in your bosome to have lent.

LXXIV

Most happy letters! fram'd by skilfull trade,
 With which that happy name was first desynd,
 The which three times thrise happy hath me
 made,

With guifts of body, Fortune, and of mind.
 The first my being to me gave by kind,
 From mothers womb deriv'd by dew descent:
 The second is my sovereigne Queene most
 kind,

That honour and large Richesse to me lent:
 The third, my love, my lifes last ornament,
 By whom my spirit out of dust was rayst:
 To speake her prayse and glory excellent,
 Of all alive most worthy to be prayst.

Ye three Elizabethes for ever live,
 That three such graces did unto me give.

LXXV

One day I wrote her name upon the strand;
 But came the waves, and washed it away:
 Agayne, I wrote it with a second hand;
 But came the tyde, and made my paynes his
 pray.

[assay]
 Vayne man, sayd she, that doest in vaine
 A mortall thing so to immortalize:
 For I my selfe shall lyke to this decay,
 And eek my name bee wyped out lykewize.
 Not so, quod I; let baser things devize
 To dy in dust, but you shall live by fame:
 My verse your vertues rare shall eternize,
 And in the heavens wryte your glorious name.

Where, whenas death shall all the world
 subdew,

Our love shall live, and later life renew.

LXXVI

Fayre bosome! fraught with vertues richest
 trespure,

The neast of love, the lodging of delight,
 The bowre of blisse, the paradise of pleasure,
 The sacred harbour of that heavenly spright;

How was I ravisht with your lovely sight,
 And my frayle thoughts too rashly led astray!
 Whiles diving deepe through amorous in-
 sight,

On the sweet spoyle of beautie they did pray;
 And twixt her paps, (like early fruit in May,
 Whose harvest seemd to hasten now apace)
 They loosely did theyr wanton winges display,
 And thence to rest themselves did bokly place.
 Sweet thoughts! I envy your so happy rest,
 Which oft I wisht, yet never was so blest.

LXXVII

Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne;
 A goodly table of pure yvory,
 All spred with juncats, fit to entertayne
 The greatest Prince with pompous roialty:
 Mougst which, there in a silver dish did ly
 Twoo golden apples of unvailew'd price;
 Far passing those which Hercules came by,
 Or those which Atalanta did entice;
 Exceeding sweet, yet voyd of sinfull vice;
 That many sought, yet none could ever taste;
 Sweet fruit of pleasure, brought from Para-
 dice

By Love himselfe, and in his garden plaste.
 Her brest that table was, so richly spredd;
 My thoughts the guests, which would
 thereon have fedd.

LXXVIII

Lackyng my love, I go from place to place,
 Lyke a yowng fawne, that late hath lost the
 hynd; [face,

And seeke each where, where last I sawe her
 Whose ymage yet I carry fresh in mynd.
 I seeke the fields with her late footing synd;
 I seeke her bowre with her late presence
 deckt,

Yet nor in field nor bowre I her can fynd;
 Yet field and bowre are full of her aspect:
 But, when myne eyes I thereunto direct,
 They ydly backe returne to me agayne:
 And, when I hope to see theyr trew object,
 I fynd my selfe but fed with fancies vayne.
 Ceasse then, myne eyes, to seeke her selfe to
 see;

And let my thoughts behold her selfe in mee.

LXXIX

Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it,
 For that your selfe ye dayly such doe see:
 But the trew fayre, that is the gentle wit,
 And vertuous mind, is much more prayd of
 For all the rest, how ever fayre it be, [me:
 Shall turne to nought and loose that glorious
 But onely that is permanent and free [hew;
 From frayle corruption, that doth flesh ensw.

That is true beautie : that doth argue you
To be divine, and borne of heavenly seed ;
Deriv'd from that fayre Spirit, from whom al
true
And perfect beauty did at first proceed :
He onely fayre, and what he fayre hath
made ;
All other fayre, lyke flowrer, untymely fade.

LXXX

After so long a race as I have run
Through Faery land, which those six books
compile,
Give leave to rest me being halfe fordonne,
And gather to myselfe new breath awhile.
Then, as a steed refreshed after toyle,
Out of my prison I will breake anew ;
And stoutly will that second worke assoyle,
With strong endeavour and attention dew.
Till then give leave to me, in pleasant mew
To sport my muse, and sing my loves sweet
praise ;
The contemplation of whose heavenly hew,
My spirit to an higher pitch will rayse,
But let her prayes yet be low and meane,
Fit for the handmayd of the Faery Queene.

LXXXI

Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden
heares [marke ;
With the loose wynd ye waving chance to
Fayre, when the rose in her red cheekes
appeares ;
Or in her eyes the fyre of love does sparke.
Fayre, when her brist, lyke a rich laden barke.
With pretious merchandize she forth doth lay ;
Fayre, when that cloud of pryde, which oft doth
dark
Her goodly light, with smiles she drives away.
But fayrest she, when so she doth display
The gate with pearles and rubyes richly dight :
Through which her words so wise do shake
their way
To beare the message of her gentle spright.
The rest be works of natures wonderment :
But this the worke of harts astonishment.

LXXXII

Joy of my life ! full oft for loving you
I blesse my lot, that was so lucky placed :
But then the more your owne mishap I rew,
That are so much by so meane love embased.
For, had the equal heavens so much you
graced
In this as in the rest, ye mote invent
Som heavenly wit, whose verse could have
enchased
Your glorious name in golden monument.

But since ye deignd so goodly to relent
To me your thrall, in whom is little worth ;
That little, that I am, shall all be spent
In setting your immortall prayes forth :
Whose lofty argument, uplifting me,
Shall lift you up unto an high degree.

LXXXIII

Let not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre
Breake out, that may her sacred peace mo-
lest ;
Ne one light glance of sensuall desyre
Attempt to work her gentle mindes unrest :
But pure affections bred in spotlesse brest,
And modest thoughts breathd from wel-
temperd sprites,
Goe visit her in her chaste bowre of rest
Accompanyd with angelick delights.
There fill your selfe with those most joyous
sights,
The which my selfe could never yet attayne :
But speake no word to her of these sad
plights,
Which her too constant stiffenesse doth con-
strayn.
Onely behold her rare perfection,
And blesse your fortunes fayre election.

LXXXIV

The world that cannot deeme of worthy
things,
When I doe praise her, say I doe but flatter :
So does the Cuckow, when the May is sings,
Begin his witlesse note apace to clatter.
But they that skill not of so heavenly matter,
All that they know not envy or admyre ;
Rather then envy, let them wonder at her,
But not to deeme of her desert aspyre.
Deepe, in the closet of my parts entyre,
Her worth is written with a golden quill,
That me with heavenly fury doth inspire,
And my glad mouth with her sweet prayes
fill. [shal thunder,
Which when as Fame in her shrill trump
Let the world chose to envy or to wonder.

LXXXV

Venemous tounge, tipt with vile adders sting,
Of that selfe kynd with which the Furies fell
Theyr snaky heads doe combe, from which a
spring
Of poysoned words and spitefull speeches well ;
Let all the plagues, and horrid paines, of hell
Upon thee fall for thine accursed hyre
That with false forged lyes, which thou didst
tel,
In my true love did stirre up coles of fyre ;

The sparkes whereof let kindle thine own fyre,
And, catching hold on thine owne wicked hed,
Consume thee quite, that didst with guile con-
spire

In my sweet peace such breaches to have bred!
Shame be thy meed, and mischiefe thy re-
ward,
Dew to thy selfe, that it for me prepar'd!

LXXXVI

Since I did leave the presence of my love,
Many long weary dayes I have outworne;
And many nights, that slowly seemd to move
Theyr sad protract from evening untill morne.
For, when as day the heaven doth adorne,
I wish that night the noyous day would end:
And, when as night hath us of light forlorne,
I wish that day would shortly reascend.
Thus I the time with expectation spend,
And faine my griefe with chaunges to be-
guile,
That further seemes his terme still to extend,
And maketh every minute seeme a myle.

So sorrow still doth seeme too long to last;
But joyous houres doe fly away too fast.

LXXXVII

Since I have lackt the comfort of that light,
The which was wout to lead my thoughts
astray;

I wander as in darkenesse of the night,
Affrayd of every dangers least dismay.

Ne ought I see, though in the clearest day,
When others gaze upon theyr shadowes vayne,
But th' onely image of that heavenly ray,
Whereof some glance doth in mine eie re-
mayne.

Of which beholding the Idæa playne,
Through contemplation of my purest part,
With light thereof I doe my selfe sustayne,
And thereon feed my love-affamish't hart.

But, with such brightnesse whylest I fill
my mind,

I starve my body, and mine eyes doe blynd.

LXXXVIII

Lyke as the Culver, on the bared bough,
Sits mourning for the absence of her mate;
And, in her song, sends many a wishfull vow
For his returne that seemes to linger late:
So I alone, now left disconsolate,
Mourne to my selfe the absence of my love;
And, wandering here and there all desolate,
Seek with my playnts to match that mournful
dove.

Ne joy of ought that under heaven doth hove
Can comfort me, but her owne joyous sight:
Whose sweet aspect both God and man can
move.

In her unspotted pleasauns to delight.

Dark is my day, whyles her fayre light I
mis,

And dead my life that wants such lively blis.

EPIGRAMS.

I

In youth, before I waxed old,
The blynd boy, Venus baby,
For want of cunning made me bold,
In bitter hyve to grope for honny:
But, when he saw me stung and cry,
He tooke his wings and away did fly.

II

As Diane hunted on a day,
She chaunst to come where Cupid lay,
His quiver by his head:
One of his shafts she stole away.
And one of hers did close convey
Into the others stead:
With that Love wounded my Loves hart,
But Diane beasts with Cupids dart.

III

I saw, in secret to my Dame
How little Cupid humbly came,

And sayd to her; 'All hayle, my mother!'
But, when he saw me laugh, for shame
His face with bashfull blood did flame,
Not knowing Venus from the other.
'Then, never blush, Cupid, quoth I,
For many have err'd in this beauty.'

IV

Upon a day, as Love lay sweetly slumbring
All in his mothers lap;
A gentle Bee, with his loud trumpet murmur-
About him flew by hap. [ring,
Whereof when he was wakened with the
And saw the beast so small; [noyse,
'Whats this (quoth he) that gives so great a
That wakens men withall?' [voyce
In angry wize he flies about,
And threatens all with corage stout.
To whom his mother closely smiling sayd,
'Twixt earnest and twixt game:

'See! thou thyself likewise art litle made,
If thou regard the same.
And yet thou suffrest neyther gods in sky,
Nor men in earth, to rest:
But, when thou art disposed cruelly,
Theyr sleepe thou doost molest.
Then eyther change thy cruelty.
Or give like leave unto the fly.'

Nathelasse, the cruell boy, not so content,
Would needs the fly pursue;
And in his hand, with heedle-se hardiment,
Him caught for to subdue.
But, when on it he hasty hand did lay,
The Bee him stung therefore:
'Now out alas, he cryde, and wel-away!
I wounded am full sore:
The Fly, that I so much did scorne,
Hath hurt me with his little horne.'

Unto his mother straight he weeping came,
And of his griefe complaind:
Who could not chuse but laugh at his fond
Though sad to see him pained. [game,
'Think now (quod she) my sonne, how great
Of those whom thou dost wound: [the smart

Full many thou hast pricked to the hart,
That pitty never found:
Therefore, henceforth some pitty take,
When thou doest spoyle of lovers make.'

She tooke him streight full pitiously lamenting,
And wrapt him in her smock:
She wrapt him sofly, all the while repenting
That he the fly did mock.

She drest his wound, and it embaulmed wel
With salve of soveraigne might:
And then she bath'd him in a dainty well,
The well of deare delight.
Who would not oft be stung as this,
'To be so bath'd in Venus blis?

The wanton boy was shortly wel recured
Of that his malady:
But he, soone after, fresh againe enured
His former cruelty.

And since that time he wounded hath my
With his sharpe dart of love: [selfe
And now forgets the cruel carelesse elfe
His mothers heast to prove.
So now I languish, till he please
My pining anguish to appease.

EPITHALAMION.

Ye learned sisters, which have oftentimes
Beene to me ayding, others to adorne, [rymes,
Whom ye thought worthy of your gracefull
That even the greatest did not greatly scorne.
To heare their names sung in your simple
But joyed in their praise; [layes.

And when ye list your owne mishaps to mourne,
Which death, or love, or fortunes wreck did
ruine,

Your string coul'd soone to sadder tenor turne,
And teach the woods and waters to lament
Your dolefull dreriment:

Now lay those sorrowfull complaints aside;
And, having all your heads with girlands
crown'd,

Helpe me mine owne loves prayes to resound;
Ne let the same of any be envie:
So Orpheus did for his owne bride!

So I unto my selfe alone will sing; [ring.
The woods shall to me answer, and my Echo

Early, before the worlds light-giving lampe
His golden beame upon the hills doth spread,
Having disperst the nights unchearefull dampe,
Doe ye awake; and, with fresh lusty-hed,
Go to the bowre of my beloved love,

My truest turtle dove;

Bid her awake; for Hymen is awake,
And long since ready forth his maske to move,
With his bright Tread that flames with many
a flake,

And many a bachelor to waite on him,
In their fresh garments trim.

Bid her awake therefore, and soone her dight,
For lo! the wished day is come at last.

That shall, for all the paynes and sorrows past,
Pay to her usury of long delight:
And, whylest she doth her dight.

Doe ye to her of joy and solace sing,
That all the woods may answer, and your
eecho ring.

Bring with you all the Nymphes that you can
heare

Both of the rivers and the Forrests greene,
And of the sea that neighbours to her neare:
Al with gay girlands goodly wel besene.

And let them also with them bring in hand
Another gay girland,
For my fayre love, of lillies and of roses,
Bound true love wize, with a blew silke riband.
And let them make great store of bridale poses,

And let them ecke bring store of other flowers,
To deck the bridale bowers. [tread,
And let the ground whereas her foot shall
For feare the stones her tender foot should
wrong,

Be strewed with fragrant flowers all along,
And diapred lyke the discolor mead.
Which done, doe at her chamber dore awayt,
For she will waken strait;
The whiles doe ye this song unto her sing,
The woods shall to you answer, and your Echo
ring.

Ye Nymphes of Mulla, which with careful
heed

The silver scaly trouts doe tend full well,
And greedy pikes which use therein to feed;
(Those trouts and pikes all others doo ex-
cell;)

And ye likewise, which keepe the rushy lake,
Where none doo fishes take; [light,

Bynd up the lockes the which hang scatterd
And in his waters, which your mirror make,
Behold your faces as the christall bright,
That when you come whereas my love doth lie,
No blemish she may spie.

And eke, ye lightfoot mayds, which keepe the
dore,

That on the hoary mountayne used to towre;
And the wyld wolves, which seeke them to
devoure, [near;

With your Steele darts doo chace from comming
Be also present heere,

To helpe to decke her, and to help to sing,
That all the woods may answer, and your
echo ring.

Wake now, my love, awake! for it is time;
The Rosy Morne long since left Tithones bed,
All ready to her silver coche to clyme;
And Phoebus gins to shew his glorious hed.
Hark! how the cheerefull birds do chaunt
their laies

And carroll of Loves praise.
The merry Larke hir mattins sings aloft;
The Thrush replies; the Mavis descant playes:
The Ouzell shrills; the Ruddock warbles soft;
So goodly all agree, with sweet consent,
To this dayes merriment.

Ah! my deere love, why doe ye sleepe thus
long;

When meeter were that ye should now awake,
T' awayt the comming of your joyous make,
And hearken to the birds love-learned song,
The dewy leaues among!

Nor they of joy and pleasance to you sing,
That all the woods them answer, and theyr
echo ring.

My love is now awake out of her dreames,
And her fayre eyes, like stars that dimmed
were [beams

With darksome cloud, now shew theyr goodly
More bright then Iesperus his head doth rere.
Come now, ye damzels, daughters of delight,
Helpe quickly her to dight: [begot,

But first come ye fayre houres, which were
In loves sweet paradise of Day and Night;
Which doe the seasons of the yeare allot,
And al, that ever in this world is fayre,
Doe make and still repayre: [Queene,

And ye three handmayds of the Cyprian
The which doe still adorne her beauties pride,
Helpe to adorne my beautifullest bride:

And, as ye her array, still throw betweene
Some graces to be seene;

And, as ye use to Venus, to her sing,
The whiles the woods shal answer, and your
echo ring.

Now is my love all ready forth to come:
Let all the virgins therefore well awayt:

And ye fresh boyes, that tend upon her grooms,
Prepare your selves; for he is comming strait.
Set all your things in seemely good array,
Fit for so joyf'ull day.

The joyfult day that ever sunne did see,
Faire Sun! shew forth thy favourable ray,
And let thy lifull heat not ferve, t be,
For feare of burning her sunshy my face,
Her beauty to disgrace.

O fayrest Phoebus! father of the Muse!
If ever I did honour thee aright,

Or sing the thing that mote thy mind delight,
Doe not thy servants simple boone refuse;
But let this day, let this one day, be myne;
Let all the rest be thine.

Then I thy soverayne prayses loud wil sing,
That all the woods shal answer, and theyr
echo ring.

Hearke: how the Minstrils gin to shrill aloud
Their merry Musick that resounds from far,
The pipe, the tabor, and the trembling Croud.
That well agree withouten breach or jar.

But, most of all, the Damzels doe delite
When they their tymbrels smyte,
And thereunto doe daunce and carrol sweet,
That all the sences they doe ravish quite;
The whyles the boyes run up and downe the
street,

Crying aloud with strong confused noyce,
As if it were one voyce,

Hymen, io Hymen, Hymen, they do shout;
That even to the heavens theyr shouting shrill
Doth reach, and all the firmament doth fill;
To which the people standing all about,

As in approvance, doe thereto applaud,
And loud advance her laud;
And evermore they Hymen, Hymen sing,
That al the woods them answer, and theyr
eccho ring.

Loe! where she comes along with portly pace,
Lyke Phoebe, from her chamber of the East,
Arysing forth to run her mighty race,
Clad all in white, that seemes a virgin beate.
So well it her bescemes, that ye would weene
Some angell she had beene.
Her long loose yellow locks lyke golden wyre,
Sprinckled with perle, and perling flowres
atweene,

Doe lyke a golden mantle her attyre;
And, being crowned with a girland greene,
Seeme lyke some mayden Queene.
Her modest eyes, abashed to behold
So many gazers as on her do stare
Upon the lowly ground affixed are;
No dars lift up her countenance too bold,
But blush to heare her praysses sung so loud,
So farre from being proud.
Nathlesse doe ye still loud her praysses sing,
That all the woods may answer, and your eccho
ring.

Tell me, ye merchants daughters, did ye see
So fayre a creature in your towne before;
So sweet, so lovely, and so mild as she,
Adorn'd with beautyes grace and vertues store?
Her goodly eyes lyke Saphyres shining bright,
Her forehead yvory white, [ruffled,
Her cheekes lyke apples which the sun hath
Her lips lyke cherries charming men to byte.
Her brest like to a bowle of creame uncruddled,
Her paps lyke lyllics budded,
Her snowie necke lyke to a marble towre;
And all her body like a pallace fayre,
Ascending up, with many a stately stayre,
To honors seat and chastities sweet bowge.
Why stand ye still ye virgins in amaze,
Upon her so to gaze,
Whiles ye forget your former lay to sing?
To which the woods did answer, and your
eccho ring?

But if ye saw that which no eyes can see,
The inwar! beauty of her lively spright,
Garnisht with heavenly guifts of high degree,
Much more then would ye wonder at that
sight,

And stand astonisht lyke to those which red
Medusæes mazeluf hed.
There dwels sweet love, and constant chastity,
Unspotted fayth and comely womanhood,
Regard of honour, and mild modesty;

There vertue raynes as Queene in royal throne,
And giveth lawes alone,
The which the base affections doe obay,
And yeeld theyr services unto her will;
Ne thought of thing uncomely ever may
Thereto approach to tempt her mind to ill.
Had ye once seene these her celestial threa-
And unrevealed pleasures, [sures,
Then would ye wonder, and her praysses sing,
That al the woods should answer, and your
eccho ring.

Open the temple gates unto my love,
Open them wide that she may enter in,
And all the postes adorne as doth behove,
And all the pillours deck with girlands trim,
For to receyve this Saynt with honour dew,
That commeth in to you.
With trembling steps, and humble reverence,
She commeth in, before th' Almightyes view;
Of her ye virgins learne obedience,
When so ye come into those holy places,
To humble your proud faces:
Bring her up to th' high altar, that she may
The sacred ceremonies there partake,
The which do endlesse matrimony make;
And let the roring Organ loudly play
The praises of the Lord in lively notes;
The whiles, with hollow throates,
The Choristers the joyous Antheme sing,
That al the woods may answer, and their
eccho ring.

Behold, whiles she before the altar stands,
Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes,
And blesseth her with his two happy hands,
How the red roses flush up in her cheekes,
And the pure snow, with goodly vermill stayne
Like crimsin dyde in grayne:
That even th' Angels, which continually
About the sacred Altare doe remaine,
Forget their service and about her fly,
Ofte peeping in her face, that seems more fayre,
The more they on it stare.
But her sad eyes, still fastened on the ground,
Are govern'd with goodly modesty,
That suffers not one looke to glance awry,
Which may let in a little thought unsound.
Why blush ye, love, to give to me your hand,
The pledge of all our band!
Sing, ye sweet Angels, Alleluya sing,
That all the woods may answer, and your
eccho ring.

Now al is done: bring home the bride againe;
Bring home the triumph of our victory:
Bring home with you the glory of her gaine
With joyance bring her and with jollity.

Never had man more joyfull day then this,
Whom heaven would heape with blis,
Make feast therefore now all this live-long
day;

This day for ever to me holy is.
Poure out the wine without restraint or stay,
Poure not by cups, but by the belly full,
Poure out to all that wull,
And sprinkle all the postes and wals with wine,
That they may sweat, and drunken be withall.
Crowne ye God Bacchus with a coronall,
And Hymen also crowne with wreathes of vine;
And let the Graces daunce unto the rest,
For they can doo it best:
The whiles the maydens doe theyr carroll sing.
To which the woods shall answer, and theyr
echo ring.

Ring ye the bells, ye yong men of the towne,
And leave your wonted labors for this day:
This day is holy; doe ye write it downe,
That ye for ever it remember may.
This day the sunne is in his chiefest hight,
With Barnaby the bright,
From whence declining daily by degrees,
He somewhat loseth of his heat and light,
When once the Crab behind his back he sees.
But for this time it ill ordained was,
To chose the longest day in all the yeare,
And shortest night, when longest fitter weare:
Yet never day so long, but late would passe.
Ring ye the bells, to make it weare away,
And bonifiers make all day;
And daunce about them, and about them sing,
That all the woods may answer, and your
echo ring.

Ah! when will this long weary day have end,
And lende me leave to come unto my love?
How slowly do the houres theyr numbers
spend?

How slowly does sad Time his feathers move?
Hast thee, O fairest Planet, to thy home,
Within the Westerne fome:
Thy tyred steedes long since have need of rest.
Long though it be, at last I see it gloome,
And the bright evening-star with golden creast
Appeare out of the East. [love!]
Fayre childe of beauty! glorious lampe of
That all the host of heaven in rankes doost
lead, [dread,

And guydest lovers through the nights sad
How chearefully thou lookest from above,
And seemst to laugh atweene thy twinkling
light,

As joying in the sight
Of these glad many, which for joy doe sing,
That all the woods them answer, and their
echo ring!

Now ceasse, ye damsels, your delights fore-past;
Enough it is that all the day was yours:
Now day is doen, and night is nighing fast,
Now bring the Bryde into the brydall bours.
The night is come, now soon her disaray.
And in her bed her lay;
Lay her in lillies and in violets,
And silken courtains over her display,
And odour sheetes, and Arras coverlets.
Behold how goodly my faire love does ly,
In proud humility!
Like unto Maia, when as Jove her took
In Tempe, lying on the flowry gras,
Twixt sleepe and wake, after she weary was,
With bathing in the Acidalian brooke.
Now it is night, ye damsels may be gon,
And leave my love alone,
And leave likewise your former lay to sing:
The woods no more shall answer, nor your
echoing.

Now welcome, night! thou night so long ex-
pected,
That long daies labour doest at last defray,
And all my cares, which crnell Love collected,
Hast sumd in one, and cancelled for aye:
Spread thy broad wing over my love and me,
That no man may us see;
And in thy sable mantle us enwrap,
From feare of perrill and foule horror free.
Let no false treason seeke us to entrap,
Nor any dread disquiet once annoy
The safety of our joy;
But let the night be calme, and quiet some,
Without tempestuous storms or sad afay:
Lyke as when Jove with fayre Alcmena lay,
When he begot the great Trynthian groome:
Or lyke as when he with thy selfe did lie
And begot Majesty.
And let the mayds and yongmen cease to sing,
Ne let the woods them answer nor theyr
echo ring.

Let no lamenting cryes, nor dolefull teares,
Be heard all night within, nor yet without:
Ne let false whispers, breeding hidden feares,
Breake gentle sleepe with misconceived dout.
Let no deluding dreames, nor dreadfull sights,
Make sudden sad affrights; [harmes,
Ne let house-fyres, nor lightnings helpelesse
Ne let the Ponke, nor other evill sprights,
Ne let mischivous witches with theyr charmes,
Ne let hob Goblins, names whose sence we see
not,

Fray us with things that be not: [heard,
Let not the shrieke Owle nor the Storke be
Nor the night Raven, that still deathly yels;
Nor damned ghosts, cald up with mighty spels,
Nor griesly vultures, make us once affeard:

Ne let th' unpleasant Quayre of Frogs still
 Make us to wish theyr chokinge. [croking
 Let none of these theyr drery accents sing;
 Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho
 ring.

But let stil Silence trew night-watches keepe,
 That sacred Peace may in assurance rayne,
 And tymely Sleep, when it is tyme to sleepe,
 May poure his limbs forth on your pleasant
 playne;

The whiles an hundred litle winged lov'ers,
 Like divers-fethered doves,
 Shall fly and flutter round about your bed,
 And in the secret darke, that none reproves,
 Their prety stealthes shal worke, and snares
 shal spread

To flich away sweet snatches of delight,
 Conceald through covert night.

Ye sonnes of Venus, play your sports at will!
 For greedy pleasure, carelesse of your toyes,
 Thinks more upon her paradise of joyes,
 Then what ye do, albe it good or ill.
 All night therefore attend your merry play,
 For it will soone be day:
 Now none doth hinder you, that say or sing;
 Ne will the woods now answer, nor your Eccho
 ring.

Who is the same, which at my window peepes?
 Or whose is that faire face that shines so
 bright?

Is it not Cinthia, she that never sleepea,
 But walkes about high heaven al the night?
 O! fayrest goddess, do thou not envy
 My love with me to spy: [thought,
 For thou likewise didst love, though now un-
 And for a fleece of wooll, which privily
 The Latmian shepherd once unto thee brought,
 His pleasures with thee wrought.
 Therefore to us be favorable now;
 And sith of wemens labours thou hast charge,
 And generation goodly dost enlarge,
 Encline thy will t'effect our wishfull vow,
 And the chaste wombe informe with timely
 seed,

That may our comfort breed:
 Till which we cease our hopefull hap to sing;
 Ne let the woods us answer, nor our Eccho
 ring.

And thou, great Juno! which with awful
 might

The lawes of wedlock still dost patronize;
 And the religion of the faith first plight
 With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize;
 And eeke for comfort often called art
 Of women in their smart;
 Eternally bind thou this lovely band,
 And all thy blessings unto us impart.
 And thou, glad Genius! in whose gentle hand
 The bridle bowre and gemall bed remaine,
 Without blemish or staine;
 And the sweet pleasures of theyr loves delight
 With secret ayde doest succour and supply,
 Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny;
 Send us the timely fruit of this same night.
 And thou, fayre Hebe! and thou, Hymen free!
 Grant that it may so be.

Till which we cease your further prayse to
 sing:
 Ne any woods shall answer, nor your Eccho
 ring.

And ye high heavens, the temple of the gods,
 In which a thousand torches flaming bright
 Doe burne, that to us wretched earthly clods
 In dreadful darknesse lent desired light;
 And all ye powers which in the same remaine,
 More then we men can fayne!

Poure out your blessing on us plentifully,
 And happy influence upon us raine,
 That we may raise a large posterity,
 Which from the earth, which they may long
 With lasting happinesse, [possesse
 Up to your haughty pallsaces may mount;
 And, for the guerdon of theyr glorious merit,
 May heavenly tabernacles there inherit,
 Of blessed Saints for to increase the count.
 So let us rest, sweet love, in hope of this,
 And cease till then our tymely joyes to sing.
 The woods no more us answer, nor our eccho
 ring!

*Song! made in lieu of many ornaments,
 With which my love should duly have been deckt.
 Which cutting off through hasty accidents,
 Ye would not stay your dew time to expect,
 But promist both to recompens;
 Be unto her a goodly ornament,
 And for short time an endlesse monument.*

FOWRE HYMNES,

MADE BY
EDM. SPENSER.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MOST VERTUOUS LADIES,
THE LADIE MARGARET,
COUNTESSSE OF CUMBERLAND, AND
THE LADIE MARIE,
COUNTESSSE OF WARWICK.

HAVING in the greener times of my youth, I doe dedicate joyntly unto you two honorable composed these former two Hymnes in the sisters, as to the most excellent and rare praise of Love and Beautie, and finding that ornaments of all true love and beautie, both the same too much pleased those of like age in the one and the other kinde; humbly beseeching you to vouchsafe the patronage of and disposition, which being too vehemently carried with that kind of affliction, do rather sucke out poyson to their strong passion, then in lieu of the great graces and honourable hony to their honest delight, I was moved by favours which ye dayly shew unto me, untill the one of you two most excellent Ladies, to such time as I may, by better meanes, yeeld call in the same. But, being unable so to doe, you some more notable testimonie of my by reason that many copies thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to thankfull mind and dutifull devotion. And amend, and, by way of retraction, to reforme even so I pray for your happinesse. Greenwich this first of September, 1596. Your Honors most bounden ever,
of earthly or naturall love and beautie, two in all humble service,
others of heavenly and celestiall. The which ED. SP.

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE.

<p>Love, that long since hast to thy mighty powre Perforce subdude my poore captiv'd hart, And, raging now therein with restlesse stowre, Doe tyrannize in everie weaker part: Faine would I seeke to ease my bitter smart By any service I might do to thee, Or ought that else might to thee pleasing bee. And now t' assuage the force of this new flame, And make thee more propitious in my need, I meane to sing the praises of thy name, And thy victorious conquests to areed, By which thou madest many harts to bleed</p>	<p>Of mighty Victors, with wyde wounds embrewed, And by thy cruell darts to thee subdued. Onely I feare my wits enfeebled late. Through the sharpe sorrowes which thou hast me bred, [relate Should faint, and words should faile me to The wondrous triumphs of my great god-head But, if thou wouldst vouchsafe to overspread Me with the shadow of thy gentle wing, I should enabled be thy actes to sing. Come, then, O come, thou mightie God of Love, Out of thy silver bowres and secret bli-se,</p>
---	---

Where thou doest sit in Venus lap above,
 Bathing thy wings in her ambrosiall kisse,
 That sweeter farre then any Nectar is;
 Come softly, and my feeble breast inspire
 With gentle furie, kindled of thy fire.

And ye, sweet Muses! which have often
 proved

The piercing points of his avengefull darts;
 And ye, faire Nymphs! which oftentimes have
 loved

The cruell worker of your kindly smart,
 Prepare your selves, and open wide your harts
 For to receive the triumph of your glorie,
 That made you merie oft when ye were
 sorie.

And ye, faire blossomes of youths wanton
 breed,

Which in the conquests of your beautie lost,
 Wherewith your lovers feeble eyes you feed,
 But sterue their harts that needeth nourture
 most,

Prepare your selves to march amongst his
 And all the way this sacred hymne do sing,
 Made in the honor of your Sovereigne king.

GREAT GOD OF MIGHT, that reignest in the
 mynd,

And all the bodie to thy best doest frame,
 Victor of gods, subduer of mankynd,
 That doest the Lions and fell Tigers tame,
 Making their cruell rage thy scornfull game,
 And in their roring taking great delight,
 Who can expresse the glorie of thy might?

Or who alive can perfectly declare
 The wondrous cradle of thine infancie,
 When thy great mother Venus first thee bare,
 Begot of Plentie and of Penurie,
 Though elder then thine owne nativitie,
 And yet a chyld, renewing still thy yeares,
 And yet the eldest of the heavenly Pearches?

For ere this worlds still moving mightie masse
 Out of great Chaos ugly prison crept,
 In which his goodly face long hidden was ● ●
 From heavens view, and in deepe darknesse
 kept,

Love, that had now long time securely slept
 In Venus lap, unarmed then and naked,
 Gan reare his head, by Clotho being waked:

And, taking to him wings of his owne heate,
 Kindled at first from heavens life-giving fyre,
 He gan to move out of his idle seate;
 Weakely at first, but after with desyre
 Lifted aloft, he gan to mount up hyre,
 And, like fresh Eagle, make his hardie flight
 Through all that great wide wast, yet wanting
 light.

Yet wanting light to guide his wandering way,
 His owne faire mother, for all creatures sake,
 Did lend him light from her owne goodly ray;
 Then through the world his way he gan to
 take,

The world, that was not till he did it make,
 Whose sundrie parts he from themselves did
 sever

The which before had lye[n] confused ever.

The earth, the ayre, the water, and the fyre,
 Then gan to raunge them selves in huge array,
 And with contrary forces to conspyre
 Each against other by all meanes they may,
 Threatning their owne confusion and decay:
 Ayre hated earth, and water hated fyre,
 Till Love relented their rebellious yre.

He then them tooke, and, tempering goodly
 well

Their contrary dislikes with loved meanes,
 Did place them all in order and compell
 To keepe them selves within their sundrie
 raines,

Together linkt with Adamantine chaines;
 Yet so, as that in every living wight
 They mixe themselves, and shew their kindly
 might.

So ever since they firmly have remained,
 And duly well observed his behest;
 Through which now all these things that are
 contained

Within this goodly cope, both most and least,
 Their being have, and dayly are increast
 Through secret sparks of his infused fyre,
 Which in the barraine cold he doth inspyre.

Thereby they all do live, and moved are
 To multiply the likenesse of their kynd,
 Whilst they seeke onely, without further
 care, [fynd;

To quench the flame which they in burning
 But man that breathes a more immortal mynd,
 Not for lusts sake, but for eternitie,
 Seekes to enlarge his lasting progenie:

For, having yet in his deducted spright
 Some sparks remaining of that heavenly fyre,
 He is enlumind with that goodly light,
 Unto like goodly semblant to aspyre;
 Therefore in choice of love he doth desyre
 That seemes on earth most heavenly to em-
 brace,

That same is Beautie, borne of heavenly race.

For sure of all that in this mortall frame
 Contained is, nought more divine doth seeme,
 Or that resembleth more th' immortal flame
 Of heavenly light, then Beauties glorious
 beame.

What wonder then, if with such rage extreme
 Fraile men, whose eyes seek heavenly things to
 see,

At sight thereof so much enravisht bee?

Which well perceiving, that imperious boy
 Doth therewith tip his sharp enpoisoned darts,
 Whuch glancing through the eyes with coun-
 tenance coy [harsh,

Rest not till they have pierst the trembling
 And kindled flame in all their inner parts,
 Which suckes the blood, and drinketh up the
 lyfe,

Of carefull wretches with consuming griefe.

Thenceforth they playhe, and make ful piteous
 mone

I'nto the author of their balefull bane :

The daies they waste, the nights they grieve
 And grone, [daine;

Their lives they loath, and heavens light dis-
 No light but that, whose lampe doth yet remaine
 Fresh burning in the image of their eye,
 They deigne to see, and seeing it still dye.

That whilst thou tyrant Love doest laugh and
 scorne [play,

At their complaints, making their paine thy
 Whylest they lye languishing like thralls for-
 lorne,

The whyles thou doest triumph in their decay ;
 And otherwhyles, their dying to delay,
 Thou doest emmarke the proud hart of her
 Whose love before their life they doe prefer.

So hast thou often done (ay me, the more !)
 To me thy vassall, whose yet bleeding hart
 With thousand wounds thou mangled hast so
 sore,

That whole remaines scarce any little part ;
 Yet, to augment the anguish of my smart,
 Thou hast enfrosen her disclaimefull brest,
 That no one drop of pitie there doth rest.

Why then do I this honor unto thee,
 Thus to ennoble thy victorious name,
 Since thou doest shew no favour unto mee,
 Ne once move ruth in that rebellious Dame,
 Somewhat to slacke the rigour of my flame?
 Certes small glory doest thou winne hereby,
 To let her live thus free, and me to dy.

But if thou be indeede, as men they call,
 The worlds great Parent, the most kind pre-
 server

Of living wights, the soveraine Lord of all,
 How falles it then that with thy furious fer-
 vour

Thou doest afflict as well the not-deserver,
 As him that doeth thy lovely heasts despize,
 And on thy subjects most doest tyrannize ?

Yet herein eke thy glory seemeth more,
 By so hard handling those which best thee
 serve,

That, ere thou doest them unto grace restore,
 Thou mayest well trie if they will ever swerve,
 And mayest them make it better to deserve,
 And, having got it, may it more esteeme ;
 For things hard gotten men more dearly deeme.

So hard those heavenly beauties he enfyred
 As things divine, least passions doe impresse,
 The more of stedfast mynds to be admyred,
 The more they stayed be on stedfastnesse ;
 But baseborne mynds such lamps regard the
 lesse.

Which at first blowing take not hastie fyre ;
 Such fancies feele no love, but loose desyre.

For love is Lord of truth and loialtie,
 Lifting himselfe out of the lowly dust
 On golden plumes up to the purest skie,
 Above the reach of loathly sinfull lust,
 Whose base affect through cowardly distrust
 Of his weake wyngs dare not to heaven fly,
 But like a moldwarpe in the earth doth ly.

His dunghill thoughts, which do themselves
 enure

To dirtie drosse, no higher dare aspyre,
 Ne can his feeble earthly eyes endure
 The flaming light of that celestiall fyre
 Which kindleth love in generous desyre,
 And makes him mount above the native might
 Of heavie earth, up to the heavens hight.

Such is the powre of that sweet passion,
 That it all sordid basenesse doth expell,
 And the refyned mynd doth newly fashion
 Unto a fairer forme, which now doth dwell
 In his high thought, that would it selfe excell,
 Which he beholding still with constant sight,
 Admires the mirrour of so heavenly light.

Whose image printing in his deepest wit,
 He thereon feeds his hungrie fantasy,
 Still full, yet never satisfyed with it ;
 Like Tantale, that in store doth starved ly,
 So doth he pine in most satiety ;
 For nought may quench his infinite desyre,
 Once kindled through that first conceived fyre.

Thereon his mynd affixed wholly is.
 Ne thinks on ought but how it to attaine ;
 His care, his joy, his hope, is all on this,
 That seemes in it all blisses to containe,
 In sight whereof all other blisse seemes vaine :
 Thrice happie man ! might he the same pos-
 sesse,

He faines himselfe, and doth his fortune blisse.

And though he do not win his wish to end,
 Yet thus farre happie he himselfe doth weene,

That heavens such happie grace did to him
lend,
As thing on earth so heavenly to have seene
His harts enshrined saint, his heavens queene,
Fairer then fairest, in his fayning eye,
Whose sole aspect he counts felicitye.

Then forth he casts in his unquiet thought,
What he may do, her favour to obtaine;
What brave exploit, what perill hardly
wrought [paine,
What puissant conquest, what adventurous
May please her best, and grace unto him
gaine;

He dreads no danger, nor misfortune feares,
His faith, his fortune, in his breast he beares.

Thou art his god, thou art his mightie guyde,
Thou, being blind, letst him not see his feares,
But cariest him to that which he hath eyde,
Through seas, through flames, through thousand
swords and speares; [stand,
Ne ought so strong that may his force with-
With which thou armest his resistlesse hand.

Witness Leander in the Euxine waves,
And stout Aeneas in the Trojane fyre,
Achilles preassing through the Phrygian
glaves,

And Orpheus, daring to provoke the yre
Of damned fiends, to get his love retire; [way
For both through heaven and hell thou makest
To win them worship which to thee obey.

And if, by all these perils and these paynes,
He may but purchase lyking in her eye,
What heavens of joy then to himselfe he
faynes!

Estuones he wypes quite out of memory
Whatever ill before he did aby:
Had it bene death, yet would he die againe,
To live thus happie as her grace to gaine.

Yet, when he hath found favour to his will,
He nathemore can so contented rest,
But forsooth further on, and striveth still
T^e approach more neare, till in her inmost
breast

He may embosomd bee and loved best;
And yet not best, but to be lov'd alone;
For love can not endure a Paragone.

The feare whereof, O how doth it torment
His troubled mynd with more then hellish
paine!

And to his fayning fansie represent [vaine,
Sights never seene, and thousand shadoves
To breake his sleepe, and waste his ydle braine:
Thou that hast never lov'd canst not beleieve
Least part of th' evils which poore lovers
greeve.

The gnawing envie, the hart-fretting feare,
The vaine surmizes, the distrustfull shewe,
The false reports that flying tales doe beare,
The doubts, the daungers, the delays, the
woes,
The fayned friends, the unassured foes, [tell,
With thousands more then any tongue can
Doe make a lovers life a wretches hell.

Yet is there one more cursed then they all,
That cancker-worme, that monster, Gelosie,
Which eates the hart and feedes upon the gall,
Turning all loves delight to miserie,
Through feare of loosing his felicitie.
Ah, Gods! that ever ye that monster placed
In gentle love, that all his joyes defaced!

By these, O Love! thou doest thy entrance
make
Unto thy heaven, and doest the more endeeare
Thy pleasures unto those which them partake,
As after stormes, when clouds begin to cleare,
The Sunne more bright and glorious doth ap-
peare;

So thou thy folke, through paines of Purgatorie
Dost beare unto thy bliss, and heavens glorie.

There thou them placest in a Paradize
Of all delight and joyous happie rest,
Where they doe feede on Nectar heavenly-wize,
With Hercules and Hebe, and the rest
Of Venus dearlings, through her bountie blest;
And lie like Gods in yvorie beds arayd,
With rose and lillies over them displayd.

There with thy daughter Pleasure they doe
play [blame,
Their hurtlesse sports, without rebuke or
And in her snowy bosome boldly lay
Their quiet heads, devoid of guilty shame,
After full joyance of their gentle game;
Then her they crowne their Goddess and their
Queene,

And decke with floures thy altars well besecne.

Ay me! deare Lord! that ever I might hope,
For all the paines and woes that I endure,
To come at length unto the wished scope
Of my desire, or might myselfe assure
That happie port for ever to recure! [all,
Then would I thinke these paines no paines at
And all my woes to be but penance small.

Then would I sing of thine immortal praise
An heavenly Hymne, such as the Angels sing,
And thy triumphant name then would I raise
Above all the gods, thee onely honoring
My guide, my God, my victor, and my king:
Till then, dread Lord! vouchsafe to take of me
This simple song, thus fram'd in praise of
thee.

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE.

Am! whither, Love! wilt thou now carrie mee?
 What wantlesse fury dost thou now inspire
 Into my feeble breast, too full of thee?
 Whylest seeking to aslake thy raging fyre,
 Thou in me kindest much more great desyre,
 And up aloft above my strength doest rayse
 The wondrous matter of my fyre to prayse.

That as I earst, in praise of thine owne name,
 So now in honour of thy Mother deare,
 An honourable Hymne I eke should frame,
 And, with the brightnesse of her beautie cleare,
 The ravisht harts of gazefull men might reare
 To admiration of that heavenly light,
 From whence proceeds such soule-enchauting
 might.

Therto do thou, great Goddess! Queene of
 Beauty,

Mother of love, and of all worlds delight,
 Without whose soverayne grace and kindly
 dewty

Nothing on earth seemes fayre to fleshly sight,
 Doe thou vouchsafe with thy love-kindling
 light

T' illuminate my dīm and dulled eyne,
 And beautifie this sacred hymne of thine :

That both to thee. to whom I meane it most,
 And eke to her, whose faire immortal beame
 Hath darted fyre into my feeble ghost,
 That now it wasted is with woes extreame,
 It may so please, that she at length will streame
 Some dew of grace into my withered hart,
 After long sorrow and consuming smart.

WHAT TIME THIS WORLDS GREAT WORK-
 MAISTER DID CAST

To make all things such as we now behold,
 It seemes that he before his eyes had plast
 A goodly Paterne, to whose perfect mould
 He fashioned them as comely as he could,
 That now so faire and seemely they appeare,
 As nought may be amended any wheare.

That wondrous Paterne, wheresoeve it bee,
 Whether in earth layd up in secret store,
 Or else in heaven, that no man may it see
 With sinfull eyes, for feare it to defile,
 Is perfect Beautie, which all men adore;
 Whose face and feature doth so much excell
 All mortall sence, that none the same may tell.

Theof as every earthly thing partakes
 Or more or lesse, by influence divine,

So it more faire accordingly it makes,
 And the grosse matter of this earthly myne
 Which clotheth it thereafter doth refyne.
 Doing away the drosse which dims the light
 Of that faire beame which therein is empight.

For, through infusion of celestiall powre,
 The duller earth it quickneth with delight,
 And life-full spirits privily doth powre
 Through all the parts, that to the lookers sight
 They seeme to please; That is thy soveraine
 might, [beame
 O Cyprian! Queene! which flowing from the
 Of thy bright starre, thou into them doest
 streame.

That is the thing which giveth pleasant grace
 To all things faire, that kindleth lively fyre,
 Light of thy lampe; which, shynying in the
 face,

Thence to the soule darts amorous deavre,
 And robs the harts of those which it admyre;
 Therewith thou pointest thy Sons poynsed
 arrow, [marrow.
 That wounds the life, and wastes the inmost

How vainly then doe ydle wits invent,
 That beautie is nought else but mixture made
 Of colours faire, and goodly temperament
 Of pure complexions, that shall quickly fade
 And passe away, like to a sommers shade;
 Or that it is but comely composition
 Of parts well measurd, with meet disposition!

Hath white and red in it such wondrous powre,
 That it can pierce through th' eyes unto the
 hart, [stowre,
 And therein stirre such rage and restlesse
 As nought but death can stint his dolours
 e c smart?

Or can proportion of the outward part
 Move such affection in the inward mynd,
 That it can rob both sense, and reason blynd?

Why doe not then the blossomes of the field,
 Which are arayd with much more orient hew,
 And to the sense most daintie odours yield,
 Worke like impression in the lookers vew?
 Or why doe not faire pictures like powre shew,
 In which oft-times we nature see of art
 Exceld, in perfect limming every part?

But ah! beleeve me there is more then so,
 That workes such wonders in the minds of
 men;

I, that have often prov'd, too well it know,
And who so list the like assayes to ken,
Shall find by tryall, and confesse it then,
That Beautie is not, as fond men misdeeme,
An outward shew of things that onely seeme.

For that same goodly hew of white and red,
With which the cheekes are sprinkled, shal
decay,

And those sweete rosy leaves, so fairely spied
Upon the lips, shall fade and fall away
To that they were, even to corrupted clay:
That golden wyie, those sparkling stars so
bright,

Shall turne to dust, and loose their goodly light.

But that faire lampe, from whose celestiaall ray
That light proceedes, which kindleth lovers
Shall never be extinguisht nor decay; [fire,
But, when the vitall spirits doe expyre,
Unto her native planet shall retyre;
For it is heavenly borne and can not die,
Being a parcell of the purest skie.

For when the soule, the which derived was,
At first, out of that great immortall Spright,
By whom all live to love, whilome did pas
Downe from the top of purest heavens light
To be embodied here, it thenooke light
And lively spirits from that fayrest starre
Which lights the world forth from his fire
carre.

Which powre retaynyng still or more or lesse,
When she in fleshly seede is eft enraced,
Through every part she doth the same im-
presse.

According as the heavens have her graced,
And frames her house, in which she will be
placed,
Fit for her selfe, adorning it with spoyle
Of th' heavenly riches which she robd ere-
whyle.

Therof it comes that these faire soules, which
have
The most resemblance of that heavenly light,
Frame to themselves most beautifull and
brave

Their fleshly bowre, most fit for their delight,
And the grosse matter by a soveraine might
Tempers so trim, that it may well be seene
A pallas fit for such a virgin Queene.

No every spirit, as it is most pure,
And hath in it the more of heavenly light,
So it the fairer bodie doth procure
To habit in, and it more fairly dight
With chearefull grace and amiable sight;
For of the soule the bodie forme doth take;
For soule is forme, and doth the bodie make.

Therefore where-ever that thou doest behold
A comely corpse, with beautie faire endewed,
Know this for certaine, that the same doth
hold

A beauteous soule, with faire conditions thewed,
Fit to receive the seede of vertue strewed;
For all that faire is, is by nature good;
That is a signe to know the gentle blood.

Yet oft it fallies that many a gentle mynd
Dwels in deformed tabernacle drownd,
Either by chaunce, against the course of kynd,
Or through unaptnesse in the substance
fownd,

Which it assumed of somes tubborne grownd,
That will not yield unto her formes direction,
But is deform'd with some foule imperfection.

And oft it fallies, (aye me, the more to rew!)
That goodly beautie, albe heavenly borne,
Is foule abusd, and that celestiaall hew,
Which doth the world with her delight adorne,
Made but the bait of sinne, and sinners scorne,
Whilest every one doth seeke and sew to have
it,

But every one doth seeke but to deprave it.

Yet nathemore is that faire beauties blame,
But theirs that do abuse it unto ill:
Nothing so good, but that through guilty
shame

May be corrupt, and wrested unto will:
Nathelasse the soule is faire and beauteous
still,

How ever fleshies fault it filthy make;
For things immortal no corruption take.

But ye, faire Dames! the worlds deare orna-
ments

And lively images of heavens light,
Let not your beames with such disparage-
ments

Be dimd, and your bright glorie darkned quight;
But, mindfull still of your first countries sight,
Doe still preserve your first informed grace,
Whose shadow yet shynes in your beauteous
face.

Loath that foule blot, that hellish fierbrand,
Disloiall lust faire beauties foulest blame,
That base affections, which your cares would
blamd

Commend to you by loves abusd fame,
But is indeede the bondslave of defame;
Which will the garland of your glorie marre,
And quench the light of your bright shyning
starre.

But gentle Love, that loiall is and trew,
Will more illumine your resplendent ray,

And adde more brightnesse to your goodly hew,
From light of his pure fire; which, by like
way

Kindled of yours, your likenesse doth display;
Like as two mirrours, by opposd reflexion,
Doe both expresse the faces first impression.

Therefore, to make your beautie more appeare,
It you behoves to love, and forth to lay
That heavenly riches which in you ye beare,
That men the more admyre their fountaine
may;

For else what booteth that celestiall ray,
If it in darknesse be enshrined ever,
That it of loving eyes be vewed never?

But, in your choice of Loves, this well advize,
That liketh to your selves ye them select,
The which your forms first source may sym-
pathize,

And with like beauties parts be inly deckt;
For, if you loosely love without respect,
It is no love, but a discordant warre,
Whose unlike parts amongst themselves do
jarre.

For Love is a celestiall harmonic
Of likely harts composd of starres concent,
Which joyne together in sweete sympathie,
To worke ech others joy and true content.
Which they have harbourd since their first
descent [see
Out of their heavenly bowres, where they did
And know ech other here belov'd to bee.

Then wrong it were that any other twaine
Should in loves gentle hand combynd bee
But those whom heaven did at first ordaine,
And made out of one mould the more t' agree;
For all, that like the beautie which they see,
Streight do not love; for Love is not so light
As streight to burne at first beholders sight.

But they, which love indeede, looke otherwise,
With pure regard and spotlesse true intent,
Drawing out of the object of their eyes
A more refined forme, which they present
Unto their mind, voide of all blemishment;
Which it reducing to her first perfection,
Beholdeth free from fleshes fraile infection.

And then conforming it unto the light,
Which in it selfe it hath remaining still,
Of that first Sunne, yet sparckling in his sight,
Thereof he fashions in his higher skill
An heavenly beautie to his fancies will;
And, it embracing in his mind entyre,
The mirrour of his owne thought doth admyre.

Which seeing now so inly faire to be,
As outward it appeareth to the eye,

And with his spirits proportion to agree,
He thereon fixeth all his fantasie,
And fully setteth his felicitie;
Counting it fairer then it is indeede,
And yet indeede her fairenesse doth exceede.

For lovers eyes more sharply sighted bee
Then other mens, and in deare loves delight
See more then any other eyes can see,
Thro'gh mutuall receipt of beames bright,
Which carrie privie message to the spright,
And to their eyes that inmost faire display.
As plaine as light discovers dawning day.

Therein they see, through amorous eye-
glauces,
Armies of Loves still flying too and fro,
Which dart at them their little fierie launces;
Whom having wounded, backe againe they go,
Carrying compassion to their lovely foe;
Who, seeing her faire eyes so sharpe effect,
Cures all their sorrowes with one sweete
aspect.

In which how many wonders doe they reede
To their concept, that others never see!
Now of her smiles, with which their soules
they fede.
Like Gods with Nectar in their bankets free;
Now of her looks, which like to Cordials bee;
But when her words embassade forth she sends,
Lord, how sweete musicke that unto them
lends!

Sometimes upon her forehead they behold
A thousand Graces masking in delight;
Sometimes within her eye-lids they unfold
Ten thousand sweet belgards, which to their
sight [night;
Doe seeme like twinkling starres in frostie
But on her lips, like foye buds in May,
So many millions of chaste pleasures play.

All these, O Cytherea! and thousands more
Thy handmaides be, which do on thee attend,
To decke thy beautie with their dainties store,
That may it more to mortall eyes commend,
And make it more admyr'd of foe and frend;
That in mens harts thou mayst thy throne
enstall.

And spred thy lovely kingdome over-all.

Then Ið, tryumph! O great Beauties Queene,
Advance the banner of thy conquest hie,
That all this world, the which thy vassals
beene,

May draw to thee, and with dew fealtie
Adore the powre of thy great Majestic,
Singing this Hymne in honour of thy name,
Compyld by me, which thy poore liegeman am!

In lieu whereof graunt, O great Sovereaine!
 That she, whose conquering beautie doth
 captive
 My trembling hart in her eternall chaine,
 One drop of grace at length will to me give,
 That I her bounden thrall by her may live,
 And this same life, which first fro me she
 reaved,
 May owe to her, of whom I it received. ●

And you, faire Venus dearling, my deare dread!
 Fresh flowre of grace, great Goddess of my
 life, [read,
 When your faire eyes these fearefull lines shal
 Deigne to let full one drop of dew reliefe,
 That may reure my harts long pyning griefe,
 And shew what wondrous powre your beauty
 hath,
 That can restore a damned wight from death.

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

LOVE, lift me up upon thy golden wings,
 From this base world unto thy heavens light,
 Where I may see those admirable things
 Which there thou workest by thy sovereign
 might,
 Farre above feeble reach of earthly sight,
 That I thereof an heavenly Hymne may sing
 Unto the God of Love, high heavens king.

Many lewd layes (ah! woe is me the more!)
 In praise of that mad fit which fooles call
 love,

I have in th' heat of youth made heretofore,
 That in light wits did loose affection move;
 But all those follies now I do reprove,
 And turned have the tenor of my string,
 The heavenly prayses of true love to sing.

And ye that wont with greedily vaine desire
 To reade my fault, and, wondering at my blame,
 To warme your selves at my wide sparckling
 fire, [blame,

Sith now that heat is quenched, quench my
 And in her ashes shrowd my dying shame;
 For who my passed follies now pursues,
 Beginnes his owne, and my old fault renewes.

BEFORE THIS WORLDS GREAT FRAME, in
 which all things

Are now containd, found any being-place,
 Eye fitting Time could wag his eys wings
 About that mightie bound which doth en-
 brace [by space,

The rolling Spheres, and parts their houres
 That High Eternall Powre, which now doth
 move

In all these things, mov'd in it selfe by love.

It lov'd it selfe, because it selfe was faire;
 (For faire is lov'd;) and of it selfe begot.
 Like to it selfe his eldest sonne and heire,
 Eternall, pure, and voide of sinfull blot,
 The firstling of his joy, in whom no jot
 Of loves dislike or pride was to be found,
 Whom he therefore with equall honour
 crownd.

With him he raignd, before all time prescribed,
 In endless glorie and immortall might,
 Together with that third from them derived,
 Most wise, most holy, most almightie Spright!
 Whose kingdome throne no thought of
 earthly wight [verse
 Can comprehend, much lesse my trembling
 With equall words can hope it to reherse.

Yet, O most blessed Spirit! pure lampe of
 light,

Eternall spring of grace and wisdoms trew,
 Vouchsafe to shed into my barren spright
 Some little drop of thy celestiall dew,
 That may my rymes with sweet infuse em-
 biew,
 And give me words equall unto my thought,
 To tell the marvelles by thy mercie wrought.

Yet being pregnant still with powrefull grace,
 And full of fruitfull love, that loves to get
 Things like himselfe, and to enlarge his race,
 His second brood, though not in powre so
 great,

Yet full of beautie, next he did beget
 An infinite increase of Angels bright,
 All glstring glorious in their Makers light.

To them the heavens illimitable hight
 (Not this round heaven, which we from hence
 behold, *

Adorn'd with thousand lamps of burning light,
 And with ten thousand gemmes of shynung
 gold,)

He gave as their inheritance to hold,
 That they might serve him in eternall blis,
 And be partakers of those joyes of his.

There they in their trinall triplicities
 About him wait, and on his will depend,
 Either with nimble wings to cut the skies,
 When he them on his messages doth send,
 Or on his owne dread presence to attend,
 Where they behold the glorie of his light,
 And caroll Hymnes of love both day and
 night.

Both day, and night, is unto them all one;
For he his beames doth still to them extend,
That darknesse there appeareth never none;
Ne hath their day, ne hath their blisse, an end,
But there their termelesse time in pleasure
spend;

Ne ever should their happinesse decay,
Had not they dar'd their Lord to disobay.

But pride, impatient of long resting peace,
Did puffe them up with greedy bold ambition,
That they gan cast their state how to increase
Above the fortune of their first condition,
And sit in Gods owne seat without commission:
The brightest Angell, even the Child of Light,
Drew millions more against their God to fight

Th' Almighty, seeing their so bold assay,
Kindled the flame of His consuming yre,
And with His onely breath them blew away
From heavens high, to which they did aspyre.
To deepest hell, and lake of damned fyre,
Where they in darknesse and dread horror
dwell,

Hating the happie light from which they fell.

So that next off-spring of the Makers love,
Next to Himselfe in glorious degree,
Degendering to hate, fell from above
Through pride, (for pride and love may ill
agree)

And now of sinne so all ensample bee:
How then can sinfull flesh itselfe assure,
Sith purest Angels fell to be impure?

But that Eternall Fount of love and grace,
Still flowing forth His goodnesse unto all,
Now seeing left a waste and emptie place
In His wyde Pallace, through those Angels fall,
Cast to supply the same, and to enstall
A new unknown Colony therein,
Whose root from earths base groundworke
shold begin.

Therefore of clay, base, vile, and next to
nought, [might,
Yet form'd by wondrous skill, and by His
According to an heavenly patterne wrought,
Which He had fashion'd in his wise foresight,
He man did make, and breath'd a living spright
Into his face most beautifull and fyre,
Endew'd with wisdomes riches, heavenly, rare.

Such He him made, that he resemble might
Himselfe, as mortall thing immortal could;
Him to be Lord of every living wight

He made by love out of His owne like mould,
In whom He might His mightie selfe behould;
For Love doth love the thing belov'd to see,
That like itselfe in lovely shape may bee.

But man, forgetfull of his Makers grace
No lesse then Angels whom he did ensue,
Fell from the hope of promist heavenly place,
Into the mouth of death, to sinners dew,
And all his off-spring into thraldome threw,
Where they for ever should in bonds remaine
Of never-dead yet ever-dying paine;
Till that great Lord of Love, which him at
first

Made of meere love, and after lik'd well,
Seeing him lie like creature long accurst
In that deepe horror of despayred hall,
Him, wretch, in doole would let no longer
dwell,

But cast out of that bondage to redeeme,
And pay the price, all were his debt extreeme.
Out of the bosome of eternall blisse,
In which he reigned with his glorious syre,
He downe descended, like a most demisse
And abject thrall, in fleshes fraile attyre,
That He for him might pay sinnes deadly hyre,
And him restore unto that happie state
In which he stood before his haplesse fate.

In flesh at first the guilt committed was,
Therefore in flesh it must be satisfide;
Nor spirit, nor Angell, though they man sur-
pas, [guyde,
Could make amends to God for mans mis-
But onely man himselfe, who selfe did slayde:
So, taking flesh of sacred virgins wombe,
For mans deare sake he did a man become.

And that most blessed bodie, which was borne
Without all blemish or reprochfull blame,
He freely gave to be both rent and torne
Of cruell hands, who with despyghtfull shame
Reryling him, that them most vile became,
At length him nayld on a gallow-tree,
And slew the Just by most unjust decree.

O huge and most unspeakable impression
Of loves deepe wound, that pierst the piteous
hart

Of that deare Lord with so entyre affection,
And, sharply launching every inner part,
Dolours of death into his soule did dart,
Doing him die that never it deserved,
To free his foes, that from his heast had
swerved!

What hart can feelee least touch of so sore
launch, [wound?

Or thought can think the depth of so deare
Whose bleeding sourse their streames yet never
staunch

But stil do flow, and freshly still redound,
To heale the sores of sinfull soules unsound,
And clense the guilt of that infected cryme
Which was enrooted in all fleshy slyme.

O blessed Well of Love! O Floure of Grace!
O glorious Morning-Starre! O Lampe of
Light!

Most lively image of thy Fathers face,
Eternall King of Glorie, Lord of Might,
Meeke Lambe of God, before all worlds be-
hight,

How can we thee requite for all this good?
Or what can prize that thy most precious
blood?

Yet nought thou ask'st in lieu of all this love,
But love of us, for guerdon of thy paine:
Ay me! what can us lesse then that behove?
Had he requir'd life of us againe, [game?
Had it beene wrong to aske his owne with
He gave us life, he it restored lost;
Then life were least, that us so little cost.

But he our life hath left unto us free, [band;
Free that was thrall, and blessed that was
Ne ought demaunds but that we loving bee,
As he himselfe hath lov'd us afore-hand,
And bound therto with an eternall band,
Him first to love that us so dearly bought,
And next our brethren, to his image wrought.

Him first to love great right^o and reason is,
Who first to us our life and being gave,
And after, when we fared had amisse,
Us wretches from the second death did save;
And last, the food of life, which now we have,
Even he himselfe, in his deare sacrament,
To feede our hungry soules, unto us lent.

Then next, to love our brethren, that were
made

Of that selfe mould, and that selfe Makers hand,
That we, and to the same againe shall fade,
Where they shall have like heritage of land,
How ever here on higher step we stand,
Which also were with selfe-same price re-
deemed

That we, how ever of us light esteemed.

And were they not, yet since that loving Lord
Commanded us to love them for his sake,
Even for his sake, and for his sacred word,
Which in his last bequest he to us spake,
We should them love, and with their needs
partake;

Knowing that, whatsoere to them we give,
We give to him by whom we all doe live.

Such mercy he by his most holy reede
Unto us taught, and to approve it trew,
Ensampl'd it by his most righteous deede,
Shewing us mercie (miserable crew!)
That we the like should to the wretches shew,

And love our brethren; thereby to approve
How much, himselfe that loved us, we love.

Then rouse thy selfe, O Earth! out of thy
soyle,

In which thou wallowest like to filthy swyne,
And doest thy mynd in durty pleasures moyle,
Unmindfull of that dearest Lord of thine;
Lift up to him thy heavic clouded eyne,
That thou his soveraine bountie mayest behold,
And read, through love, his mercies manifold.

Beginne from first, where he encradled was
In simple cratch, wrapt in a wad of hay,
Betweene the toylefull Oxe and humble Asse,
And in what rags, and in how base aray,
The glory of our heavenly riches lay,
When him the silly Shepheards came to see,
Whom greatest Princes sought on lowest
knee.

From thence reade on the storie of his life,
His humble carriage, his unfaulty wayes,
His cancerd foes, his fights, his toyle, his
strife,

His paines, his povertie, his sharpe assayes,
Through which he past his miserable dayes,
Offending none, and doing good to all,
Yet being malist both of great and small.

And looke at last, how of most wretched wights
He taken was, betrayd, and false accused;
How with most scornfull taunts, and fell des-
pights,

He was revyl'd, disgrast, and foule abused;
How scourgd, how crownd, how buffeted, how
brused;

And lastly, how twixt robbers crucifyde,
With bitter wounds through hands, through
feet, and syde!

Then let thy flinty hart, that feelles no paine,
Empierced be with pittifull remorse,
And let thy bowels bleede in every vaine,
At sight of his most sacred heavenly corse,
So torne and mangled with malicious forse;
And let thy soule, whose sins his sorrows
wrought,

Melt into teares, and grone in grieved thought.
With sence whereof, whilst so thy softened
spirit

Is inly toucht, and humbled with meeke zeale
Through meditation of his endlesse merit,
Lift up thy mind to th' Author of thy weale,
And to his soveraine mercie doe appeale;
Learne him to love that loved thee so deare,
And in thy brest his blessed image beare.

With all thy hart, with all thy soule and
mind, [brace;
Thou must him love, and his behests em-

All other loves, with which the world doth
blind

Weake fancies, and stirre up affections base,
Thou must renounce and utterly displace,
And give thy selfe unto him full and free,
That full and freely gave himselfe to thee.

Then shalt thou feele thy spirit so possesse,
And ravisht with devouring great desire
Of his deare selfe, that shall thy feeble brest
Inflame with love, and set thee all on fire
With burning zeale, through every part entire,
That in no earthly thing thou shalt delight,
But in his sweet and amiable sight.

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee dye,
And all earthes glorie, on which men do gaze.

Seeme durt and drosse in thy pure-sighted eye,
Compar'd to that celestiall beauties blaze,
Whose glorious beames all fleshly sense doth
daze

With admiration of their passing light,
Blinding the eyes, and lumining the spright.

Then shall thy ravisht soule inspired bee
With heavenly thoughts farre above humane
skil,

And thy bright radiant eyes shall plainly see
Th' Idee of his pure glorie present still
Before thy face, that all thy spirits shall fill
With sweete enagement of celestiall love,
Kindled through sight of those faire things
above.

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE.

RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht
thought,

Through contemplation of those goodly sights,
And glorious images in heaven wrought,
Whose wondrous beauty, breathing sweet del-
ights

Do kindle love in high conceived sprights;
I faine to tell the things that I behold,
But feeble my wits to faile, and tongue to fold.

Vouchsafe then, O thou most Almighty
Spright!

From whom all gifts of wit and knowledge
To shed into my brest some sparkling light
Of thine eternall Truth, that I may show
Some little beames to mortall eyes below
Of that immortall beautie, there with thee,
Which in my weake distraught mynd I see;

That with the glorie of so goodly sight
The hearts of men, which fondly here admyre
Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine
Transported with celestiall desyre
Of those faire formes, may lift themselves up
hyer,

And learne to love, with zealous humble dewty,
Th' eternall fountaine of that heavenly beauty.

Beginning then below, with th' easie vew
Of this base world, subject to fleshly eye,
From thence to mount aloft, by order dew,
To contemplation of th' immortall sky;
Of the soare faulcon so I learne to fly,
That flags awhile her fluttering wings beneath,
Till she her selfe for stronger flight can breath.

Then looke, who list thy gazefull eyes to feed
With sight of that is faire, looke on the frame

Of this wyde universe, and therein reed
The endlesse kinds of creatures which by name
Thou canst not count, much lesse their natures
aime;

All which are made with wondrous wise respect,
And all with admirable beautie deckt.

First, th' Earth, on adamantine pillars founded
Amid the Sea, engirt with brassen bands;

Then th' Aire still fitting, but yet firmly
bunded

On everie side, with pyles of flaming brands,
Never consum'd, nor quencht with mortall
hands;

And, last, that mightie shining christall wall,
Wherewith he hath encompassed this All.

By view whereof it plainly may appeare,
That still as every thing doth upward tend,
And further is from earth, so still more cleare
And faire it growes, till to his perfect end
Of purest beautie it at last ascend; [ayre,
Ayre more then water, fire much more then
And heaven then fire, appeares more pure and
fayre.

Looke thou no further, but affixe thine eye
On that bright shynie round still moving
Masse, [Skye,
The house of blessed God, which men call
All sowd with glistring stars more thicke then
grasse,

Whereof each other doth in brightnesse passe,
But those two most, which, ruling night and
day,

As King and Queene, the heavens Empire sway;

And tell me then, what hast thou ever scene
That to their beautie may compared bee,
Or can the sight that is most sharpe or keene
Endure their Captains flaming head to see?
How much lesse those, much higher in degree,
And so much fairer, and much more then these,
As these are fairer then the land and seas?

For farre above these heavens, which here we
Be others farre exceeding these in light, ^{[see,}
Not bounded, not corrupt, as these same bee,
But infinite in largenesse and in hight,
Unmoving, uncorrupt, and spotlesse bright,
That need no Sunne t' illuminate their spheres,
But their owne native light farre passing theirs.

And as these heavens still by degrees arize,
Untill they come to their first Movers bound,
That in his mightie compasse doth comprize,
And carrie all the rest with him around;
So those likewise doe by degrees redound,
And rise more faire, till they at last arrive
To the most faire, whereto they all do strive.

Faire is the heaven where happy soules have
In full enjoyment of felicity, ^{[place,}
Whence they doe still behold the glorious face
Of the Divine Eternal Majesty;
More faire is that, where those Ideas on his
Enraunged be, which Plato so admyred,
And pure Intelligences from God inspyred.

Yet fairer is that heaven, in which doe raine
The soveraine Powres and mightie Potentates,
Which in their high protections doe containe
All mortall Princes and imperiall States;
And sayre yet, whereas the royall Seates
And heavenly Dominations are set,
From whom all earthly governance is fet.

Yet farre more faire be those bright Cherubins,
Which all with golden wings are overhight,
And those eternall burning Seraphims,
Which from their faces dart out fierie light;
Yet fairer then they both, and much more
bright,

Be th' Angels and Archangels, which attend
On Gods owne person, without rest or end.

These thus in faire each other farre excelling,
As to the Highest they approach more neare,
Yet is that Highest farre beyond all telling.
Fairer then all the rest which there appeare.
Though all their beauties joynd together
were;

How then can mortall tongue hope to expresse
The image of such endlesse perfectnesse?

Cease then, my tongue! and lend unto my
mynd

Leave to bethinke how great that beautie is,
Whose utmost parts so beautifull I fynd;

How much more those essentiall parts of his,
His truth, his love, his wisdom, and his blis,
His grace, his doome, his mercy, and his
might,

By which he lends us of himselfe a sight!

Those unto all he daily doth display,
And shew himselfe in th' image of his grace,
As in a looking-glasse, through which he may
Be scene of all his creatures vile and base.
That are unable else to see his face, ^{[bright,}
His glorious face! which glistereth else so
That th' Angels selves can not endure his
sight.

But we, fraile wights! whose sight cannot
sustaine ^{[shyne,}

The Sunne bright beames when he on us doth
But that their points rebutted backe againe
Are duld, how can we see with feeble eye
The glory of that Majestie Divine, ^{[darke,}
In sight of whom both Sun and Moone are
Compared to his least resplendent sparke?

The meanes, therefore, which unto us is lent
Him to behold, is on his workes to looke,
Which he hath made in beauty excellent,
And in the same, as in a brassen booke,
To reade enregistred in every nooke
His goodnesse, which his beautie doth declare;
For all thats good is beautifull and faire.

Thence gathering plumes of perfect speculation,
To impe the wings of thy high flying mynd,
Mount up aloft through heavenly contem-
plation, ^{[soule do bynd,}
From this darke world, whose damps the
And, like the native brood of Eagles kynd,
On that bright Sunne of Glorie fixe thine eyes,
Clear'd from grosse mists of fraile infirmities.

Humbled with feare and awfull reverence,
Before the footstool of his Majestie
Throw thy selfe downe, with trembling inno-
ce, No dare looke up with corruptible eye ^{[cence,}
On the dred face of that great Deity,
For feare, lest if he chauce to looke on thee,
Thou turne to nought, and quite confounded
be.

But lowly fall before his mercie seate,
Close covered with the Lambes integrity
From the just wrath of his avengfull threate
That sitt upon the righteous throne on hy,
His thron is built upon Eternity,
More firme and durable then steale or brasse,
Or the hard diamond, which them both doth
passe.

His scepter is the rod of Righteousnesse,
With which he bruseth all his foes to dust,
And the great Dragon strongly doth repress,

Under the rigour of his judgement just;
His seate is Truth, to which the faithfull trust,
From whence proceed her beames so pure and
bright

That all about him sheddeth glorious light:

Light, farre exceeding that bright blazing
spark

Which darted is from Titan's flaming head,
That with his beames enlumineth the darke
And dampish aire, whereby all things are red;
Whose nature yet so much is marvelled
Of mortall wits, that it doth much amaze
The greatest wisards which thereon do gaze.

But that immortall light, which there doth
shine,

Is many thousand times more bright, more
More excellent, more glorious, more divine,
Through which to God all mortall actions here,
And even the thoughts of men, do plain ap-
peare;

For from th' Eternal Truth it doth proceed,
Through heavenly vertue which her beames
doe breed.

With the great glorie of that wondrous light
His throne is all encompassed around,
And hid in his owne brightnesse from the
sight

Of all that looke thereon with eyes unsound;
And underneath his feet are to be found
Thunder, and lightning, and tempestuous fyre,
The instruments of his avenging yre.

There in his bosome Sapience doth sit,
The soveraine dearing of the Deity,
Clad like a Queene in royall robes, most fit
For so great powre and peerlesse majesty,
And all with gemmes and jewels gorgeously
Adorn'd, that brighter then the starres appeare,
And make her native brightnesse seem more
clear.

And on her head a crowne of purest gold
Is set, in signe of highest sovereignty;
And in her hand a scepter she doth hold,
With which she rules the house of God on hy,
And menageth the ever-moving sky,
And in the same these lower creatures all
Subjected to her powre imperiall.

Both heaven and earth obey unto her will,
And all the creatures which they both containe;
For of her fulnesse which the world doth fill
They all partake, and do in state remaine
As their great Maker did at first ordaine,
Through observation of her high behest,
By which they first were made, and still in-
crease.

The fairenesse of her face no tongue can tell;
For she the daughters of all wemens race,
And Angels eke, in beautie doth excell,
Sparkled on her from Gods owne glorious face,
And more increast by her owne goodly grace,
That it doth farre exceed all humane thought,
Ne can on earth compar'd be to ought.

Ne could that Painter (had he lived yet)
Which pictured Venus with so curious quill,
That all posteritie admyred it,
Have purtrayd this, for all his maistring skill;
Ne she her selfe, had she remained still,
And were as faire as fabled wits do fayne,
Could once come neare this beauty soverayne.

But had those wits, the wonders of their dayes,
Or that sweete Teian Poet, which did spend
His plenteous vaine in setting forth her
praise

Seeme but a glims of this which I pretend,
How wondrously would he her face commend,
Above that Idole of his faying thought,
That all the world shold with his rimes be
fraught!

How then dare I, the novice of his Art,
Presume to picture so divine a wight,
Or hope t' expresse her least perfections part,
Whose beautie fills the heavens with her light,
And darkes the earth with shadow of her
sight?

Ah, gentle Muse! thou art too weake and faint
The pourtraict of so heavenly hew to paint.

Let Angels, which her goodly face behold
And see at will, her soveraigne praises sing,
And those most sacred mysteris unfold
Of that faire love of mightie heavens King;
Enough is ne t' admyre so heavenly thing,
And, being thus with her huge love possessd,
In th' only wonder of her selfe to rest.

But who so may, thrise happie man him hold,
Of all on earth whom God so much doth grace,
And lets his owne Belov'd to behold;
For in the view of her celestially face
All joy, all blisse, all happinesse, have place;
Ne ought on earth can want unto the wight
Who of her selfe can win the wishfull sight.

For she, out of her secret treasury
Plentie of riches forth on him will powre,
Even heavenly riches, which there hidden ly
Within the closet of her chastest bowre,
Th' eternall portion of her precious dowre,
Which mighty God hath given to her free,
And to all those which thereof worthy bee.

None thereof worthy be, but those whom shee
Vouchsafeth to her presence to receive,

And letteth them her lovely face to see,
Whereof such wondrous pleasures they con-
ceave,

And sweete contentment, that it doth bereave
Their soule of sense, through infinite delight,
And them transport from flesh into the spright.

In which they see such admirable things,
As carries them into an extasy,
And heare such heavenly notes and carolings,
Of Gods high praise, that fills the brasen sky;
And feele such joy and pleasure inwardly,
That maketh them all worldly cares forget,
And onely thinke on that before them set.

Ne from thenceforth doth any fleshly sense,
Or idle thought of earthly things, remaine;
But all that earst seemd sweet seemes now
offense,

And all that pleased earst now seemes to paine;
Their joy, their comfort, their desire, their gaine,
Is fixed all on that which now they see;
All other sights but fayned shadowes bee.

And that faire lampe, which useth to inflame
The hearts of men with selfe-consuming fyre
Thenceforth seemes fowle, and full of sinfull
blame;

Aud all that pompe to which proud minds
By name of honor, and so much desyre,

Seemes to them basenesse, and all riches drosse,
And all mirth sadnesse, and all lucre losse.

So full their eyes are of that glorious sight,
And senses fraught with such satietie,
That in nought else on earth they can delight,
But in th' aspect of that felicitie,
Which they have written in their inward ey;
On which they feed, and in their fastened mynd
All happie joy and full contentment fynd.

Ah, then, my hungry soule! which long hast
On idle fancies of thy foolish thought, [fed
And, with false beauties flattering bait misled,
Hast after vaine deceiptfull shadowes sought,
Which all are fled, and now have left thee
thought

But late repentance through thy follies grief;
Ah! cease to gaze on matter of thy grief:

And looke at last up to that Sovereaine Light,
From whose pure beames al perfect beauty
springs,

That kindleth love in every godly spright
Even the love of God; which loathing brings
Of this vile world and these gay-seeming
things;

With whose sweete pleasures being so posset,
Thy straying thoughts henceforth for ever rest

PROTHALAMION.

OR,

A SPOUSALL VERSE,

MADE BY

EDM. SPENSER,

IN HONOUR OF THE DOUBLE MARRIAGE OF THE TWO HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADIES,
THE LADIE ELIZABETH, AND THE LADIE KATHERINE SOMERSET, DAUGHTERS TO THE
RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF WORCESTER, AND ESPOUSED TO THE TWO WORTHIE
GENTLEMEN M. HENRY GILFORD, AND M. WILLIAM PETER, ESQUYERS.

CALME was the day, and through the trem-
bling ayre

Sweete-breathing Zephyrus did softly play
A gentle spirit, that lightly did delay
Hot Titans beames, which then did glyster
When I, (whom sullen care, [fayre;
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay
In Princes Court, and expectation wayne
Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away,
Like empty shadowes, did afflict my brayne,)
Walkt forth to ease my payne

Along the shoare of silverstreaming Themmes;
Whose ruddy Bancke, he which his River
hemmes

Was paynted all with variable flowers,
And all the meades adorne with daintie
gemmes

Fit to decke maydens bowres,
And crowne their Paramours
Against the Irydale day, which is not long:
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
my Song

There, in a Meadow, by the Rivers side,
A Flocke of Nymphes I chaunced to espy,
All lovely Daughters of the Flood thereby.
With goodly greenish locks, all loose untide,
As each had bene a Bryde;
And each one had a little wicker basket,
Made of fine twigs, entrayled curiously,
In which they gathered flowers to fill their

flasket,
And with fine Fingers cropt full feateously
The tender stalkes on hye.
Of every sort, which in that Meadow grew,
They gathered some; the Violet, pallid blew,
The little Dazie, that at evening closes,
The virgin Lillie, and the Primrose trew,
With store of vermeil Roses,
To docke their Bridgromes posies
Against the Brydale day, which was not long:
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
my Song.

With that I saw two Swannes of goodly hewe
Come softly swimming downe along the Lee;
Two fairer Birds I yet did never see;
The snow, which doth the top of Pindus strew,
Did never whiter shew,
Nor Jove himselfe, when he a Swan would be,
For love of Leda, whiter did appeare;
Yet Leda was (they say) as white as he,
Yet not so white as these, nor nothing neare;
So purely white they were, [bare,
That even the gentle streame, the which them
Seem'd foule to them, and bad his billowes
spare

To wet their silken feathers, least they might
Soyle their fayre plumes with water not so
And marre their beauties bright, [fayre,
That shone as heavens light, [long:
Against their Brydale day, which was not
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
my Song.

Eftsoones the Nymphes, which now had
Flowers their fill,
Ran all in haste to see that silver brood.
As they came floating on the Christal Flood;
Whom when they sawe, they stood amazed
Their wondring eyes to fill; [still,
Them seem'd they never saw a sight so fayre,
Of Fowles, so lovely, that they sure did deeme
Them heavenly borne, or to be that same payre
Which through the Skie draw Venus silver
For sure they did not seeme [Teeme;
To be begot of any earthly Seede,
But rather Angels, or of Angels breede;
Yet were they bred of Somers-heat, they say,
In sweetest Season, when each Flower and
The earth did fresh aray; [weede
So fresh they seem'd as day,

Even as their Brydale day, which was not
long:
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
my Song.

Then forth they all out of their baskets drew
Great store of Flowers, the honour of the field,
That to the sense did fragrant odours yeld,
All which upon those goodly Birds they threw
And all the Waves did strew,
That like old Peneus Waters they did seeme,
When downe along by pleasant Tempes shore,
Scattered with Flowres, through Thessaly they
streame,
That they appeare, through Lillies plenteous
Like a Brydes Chamber flore. [store,
Two of those Nymphes, meane while, two
Garlands bound [found,
Of freshest Flowres which in that Mead they
The which presenting all in trim Array,
Their snowie Foreheads therewithall they
Whil'st one did sing this Lay, [crown'd,
Prepar'd against that Day. [long:
Against their Brydale day, which was not
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
my Song.

'Ye gentle Birdes! the worlds faire orna-
ment,
And heavens glorie, whom this happie hower
Doth leade unto your lovers blisfull bower,
Joy may you have, and gentle hearts content
Of your loves complement;
And let faire Venus, that is Queene of love,
With her heart-quelling Sonne upon you
smile,
Whose smile, they say, hath vertue to remove
All Loves dislike, and friendships faultie guile
For ever to assolve.
Let endlesse Peace your steadfast hearts accord,
And blessed Plentie wait upon your bord:
And let your bed with pleasures chaste abound,
That fruitfull issue may to you afford,
Which may your foes confound.
And make your joyes redound
Upon your Brydale day, which is not long:
Sweete Themmes! runne softlie, till I end
my Song.'

So ended she; and all the rest around
To her redoubled that her undersong, [long:
Which said their brydale daye should not be
And gentle Echo from the neighbour ground
Their accents did resound.
So forth those joyous Birdes did passe along,
Adowne the Lee, that to them murmurde low,
As he would speake, but that he lackt a tong,
Yet did by signes his glad affection show,
Making his streame run slow.

And all the foule which in his flood did dwell
 Can flock about these twaine, that did excell
 The rest, so far as Cynthia doth shend
 The lesser starres. So they, enraged well,
 Did on those two attend,
 And their best service lend [long :
 Against their wedding day, which was not
 Sweete Themmes! run softly, till I end
 my Song.

At length they all to mery London came,
 To mery London, my most kyndly Nurse,
 That to me gave this Lifes first native sourse,
 Though from another place I take my name,
 An house of auncient fame: [towers
 There when they came, whereas those bricky
 The which on Themmes brode aged backe doe
 ryde, [bowers,

Where now the studious Lawyers have their
 There whylome wont the Tempier Knights to
 Till they decayd through pride: [byde,
 Next whereunto there standes a stately place,
 Where oft I gayned giftes and goodly grace
 Of that great Lord, which therein wont to
 dwell, [case;

Whose want too well now feelles my freendles
 But ah! here fits not well
 Olde woos, but joyes, to tell ●

Against the bridale daye, which is not long:
 Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
 my Song.

Yet therein now doth lodge a noble Peer,
 Great Englands glory, and the Worlds wide
 wonder, [did thunder,
 Whose dreadfull name late through all Spaine
 And Hercules two pillors standing neere
 Did make to quake and feare:
 Faire branch of Honor, flower of Chevalrie!

That fillest England with thy triumphes fame.
 Joy have thou of thy noble victorie,
 And endlesse happinesse of thine owne name
 That promiseth the same: [armes,
 That through thy prowesse, and victorious
 Thy country may be freed from forraine
 harmes; ●

And great Elisacs glorious name may ring
 Through al the world, fil'd with thy wide
 Alarmes,

Which some brave muse may sing
 To ages following.
 Upon the Brydale day, which is not long:
 Sweete Themmes! runne softly till I end
 my Song. ●

From those high Towers this noble Lord is-
 suing,

Like Radiant Hesper, when his golden hayre
 In th' Ocean billowes he hath bathed fayre,
 Descended to the Rivers open vewing,
 With a great traine ensuing.

Above the rest were goodly to bee seene
 Two gentle Knights of lovely face and feature,
 Beceming well the bower of anie Queene,
 With gifts of wit, and ornaments of nature,
 Fit for so goodly stature,
 That like the twins of Jove they seem'd in
 sight, [bright;

Which decke the Bauldricke of the Heavens
 They two, forth pacing to the Rivers side,
 Received those two faire Brides, their Loves
 delight;

Which, at th' appointed tyde,
 Each one did make his Bryde
 Against their Brydale day, which is not long.
 Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end
 my Song.

S O N N E T S

WRITTEN BY SPENSER,

COLLECTED FROM THE ORIGINAL PUBLICATIONS IN WHICH THEY APPEARED.

I

*To the right worshipfull my singular good friend,
 M. Gabriell Harvey, Doctor of the Lawes.*

HARVEY, the happy above happiest men
 I read; that, sitting like a Looker-on
 Of this worldes Stage, doest note with critique
 pen

The sharpe dislikes of each condition:
 And, as one carelesse of suspition,
 Ne fawnest for the favour of the great;
 Ne fearest foolish reprehension

Of faulty men, which daunger to thee threat:
 But freely doest, of what thee list, entreat,
 Like a great Lord of peerlesse liberty;
 Lifting the Good up to high Honours seat,
 And the Evill damning evermore to dy:
 For Life, and Death, is in thy doomefull
 writing!

So thy renowme lives ever by endighting.

Dublin, this xviii. of July, 1586.

Your devoted friend, during life,
 EDMUND SPENCER

II

(Prefixed to 'Nennio, or A Treatise of Nobility,'
&c.)

Who so wil seeke, by right deserts, t'attaine,
Unto the type of true Nobility;
And not by painted shewes, and titles vaine,
Derived farre from famous AIncestrie:
Behold them both in their right visnomy
Here truly pourtray'd, as they ought to be,
And striving both for termes of dignitie,
To be advanced highest in degree.

And, when thou doost with equall insight see
The ods twixt both, of both them deem aright,
And chuse the better of them both to thee.

But thanks to him, that it deserves, bechight;
To Nenna first, that first this worke created,
And next to Jones, that truly it translated.

ED. SPENSER.

III

Upon the Historie of George Castriot, alias
Scanderbeg, king of the Epirots, translated
into English.

Wherefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt
Her ancient monuments of mightie peeres,
And old Herbes, which their world did daunt
With their great deedes, and sild their chil-
drens eares?

Who, rapt with wonder of their famous praise,
Admire their statues, their Colossoes great
Their rich triumphalls Arcks which they did
raise,

Their huge Pyramids, which do heaven threat.

Lo! one, whom later age hath brought to
light,
Matchable to the greatest of those great;
Great both by name, and great in power and
might,
And meriting a meere triumphant seate.

The scourge of Turkes, and plague of infi-
dels,
Thy facts, O Scanderbeg, this volume tels.

ED. SPENSER.

IV

(Prefixed to 'The Commonwealth and Govern-
ment of Venice.')

The antique Babel, Empresse of the East,
Upheard her buildinges to the threatned skie:
And second Babell, tyrant of the West.

Her ayry Towers upraised much more high,
But, with the weight of their own surquedry,
They both are fallen, that all the earth did
feare,

And buried now in their own ashes ly;
Yet shewing, by their heapes, how great they
were.

But in their place doth now a third appeare,
Fayre Venice, flower of the last worlds de-
light;

And next to them in beauty draweth neare,
But farre exceeds in policie of right.

Yet not so fayre her buildinges to behold
As Lewkenors stile that hath her beautie
teld.

EDM. SPENCER.

A VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND

DISCOURSED BY WAY OF A DIALOGUE BETWEEN

EUDOXUS AND IRENÆUS.

Eudox.

BUT yf that countrey of Ireland, whence you lately came, be soe goodly and commodious a soyle, as ye report, I wonder that noe course is taken for the tounring therof to good uses, and reducing of that savadge nation to better government and civilitye.

Iren. Marry, soe there have bene divers good plottes devised, and wise counsells cast allready about reformation of that realme; but they say, it is the fatall desteny of that land, that noe purposes, whatsoever are meant for her good, will prosper or take good effect, which, whether it procede from the very GENIUS of the soyle, or influence of the starres, or that Allnighly God hath not yet appointed the time of her reformation, or that he reserveth her in this unquiett state still for some secrett scouridge, which shall by her come unto England, it is hard to be known, but yet much to be feared.

Eudox. Surely I suppose this but a vayne conceit of simple men, which judge thinges by theyre effectes, and not by theyre causes: for I will rather thinke the cause of this evill, which hangeth upon that countrey, to procede rather of the unsoundness of the counsells, and plottes, which you say have bene oftentimes layed for the reformation, or of fayntness in following and effecting the same, then of any such fatall course or apoyntment of God, as you misdeeme: but it is the manner of men, that when they are fallen into any absurditye, or theyr actions succede not as they would, they are ready allwayes to impute the blame therof unto the heavens, soe to excuse their owne follyes and imperfectiones. Soe have I also heard it often wished, (even of some whose greate wisdomes, in my opinion, should seeme to judge more soundly of soe weighty a consideration) that all that land were a sea-pool: which kind of speech, is the manner rather of desperat men farr driven, to wishe the

utter ruine of that they cannot redress, then of grave Counsellors, which ought to thinke nothing soe hard but that, through wysedome, it may be mastied and subdued; since the Poet sayeth, that 'the wyse man shall rule even over the starres,' much more over the earth; for were it not the part of a desperat plianition to wish his diseased patient dead, rather then to applye the best endeavours of his skill for his recovery. But since we are so farr entred, let us, I pray you, a litle devise, of those evils, by which that countrey is held in this wretched case, that it cannot (as you say) be recured. And yf it be not payntfull to you, tell us what thinges, during your late continuance there, you observed to be most offensive, and an empeachment unto the good rule and government therof.

Iren. Surely, *Eudox.*, the evils which you desire to be recounted are very many, and almost countable with those that were hidden in the baskett of Pandora. But since ye soe please, I will out of that infinit number, reckon but some that are most capitall, and commonly current both in the life and conditions of privat men, as also in the managing of publick affayres and pollicye, the which you shall understand to be of diverse natures, as I observed them: for some of them are of very great antiquitye and longe continuance; others more late and of lesse endurance; others dayly growing and encreasing continually as the evill occasions are every day offered.

Eudox. Tell them then, I pray you, in the same order that you have now rehearsed them; for there can be noe better methode then thus which the very matter it self offereth. And when ye have reckned all the evils, lett us heare your opinion for redressing of them: after which there will perhaps of it self appeare some reasonable way to settle a sound and perfect rule of government, by shunning the former evils, and

following the offred good. The which methode we may learne of the wise Phisitions, which first require that the malady be knowne thoroughly, and discovered; afterwards doe teach how to cure and redress it; and lastly doe prescribe a diet with strait rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of a relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more dangerous then it.

Iren. I will then, according to your advisement, beginne to declare the evils, which seeme to me most hurtfull to the common-weale of that land, and first, those which I sayd were most auncient and long grown. And they also are of three kindes; the first in the Lawes, the second in Customes, and the third in Religion.

Eudox. Why, Irenæus, can there be any evil in the Lawes? can thinges, which are ordayned for the good and safetye of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them? This well I wote, both in that state and in all others, that were they not containyd in duty with feare of law, which restrayneth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdoers, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be agaynst another. Therefore, in finding fault with the lawes, I doubt not, you shall much over-shoote your self, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes of that government.

Iren. The lawes, Eudox., I doe not blame for themselves, knowing right well that all lawes are ordayned for the good of the common-weale, and for repressing of licentiousness and vice; but it falleth out in lawe, no otherwise then it doth in phisick, which was at first devised, and is yet dayly ment, and ministred for the health of the patient. But nevertheless we often see, that either through ignorance of the dys-ease, or through unseasonableness of the time, or other accidents coming between, in steede of good, it worketh hurt, and, out of one evill, throweth the patient into many miseries. See the lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuance of the subjectes; but are sithence either disannulled, or quite prevaricated through change and alterations of times, yet are they good still in themselves; but to that common-wealth, which is ruled by them, they worke not that good which they should, and sometimes also, perhaps, that evill which they would not.

Eudox. Whether do you meane this by the common-law of the realme, or by the Statute Lawes, and Actes of Parliaments?

Iren. Surely by them both; for even the common-law, being that which William of Normandy brought in with his conquest and layed upon the neck of England, though it perhaps fitted well with the state of England then being, and was readely obeyed through the power of the commander, which had before subdued the people unto him, and made easy way to the setling of his will; yet with the state of Ireland peradventure it doth not so well agree, being a people altogether stubborne, and untamed, or yf it were ever tamed, yet now lately having quite shaken of theire yoke, and broken the bandes of theire obedience. For England (before the entranche of the Conquerour) was a peaceable kingdome, and but lately entred to the mild and goodly government of K. Edward, surnamed the Confessour besides now lately grown unto a lothing and detestation of the unjust and tyrannous rule of Harold, an usurper, which made them the more willing to accept of any reasonable conditions and order of the new victor, thinking surely that it could be noe worse then the later, and hoping well it would be as good as the former: yet what the proof of the first bringing in and establishing of those lawes hath bene, was after to many full bitterly made knowne. But with Ireland it is farr otherwise, for it is a nation ever acquaynted with warres, though but amongst themselves, and in theire owne kind of military discipline, trayned up ever from theire youthe; which they have never yet bene taught to lay aside, nor made to learne obedience unto lawe, scarcely to know the name of lawe, but insteede thereof have always preserved and kept theire owne lawe, which is the Brehone lawe.

Eudox. What is that which ye call the Brehone Lawe? it is a word to us altogether unknowne.

Iren. It is a certayne rule of right unwritten, but delivered by tradition from one to another, in which oftentimes there appeareth greateshewe of equitye, in determining the right betweene party and party, but in many thinges repugning quite both to God and mans lawe: as for example, in the case of murder, the Brehoon, that is theire judge, will compound betweene the murderer and the frendes of the party murdered, which prosecute the action, that the malefactor shall give unto them, or to the child or wife of him that is slayne, a recompence, which they call a Breghe; by which bi lawe of theire, many murders are amongst them made up and smothered. And this judge being (as he

is called) the Lordes Brehoon, adjudgeth for the most part a better share unto his lord, that is the lord of the soyle, or the head of that sept, and also unto himself, for his judgement, a greater portion then unto the playntiff or parties grieved.

Endox. This is a most wicked lawe indeed; but I trust it is not now used in Ireland since the kinges of England have had the absolute dominion therof, and established their owne lawes there.

Iren. Yes, truly, for there be many wide countreys in Ireland in which the lawes of England were never established, nor any acknowledgement of subjection made; and also even in those that are subdued, and seeme to acknowledge subjection, yet the same Brehoon lawe is practised amongst themselves, by reason, that dwelling as they doe, whole nations and septs of the Irish together, without any Englishman amongst them, they may doe what they list, and compound or altogether conceal amongst themselves their owne crimes, of which noe notice can be had by them which would and might amend the same, by the rule of the lawes of England.

Endox. What is this which you say? And is there any part of that realme or any nation therein, which have not yet bene subdued to the crowne of England? Did not the whole realme universally accept and acknowledge our late prince of famous memory, Henry the Eighth, for their only king and hedge lord?

Iren. Yes, verely: in a Parliament holden in the time of Sir Antony Sent-Leger, then Lord Deputye, all the Irish lordes and principall men came in, and being by sure meanes wrought therunto, acknowledged King Henry for their soverayne lord, reserving yet (as some say) unto themselves all their owne former priviledges and seigniories inviolate.

Endox. Then by that acceptaunce of his sovereynty they also accepted of his lawes. Why then should any other lawes be now used amongst them?

Iren. True it is that thereby they bound themselves to his lawes and obedience, and in case it had bene followed upon them, as it should have bene, and a government therupon presently settled amongst them agreeable therunto, they should have bene reduced to perpetuall civilitye, and containd in continuall dutye. But what bootes it to breake a colt, and to lett him straight runn loose at randome. Soe were this people at first well handled, and wisely brought to acknowledge

alleageaunce to the Kinges of England; but being straight left unto themselves and their owne inordinate life and manners, they e-soones forgott what before they were taught, and soe soone as they were out of sight by themselves, shooke of theyr bridles, and began to colt anew, more licentious then before.

Endox. It is a great pitty, that soe good an opportunitye was omitted, and soe happy an occasion fore-stald, that might have bredd the eternall good of that land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission?

Iren. Now they doe not; for now the heyres and posteritye of them which yielded the same are (as they say) either ignorant therof, or doe willfully denye or stedfastly disavowe it.

Endox. How can they doe soe justly? Doth not the act of the parent, in any lawfull graunt or conveyance, bind the heyres for ever thereunto? Since then the auncestours of those that now live yielded themselves then subjectes and lodgements, shall it not lye theyr children to the same subjection?

Iren. They say no; for their auncestours had noe estate in any theyre landes, signoryes, or hereditamentes, longer then during their owne lives, as they alledge, for all the Irish doe hold their landes by Tanistrye; which is (as say they) noe more then a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanistih, by reason that he is admitted therunto by election of the countrey.

Endox. What is this that you call Tanistih and Tanistrye? They be names and termes never hard of nor knowne to us.

Iren. It is a custome among all the Irish, that presently after the death of any their cheif Lordes or Captaynes, they doe presently assemble themselves in a place, generally appoynted and knowne unto them, to choose another in his steede; where they doe nominate and elect, for the most part, not the eldest sonn, nor any of the children of theyre Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest and worthiest; as commonly the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next cossin germaine, or soe fourth, as any is elder in that kindred or sept, and then next to him they choose the next of blood to be Tanistih, whose shall next succede him in the sayd Captaynrye, yf he live thereunto.

Endox. Doe they not use any ceremonyes in this election? for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonyes and superstitions rites.

Iren. They use to place him that shalbe theyr Captayne, uppon a stone allwayes reserved for that purpose, and placed commonly upon a hill: in many of the which I have seene the foote of a man formed and engraven, which they say was the measure of theyr first Captayns foote, wheron he standing receaveth an oth to preserve all the former ancient customes of the country inviolable, and to deliver up the succession peaceably to his Tanistih, and then hath a wand delivered unto him by some whose proper office that is; after which, descending from the stone, he turneth himself round aboute, thrise forward, and thrise backward.

Eudox. But how is the Tanistih chosen?

Iren. They say he setteth but one foote upon the stone, and receaveth the like othe that the Captayne did.

Eudox. Have you ever hard what was the occasion and first beginning of this custome? for it is good to knowe the same, and may perhaps discover some secrett meaning and entent therein, very materiall to the state of that government.

Iren. I have heard that the beginning and cause of this ordinance amongst the Irish, was specially for the defence and mayntenance of theyr landes in theyr posterity, and for excluding of all innovation or alienation therof unto straungers, and specially to the English. For when theyr Captayn dyed, yf the signiory should descend to his child, and he perhaps an Infant, another might peradventure stepp in betwene, or thrust him out by strong hand, being then unable to defend his right, or to withstand the force of a forreiner; and therefore they doe appoynt the eldest of the kinn to have the signiory, for that he commonly is a man of stronger yeares, and better experience to mayntayne the inheritance, and to defend the country, either agaynst the next bordering Lordes, which use commonly to encroch one upon another as ech one is stronger, or agaynst the English, which they thinke lye still in wayte to wipe them out of theyr landes and territories. And to this end the Tanistih is allway ready known, yf it should happen the Captayne suddaynly to dye, or to be slayne in battell, or to be out of the country, to defend and keepe it from all such doubtes and daungers. For which cause the Tanistih hath also a share of the country allotted unto him, and certayne cuttings and spendings upon all the Inhabitantes under the Lord.

Eudox. When I heare this word Tanistih,

it bringeth to my mynd and remembrance what I have reade of Tania, that it should signifie a province or signiorye, as Aquitania, Lusitania, and Britania, the which some thinke to be derived of Dania, that is, from the Danes; but, I thinke, amiss. For sure it seemeth, that it came aunciently from those barbarous nations that over-ranne the world, which possessed those dominions, wherof they are now soe called. And so it may well be that from the first originall of this word Tanistih and Tanistrih came, and the custome therof hath sithence, as many others els, bene continued. But to that generall subjection of the land, wherof we formerly spake, me seemes that this custome or tenure can be no barr nor empeachment, seeing that in open Parliament by theyr sayd acknowledgment they wayyed the benefit therof, and submitted themselves notwithstanding to the ordinance of theyr new Sovereigne.

Iren. Yea, but they say, as I earst tolde you, that they reserved theyr titles, tenures, and signiories whole and sound to themselves, and for proole alleadge, that they have ever sithence remayned to them untouched, soe as nowe to alter them, should (say they) be a greate wronge.

Eudox. What remedye is there, then, or meanes to avoide this inconvenience? for, without first cutting of this dangerous custome, it seemeth hard to plante any sounde ordinance, or reduce them to a civill government, since all theyr ill customes are permitted unto them.

Iren. Surely nothing hard; for by this Act of Parliament wherof we speake, nothing was given to King Henry which he had not before from his auncestours, but onely the bare name of a King; for all other absolute power of principallity he had in himself before derived from many former Kinges, his famous progenitors and woorthy conquerours of that land. The which, sithence they first conquered and subdued unto them by force, what needeth afterward to enter into any such idle termes with them to be called theyr King, whereas it was in the power of the conquerour to take upon himself what title he will over the dominions conquered. For all is the conquerours, as Tully to Brutus sayth. Therefore (me seemes) insteade of so great and meritorious a service as they boath they performed to the King, in bringing all the Irish to acknowledge him for theyr Leige, they did great hurt unto his title, and have left a perpetuall gall in the myndes of that

people whoe, before being absolutely bound to his obedience, are now tyed but with termes, whereas els both theyr lives, theyr landes, and theyr libertyes were in his free power to appoynt what tenures, what lawes, what conditions he would over them which were all his: against which there could be no rightfull resistance, or yf there were, he might, when he would, establish them with a stronge hand.

Eudox. Yen, but perhaps it seemed betyer unto that noble King to bring them by theyr owne accord unto his obedience, and to plant a peaceable government amongst them, then by such violent meanes to keepe them under. Neither yet hath he thereby lost any thing that he formerly had; for having all before absolutely in his owne power, it remayneth so still unto him, he having neither forgiven nor forgone anything therby unto them, but having received something from them; that is, a more voluntary and loyall subjection. Soe that her Majesty may yet, when it shall please her, alter any thing of those former ordinaunces, or appoynt other lawes, that may be more both for her owne behoof, and for the good of that people.

Iren. Not soe; for it is not soe easye, now that thinges are growen into an habite and have theyre certayne course, to chaunge the channell, and turne the streame another way, for they may have nowe a colourable pretence to withstand such Innovations, having accepted of other lawes and rules alreadye.

Eudox. But you say they doe not accept of them, but delight rather to leane to theyr old customes and Brehoon lawes, though they be much more unjust and also more inconvenient for the common people, as by your late relation of them I have gathered. As for the lawes of England, they are surely most just and most agreeable both with the government and with the nature of the people. How falles it then, that you seeme to dislike of them as not soe meete for that realme of Ireland, and not only the Common Lawe, but also the Statutes and Acts of Parliamente, which were specially provided and intended for the onely benefitt thereof?

Iren. I was about to have told you my reason therein, but that yourself drew me away with other questions, for I was shewing you by what meanes, and by what sort, the Positive Lawes were first brought in and established by the Norman Conquerour: which were not by him devised or applied to the state of the realme then being, nor as y et might

best be, (as should by lawgivers principally be regarded) but were inducted the very lawes of his owne countrey of Normandy. The condition wherof how farr it differeth from this of England is apparant to every least judgement. But to transferre the same lawes for the government of the realme of Ireland was much more inconvenient and unmeet; for he found a better advantage of the time, then was in the planting of them in Ireland, and followed the execution of them with more severity, and was also present in person to overlooke the Magistrates, and to overawe the subjectes with the terror of his sword and countenance of his Majesty. But not soe in Ireland, for they were otherwise affected, and yet doe soe remayne, soe as the same lawes (me seemes) can ill sitt with theyr disposition, or worke that reformation that is wished. For lawes ought to be fashioned unto the manners and conditions of the people, to whom they are ment, and not to be imposed unto them according to the simple rule of right; for els (as I sayd) in steede of good they may worke ill, and pervert Justice to extreme injustice. For he that would transferre the lawes of the Lacedemonians to the people of Athens should find a greate absurditie and inconvenience. For those Lawes of Lacedaemon were devised by Lycurgus, as most proper and best agreeing with that people, whom he knewe to be enclyned altogether to warres, and therefore wholly trayned them up even from theyr craddels in armes and military exercises, cleane contrarye to the institution of Solon, who, in his lawes to the Atheniens, laboured by all meanes to temper theyr warlick courage with sweete delight of learning and sciences, soe that as much as the one excelled in armes, the other excelled in knowledge. The like regard and moderation ought to be had in tempering, and managing of this stubborne nation of the Irish, to bring them from that delight of licentious barbarisme unto the love of goodness and civilitye.

Eudox. I can not see how that may better be then by the discipline of the lawes of England: for the English were, at the first, as stout and warrelke a people as ever were the Irish, and yet ye see are now brought unto that civilitye, that no nation in the world excelleth them in all goodly conversation, and all the studyes of knowledge and humanitye.

Iren. What they now be both you and I see very well, but by how many thorny and hard wayes they are come thereunto, by how

many civil broyles, by how many tumultuous rebellions, that even hazarded oftentimes the whole safetie of the kingdome, may easily be considered: all which they nevertheless fairly overcame, by reason of the continuall presence of the King; whose onely parson is oftentimes in steede of an army, to contayne the unruly people from a thousand evill occasions, which this wretched kingdome is, for want therof, dayly carryed into. The which, whensoever they make head, noe lawes, noe penalties, can re-strayne them, but that they doe, in the violence of theyr furies, treade downe and trample under foote all both divine and humane thinges, and the lawes themselves they doe specially rage upon, and rend in peeces, as most repugnant to theyr libertie and naturall freedome, which in theyr madness they affect.

Eudox. It is then a very unseasonable time to pleade lawe, when a sword is drawn in the hand of the vulgar, or who thinke to retayne them with the feare of punnishments, when they looke after libertie, and shake of all government.

Iren. Then see it with Ireland continually, Eudoxus; for the sword was never yet out of theyr hand; but when they are weary of warres, and brought downe to extreeme wretchedness, then they creepe a litle perhaps, and sue for grace, till they have gotten new breath and recovered their strength agayne. See as it is in Rayne to speake of planting of lawes, and plotting of pollicies, till they are altogether subdued.

Eudox. Were they not see at the first conquering of them by Straughbowe, in the time of King Henry the second? was there not a thorough way then made by the sword for the imposing of lawes upon them? and were they not then executed with such a mighty hand as you say was used by the Norman Conquerour? What oddes is there then in this case? why should not the same lawes take as good effect in that people as they did heere, being in like sort prepared by the sword, and brought under by extremity? and why should they not continue in as good force and vigour for the contayning of the people?

Iren. The case is yet not like, but there appeareth a greate oddes betwene them; for by the conquest of Henry the Second, true it is the Irish were utterly vanquished and subdued, soe as noe enemye was able to hold up his head agaynst his power; in which theyre weakness he brought in his lawes, and settled them as now they there remayne, like as

William the Conquerour did; soe as in thus much they agree, but in the rest, that is the cheifest, they varye; for to whom did King Henry the second impose those lawes? not to the Irish for the most part of them field from his power into the desertes and mountaynes, leaving the wide cuntry to the conquerour, who in theyr steede eft-soones placed English men, who possessed all theyr landes and did quite smutt out the Irish, or the most part of them. And to those new Inhabitauntes and Colonies he gave his lawes, to weete, the same lawes under which they were borne and bred, the which it was noe difficultie to place amongst them, being formerly well enured therunto; unto whom afterwards there repayed divers of the poore distressed people of the Irish for succour and relief; of whom, such as they thought fitt for labour and industriously disposed, as the most part of the baser sort are, they received unto them as theyr vassals, but scarcely vouchsafed to impart unto them the benefit of those lawes, under which themselves lived, but every one made his will and comaundement a law unto his owne vassall: thus was not the lawe of England ever properly applied unto the Irish nation, as by a purposed plot of government, but as they could insinuat and steale themselves under the same by theyr humble carnadge and submission.

Eudox. How comes it then to pass, that having once bene soe lowe brought, and thoroughly subjected, they afterwards lifted themselves soe strongly agayne, and sullenness doe stand soe stilly agaynst all rule and government?

Iren. They say that they continued in that lowlyness, untill the tyme that the division betwene the two howses of Lancaster and Yorke arose for the crowne of England: at which tyme all the great English Lordes and Gentellmen, which had great possessions in Ireland, repayed over hither into England, some to succour theyr freendes heere, and to strengthen theyr party to obtayne the crowne; others to defend theyr landes and possessions heere agaynst such as hovered after the same upon hope of alteration of the kingdome, and succession of that side which they favoured and affected. Then the Irish, whom they before had banished into the mountaynes, where they lived onely upon white meates, as it is recorded, seeing now theyr landes soe dispeopled, and weakened, came downe into all the playnes adjoining, and thence expelling those fewe English that remayned, repossessed them agayne; since

which they have remayned in them, and, growing greater, have brought under them many of the English, which were before theyr Lordes. This was one of the occasions by which all those countreys which, lying neere unto any mountaynes or Irish desertes, had bene planted with English, were shortly displanted and lost. As namely in Mounster all the landes adjoyning to Slewloghir, Arlo, and the bogge of Allone. In Connaught all the Countreys bordering uppon the Culuers, Monterols and Oroirke country. In Leinster all the landes neighbouring unto the mountaynes of Glauimalceerli, unto Shillelah, unto the Briskelah, and Polmonte. In Ulster, all the countreys neere unto Tyrconnel, Tyrone, and the Scotts.

Eudox. Surely this was a greates violence; but yet by your speach it seemeth that only the countreys and vallyes neere adjoyning unto those mountaynes and desertes, were thus recovered by the Irish; but how comes it now that we see almost all that realme repossessed of them? Was there any more such evill occasions growen by the troubles of England? Or did the Irish, out of those places soe by them gotten, breake further and stretch themselves through out the whole land? for now, for ought that I can understand, there is noe part but the bare English pale in which the Irish have not greatest footing.

Irra. But out of these small beginnings by them gotten neere the mountaynes, did they spredd themselves into the Inland; and also, to theyr further advauntage, there did other like unhappy accidentes happen out of England, which gave hart and good opportunitye to them to regayne theyr old possessions. For, in the raigne of King Edward the fourth, thinges remayned yet in the same state that they were after the late breaking out of the Irish, which I spoke of; and that noble prince begann to cast an eye unto Ireland, and to mynd the reformation of thinges there runn amiss: for he sent over his brother the woorthy Duke of Clarence, whose having married the heyre of the Earle of Ulster, and by her having all the Earldome of Ulster, and much in Meath and Mounster, very carefully went about the redressing of those late evils; and though he could not beate out the Irish agayne, by reason of his short continuance, yet he did shutt them up within those narrow corners and glinnes under the mountaynes foote, in which they lurked; and soe kept them from breaking any further, by buylding of strong holdes upon every border,

and fortifying all passages. Amongest which he builded the castle of Clare in Tomond, of which countrey he had the inheritance, and of Mortimers landes adjoyning, which is now (by the Irish) called Killalowe. But the times of that good King growing also troublesome did lett the thorough reformation of all thinges. And therunto soone after was added another fatall mischeif, which wrought a greater calamitye then all the former. For the said Duke of Clarence, then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, was by practise of evill persons about the King, his brother, called thence away; and soone after by sinister meanes was cleane made away. Presently after whose death all the north revolting did sett up O'neale for theyr Captayne, being before that of small power and regard: and there arose in that part of Tomond, one of the O'Briens, called Murroh en-Ranah, that is, Morrice of the Fuarne, or wast wilde places, whose gathering unto him a^v the relicks of the discontented Irish, effsones surprised the said castle of Clare, burnt all, and spoyled all the English dwelling there, and in short space possessed all that countrey of beyond the River of Shannon and neere adjoyning: whence shortly breaking forth, like a suddayne tempest, he over-rann all Mounster and Connaught; breaking downe all the holdes and fortresses of the English, defacing and utterly subverting all corporat townes that were not strongly walled: for those he had noe meanes nor Engines to overthrowe, neither indeede would he stay at all about them, but speedely rann forward, accounting his suddaynness his most advauntage, that he might overtake the English before they could fortifye or gather themselves together. Soe in short space he cleane wiped out many great townes, as first Inshequinn, then Killaloh, before called Clagfort. afterwards, Thurles, Mourne, Buttevant, and many others, whose names I cannot remember, and of some of which there is now noe memory nor signe remayning. Upon report wherof then flocked unto him all the scumm of the Irish out of all places, that ere long he had a mighty army, and thence marched forth into Leinster, where he wrought great outrages, wasting all the countreys where he went, for it was his policie to leave noe holdes behind him, but to make all playne and wast. In the which he soone after created himself King, and was called King of all Ireland: which before him I doe not remember that any did soe generally, but onely Edward le Bruce.

Eudox. What! was there ever any generall

King of all Ireland? I never heard it before, but that it was allwayes (whilst it was under the Irish) divided into fowre, and sometimes into five kingdomes or dominions. But this Edward le Bruce, what was he, that he could make himself King of all Ireland?

Iren. I would tell you, in case you would not challenge me anone for forgetting the matter which I had in hand, that is, the inconvenience and unfitness which I suppose he to be in the lawes of the land.

Endox. No surely. I have no occasion, for neither is this impertinent therunto; for sithence you did sett your course (as I remember) in your first part to treat of the evils which hindert the peace and good ordering of that land, amongst which that of the inconvenience of the lawes was the first which you had in hand, this discourse of the over-running and wasting of the realme is very materiall therunto, for that it was the beginning of all the other evils, which sithence have afflicted that land, and opened a way unto the Irish to recover their possession, and to beate out the English which had formerly wonne the same. And besides, it will give a great light both unto your second and third part, which is the redressing of those evils, and planting of some good forme and pollicie therein, by renewing the remembrance of those occasions and accidentes by which those ruines happened, and laying before us the ensamples of those times, to be compared with ours, and to be warned by those which shall have to do in the like. Therefore, I pray you, tell them unto us, and as for the poynt where you left, I will not forget afterwarles to call you back agayne thereunto.

Iren. This Edward le Bruce was brother to Robert le Bruce, who was King of Scotland at such time as King Edward the Second reigned here in England, and bare a most malicious and spitefull mynd agaynst King Edward, doing him all the hurt he could, and annoying his territories of England, whilst he was troubled with civill warres of his Barrons at home. He also, to worke him the more mischeif, sent over his sayd brother Edward with a power of Scottes and Beekd-shankes into Ireland, where, by the means of the Lacyes and of the Irish with whom he combined, they gott footing, and gathering to him all the scatterlinges and out-lawes out of all the woodes and moun-taynes, in which they long had lurked, marched forth into the English Pale, which then was, chiefly in the north, from the

poynt of Donluce, and beyond unto Dublin: having in the midst of her Knockfargus; Belfast, Armagh, and Carlingford, which are now the most out-boundes and abandoned places in the English Pale, and indeede not counted of the English Pale at all; for it stretches now no further then Dundalke towards the north. There the sayd Edward le Bruce spoyled and burnt all the Elde English inhabitants, and sacked and razed all cittyes and corporat townes, noe lesse then Murroghe en Ranagh, of whom I earst told you: for he wasted Belfast, Green-Castle, Kelles, Belltalbot, Castletowne, Newton, and many others good townes and strong holdes: he rooted out the noble families of the Audleys, the Talbots, the Touchets, the Chamberlains, the Mandevels, and the Savages out of Ardes, though of the Lord Savage there remayne yet an heyre, that is now a very poore gentellman of very meane condition, yet dwelling in the Ardes. And coming lastly to Dundalke, he there made himself King, and reigned by the space of one whole yeare, by the name of Edward King of Ireland, untill that King Edward of England, having sett some quiett in his affayres at home, sent over the Lord John Brenningham to be generall of the warres agaynst him, whoe, encountering him neere to Dundalke, over-threwe his armye, and slewe himself, and presently followed the victorie soe hotly upon the Scottes, that he suffered them not to breathe, or to gather themselves together agayne, till they came to the sea-coast. Notwithstanding, all the way that they fled, for very rancour and dispite in theyr returne they utterly consumed and wasted whatsoever they had before left unspoyled; soe that of all townes, castles, fortes, bridges, and habitations, they left not any stick standing, nor any people remainyng; for those fewe which yet survived, fledd from their furie further into the English Pale. Thus was all that goodly countrey utterly wasted, and left desolat as yet it remaineth to this day, which before hath bene the cheif ornament and beautye of Ireland, for that of the north sometimes was as populous and plentifull as any part of England, and yeelded unto the K. of England as it appeareth by good recordes, thirty thousand markes of old mony by the yeare, besides many thousandes of able men to serve them in theyr warres. And sure it is yet a most beautifull and sweet countrey as any is under heaven, reamed thoroughout with many

goodly rivers, replenished with all sortes of fish, most abundantly sprinkled with many sweet llandes and goodly lakes, like little Inland Seas, that will carry even ships upon theyr waters, adorned with goodly woodes fitt for building of howses and shippes, soe comodiously, as that yf some princes in the world had them, they would soone hope to be lordes of all the seas, and ere long of all the world; also full of good portes and havens opening upon England and Scotland, as inviting us to come to them, to see what excellent comodities that countrey can afford, besides the soyle it self most fertile, fitt to yeeld all kind of fruite that shal be comitted therunto. And lastly, the heavens most milde and temperat, though somewhat more moyst then the part toward the West.

Eudox. Truly Ireneus, what with your prayes of the countrey, and what with your discourse of the lamentable desolation therof made by those ragtaylor Irish Scottes, you have filled me with great compassion of theyr calamities, that I doe much pittye that sweete land, to be subject to soe many evils as every day I see more and more thrown upon her, and doe half beginn to thinke, that it is (as you sayd in the beginning) her fatal misfortune, above all countreys that I knowe, to be thus miserably tossed and turnoyled with these variable stormes of afflictions. But since we are thus farr entred into the considerations of her mishaps, tell me, have there bene any more such tempests, as ye terme them, wherein she hath thus wretchedly bene wracked?

Iren. Many more, God wote, have there bene, in which her principall partes have bene rent and torne asunder, but none that I can remember soe universall as these. And yet the rebellion of Thomas Fitz Gerral did well-nigh stretch itself into all partes of Ireland. But that, which was in the time of the government of the Lord Gray, was surely noe less generall then all those; for there was no part free from the contagion, but all conspired in one to cast of theyr subjection to the crowne of England. Nevertheless, through the most wise and valiaunt handling of that right noble Lord, it gott not that head which the former evils found; for in them the realme was left, like a shipp in a storme amidst all the raging surges, unruled, and undirected of any: for they to whom she was comitted either faynted in theyr labour, or forsooke theyre charge. But he (like a most wise pilote) kept her course carefully, and held her most strongly even

agaynst those roring billowes, that he brought her safely out of all; soe as long after, even by the space of twelve or thirtene yeares, she rode in peace, through his only paynes and excellent endurauce, how ever envye list to bluster agaynst him. But of this we shall have more occasion to speake in another place: now (if you please) lett us returne agayne unto our first course.

Eudox. Truly I am very gladd to heare your judgement of the government of that honorable man soe soundly; for I have indeede oftentimes hard it maligned, and his doings depraved of some, whose (I perceive) did rather of malicious mynd, or private greivance, seeke to detract from the honour of his deedes and counsells. then of any just cause: but he was nevertheless, in the judgement of all good and wise men, defended and mayntayned. And now that he is dead, his immortal fame surviveth, and flourisheth in the monthes of all people, that even those that did backbite him, are choaked with theyr owne venome, and breake theyre galles to heare his soe honorable report. But lett him rest in peace; and turne we to our more troubleous matters of discourse, of which I am right sory that ye make soe short an end, and covett to pass over to your former purposes; for there be many other partes of Ireland, which I have heard have bene noe less vexed with the like stormes, then these which you have treated of, as the countrey of the Birnes and Toolles neere Dublin, with the insolent outrages and spoyles of Feugh mac Hughs, the countreys of Katerlagh, Wexford, and Waterford, of the Kevanaghs. The countreys of Leis, Kilkenny, and Kildare of the Moores. The countreys of Ofalye and Longford of the Connors. The countreys of Westmeath, Cavan, and Louth of the O Reyleys, the Kellyes, and many others, soe as the discouraging of them, besides the pleasure which would redounde out of theyr history, be also very profitable for matter of pollicye.

Iren. All this which ye have named, and many moe besides, often times have I right well known, (and yet often times doe) kindle great fires of tumultuous broyles in the countreys bordering upon them. All which to rehearse should rather be to chronicle times, then to search into reformation of abuses in that realme: and yet very needfull it wil be to consider them, and the evils which they have often stirred up, that some redress therof, and prevention of the evils to come, may thereby the rather be devised. But I

suppose we shall have a fitter opportunity for the same, when we shall speake of the particular abuses and enormities of that government, which will be next after those general defectes and inconveniences which I sayd were in the lawes, customes, and religion.

Eudox. Goe to then, a Godes name! and followe the course which you have promised to your self, for it fitteth best. I must confess, with the purpose of your discourse. Declare your opinion, as you began, about the lawes of that realme, what incomodity you have conceived to be in them, chiefly in the Common Lawe, which I would have thought to be most free, from all such dislike.

Iren. The Common Law is (as before I sayd) of itself most rightfull and very convenient (I suppose) for the kingdome for the which it was first devised; for this (I thinke) as it seemes reasonable, that out of the manners of the people, and abuses of the countrey, for which they were invented, they take theyr first beginning, or els they should be most unjust, for noe lawes of man (according to the straight rule of right) are just, but as in regard of the evils which they prevent, and the safety of the common-weale which they provide for. As for example, in the true ballauncing of justice, it is a flatt wrong to punish the thought or purpose of any before it be enacted; for true Justice punnisheth nothing but the evill act or wicked woord; yet by the lawes of all kingdomes it is a capitall crime to devise or purpose the death of the King: the reason is, for that when such a purpose is effected, it should then be to late to devise therof, and should turne that common-weale to more hurt by such loss of theyr Prince, then such punnishment of the malefactours. And therefore the lawe in that case punnisheth the thought; for better is a mischeif, then an inconvenience. See that *jus politicum*, though it be not of it self just, yet by application, or rather necessitye, it is made just; and this only respect maketh all lawes just. Now then, yf these lawes of Ireland be not likewise applied and fitted for that realme, they are sure very inconvenient.

Eudox. You reason strongly: but what unfitness doe you finde in them for that realme? shewe us some particulars.

Iren. The Common Lawe appoynteth that all tryalls, as well of crimes as titles and rights, shal be made by verditt of a Jurye, choosen out of the honestest and most sub-

stantiall free-holders. Now, most all the free-holders of that realme are Irish, which when the cause shall fall betwixt an Englishman and an Irish, or betwene the Queene and any free-holder of that countrey, they make noe more scruple to pass agaynst an Englishman, and the Queene, though it be to strayne theyr othes, then to drinke mulke unstrayned. See that, before the Jurye goe together, it is well knowen what the verdict will be. The tryall herof have I see often seene, that I dare confidently avouch the abuse therof. Yet is the lawe of itself, I say, good; and the first institution therof, being given to all naturall Englishmen, very rightfull, but now that the Irish have stept into the roomes of the English, (whoe are now become see heedfull and provident to keepe them out from henceforth that they make noe scruple of conscience to passe against them) yt is good reason that either that course of the lawe for tryall be altered or other provision for juries made.

Eudox. In sooth, Irenaüs, you have discovered a poynt worthy the consideration; for heerby not only the English subject findeth noe indifferency in deciding of his cause, be it never see just; but also the Queene, as well in all pleas of the crowne, as also in inquries for Escheates, landes attaynted, wardships, concealmentes, and all such like, is abused and exceedingly damaged.

Iren. You say very true; for I dare undertake, that at this day there are more attaynted landes, concealed from her Majestie, then she hath now possessions in all Ireland: and it is noe small inconvenience; for, beside that she loseth see much land as should turne her to great profit, she besides loseth see many good subjectes, which might be assured unto her, as those landes would yield inhabitants and living unto.

Eudox. But doe that people (say you) make noe more conscience to perjure themselves in theyr verdictes, and damne theyr sowles?

Iren. Not only see in theyr verdictes, but also in all other theyr dealings; especially toward the English, they are most wilfully bent: for though they will not seeme manifestly to doe it, yet will some one or other suttill-headed fellowe amongst them pike some quicke, or devise some evasion, wherof the rest will lightly take hold, and suffer themselves easely to be ludd by him to that themselves desired. For in the most appa-
raunt matter that may be, the least question or doubt that can be moved will make a stopp unto them, and putt them quite out of the way. Besides that, of themselves they

are (for the most part) soe cautelous and wyllye-headed, specially being men of soe small experience and practize in lawe matters, that you would wonder whence they borrowe such subtilties and slye shifts.

Eudox. But, me thinks, this inconvenience might be much helped by the Judges and Chief Magistrates which have the choosing and nominating of those juries, yf they would have care to appoynt either most Englishmen, or such Irishmen as were of the soundest judgement and disposition; for noe doubt but some there be incorruptible.

Iren. Some there be indeede as you say; but then would the Irish party crye out of partiality, and complayne he hath noe justice, that he is not used as a subject, that he is not suffred to have the free benefitt of the lawe; and these outcries the Magistrates there doe much shunn, as they have cause, since they are soe readily hearkened unto heere: neither can it be indeede, although the Irish party would be soe contented to be soe compassed, that such English freeholders, which are but fewe, and such faithful Irishmen, which are indeede as fewe, shall alwayes be chosen for tryalls; for being soe fewe, they should be made weary of theyr free-holds. And therefore a good care is to be had by all good occasions to encrease theyr numbers, and to plant more by them. But were it soe, that the juries could be picked out of such choyse men as you desire, there would nevertheless be as badd corruption in the tryall; for the evidence being brought in by the base Irish people, wil be as deceitfull as the verdictes; for they care much lesse then the others what they sweare, and sure their Lordes may compell them to saie any thing; for I myself have heard, when one of that base sort (which they call churles) being challenged, and reproved for his false Oth, hath answered confidently, That his Lord commanded him, and it was the least thing he could doe for his Lord to sweare for him: soe inconscionable are these common people, and so litle feeling have they of God, or theyr owne sowles good.

Eudox. It is a most miserable case, but what helpe can there be in this? for though the manners of the tryalls should be altered, yet the proof of every thing must needes be by testimonies of such persons as the parties shall produce; which yf they shall corrupt, how can there ever any light of the truth appeare? what remedye is there for this evil, but to make heavy lawes and penalities agaynst jurors?

Iren. I thinke sure that will doe small good; for when a people are inclined to any vice, or have noe touch of conscience, nor sence of theyr evill doings, it is bootlesse to thinke to restrayne them by any penalties or feare of punishment; but either the occasion is to be taken away, or a more understanding of the right, and shame of the fault to be imprinted. For yf that Licurgus should have made it death for the Lacedaemonians to steale, they being a people which naturally delighted in stealth; or yf it should be made a capitall crime for the Flemmings to be taken in dronkenness, there should have bene few Lacedaemonians then left, and fewer Flemmings. Soe impossible it is to remove any fault, soe generall in a people, with terrour of lawes or most sharpe restrayntes.

Eudox. What meanes may there then be to avoide this inconvenience? for the case sure seemes very hard.

Iren. We are not yet come to that poynt to devise remedies for the evils, but only are now to recount them; of the which, this that I have told you is one defect in the Common Lawes.

Eudox. Tell us then (I pray you) further, have you any more of this sort in the Common Lawes.

Iren. By rehearsall of this, I remember also of an other like, which I have often observed in tryalls to have wrought great hurt and hindraunce, and that is, the exceptions which the Common Law alloweth a fellow in his tryall; for he may have (as you knowe) thirty-six exceptions peremptorie agaynst the jurors, of which he shall shewe noe cause. By which shift there being (as I have shewed you) small store of honest jurye men, he will either putt of his tryall, or leave it to such men as (perhaps) are not of the soundest sort, by whose meanes, yf he can acquitt himself of the crime, as he is likely, then will he plague such as were brought first to be of his jurye, and all such as made any party against him. And when he comes forth, he will make theyr cowes and garrans to walke, yf he doe noe other mischief to theyr persons.

Eudox. This is a slye devise, but I thinke it might some be remedied; but we must leave it awhile with the rest. In the meanwhile goe ye forward with others.

Iren. There is an other noe less inconvenient then this, which is the tryall of accessories to felony; for, by the Common Lawe, the accessories cannot be proceeded

agaynst, till the principall receive his tryall. Now the case often falleth out in Ireland that a stealth being made by a rebell, or an outlawe, the stolen goodes are conveyed to some husbandman or gentellman, which hath well to take to, and yet liveth most by the receipt of such goodes stoll, where they are found by the owner, and handled: wherupon the party is perhaps apprehended and committed to goale, or putt upon sureties, till the sessions, at which time the owner, preferring a bill of indictment, proves sufficiently the stealth to have bene made upon him by such an outlaw, and to have bene found in the possession of the prisoner, agaynst whom, nevertheless, noe course of lawe can proceede, or tryall can be had, for that the principall theif is not to be gotten, notwithstanding that he likewise standeth perhaps indicted at once with the receiver, being in rebellion, or in the woodes, whereunto peradventure he is flowne before he can be gotten, and soe the receiver clean acquitted and discharged of the crime. By which meanes the thieves are greatly encouraged to steal, and theyr mayntayners emboldened to receive theyr stealths, knowing howe hardly they can be brought to any tryall of lawe.

Eudox. Truly this is a great inconvenience, and a great cause (as you say) of the mayntenance of thieves, knowing theyr receivers allwayes ready; for, were there noe receivers, there would be noe thieves: but this (me seemes) might easely be provided for by some Act of Parliament, that the receiver, being convicted by good prooffe, might receive his tryall without his principall.

Iren. You say very true, Eudoxus, but it is almost impossible to be compassed. And herin also you discover another imperfection in the course of the Common Lawe, and first ordinance of the realme; for ye knowe that the sayd Parliament must consist of the peeres, gentellmen, freeholders, and burgesses of that realme it self. Nowe perhaps these being themselves, or the most part of them (as may seeme by their stiff with-standing of this Act) culpable of this crime, or favourers of theyr frendes, which are such by whom theyr kitchins are sometime amended, will not suffer any such Statute to pass. Yet hath it oftentimes bene attempted, and in the time of Sir John Perrot very earnestly (I remember) laboured, but by noe meanes could be effected. And not only this, but many other like, which are as needfull for the reformation of that realme.

Eudox. This also is surely a great defect,

but we must not talke, you saie, of the redressing of this, untill our second part come, which purposely therfore is appoynted. Therefore proceede to the recounting of more such evils, yf you have any more.

Iren. There is also a great inconvenience which hath wrought great damage both to her Majesty, and to the common wealth, through close and colourable conveyances of the landes and goodes of traytors, fellows, and fugitives. As, when one of them myndeth to goe into rebellion, he will convey away all his landes and lordships to feoffees of trust, whereby he reserveth unto himself but an estate for terme of life, which being determined either by the sword or by the halter, theyr landes cometh straight unto theyr heyres, and the Quene is defrauded of the intent of the lawe, which layd that grevous punishment upon traytours to forfeit all theyr landes to the Prince, to the end that men might be the rather terrified from committing treasons; for manye which would little esteeme of theyr owne lives, yet for remorse of theyr wives and children should be withheld from those heynous crimes. This appeareth playnly in the late Earle of Desmond; for, before his breaking forth into his open rebellion, he had conveyed secretly all his landes to feoffees of trust, in hope to have cutt off her Majestie from the escheat of his landes.

Eudox. Yea, but this was well enough avoyded; for that Act of Parliament which gave all his landes to the Quene did (as I have heard) cut off and frustrat all such conveyances, as had any time by the space of twelve yeares before his rebellion, bene made; within the compass wherof, that fraudulent feoffement, and many other the like of his accomplices and fellowe traytors, which were attaynted, hath bene made voyd.

Iren. Very true, but how hardly that Act of Parliament was wronge out of them, I can witness; and were it to be passed agayne, I dare undertake it would never be compassed. But were it soe that such Acts might easely be brought to pass agaynst traytors and fellows, yet were it not an endless trouble, that noe traytour nor fellow should be attaynted, but a Parliament must be called for bringing his landes to the Quene, which the Common-Lawe giveth her.

Eudox. Then this is noe fault of the Common-Lawe, but of the parsons which worke this fraud unto her Majestie.

Iren. Yes, mary! for the Common-Lawe hath left them this benefit, wherof they make advantage, and wrest it to theyr badd pur-

poses. Soe as they are therby the bolder to enter into evill actions, knowing that, yf the worst befall them, they shall loose nothing but themselves, wherof they seeme surely to be very careless, like as all barbarous people are, as Cæsar in his Comentaries sayth, very seareless of daunger.

Eudox. But what meane you of fugitives herin? Or how doth this concerne them?

Iren. Yes, very greatly; for ye shall understand that there be many ill disposed and undutifull parsons of that realme, like as in this poynt there are also in this realme of England to many, which being men of good inheritance, are for dislike of religion, or daunger of the lawe into which they are runn, or discontented with the present government, flied beyond the seas, where they live under Princes, that are her Majesties professed enemies, and converse and are confederat with other traytors and fugitives which are there abiding. The which nevertheless have the benefit of theyr landes heere, by pretence of such colourable conveyances therof, formerly made by them to theyr privy frendes heere of trust, whose secretly doe send over unto them the sayd revennues, wherewith they are these mayntayned and enabled agaynst her Majestic.

Eudox. I doe not thinke that there be any such fugitives which are releved by the profit of theyr landes in England, for there is a straighter order taken. And yf there be any such in Ireland, it were good it were likewise looked unto, for this evill may easely be remedied. But proceede.

Iren. It is also inconvenient in that realme of Ireland, that the wardes and mariadges of gentellmens children should be in the disposition of any of those Irish Lordes, as nowe they are, by reason that theyr landes are held by knightes service of those Lordes. By which meane it cometh to pass that those sayd gentellmens children, being thus in the ward of those Lordes, are not only therby brought up lewdly, and Irish-like, but also for ever after soe bound to theyr services, as they will runn with them into any disloyall action.

Eudox. This greivance, Irenous, is also complayned of in England, but howe can it be remedied? since the service must follow the tenure of the landes, and the landes were given away by the Kinges of England to those Lordes, when they first conquered that realme; and, to say trouth, this also would be some prejudice to the Prince in her wardships.

Iren. I doe not meane this by the Princes

wardes, but by such as fall into the handes of Irish Lordes; for I could wish, and this I would enforce, that all those wardships were in the Princes disposition; for then it might be hoped, that she, for the universall reformation of that realme, would take better order for the bringing up of those wardes in good nurture, and not suffer them to come into soe badd handes. And though these things be already passed away, by her progenitours former grauntes, unto those sayd Lordes; yet I could find a way to remedye a great part therof, as hereafter, when fitt time serveth, shall appeare. And since we are entred into speach of such grauntes of former Princes, to sundry parsons of this realme of Ireland, I will mention unto you some other, of like nature to this, and of like inconvenience, by which the former Kinges of England passed unto them a great part of theyr prerogative; which though then it was well intended, and perhaps well deserved of them which received the same, yet now such a gapp of mischeif lyeth open therby, that I could wish it were well stopped. Of this sort are the grauntes of Countyes Palentines in Ireland, which though at first were graunted upon good consideration when they were first conquered, for that these landes lay then as a very border to the wild Irish, subject to continuall invasion, soe as it was needefull to give them great privileges for the defence of the inhabitants therof; yet now for that it is noe more a border, nor frontierd with enemies, why should such privileges be any more contynued?

Eudoxus. I would gladly knowe what ye call a County Palentine, and whence it is soe called.

Iren. It was (as I suppose) first named Palentine of a pale, as it wasen pale and defence to theyr inner landes, soe as it is called the English Pale, and therefore also is a Palegrave named, that is, an Earle Palentine. Others thinke of the Latine, *palare*, that is, to forrage or out-run, because the marchers and borderers use comonly soe to doe. Soe as to have a County Palentine is, in effect, but to have a privilege to spoyle the enemies borders adjoining. And surely soe it is used at this day, as a privileged place of spoyles and stealthes; for the County of Tipperary, which is nowe the onely Countye Palentine in Ireland, is, by abuse of some badd ones, made a receptacle to robb the rest of the Countyes about it, by meanes of whose privileges none will followe theyr stealthes, soe as it, being situat in the very lapp of all the

land, is made nowe a border, which how inconvenient it is lett every man judge. And though that right noble man, that is the Lord of the libertye doe endeavour himself all that he may to yeld equall justice unto all, yet can there not but great abuses lurke in soe inward and absolute a prifilege, the consideration wherof is to be respected carefully, for the next succession. And much like unto this graunte there are alsoe other privileges graunted unto most of the corporations there; that they shall not be bound to any other government then theyr owne, that they shall not be charged with garrisons, that they shall not be traveled forth of theyre owne fraunchises, that they may buye and sell with theeves and rebels, that all amercenties and fines that shal be imposed upon them shall come unto themselves. All which, though at the time of theyr first graunt they were tollerable, and perhaps reasonable, yet nowe are most unreasonable and inconvenient; but all these will easely be cutt of with the superiour power of her Majesties prerogative, agaynst which her owne grauntes are not to be pleaded or enforced.

Eudox. Nowe truly, Irenæus, ye have (me seemes) very well handled this poynt, touching the inconveniences in the Common Lawe there, by you observed; and it seemeth that you have a myndfull regard unto the things that may concerne the good of that realme. And yf you can as well goe through with the Statute Lawes of that land, I will thinke you have not lost all your time there. Therefore, I pray you, now take them in hand, and tell us what you thinke to be amiss in them.

Iren. The Statutes of that realme are not many, and therefore we shall the sooner runn through them. And yet of these fewe there are sundrye impertinent and unnecessary: the which perhaps, though at the time of the making of them were very needefull, yet nowe through chaunge of time are cleane antiquated, and altogether idle: as that which forbiddeth any to weare theyr beardes on the upper lipp, and none under the chin: that which putteth away saffron shirtes and smockes; that which restrayneth the use of gilt brilles and petronells; that which is appoynted to the recorders and clarkes of Dublin and Drogheda, to take but two pence for the cople of a playnt; that which commandeth bowes and arrowes; that which maketh that all Irishmen that shall converse amongst the English shal be taken for spyas, and soe punished; that

which forbiddeth persons ameanable to lawe to enter and distrayne in the landes in which they have title; and many other the like I could rehearse.

Eudox. These, which you have repeated, seeme very frivolous and fruitelless; for by the breach of them litle damage or inconvenience can come to the Common-wealth: Neither, indeede, yf any transgress them, shall he seeme woorthy of punnishment, scarce of blame, saving for that they beare the name of lawes. But lawes ought to be such, as that the keeping of them should be greatly for the behoofe of the Common-wealth, and the vyolating of them should be very haynous, and sharply punished. But tell us of some more waighty dislikes in the Statutes then these, and that may more behoofully import the reformation of them.

Iren. There is one or two Statutes which make the wrongfull distrayning of any mans goodes agaynst the forme of the Common Lawe to be felony. The which Statutes seeme surely to have bene at first ment for the great good of the realme, and for restrayning of a fowle abuse, which then raigned commonly among that people, and yet is not altogether layed aside; that when any one was indetted to another, he would first demand his dett, and, yf he were not payed, he would straight goe and take a distress of his goodes and chattels, where he could find them, to the vantage: the which he would keepe till he were satisfied, and this the simple churle (as they call him) doth commonly use to doe yet through ignorance of his misdoing, or evill use that hath long settled amongst them. But this, though it be sure most unlawfull, yet surely (me seemes) to hard to make it death, since there is noe purpose in the other party to steale the others goodes, or to conceale the distress, but doth it openly, for the most part before witnesses. And agayne, the same Statutes are soe slackely penned (besides the later of them is soe unsensibly contrived that it scarce carryeth any reason in it) that they are often and very easely wrocted to the fraud of the subject; as yf one going to distrayne upon his owne land or tenement, where lawfully he may, yet yf in doing thereof he transgress the least poynt of the Common Lawe, he straight committeth felonye. Or yf one by any other occasion take any thing from another, as boies use sometymes to cappe on another, the same is straight felonye. This is a very hard lawe.

Eudox. Nevertheless the evill use in dis-

trayning another mans goodea, you will not denye but it is to be abolished and taken away.

Iren. It is soe, but not by taking away the subject withall; for that is to violent a medicine, especially this use being permitted, and made lawfull unto some, and to other some death. As to most of the corporat townes, there it is graunted by theyr charter, that they may, every man by himself, without any officer (for that were more tolerable) for any dett, to distrayne the goodea of any Irish, being found within theyr libertye, or but passing through theyr townes. And the first permission of this was for that in those times when that graunt was made, the Irish were not amenable to lawe, soe as it was not safetie for the townesmen to goe to them forth to dymaund theyr dett, nor possible to drawe him into lawes, so that he had leave to be his owne bayliff, to arrest his debtors goodea within his owne franchise. The which the Irish seeing thought it was lawfull for them to distrayne the townesmens goodea in the cuntry where they found it. And soe, by the example of that graunte of the townesmen, they thought it lawfull, and made it a use to distrayne one anothers goodea for small detts. And to say trueth, me thinks it is hard for every tryling dett, of two or three shillings to be driven to lawe, which is soe far from them sometimes to be sought; for which me thinks it an heave ordinance to give death, especially to a rude man that is ignorant of lawe, and thinketh a common use or graunte to other men is a lawe for himself.

Eudox. Yea, but the judge, when it cometh before him to tryall, may easely decide this doubt, and lay open the intent of the lawe by his better discretion.

Iren. Yes, but it is dangerous to leave the seuce of the lawe unto the reason or will of the judges, whoe are men and may be miscarried by affections, and many other meanes. But the lawes ought to be like unto stonye tables, playne, stedfast, and immovable. There is also such another Statute or two, which make Coyngne and Liverye to be treason, noe less inconvenient then the former, being, as it is peined, how ever the first purpose therof were expedient; for thereby now noe man can goe into another mans howse for lodgings, nor to his owne tennaunts howse to take victuall by the way, notwithstanding that there is noe other meanes for him to have lodging, nor horse

meate, nor mans meate. there being noe Innes, nor none otherwise to be bought for money, but that he is endamaged to the Statute of treason, whensoever he shall happen to fall out with his tennaunt, or that his sayd host list to complayne of greivance, as oftentimes I have seene them very maliciously doe through the least provocation.

Eudox. I doe not well knowe, but by gess, what you doe meane by these termes of Coyngne and Liverye: therefore I pray you explaine them.

Iren. I knowe not whether the wordes be English or Irish, but I suppose them rather to be ancient English, for the Irishmen can make noe derivation nor analogye of them. What Liverye is, we by common use in England knowe well enough, namelye, that it is allowaunce of horse-meate, as they commonly use the woord in stabling, as to keepe horses at liverye: the which woord, as I gess, is derived of liveryng or delivering forth theyr nightlye foode. Soe in great howses, the liverye is sayd to be served up for all night, that is theyr nyghtly allowaunce for drinke. And Liverye is also called the upper garment which serving men wear, soe called (as I suppose) for that it is delivered and taken from him at pleasure: soe it is apparant, that by the woord Liverye is meant horse-meate, like as by the woord Coyngne is understood mans-meate; but how the woord is derived is very hard to tell: some say of coyne, because they used commonly in theyr Coyngnes, not only to take meate, but coyne also; and that taking of money was specially ment to be prohibited by that Statute: but I think rather that this woord Coignye is derived of the Irish. The which is a common use amongst the Irish laplordes, to have a common spending upon theyr tennautes; for all theyr tennautes, being commonly but tennautes at will, they use to take of them what victualls they list, for of victualls they were wont to make small reckning: neither in this were the tennautes wronged, for it was an ordinary and known custome, and his Lord commonly used soe to covenant with him, which yf at any time the tennaunt misliked, he might freely depart at his pleasure. But now by this Statute the sayd Irish Lord is wronged, for that he is cutt off from his customarye services, of the which this was one, besides many more of the like, as Cudd-eehih, Cosshirh, Bonaught, Shragh, Sorehim, and such like; the which (I think) at first were customes brought in by the English

upon the Irish, for they were never wont, and yet are very loth to yeld any certayne rent, but onely such spendinges, saying commonly, 'Spend me and defend me.'

Eudox. Surely I take it as you say, that therein the Irish Lordes hath greates wronge, since it was an auncient custome, and nothing contrarye to lawe, for to the willing there is not wronge done. And this right well I wote, that even heere in England, there are in many places as large customes as that of Coignye and Liverye. But I suppose by your speech, that it was the first meaning of the Statute to forbidd the violent taking of victualls upon other mens tenauntes agaynst theyr willes, which surely is a great outrage, and yet not soe great (me seemes) as that it should be made treason: for considering that the nature of treason is concerning the realme, estate or person of the King, or practising with his enemyes, to the derogation and daunger of his crowne and dignitie; it is hardly wrested to make this treason. But (as you earnestly sayd) 'better a mischeif then an inconvenience.'

Iren. Another Statute I remember, which having beene an auncient English custome is now upon advisement made an Irish lawe, and that is called the Custome of Kin-cogish, which is, that every head of every sept, and every cheif of every kinyed or familie, should be answerable and bound to bring forth every one of that kinyed or sept under hym at all times to be justified, when he should be required or charged with any treason, felonye, or other haynous crime.

Eudox. Why, surely this seemes a very necessary lawe. For considering that many of them be such losellys and scatterlings, as that they cannot easely by any sheriff, constable, bayliff, or other ordinarye officer be gotten, when they are challenged for any such fact; this is a very good meane to gett them to be brought in by him, that is the head of that sept, or cheif of that howse: wherefore I wonder what just exception you can make agaynst the same.

Iren. Trewe, Eudoxus, in the pretence of the good of that Statute you have nothing erred, for it seemeth very expedient and necessarye: but the hurt which cometh thereby is greater then the good. For, whilst every cheif of a sept standeth soe bound to the lawe for every one of his bloud or sept that is under him, inclusive everie one of his sept is put under him, and he made greates by the commaunding of them all. For yf he may not commaunde them, then that lawe doth wrong

which bindeth him to bring them forth to be justified: and yf he may commaunde them, then he may commaunde them aswell to ill as to good, whereby the lordes and captaynes of countreyes, and the principall and heades of septs, are made stronger, when it should be a most speciall care in policye to weaken them, and to set up and strengthen divers of his underlinges agaynst him, which, whensoever he shall offer to swarve from dutye may be able to beard him: for it is very daungerous to leave the comaund of soe many as some septs are, being five or six thousand persons, to the will of one man, whoe may leade them to what he will, as he himself shal be inclyned.

Eudox. In very deede, Irenæus, it is very daungerous, especially seeing the disposition of those people is not allwayes inclinable to the best. And therefore I hold it noe wisdom to leave unto them to much comaund over theyr kinyed, but rather to withdrawe theyr followers from them asmuch as may be, and to gather them under the comaunde of lawe by some better meane then this custome of Kin-cogish. The which word I woulde be gladd to knowe what it namely signifyeth, for the meaning therof I seeme to understand reasonable well.

Iren. It is a woord mingled of the English and Irish together, soe as I am partly ledd to thinke, that the custome therof was first English, and afterwarde made Irish: for such an other lawe they had heere in England, as I remember, made by King Alured, that every gentellman should continually bring forth his kinyed and followers to the lawe. Soe Kin is English, and Cogish signifyeth affinity in Irish.

Eudox. Siththen we have thus reasonably handled the inconvenience in the lawes, lett us now pass unto the second part, which was, as I remember, of the abuses of customes; in which, me seemes, you have a fayre champion ayd open unto you, in which you may at large stretch out your discourse into many sweete remembraunces of antiquities, from whence it seemeth that the customs of that countrey proceeded.

Iren. Indeede, Eudoxus, you say very true; for alle the customes of the Irish, which I have often noted and compared with that I have reade, would minister occasion of most ample discourse of the first originall of them, and the antiquitye of that people, which in truth I doe thinke to be more auncient then most that I knowe in this end of the world; soe as yf it were in the handling of some man

of sound judgement and plentiful reading it would be most pleasaunt and profitable. But it may be we may, at some other tyme of meeting, take occasion to treat thereof more at large. Heere only it shall suffice to touche such customes of the Irish as seeme offensive, and repugnaunt to the good government of that realme.

Eudox. Followe then your owne course, for I shall the better content my self to forbear my desire nowe, in hope that you will, as you say, some other time more abundantly satisfye it.

Iren. Before we enter into the treatise of theyr customes, it is first needfull to consider from whence they first sprong; for from the sundry manners of the nations, from whence that people which now are called Irish were derived, some of the customes that now remaine amongst them have bene first fetcht, and since they have bene continued amongst them; for not of one nation was that people, but of many and of different conditions and manners. But the cheifest which have first possessed, and inhabited it, I suppose to be Scythians, which at such time as the Northern Nation overflowed all Christendome, came downe to the sea-coast, where enquiring for other countreyes abrode, and getting intelligence of this countrey of Ireland, finding shipping convenient, passed over thither, and arrived in the North-part thereof, which is now called Ulster, which first inhabiting, and afterwarde stretching themselves further into the land as theyr numbers encreased, named it all of themselves Scuttenland, which more breifly is called Scutland, or Scotland.

Eudox. I wonder (Irenæus) whither you runne soe farre astrae; for whylest wee talke of Ireland, he thinke you rip upp thoriginall of Scotlande, but what is that to this?

Iren. Surelyc verye much, for Scotlaunde and Ireland are all one and the same.

Eudox. That seemeth more straunge; for we all knowe right well they are distinguished, with a great sea running betwene them; or els there are two Scotlands.

Iren. Never the more are there two Scotlands, but two kindes of Scotts there were indeede (as ye may gather out of Buckhanan) the one Irin, or Irish Scotts, the other Albin-Scotts; for those Scotts or Scythians arrived (as I sayd) in the North partes of Ireland, where some of them afterwarde passed into the next coast of Albin, now called Scotland, which (after much trouble) they

possessed, and of themselves named it Scotland; but in process of time (as is commonly scene) the denomination of the part prevayled in the whole, for the Irish Scottes putting away the name of Scottes, were called only Irish, and the Albin Scottes, leaving the name of Albin, were called only Scottes. Therefore it cometh that of some writers Ireland is called Scotia-major, and that which nowe is called Scotland, is named Scotia-minor.

Eudox. I doe now well understand your distinguishing of the two sortes of Scottes, and two Scotlandes, how that this which is now called Ireland was aunciently called Irin, and afterwarde of some writers Scotland, and that which now is called Scotland was formerly called Albin, before the coming of the Scottes thither: but what other nation inhabited the other partes of Ireland?

Iren. After this people thus planted in the North, or before, (for the certayntye of times in thinges soe farr from all knowledge cannot be justly avouched) another nation coming out of Spayne arrived in the West part of Ireland, and finding it wast, or weakely inhabited, possessed it: who whether they were native Spaynyards, or Gaules, or Africans, or Gothes, or some other of those Northern Nations which did overspredd all Christendome, it is impossible to affirme, onely some naked conjectures may be gathered, but that out of Spayne certaynly they came, that doe all the Irish Chronicles agree.

Eudox. You doe very boldly, Irenæus, adventure upon the historye of soe auncient times, and leane to confidently unto those Irish Chronicles which are most fabulous and forged, in that out of them you dare take in hand to lay open the originall of such a nation soe antique, as that noe monument remaineth of her beginning and first inhabiting there; specially having bene in those times allwayes without letters, but onely bare traditions of times and remembraunces of Bards, which use to forge and falsifye every thing as they list, to please or displease any man.

Iren. Truly I must confess I doe soe, but yet not soe absolutely as you suppose. I doe herin relye upon those Hards or Irish Chronicles, though the Irish themselves, through theyr ignorance in matters of learning and deepe judgement, doe most constantly beleve and avouch them, but unto them besides I add my owne reading; and out of them both

together, with comparison of times, likewise of manners and customes, affinitye of wordes and names, properties of naturas and uses, resemblances of rytes and ceremonyes, monumentes of churches and tombes, and many other like circumstaunces. I doe gather a likelihood of trueth; not certaynly affirming any thing, but by conferring of times, languages, monumentes, and such like, I doe hunte out a probabilitye of thinges, which I leave to your judgement to beleve or refuse. Nevertheless there be some very auncient authors which make mention of these thinges, and some moderne, which by comparing them with present times, experience, and theyr owne reason, doe open a windowe of great light unto the rest that is yet unseene; as namely, of the older Caesar, Strabo, Tacitus, Ptolomie, Plinie, Pompeius Mela, and Berosus: of the later, Vipcentius, Aneas Silvius, Laddus, Buckhanan, of all which I doe give most credit unto Buckhanan, for that he himself, being an Irish Scott or Pict by nation, and being very excellently learned, and industrious to seeke out the trueth of these thinges concerning the originall of his owne people, hath both sett downe the testimonies of the auncientes truly, and his owne opinion, withall very reasonably, though in some thinges he doth somewhat flatter. Besides, the Bards and Irish Chroniclers themselves, though through the desire of pleasing perhaps to much, and through ignorance of arte and purer learning, they have clouded the trueth of those times: yet there appeareth amongst them some reliques of the true antiquitye, though disguised, which a well-eyed man may happily discover and find out.

Eudox. Howe can there be any trueth in them at all, since the auncient nations which first inhabited Ireland were altogether destitute of letters, much more of learning, by which they might leave the veritye of thinges written. And those Bards, coming alsoe soe many hundred yeares after, could not knowe what was done in former ages, nor deliver certayntye of any thing, but what they fayned out of theyr unlearned heades.

Iren. Those Bards indeede, Caesar writeth, deliver noe certayne trueth of any thing, neither is there any certayne hold to be taken of any antiquitye which is received by tradition, since all men be lyars, and may lye when they will; but yet for the antiquitye of the written Chronicles of Ireland give me leave to say something, not to justifie them, but to shewe that some of them might say trueth. For where ye say that the Irish have

allwayes bene without letters, ye are therein much deceived, for it is certayne, that Ireland hath had the use of letters very aunciently, and long before England.

Eudox. Is it possible? Howe comes it then that they are soe barbarous still and soe unlearned, being soe old schollers? For learning (as the Poet sayth) 'Emollit mores, nec sinit esse feros:' whence then (I pray you) could they have those letters?

Iren. It is hard to say: for whether they at theyr first coming into the land, or afterwards by trading with other nations which had letters, learned them of them, or devised them amongst themselves, it is very doubtful; but that they had letters aunciently it is nothing doubtfull for the Saxons of England are sayd to have theyr letters, and learning, and learned men, from the Irish, and that also appeareth by the likeness of the characters, for the Saxons character is the same with the Irish. Now the Scythians never, as I can reade, of old had letters amongst them: therefore it seemeth that they had them from that nation which came out of Spayne, for in Spayne ther was (as Strabo writeth) letters aunciently used, whether be ought unto them by the Phoenicians, or Persians, which (as it appeareth by him) had some footing there, or from Marseilles, which is sayd to have bene inhabited first by the Greekes, and from them to have had the Greeke character; of which Marsilius it is sayd, that the Gauls learned them first, and used them only for the furtheraunce of theyr trades and private business: for the Gauls (as is strongly to be proved by many auncient and authentical writers) did first inhabite all the sea-coast of Spayne, even unto Cales and the mouth of the Streits, and peopled also a great parte of Italie, which appeareth by sundrye cities and havenes in Spayne called of them, as Portugallia, Gallicia, Galdunum; and alsoe by sundrye nations therein dwelling, which yet have received theyr owne names of the Gauls, as the Rhegni, Presamarci, Tamariti, Nerii, and divers others. All which Pompeius Mela, being himself a Spanyard, yet sayeth to have descended from the Celtes of Fraunce, wherly it is to be gathered, that that nation which came out of Spayne into Ireland were aunciently Gauls, and that they brought with them those letters which they had learned in Spayne, first into Ireland, the which some also say doe much resemble the old Phoenician character, being likewise distinguished with prickes and accent, as theyrs aunciently; but the further enquiry therof needeth a

place of longer discourse then this our short conference.

Eudox. Surely you have shewed a great probability of that which I had thought impossible to have bene proved; but that which you now say, that Ireland should have bene peopled with the Gauls, seemeth much more straunge, for all theyr Chronicles doe say, that the west and south was possessed and inhabited of Spanyards: and Cornelius Tacitus also doth strongly affirme the same, all which you must overthrowe and falsifye, or renounce your opinion.

Iren. Neither soe, nor soe; for the Irish Chronicles (as I sayd unto you) being made by unlearned men, and writing thinges according to the appearance of the trueth which they conceaved, doe err in the circumstances, not in the matter. For all that came out of Spayne (they being noe diligent searchers into the differences of nations) supposed them to be Spanyards, and soe called them; but the groundworke thereof is nevertheless as I sayd true and certayne, however they through ignorance disguise the same, or through their owne vanitye, while they would not seeme to be ignorant, doe therupon build, and enlarge many forged histories of theyr owne antiquitye, which they deliver to fooles, and make them believe them for trewe: as for example, that first of one Gathelus the sonn of Cecrops or Argos, who having married the King of Ægipts daughter, thence sayled with her into Spayne, and there inhabited: Then that of Nemed and his fowre sonnes, who coming out of Scythia peopled Ireland, and inhabited it with his sonnes two hundred and fiftye yeares until he was overcome of the Gyautes dwelling then in Ireland, and at last quite banished and rooted out, after whom two hundred yeares, the sonnes of one Dela, being Scythians, arrived there agayne, and possessed the whole land, of which the youngest, called Slevius, in the end made himself monarch. Lastly, of the fowre sonnes of Mylesius King of Spayne, which conquered that land from the Scythians, and inhabited it with Spanyardes, and called it of the name of the youngest, Hiberus, Hybernia: all which are in very truth fables, and very Mylesian lyes (as the Latine proverbe is), for never was there such a King of Spayne called Mylesius, nor any such colonie seated with his sonnes, as they sayne, that can ever be proved; but yet under these tales ye may in a manner see the truth lurke. For Scythians, heere inhabiting, they name and doe put Spanyards,

wherby appeareth that both those nations heere inhabited, but whether very Spanyards, as the Irish greatlye affect, is noe wayes to be proved.

Eudox. Whence cometh it then that the Irish doe soe greatly covett to fetch themselves from the Spayniards, since the old Gauls are a more ancient and much more honorable a nation?

Iren. Even soe of a very desire of new fangleness and vanitye, for being as they are nowe accounted the most barbarous nation in Christendome they to avoyde that reproche would derive themselves from the Spanyards, whom they nowe see to be a very honorable people, and next bordering unto them: but all that is most vayne; for from the Spanyard that nowe is, or that people that nowe inhabites Spayne, they noe wayes can approve themselves to descend; neither should it be greatly glorious unto them; for the Spanyard, that nowe is, is come from as rude and savage nations as they, there being, as it may be gathered by course of ages and viewes of theyr owne histories, (though they therein labour much to ennoble themselves) scarce any dropp of the old Spanish blood left in them; for all Spayne was first conquered by the Romains, and filled with colonies from them, which were still increased, and the native Spanyard still cutt off. Afterwardes the Carthagenians in all the long Punicke Warres (having spoyled all Spayne, and in the end subdued it wholly to themselves) did, as it is likely, route out all that were affected to the Romayns. And lastly the Romaynes, having agayne recovered that countrey and bett out Hanniball, did doubtless cutt off all that favoured the Carthagenians, soe that betwixt them both, to and froe, there was scarce a native Spanyard left, but all inhabited of Romayns. All which tempestes of troubles being overblown, there long after arose a newe storme, more dreadfull then all the former, which over-ran all Spayne, and made an infinite confusion of all thinges; that was, the coming downe of the Gothes, the Hunnes, and the Vandalas: And lastly all the nations of Scythia, which, like a mountaine flude, did over-flowe all Spayne, and quite drowne and wash away whatsoever reliques there were left of the land-bredd people, yea, and of all the Romayns to. The which Northerne nations finding the complexion of that soyle, and the vehement heate there farr differing from theyr natures, tooke noe felicitye in that countrey, but from thence passed over,

and did spredd themselves into all countreys in Christendome, of all which there is none but hath some mixture and sprinkling, yf not through peopling of them. And yet after all these the Moores and Barbarians, breaking over out of Africa, did finally possess all Spayne, or the most part therof, and did trodd downe under theyr heathenish feete whatever litle they found there yet standing. The which, though afterward they were beaten out by Ferdinando of Aragon and Isabell his wife, yet they were not soe clensed, but that through the marriages which they had, made, and mixture with the people of the land, during theyr long continuance there, they had left noe pure dropp of Spanish blood, noe more of Romaine, nor of Scythian. Soe that of all nations under heaven (I suppose) the Spaniard is the most mingled, most uncertayne, and most bastardy; wherefore most foolishlyve doe the Irish thinke to ennoble themselves by wresting theyr auncentrye from the Spayne, who is unable to derive himself from any certayne.

Eudox. You speake very sharpely, *Irenæus*, in dishonour of the Spaniard, whom some other boast to be the only brave nation under the skye.

Iren. Soe surely he is a very brave man; neither is that which I speake anything to his derogation, for in that I sayed he is a mingled nation, it is noe dispraise, for I thinke there is noe nation nowe in Christendome, nor muche further, but is mingled, and compounded with others: for it was a singular providence of God, and a most admirable purpose of his wisdom, to drawe those northerne heathen nations downe into these Christian partes, where they might receive Christianitye, and to mingle nations soe remote myraculously, to make, as it were, one kinned and blood of all people, and ech to have knowlege of him.

Eudox. Neither have you sure any more dishonoured the Irish, for you have brought them from very great and auncent nations, as any were in the world, how ever fondly they affect the Spanish. For both Scythians and Gaules were two as mighty nations as ever the world brought forth. But is there any token, denomination, or monument of the Gaules yet remaynyng in Ireland, as there is of the Scythians?

Iren. Yea surely very many wordes of the Gaules remayning, and yet daylye used in common speache.

Eudox. Why what was the Gaulish

speach? is there any part of it still used amongst any nation?

Iren. The Gaulish speach is the very Brittish, which was very generally used heere in all Brittain before the coming in of the Saxons; and yet is retayned of the Walshmen, the Cornishmen, and the Brittons of Fraunce, though time, working the alteration of all thinges, and the trading and interdeale with other nations rounde about, have chaunged and greatly altered the dialect therof: but yet the originall wordes appeare to be the same, as whoe that list to read in Camden and Buckhanan, may see at large. Besides, ther be many places, as havens, hills, townes, and castles, which yet beare names from the Gaules, of the which Buchanan reherseth above 300 in Scotland, and I can (I thinke) recount neere as manie in Ireland which retain the old denomination of the Gaules, as the Menapii, the Cauci, the Venti, and others: by all which and many other very reasonable probabilityes (which this short course will not suffer to be layed forth) it appeareth that the cheif inhabitants in Ireland were Gaules, coming thither first out of Spayne, and afterwardes from besides Tanais, where the Gothes, the Hunnes, and the Getes sate downe, they also being (as it is sayd of some) auncent Gaules; and lastly passing out of Gallia it self, from all the seacoste of Belgia and Celtica, into all the southerne coastes of Ireland, which they possessed and inhabited, wherupon it is at this day, amongst the Irish a common use to call any straunge inhabitaunt there amongst them, Gaul, that is, descended from the Gaules.

Eudox. This is very likely, for even soe did those Gaules auncently possess and people all the southerne coastes of our Brittain, which yet retayne theyr old names, as the Belgæ in Sommersetshire, Wiltshire and part of Hampshire, the Atrabati in Barkshire, Regni in Sussex and Surrey, and many others. Nowe thus far then I understand your opinion, that the Scythians planted in the North partes of Ireland; the Spaniards (for soe we will call them, what ever they were that came from Spayne) in the West; the Gaules in the South: soe that there nowe remayneth the East partes towards England, which I would be gladd to understand from whence you thinke they were people.

Iren. Mary, I thinke from the Brittons themselves, of which though there be litle footing now remayning, by reason that the

Saxons afterwarde, and lastly the English, driving out all the inhabitants therof, did possess and people it themselves. Yet amongst the Tooles, the Brinnes, the Kavanaghs, and other nations in Leinster, there is some memorye of the Brittons remayning; as the Tooles are called of the old Britthish woord Tol; that is, an hill countrey, the Brinnes of the Britthish woord Brin, that is, woodes, and the Kavanaghs of the woord Kaun, that is, stronge; soe that in these three people the very denomination of the old Brittons doth still remayne. Besides, when any flyeth under the succour or protection of any agaynst an enemye, he cryeth unto him, Cummurreeih, that is in British helpe, for they call their owne language, Cummerai. Furthermore to proove the same, Ireland is by Diodorus Siculus, and by Strabo, called Britannia, and a part of Great Brittain. Finally it appeareth by good record yet extant, that King Arthur, and before him Gurgunt, had all that Iland in his allegiance and subjection: herunto I could add manye probabilityes of the names of places, persons, and speeches, as I did in the former, but they should be to longe for this time, and I reserve them for another. And thus you have had my opinion, howe all that realme of Ireland was first peopled, and by what nations. After all which the Saxons succeeding, subdued it wholly unto themselves. For first Egfrid, Kinge of Northumberland, did utterly wast and subdue it, as it appeareth out of Bede his complaynt agaynst him; and afterwarde King Edgar brought it under his obedience, as it appeareth by an aunient record, in which it is found written that he subdued all the Ilands of the North, even unto Norway, and them the king did bring into his subjection.

Eudox. This ripping up of aunient histories, is very pleasing unto me, and indeede savoureth of good conceite, and some reading withall. I see heerby howe profitable travel, and experience of forreine nations, is to him that will applye them to good purpose. Neither indeede would I have thought, that any such antiquities could have bene avouched for the Irish, that maketh me the more to long to see some more of your observations, which ye have gathered out of that countrey, and have erst half promised to putt fourth: and sure in this mingling of nations appeareth (as you erst have well noted) a wonderful providence and purpose of Almighty God, that stirred up that people of the farthest partes of the woorld to seeke out

those regions so remote from them, and by that meanes both to restore theyr decayed habitations, and to make himself knowne to the Heathen. But was there, I pray you, noe more generall winning of that Iland, then first by the Scythians, which you say were the Scots, and afterwarde by Spaniards, besides the Gaules, Brittons, and Saxons?

Iren. Yes, there was an other. and that the last and the greatest, which was by the English, when the Earle Strangbowe, having conquered that land, delivered up the same unto the handes of Henry the second, then King, whoe sent over thither great store of gentellmen, and other warlick people, amongst whom he distributed the land, and settled such a strong colonye therin, as never since could, with all the subtil practises of the Irish, be rooted out, but abide still a mighty people, of soe many as remayne English of them.

Eudox. What is this that you say, of soe many as remayne English of them? Why, are not they that were once English abiding English still?

Iren. Noe, for the most part of them are degenerated and grown almost meere Irish, yea and more malicious to the English then the very Irish themselves.

Eudox. What heere I? And is it possible that an Englishman, brought up naturally in such sweete civilitye as England affoordes, can find such liking in that barbarous rudeness, that he should forgett his owne nature, and forgoe his owne nation? how may this be, or what (I pray you) may be the cause hereof?

Iren. Surely, nothing but the first evill ordinance and institution of that Commonwealth. But therof now is here noe fitt place to speake, least, by the occasion therof offering matter of a long discourse, we might be drawn from this that we have in hand, namely, the handling of abuses in the customes of Ireland.

Eudox. In truth, Irenæus, you do well remember the plot of your first purpose; but yet from that (we seemes) ye have much swayed in all this long discourse, of the first inhabiting of Ireland; for what is that to your purpose?

Iren. Trulye very materiall; for yf ye marked the course of all that speech well, it was to shewe by what meanes the customes, that now are in Ireland, being some of them indeede very straunge and almost heathenish, were first brought in: and that was, as I sayd,

by those nations from whom that country was first peopled; for the difference of manners and customes doeth followe the difference of nations and people: the which I have declared unto you to have bene thre speciall, which seated themselves there; to witt, first the Seythians, then the Gaules, and lastly the English. Notwithstanding that I am not ignoraunt, that there were sundrye other nations which gott footing in that land, of the which there yet remayne diverse great families and septis, of whom I will also in their proper places make mention.

Eudox. You bring your self, Irenæus, very well into the way agayne, notwithstanding that it seemeth that ye were never out of the way, but nowe that ye have passed through those antiquities, which I could have wished not see soone ended, beginn, when you please, to declare what customes and manners have bene derived from those nations to the Irish, and which of them you find fault withall.

Iren. I will then begin to count theyr customes in the same order that I counted theyr nations, and first with the Seythian or Scottish manners. Of the which there is one use amongst them, to keepe theyr cattell, and to live themselves the most part of the yeare in bolyes, pasturing upon the mountayn, and wast wild places; and removing still to fresh land, as they have depastured the former. The which appeareth plainely to be the manner of the Seythians, as you may reade in Olaus Magnus, and Jo. Bohemus and yet is used amongst all the Tartarians and the people about the Caspian Sea, which are naturally Seythians, to live in heardes as they call them, being the very same that the Irish bolyes are, driving theyr cattell continually with them, and feeding onely upon their milke and white mentes.

Eudox. What fault can ye find with this custome? for though it be an old Seythian use, yet it is very behoofull in that country of Ireland, where there are greates mountaynes, and wast desertes full of grasse, that the same should be eaten downe, and nourish many thousand of cattell for the good of the whole realme, which cannot (me thinkes) be well any other way, then by keeping those Bolyes there, as ye have shewed.

Iren. But by this custome of bolyes there growe in the meane tyme many great commodities unto that Common-wealth. For first, if there be any out-lawes, or loose people, (as they are now without name,) which live upon stealthes and spoyles, they are evermore suc-

coured and find relief onely in those Bolyes, being upon the wast places, whereas els they should be driven shortly to starve, or to come downe to the townes to steale relief, where, by one meane or other, they would soone be caught. Besides, such stealthes of cattell as they make, they bring commonly to those Bolyes, where they are received readilye, and the theif hapoured from daunger of lawe, or such officers as might light upon him. Moreover, the people that thus live in those Bolyes growe thereby the more barbarous, and live more licentious then they could in townes, using what meanes they list, and practising what mischeives and villanyes they will, either agaynst the government there, by their combinations, or agaynst privat men, whom they maligne, by stealing theyr goodes, or murdering themselves. For there they thinke themselves halfe exempted from lawe and obedience, and having once tasted freedome, doe, like a steere that hath bene long out of his yoke, grudge and repyne ever after to come under rule agayne.

Eudox. By your speache, Irenæus, I perceive more evils come by this use of bolyes, then good by theyr grazing; and therefore it may well be reformed: but that must be in his due course: do you proceed to the next.

Iren. They have another custome from the Seythians, that is the wearing of Mantell and long glibbes, which is a thick curled bush of heare, hanging downe over theyr eyes, and monstrously disguising them, which are both very hadd and hurtfull.

Eudox. Doe you thinke that the mantell came from the Seythians? I would surely thinke otherwise, for by that which I have read, it appeareth that most nations in the world aunciently used the mantell. For the Jewes used it, as you may reade of Elias mantell. The Chaldeans also used it, as you may reade in Diodorus. The Egyptians likewise used it, as ye may reade in Herodotus, and may be gathered by the description of Berenice, in the Greeke Commentaries upon Calimachus. The Greekes also used it aunciently, as appeareth by Venus mantell lined with starres, though afterwards they chaunged the forme therof into theyr cloakes, called Pallia, as some of the Irish also doe. And the auncient Latines and Romayns used it, as ye may reade in Virgil who was a very auncient antiquarye.—that Evander, when Aeneas came unto him at his feast, did entertaine and feast him, sitting on the grounde, and lying on mantells. In see-

much as he useth this very woord MANTLE for a mantell.

‘Mantilia humi sternunt.’

Soe as it seemeth that the mantell was a generall habite to most nations, and not proper to the Scythians onely, as you suppose

Iren. I cannot deny but that aunciently it was common to most, and yet since disused and layed away. But in this later age of the world, since the decay of the Roman Empire, it was renewed and brought in agayne by those Northern nations when, breaking out of their cold caves and frozen habitations into the sweete soyle of Europe, they brought with them their usuall weedes, fitt to sheild the cold, and that continuall frost, to which they had at home bene enured: the which yet they left not off, by reason that they were in perpetuall warres with the nations whom they had invaded, but, still removing from place to place, carryed allwayes with them that weede, as their howse, their bedd, and their garment; and, coming lastly into Ireland, they found there more speciall use therof, by reason of the rawe cold climate, from whence it is nowe growen into that generall use in which that people nowe have it. After whom the Gaules succeeding, yet finding the like necessity for that garment, continued the like use therof.

Eudox. Sith then the necessity therof is soe comodious, as ye allege, that it is instead of howsing, bedding, and clothing, what reason have ye then to wish soe necessary a thing cast off?

Iren. Because the comoditie doth not countervayle the discomoditie, for the inconveniences that thereby doe arise are much more many; for it is a fitt howse for an outlawe, a meete bedd for a rebell, and an apt cloke for a thief. First the out-lawe being for his many crimes and villanyes bannished from the townes and howses of honest men, and wandring in wast places, furr from daunger of lawe, maketh his mantell his howse, and under it covereth himself from the wrath of heaven, from the offence of the earth, and from the sight of men. When it rayneth it is his pent-house; when it blowes it is his tent; when it freezeth it is his tabernacle. In Sommer he can weare it loose, in winter he can weare it close; at all times he can use it; never heavy, never combersome. Likewise for a rebell it is as serviceable: for in his warre that he maketh (yif at least it becometh the name of war) when he still flyeth from his foe, and lurketh

in the thick woodes and strait passages, wayting for advantages, it is his bedd, yea, and almost his howsehold stuff. For the wood is his howse agaynst all weathers, and his mantell is his cave to sleepe in. Therin he wrappeth himself rounde, and encloseth himself strongly agaynst the gnattes, which in that countrey doe more annoyne the naked rebelles, whilst they keepe the woodes, and doe more sharply wound them then all their enemyes swardes or speares, which can come seldome nigh them: yea, and oftentimes their mantell serveth them when they are neere driven, being wrapt about their left arme in steede of a Targett, for it is as hard to cutt through it with a sword; besides it is light to beare, light to throwe away, and, being (as they then commonly are) naked, it is to them all in all. Lastly, for a thief it is soe handsome, as it may seeme it was first invented for him; for under it he can cleanly convey any fitt pillage that cometh handsomely in his way, and when he goeth abroad in the night on free-booting, it is his best and surest frend; for lying, as they often doe, two or thre nightes together abroad to watch for their bootie, with that they can pretelye shrowde themselves under a bush or bankes side, till they may conveniently doe their errand: and when all is done, he can in his mantell pass through any towne or company, being close hooded over his head, as he useth, from knowledge of any to whom he is endangered. Besides all this, yf he be disposed to doe mischeif or villanye to any man, he may under his mantell goe privily armed without suspicion of any, carrying his head-peece, his skeane, or pistoll yf he please, to be allwaye in readiness. Thus necessary and fitting is a mantell for a badd man, and surely for a badd howsewife it is noe less convenient, for some of those that be wandring women, there called of them Beantoolke, it is half a wardrobe, for in Sommer you shall have her arrayed commonly but in her smocke and mantle, to be more readye for her light services: in Winter, and in her travell, it is her best cloke and safeguard, and also a coverlett for her lewde exercise. And when she hath filled her vessell, under it she can hide both her burden and her blame; yea, and when her bastard is borne it serves instead of a cradle and all her swadling cloutes. And as for all other good women which love to doe but litle woorke, howe handsome it is to lye and sleepe, or to lowze themselves in the sunnshine, they that have bene but a while in

Ireland can well witness. Sure I am that we will thinke it very unfit for good housewives to stirre in, or to busy them selves about theyr howse-wiverie in such sort as they should. These be some of the abuses for which I would thinke it meete to forbidd all mantells.

Eudox. O evill mynded man, that having reckned up soe many uses of a mantell, will yet wish it to be abandoned! Sure I thinke Diogenes dish did never serve his master more turnes, notwithstanding that he made it his dish, his cupp, his measure, his water-pott, then a mantell doth an Irish man. But I see they be all o' badd intentes, and therefore I will joyne with you in abolishing it. But what blame lay you to the glibb? Take heede (I pray you) that you be not to busye therewith for feare of your owne blame, seing our Englishmen take it up in such a generall fashion to weare theyr heare so unmeasurably long, that some of them excede the longest Irish glibbes.

Iren. I feare not the blame of any undeserved dislikes; but for the Irish glibbes, I say that, besides theyr savage brutishness and lothsom filthiness which is not to be named, they are as fitt maskes as a mantell is for a thief. For whensoever he hath runn himself into that perill of lawe that he will not be knowne, he either cutteth of his glibbe quite, by which he becometh nothing like himself, or pulleth it soe lowe downe over his eyes, that it is very hard to discerne his theivish countenance; and therefore fitt to be trussed up with the mantell.

Eudox. Truly these thre Scythian abuses, I hold most fitt to be taken away with sharpe penalties; and surely I wonder how they have bene kept thus long, notwithstanding soe many good provisions and orders as have bene devised for the reformation of that people.

Iren. The cause therof shall appeare to you hereafter; but lett us now goe forward with our Scythian customes, of which the next that I have to treat of is the manner of theyr rayving the crye in theyr confictes, and at other troublesome times of uproare: the which is very naturall Scythian, as you may reade in Diodorus Siculus, and in Herodotus, describing the manner of the Scythians and Persians coming to give the charge at theyr battells: at the which it is sayd, they come running with a terrible yell and hubbawwe, as yf heaven and earth would have gone togiether, which is the very image of the Irish hubbawwe, which theyr

kerne use at theyr first encounter. Besides, the same Herodotus writeth, that they used in theyr battells to call upon the names of theyr captaynes or generalls, and sometimes upon theyr greatest king deceased, as in the battell of Tomyrus agaynst Cyrus: which custome to this day manifestly appeareth amongst the Irish. For at theyr joyning of battell, they likewise call upon theyr captaynes name, or the name of his auncestours: As they under Oneale crye Landargabowe, that is, the bloudye hand, which is Oneales badge: they under O'Brien call Launlaider, that is, the strong hand. And to theyr ensample, the old English also which there remaneth have gotten up theyr cryes Scythian-like, as the Geraldus Crom-abowe, and the Butlers Butleau-abowe. And herein also lyeth open an other manifest proof that the Irish be Seythes or Scotts, for in all theyr encounters they use one very common woord, crying Farrih, Farrih, which is a Scottish woord, to weete, the name of one of the first Kinges of Scotland, called Fergus, Fergus, or Ferragus, which fought agaynst the Pictes, as ye may reade in Buchanan *De rebus Scotticis*; but as others write, it was long before that, the name of theyr chieft Captayne, under whom they fought agaynst the Africans, the which was then soe fortunate unto them, that ever sithence they have used to call upon his name in theyr battells.

Eudox. Beleve me, this observation of yours, Irenæus, is very good and delightful; farr beyond the blunt conceit of some, who (I remember) have upon the same woord Farrih, made a very gross conjecture; as namely Mr. Stanihurst, who though he be the same country man borne, that should searche more neerely into the secrett of these thinges, yet hath strayed from the truth all the heavens wide (as they say) for he therupon groundeth a very gross imagination, that the Irish should descend from the Egyptians which came into that iland, first under the leading of one Scota the daughter of Pharao, wherupon they use (sayth he) in all theyr battells to call upon the name of Pharao, crying Farrih, Farrih. Surely he shootes wyde on the bowe hand, and very farr from the marke. For I would first knowe of him what auncient ground of authoritie he hath for such a senseless fable, and yf he found it in any of the rude Irish bookes, as it may be he had, yet (me seemes) that a man of his learning should not soe lightly have bene carried away with old wives tales

from approbation of his owne reason; for whether Scots be an Egyptian word or smacke of any learning or judgement lett the learned judge. But this Scots rather cometh of the Greeke *scotos*, that is, darkness, which hath not lett him see the light of the truth.

Iren. You knowe not, Eudoxus, how well Mr. Stanihurst could see in the darke; perhaps he hath owles or cats eyes, but well I wote he seeth not well the light of the truth in matters of more waight. But as for Farrih I have told you my conjecture onely, and yet thus much more I have to prove a likelyhoode, that there are this day yet in Ireland, many Irish men (chiefly in the North partes) called by the name of Farrechs. But lett that nowe be: this onely for this place suffiseth, that it is a common word used in theyr Hubbobowes, the which (with all the rest) is to be abolished, for that it discovereth an affectation of Irish captaynrye, which in this platfforme I endeavour specially to beate downe. There be other sortes of cryes also used amongst the Irish, which savoure greatly of the Scythian barbarisme, as theyr lamentations at theyr burials. with dispayrefull gut-cryes, and immoderate wayluges, the which Mr. Stanihurst also might have used for an argument to prove them Egyptians, which lamented for the death of Joseph. Others thinke this custome to come from the Spayniardes, for that they doe soe unmeasurably likewise bewayle theyr dead; but the same is not proper Spanish, but altogether heathenish, brought in thither first either by the Scythians, or the Moores, which were Africans, that long possessed that cuntry. For it is the manner of all Pagans and Infidells to be intemperate in theyr waylinges of the dead, for that they had noe fayth nor hope of salvation. And this ill custome also is specially noted by Diodorus Siculus, to have bene in the Scythians, and is yett amongst the Northern Scotts. ••

Eudox. This is sure an ill custome also, but it doth not soe much concerne civill reformation, as an abuse of religion.

Iren. I did not rehearse it as one of the abuses which I thought most woorthy of reformation; but having made mention of Irish cryes I thought this manner of lewd crying and howling not impertinent to be noted as uncivill and Scythian-like: for by these old customes, and other like conjecturall circumstances, the descents of nations can onely be proved, where other monumentes of writings be not remayning.

Eudox. Then (I pray you) whensoever in your discourse you meete with them by the way, doe not shunne, but boldly touche them; for besides theyr greate pleasure and delight for theyr antiquitye, they bring also great profit and helpe unto civilitye.

Iren. Then gith you will have it soe, I will heere take occasion, since I lately spake of theyr manner of cryes in joyning battell, to speake also somewhat of the manner of theyr armes, and array in battell, with other customes perhaps woorthy the noting. And first of theyr armes and weapons, amongst which theyr brode swordes are proper Scythian, for such the Scythes used commonly, as ye may reade in Olaus Magnus. And the same also used the old Scottes, as ye may reade in Buckhanan, and in Solinus, where the pictures of them are in the same forme expressed. Also theyr short bowes, and little quivers with short beaded arrowes, are also very Scythian, as ye may reade in the same Olaus. And the same sort, both of bowes, quivers, and arrowes, are at this day to be sene commonly amongst the Northern Irish-Scotts, whose Scottish bowes are not past three quarters of a yard longe, with a string of wreathed hemp slackly bent, and whose arrowes are not much above half an ell longe, tipped with steele heades, made like common brode arrowe heades, but much more sharpe and slender, that they enter into an armed man or horse most cruelly, notwithstanding that they are shott forth weakelye. Moreover, theyr long brode sheldes, made but of wicker rodde, which are commonly used amongst the sayd Northern Irish, but specially of the Scottes, are brought from the Scythians, as ye may reade in Olaus Magnus, Solinus, and others: likewise theyr going to battell, without armour on theyr bodyes or heades, but trusting onely to the thickness of theyr glibbes, the which (they say) will sometimes beare of a good stroke, is mere savage and Scythian, as ye may see in the sayd Images of the old Scythes or Scottes, sett forth by Herodianus and others. Besides, theyr confused kind of marche in heapes, without any order or array, theyr clashing of swordes together, theyr fierce running upon theyr enemyes, and theyr manner of fight, resembleth altogether that which is reade in historyes to have bene used of the Scythians. By which it may almost infallibly be gathered, together with other circumstances, that the Irish are very Scotts or Scythes originally, though sithence intermingled with many other nations repaying

and joining unto them. And to these I may add also another very stronge conjecture which cometh to my mynd, that I have often there observed amongst them; that is, certaine religious ceremonies, which are very superstitiously yet used amongst them, the which are also written by sundrye authours, to have bene observed amongst the Scythians, by the which it may very vehemently be presumed that both the nations were aunciently all one. For Plutark (as I remember) in his Treatise of Homer, endeavouring to searche out the truthes, what countryman Homer was, proveth it most strongly (as he thinketh) that he was an Æolian borne; for that in describing a sacrifice of the Greekes, he omitted the chibbone, the which all the other Grecians (saving the Æolians) doe use to burne in theyre sacrifices: also for that he maketh the intralls to be rosted on five spittes, the which was the proper manner of the Æolians whoe onely, of all nations and countreys of Grecia, used to sacrifice in that sort, whereas all the rest of the Greekes used to rost them on thre spittes. By which he inferreth, necessarilye, that Homer was an Æolian. And by the same reason may I (as reasonable) conclude, that the Irish are descended from the Scythians; for that they use to this day some of the same ceremonies which the Scythians aunciently used. As for example, ye may reade in Lucian, in that sweete dialogue which is intituled Toxaris or of frendship, that the common oath of the Scythians was by the sword, and by the fire, for that they accounted these two speciall divine powers, which should worke vengeance on perjurers. So doe the Irish at this day, when they goe to any battell, say certayne prayers or charmes to theyr swordes, making a cross therewith upon the earth, and thrusting the pointes of theyr blades into the ground; thinking thereby to have the better success in fight. Also they use commonly to sweare by theyr swordes. Likewise at the kindling of the fire, and lighting of candells, they say certayne prayers or use some other superstitious rites, which sheweth that they honour the fire and the light; for all those Northern nations, having bene used to be annoyed with much cold and darkenes, are wonte therefore to have the fire and the sunn in great veneration: like as contrariwise the Moores and Egyptians, which are much offended and greived with much extreme heate of the sunn, doe every morning, when the sunn riseth, fall to cursing and banning of him as theyr plague

and cheif scourge. Also the Scythians used, when they would binde any solempne vowe or combination amongst them, to drinke a bowle of bloud together, vowing thereby to spend theyr last bloud in that quarrell: and even soe doe the wild Scotts, as ye may reade in Buckhanan; and some of the Northern Irish likewise. As ye may also reade in the same booke, in the Tale of Arsacomas, that it was the manner of the Scythians, when any one of them was heavily wronged, and would assemblé unto him any forces of people to joyne with him in his revenge, to sitt in some publick place for certayne dayes upon an oxo hide, to which there would resort all such persons as being disposed to take armes, would enter into his pay, or joyne with him in his quarrell; and the same ye may likewise reade to have bene the auncient manner of the wild Scotts, which are indeede the very naturall Irish. Moreover, the Scythians used to sweare by theyr Kinges hand, as Olaus sheweth. And soe doe the Irish nowe use to sweare by theyr Lordes hand, and, to forswear it, hold it more criminall then to sweare by God. Also the Scythians sayd, that they were once every yeare turned into wolves, and soe is it writtén of the Irish: though Mr. Camden in a better sense doth suppose it was a disease, called Lycanthropia, soe named of the wolfe. And yet some of the Irish doe use to make the wolfe theyr gossip. The Scythians also used to seeth theyr flesh in the hide; and soe doe the Northern Irish yet. The Scythians likewise used to boyle the bloud of the beast yet living, and to make meate thereof: and soe doe the Irish still in the North. Many such customes I could recount unto you, as of theyr old manner of marrying, of burying, of dauncing, of singing, of feasting, of cursing, though Christians have wiped out the most part of them, by resemblance wherof it might playnly appeare unto you that the nations are the same, but that by the reckning of these fewe which I have told unto you, I find my speach drawn out to a greater length then I purposed. Thus much onely for this time, I hope, shall suffice you, to thinke that the Irish are aunciently descended from the Scythians.

Eudox. Surely, Ireneus, I have, in these fewe wordes, herd that from you which I would have thought had bene impossible to have bene spoken of times soe remote, and customes so auncient: with delight wherof I was all that while as it were entranced. And carryed soe farr from my self, as that I am

nowe right sorye that you ended soe soone. But I marvell much howe it cometh to pass, that in soe long continuance of time, and many ages come betwene, yet any jote of those old rites and superstitious customes should remayne amongst them.

Iren. It is noe cause of wonder at all; for it is the manner of all barbarous nations to be very superstitious, and diligent observers of old customes and antiquities; which they receive by continuall tradition from their parentes, by recording of their Bards and Chronicles, in their songes, and by daylye use and example of their elders.

Eudox. But have you I pray you observed any such customes amongst them, brought likewise from the Spanyardes or Gaules, as these from the Scythians? that may sure be very materiall to your first purpose.

Iren. Some perhaps I have; and who that will by this occasion more diligently marke and compare their customes shall find many more. But there are fewer I thinke remaying of the Gaules or Spanyardes then of the Scythians, by reason that the partes, which they then possessed, lying upon the coast of the Western and Southerne Sea, were sithence continually visited with straungers and forrein people, repaying thither for traffick, and for fishing, which is very plentifull upon these coastes: for the trade and entredeale of sea-cost nations one with another worketh more civilitye and good fashions in them, all sea men being naturally desirous of new fashions, then amongst the inland dwellers, which are seldome scene of forreiners; yet some of such as I have noted, I will recounte unto you. And first I will, for the better credit of the rest, shewe you one out of their Statutes, amongst which it is enacted that noe man shall weare his bearded but only on the upperlipp like muschachoes, shavinge all the rest of his chinne. And this was the ancient manner of Spaynyardes, yet it is of all the Mahometans to cutt of all their bearded close, save only their muschachoes, which they weare long. And the cause of this use was for that they, being bred in a hote country, founde much haire on their faces and other partes to be noysome unto them: for which cause they did cutt it most away, like as contrarily all other nations, brought up in cold countreys, doe use to nourish their haire, to keepe them warme, which was the cause that the Scythians and Scottes weare Ghibbes (as I shewed you) to keepe their heades warme, and long

beardes to defend their faces from cold. From them also (I thinke) came saffron shirtes and smockes, which was devised by them in those hote countreys, where saffron is very common and rife, for avoyding that evill which commeth by much sweating, and longe wearing of linnen: also the women amongst the old Spanyardes had the charge of all household affayres, both at home and abroad, (as Bohemus writeth) though nowe the Spanyardes use it quite otherwise. And soe have the Irish women the trust and care of all thinges, both at home, and in the fieldes. Likewise rounde leather targetts is the Spanish fashion, whoe used it (for the most part) paynted, which in Ireland they use also, in many places, coloured after their rude fashion. Moreover the manner of their womens riding on the wrong side of their horse, I meane with their faces towardes the right side, as the Irish use (as they say) old Spanish, and, as some say, Affricaine, for amongst them the women (they say) use so to ride across: Also the deepe smock sleeve hanging to the ground, which the Irish women use, they say, it was old Spanish, and is used yet in Barbary: and yet that should seeme rather to be an old English fashion; for in armory the fashion of the Manche, which is given in armes by many, being indeede nothing else then a sleeve, is fashioned much like to that sleeve. And that Knights in ancient times used to weare their mistress or loves sleeve, upon their armes, as appeareth by that which is written of Sir Launcelott, that he wore the sleeve of the Fayre Mayde of Asteloth in a turney, wherat Queene Guenever was much displeased.

Eudox. Your conceits is good, and well fitting for thinges soe farr grown from certaynte of knowledge and learning, only upon likelyhoodes and conjectures. But have you any customes remayning from the Gaules or Brittons?

Iren. I have observed a fewe of either; and whoe will better searche into them may finde more. And first the profession of their Bards who (as Caesar writeth) were usuall amongst the Gaules; and the same was also common amongst the Brittons, and is not yet altogether left of by the Welsh which are their posteritye. For all the fashions of the Gaules and Brittons, as he testifieth, were much like. The long darts came also from the Gaules, as ye maye reade in the same Caesar, and in Jo. Bohemius. Likewise the said Bohemus writeth, that the Gaules used

swordes a hand full broad, and soe doe the Irish nowe. Also that they used long wicker sheildes in battayll that should cover theyr whole bodyes, and so doe the Northern Irish; but because I have not sene such fashioned targets used in the Southerne parts, but onely amongst the Northern people, and Irish-Scotts. I doe thinke that they were rather brought in by the Scythians, then by the Gaules. Also the Gaules used to drinke theyr enemyes bloud, and paynte themselves with it: soe also they write, that the old Irish were wonte, and soe I have sene some of the Irish doe, not theyr enemyes but theyr frendes bloud. As namely at the execution of a notable traytour at Limericke, called Murrough O-Brein, I sawe an old woman, which was his foster mother, take up his head, whilst he was quartered, and sucked up all the bloud running thereout, saying, that the earth was not woorthy to drinke it, and therewith also steeped her face and breast, and tore her hayre, crying out and shreeking out most terrible.

Eudox. You have very well runne through such customes as the Irish have derived from the first old nations which inhabited that land: namely, the Scythians, the Spanyardes, the Gaules, and the Brittons. It nowe remaineth that you take in hand the customes of the old English which are amongst the Irish: of which I doe not thinke that you shall have much to finde fault with, considering that by the English most of the old badd Irish customes were abolished, and more civill fashions brought in theyr steede.

Iren. You think otherwise, Eudoxus, then I doe; for the cheifest abuses which are nowe in that realme, are growen from the English that were, but are nowe much more lawless and licentious then the very wild Irish: soe that as much care as was then by them had to reforme the Irish, soe much and more must nowe be used to reform them; soe much time doth alter the manners of men.

Eudox. That seemeth very straunge which you say, that men should soe much degenerate from theyr first natures as to growe wilde.

Iren. Soe much can libertye and ill example doe.

Eudox. What libertye had the English there, more then they had heere at home? Were not the lawes plaunted amongst them at the first, and had not they governours to courbe and keepe them still in awe and obedience?

Iren. They had, but it was, for the most

part, such as did more hurte then good; for they had governours for the most part of themselves, and commonly out of the two howses of the Geraldins and the Butlers, both adversaries and coryvalls one agaynst the other. Whoe though, for the most parte, they were but as deputies under some of the King of Englandes sonnes, brethren, or other neere kinsemen, whoe were the Kinges lieutenantes, yet they swayed soe much, as they had all the rule, and the others but the title. Of which Butlers and Geraldins, albeit (I must confess) they were very brave and woorthy men, as also of other the Peeres of that realme, made Lord Deputyes and Lord Justices at sundry times, yet thorough greatnes of their late conquests and seignories they grew insolent, and bent both that regall authority, and also theyr private powers, one agaynst another, to the utter subversion of themselves, and strengthening of the Irish agayne. This ye may see playnly discovered by a letter written from the citizens of Corke out of Ireland, to the Earle of Shrewsbury then in England, and remayning yet upon record, both in the Towre of London, and also amongst the Chronicles of Ireland. Wherein it is by them complained, that the English Lords and Gentlemen, who then had great possessions in Ireland, begonne, through pride and insolence, to make private warres one agaynst another, and when either parte was weake they would wage and drawe in the Irish to take theyr parte, by which meanes they both greatlie encouraged and enabled the Irish, which till that tyme had bene shutt up within the Mountayne of Slewloghir, and weakened and disabled themselves, insoemuch that theyr revenues were wonderfully impayred, and some of them, which are there reckoned to have bene able to have spent 12 or 13 hundred poundes per annum, of old rent, (that I may say noe more) besides theyr commodities of creekes and havens, were nowe scarce able to dispend the third part. From which disorder, an other huge calamity came upon them, as that, they are nowe grown to be almost as lewde as the Irish: I meane of such English as were planted above toward the West; for the English Pale hath preserved it self, through neereness of their state, in reasonable civility, but the rest which dwell above Conaught and in Mounster, which is the sweetest soyle of Ireland, and some in Leinster and Ulster, are degenerate, and grown to be as very patchcockes as the wild Irish, yea and some of them have

quite shaken of theyr English names, and put on Irish that they might be alltogether Irish.

Eudox. Is it possible that any should see farre growe out of frame that they should in soe short space, quite forgett theyr country and theyr owne names? That is a most dangerous Ithargie, much woorse then that of Messala Corvinus, who, being a most learned man, through sickness forgate his owne name. But can you counte us any of this kinde?

Iren. I cannot but by-reporte of the Irish themselves, who report, that the Mack-mahons, in the North, were aunciently English; to witt, descended from the Fitz Ursulas, which was a noble familie in England, and that the same appeareth by the signification of theyr Irish names. Likewise that the Mack-swines, nowe in Ulster, were aunciently of the Veres in England, but that they themselves, for hatred of English, soe disguised theyr names.

Eudox. Could they ever conceave any such devilish dislike of theyr owne naturall countrey, as that they would be ashamed of her name, and byte of her dugg from which they sucked life?

Iren. I wote well there should be none; but proude hartes doe oftentimes (like wanton coltes) kicke at theyr mothers, as we reade Alcibiades and Themistocles did, whoe, being banished out of Athens, fledd unto the King of Asia, and there stirred them up to warr agaynst theyr owne countrey, in which warres they themselves were cheif taynes. So they sayd these Mack-swines and Mack-mahons, or rather Veres and Fitz Ursulas, for private despite, turne themselves agaynst England. For at such time as also, Vere, Earle of Oxford, was in the Barons warres agaynst King Richard the Second, through the malice of the Peeres, banished the realme and proscribed, he with his kinsman Fitz Ursula fledd into Ireland, where being prosecuted, and afterwarde putt to death in England, his kinsman, there remayning behind in Ireland, rebelled, and, conspiring with the Irish, did quite cast of the English name and allegiance, since which time they have ever soe remayned, and have ever since bene counted meere Irish. The vorye like is also reported of the Mack-swines, Mack-mahons, and Mack-sheeheis of Mounster, whoe likewise were aunciently English, and old followers of the Earle of Desmond, untill the raigne of King Edward the Fourth: at which time the Earle of Desmond that then was, called Thomas, being through false subor-

nation (as they say) of the Queene for some offence by her agaynst him conceaved, brought to his death at Drogheda most unjustly, notwithstanding that he was a very good and sound subject to the King. Thereupon all his kinsmen of the Geraldins, which then was a mightye familie in Mounster, in revenge of that huge wronge, rose into armes agaynst the King, and utterly renounced and forsooke all obedience to the crowne of England; to whom the sayd Mack-swines, Mack-sheeheis, and Mack-mahons, being then servautes and followers, did the like, and have ever since soe continued. And with them (they say) all the people of Mounster went out, and many others of them, which were meere English, thenceforth joynd with the Irish agaynst the King, and termed themselves meere Irish, taking on them Irish habits and customes, which could never sin, be cleane wiped away, but the contagion therof hath remayned still amongst theyr posterities. Of which sorte (they say) be most of the surnames which end in an, as Hernan, Shenan, Magan, &c. the which now accounte themselves meere Irish. Other greates howes there be of the old English in Ireland, which through licentious conversing with the Irish, or marrying, or fostering them, or lacke of good nurture, or other such unhappye occasions, have degenerated from theyr auncient dignitie, and are nowe growen as Irish as O-haulans breeche, as the proverbe there is; of which sorte there are two most pityfull examples above the rest, to witt the Lord Brenechame, whoe being the most auncient barron, I thinke, in England, nowe waxen the most savage Irish amongst them, naming himself Irishlike, Noccorish; and the other is the greates Mortimer, whoe forgetting howe greates he was once in England, or English at all, is nowe become the most barbarous of them all, and is called Mack-nihmarrih, and not much better then he is the old Lo. Courvey, who, having lewdly wasted all the landes and signories that he had, allyed himself unto the Irish and is himself also nowe growen quite Irish.

Eudox. In trueth this which you tell is a most shamefull hearing, and to be reformed with most sharpe censures in soe greates personages, to the terror of the meener: for where the lordes and cheif men wax soe barbarous and bastardlike, what shal be hoped of the pesantes, and base people? And hereby sure you have made a fayre way unto your self to lay open the abuses

of their evill customes, which you are nowe nexte to declare, the which, noe doubt, are very badd and barbarous, being borrowed from the Irish, as theyr apparrell, theyr language, theyr riding, and many other the like.

Iren. You cannot but thinke them sure to be very brute and uncivill; for were they at the best that they were of old, when they were brought in, they should in soe long an alteration of time seeme very straunge and wonderfull. For it is to be thought, that the use of all England was in the raigne of Henry the Second, when Ireland was first planted with English, very rude and barbarous, soe as yf the same should be nowe used in England by any, it would seeme woorthy of sharpe correction, and of newe lawes for reformation, for it is but even the other day since England grewe to be civill: therefore in counting the evill customes of the English there, I will not have regard whether the beginning therof were English or Irish, but will have respect onely to the inconvenience therof. And first I have to finde fault with the abuse of language, that is, for the speaking of Irish amongst the English, which as it is unnaturall that any people should love anothers language more then theyr owne, soe it is very inconvenient, and the cause of many other evils.

Eudox. It seemeth straunge to me that the English should take more delight to speake that language then theyr owne, wheras they should (me thinkes) rather take scorne to acquaynte theyr tonges therewith: for it hath bene ever the use of the conquerours to dispise the language of the conquered, and to force him by all meanes to learne his. Soe did the Romayns alwayes use, in soe much as there is almost noe nation in the worlde, but it is sprinkled with theyr language. It were good therefore (me thinkes) to searche out the originall cause of this evill; for, the same being discovered, a redress therof will be the more easely provided. For I thinke it were straunge, that the English being soe many, and the Irish soe fewe as they then were left, they being the fewer should drawe the more unto theyr use.

Iren. I suppose that the cheifst cause of the bringing in of the Irish language, amongst them, was specially theyr fostering, and marrying with the Irish, the which are two most daungerous infections: for first the child that sucketh the milke of the nurse, must of necessitye learne his first speache of

her, the which being the first that is enured to his tongue, is ever after most pleasing unto him, in soe much as though he afterward be taught English, yet the smacke of the first will allwayes abide with him; and not onely of the speache, but also of the manners and conditions. For besides that yong children be like apes, which will affect and imitate what they see done afore them, specially of theyr nurses whom they love soe well, they moreover drawe unto themselves, together with theyr sucke, even the nature and disposition of theyr nurses: for the mynd followeth much the temperature of the bodye; and also the woordes are the Image of the mynd, soe as, they proceeding from the mynd, the mynd must needs be affected with the woordes. Soe that the speache being Irish, the harte must needs be Irish; for out of the abundance of the harte, the tongue speaketh. The next is the marriage with the Irish, which how daungerous a thing it is in all common-wealthes appeareth to every simplest sence; and though some greate ones have perhaps used such matches with theyr vassals, and have of them nevertheless rayssed woorthy issue, as Telamon did with Termessa, Alexander the Great with Roxane, and Julius Caesar with Cleopatra, yet the example is soe perillous, as it is not to be adventured: for in steede of these fewe good, I could counte unto them infinite many evill. And indeede how can such matching but bring forth an evill race, seeing that commonly the child taketh most of his nature of the mother, besides speache, manners, and inclination, which are (for the most part) agreeable to the conditions of theyr mothers? For by them they are first framed and fashioned, soe as what they receive once from them, they will hardly ever after forgoe. Therefore are these evill customes of fostering and marrying with the Irish most carefully to be estrayned; for of them two, the third evill, that is the custome of language (which I speake of) cheifly proceedeth.

Eudox. But are there not Lawes already appoynted, for avoyding of this evill?

Iren. Yes, I thinke there be, but as good never a whitt as never the better. For what doe statutes avayle without penalties, or lawes without charge of execution? For soe there is another like lawe enacted agaynst wearing of Irish apparrell, but neverthemore is it observed by any, or executed by them that have the charge: for they in theyr private discretions thinke it not fitt to be forced

upon the poore wretches of that countrey, which are not worth the price of English apparrell, nor expedient to be practised agaynst the abler sorte, by reason that the bare countrey (say they) doth yeelde noe better: and were there better to be had, yet these were fitter to be used, as namely, the mantell in traveling, because there be noe Innes where meete bedding might be had, so that his mantell serves him then for a bedd and the leather quilted jacke in journeying and in camping, for that it is fittest to be under his shirte of mayle, for any occasion of soden service, as there happen many, and to cover his thinn breeche on horsebacke: the greate linnen rowle, which the women weare, to keepe theyr heades warme after cutting theyr haire, which they use in any sickness; besides theyr thicke folded linnen shirtes, theyr longe-sleeved smockes, theyr half-sleeved coates, theyr silken filletts, and all the rest they will devise some colourable reason for them, either of necessitye, or of antiquitye, or of comeliness.

Eudox. But what colour soe ever they alleage, me thinks it is not expedient, that the execution of a lawe once ordayned should be left to the discretion of the judge or officer, but that, without partialitye or regarde, it should be fulfilled as well on English, as Irish.

Iren. But they thinke this precisenes in reformation of apparrell not to be soe materiall, or greatly pertinent.

Eudox. Yes surely but it is; for mens apparrell is commonly made according to theyr conditions, and theyre conditions are oftentimes governed by theyr garments: for the person that is gowned is by his gowne putt in mynd of gravitye, and also restrained from lightnes by the very unaptness of his weede. Therefore it is written by Aristotle, that when Cyrus had overcome the Lydians that were a warlike nation, and devised to bring them to a more peaceable life, he changed theyr apparrell and musick, and instead of theyr shorte warlike coates, clothed them in long garments like women, and in steede of theyr warlike musick, appointed to them certayne lascivious layes, and loose gigges, by which in shorte space theyr myndes were so mollyfied and abated, that they forgate theyr former fierceness, and became most tender and effeminate: wherby it appeareth, that there is not a litle in the garment to the fashioning of the mynde and conditions. But be all these, which you have described, the fashions of the Irish weede?

Iren. Noe; all these that I have rehearsed unto you, be not Irish garments, but English; for the quilted leather Jacke is old English; for it was the proper weede of the horseman, as ye may reade in Chaucer, where he describeth Sir Thopas his apparrell and armour, when he went to fight agaynst the Gyant, in his robe of sheeklaton, which sheeklaton is that kind of guilded leather with which they use to embroder theyr Irish jacks. And there likewise by all that description ye may see the very fashion and manner of the Irish horseman most lively set forth, his long hose, his shooes of costly cordewayne, his hacqueton, and his habberjon, with all the rest thereto belonging.

Eudox. I surely thought that that manner had bene kindly Irish, for it is farr differing from that we have nowe; as also all the furniture of his horse, his stronge brasse bitt, his slyding rayne, his shauncepillion without stirrups, his manner of mounting, his fashion of riding, his charging of his speare aloft above head, and the forme of his speare.

Iren. Noe sure; they be native English, and brought in by the Englishmen first unto Ireland: neither is the same counted an uncomely manner of riding; for I have heard some greate warriors say, that, in all the services which they had seene abroad in forrayne countreys, they never sawe a more comely horseman then the Irish man, nor that cometh on more bravely in his churge: neither is his manner of mounting unseemely, though he wante stirrups, but more ready then with stirrups; for in his getting up his horse is still going, wherby he gayneth way. And therefore the stirrups were called soe in scoone, as it were a stayre to gett up, being derived of the old English woord sty, which is, to gett up, or mounte.

Eudox. It seemeth then that ye finde noe fault with this manner of riding; why then would you have the quilted Jacke layed away?

Iren. I would not have that layed away, but the abuse wherof to be putt away; for being used to the end that it was framed, that is, to be worne in warre under a shirte of mayle, it is allowable, as also the shirte of mayle, and all his other furniture: but to be worne daylye at home, and in townes and civill places, it is a rude habite and most uncomely, seeming like a players paynted coate.

Eudox. But it is worne (they say) likewise of Irish footemen; how doe you allowe

of that? for I should thinke it were un-seemely.

Iren. Noe, not as it is used in warre, for it is then worne likewise of a footeman under a shirte of mayle, the which footeman they call a Galloglass, the which name doth discover him to be also aunient English, for *Gallogla* signifiyes an English servitour or yeoman. And he being soe armed, in a long shirte of mayle downe to the calfe of his legg, with a long brode axe in his hand, was then *pedes gravis armatura*, and was insteede of the armed footeman that now weareth a cor-elett, before the corseletts were used, or allmost invented.

Eudox. Then him belike ye likewise allow in your straight reformation of old customes.

Iren. Both him and the kearne also (whom onely I tooke to be the proper Irish souldiour) can I allowe, soe that they use that habite and custome of theyrs in the warres onely, when they are ledd foorth to the service of theyr Prince, and not usually at home, and in civill places, and besides doe lay aside the evill and wild uses which the galloglass and kearne doe use in their common trade of lyfe.

Eudox. What be those?

Iren. Marye, those be the most lothsome and barbarous conditions of any people (I thinke) under heaven for, from the time they enter into that course, they doe use all the beastly behaviour that may be to oppress all men; they spoyle as well the subject as the enemy; they steale, they are cruell and bloudey, full of revenge and delighting in deally execution, licentious, swearers, and blasphemers, common ravishers of women, and murderers of children.

Eudox. These be most villenous conditions; I marvaile then that ever they be used or employed, or allmost suffred to live: what good can there then be in them?

Iren. Yet sure they are very valiaunte and hardye, for the most part great endurours of cold, labour, hunger, and all hardiness, very active and stronge of hand, very swift of foote, very vigilaunte and circumspect in theyr enterprises, very present in perrills, very great scorpers of death.

Eudox. Truly, by this that ye saie, it seemes the Irishman is a very brave souldiour.

Iren. Yea surely, even in that rude kind of service he beareth himself very courageously. But when he cometh to experience of service abroade, and is putt to a peece, or a pike, he maketh as woorthy a souldiour as any

nation he meeteth with. But lett us (I pray you) turne aayne to our discourse of evill customes amongst the Irish.

Eudox. Me thinke, all this which you speake of, concerneth the customes of the Irish verely materiallie; for their uses in warre are of no small importance to be considered, as well to reforme those which are evill, as to confirme and continue those which are good. But followe you your owne course, and shewe what other their customes ye have to dislike of.

Iren. There is amongst the Irish a certayne kind of people called bards, which are to them insteede of poetts, whose profession is to sett forth the prayses and dispraises of men in theyr poems and rimes; the which are had in soe high request and estimation amongst them, that none dare to displease them for feare of running into reproche through theyr offence, and to be made infamous in the mouthes of all men. For theyr verses are taken up with a generall applause, and usually songe at all feasts and meetinges, by certayne other persons, whose proper function that is, which also receive for the same greate rewardes and reputation besides.

Eudox. Doe you blame this in them, which I would otherwise have thought to have bene woorthy of good accounte, and rather to have bene mayntayned and augmented amongst them, then to have bene misliked? For I have reade that in all ages Poettes have bene had in speciall reputation, and that (me seemes) not without greate cause; for besides theyr sweete inventions, and most wittye layes, they have allwayes used to sett forth the prayses of the good and vertuous, and to beate downe and disgrace the badd and vicious. Soe that many brave yong myndes have oftentimes, through hearing of the prayses and famous Eulogies of woorthy men song and reported unto them, bene stirred up to affect like comendacions, and soe to strive to like desertes. Soe they say the Lacedemonians were more enclined to desire of honour with the excellent verses of the Poet Tirtæus, then with all the exhortations of their Captaines, or authoritye of theyr Rulers and Magistrates.

Iren. It is most true that such Poetts, as in theyr writings doe labour to better the manners of men, and through the sweete bayte of theyr numbers, to steale into yonge spiritts a desire of honour and vertue, are woorthy to be had in great respect. But these Irish Bards are for the most part of another mynd, and soe farr from instructing yong men in

morall discipline, that they themselves doe more deserve to be sharply disciplined; for they seldome use to choose unto themselves the doings of good men for the ornamentes of theyr poems, but whomsoever they find to be most licentious of life, most bold and lawless in his doings, most daungerous and desperate in all partes of disobedience and rebellious disposition, him they sett up and glorifye in theyr rimes, him they prayse to the people, and to yong men make an example to followe.

Eudox. I marvayle whate kind of speeches they can find, or what face they can putt on, to prayse such lewde persons as live soe lawleslye and licentiouslye upon stealthes and spoyles, as most of them doe; or how can they thinke that any good mynde will applaud or approve the same?

Iren. There is none soe bad. Eudoxus, but shall finde some to favoure his doinges; but such lycentious partes as these, tending for the most parte to the hurte of the English, or mayntenance of theyre owne lewde libertie, they themselves, being most desirous thereof, doe most allowe. Besides this, cvill thinges being decked and suborned with the gay attyre of goodly wordes, may easely deceave and carrye away the affection of a yong mynd, that is not well stayed. but desirous by some bold adventure to make prooffe of himself; for being (as they all be) brought up idelly without awe of parentes, without precepts of masters, without feare of offence, not being directed, or employed in any course of life, which may carrye them to vertue, will easely be drawn to followe such as any shall sett before them: for a yong mynd cannot rest; and yf he be not still busied in some goodness, he will find him-self such busines as shall soone busye all about him. In which yf he shall finde any to prayse him, and to give him encouragement, as those Baris and rimers doe for a litle reward, or a share of a stollen cowe, then waxeth he most insolent and half madd with the love of himself, and his owne lewde deedes. And as for wordes to sett forth such lewdness, it is not hard for them to give a goodly glose and paynted shewe thereunto, borrowed even from the prayses which are proper to vertue itself. As of a most notorious thief and wicked outlawe, which had lived all his lifetime of spoyles and robberies, one of these Barides in his prayse sayd, That he was none of those idell milk-sops that was brought up by the fire side but that most of his dayes he spent in armes and valyaunt enterprises;

that he did never eate his meate before he had wonne it with his swoorde; that he was not slugging all night in a cabin under his mantell, but used comonly to keepe others waking to defend theyr lives, and did light his candell at the flames of theyr howses to leade him in the darkness; that the day was his night, and the night his day; that he loved not to lye long wooing of wenches to yeeld unto him, but where he came he took by force the spoyle of other mens love, and left but lamentations to theyr lovers; that his musicke was not the barpe, nor layes of love, but the cries of people, and clashing of armour; and that finally, he died not bewayled of many, but made many wayle when he died that dearely bought his death. Doe not you thinke (Eudoxus) that many of these prayses might be applied to men of best deserte? yet are they all yeilded to a most notable traytoure, and amongst some of the Irish not smally accounted of. For the songe, when it was first made and songe unto a person of high degree, they were bought (as their manner is) for forty crownes.

Eudox. And well worthye sure! But tell me (I pray you) have they any arte in theyr compositions? or be they any thing witty or well savoured, as Poems should be?

Iren. Yea truly; I have caused diverse of them to be translated unto me that I might understand them; and surely they savoured of sweete witt and good invention, but skilled not of the goodly ornamentes of Poetrie; yet were they sprinkled with some pretty flowers of theyr owne naturall devise, which gave good grace and comeliness unto them, the which it is greates pittie to see soe abused, to the gracing of wickedness and vice, which would with good usage serve to beautifye and adorne vertue. This cvill custome therefore needeth reformation. And nowe next after the Irish *Kearne*, me seemes the Irish Horse-boyes or Cuilles (as they call them) would come well in order, the use of which, though necessarye (as times nowe be) doe enforce, yet in the thorough reformation of that realme they should be cutt off. For the cause why they must nowe be permitted is the want of convenient lynes for lodging of travellers on horsebacke, and of ostlers to tende theyr horses by the waye. But when thinges shalbe reduced to a better pass, this needeth specially to be reformed; for out of the frye of these rakehelle horse-boyes, growing up in knaverye and villanye, are theyr *kearne* continually supplied and mayntayned. For having bene bought up an idle

horse-boy, he will never after fall to labour, but is onely made fitt for the halter. And these also (which is one fowle over-sight) are for the most parte bred up amongst Englishmen and souldiours, of whom learning to shoote in a peece, and being made acqainted with all the trades of the English, they are afterwarde, wher they become kerne, made more fitt to cutt theyr throates. Next to this there is another much like, but much more leude and dishonest; and that is, of theyre Kearroghs, which are a kind of people that wander up and downe to gentell-mens howses, living onely upon cardes and dice, the which, though they have litle or nothing of theyr owne, yet will they playe for much mony, which yf they winne, they waste much lighthie, and if they loose, they paie as slenderlie, but make recompence with one stealth or another, whose onely hurte is not, that they themselves are idle lossels, but that through gaming they drawe others to like lewdness and illeness. And to these may be added another sorte of like loose fellows, which doe pass up and downe amongst gentellmen, by the name of Jesters, but are (indeede) notable rogues, and paitakers not onely of many stealthes by setting forth other mens goodes to be stolen, but also privy to many trayterous practises, and common carryers of newes, with desire wherof you would wonder how much the Irish are fadd: for they use commonlye to send up and downe to knowe newes, and yf any meete with another his second worde is, What newes? Insoemuch that herof is told a pretty jest of a Frenche-man, whoe having bene sometimes in Ireland, where he marked theyr greate Enquyre for newes, and meeting afterwarde in Fraunce an Irishman, whom he knewe in Ireland, first saluted him, and afterwarde thus merfly: Sir, I pray you, quoth he, tell me of curtesy, have ye hearde yet any thing of the newes that ye see much enquired for in your country?

Eudox. This argueth in them sure a greate desire of Innovation, and therefore these occasions that rursish the same are to be taken away, as namely, these Jesters, Kearroghs, Benntooilhs, and all such stragglers, for whom (me seemes) the shorte riddance of a marshall were meeter then any ordinance or prohibition to restrayne them. Therefore (I pray you) leave all these rabblementes of such loose runnagates, and pass to some other customes.

Iren. There is a great use amongst the Irish to make greate assemblies together

upon a rath or hill, there to parley (they say) about matters of wronge betwene towneship and towneship, or one private person and another. But well I wote, and true it oftentimes hath bene proved, that in these meetings many mischeils have bene both practised and wrought; for to them doe commonly resorte all the scumme of base people and loose, wher they may freely meete and conferr of whate they list, which els they could not doe without suspition or knowledge of others. Besides, at these parleyes I have diverse times knowne, that many Englishmen, and good Irish subjectes, have bene villanously murdered by moving one quarrell or another agaynst them. For the Irish never come to those rathes but armed, whether on horse or on foote, which the English nothing suspecting, are then commonly taken at advauntage like sheepe in the pin-folde.

Eudox. It may be, Irenaeus, that an abuse may be in those meetings. But these rounde hills and square bawnes, which ye see soe strongly trenched and throwen up, were (they say) at first ordayned for the same purpose, that people might assemble thereon; and therefore auniently they were called Folkemotes, that is, a place for people to meete or talke of any thing that concerned any difference betwene parties and towneships, which seemes yet to me very requisite.

Iren. Ye say very true, Eudoxus: the first making of these high hilles was at first indeed to verry good purpose for people to meete; but though in the times when they were first made they might well serve to good occasions, as perhaps they did then in England, yet things being since altered, and now Ireland much differing from that state of England, the good use that then was of them is nowe turned to abuse; for these hilles wherof you speake were (as ye may gather by reading) appointed for two special uses, and built by two severall nations. The one is those which you call Folke-motes, the which were built by the Saxons, as the worde bewraeth; for it signifyeth in Saxone a meeting of folke or people, and those are for the most parte in forme fowre square, well trenched for meeting: the others that are rounde were cast up by the Danes, as the name of them doeth betoken, for they are called Dane-rathes, that is, hills of the Danes, the which were by them devised, not for parlyes and treatyes, but appoynted as fortes for them to gather unto in troublesome time,

when any trouble arose; for the Danes, being but fewe in comparison of the Saxons in England used this for their safetie: they made these small rounde hilles, soe strongly fenced, in every quarter of the hundred, to the end that if in the night, or at any other time, any troublous crye or uprore should happen, they might repayre with all speede unto theyr owne forte, which was appoynted for theyr quarter, and there remaine safe, till they could assemble themselves in greate strength: for they were made soe stronge with one small entrafence, that whosoever came thither first, were he one or twoe, or like fewe, he or they might there rest safe, and defend themselves agaynst many, till more succoure came unto them: And when they were gathered to a sufficient number they marched to the next forte, and soe forwardes till they mett with the perrill, or knewe the occasion therof. But besides these two sortes of hilles, there were aunciently diverse others; for some were rayseid, where there had bene a greate battayll fought, as a memorie or trophie therof; others, as monuments of burials of the carcasses of all those that were slayne in any fight, upon whom they did throwe up such rounde mountes, as memorialls for them, and sometimes did cast up greate heapes of stones, as ye maie reade in many places of the Scripture, and other whiles they did throwe up many round heapes of earth in a Circle, like a garland, or pitch manie longe stones on ende 'n compasse, every of which (they say) betokened some woorthy person of note there slayne and buried; for this was theyr auncient custome, before Christianitie came in amongst them that church-yardest were inclosed.

Eudox. Ye have very well declared the originall of these mountes and greate stones encompassed, which some vayne lye terme the old Gyaunts Trivetts, and thinke that those huge stones could not els be brought up to order or reared up without the strength of gyaunts or others. And some vayne lye thinke that they were never placed there by mans hand or arte, but onely remaind there since the beginning, and were afterwards discovered by the deluge, and layed open as then by the washing of the waters, or other like casualltye. But lett them with those dreames and vayne imaginations please themselves; for you have satsfysied me much better, both by that I see some confirmation therof in Holys Writt, and also remember that I have reade in many Histories and Chroni-

cles the like mountes and stones oftentimes mentioned.

Iren. There be many greate authorities (I assure you) to proove the same; but as for these meetings on hilles, wherof we were speaking, it is very inconvenient that any such should be permitted, specially in a people soe evill mynded as they nowe be and diversly shewe themselves.

Eudox. But yet it is very needefull (me seemes) for many other purposes, as for the cuntrye to gather together when there is any imposition to be layed upon them, to the which they then may all agree at such meetings to cutt and devise amongst themselves, according to theyr holdings and abilities. Soe as if at those assemblies there be any officers, as Constables, or Bayliffs, or such like amongst them, there can be noe perrill nor doubt of such badd practises.

Iren. Nevertheless, dangerous are such assemblies, whether for Cesse or ought els, the Constables and Officers being also of the Irish; and yf any happen to be there of the English, even to them they may proove perrillous. Therefore for avoyding of all such evill occasions, they were best to be abolished.

Eudox. But what is that which ye call Cesse? It is a woorde sure not used amongst us heere, therefore (I pray you) expounde the same.

Iren. Cesse is none other but that which your selfe called imposition, but it is in a kind perhaps unacquainted unto you. For there are cesses of sundrye sortes; one is, the cessing of souldiours upon the cuntry; for Ireland being a cuntry of warre (as it is handled) and alwayes full of souldiours, they which have the government, whether they find it the most ease to the Queens purse, or most readye means at hand for the victualling of the souldiours, or that necessarye enforce them therunto, doe scatter the armye abroad the cuntry, and place them in townes to take theyr victualls of them, at such vacant times as they lye not in campe, nor are otherwise employed in service. Another kynde of cesse, is the imposing of provision for the Governours house-keeping, which though it be most necessarye, and be also (for avoyding of all the evils formerly therein used) lately brought to a composition, yet it is not without greate inconveniences, noe lesse then heere in England, or rather much more. The like cesse is also charged upon the cuntry sometimes for victualling of the souldiours, when they lye in garrison, at such times as there is none remainyng in the

Queenes store, or that the same cannot conveniently be conveyed to their place of garrison. But those two are not easy to be redressed when necessary thereunto compelled; but as for the former, as it is not necessary, soe is it most hurtfull and offensive to the poore countrey, and nothing convenient for the souldiours themselves, whose, during theyr lying at cesse, use all kind of outrageous disorder and villanye both towards the poore men that vittell and lodge them, and also to all the rest of the countrey about them, whom they abuse, oppresse, spoyle, and afflict by all the meanes they can invent: for they will not only not content themselves with such victualls as theyre hostes doe provide for them, nor yet as the place perhaps will afforde, but they will have other meate provided, and *apud vita* sent for; yea and monye besides layed at theyr trenchers, which if they wante, then aboute the house they walke with the wretched poore man and the sillye poore wife, whose are gladd to purchase theyr peace with any thing. By which vile manner of abuse, the countrey people, yea and the very English which dwell abroad and see, and sometimes feelee these outrages, growe into greate detestation of the souldiours, and thereby unto hatred of the very government, which draweth upon them such evils: And therefore this ye may also joyne unto the former evil customes which we have to reprove in Ireland.

Eudox. Trulye this is one not the leaste, and though the persons, by whom it is used be of better note then the former rogish sorte which ye reckned, yet the faulte (me seemes) is noe lesse woorthy of a Marshall.

Iren. That were a harde course, Eudoxus, to redresse every abuse by a Marshall: it would seeme to you very evil surgery to cutt off every unsounde or sicke parte of the bodye, which, being by other due meanes recovered, might afterwarde doe very good service to the bodye agayne, and happily helpe to save the whole: Therefore I thinke better that some good salve for the redresse of this evil be sought forth, then the least parte suffred to perrishe; but herof we have to speake in another place. Nowe we will proceede to other like defectes, amongst which there is one generall inconvenience which raigneth almost throughout all Ireland: that is, of the Lordes of landes and Free-holders, whose doe not there use to sett out theyr landes to farme, or for terme of yeares, to thyr tenants, but only from yeare to yeare, and some during pleasure; neither indeede will the Irish tenaunt or hus-

bandman otherwise take his land then soe longe as he list himselfe. The reason herof in the tenaunte is, for that the land-lordes there use most shamefully to racke theyr tenants, laying upon him Coyngye and Liverye at pleasure, and exacting of him (besides his covenante) what he please. Soe that the poore husbandman either dare not binde himselfe to him for longer time, or that he thinketh by his continuall libertye of chaunge to keepe his land-lord the rather in awe for wronging him. And the reason why the Land-lord will not longer covenante with him is, for that he dayly looketh after chaunges and alterations, and hovereth in expectation of newe worldes.

Eudox. But what evil cometh heerby to the common-wealth; or what reason is it that any landlord should not set, nor any tenaunt take his land as himself list?

Iren. Manye! the evils which cometh thereby are greate, for by this meane both the land-lord thinketh that he hath his tenaunte more at comaunde, to followe him into what action soever he shall enter, and also the tenaunte, being left at his libertye, is fitt for everye occasion of chaunge that shal be offered by time; and soe much also the more ready and willing is he to runne into the same, for that he hath noe such estate in any his holding, noe such building upon any farme, noe such coxes employed in fencing; and husbandring the same, as might withhold him from any such willfull course, as his lordes cause, or his owne lewde disposition may carrie him unto. All which he hath forborne, and spared so much expence, for that he had noe firme estate in his tenement, but was only a tenaunt at will or little more, and soe at will may leave it. And this inconvenience may be reason enough to gromte any ordinance for the good of a common-wealth, against the private behoofe or will of any landlord that shall refuse to graunte any such terme or estate unto his tenaunte as may tende to the good of the whole realme.

Eudox. Indee (me seemes) it is a greate willfullnes in any such land-lordes to refuse to make any longer farmes unto theyr tenants, as may, besides the generall good of the realme, be also greatly for theyr owne proffitt and avayle: For what reasonable man will not thinke that the tenement shalbe made much better for the lordes behoofe, yf the tenaunte may by such good meanes be drawn to builde himself some handsome habitation thereon, to ditche and enclose his groundes, to

manure and husband it as good farmers use ? For when his tenants terme shalbe expired, it will yeeld him, in the renewing of his lease, both a good fine, and also a better rente. And also it will be for the goode of the tenants likewise, whose by such buildinges and inclosures shall receive many benefitts. first, by the handsomnes of his house, he shall take greate comforte of his life, more safe dwelling, and a delighte to keepe his sayde howse neate and cleanlye, which nowe being, as they commonly are, rather swynes-steades then howses, is the cheifest cause of his soe beastly manner of life, and savadge condition, lying and living together with his beaste in one howse, in one roome, and in one bedd, that is, the cleane strawe, or rather the fowle donghill. And to all these other commodities he shall in shorte time finde a greater added, that is his owne wealth and riches encreased, and wonderfully enlarged, by keeping his cattell in inclosures, where they shall allwayes have fresh pasture, that nowe is all trampled and over-runne; warme covert, that nowe lyeth open to all weather; safe being, that nowe are continually filched and stolen.

Iren. Ye have well, Eudoxus, counted the commodities of this one good ordinance, amongst which this that ye named last is not the least; for all together being most beneficiall both to the land-lord and tenant, this chiefly redoundeth to the good of the common-wealth, to have the land thus inclosed, and well fenced. For it is both a principall barre and impeachment unto thieves from stealing of cattell in the night, and also a gall agaynst all rebells, and out-lawes, that shall rise up in any number agaynst the government; for the thief thereby shall have much adoe, first to bring forth, and afterwards to drive away his stolen prey through the common high wayes, where he shall soone be discied and mett withall: And the rebell or open enemye, yf any such shall happen, either at home, or from abroad, shall easely be found when he cometh forth, and also be well encountered withall by a fewe in soe strait passages and stronge inclosures. This therefore, when we come to the reforming of all these evill customes before mentioned, is needefull to be remembered. But nowe by this time it seemes that I have well runne through the evill uses which I have observed in Ireland. And howbeit there be many more abuses woorthye, the reformation both in publicke and in private amongst them, yet these, for that they

are the more generall, and most tending to the hurte of the common-wealth, as they have come to my remembrance, I have, as breifly as I could, rehearsed them unto you. Wherefore nowe I thinke it best that we pass unto our thirde parte, in which we noted inconveniences that are in religion.

Eudox. Surely you have very well handled these two former, and yf you shall as well goe thorough the thirde likewise, ye shall merite a very good meede.

Iren. Little have I to say of religion, both because the partes therof be not many, (it self being but one) and my self have not bene much conversant in that calling, but as lightly passing by I have seene or heard: Therefore the faulte which I finde in Religion is but one, but the same is universall through out all the country; that is, that they are all Papistes by theyre profession, but in the same soe blindly and brutishly enformed, (for the most parte) as that you would rather thinke them Atheistes or Infidells for not one amongst an hundred knoweth any grounde of religion, or any article of his saythe, but can perhaps say his Later noster, or his Ave Maria, without any knowledge or understanding what one word of therof meaneth.

Eudox. This is truly a most pittifull hearing that soe many sowles should fall into the devills handes at once and lacke the blessed comforte of the sweete gospell and Christes deare passion. Aye me! how cometh it to pass that being a people as they are, trading with soe many nations, and frequented of soe manye, yet they have not tasted any parte of these happye joyes nor once bene lightened with the morning starre of trueth but lye weltring in such spirituall darkness harde by hell-mouth, even readye to fall in yf God happily help not?

Iren. The general faulte cometh not of any late abuse either in the people or theyr preistes, whose can teache noe better then they knowe, nor shewe noe more light then they have seene, but in the first institution and planting of religion in all that realme, which was as I reade in the time of Pope Celestine, whose, as it is written, did first send over thither Palladius, whose ther decessing, he afterwards sent over St. Patrick, being by nation a Britton, who converted the people (being then Infidells) from paganism and christened them. In which Popes time and longe before it is certayne that religion was generally corrupted with theyr popish trumpery, therefore what other could they learne them, then such trashe as was taughts them,

and drinke of that cup of fornication with which the purple harlott had then made all nations drunken?

Eudox. What! doe you then blame and finde faulte with soe good an Acte in that good pope as the reducing of such a greate people to Christianitye, bringing soe many sowles to Christ? Yf that was ill, what is good?

Iren. I doe not blame the christening of them, for to be sealed with the marke of the Lambe, by what hand soever it be done rightlye, I hold it a good and gracious worke, for the generall profession which they then take upon them of the Cross and saythe of Christ. I nothing doubte but that through the powerfull grace of that mighty Saviour it will worke salvation in many of them; but nevertheless since they drinke not from the pure spring of life but onely tasted of such troubled waters as were brought unto them, the dregges therof have bredd greate contagion in theyr sowles, the which dayly encreasing and being still more augmented with their owne lewde lives and faulty conversation hath nowe bredd in them this generall disease that can not, but onely with very stronge purgations, be censed and carryed away.

Eudox. Then for this defecte ye finde noe faulte with the people themselves nor with the priestes which take the charge of sowles, but with the first ordinaunce and institution therof?

Iren. Not soe, Eudoxus, for the sinne or ignorance of the priestes shall not excuse the people, nor the authoritye of their greate pastour, Peters successor, shall not excuse the priest, but they all shall dye in theyr sinnes for they have all erred and gone out of the way together.

Eudox. But yf this ignorance of the people be such a burden to the pope, is it not a blott unto them that nowe hold the place of government, in that they which are in the lighte themselves suffer a people under theyr charge to wallowe in such deadly darkeness, for I doe not see that the faulte is chaunged but the faulte-master.

Iren. That which you blame, Eudox., is not (I suppose) any faulte of will in these godly fathers which have the charge therof, but the inconvenience of the time and troublesome occasions, wherewith that wretched realme hath continually bene turmoyled; for instruction in religion needeth quiett times, and ere we seeke to settle a sounde discipline in the clargye, we must purchase peace unto

the layetye; for it is an ill time to preach amongst swordes, and most harde, or rather impossible, it is to settell a good opinion in the myndes of men for matters of religion doubtfull, which have a doubtless evill opinion of ourselves; for ere the newe be brought in, the old must be removed.

Eudox. Then belike it is meete that some fitter time be attended, that God send peace and quietness there in civill matters before it be attempted in ecclesiasticall. I would rather have thought that (as it is sayde) correction should begin at the howse of God, and that the care of the soule should have bene preferred before the care of the bodye.

Iren. Most true, Eudoxus, the care of the soule and soules matters are to be preferred before the care of the bodye in consideration of the woorthyness therof; but not all the time of reformation; for yf you should knowe a wicked person dangerously sicke, having nowe both soule and bodye greatly diseased, yet both recoverable, wou'd ye not thinke it ill advisement to bring the preacher before the phisition? For yf his bodye were neglected, it is like that his languishing soule being disquieted by this diseasedfull bodye, would utterly refuse and lothe all spirituall comforte; but yf his bodye were first recured, and brought to good frame, should there not then be founte best time to recure his soule also? Soe it is in the state of the realme: Therefore (as I sayde) it is expedient, first to settle such a course of government there, as thereby both civill disorders and also ecclesiasticall abuses may be reformed and amended, wherto needeth not any such great distaunce of times, as ye suppose I require; but one joynte resolution for both, that eche might seconde and confirme the other.

Eudox. That we shall see when we come therunto: in the meane time I consider thus much, as ye have delivered, touching the generall faulte which ye suppose in religion, to weet, that it is popish; but doe ye finde noe particular abuses therein, nor in the ministers therof?

Iren. Yes verely; for what ever disorder you see in the Church of England ye may finde there, and many more. Namely, grosse Simonie, greedy covetousness, fleshly incontinence, careless slouth, and generally all disordered life in the common clargyman. And besides all these, they have theyr owne particular enormities; for all the Irish priestes, which nowe enjoye the church livings there, are in a manner meere layemen, go lyke laymen, live like laye men, and

followe all kinde of husbandrye, and other worldly affayres, as thother Irish men doe. They neither reade scriptures, nor preach to the people, nor minister the sacrament of communion; but the baptisme they doe, for they christen yet after the popish fashion, and with popish ministratioun, onely they take the tithes and offerings, and gather what fruites els they may of theyr livinges, the which they convert as badly, and some of they (they say) paye as due tributes and shares of theyr livinges to theyr Bishops (I speake of those which are Irish) as they receive them duelye.

Eudox. But is it suffered amongst them? It is wonderfull but that the governours doe redresse such shamefull abuses.

Iren. Howe can they, since they knowe them not? For the Irish bishops have theyr cleargye in such awe and subjection under them, that they dare not complayne of them, soe as they may dye unto them what they please, for they, knowing theyr owne unworthyness and incapacitye, and that they are therefore still removable at theyr bishops will, yeld what pleaseth him, and he taketh what he list: yea, and some of them whose diocesse are in remote partes, somewhat out of the worldes eye, doe not not at all bestowe the benefices, which are in theyr owne donation, upon anye, but keepe them in theyr owne handes, and sett theyr owne servants and horse-boyes to take up the tithes and fruites of them, with the which some of them purchase greate landes, and builde fayre castells upon the same. Of which abuse yf any question be moved they have a very seemely colour of excuse, that they have noe woorthy ministers to bestowe them upon, but keepe them soe unbested for any such sufficient person as any shall bring unto them.

Eudox. But is there noe lawe, or ordinance to meete with this mischeif, nor hath it never before bene looked into?

Iren. Yes, it seemes it hath; for there is a statute there enacted in Ireland, which seemes to have bene grounded upon a good meaning — That whatsoever Englishman, being of good conversation and sufficiency, shal be brought unto any of the bishoppes, and nominated unto any living within theyr diocess that is presently voyde, that he shall (without contradiction) be admitted therunto before any Irish.

Eudox. This is surely a very good lawe, and well provided for this evil, we speake of; and why is not the same observed?

Iren. I thinke it is well observed, and

that none of the bishopps transgresse the same, but yet it woorketh noe reformation herof for many respectes. First there are noe such sufficient English ministers sent over as might be presented to any bishop for any living, but the most parte of such English as come over thither of themselves are either unlearned, or men of some badd note, for which they have forsaken England. Soe as the bishop, to whom they shalbe presented, may justly rejecte them as incapable and insufficient. Secondly, the bishop himself is perhaps an Irish man, whose being made judge by that lawe of the sufficiencye of the ministers, may at his owne will, dislike of the Englishman, as unworthy in his opinion, and admitt of any Irish whom he shall thinke more meete for his turne. And yf he shall at the instance of any Englishman of countenance there, whom he will not displease, accept of any such English minister as shal be tendred unto him, yet he will underhand carrye such a harde hande over him, or by his officers wringe him soe sore, as he will soone make him weare of his poore living. Lastly, the benefices themselves are soe meane, and of soe small profit in these Irish countreies, through the ill husbandrye of the Irish people which inhabite them, that they will not yeelde any competent mayntenance for any honest minister to live on, scarcely to buye him a gowne. And were all this redressed (as happily it might be) yet what good shall any English minister doe amongst them, by preaching or teaching, which either cannot understand him, or will not heare him? Or what comforte of life shall he have, when all his parishioners are soe unsociable, soe intractable, so ill-affected unto him, as they usually be to all the English? Or finally, howe dare almost any honest ministers, that are peacefull civil men, commit theyr safetye into the handes of such neighbours, as the boldest captaines dare scarcely dwell by?

Eudox. Little good then (I see) is by that statute wrought, howe ever well intended; but the reformation therof must growe higher, and be brought from a stronger ordinance then the commaundement or penaltye of a lawe, which none dare enforce or complayne of when it is broken: but have you any more of those abuses in the cleargye?

Iren. I could perhaps reckon more, but I perceave my speech to growe to longe, and these may suffice to judge of the generall disorders which raigne amongst them; as for the particulars, they are to many to be

reckned. For the cleargye there (except some fewe grave fathers which are in high place about the state, and some fewe others which are lately planted in theyr newe Colledge,) are generally badd, licentious, and most disorderd.

Eudox. Ye have then (as I suppose) gone through these three first partes which ye purposed unto your self; to weete, the Inconvenience which ye observed in the lawes, in the customes, and in the religion of that land; the which (me seemes) ye have so thoroughly touched, as that nothing more remayneth to be spoken thereof.

Iren. Not soe thoroughly as ye suppose, that nothing more can remayne, but soe generally as I purposed; that is, to laye open the generall evils of that realme, which doe hinder the good reformation therof: for to counte the particuler fautes of private men should be a worke to infinite; yet some there be of that nature, that though they be in private men, yet theyr evill reacheth to a generall hurte, as the extortions of sherriffs, subsherriffs, and theyr bayliffs; the corruption of vittailors, cessors, and purveyors: the disorders of seneschalls, captaynes, and theyr souldiours, and many such like: All which I will only name here, that theyr reformation may be mynded in place where it most concerneth. But there is one very fowle abuse which, by the way, I may not omit, and that is in captaynes, who, notwithstanding that they are specially employed to make peace through stronge execution of warre, yet they doe soe dandle theyr doinges, and dallye in the service to them committed, as yf they would not have the Enemy subdued, or utterly beaten downe, for feare least afterwards they should neede employment, and soe be discharged of pay: for which cause some of them that are layed in garrison doe soe handle the matter, that they will doe noe greate hurte to the enemyes, yet for colour sake some men they will kill, even halfe with the consent of the enemy, being persons either of base regard, or enemies to the enemy, whose heades eftsones they bend to the governour for a commendacion of theyr great endeavour, telling how weightye a servite they have performed by cutting of such and soe dangerous rebells.

Eudox. Trulye this is a prettve mockerye, and not to be permitted by the governours.

Iren. Yea! but how can the governours knowe readily what persons those were, and what the purpose of theyr killing was? Yea, and what will ye say, yf the captaynes doe

justifce this theyr course by ensample of some of theyr governours, which (under Benedicite, I doe tell it you,) doe practise the like slighthes in theyr governments?

Eudox. Is it possible? Take heede what you say, Irenæus.

Iren. To you onely, Eudoxus, I doe tell it, and that even with greate hartes greif, and inward trouble of mynde to see her Majestie soe much abused by some whom she putteth in speciall trust of these greate affayres: of which some, being martiall men, will not doe allwayes what they may for quieting of thinges, but will rather winke at some fautes, and will suffer them unpunished, least that they (having putt all thinges in that assurance of peace that they might) should seeme afterwards not to be needed, nor continued in theyr government with soe great a charge to her Majestie. And therefore they doe cunningly carrye theyr course of government, and from one hand to another doe bandie the service like a tennis-ball, which they will never quite strike away, for feare lest afterwards they should wante sporte.

Eudox. Doe you speake of under-magistrates, or principall governours?

Iren. I doe speake of noe particulars, but the truth may be founde oute by tryalle and reasonable insight into some of theyr doonges. And yf I should say there is some blame herof in some of the principall governours, I thinke I might also shewe some reasonable proof of my speache. As for example, some of them being the end of theyr governmente drawe nigh, and some mischeifs or troublous practise growing up, which afterwards may worke trouble to the next succeeding governours, will not attempt the redress or cutting of therof, either for feare they should leave the realme unquiett at the end of theyr government, or that the next that cometh should receive the same to quiett, and soe happily winne more prayse therof then they before. And therefore they will not (as I sayd) seek to at all to redresse that evill, but will either by granting protection for a time, or holding some imparlaunce with the rebell, or by treatye of commissioners, or by other like devises, onely smoothe and keepe downe the flame of the mischeif, soe as it may not breake out in theyr time of government: what comes afterwards they care not, or rather wish the worst. This course hath bene noted in some governours.

Eudox. Surely (Irenæus) this, yf it were true, should be worthy of a heavy judgement: but it is harde to be thought, that any go-

vernour would see much either envye the good of that realme which is putt into his hand, or defraude her Majestie, whose trusteth him soe much, or maligne his successours which shall possess his place, as to suffer an evill to growe up, which he might timely have kept under, or perhaps to nourish it with coloured countenances, or such sinister meanes.

Iren. I doe not certaynly avouch soe much, (Eudoxus) but the sequell of things doth in a manner proove, and playnly speake soe much, that the governours usually are envious one of anothers greater glorye, which yf they would seeke to excell by better government, it should be a most laudable emulation. But they doe quite otherwise: for this (as ye may marke) is the common order of them, that whose cometh next in the place will not followe that course of government, how ever good, which his predecessor held, either for dislayne of him, or doubt to have his doings drowned in another mans prayse, but will straight take a way quite contrarye to the former: as yf the former thought (by keeping under the Irish) to reforme them, the next, by discontentauncing the English will currie favour with the Irish, and soe make his government seeme plausible in viewe, as having all the Irish at his comaunde: but he that comes next after will perhaps followe neither one nor the other, but will dandle the one and the other in such sort, as he will sucke sweete out of them both, and leave bitterness to the poore lande, which yf he that comes after shall seeke to redress, he shall perhaps finde such crosses as he shall be hardly able to beare, or doe any good that might worke the disgrace of his predecessors. Examples herof ye may see in the governors of late times sufficiently, and in others of former times more manifestly, when the government of that realme was committed sometimes to the Geraldins, as when the Howse of Yorke had the Crowne of England; sometimes to the Butlers, as when the Howse of Lancaster gotte the same. And other whiles, when an English governour was appoynted, he perhaps founde enemies of both. And this is the wretchedness of that fatall kingdome which, I thinke, therefore, was in old times not called amisse Banna or sacra Inaula, taking sacred (sacra) for accursed.

Eudox. I am sorye to heare soe much as ye reporte; and nowe I beginne to conceave somewhat more of the cause of her continuall wretchedness then heretofore I founde, and wish that this inconvenience were well looked

into: for sure (me seemes) it is more waightye then all the former, and more hardly to be redressed in the governour then in the governed; as a maladye in a vitall parte is more incurable then in an externall.

Iren. You say very true; but nowe that we have thus eyed all the abuses and inconveniences of that government, which was our first parte, it followes next to speake of the seconde, which was of the meanes to cure and redress the same, which we must labour to reduce to the first beginning therof.

Eudox. Right soe, Irenus: for by that which I have noted in all this your discourse ye suppose that the whole ordinance and institution of that realmes government was, both at first when it was placed, evill plotted, and also since, through theyr other oversights, runne more out of square to that disorder which: is nowe come to; like as two indirect lines, the further they are drawn out, the further they goe asunder.

Iren. I doe soe, Eudoxus, and as you say, soe thinke, that the longer that government thus continueth, in the worse course will the realme be; for it is all in vayne that they nowe strive and endeavour by fayre meanes and peaceable plottes to redress the same, without first removing all those inconveniences, and newe framing (as it were in the forge) all that is worne out of fashion: For all other meanes will be as lost labour, by patching up one hole to make manye; for the Irish doe strongly hate and abhorre all reformation and subjection to the English, by reason that, having bene once subdued by them, they were thrust out of all theyr possessions. Soe as nowe they feare, that yf they were agayne brought under, they should likewise be expelled out of all, which is the cause that they hate the English government, according to the saying, 'Quem metuunt oderunt': Therefore the reformation must nowe be the strength of a greater power.

Eudox. But, me thinke, that might be by making of good lawes, and establishing of newe statutes, with sharpe penalties and punishmentes for amendment of all that is presently amiss, and not (as ye suppose) to beginne all as it were anewe, and to alter the whole forme of the government; which howe dangerous a thing it is to attempt you your selfe must needs confesse, and they which have the managing of the realmes whole policie cannot, without greate cause, feare and refrayne: for all innovation is perilous, insoemuch as though it be mente for the better, yet soe many accidents and fearfull

events may come betwene, as that it may hazarde the losse of the whole.

Iren. Very true, Eudoxus: all chaunge is to be shunned, where the affayres stand in such state as that they may continue in quietness, or be assured at all to abide as they are. But that in the realme of Ireland we see much otherwise, for everye day we perceave the troubles to growe more upon us, and one evill growing upon another, insoemuch as there is noe parte sounde nor ascertayned, but all have theyr eares upright, wayting when the watch-word shall come that they should all rise generally into rebellion, and cast away the English subjection. To which there nowe litle wanteth for I thinke the woorde be alreadye given, and there wanteth nothing but opportunitie, which trulye is the death of one noble parson, whose being hingd of most stedfast to his most noble Queene and his countrey, coasting upon the South-Sea, stoppeth the Ingate of all that evill which is looked for, and holdeth in all those which are at his becke, with the terrour of his greatness, and the assurance of his honourable loyaltye. And therefore where you thinke, that good and sounde lawes might amende, and reforme thinges amiss, there you thinke surely amisse. For it is vayne to prescribe lawes, where noe man caith for keeping them, nor feareth the danger of breaking them. But all the realme is first to be reformed, and lawes are afterwards to be made for keeping and conteyning it in that reformed estate.

Eudox. Howe then doe you thinke is the reformation therof to be begonne, yf not by lawes and ordinances?

Iren. Even by the swoorde; for all those evils must first be cutt away with a strong hand, before any good can be planted; like as the corrupt branches and unholosome boughes are first to be pruned, and the fowle mosse clenched and scraped away, before the tree can bring forth any good fruite.

Eudox. Did you blame me, even nowe, for wishing Kearne, Horse-boyes, and Kearroughs, to be cleane cutt off, as to violent a meanes, and doe you your self nowe prescribe the same medicine? Is not the sword the most violent redress that may be used for any evill?

Iren. It is soe; but yet where noe other remedie may be founde, nor noe hope of recoverye had, there must needes this violent meanes be used. As for the loose kind of people which ye would have cutt off I blamed it, for that they might otherwise be brought per-

haps to good, as namely by this way which I sett before you.

Eudox. Is not your way all one in effect with the former, which you founde faulte with, save onely this oddes, that I sayd by the halter, and you say by the swoorde? What difference is there?

Iren. There is surely greate difference when you shall understand it; for by the swoorde which I named, I doe not meane the cutting of of all that nation with the swoorde, which farre be it from me that I should ever thinke soe desperatly, or wish soe uncharitably, but by the swoorde I meane the royall power of the Prince, which ought to stretche it self forth in the cheiftest strength to the redressing and cutting of of those evils, which I before blamed, and not of the people which are evill. For evill people by good ordinances and government may be made goode; but the evill that is of it self evill will never become good.

Eudox. I pray you then declare your mynde at large, how you would wish that sword, which you meane, to be used to the reformation of all those evils.

Iren. The first thing must be to send over into that realme such a stronge power of men, as that shall perforce bring in all that rebellious route of loose people, which either doe nowe stande out in open armes, or in wandring companies doe keepe the woodes, spoyling the good subject.

Eudox. You speake nowe, Irenæus, of an infinite charge to her Majestic, to send over such an armie as should treade downe all that standeth before them on foote, and laye on the grounde all the stiff-necked people of that lande; for there is nowe but one outlawe of any greate reckning, to wete, the Earle of Tyrone, abroad in armes, agaynst whom you see what huge charges she hath bene at, this last yeare, in sending of men, providing of victuals, and making head agaynst him: yet there is litle or nothing at all done, but the Queenes treasure spent, her people wasted, the poor countrey troubled, and the enemye nevertheless brought unto noe moresubjection then he was, or list outwardly to shewe, which in effect is none, but rather a scorne of her power, and an emboldning of a proude rebel, and an encouragement unto all like lewde disposed traytors that shall dare to lift up theyr heeles agaynst theyr Sovereign Ladye. Therefore it were harde counsell to drawe such an exceeding great charge upon her, whose event shal be so uncertayne.

Iren. True indeede. yf the event should

be uncertayne; but the certaintye of the effect herof shal be soe infallible as that noe reason can gainsaye it, neither shall the charge of all this armye (the which I demaunde) be much greater then soe much as in these two last yeares warres hath vaynly bene expended. For I dare undertake, that it hath cost the Queene above 200000 poundes allreadye; and for the present charge, that she is nowe at there, amounteth to verye nere 12000 poundes a monthe, wherof cast ye the accounte; yet nothing is done. The which somme, had it bene employed as it should be, would have effected all this that I nowe goe about.

Eudox. Howe meane you to have it employed, but to be spent in the paye of souldiours, and provision of victuals?

Iren. Right soe, but it is nowe not disbursed at once, as it might be, but drawn out into a long length, by sending over nowe 20000 poundes, and the next halfe yeare 10000 poundes; soe as the souldiour in the meane time, for wante of due provision of victuall, and good payment of his due, is starved and consumed; that of a thousand, that goe over lustye able men in half a yeare there are not left five hundred. And yet the Queenes charges are never a whit the lesse, but what is not payed in present monye is accompted in dett, which will not be long unpaid; for the Captayne, halfe whose souldiours are dead, and the other quarter never mustered, nor seene, comes shortly to demaunde payment here of his whole accounte, where, by good meanes of some greate ones, and pryve sharing with the officers and servauntes of othersome, he receaveth his dett, much less perhaps then was due, yet much more indeede then he justly deserved.

Eudox. I take this, sure, to be noe good husbandrye; for what must needes be spent as good spent at once, where is enough, as to have it drawn out into longe delays, seeing that thereby both the service is much hindered, and yet nothing saved: but it may be, Irenaus, that the Queenes treasure in soe greate occasions of disbursements (as it is well known she hath bene at latelye) is not allwayes soe readye nor soe plentifull, as it can spare soe greate a somme together, but being payed as it is, nowe some and then some, it is noe greate burthen to her, nor any greate impoverishing to her coffers, seeing by such delays of time, that it daylye cometh in as fast as she parteth it out.

Iren. It may be as you sayd, but for the

going through of so honorable a course I doubt not but yf the Queenes coffers be not soe well stored, (which we are not to looke into) but that the whole realme which nowe, as thinges be used, doe feele a continuall burden of that wretched realme hanging upon theyr backes, would, for a finall riddaunce of all that trouble, be once troubled for all; and putt to all theyr shoulders, and helping handes, and hartes also, to the defraying of that charge, most gladfullie and willinglie; and surely the charge, in effect, is nothing to the mynute great good which should come thereby, both to the Queene, and all this realme generally, as when time serveth shal be shewd.

Eudox. Howe many men then would you require to the finishing of this which ye take in hand? and howe long space would you have them entertayned?

Iren. Verely, not above 10000 footemen, and 1000 horse, and all those not above the space of one yeare and a halfe, for I would still, as the heate of the service abateth, abate the number in paye, and make other provision for them, as I will shewe.

Eudox. Surely, it seemeth not much which ye require, nor noe long time; but howe would you have them used? Would you leade forth your armye agaynst the Enemye, and seeke him where he is to fight?

Iren. Noe, Eudoxus; it would not be, for it is well known that he is a flying enemye, hiding himself in woodes and bogges, from whence he will not drawe forth, but into some strate passage or perillous foord, where he knowes the armie must needes passe; there will he lye in wayte, and, yf he finde advantage sitt, will dangerously hazarde the troubled souldiour. Therefore to seeke him out that still flyeth, and followe him that can hardly be founde, were vayne and bootelless; but I would devide my men in garrison upon his country, in such places as I should thinke might most annoyne him.

Eudox. But howe can that be, Irenaus, with so fewe men? For the enemye, as you nowe see, is not all in one country, but some in Ulster, some in Connaughte, and others in Leynster. Soe as to plaunte stronge garrisons in all these places should neede many more men then you speake of, or to plaunte all in one, and to leave the rest naked, should be but to leave them to the spoyle.

Iren. I would wish the chiefe power of the armye to be garrisoned in one country that is strongest, and thother upon the rest that are weakest: As for example, the Earle of

Tyrone is now accounted the strongest: upon him would I lay 8000 men in garrison, 1000 upon Feugh Mac-Hughe and the Kevagh, and 1000 upon some parte of Connaught, to be at the direction of the Governour.

Eudox. I see nowe all your men bestowed, but in what places would you sett theyr garrison that they might rise out most convenientlye to service? And though perhaps I am ignoraunte of the places, yet I will take the mappe of Ireland, and lay it before me, and make myne eyes (in the meane while) my schoole-master, to guide my understanding to judge of your plott.

Iren. These 8000 in Ulster I would devide likewise into fowre partes, soe as there should be 2000 footemen in everye garrison; the which I would thus place. Upon the Blackwater, in some convenient place, as high upon the River as might be, I would laye one garrison. Another would I putt at Castleliffar, or thereabouts, soe as they should have all the passages upon the river to Loughfoyle. The thirde I would place about Farnemunnaghe or Gondraise, soe as they might lye betwene Connaught and Ulster, to serve upon both sides, as occasion should be offered; and thus therefore would I have stronger then any of the rest, because it should be most enforced, and most employed, and that they might put wardes at Ballashaine and Belike, and all those passages. The last would I sett about Moucham or Belterbert, soe as it should fronte both upon the enemye that waye, and also keepe the countreys of Cavan and Meath in awe from passing of stragglers and outgadlers from those partes, whence they use to come forth, and oftentimes use to worke much mischief. And to everye of these garrisons of 2000 footemen I would have 200 horsemen added, for the one without the other can doe but little service. The fowre garrisons, thus being placed, I would have to be vittayled afore hand for halfe a year, which ye will say to be hard, considering the corruption and usuall wast of victualls. But why should not they be as well vittayled for soe long time, as the shippes are usuallye for a year, and sometimes two, seeing it is easier to keepe them on land then on water? Their bread would I have in flowre, soe as it might be baked still to serve theyr necessary want. Their drinke also there brewed within them, from time to time, and theyr beef before hand barrelled, the which may be used as it is needefull; for I make noe doubt but fresh

victualls they will sometimes provide for themselves amongst theyr enemyes creeete. Hereunto would I likewise have them have a store of hose and shoes, with such other necessaryes as may be needefull for souldiours, soe as they would have noe occasion to look for relief from abroad, for cause such trouble, for theyr continuall supplye, as I see and have often proved in Ireland to be combersome to the Deputye, and more dangerous to them that retayne them, then halfe the leading of an armye; for the enemye, knowing the ordinarye wayes by which they reliefe must be brought them, useth commonlye to drawe himself into the straye passages thitherwardes, and oftentimes doth dangerouslye distress them. Besides, the paye of such forces as should be sent for theyr convey shall be spared the charge of the carriages, and the exactions of the countrey likewise. But onely every halfe yeare the supplye to be brought by the Deputye himselfe, and his power, whose shall then visite and overlooke all those garrisons, to see what is needefull, to chaunge what is expedient, and to direct what he shall best advise. And these fowre garrisons issuing forth, at such convenient times as they shall have intelligence or espiall upon the enemye, will so drive him from one side to another, and tennis him amongst them, that he shall finde no where safe to keepe his creeete, or hide himselfe, but flying from the fire shall fall into the water, and out of one danger into another, that in shorte space his creeete, which is his moste sustenance, shalbe wasted in praying, or killed in driving, or starved for wante of pasture in the woodes, and he himself brought soe lowe, that he shall have noe harte nor abilitye to endure his wretchedness, the which will surelye come to pass in very shorte space; for one winters well following of him will soe plucke him on his knees, that he will never be able to stand up agayne.

Eudox. Doe you then thinke the winter time fittest for the service of Ireland? Howe fallies it then that our most employmentes be in sommer, and the armyes then ledd commonlye forth?

Iren. It is surely misconceaved; for it is not with Ireland as it is with other countreys, where the warres flame most in sommer, and the helmetts glister brightest in the fayre sunneshine: But in Ireland the winter yeeldeth best service, for then the trees are bare and naked, which use both to cloth and howse the kearne: the ground is cold

and wett, which useth to be his bedding; the ayre is sharpe and bitter, which useth to blowe through his naked sides and legges; the kine are barren and without milke, which useth to be his onely foode, neither yf he kill them then, will they yeelde him any flesh, nor yf he keepe them will they give him any foode; besides then being all in calfe (for the most parte) they will, through much chasing and driving, cast all theyr calves and loose theyr milke, which should retayne him the next sommer.

Eudox. I doe well understand your reason; but, by your leave, I have hearde it otherwise sayde, of some that were outlawes, that in sommer they kept themselves quiett, but in winter they would playe theyr partes, and when the nightes were longest, then burne and spoyle most, soe that they might safely returne before daye.

Iren. I have likewise hearde, and also seee proof therof trewe: But that was of such outlawes as were either abiding in well inhabited countreys, as in Mounster, or bordering to the English pale, as Feugh Mac Ilughe, the Kevanaghs, the Moores, the Dempseys, the Ketins, the Kellyes or such like: For for them indeede the winter is the fittest time of spoyleing and robbing, because the nightes are then (as ye say) longest and darkest, and also the countreys rounde about are then fullest of corne, and good provision to be every where gotten by them; but it is farre otherwise with a stronge peopled enemye that possesseth a whole countrey, for the other being but a fewe, are indeede privily lodged, and kept in out villages, and corners nigh the woodes and mountaynes, by some theyr pryve frendes, to whom they bring theyr spoyles and stealthes, and of whom they continually receive secrett relief; but the open enemye having all his countrey wasted, what by himself, and what by the soullours, findeth then succour in noe place. Townes there are none of which he may gett spoyle, they are all burnte; countrey howses and farmours there are none, they be all field; bread he hath none, he ploughed not in sommer; flesh he hath, but yf he kill it in winter, he shall wante milke in sommer, and shortly want life. Therefore if they be well followed but one winter, ye shall have little worke with them the next sommer.

Eudox. I doe nowe well perceave the difference, and doe verely thinke that the winter time is the fittest for service: withall I perceive the manner of your handlinge the service, by drawing suddayne draughtes upon

the enemye, when he looketh not for you, and to watche advauntages upon him as he doth upon you. By which straight keeping of them in, and not suffering them long at any time to rest, I must needs thinke that they will soone be brought lowe, and driven to great extremities. All which when you have perfourned, and brought them to the very last cast, suppose that they will offer, either to come in unto you and submit themselves, or that some of them will seeke to withdrawe themselves, what is your advise to doe? will you have them received?

Iren. Noe; but at the beginning of those warres, and when the garrisons are well plaunted and fortified, I would wish a proclamation were made generallye and to come to their knowlege:—That what persons soever would within twenty dayes absolutely submit themselves, (excepting onely the very principalls and ring-leader) should finde grace: I doubt not, but upon the settling of those garrisons, such a terrour and neere consideration of theyr perillous estate wilbe stricken into most of them, that they will covett to drawe awaye from theyr leaders. And agayne I well knowe that the rebells themselves (as I sawe by proof in the Desmonds warres) will turne awaye all theyr rascall people, whom they thinke unserviceable, as old men, women, children, and hindes, (which they call churles), which would onely wast theyr victuals, and yeeld them noe ayde; but theyr cattell they will surely keepe away: These therefore, though policie would turne them backe agayne that they might the rather consume and afflict the other rebells, yet in a pityfull commiseration I could wish them to be received; the rather for that this base sorte people doth not for the most parte rebell of himself, having noe harte therunto, but is of force drawn by the graunde rebells into theyr actions, and carryed away with the vyolence of the streame, els he should be sure to loose all that he hath, and perhaps his life also; the which nowe he carryeth unto them, in hope to enjoy them there, but he is there by the strong rebells themselves soone turned out of all, soe that the constraynte herof may in him deserve pardon. Likewise yf any of theyr able men or gentellmen shall then offer to come awaye, and to bring theyr cattell with them, as some noe doubt may steale them privilye away, I wish them alsoe to be received, for the disabling of the enemye, but withall, that good assurance may be taken for theyr true behaviour and absolute submission, and that they then be not suf-

fred to remaine anie longer in those partes, noe nor about the garrisons, but sent awaie into the inner partes of the realme, and dispersed in such sort as they shall not come together, nor easilie returne if they would: For if they might be suffred to remayne about the garrison, and there inhabit, as they will offer to fill the grounde and yeeld a greate parte of the profit therof, and of theyr cattell, to the Coronell, wherwith they have heretofore tempted many, they would (as I have by experience knowen) be ever after such a gall and inconvenience unto them, as that theyr profit should not recompence theyr hurte; for they will privily reliefe theyr frendes that are soother; they will send the enemye secrett advaysement of all their purposes and journeyes which they meane to make upon them; they will also not sticke to drawe the enemye privlie upon them, yea and to betraye the forte it selfe, by discoverye of all her defectes and disadvantages (yf any be) to the cutting of all theyr throates. For avoyding wherof and many other inconveniences, I wish that they should be carryed farre from thence into some other partes, soe that (as I sayd) they come in and submitt themselves, upon the first summons: but afterwards I would have, none received, but left to theyr fortune and miserable end. My reason is, for that those which will afterwards remayne without are stout and obstinat rebels, such as will never be made dutifull and obedient, nor brought to labour or civill conversation, having once tasted that licentious life, and being acquainted with spoyle and outrages, will ever after be readye for the like occasions, soe as there is noe hope of theyr amendment or recoverye, and therefore needefull to be cutt off.

Eudox. Surely of such desperate persons as will willfully followe the course of theyr owne follye, there is noe compassion to be had, and for others ye have proposed a mercifull meane, much more then they have deserved: but what then shalbe the conclusion of this warre? for you have prefixed a shorte time of the continuance therof.

Iren. The end (I assure me) will be very shorte and much sooner then can be (in soe greate a trouble, as it seemeth) hoped for, although there should none of them fall by the swoorde, nor be slayne by the souldiour, yet thus being kept from manurance, and theyr cattell from running abroad, by this harde restraynte they would quickly consume themselves, and devoure one another. The proof wherof I sawe sufficiently ensampled in

those late warres in Mounster; for notwithstanding that the same was a most riche and plentifull cuntry, full of corne and cattell, that you would have thought they would have bene able to stand long, yet ere one yeare and a halfe they were brought to such wretchedness, as that any stony harte would have rued the same. Out of every corner of the woodes and glinnes they came creeping foorth upon theyr handes, for theyr legges could not beare them; they looked like anathemes of death, they spake like ghostes crying out of theyr graves; they did eate of the dead carrions, happy were they yf they could finde them, yea, and one another soone after, insoomuch as the very carcasses they spared not to scrape out of theyr graves; and yf they founde a plotte of water-cresses or sham-rockes, there they flocked as to a feast for the time, yet not able long to continue therewithall; that in shorte space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentifull cuntry suddainly made voyde of man or beast: yet sure in all that warre, there perished not many by the swoorde, but all by the extremitye of famine which they themselves had wrought.

Eudox. It is a wonder that you tell, and more to be wondred howe it should soe shortly come to pass.

Iren. It is most true, and the reason also very readye; for ye must conceive that the strength of all that nation is the Kearne, Galloglas, Stokaghe, Horsesmen, and Horse-boys, the which having bene never used to have any thing of their owne, and now living upon the spoyle of others, make noe spare of any thing, but havocke and confusion of all they meete with, whether it be theyr owne frendes goodes, or theyr foes. And yf they happen to gett never soe great spoyle at any time, the same they consume and wast in a trice, as naturally delighting in spoyle, though it doe themselves noe good. On the other side, whatsoever they leave unspoyle, the souldiour, when he cometh there, he havocketh and spoyleth likewise, soe that betwene them both nothing is very shortly left. And yet this is very necessarye to be done for the soone finishing of the warre; and not onely this in this wise, but also all those subjectes which border upon those parts, are either to be removed and drawn away, or likewise to be spoyled, that the enemye may find noe succour thereby: for what the souldiour spares the rebell will surely spoyle.

Eudox. I doe nowe well understand you. But nowe when all things are brought to

this pass, and all filled with this rufull spectacle of soe many wretched carcasses starving, goodly countreys wasted, soe huge a desolation and confusion, as even I that doe but heare it from you, and doe picture it in my mynde, doe greatlye pittye and commiserate it, yf it shall happen, that the state of this miserye and lamentable image of thinges shal be told, and feelingly presented to her Sacred Majestie, being by nature full of mercye and clemencye, whose is most inclinable to such pityfull complaintes, and will not chadure to heare such tragedyes made of her people and poore subjectes as some about her may insinuate; then she perhaps, for verye compassion of such calamities, will not onely stopp the streame of such violence, and returne to her wonted mildenesse, but also conne them litle thanks which have bene the authors and counsellours of such bloodie platformes. Soe I remember in the late government of the good Lord Graye, when, after long travell and many perilous assayes, he had brought thinges almost to this pass that ye speake of, and that when it was even made readye for reformation, and might have bene brought to what her Majestie would, like complainte was made agaynst him, that he was a bloudye man, and regarded not the life of her subjectes noe more then dogges, but had wasted and consumed all, soe as now he had nothing almost left, but to raigne in theyr ashes; her Majesties care was soone lente thereunto, and all suddaynly turned topsy turvy; the noble Lord eff-sones was blamed; the wretched people pittied; and new counsells plotted, in which it was concluded that a general pardon should be sent over to all that would accept of it, upon which all former purposes were blaunked the Governour at a baye, and not onely all that greate and long charge, which she had before bene at, quite lost and cancelled, but also that hope of good which was even at the doore putt backe, and cleane frustrated. All which, whether it be true, or no, your selfe can well tell.

Iren. To true, Eudoxus, the more the pittye, for I may not forgett soe memorible a thing: neither can I be ignoraunte of that perillous devise, and of the whole meanes by which it was compassed, and very cunningly contrived by sowing first dissention betwene him and an other Noble Personage, wherein they both founde at length howe notably they had bene abused, and howe thereby, under-hand, this universal alteration of thinges was brought aboute, but then to late

to staye the same; for in the meane time all that was formerly done with long labour and great toyle, was (as you say) in a moment undone, and that good Lord blotted with the name of a bloody man, whom, who that well knewe, knewe him to be most gentell, affable, loving, and temperate; but that the necessity of that present state of thinges enfiged him to that violence, and almost changed his very naturall disposition. But otherwise he was soe farr from delighting in bloud, that oftentimes he suffred not just vengeance to fall where it was deserved: and even some of those which were afterwarde his accusers had tasted to much of his mercye, and were from the gallows brought to be his accusers. But his course indeede was this, that he spared not the heades and principalls of any mischeivous practize or rebellion, but shewed sharpe judgement on them, chiefly for examples sake, that all the meaner sorte, which also then were generall^{ly} infected with that evill, might by terrour therof be reclaimed, and saved, yf it might be possible. For in that last conspiracye of some of the English Pale, thinke you not that there were manye more guiltie then they that felt the punishment, or was there any almost clere from the same? yet he touched onely a fewe of speciall note; and in the tryall of them also even to prevente the blame of crueltye and partial dealing, as seeking theyr bloud, which he, in his great wisdom (as it seemeth) did fore-see would be objected agaynst him; he, for the avoyding therof, did use a singular discretion and regarde. For the Jurye that went upon theyr tryall, he made to be chosen out of theyr nearest kinsmen, and theyr Judges he made of some of theyr owne fathers, of others theyr uncles and dearest frendes, whose when they could not but justly condemne them, yet uttred theyr judgement in aboundaunce of teares, and yet he even herin was counted bloudye and cruell.

Eudox. Indeepe soe have I hearde it often here spoken, and I perceave (as I allwayes verely thought) that it was most unjustlye; for he was allwayes knowne to be a most just, sincere, godly, and right noble man, farr from such sternesse, farr from such unrighteousnes. But in that sharpe execution of the Spanyardes at the Forte of Smerwicke, I heard it speciallye noted, and, yf it were true as some reported, surelye it was a great touche to him in honour, for some say that he promised them life; others that at least he did putt them in hope therof.

Iren. Both the one and the other is most untrue; for this I can assure you, my selfe being as neere them as any, that he was soe far from either promising, or putting them in hope, that when first theyr Secretarye, called, as I remember, Jacques Geffray, an Italian, being sent to treat with the Lord Deputy for grace, was flatly denied; and afterwarde theyr Coronell, named Don Sebastian, came forth to intreate that they might parte with theyr armes like souldiours, at least with theyr lives; according to the custome of warre and lawe of nations, it was strongly denied him, and tolde him by the Lord Deputy himselfe, that they could not justlye pleade either custome of warre, or lawe of nations, for that they were not any lawfull enemyes; and yf they were, he willed them to shewe by what commission they came thither into another Princes dominions to warre, whether from the Pope or the King of Spayne, or any other: the which when they sayd they had not, but were onely adventurers that came to seeke fortune abroad, and serve in warres amongst the Irish, who desired to entertayne them, it was then tolde them, that the Irish themselves, as the Earle and John of Desmond with the rest, were noe lawfull enemyes, but rebells and traytours; and therefore they that came to succour them noe better then roges and runnagates, specially coming with noe lycence, nor commission from theyr owne King: Soe as it should be dishonorable for him in the name of his Queene to condicion or make any termes with such rascalls, but left them to theyr choise, to yelde and submitt themselves, or noe. Whereupon the sayd Coronell did absolutely yelde himselfe and the forte, with all therein, and craved onely mercye, which it being not thought good to shewe them, both for danger of themselves, yf, being saved, they should afterwarde joyne with the Irish, and also for terrour to the Irish, who were much emboldened by those forrayne succours, and also putt in hope of more ere long; there was noe other way but to make that shorte end of them which was made. Therefore most untrue and maliciously doe these evill tonges backbite and slander the sacred ashes of that most just and honorable personage, whose least vertue, of many most excellent which abounded in his heroycall spirit, they were never able to aspire unto.

Eudox. Truly, Irenæus, I am right gladd to be thus satisfied by you in that I have often hearde questioned, and yet was never

able, till now, to choke the mouth of such detractours with the certayne knowledge of theyr slanderous untruthes: neither is the knowledge herof impertinent to that which we formerly had in hand, I meane to the thorough prosecuting of that sharpe course which ye have sett downe for the bringing under of those rebells of Ulster and Connaught, and preparing a way for theyr perpetual reformation, least happily, by any such sinister suggestions of crueltye and to much bloudshedd, all the plott might be overthrowen, and all the cost and labour therein employed be utterly lost and cast awaye.

Iren. Ye say most true; for, after that Lordes calling away from thence, the two Lordes Justices continued but a while: of which the one was of mynde, (as it seemeth) to have continued in the footing of his predecessour, but that he was courbed and retrained. But the other was more mildly disposed, as was meete for his profession, and willing to have all the pityfull woundes of that commonwealth healed and recured, but not with that heede as they should be. After whom Sir John Perrot, succeeding (as it were) into another mans harvest, founde an open way to what course he list, the which he bent not to that poynte which the former governors intended, but rather quite contrarye, as it were in scorne of the former, and in a vayne vaunte of his owne counsell, with the which he was to willfullye carryed; for he did treade downe and disgrace all the English, and sett up and countenance the Irish all that he could, whether thinking thereby to make them more tractable and buxome to his government, (wherein he thought much amiss) or privily plotting some other purposes of his owne, as it partly afterwarde appeared; but surely his manner of government could not be sounde nor holosome for that realme, being soe contrarye to the former. For it was even as two physicians should take one sicke bodye in hand at two sundrye times; of which the former would minister all thinges meete to purge and keepe under the bodye, the other to pamper and strengthen it suddenly agayne, wherof what is to be looked for but a most dangerous relapse? That which we see now through his rule, and the next after him, happened thereunto, being now more dangerously sicke then ever before. Therefore by all meanes it must be forc-seene and assured, that after once entering into this course of reformation, there be afterwarde noe remorse or drawing backe for the

sight of any such ruffall objectes as must therupon followe, nor for compassion of theyr calamities, seeing that by noe other meanes it is possible to recure them, and that these are not of will, but of very urgent necessity.

Eudor. Thus farre then ye have nowe proceeded to plaunte your garrisons, and to directe theyr services; of the which nevertheless I must needes conceive that there cannot be any certayne direction sett downe, soe that they must followe the occasions that shal be dayly offred, and diligently awayted. But, by your leave (*Irenæus*), notwithstanding all this your careful fore-sight and provision, (me thinks) I see an evill lurke unespyed, that may chauce to hazarde all the hope of this great service, yf it be not very well looked into; and that is, the corruptions of theyr captaines: for though they be placed never soe carefully, and theyr companies filled never soe sufficiently, yet may they, yf they list, discharge whom they please, and send away such as will perhaps willingly be ridd of that daungerous and harde service; the which (I wote well) is theyr common custome to doe, when they are layd in garrison, for then they may better hide their defaults, then when they are in campe, where they are continually eyed and noted of all men. Besides, when they pay cometh, they will (as they say) detayne the greatest portions therof at theyr pleasure, by an hundreth shiffts that neede not here to be named, through which they oftentimes deceave the souldiours, abuse the Queene, and greatly hinder the service. Soe that lett the Queene pay never soe fullye, lett the muster-master viewe them never soe diligently, lett the deputyes or generall looke to them never soe exactly, yet they can cossen them all. Therefore (me seemes) it were good, yf it be possible, to make some provision for this inconvenience.

Iren. It will surely be very harde; but the cheifest helpe for prevention herof must be the care of the coronel that hath the government of all his garrison, to have an eye to theyr alteration, to knowe the number and the names of the sickle souldiours, and the slayne, to marke and observe theyr rankes in theyr daylye rising forth to the service, by which he cannot easely be abused, soe that he himself be a man of speciall assurance and integritye. And therefore greate regarde is to be had in the choosing and appoynting of them. Besides, I would not by any meanes that the captaines should have the paying of theyr souldiours, but that there should be a pay-master appoynted, of speciall

trust, which should paye everye man according to his captaines tickett, and the accompts of the clarke of his bande, for by this meanes the captaines will never seeke to falsifye his alterations, nor to diminish his companye, nor to deceave his souldiours, when nothing therof shal be for his gayne. This is the manner of the Spanyardes captaines, whose never hath to meddle with his souldiours paye, and indeede scorneth the name as base to be counted his souldiours pagador; whereas the contrary amongst us hath brought thinges to soe badd a pass, that there is noe captaines, but thinks his band very sufficient, yf he muster threscore, and stickes not to say openly, that he is unworthy of a captainship, that cannot make it worth 500*l.* by the yeare, the which they right well verefye by the prooffe.

Eudor. Truly I thinke this a verye good meane to avoide that inconvenience of captaines abuses. But what say you of the coronel? what authoritye thinke you meete to be given him? whether will ye allowe him to protecte, to safe conducte, and to have marshall lawe as they are accustomed;

Iren. Yea verely, but all these to be limited with verye straight instructions. As thus for protections, that they shall have authoritye after the first proclamation, for the space of twentye dayes, to protect all that shall come in unto them, and them to sende unto the Lord Deputye with theyr safe conducte or pass, to be at his disposition; but soe as none of them returne backe agayne, being once come in, but be presently sent away out of the countrey, unto the next sherriff, and so conveyed in safetye. And likewise for marshall lawe, that to the souldiour it be not extended, but by tryall formerly made of his crime, by a jurye of his fellowe souldiours as it ought to be, and not rashlye at the will or displeasure of the coronel, as I have sometimes seene to lightlye. And as for others of the rebells that shall light into theyr handes, that they be well aware of what condition they be, and what holding they have. For, in the last generall warres there, I knewe many good freeholders executed by marshall lawe, whose landes were thereby saved to theyr heyres, which should otherwise have escheated to her Majestie. In all which, the greate discretion and uprightness of the coronel himself is to be the cheifest stay both for all these doubts, and for many other difficultyes that may in the service happen.

Eudor. Your caution is verye good; but nowe touching the arche-rebell himselfe, I

meane the Earle of Tyrone, if he, in all the time of these warres, should offer to come in and submitt himselfe to her Majestie, would you not have him received, giving good hostages, and sufficient assurance of himselfe?

Iren. Noe, marye; for there is noe doubt, but he will offer to come in, as he hath done diverse times alreadye, but it is without any intent of true submission, as the effect hath well shewed; neither indeede can he nowe, yf he would, come in at all, nor give that assurance of himselfe that should be meete, for being, as he is, very sottell-headed, seeing himselfe nowe soe farre engaged in this bad action, can he thinke that by his submission he can purchase to himselfe any safetie, but that hereafter, when things shal be quieted, these his villanyes will ever be remembered? And whensoever he shall treade awrye (as needes the most righteous must sometimes) advantage will be taken therof, as a breache of his pardon, and he brought to a reckning for all former matters: besides, howe harde it is now for him to frame himselfe to subjection, that having once sett before his eyes the hope of a kingdome, hath thereunto founde not onely encouragement from the greatest King of Christendome, but also founde great fayntness in her Majesties withstanding him, whereby he is animated to thinke that his power is to defende him, and to offend further then he hath done, whensoever he please, lett every reasonable man judge. But yf he himselfe should come in, and leave all other his accomplices without, as O-Donell, Mac-Mahon, Magueerhe, and the rest, he must needes thinke that then, even they will ere long cutt his throte, which having drawn them all into this occasion, nowe in the middest of theyr trouble giveth them the slip; wherby he must needes perceave howe impossible a thing it is for him to submit himselfe. But yet yf he would doe soe, can he give any good assurance of his obedienc? For howe weake hold is there by hostages hath to often bene proved, and that which is spoken of taking Shane O-Neale-is sonnes from him, and setting them up agaynst him is a verye perillous counsell, and not by any meanes to be putt in proofe, for were they lett forth and could overthrow him, whoe should afterwards overthrowe them, or what assurance can be had of them? It wil be like the tale in *Aesope* of the wild horse, whoe, having enmitie agaynst the stagge came to a man to desire his ayde agaynst his foe, whoe yeelding

thereunto mounted upon his backe, and soe following the stagge ere longe slewe him, but then when the horse would have him light he refused, but kept him ever after in his service and subjection. Such, I doubt not, would be the proof of Shane O-Neale-is sonnes. Therefore it is most dangerous, to attempt any such plott; for even that very maner of plott, was the meanes by which this trayterous Earle is nowe made soe great: for whenas the last O-Neale, called Tyrrelaghe O-Neale, beganne to stand upon some tickell termes, this fellowe, then called Baron of Dungannon, was sett up as it were to bearde him, and countenaunced and strengthened by the Quene soe farre, as that he is nowe able to keepe her selfe play: much like unto a gamester that having lost all, borroweth of his next fellow gamester that is the most winner, somewhat to mayntayne play, with which he, setting unto him agayne, shortly thereby winneth all from the winner.

Eudox. Was this rebell first sett up by the Quene (as you saie), and now become soe unductifull?

Iren. He was (I assure you) the most outcast of all the O-Neales then, and lifted up by her Majestie out of the dust, to that he hath nowe wrought himself unto; and nowe he playeth like the frozen snake, whoe being for compassion relieved by the husbandman, soone after he was warme beganne to huss, and threaten danger even to him and his.

Eudox. He surely then deserveth the punishment of that snake, and should woorthely be hewed in peeces. But yf ye like not of the raising up of Shane O-Neale-is sonnes agaynst him, what say you then of that advise which (I heare) was given by some, to drave in the Scottes, to serve agaynst him? howe like you that advise?

Iren. Much worse then the former; for whoe is he that is experienced in those partes and knoweth not that the O-Neales are never allyed unto the Mac-Neales of Scotland, and to the Earle of Argyle, from whom they use to have all theyr succours of those Scotts and Reddshanks? Besides, all these Scotts are, through long continuance, entermyngled and allyed to all the inhabitants of the North; soe as there is noe hope that they will ever be wrought to serve faithfully agaynst theyr old frendes and kinsmen: And yf they would, howe when the warres are finished, and they have overthrowen him shall they themselves be putt out? Doe we not all knowe, that the Scotts were the first inhabitants of all the North, and that those

which are nowe called North Irish were indeede very Scotts, which challenge the auncient inheritaunce and dominion of all that countrey to be theyr owne aunciently. This then were but to leape out of the pain into the fire; for the chieifest caveat and provisoie in the reformation of the Northe must be to keepe out the Scotts.

Eudox. Indee, I remember that in your discourse of the first peopling of Ireland, you shewed that the Scythians or Scottes were the first that sate downe in the Northe, whereby it seemeth they may challenge some right therin. Howe comes it then that O-Neale claymes the dominion therof, and this Earle of Tyrone sayeth the right is in him? I pray you resolve me therin; for it is very needefull to be known, and maketh most to the right of the warre agaynst him, whose success useth commonly to be according to the justness of the cause, for which it is made: For yf Tyrone have any right in that signiorye (me seemes) it should be wrong to thrust him out: or yf (as I remember ye sayd in the beginning) that O-Neale, when he acknowledged the King of England for his liege Lord and Sovereigne, did (as he alleageth) reserve in the same submission all his signiories and rightes unto himselfe, it should be accounted unjust to thrust him out of the same.

Iren. For the right of O-Neale in the signiorye of the Northe, it is sury none at all: For beside that the King of England conquered all the realme, and thereby assumed and invested all the right of that land to themselves and theyr heyres and successors for ever, soe as nothing was left in O-Neale but what he receivede backe from them, O-Neale himselfe never had any auncient signiorye in that countrey, but what by usurpation and enrochement, after the death of the Duke of Clarence, he gott upon the English, whose landes and possessions being formerly wasted by the Scotts, under the leading of Edwarde le Bruce, (as I formerly declared unto you) he eft-sones entred into, and sithence hath wrongfullye detayned, through the other occupations and great affayres which the Kinges of England (soone after) fell into heere at home, soe as they could not intend to the recoverye of that countrey of the Northe, nor the restrayning of the insolencye of O-Neale; whoe, finding none nowe to withstand him, rained in that desolation, and made himselfe Lorde of those fewe people that remayned there, upon whom ever since he hath continued his first

usurped power, and nowe exacteth and extorteth upon all men what he list: soe that nowe to subdue or expell an usurper, should be noe unjust enterprize nor wrongfull warre, but a restitution of auncient right unto the crowne of England, from whence they were most unjustly expelled and longe kept out.

Eudox. I am very gladd herin to be thus satisfiye by you, that I may the better satisfie them whom often I have hearde object these doubtles, and slaundersously to barke at the courses which are held agaynst that trayterous Earle and his adherentes. But nowe that you have thus settled your service for Ulster and Connaughte, I would be gladd to heare your opinion for the prosecuting of Feugh Mac Hughe, whose being but a base villicyn, and of himselfe of noe power, yet soe continually troubleth that state, notwithstanding that he lyeth under theyr nose, that I disdayne his bold arroganeie, and thinke it to be the greatest indignitye to the Queene that may be, to suffer such a castiff to play such *Rex*, and by his example not only to give harte and encouragement to all such bold rebels, but also to yeld them succoure and refuge agaynst her Majesty, whensoever they flye into his Cummerreeighe: wherefore I would first wish, before you enter into your plott of service agaynst him, that you should laye open by what meanes he, being soe base, first lifted himselfe up to this daungerous greatnes, and how he mayntayneth his parte agaynst the Queene and her power, notwithstanding all that hath bene done and attempted agaynst him. And whether also he hath any pretence of right in the landes which he holdeth, or in the warres that he maketh for the same?

Iren. I will soe, at your pleasure, and since ye desire to know his first beginning, I will not only discover the first beginning of his privat howse, but also the originall of all his sept, of the Birnes and Toolles, so farre as I have learn'd the same from some of themselves, and gathered the rest by readinge: This people of the Birnes and Toolles (as before I shewed unto you my conjecture) descended from the auncient Brittons, which first inhabited all those Easterne partes of Ireland, as theyr names doe betoken; for Brin in the Brittons language signifyeth hillye, and Tol hole, valley or darke, which names, it seemeth, they tooke of the countrey which they inhabited, which is all very mountayne and woodye. In the which it seemeth that ever sithence the coming in of the English with Deurmuide-ne-Galh, they

have continued: Whether that theyr countrey being soe rude and mountaynous was of them dispised, and thought not woorthlye the inhabiting, or that they were receaved to grace by them, and suffred to enjoye theyr lands as unfit for any other, yet it seemeth that in some places of the same they did putt foote, and fortified with sundrye castells, of which the ruynes onely doe there now remayne, since which time they are growen to that strength, that they are able to lift up hand agaynst all that state; and nowe lately, through the boldness and late good success of this Feugh Mac Hugh, they are soe farr emboldened, that they threaten perill even to Dublin, over whose necke they continually hange. But touching your demande of this Feughe is right unto that countrey or the seigniorie which he claymes therein, it is most vayne and arrogante. For this ye cannot be ignoraunte of, that it was parte of that which was given in inheritance by Deurmuid Mac Murrogh, King of Leinster, to Strangbowe with his daughter, and which Strangbowe gave over to the King and to his heyres, soe as the right is absolutely nowe in her Majestie; and yf it were not, yet could it not be in this Feugh, but in O-Brin, which is the ancient lord of all that countrey; for he and his auncestours were but followers unto O-Brin, and his grandfather, Shane Mac Tirrelaghe, was a man of meaneest regarde amongst them, neither having wealth nor power. But his sonne Hughe Mac Shane, the father of this Feughe, first beganne to lift up his head, and through the strength and greates fastness of Glan-Maleirih, which adjoyneth unto his howse of Ballinecorrih, drew unto him many theves and out-lawes, which fledd unto the succour of that glinne, as to a saunetuarie and brought unto him parte of the spoyle of all the countrey, through which he grewe stronge, and in shorte space got to himselfe a greates name thereby amongst the Irish, in whose footing this his sonne continuing hath, through many unhappy occasions, increased his said name, and the opinion of his greatness, soe that nowe he is become a dangerous enemy to deale withall.

Eudox. Surely I can commend him that, being of himselfe of soe base condition, hath through his owne hardiness lifted himselfe up to that height that he dare now to fronte princes, and make termes with greates potentates; the which as it is honorable to him, soe it is to them most disgracefull, to be bearded of such a base varlett, that being but of late growen out of the doughtill

beginneth nowe to overcroe soe high mountaynes, and make himselfe greates protectour of all outlawes and rebells that will repayre unto him. But doe you thinke he is nowe soe daungerous an enemye as he is counted, or that it is soe harde to take him downe as some suppose?

Iren. Noe verely, there is noe great reckning to be made of him; for had he ever bene taken in hand, when the rest of the realme (or at least the partes adjoyning) had bene quiett, as the honourable gentellman that nowe governeth there (I meane Sir William Russell) gave a notable attempte therunto, and had woorthly performed it, yf his course had not bene crossed unhappely, he could not have stooode three monthes, nor ever have looked up agaynst a verie meane power: but nowe all the partes about him being up in a madding moode, as the Moores in Lense, the Kevenaghs in the countrey of Wexforde, and some of the Butlers in the countrey of Kilkenny, they all flocke unto him, and drawe unto his countrey, as to a strong hold where they thinke to be safe from all that prosecute them: And from thence they doe at theyr pleasures breake out into all the borders adjoyning, which are well peopled countreyes, as the countyes of Dublin, of Kildare, of Catarlaghe, of Kilkenny, of Wexforde, with the spoiles wherof they vittell and strengthen themselves, which otherwise should in shorte time be starved, and soone pined away; soe that what he is of himselfe you may hereby soone perceave.

Eudox. Then, by soe much as I gather out of your speaches, the next way to end the warres with him, and to roote him quite out, should be to keepe him from invading those countreyes adjoyning, which (as I suppose) is to be done, either by drawing all the inhabitants of those next borders away, and leaving them utterly wast, or by planting garrisons upon all those frontiers about him; that, when he shall breake forth, may sett upon him and shorten his returne.

Iren. Ye conceive rightlye, Eudoxus, but for the dispeopling and driving away of all the inhabitants from the countreys about him, which ye speake of, should be a great confusion and trouble, as well for the unwillingness of them to leave theyr possessions, as also for placing and providing for them in other countreyes, (me seemes) the better course should be by plaunting of garrisons about him, the which, whensoever he shall looke forth, or be drawn out with desire of the spoyle of those borders, or for neces-

sitye of vittell, shal be allwayes readye to intercept his going or coming.

Eudox. Where then doe ye wish these garrisons to be plaunted that they may serve best agaynst him; and howe manye in everye garrison?

Iren. I my selfe, by reason that (as I told you) I am noe martiall man, will not take uppon me to directe so dangerous affayres, but onely as I understood by the purposes and plotts, which the Lord Griffe who was well experienced in that service, agaynst him did laye downe: to the perform-ance whereof he onely required a 1000 men to be layed in fowre garrisons; that is, at Ballinacorrih 200 footemen and 50 horse, which should shutt him out of his great glinne, whereto he soe much trusteth; at Knockelough 200 footemen and 50 horse, to answere the countye of Catarlaghe; at Arkloe or Wickloe 200 footemen to defend all that side towards the sea; in Shellelagh 100 footemen which should cutt him from the Kevanaghs, and the countye of Wexford; and about the three castells 50 horsemen, which should defende all the countye of Dublin; and 100 footemen at Talbotts Towne, which should keepe him from breaking out into the countye of Kildare, and be allwayes on his necke on that side: The which garrisons, soe layed, will soe busye him, that he shall never rest at home, nor stirre foorthe abrode but he shall be had; as for his creete they cannot be above grounde, but they must needs fall into theyr handes or starve, for he hath noe fastness nor refuge for them. And as for his partakers of the Moores, Butlers, and Kevanaghs, they will soone leave him, when they see his fastness and strong places thus taken from him.

Eudox. Surely this seemeth a plott of great reason, and small difficultye which promiseth hope of a shorte end. But what speciall directions will ye sett downe for the services and risings out of these garrisons?

Iren. None other then the present occasions shall minister unto them, and as by good spialls, wherof there they cannot wante store, they shall be drawn continually upon him, soe as one of them shal be still upon him, and sometimes all at one instant bayte him. And this (I assure my selfe) will demaunde no longe time, but will be all finished in the space of one yeare; which howe small a thing it is, unto the eternall quietness which shall thereby be purchased to that realme, and the great good which shall growe to her Majestie, should (me

thinkes) readly drawe on her Highnes to the undertaking of the enterprise.

Eudox. You have very well (me seemes), Irenæus, plotted a course for the achieving of those warres now in Ireland, which seeme to aske noe long time, nor greate charge, soe as the effecting thereof be committed to men of sure trust, and some experience, as well in the same countrey as in the manner of those services; for yf it be left in the handes of such rawe captaynes as are usuallye sent out of England, being therto preferred onely by frendship, and not chosen by sufficiencye, it will soone fall to ground.

Iren. Therefore it were meete (me thinkes) that such captaynes onely were thereunto employed, as have formerly served in that countrey, and bene at least lieutenantes unto other captaynes there. For otherwise, being brought and transferred from other services abroad, as in Fraunce, in Spayne, and in the Lowe-countries, though they be of good experience in those, and have never soe well deserved, yet in these they will be newe to seeke, and before they have gathered experience, they shall buye it with great loss to her Majestic, either by hazarding of theyr companies, through ignorance of the places, and manner of the Irish services, or by loosing a great parte of the time that is required hereunto, being but shorte, in which it might be finished, before they have almost taken out a newe lesson, or can tell what is to be done.

Eudox. You are noe good frend to newe captaynes it seemes, Iren., that you barre them from the credit of this service: but (to say trueth) me thinkes it were meete, that any one, before he come to be a captayne, should have bene a souldiour; for, 'Parere qui nescit, nescit imperare.' And besides, there is great wrong done to the old souldiour, from whom all meanes of advancement which is due unto him is cutt off by shuffling in these newe cutting captaynes into the places for which he hath long served, and perhaps better deserved. But nowe that you have thus (as I suppose) finished all the warre, and brought all thinges to that lowe ebbe which ye speake of, what course will ye take for the bringing in of that reformation which ye intend, and recovering all thinges from this desolate estate, in which (me thinkes) I beheld them nowe left, unto that perfect establishment and newe common-wealth which ye have conceived, of which soe great good may redounde to her Majestic, and an assured peace be confirmed? For that

is it whereunto we are nowe to looke, and doe greatlye long for, being long sithence made wearye with the huge charge which ye have layed upon us, and with the strong endurance of soe many complayntes, soe manye delayes, soe many doubts and daungers, as will hereof (I know well) arise : unto the which before you come, it were meete (me thinkes) that you should take some order for the souldiour, which is nowe first to be discharged and disposed of, some way; the which yf you doe not well fore-see, may growe to be as great an inconvenience as all this that we suppose you have quitt us from, by the loose leaving of soe many thousand souldiours, which from hence forth will be unfit for any labour or other trade, but must either seeke service and employment abroad, which may be daungorous, or els will perhaps employe themselves here at home, as may be discomodious.

Iren. You say verie true; and it is a thing indeede much misliked in this our common-wealth that noe better course is taken for such as have bene employed once in service, but that retuning, either maymed and soe unable to labour, or otherwise, though whole and sounde, yet afterwards unwilling to worke, or rather willing to sett the hangman a worke. But that needeth another consideration; but to this that we have nowe in hande, it is farre from my meaning to leave the souldiour soe at random, or to leave that wast realme soe weak and destitute of strength, which may both defend it agaynst others that might seeke then to sett upon it, and also kepe it from that relapse which I before did fore-cast. For it is one speciall good of this plott which I would devise, that 6000 souldiours of these whom I have nowe employed in this service, and made thoroughly acquainted both with the state of the country, and manners of the people, should henceforth be still continued, and for ever mayntayned of the country, without any charge to her Majestic; and the rest that either are old, and unable to serve any longer, or willing to fall to thirfe, as I have seene manye souldiours after the service to prove verie good husbandes, should be placed in parte of the landes by them wonne, at such rate, or rather better then others, to whom the same shal be sett out.

Eudox. Is it possible, Irenæus? Can there be any such meares devised, that soe manye men should be kept still in her Majesties service without any charge to her at all? Surely this were an exceeding greate good,

both to her Highnes to have soe manye old souldiours allway readye at call, to what purpose soever she list employe them, and alsoe to have that land thereby soe strengthened, that it shall neither feare any forein invasion, nor practize, which the Irish shall ever attempte, but shall keepe them under in continuall awe and firme obedience.

Iren. It is soe indeede. And yet this trulye I doe not take to be any matter of great difficultye, as I thinke it will also soone appeare unto you. Afid first we will speake of the North parte, for that the same is of most waight and importance. Soe soone as it shall appeare that the enemye is brought downe, and the stout rebell either cutt of, or driven to that wretchedness that he is noe longer able to hold up his head, but will come to any condicions, which I assure my selfe will be before the end of the second Winter, I wish that there be a generall proclamation made, that whatsoever out-lawes will freelye come in, and submit themselves to her Majesties mercye, shall have libertye soe to doe, where they shall either find that grace they desire, or have leave to returne agayne in safetye: upon which it is liklye that soe manye as survive will come in to sue for grace, of which whosoever are thought meete for subjection, and fitt to be brought to good, may be received, or els all of them, (for I thinke that all wilbe but a verve fewe;) upon contencion and assurance that they will submit themselves absolute to her Majesties ordinance for them, by which they shal be assured of life and libertye, and be onelye tyed to such condicions as shal be thought by her meete for contayning them ever after in due obedience. To the which condicions I nothing doubt but they will all most redelye, and upon theyr knees submit themselves, by the proof of that which I sawe in Mounster. For upon the like proclamation there, they all came in, both tagge and ragge; and when as afterwarde many of them were denyed to be received, they bade them doe with them what they would, for they would not by any meanes returne agayne, nor goe forth. For in this case who will not accept almost of any condicions, rather then dye of hunger and miserie?

Eudox. It is very liklye soe. But what then is the ordinance, and what be the condicions which you will propose unto them, which shall reserve unto them an assurance of life and libertye?

Iren. Soe soone then as they have given the best assurance of themselves which

may be required, which must be (I suppose) some of theyr principall men to remayne in hostage one for another, and some other for the rest, for other suretye I reckon of none that may binde them, neither of wife, nor of children, since then perhaps they would gladly be ridd of both from the famine; I would have them first unarmed utterly and stript quite of all theyr warlike weapons, and then these condicions sett downe and made known unto them, where they shal be placed, and have land given unto them to occupye and to live upon, in such sorte as shall become good subjectes, to labour thenceforth for theyr living, and to apply themselves to honest trades of civilitye as they shall every one be founde meete and able for.

Eudor. Where then, a Gods name, will you place them? In Leynster? or will you find out any new lande there for them that is yet unknowne? •

Iren. Noe, I will place them all in the countrey of the Brinnes and Toolles, which Pheugh Mac Hugh bath, and in all the landes of the Kevanaghs, which are nowe in rebellion, and all the landes which will fall to her Majestie thereabouts, which I knowe to be very spacious and large enough to contayne them, being very neere twentye or thirtye miles wyde.

Eudor. But what then will ye doe with all the Brinnes there, the Toolles, and the Kevanaghs, and all those that nowe are joynd with them?

Iren. At the same very time, and in the same manner that I make that proclamation to them of Ulster, will I have it also made to these; and upon theyr submission thereunto, I will take like assurance of them as of others. After which I will translate all that remayne of them into the places of thother in Ulster, with all theyr creete, and what else they have left them, the which I will cause to be divided amongst them in some meete sorte, as eche may thereby have somewhat to sustayne himself a while without, untill, by his further travell and labour of the earth, he shalbe able to provide himselfe better.

Eudor. But will you then give the lande freely unto them, and make them heyres of the former rebells? soe may you perhaps make them heyres also of all theyr former villanies and disorders; or howe els will you dispose of them?

Iren. Not soe; but all the landes I will give unto Englishmen whom I will have

drawn thither, who shall have the same with such estates as shal be thought meete, and for such rentes as shall esteemes be rated: under everye of these Englishmen will I place some of the Irish to be tenants for a certayne rente, according to the quantity of such land, as everye man shall have allotted unto him, and shalbe founde able to weelde, wherein this speciall regarde shal be had, that in noe place under any land-lorde there shall remayne maner of them planted together, but dispersed wide from theyre acquaintance, and scattered farre abroad through all the countrey: For that is the evill which I nowe finde in all Ireland, that the Irish dwell together by theyr septs, and severall nations, soe as they may practice or conspire what they will; whereas yf there were English shedd amongst them and placed over them, they should not be able once to styrie or murmur, but that it shoulde be known, and they shortened according to theyr demerites.

Eudor. Ye have good reason; but what rating of rents meane you? To what end doe you purpose the same?

Iren. My purpose is to rate the rents of all those landes of her Majestie in such sorte, unto those Englishmen which shall take them, as they may be well able to live thereupon, to yeld her Majestie reasonable cheverye, and also give a competent maintenance unto the garrisons, which shall be there left amongst them; for these souldiours (as I told you) remainyng of the former garrisons I cast to be maintayned upon the rente of those landes which shal be escheated, and to have them divided through all Ireland in such places as shalbe thought most convenient, and occasion may require. And this was the course which the Romans used in the conquest of England, for they planted some of theyr legions in all places convenient, the which they caused the countrey to maintayne, cutting upon everye portion of lande a reasonable rent, which they called *Romescott*, the which might not surcharge the tenant or free-holder, and defrayed the pay of the garrison: and this hath bene allwayes observed of all princes in all countreyes to them newly subdued, to sett garrisons amongst them to contayne them in dutye, whose burthen they made them to beare; and the wante of this ordinance, in the first conquest of Ireland by Henry the Second, was the cause of the shorte decaye of that government, and the quicke recoverye agayne of the Irish. Ther-

fore by all meanes it is to be provided for. And this is it that I would blame, yf it should not misbecome me, in the late planting of Mounster, that noe care was had of this ordinance, nor any strength of a garrison provided for, by a certayne allowance out of all the sayd landes, but onely the present profit looked unto, and the safe continuance thereof for ever hereafter neglected.

Eudox. But there is a bande of souldiours layed in Mounster, to the maintenance of which, what oddes is there whether the Queene, receaving the rent of the countrey, doe give paye at her pleasure, or that there be a settled allowance appoynted unto them out of her landes there?

Iren. There is a great oddes, for nowe that sayd rente of the countrey is not usuallie applied to the paye of the souldiours, but it is (everie other occasion coming betwene) converted to other uses, and the souldiours in time of peace discharged and neglected as unnecessary; whereas yf the sayde rente were appoynted and ordayned by an establishment to this ende onely, it should not be turned to any other; nor in troublesome times, uppon everie occasion, her Majestie be soe troubled with sending over newe souldiours as she nowe is, nor the countrey ever should dare to mutinie, having still the souldiours on theyr necke, nor any forreyn enemye dare to invade, knowing there soe stronge and great a garrison allwayes ready to receive them.

Eudox. Sith then ye thinke that this Romescott of the paye of the souldiours uppon the lande to be both the readiest way to the souldiours, and least troublesome to her Majestie, tell us (I pray you) how ye would have the sayd landes rated, that both a rente may rise thereout unto the Queene, and also the souldiours paye, which (me seemes) wilbe hardie?

Iren. First we are to consider how much lande there is in all Ulster, that according to the quantitie therof we may cesse the sayd rente and allowance issuing therout. Ulster (as the ancient recordes of that realme doe testifye) doth contayne nine thousand plow-landes, everie of which plow-landes containeth six score acres, after the rate of 21 foote to every perche of the sayd acre, which amounteth in the whole to 124000 acres, everie of which plow-landes I will rate at 46s. 8d. by the yeare; which is not much more then 1¹/₂d. an acre, the which yearly rent amounteth in the whole to 18000^l. besides 6s. 8d. chieffie out of every plow-land. But because

the countie of Louthe. being a parte of Ulster, and contayning in it 712 plow-landes, is not wholye to escheate unto her Majestie as the rest, they having in all those warres continued for the most parte dutifull, though otherwise nowe a greate parte thereof is under the rebels, there is an abatement to be made therout of 400 or 500 plow-landes, as I estimate the same, the which are not to pay the whole yearly rent of 46s. 8d. out of everie plow-land, like as the escheated landes doe, but yet shall paye for theyr composition of cesse towards the maintenance of souldiours 20s. out of everie plow-land: soe as there is to be deducted out of the former summe 200 or 300^l. yearly, the which nevertheless may be supplied by the rent of the fishing, which is exceeding greete in Ulster, and also by an increase of rente in the best landes, and those that lye in the best places neere the sea-cost. The which 18000^l. will defraye the intertaynement of 1500 souldiours, with some overplus toward the paye of the vittaylers which are to be employed in the vittayling of the garrisons?

Eudox. Soe then, belike you meane to leave 1500 souldiours in garrison for Ulster, to be payed principally out of the rent of those landes which shal be there escheated to her Majestie; the which, where (I praye you) will you have garrizoned?

Iren. I will have them divided into three partes; that is, 500 in every garrison, the which I will have to remayne in three of the same places where they were before appoynted; to wecte, 500 at Strabane and about Logh-foyle, soe as they may holde all the passages of that parte of the countrey, and some of them be put in wardes, upon all the straites thereabouts, which I knowe to be such, as may stopp all passages into the countrey on that side, and some of them also upon the Ban, up towards Logh-Sidney, as I formerly directed. Also other 500 at the forte upon Logh-Earne, and wardes taken out of them which shal be layed at Fermanagh, at Belicke, at Ballishannon, and on all the straites towards Conaughte, the which I knowe doe so stronglie command all the passages that waie as that none can passe from Ulster into Conaught, without their leave. The last 500 shall also remayne in theyr forte at Monaghane, and some of them be drawn into wardes, to keepe the keies of all that countrey, both downewardes, and also towards O-Relyes countrey, and the pale; and some at Eniskillin, some at Belturbet, some at the Blacke Forte, and soe alonge that river, as I

formerly shewed in the first planting of them. And moreover at every of those fortes I would have the state of a towne layed forth and encompassed, in the which I would wish that there should be placed inhabitantes of all sortes, as marchauntes, artificers, and husbandmen, to whom there should be charters and franchises graunted to incorporate them. The which, as it will be no matter of difficultye to drawe out of England persons which should very gladly be soe placed, soe would it in shorte space turne those partes to greate comoditye, and bring ere longe to her Majestie much profit: for those places are soe fitt for trade and trafficke, having most convenient out-gates by diverse rivers to the sea, and in-gates to the richest partes of the lande, that they would soone be enriched, and mightely enlarged, for the verye seating of the garrisons by them: besides, the safetye and assurance that they shall worke unto them will alsoe drawe thither store of people and trade, as I have scene examples at Mari-borough and Phillipstowne in Leynster, where by reason of these two fortes, though there were but small wardes left in them, there are two good townes nowegrown, which are the greatest staye of both those two countyes.

Eudox. Indee (me seemes) three such townes, as you say, would doe verye well in those places with the garrisons, and in shorte space would be soe augmented, as they would be able with litle helpe to wall themselves strongly: but, for the planting of all the rest of the countrey, what order would ye take?

Iren. What other then (as I sayd) to bring people out of England, which should inhabit the same; whereunto though, I doubt not, but greate troups would be readye to runne, yet for that in such cases, the worst and most decayed men are most readye to remove, I would wish them rather to be chosen out of all partes of the realme, either by disposition of wise men thereunto appoynted, or by lott, or by the drumme, as was the old use in sending forth of colonies, or such other good meanes as shall in theyr wisdome be thought meetest. Amongest the chiefest of which I would have the lande sett into seigniories, in such sorte as it is nowe in Mounster, and divided into hundreds and parishes, or wardes, as it is in England, and layed out into shires as it was auniently; viz. the countye of Downe, the countye of Antrim, the countye of Louth, the countye of Armagh, the countye of Cavan, the

countye of Colrane, the countye of Monahan, the countye of Tyrone, the countye of Fermanagh, the countye of Donnegall, being in all tenne. Over all which Irish I wish a Lord President and a Counsell to be placed, which may keepe them afterwarde in awe and obedience, and minister unto them justice and equitye.

Eudox. Thus I see the whole purpose of your plot for Ulster, and nowe I desire to heare your like opinion for Conaughte.

Iren. By that which I have already sayd of Ulster you may gather my opinion for Conaughte, being verye answerable unto the former. But for that the landes, which therein shall escheate unto her Majestie, are not soe intierly together as that they can be accounted in one somme, it needeth that they be considered severallye. The province of Conaughte containeth in the whole (as appeareth by the Records of Dublin) 7200 plow-landes of the former measure, and is of late divided into six shires or countyes: the countye of Clare, the countye of Lenthur, the countye of Roscomman, the countye of Gallowaye, the countye of Maiho, and the countye of Sleugho. Of the which, all the countye of Sleugho, all the countye of Maiho, the most parte of the countye of Roscomman, the most parte of the countye of Lenthur, a greate parte of the countye of Galloway, and some of the countye of Clare, is like to escheate unto her Majestie for the rebellion of theyr present possessours. The which two countyes of Sleugho and Maiho are supposed to containe almost 3000 plow-landes, the rente wherof, ratable to the former, I vallowe almost at 6000*l. per annum*. The countye of Roscomman, saving what pertaineth to the howse of Roscomman and some fewe other English there lately seated, is all one, and therefore it is wholly likewise to escheate to her Majestie, saving those portions of English inhabitants; and even those English doe (as I understand by them) paye as much rente to her Majestie as is sett upon those in Ulster, counting theyr composition monye therewithall, soe, as it may runne all into one reckning with the former two countyes: Soe that this countye of Roscomman, containing 1200 plow-landes, as it is accounted, amounteth to 2400*l.* by the year, which with that former two countyes rente maketh about 8300*l.* for the former wanted somewhat. But what the escheated landes of the countyes of Galloway and Lenthur will arise unto is yet uncertayne to define, till survey thereof be made, for that those landes are intermingled

with the Earle of Clanrickarde, and others; but it is thought they be the one half of both these countyes, soe as they may be counted to the valewe of one whole countye, which containeth above one thousand plowlandes; for soe manye the least countye of them all comprehendeth, which maketh two thousand poundes more, that is, in all, 10 or 11000*l*. Thother two countyes must remayne till theyr escheates appeare, the which letting pass, yet as unknown, yet thus much is knowne to be accounted for certayne, that the composition of these two countyes, being rated at 20*s*. every plow-land, will amounte to above 2000*l*. more: all which being layed together to the former, may be reasonably estimated to rise unto 13000*l*. the which somme, together with the rente of the escheated landes in the two last countyes, which cannot yet be valewed, being, (as I doubt not,) no less then a 1000*l*. more, will yeeld a pay largely unto a thousand men and theyr victuallers, and a thousand poundes over towards the Governour.

Eudox. Ye have (me thinkes) made but an estimate of the landes of Conaughte even at a very eventure, soe as it should be harde to builde any certaintye of charge to be rayseed upon the same.

Iren. Not altogether upon uncertaintyes; for thus much may easely appeare unto you for certayne, as the composition mov^r of every plowland amounteth unto; for this I would have you principally to understand, that my purpose is to rate all the landes in Ireland at 20*s*. every plowland, for theyr composition toward the garrison. The which I knowe, in regarde of being freed from all other charges whatso^{ev}r, wil be readely and most gladly yeelded unto. So that there being in all Ireland (as appeareth by theyr old records) 43920 plowlandes, the same shall amounte to the sum likewise of 43920*l*., and the rest to be reared of the escheated landes which fall to her Majestie in the sayd provinces of Ulster, Conaughte, and that parte of Leinster under the rebells; for Mounster we deale not yet withall.

Eudox. But tell me this, by the way, doe you then lay composition upon the escheated landes as you doe upon the rest? for soe (me thinkes) you reckon altogether. And that sure were to much to pay seaven nobles out of every plow-land, and composition many besides, that is 20*s*. out of every plow-land.

Iren. No, you mistake me: I doe put only seaven nobles rent and composition both upon every plow-land escheated. that is 40*s*. for

composition, and 6*s*. 8*d*. for cheiferie to her Majestie.

Eudox. I doe now conceive you; proceede then (I pray you) to the appoynting of your garrisons in Conaughte, and shewe us both how many and where you would have them placed.

Iren. I would have one thousand layd in Conaughte in two garrisons; namely, 500 in the countye of Maiho, about Clan Mac Costars, which shall keepe the Moores and the Burkes of Mac William Enter: thother 500. in the countye of Clanrickarde, about Garandoughe, that they may containe the Conhors and the Burkes there, the Kellyes and Mack-nyrre, with all them thereabout; for that garrison which I formerly placed at Lough-keane will serve for all occasions in the countye of Sleghe, being neere adjoining thereto, soe as in one nights marche they may be almost in any place therof when neede shall require them. And like as in the former places of garrisons in Ulster. I wished thre corporate townes to be planted, which under the safeguarde of that strength shall dwell and trade safely with all the countrey about them, soe would I also wish to be in this of Conaughte; and that besides, there were another established at Athlone, with a convenient wardle in the castell there for theyr defence.

Eudox. What should that neede, sith the Governour of Conaughte useth to lye there allwayes, whose presence wil be a defence to all that towne-ship?

Iren. I knowe he doth soe, but that is much to be disliked that the Governour should lye soe farr off, in the remotest place of all the province, whereas it were meetier that he should be continually abiding in the midst of his charge, that he might both looke out alike into all places of his government; and also be soone at hand in any place, where occasion shall demaunde him; for the presence of the Governour is (as you say) a great stay and bridle unto them that are ill disposed: like as I see it is well observed in Mounster, where the daylye good therof is continually apparant: and, for this cause also doe I greatly dislike the Lord Deputyes seating at Dublin, being the outest corner in the realme, and least needing the awe of his presence; whereas (me seemes) it were fitter, since his proper care is of Leinster, though he hath care of all besides generally, that he should seate himselfe about Athie, or thereabouts, upon the skirte of that unquiett countrey, so that he might sitt, as it were, at the very mayne mast of his shipp, whence he

might easily over looke and sometimes over-reache the Moores, the Butlers, the Dempseys, the Keatins, the Connors, O-Carrell, O-Molloy, and all that heape of Irish nations which there lye huddled together without any to over-rule them, or contayne them in dutye. For the Irishman (I assure you) feares the Government no longer then he is withun sight or reache.

Eudox. Surely (me thinkes) herein you observe a matter of much importance, more then I have hearde ever noted; but sure that seemes soe expedient, as that I wonder it hath bene heerebefore ever omitted; but I suppose the instance of the citizens of Dublin is the greatest lett therof.

Iren. Truly, then it ought not to be soe; for noe cause have they to feare that it wil be any hindraunce for them; for Dublin wil be still, as it is, the key of all passages and transportations out of England further, to noe less profit of those citizens then it nowe is, and beside other places will thereby receive some benefit. But lett us nowe (I pray you) come to Leinster, in the which I would wish the same course to be observed as in Ulster.

Eudox. You meane for the leaving of the garrisons in theyr fortes, and for planting of English in all those countreyes betwene the countye of Dublin and the countye of Wexford; but those wast wilde places, I thinke, when they are wonne unto her Majestie, that there is none that wil be hasty to seeke to inhabite them.

Iren. Yes enough, (I warraunte you;) for though the whole tracke of the countrey be mountayne and woodye, yet there are many goodly valleyes amongst them, fitt for fayre habitations, to which those mountayns adjoyning will be a greate increase of pasturage; for that countrey is a very greate soyle of entell, and verie fitt for breede: as for corne it is nothing naturall, save onely for barley and otes, and some places for rye, and therefore the larger penurivorthes may be allowed unto them, though otherwise the wildness of the mountayne pasturage doe recompence the badness of the soyle, so as I doubt not but it will fynde inhabitants and undertakers enoughe.

Eudox. Howe much then doe you thinke that all those landes which Feugh Mac Flughe holdeth under him may amounte unto, and what rent may be reared therout to the mayntenance of the garrisons that shal be layed there?

Iren. Truly, it is impossible by ayme to tell it, and as for experience and knowledge

thereof I doe not thinke that there was every any of the particulars therof, but yet I will (yf it please you) gesse therat, upon gronde onely of theyr judgement which have formerly divided all that countrey into two shires or countyes, namely the countye of Wicklow, and the countye of Fearnies: the which two I see noe cause but that they should wholy escheate unto her Majestie, all but the barronye of Arckloe which is the Earle of Ormond-is auncient inheritance, and hath ever bene in his possession; for all the whole lande is the Queenes, unless there be some graunte of any parte therof to be shewed from her Majestie: as I thinke there is onely of New-castell to Sir Henry Harrington, and of the castell of Fearnies to Sir Thomas Masterson, the rest, being allmo' thirtye miles over, I doe suppose can contayne noe less then two thousand plowlandes, which I will estimate at 4000*l.* by the yeare. The rest of Leinster, being seven countyes, to witt, the countye of Dublin, Kildare, Katarlaghe, Wexford, Kilkenny, the King and Queenes countyes, doe contayne in them 7100 plowlandes, which amounteth to see many poundes for composition to the garrison, that makes in the whole 11,400 poundes, the which somme will yeelde paye unto a thousand souldiours, litle wanting, which may be supplied out of other landes of the Kavanaghes, which are to be escheated unto her Majestie for the rebellion of theyr possessours, though otherwise indeede they be of her Majesties owne auncient demeaner.

Eudox. It is greate reason. But tell us nowe where would you wishe those garrisons to be layed, whether altogether, or to be dispersed in sundrye places of the countrey?

Iren. Marye, in sundrye places, to witt, in this sorte, or much like as may be better devised, for 200 in a place I doe thinke to be enoughe for the safeguard of the countrey, and keeping under all suddayne upstartes, that shall seeke to trouble the peace therof: therefore I wish to be layed at Ballinacorrih, for the keeping of all badl parsons from Glanmalour, and all the fastness there-aboutes, and also to contayne all that shal be planted in those landes thencefoorth. 200. Another 200 at Knocklough in theyre former place of garrison, to keepe the Briskelagh and all those mountaynes of the Kavanagh; 200 more to lie at Fearnies, and upwardes, inward upon the Slane; 200 to be placed at the forte of Lease, to restrayne the Moores, Ossorve, and O-Carrell; other 200 at the forte of O'falye, to courbe the O-Connors, O-Moloys, Mac

Coghlane, Maccagehan, and all those Irish nations bordering thereabouts.

Eudox. Thus I see all your thousand men bestowed in Leinster: what say you then of Meathe? Which is the first parte?

Iren. Meathe, which containeth both East Meath and West Meath, and of late the Aflalie nowe called the countye of Loongforde, is accompted therunto: But Meath it selfe, according to the old recordes, containeth 4320 plowlandes, and the countye of Longforde 947, which in the whole make 5267 plowlandes, of which the composition monye will amounte likewise to five thousand, two hundred, threescore and seaven poundes to the mayntenance of the garrison. But because all Meathe, lying in the bosome of that kingdome, is allwayes quiett enough, it is needless to put any garrison there, soe as all that charge may be spared. But in the countye of Longforde I wish 200 footemen and fifty horsemen to be placed in some convenient seate betwene the Analie and the Brenie, as about Lough Sillon, or some like place of that river, soe as they mighte keepe both the O-Relyes, and also the O-Farrels, and all that out-skirte of Meathe in awe; the which use upon every light occasion to be stirring, and, having continuall enmitie amongst themselves, doe thereby oftentimes trouble all those partes, the charge wherof being 3400 and odd poundes is to be cutt out of that composition monye for Meath and Longforde, the over-plus, being almost 2000*l.* by the year, will come in clearly to her Majestie.

Eudox. It is woorth the harkening unto. But nowe that you have done with Meath, proceede (I pray you) with Mounster, that we may see howe it will rise there for the mayntenance of the garrison.

Iren. Mounster containeth by recorde at Dublin 16000 plow-landes, the composition wherof, at the least, will make 16000*l.* by the year, out of the which I would have a thousand souldiours to be mayntayned for the defence of that province, the charge of which with the vittaylers wages, will amounte to 12000*l.* by the year; the other 4000*l.* will defraye the charges of the President, and the Counsell of that province.

Eudox. The reckning is easye; but in this accompte, by your leave, (me thinkes) you are deceived. for in this somme of the composition monye ye counte the landes of the undertakers of that province, whoe are, by their graunte from the Queene, to be free from all such impositious whatsoever, ex-

cepting they onelye rent, which is surelye enough.

Iren. Ye say true, I did soe; but the same 20*s.* for every plowland I ment to have deducted out of that rent due upon them to her Majestie, which is noe hinderance, nor charge at all more to her Majestie than it nowe is, for all that rent which she receaves of them, she putteth forth the agayne to the mayntenance of the Presidencie there, the charge wherof it doth scarcely defraye; whereas in this accompte both that charge of the Presidencie, and also of 1000 souldiours more, shal be mayntayned.

Eudox. It should be well, if it could be brought to that. But nowe where will you have your thousand men garrisoned?

Iren. I would have 100 of them placed at the Baintree where is a most fitt place, not onely to defend all that side of the west parte from forrayne invasion, but also to answer all occasions of troubles, to which that countrey, being soe remote, is very subject. And surely heere also would be planted a good towne, having both a verie good haven and plentiful fishing, and the lande being all-readye escheated to her Majestie, but forcibly kepte from her by a ragtaylor kerne that proclaymeth himselfe the bastard sonne of the Earle of Clancare, being called Donel Mac Cartye, whom it is meete to fore-see to cutt off; for whensoever the Earle shall dye, all those landes after him are to come unto her Majestie: he is like to make a fowle stirre there, though of himselfe of noe power, yet through supportaunce of some others whoe lye in the winde, and looke after the fall of that inheritance. Another 100 would I have placed at Castell-Mayne, which should keepe all Desmonde and Kerye, for it answereth them both most conveniently: Also about Kilmore in the countye of Corcke would I have placed 200, the which should breake that nest of theeves there, and awnswere equalle both to the countie of Lymrick, and also the countie of Corcke: Another hundred would I have lye at Corcke, as well to comaunde the towne, as also to be readye for any forreyne occasion: Likewise at Waterford, would I place 200, for the same reasons, and also for other privye causes, that are noe less important. Moreover on this side of Arlo, neere to Moscrie Whirke, which is the countrey of the Bourkes, about Kill-Patrick, I would have 200 more to be garrisoned, which should scoure both the White Knights countrey and Arlo, and Moscrie Whirke, by which places all the

passages of thieves doe lye, which conveye theyre stealthes from all Mounster downewardest towards Tippararye, and the English Pale, and from the English Pale also up unto Mounster, wherof they use to make a common trade. Besides that, ere long I doubt that the countye of Tippararye it selfe will neede such a strength in it, which were good to be there readye before the evill fall, that is daylye of some expected: And thus you see all your garrisons placed.

Eudox. I see it right well, but lett me (I pray you) by the way aske you the reason whye in those cittyes of Mounster, namely Waterford and Corcke, ye rather placed garisons then in all thothers in Ireland? For they may thinke themselves to have great wronge to be soe charged above all the rest.

Iren. I will tell you: those two cittyes, above all the rest, doe offer an in-gate to the Spanyards most lye, and also the inhabitants of them are most ill affected to the English government and most frendes to the Spanyardes; but yet, because they shall not take exceptions to this that they are charged above all the rest, I will also laye a charge upon the others likewise; for indeede it is noe reason that the corporat townes, enjoying greate franchises and privileges from her Majestie, and living thereby not onely safe, but drawing to them the wealth of all the lande, should live soe free as not to be partakers of the burthen of this garrison for their owne safetye, specially in this time of trouble, and seeing all the rest burthened; and therefore I will thus charge them all ratablye, according to their abilityes, towards their maintenance, the which her Majestie may (yf she please) spare out of the charge of the rest, and reserve towards her other costs; or els adde to the charge of the Presidency in the North.

Waterforde . . .	100	Wexford . . .	25
Corcke . . .	50	Drogheda . . .	25
Limericke . . .	50	Rosse . . .	25
Gallwaye . . .	50	Dundalke . . .	10
Dinglecheoolshe . .	10	Mullingiaro . . .	10
Kinsale . . .	10	Newrye . . .	10
Youghill . . .	10	Trimme . . .	10
Kilmallocke . . .	10	Ardye . . .	10
Clonmell . . .	10	Kells . . .	10
Cashell . . .	10	Dublin . . .	100
Fetherte . . .	10		
Kilkenny . . .	25	Somme . . .	580

Eudox. It is easye, Irenaus, to laye a charge upon any towne, but to fore-see howe

the same may be answered and defrayed is the cheifest parte of good advisement.

Iren. Surely this charge which I putt upon them I knowe to be soe reasonable as that it will not much be felte; for the porte townes that have benefitt of shipping may cutt it easelye of theyr trading, and all inland townes of theyr corne and cattell: neither doe I see, but since to them speciallye the benefitt of peace doth redounde, that they speciallye should beare the burthen of theyr safegarde and defence, as we see all the townes of the Lowe-Countreyes doe cutt upon themselves an excise of all things towards the mayntenance of the warre that is made in theyr behalfe, to which though these are not to be compared in riches, yet are they to be charged according to theyr povertye.

Eudox. But nowe that you have thus sett up these forces of souldiours, and provided well (as ye suppose) for theyr paie, yet there remaineth to fore-cast how they may be vittayled, and where purveyaunce therof may be made; for in Ireland it selfe I cannot see almost howe any thing is to be had for them, being alreadye so pitifully wasted as it is with this shorte time of warre.

Iren. For the first two yeares indeede it is needefull that they be vittayled out of England throughlye, from halfe yeare to halfe yeare, aforehand, which time the English Pale shall not be burthened at all, but shall have time to recovere itselfe; and Mounster also, being nowe reasonably well stored, will by that time, (yf God send reasonable weather) be throughlye well furnished to supplye a greate parte of that charge, for I knowe there is greate plentye of corne sente over sea from thence, the which yf they might have sale for at home, they would be gladd to have monye soe neerehand, specially yf they were straightly restrayned from transporting of it. Thereunto also there wil be a greate helpe and furtheraunce given in the putting forward of husbandrye in all meete places, as heereafter shall in due place appeare. But hereafter, when things shall growe unto a better strengthe, and the countrey be replenished with corne, as in shorte space it would, yf it be well followed, for the countrey people themselves are great plowers, and small spenders of corne, then would I wish that there should be good store of howses and magasins erected in all those greate places of garrison, and in all great townes, as well for the vittayling of souldiours and shippes,

as for all occasions of suddayne services, as also for preventing of all times of dearthe and scarcitye: and this wante is much to be complayned of in England above all other countreyes, whoe, trusting to much to the usuall blessing of the earthe, doe never forecast any such harde seasons, nor any such suddayne occasions as these troublous times may everye day bring forth, when it will be to late to gather provision from abroad, and to bring it perhaps from farre for the furnishing of shippes or souldiours, which peradventure may neede to be presently employed, and whose wante may (which God forbid) happyle hazzarde a kingdome.

Eudox. Indeede the wante of these magazins of vittayls, I have hearde oftentimes complayned of in England, and wondred at in other countreyes, but that is nothing nowe to our purpose; but as for these garrisons which ye have nowe soe strongly plaunted throughout all Ireland, and every place swarming with souldiours, shall there be noe end of them? For nowe thus being (me seemes) I doe see rather a countrey of warre then of peace and quiet, which ye earst pretended to worke in Ireland; for if you bringe all thinges to that quietness which you sayd, what neede then to mayntayne soe great forces as you have charged upon it?

Iren. I will unto you, Eudoxus, in privy discover the drift of my purpose: I meane (as I tolde you) and doe well hope hereby both to settell an eternall peace in that countrey, and also to make it verie profitable to her Majestie, the which I see must be brought in by a stronge hand, and soe continued, till it runne in a stedfast course of government, the which in this sorte will neither be difficile nor dangerous; for the souldiour being once brought in for the service into Ulster, and having subdued it and Connaughte, I will not have him to laye downe his armes any more, till he have effected that which I purpose; that is, first to have this generall composition for the mayntenance of these throughout all the realme, in regarde of the troublous times, and daylye daunger which is threatned to this realme by the King of Spayne: And therupon to bestowe all my souldiours in such sorte as I have done, that noe parte of all that realme shal be able or dare soe much as to quince. Then will I eftsones bring in my reformation, and therupon establish such an order of government as I may thinke meetest for the good of that realme, which

being once established, and all thinges putt into a right way, I doubt not but they will runne on fayrely. And though they would ever seeke to swarve aside, yet shall they not be able without forreyne violence once to remove, as you your selfe shall soone (I hope) in your own reason readely conceive; which yf ever it shall appeare, then may her Majestie at pleasure with-drawe some of her garrisons, and turne theyr paye into her purse, or yf she will never please soe to doe (which I would rather wish), then shall she have a number of brave old souldiours allwayes readye for any occasion that she will employe them unto, supplying theyr garrisons with fresh ones in theyr steede; the mayntenance of whom shal be noe more charge to her Majestie then nowe that realme is; for all the revenue therof, and much more as she spendeth, even in the most peaceable times that are there, as thinges nowe stand. And in time of warre, which is nowe surelye every seaventh yeare, she spendeth infinite treasure besides to small purpose.

Eudox. I perceave your purpose; but nowe that you have thus strongly made waye unto your reformation, as that I see the people soe humbled and prepared that they will and must yeele to any ordenance that shal be given them, I doe much desire to understand the same; for in the beginning you promised to shewe a meane howe to redresse all those inconveniences and abuses, which you shewed to be in that state of government, which nowe standes there, as in the lawes, customes, and religion: wherein I would gladly knowe first, whether, insteade of those lawes, ye would have newe lawes made? for nowe, for ought that I see, you may doe what you please.

Iren. I see, Eudoxus, that you well remember our first purpose, and doe rightly continue the course therof. First therefore to speake of Lawes, since we first begonne with them, I doe not thinke it convenient, though nowe it be in the power of the Prince to change all the lawes and make newe; for that should breede a greates trouble and confusion, as well in the English now dwelling there and to be plaunted, as also in the Irish. For the English, having bene trayned up allwayes in the English government, will hardly be enured unto any other, and the Irish will better be drawn to the English, then the English to the Irish government. Therefore since we cannot nowe applye lawes fitt for the people, as in

the first institution of common-wealthes it ought to be, we will applye the people, and fit them to the lawes, as it most conveniently may be. The lawes therefore we resolve shall abide in the same sorte that they doe, both Common Lawe and Statutes, anye such defectes in the Common Lawe, and inconveniences in the Statutes, as in the beginning we noted and as men of deepe insight shall advise, may be chainged by some other newe Actes and ordinaunces to be by a Parliament there confirmed: As those of tryalls of Pleas of the Crowne, and private rightes betwene parties, colourable conveyances, accessaries, &c.

Eudox. But howe will those be redressed by Parliament, when as the Irish which sway most in Parliament (as you sayd), shall oppose themselves agaynst them?

Iren. That may now be well avoyded: For nowe that soe many Free-holders of English shal be established, they together with Burgesses of townes, and such other loyall Irish-men as may be preferred to be Knightes of the Shire, and such like, wyl be able to beaule and counter-poise the rest; w hoe also, being now brought more in awe, will the more easely submit to any such ordinaunces as shal be for the good of themselves, and that realme generallye.

Eudox. You say well for the increase of Freeholders, for theyre numbers will hereby be greatlye augmented; but howe shall it pass through the higher howse, which will still consist all of Irish?

Iren. Marye, that also may well be redressed by the example of that which I have hearde was done in the like case by King Edward the Thirde (as I remember), w hoe, being greatly bearded and crossed by the Lordes of the Cleargye, they being then by reason of the Lordes Abbots and others, to manye and to stronge for him, soe as he could not for theyr frowardness order and reforme thinges as he desired, was adjoynted to directe out his writtes to certayne Gentlemen of the best abillity and trust, entitling them therein Barrons, to serve and sitt as Barrons in the next Parliament. By which meanes he had soe many Barrons in his Parliament, as were able to waigh downe the Cleargye and theyr frendes; the which Barrons they say, were not afterwarde Lordes, but only Barronets, as sundrye of them doe yet retayne the name. And by the like devise her Majestie may now likewise courbe and cutt shorte these Irish and unrulye Lordes that hinder all good proceedinges,

Eudox. It seemeth noe less then for reforming of all those inconvenient statutes that ye noted in the beginning, and redressing of all those evill customes, and lastly, for settling sound religion amongst them: me thinkes ye shall not neede any more to goe over those particulars agayne, which you mentioned, nor any other which might besides be remembered, but to leave all to the reformation of such Parliaments, in which, by the good care of the Lord Deputye and Counsell they may all be amended. Therefore nowe you may come to that generall reformation which you spake of, and bringing in of that establishment, by which you sayd all men should be contained in dutye ever after, without the terrour of warlike forces, or violent wrestinge of thinges by sharpe punishments.

Iren. I will soe at your pleasure, the which (me seemes) can by noe meanes be better plotted then by example of such other realmes as have bene annoyed with like evills, that Ireland nowe is, and useth still to be. And first in this our realme of England, it is manifest, by reporte of the Chronicles and aunient writers, that it was greatlye infested with robbers and out-lawes, which lurked in woodes and fast places, whence they used oftentimes to breake forth into the highe wayes, and sometimes into the small villages to robbe and spoyle. For redress wherof it is written that King Allured, or Alfred, who then reigned, did devide the realme into shires, and the shires into hundrethes, and the hundrethes into rapes or wapentakes, and the wapentakes into tithinges: Soe that tenn tithinges made an hundrethe, and five made a lathe or wapentake, of which tenn, ech one was bounde for another, and the eldest or best of them, whom they called the Tithingman or Burseholder that is, the eldest pledge, became suretye for all the rest. Soe that yf any one of them did starte into any undutifull action, the Burseholder was bounde to bringe him forth, w hoe joyning eft-sones with all his tithing, would followe that loose person through all places, till they broughte him in. And yf all that tithing fayled, then all that lath was charged for that tythinge, and if that lath failed, then all the hundred was demanded for them; and yf the hundred, then the shire, w hoe, joyning eft-sones together, would not rest till they had founde out and delivered in that undutifull fellowe which was not amenable to lawe. And herin it seemeth, that that good Saxon King

followed the Counsell of Jethro to Moyses, whoe advised him to devide the people into hundredes, and to sett Captaynes and wise men of trust over them, which should take the charge of them, and ease him of that burthen. And soe did Romulus (as you may read) devide the Romaynes into tribes, and the tribes into Centuries or hundreds. By this ordinaunce the King brought this realme of England, (which before was most troublesome) into that quiett state, that noe one badd person could starte but he was straight taken holde of by those of his owne tithing, and theyr Burseholder, whoe being his neighbour or next kinsman were privye to all his wayes, and looked narrowly into his life. The which institution (y^e it were observed in Ireland) would worke that effecte which it did then in England, and keepe all men within the compass of dutye and obedience. *Q*

Eudox. This is contrarie to that you sayde before; for, (as I remember,) you sayd there was a greate disproportion betwene England and Ireland, soe as the lawes which were fitting for one would not fit the other. Howe comes it then, now, that you would transerre a principall institution from England to Ireland?

Iren. This lawe was made not by a Norman Conquerour, but by a Saxon King, at what time England was very like to Ireland, as now it standes: for it was (as I tolde you) greatlye annoved with robbers and out-lawes, which troubled the whole state of the realme, everye corner having a Robin Hood in it, that kepte the woodes, and spoyled all passagers and inhabitants, as Ireland now hath: soe as, me seemes, this ordinaunce would fit very well, and bring them all into awe.

Eudox. Ther, when you have thus tithed the comunaltie, as ye say, and set Burseholders over them all, what would ye doe when ye come to the gentellmen? would ye holde the same course?

Iren. Yea, marye, most speciallye; for this you must knowe, that all the Irish almost boast themselves to be gentellmen, noe less then the Welsh; for yf he can derive himselfe from the head of a septe, as most of them can, (and they are experte by theyr Barles,) then he holdeth himselfe a gentellman, and therupon scorneth eftsones to worke, or use any handye labour, which he sayeth is the life of a peasaunte or churle; but thenceforth becometh either an horse-boy, or a stokaghe to some kearne, enuring

himselfe to his weapon, and to his gentell trade of stealing, (as they counte it.) Soe that yf a gentellman, or any woorthy yeoman of them, have any children, the eldest perhaps shal be kept in some order, but all the rest shall shifte for themselves, and fall to this occupation. And moreover it is a common use amongst some of theyr best gentellmens sonnes, that soe soone as they are able to use theyre weapons, they straight gather to themselves three or fowre stragglers, or kerne, with whom wandring a while idely up and downe the countrey, taking onely meate, he at last falleth into some badd occasion that shal be offered, which being once made knowne, he is thenceforth counted a man of worthe, in whome there is courage; wherupon there drave unto him many other like loose yong men, which, stirring him up with encouragement, provoke him shortly to flatt rebellion; and this happens not onely sometimes in the sonnes of theyr gentellmen, but oftentimes also of theyr nobellmen, speciallye of theyr base sonnes, as there are fewe without some of them. For they are not ashamed onely to acknowledge them, but also boast of them, and use them in such secrett services as they themselves will not be seene in, as to plague theyr enemies, to spoyle theyr neighbours, to oppres and crush some of their owne to stubburne free-holders, which are not tractable to theyr bad willes. Two such bastards of the Lord Roches there are now out in Mounster whom he doth not onely countenance but also privilye mayntayne and releive mightely against his tenaunces; such other is there of the Earle of Clancartye in Desmond, and many others in many more places.

Eudox. Then it seemes that this ordinaunce of tithing them by the polle is not onelye fit for the gentellmen, but also for the nobellmen, whom I would have thought to have bene of soe honorable myndes, as that they should not neede such a base kinde of being bounde to theyr allegiance, who should rather have helde in and stayed all others from undutifullnes, then neede to be forced thereunto themselves.

Iren. Yet soe it is, Eudoxus: but yet because the nobellmen cannot be tithed, there being not many tithinges in them, and also because a Burseholder over them should not onely be a greate indignitye, but also a daunger to add more power to them then they have, or to make one the commaunder of tenn, I hold it meete that there were onely suretyes

taken of them, and one bounde for another, whereby, yf any shall swarve, his suretyes shall for safegarde of theyr bandes either bring him in, or seeke to serve upon him: and besides this, I would wish them all to be sworne to her Majestie, which they never yet were, but at theyr first creation; and that oath would sure contayne them greatlye, or the breache of it bring them to shorter vengeance, for God useth to punnish perjurye sharpelye. Soe I reade, that in the reigne of Edward the Second, and also of Henry the Seaventh, (when the times were verye broken) that there was a corporat oth taken of all the lordes and best gentell-men, of fealtie to the King, which nowe is noe less needfull, because many of them are suspected to have taken another othe privilye to some badd purposes, and therupon to have received the Sacrament, and bene sworne to a preist, which they thinke bindeth them more then theyr alleageance to theyr Prince, or love of theyr cuntrye.

Eudox. This tithing of that common-people, and taking suretyes of lordes and gentellmen, I like verye well, but that it wilbe verye troublesome: should it not be as well to have them all booked, and the lordes and gentell-men to take all the meaner sorte upon themselves? for they are best able to bring them in, whensoever any of them starteth out.

Iren. This indeede (*Eudoxus*) hath bene hitherto, and yet is a common order amongst them, to have all the people booked by the lordes and gentellmen, but yet it is the worst order that ever was devised; for by this booking of men all the inferiour sorte are brought under the commande of theyr lordes, and forced to followe them into any action whatsoever. Nowe this you are to understand, that all the rebellions that yett see from time to time happen in Ireland are not begonne by the common people, but by the lordes and captaynes of countreyes, upon pride or willfull obstinacye agaynst the government, which whensoever they will enter into, they drawe with them all theyr people and followers, which thinke themselves bounde to goe with them, because they have booked them and undertaken for them. And this is the reason that ye have fewe such badd occasions here in England, by reason that the noblemen, howeyer they should happen to be ill disposed, should have noe commaunde at all over the comunaltie, though dwelling under them, because that everye man standeth upon himselfe, and

buildeth his fortunes upon his owne fayth and firme assurance: the which this manner of tithing the polls will worke also in Ireland. For by this the people are broken into many small partes, like little strames, that they cannot easely come together into one head, which is the principall regarde that is to be had in Ireland to keepe them from growing to such a head, and adhering unto great men.

Eudox. But yet I can not see howe this can be well brought, without doing great wrong to the noblemen there; for at the conquest of that realme, those great segmories and lordships were given them by the King, that they should be the stronger agaynst the Irish, by the multitude of followers and tenants under them: all which hold theyr tenementes of them by fealtye, and such services, whereby they are (by the first graunt of the King) made bounde unto them, and tyed to rise out with them into all occasions of service. And this I have often hearde, that when the Lord Deputye hath rayssed any generall hostinges, the noblemen have claymed the leading of them, by graunte from the Kinges of England under the Greate Seale exhibited; soe as the Deputyes would not refuse them to have the leading of them, or, yf they did, they would soe worke, as none of theyr followers should rise forth to the hosting.

Iren. You say verye true; but will you see the fruite of these grauntes? I have known when these lordes have had the leading of theyr owne followers under them to the generall hosting, that they have for the same cutt upon every plowland within theyr countrey 40s. or more, wherebye some of them have gathered above 7 or 8000*l.*, and others much more, into theyr purse, in lieu wherof they have gathered into themselves a number of loose kearne out of all partes, which they have carryed forth with them, to whom they never gave penny of entertaynement, allowed by the countrey or forced by them, but let them feede upon the countreyes, and extort upon all men where they come; for that people will never aske better entertaynement then to have a colour of service or employment given them, by which they will poll and spoyle soe outrageously, as the verye Enemye can not doe much worse: and they also sometimes turne to the Enemyes.

Eudox. It seemes the first intent of these grauntes was agaynst the Irish, which nowe some of them use agaynst the Queene her selfe. But nowe what remedye is there for

this? Or howe can these grauntes of the Kinges be avoyded, without wronging of those lordes which had those landes and lordships given them?

Iren. Surely they may be well enough; for most of those lordes, since theyr first grauntes from the Kinges by which these landes were given them, have sithence bestowed the most parte of them amongst theyr kinsfolkes, as every lorde perhaps in his time hath given one or other of his principall castells to his yonger sonne, and other to others, as largely and as amplye as they were given to him; and others they have sold, and others they have bought, which were not in theyr first graunte, which nowe nevertheless they bring within the compass therof, and take and exacte upon them, as upon their first demeanes, all those kinde of services, yea and the very wilde Irish exactions, as Coignye and Liverye, for him. And such like, by which they poll and utterly undoe the poore tenants and freeholders unto them, which either through ignorance knowe not theyr tenures, or through greatness of theyr newe lordes dare not challenge them; yea, and some lordes of countreys also, as greate ones as themselves, are nowe by strong hand brought under them, and made theyr vassalls. As for example Aronell of Stronde in the Countye of Corcke, whoe was auniently a greate lorde, and was able to spend 3500*l.* by the yeare, as appeareth by good Recordes, is nowe become the Lord Barryes man, and doth to him all the services which are due unto her Majestie. For reformation of all which, it were good that a commission should be graunted forth under the Great Seale, as I have seene once recorded in the old counsell booke of Mounster; It was sent forth in the time of Sir William Drurye unto persons of speciall trust affi judgement to enquire throughout all Ireland, beginning with one countye first, and soe resting a while till the same were settled, by the verdict of a sounde and substantiall jurye, how every man holdeth his landes, of whom. and by what tenure, soe that every one should be admitted to shewe and exhibite what right he hath, and by what services he holdeth his land, whether in cheif or in socadge, or in knightes service, or howe else soever. Therupon would appeare, first howe all those greate English lordes doe clayme those great services, what regniories they usurpe, what wardeships they take from the Queene, what landes of hers they conceal: and then howe those Irish captaynes of countreys have

encroched upon the Queenes free-holders and tenants, howe they have translated the tenures of them from English holding unto Irish Tanistrie, and defeated her Majestie of all the rightes and duties which are to accrewe to her therout, as wardeships, liveries, mariadges, fines of alienation, and manye other comodities; which nowe are kepte, and concealed from her Majestie to the value of 60,000*l.* yearlye, I dare undertake, in all Ireland, by that which I knowe in one countye.

Eudox. This, Irenæus, would seeme a dangerous commission, and readye to stirre up all the Irish into rebellion, whoe knowing that they have nothing to shewe for all those landes which they holde, but theyr swordes, would rather drawe them then suffer theyr landes to be thus drawn away from them.

Iren. Neither should theyr landes be taken away from them, nor the uttermost advantages enforced agaynst them: But this by discretion of the commissioners should be made knowne unto them, that it is not her Majesties meaning to use any such extremitye, but onely to reduce things into order of English lawe, and make them to hold theyr landes of her Majestie, and restore to her her due services, which they detain out of those landes which were auniently held of her. And that they should not onelye not be thrust out, but also have estates and grauntes of theyr landes nowe made to them from her Majestie, soe as they should thenceforth holde them rightfullye, which they nowe usurpe most wrongfullye; and yet withall I would wish, that in all those Irish countreys there were some land reserved to her Majesties free disposition for the better containyng of the rest, and entermedding them with English inhabitants and customes, that knowledge might still be had by them, and of all theyr doinges, soe as noe manner of practize or conspiracye should be had in hand amongst them, but notice should be given therof by one meane or other, and theyr practises prevented.

Eudox. Trulye neither can the English, nor yet the Irish lords, thinke themselves wronged, nor hardlye dealt withall herin, to have that indeede which is none of theyr owne at all, but her Majesties absolutely, given to them with such equall condicions, as that both they may be assured therof, better then they are, and also her Majestie not defrauded of her right utterlye; for it is a great grace in a prince, to take that with condicions which is absolutely her owne. Thus shall the

Irish be well satisfied, and as for the great men which had such grauntes made them at first by the Kinges of England, it was in regarde that they should keepe out the Irish, and defend the Kinges right, and his subjectes: but nowe seeing that, instead of defending them, they robbe and spoyle them, and, instead of keeping out the Irish, they doe not onely make the Irish theyr tenants in those landes, and thrust out the English, but also they themselves become meere Irish, with marrying with them, sostring with them, and combining with them agaynst the Queene: what reason is there but that those grauntes and privilegedges should be either revoked, or at least reduced to the first intention for which they were graunted? For sure in myne opinion they are more sharply to be chastised and reformed then the rude Irish, which, being verve wilde at the first, are now become somewhat more civill, when as these from civilitye are growen to be wilde and meere Irish.

Iren. Indeede as you say, Eudoxus, these doe neede a sharper reformation then the verve Irish, for they are much more stubborne, and disobedient to lawe and government, then the Irish be, and more malicious to the English that daylye are sent over.

Eudox. Is it possible I pray you? Howe comes it to pass, and what may be the reason therof?

Iren. Marye! they say that the lande is theys onely by right, being first conquered by theyr auncestours, and that they are wronged by the newe English mens intruding therunto, whom they call Alloonagh with as greate reproche as they would rate a dogge. And for that some of theyr auncestours were in times past (when they were civill and incorrupted) Justices and Deputyes of the lande, they thinke that the like authoritie should be given to them, and the charge of the realme left in theyr handes; which, for that they see it nowe otherwise disposed, and that trust not given them (which theyr auncestours had) they thinke themselves greatly indignified and disgraced, and thereby growe both discontented and undutifull.

Eudox. In truth, Irenaeus, this is more then ever I hearde, that English-Irish there should be worse then the wilde Irish: Lord! howe quickly doth that countrey alter mens natures! It is not for nothing (I perceave) that I have heard, that the Counsell of England thinke it noe good policie to have that realme reformed, or planted with English, least they should growe as undutifull as the Irish, and become

much more dangerous: as appeareth by the example of the Lacies in the time of Edward the Second, which you spoke of, that shooke of theyr alleageaunce to theyr naturall Prince, and turned to the Scott (Edward le Bruce), devising to make him King of Ireland.

Iren. Noe times have bene without bad men: but as for that purpose of the Counsell of England, which ye spake of, that they should keepe that realme from reformation, I thinke they are most lowdly abused, for theyr great carefulness and earnest endeavours doe witness the contrarie. Neither is it the nature of the countrey to alter mens manners, but the bad mynnde of them, whoe having bene brought up at home under a straight rule of dutye and obedience, being allwayes restrayned by sharpe penalties from lewde behaviour, soe soone as they come thither, where they see lawes more slackly tended, and the harde restraynt which they were used unto nowe slackted, they growe more loose and careless of theyr dutye: and as it is the nature of all men to love libertye, soe they become flatt libertines, and fall to all licentiousness, more boldly daring to disobey the lawe, through the presumption of favour and friendship, then any Irish dare.

Eudox. Then yf that be soe, (me thinkes) your late advisement was every evill, wherby you wished the Irish to be sowed and sprinkled with the English, and in all the Irish countreyes to have English plaunted amongst them, for to bring them to English fashions, since the English be sooner drawn to the Irish then the Irish to the English: for as you sayd before, if they must runne with the streame, the greater number will carrie away the less: Therefore (me seemes) by this reason it should be better to parte the Irish and English, then to mingle them together.

Iren. Not soe, Eudoxus; for where there is noe good stay of government, and strong ordinaunces to holde them, there indeede the fewer will followe the more, but where there is due order of discipline and good rule, there the better shall goe foremost, and the worse shall followe. And therefore nowe, since Ireland is full of her owne nation, that may not be rooted out, and somewhat stored with English allready, and more to be, I thinke it best by an union of manners, and conformitye of myndes, to bring them to be one people, and to putt away the dislikefull conceit both of the one, and the other, which wil be by noe meanes better then by this entermingling of them: That neither all the Irish may dwell together, nor all the English, but

by translating of them and scattering of them by small numbers amongst the English, not only to bring them by dailie conversation unto better liking of ech other, but also to make both of them less able to hurte. And therefore when I come to the tithing of them, I will tittle them one with another, and for the most parte will make an Irish man the tithing man, whereby he shall take the less exception to parcialitye, and yet be the more tyed thereby. But when I come to the Head-borough, which is the head of the Lathie, him will I make an English man, or an Irish man of noe small assurance, as also when I come to appoynte the Alderman, that is the head of that hundred, him will I surely choose to be an English man of speciall regarte, that may be a staye and pillar of all the bouroughes under him.

Eudox. What do you meane by your hundred, and what by your bourough? By that, which I have reade in auncient recordes of England, an hundred did containe an hundreth villages, or as some say an hundreth plowlandes, being the gume which the Saxons called a Cantred; the which cantred, as I finde recorded in the blacke booke of Ireland, did containe 30 Villatas terre, which some call quarters of land, and every Villata can maintayne 400 cowes in pasture, and the 400 cowes to be divided into fowre heardes, so as none of them shall come neere another: every Villata containeth 17 plowlandes, as is there sett downe. And by that which I have reade of a bourough it signifieth a free towne, which had a principall officer, called a head-bourough, to become ruler, and undertaker for all the dwellers under him, having for the same franchises and priviledges graunted them by the King, wherof it was called a free bourough, and by the lawyers *franciplegium*.

Iren. Both that which you say, Eudoxus, is true, and yet that which I say not untrue; for that which ye spake of deviding the countrey into hundreds was a division of the landes of the realme, but this which I tell, was of the people, whoe were thus devided by the poll: soe that an hundreth in this sense signifieth an hundreth pledges, which were under the commaunde and assurance of theyr alderman, the which (as I suppose) was also called a wapentake, soe named of touching the wapen or sparke of theyr alderman, and swearing to followe him faithfullie and serve theyr Prince trulie. But others thinke that a wapentake was 10 hundreds or bouroughs: Likewise a bourough, as I here

use it, and as the old lawe still use it, is not a bourough towne, as they nowe call it, that is a franchise towne, but a mayne pledge of a hundreth free persons, therefore called a free bourough or (as ye say) *franciplegium*: For Borh in old Saxon signifieth a pledge or suretye, and yet it is soe used with in some speaches, as Chaucer sayeth; St. John to *borrowe*, that is for assurance and warrantie.

Eudox. I conceave the difference. But nowe that ye have thus devided the people into those thinges and hundreds, howe will you have them soe preserved and continued? For people doe often chaunge theyr dwellings, and some must dye, whilst othersome doe growe up unto strength of yeares, and become men.

Iren. These hundreds I would wish them to assembl themselves once every yeare with theyr pledges, and to present themselves before the justices of the peace, which shal be therunto appoynted, to be surveyed and numbred, to see what chaunge hath happened since the yeare before; and the defectes to supplie of those yong plantes late growen up, the which are diligently to be overlooked and viewed of what condicon and demaunour they be, soe as pledges may be taken for them, and they putt into order of some tithing: of all which alterations note is to be taken, and booke made thereof accordingly.

Eudox. Nowe (me thinkes) Irenaeus, ye are to be warned to take heede, least unawares ye fall into that inconvenience which you formerly found faulte with in others; namely, that by this booking of them, you doe not gather them unto a newe head, and having broken theyr former strengthe, doe not agayne unite them more strongly: For every alderman, having all these free pledges of his hundred under his comaund, (me thinkes) yf he be ill disposed, may drawe all his companie unto any evil action. And likewise, by this assembling of them once a yeare unto theyr alderman by theyr wapentakes, take heede lest ye also give them occasion and meanes to practise any harme in any conspiracye.

Iren. Neither of both is to be doubted; for the aldermen and headbouroughes will not be such men of power and countenance of themselves, being to be chosen thereunto, as neede to be feared: Neither, yf he were, is his hundred at his comaunde further then his Princes service; and also every tithing-man may controll him in such a case. And as for the assembling of the hundred, much less is

any daunger therof to be doubted, seing it is to be before a justice of peace, or some high constable to be thereunto appointed: Soe as of these tithings there can noe perill ensue, but a certayne assurance of peace and great good; for they are thereby withdrawn from theyr lordes, and subjected to theyr Prince. Moreover for the better breaking of those heades and septs, which (I tolde you) was one of the greatest strengthes of the Irish, me thinks, it should doe very well to renewe that old statute in Irelaund that was made in the realme of England (in the raigne of Edward the Fourth), by which it was commaunded, that wheras all men then used to be called by the name of theyr septs, according to theyr severall nations, and had noe surnames at all, that from thencefoorth ech one should take unto himselfe a severall surname, either of his trade or facultye, or of some qualitie of his body or mynd, or of the place where he dwelt, soe as everye one should be distinguished from the other, or from the most parte, wherby they shall not onely not depend upon the head of theyr sept, as nowe they doe, but also shall in shorte time learne quite to forget this Irish nation. And heerewithall would I also wish all the Oes and Macks, which the heads of the septs have taken to theyr names, to be utterlye forbidden and extinguished; for that the same being an old manner (as some say) first made by O'Brien for the strenghtning of the Irish, the abrogating therof will as much enfeeble them.

Eudox. I like this ordinance verie well; but nowe that ye have thus devided and distinguished them, what other order will ye take for theyr manner of life? For all this, though perhaps it may keepe them from disobedience and disloyaltie, yet will it not bring them from theyr barbarisme and savage life.

Iren. The next thing that I will doe shall be to appointe to everye one, that is not able to live of his free-holde, a certayne trade of life, to which he shall finde himselfe fittest, and shall be thought ablost, the which trade he shall bounde to followe, and live onely therupon. All trades therefore, it is to be understood, are to be of three kinde, manuell, intellectuall, and mixt. The first containyng all such as needeth exercise of bodylye labour to the performauance of theyr profession; the other consistyng onely of the exercise of witt and reason; the third sort, partly of bodylye labour, and partly of witt, but depending most of industrye and carefullness. Of the first sorte be all handycraftes

and husbandrye labour. Of the second be all sciences, and those which are called the liberall artes. Of the thirde is marchandize and chafferie, that is, buying and selling; and without all these three there is noe commonwealth can almost consist, or at the least be perfect. But that wretched realme of Ireland wanteth the most principall of them, that is, the intellectuall; therefore in seeking to reforme her state it is specially to be looked unto. But because of husbandrye, which supply eth unto us all necessarye thinges for foode, wherby we cheifly live, therefore it is first to be provided for. The first thing therefore that we are to drawe these newe tithed men unto, ought to be husbandrye. First, because it is the most easie to be learned, needing onely the labour of the bodye: next, because it is most generall and most needefull; then, because it is most naturall; and lastly, because it is most enemy to warre, and most hateth unquiett-ness: As the Poet sayeth,

—'bella execrata colonis:'

for husbandrye being the nurse of thrift, and the daughter of industrye and labour, detesteth all that may worke her hinderaunce, and destroye the travell of her handes, whose hope is all her lives comforte unto the plough: therefore all those Kearne, Stokaghs, and Horse-boyes are to be dryen and made to employe that ableness of bodye, which they were wonte to use to thefts and villanye, hencefoorth to labour and industrye. In the which, by that time they have spent but a litle payne, they will finde such sweetness and happy contentment, that they will afterwards hardly be hayled away from it, or drawn to theyr wonted lowlye life in thee-verye and rogerie. And being thus once entred thereunto, they are not onely to be countenanced and encouraged by all good meanes, but also provided that theyr children after them may be brought up likewise in the same, and succede in the roomes of theyr fathers. To which end there is a Statute in Irelaund alreadye well provided, which commaundeth that all the sonnes of husbandmen shal be trayned up in theyr fathers trade, but the (God wote) very slenderlye executed.

Eudox. But doe you not counte, in this trade of husbandrye, pasturing of cattell, and keeping of theyr coves, for that is reckned as a parte of husbandrye?

Iren. I knowe it is, and needfullye to be used, but I doe not meane to allowe anye of those able bodyes, which are able to use

bodely labour, to followe a few cowes grasing, but such impotent persons, as being unable for strong travell, are yet able to drive cattell to and fro the pasture; for this keeping of cowes is of it selfe a very idle life, and a fitt nurserye of a theefe. For which cause ye remember that I disliked the Irish manner of keeping Bolyes in Sommer upon the mountaynes, and living after that savadge sorte. But yf they will algates feede many cattell, or keepe them on the mountaynes, lett them make some towne neere the mountaynes side, where they may dwell together with neighbours, and be conversant in the viewes of the world. And, to say truth, though Ireland be by nature counted a great soyle of pasture, yet had I rather have fewer cowes kept, and men better mannered, then to have such huge encrease of cattell, and noe encrease of good conditions. I would therefore wish that there were made some ordinaunces amongst them, that whosoever keepeth twentye kine should keepe a plough going, for otherwise all men would fall to pasturing, and none to husbandrye, which is a great cause of this dearth nowe in England, and a cause of the usuall stealthes nowe in Ireland: For looke into all countreyes that live in such sorte by keeping of cattell, and you shall finde that they are both verye barbarous and uncivill, and also greatly given to warre. The Tartarians, the Muscovites, the Norways, the Gothes, the Armenians, and many others doe witness the same. And therefore since nowe we purpose to drawe the Irish from desire of warres and tumults, to the love of peace and civilitye, it is expedient to abridge theyr great custome of hearing, and augment theyr more trade of tillage and husbandrye. As for other occupations and trades, they neede not to be enforced to, but every man bounde onely to followe one that he thinkes himselfe aptest for. For other trades of artificers will be occupied for verye necessitye, and constrained use of them; and soe likewise will marchandise for the gayne therof; but learning, and bringing up in liberrall sciences, will not come of it selfe, but must be drawn on with straight lawes and ordinaunces; And therefore it were meete that such an acte were ordayned, that all the sonnes of lordes, gentlemen, and such others as are able to bring them up in learning, should be trayned up tuerin from theyr child-hood. And for that end everye parrish should be forced to keepe one pettye school-master, adjoyning to the parish church, to be the more in viewe, which

should bring up theyr children in the first rudimentes of letters: and that, in everye countrey or barronye, they should keepe an other able school-master, which should instructe them in grammer, and in the principles of sciences, to whom they should be compelled to send theyr youth to be disciplined, whereby they will in shorte time growe up to that civill conversation, that both the children will loth theyr former rudeness in which they were bred, and also the parentes will, even by the example of theyr yong children, perceave the fowlnesse of theyr owne brutish behaviour compared to theyrs: for learning hath that wonderfull power in it selfe, that it can soften and temper the most sterne and savage nature.

Eudox. Surely I am of your mynd, that nothing will bring them from theyr uncivill life sooner then learning and discipline, next after the knowledge and feare of God. And therefore I doe still expect; that ye should come theunto, and sett some order for reformation of religion, which is first to be respected; according to the saying of CHRIST, 'First seeke the kingdome of heaven, and the rightesumes therof.'

Iren. I have in mynde soe to doe; but lett me (I pray you) first finish that which I had in hand, whereby all the ordinaunces which shall afterwarles be sett for religion may abide the more firmlye, and be observed more diligently. Nowe that this people is thus tithed and ordered, and everye one bound unto some honest trade of life, which shal be particularly entred and sett downe in the titling booke, yet perhaps there will be some stragglers and runnagates which will not of themselves come in and yeeld themselves to this order, and yet after the well finishing of this present warre, and establishing of the garrisons in all strong places of the countrey, where theyre wonted refuge was most, I doe suppose there will fewe stand out, or yf they doe, they will shortly be brought in by the eares: But yet afterwarles, least any one of these should swarve, or any that is tyed to a trade should afterwarles not followe the same, according to this institution, but should straggle up and downe the countrey, or miche in corners amongst theyr frendes idlye, as Carrooghs, Bardes, Jesters, and such like. I would wish that there were a Provost Marshall appoynted in everye shire, which should continuallye walke through the countrey, with halfe a douzen, or half a score of horsemen, to take up such those persons as they should finde thus wandring, whom he should punnish

by his owne authoritye, with such paynes as the persons should seeme to deserve: for yf he be but once taken soe idlye roging, he may punnish him more lightlye, as with stockes, or such like; but yf he be founde agayne soe loytring, he may scourge him with whippes, or roddes, after which yf he be agayne taken, lett him have the bitterness of the marshall lawe. Likewise yf any relickes of the old rebeldom be founde by him, that have not either come in and submitted themselves to the lawe, or that having once come in, doe breake forth agayne, or walke disorderlye, lett them taste of the same cupp in Gods name; for it was due unto them for theyr first guilt, and nowe being revived by theyr later looseness, lett them have theyr first desarte, as nowe being founde unfit to live in a commonwealth.

Eudox. This were a good manner; but me thinkes it is an unnecessary charge, and also unfit to continue the name or forme of any marshall lawe; when as there is a proper officer alreadye appointed for these turnes, to witt the sheriff of the shire, whose peculiar office it is to walke continuallye up and downe his baly-wick, as ye would have a marshall, to snatche up all those runnagates and unprofitable members, and to bring them to his goale to be punished for the same. Therefore this may well be spared.

Iren. Not soe, me seemes; for though the sherriff have this authoritye of himselfe to take up all such stragglers, and imprison them, yet shall he not doe soe much good, nor worke that terrour in the hartes of them, that a marshall shall, whom they shall knowe to have power of life and death in such cases, and speciallye to be appointed for them: Neither doth it hinder but that, though it pertaine to the sherriff, the sherriff may doe therein what he can, and yet the marshall may walke his course besides; for both of them may doe the more good, and more terrifye the idle rogues, knowing that though he have a watche upon the one, yet he may light upon the other. But this proviso is needfull to be had in this case, that the sherriff may not have the like power of life as the marshall hath, and as heertofore they have bene accustomed; for it is dangerous to give power of life into the haundes of him which may have benefitt by the parties death, as yf the sayd loose liver have any goods of his owne, the Sherriff is to scape thereupon, wherby it hath often come to pass, that some that have not deserved perhaps judgement of death, though otherwise perhaps offending, have bene for theyr goodes sake

caught up, and carryed straight to the boughie; a thing indeede very pittifull and very horrible. Therefore by noe meanes I would wish the Sherriff to have such authoritye, nor yet to imprison that loosell till the sessions, for soe all gayles might soone be filled, but to send him to the Marshall, whose, oftsones finding him faultye, shall give him meete correction, and ridd him away forthwith.

Eudox. I doe nowe perceave your reason well. But comewe nowe to that wherof we earst spake, I mean, to religion and religious men; What order will you sett amongst them?

Iren. For religion little have I to saye, my selfe being (as I sayd) not professed therein, and it selfe being but one, soe as there is but one waye therein; for that which is true onelye is, and the rest are not at all, yet in planting of religion thus much is needfull to be observed, that it be not sought forcibly to be impressed into them with terrour and sharpe penalties, as nowe is the manner, but rather delivered and intimated with mildenes and gentleness, soe as it may not be hated afore it be understood, and theyr Professors dispised and rejected. For this I knowe that the most of the Irish are soe farr from understanding of the popish religion as they are of the protestauntes profession; and yet doe they hate it though unknown, even for the very hatred which they have of the English and theyr government. Therefore it is expedient that some discrete Ministers of theyr owne countrey-men be first sent amongst them, which by theyr milde persnasions and instructions, as also by theyr sober life and conversation, may drawe them first to understand, and afterwards to embrace, the doctrine of theyr salvation; for yf that the auncient godly Fathers, which first converted them, beinge infidells, to the faith, were able to drawe them from Infideltye and paganism to the true beleefe in CHRIST, as St. Patricke, and St. Columbi howe much more easelie shall the godlye teachers bring them to the true understanding of that which they alreadye profess? wherin it is greates wonder to see the oddes which is betwene the zeale of Popish preistes, and the Ministers of the Gospell; for they spare not to come out of Spayne, from Rome, and from Rhemes, by long toyle and dangerous travell hither, where they knowe perrill of death awayteth them, and noe reward nor richness is to be founde, onely to drawe the people to the Church of Rome; wheras some of our idell Ministers, having a waye for credit and estimation thereby opened unto

them, and having the livinges of the country offered them, without paynes, and without perrill, will neither for the same, nor for any love of God, nor zeale of religion, nor for all the good they might doe by winning of soe many sowles to God, be drawn forth from their warine nests and theyr sweete loves side to looke out into Godes harvest, which is even readye for the sickle, and all the fieldes yellowe long agoe: doubtless those good old godly Fathers will (I feare me) rise up in the Daye of Judgement to condemne them.

Eudox. Surely, it is great pittye, Ireneus, that there are none chosen out of the Ministers of England, good, sober, and discreet men, which might be sent over thither to teache and instructe them, and that there is not as much care had of theyr sowles as of theyr bodies; for the care of both lyeth upon the Prince.

Iren. Were there never soe many sent over theyr should doe smal good till one enormitye be taken from them, that is, that both they be restrayned from sending theyr yonge men abroad to other Universities beyond the seas, as Rheims, Doway, Lovaype, and the like, and that others from abroad be restrayned from coming to them; for they lurking secretly in theyr howses and in corners of the country doe more hurte and hinderaunce to religion with theyr private persuasions, then all the others can doe good with theyr publicke instructions; and though for these later there be a good statute there ordayned, yet the same is not executed, and as for the former there is noe lawe nor order for theyr restrainte at all.

Eudox. I marvayle it is noe better looked unto, and not only this, but that also which, I remember, you mentioned in your abuses concerning the profits and revenues of the landes of fugitives in Ireland, which by pretence of certayne colourable conveyances are sent continuallye over unto them, to the comfort of them and others agaynst her Majestie, for which heere in England there is good order taken; and whye not then as well in Ireland? For though there be noe statute there enacted therefore, yet might her Majestie, by her onely prerogative, seaze all the fruits and profits of those fugitives landes into her handes, till they come over to testifye theyr true alleageaunce.

Iren. Indeepe she might soe doe; but the combrous times doe perhaps hinder the regarde therof, and of many other good intentions.

Eudox. But why then did they not mynd it in peaceable times?

Iren. Leave we that to theyr grave considerations, but proceede we forwards. Next care in religion is to builde up and repayre all the ruinous churches, wherof the most parte lye even with the grounde, and some that have bene lately repayred are soe unhand-somely patched, and thatched, that men doe even shunne the places for the uncomeliness therof; therefore I would wish that there were order taken to have them builde in some better forme, according to the churches of England; for the outward shewe (assure your selfe) doth greatlye drawe the rude people to the reverencing and frequenting therof, what ever some of our late to nice looles saye,—‘there is nothing in the seemely forme and comely orders of the churche.’ And, for soe keeping and continuing them, there should likewise Churchwardens of the gravest men in the parish be appoynted, as there be heere in England, which should take the yearly charge both herof, and also of the schoole-houses, which I wished to be builde neere to the sayd churches; for mayntenance of both which, it were meete that some severall portion of lande were allotted, with no more mortmaines are to be looked for.

Eudox. Indeepe (me seemes) it would be soe convenient; but when all is done, howe will ye have your churches served, or your Ministers maintayned? since the livinges (as you sayd) are not sufficient scarce to make them a newe gowne, much less to yeelde meete maintenaunce according to the dignitie of theyr degree.

Iren. There is noo way to helpe that, but to laye two or thre of them together, untill such time as the country growe more riche and better inhabited, at which time the tithes and other oblations will also be more augmented and better valedwed: But nowe that we have gone thus through all that theyr sortes of trades, and sett a course for theyr good establishment, lett us (yf you please) goe next to some other needefull pointes of other publicke matters, noe less concerning the good of the commonweale, though but accidentally depending on the former. And first I wish that order were taken for the cutting downe and opening of all paces through woodes, soe that a wide waye of the space of a hundreth yardes might be layed open in everye of them for the safetie of travellers, which use often in such perilous places to be robbed, and sometimes mur-

thered. Next, that bridges were builde upon all rivers, and all the foordes mared and spilde, soe as none might pass any other waye but by those bridges, and everye bridge to have a gate and a small gate-houise sett thereon; wherof this good will come that noe night stealthes (which are commonlye driven in by-ways and by blinde foordes unused of anye but such like) shal be convayed out of one countrey into another, as they use, but they must passe by those bridges, where they may be either haply encountred, or easely tracked, or not suffred to pass at all, by meanes of those gate-houses: Also that in all straytes and narrow passages, as betwene two bogges, or through any deepe forde, or under any mountayne side, there should be some litle fortillage, or wooden castell sett, which should keepe and comaunde that straye, wherby any rebell that should come in the countrey might be stopped the waye, or pass with great perill. Moreover, that all highe wayes should be fenced and shutt up on both sides, leaving onely fortye foote breadthe for passage, soe as none should be able to passe but through the highe waye, wherby theeves and night robbers might be the more easely pursued and encountred, when there shal be noe other waye to drive theyr stollen cattell but therein, as I formerlye declared. Further, that there should be in sundrye convenient places, by the high wayes, townes appoynted to be builde, the which should be free Bouroughes, and incorporate under Bayliffes, to be by theyr inhabitants well and strongly intrinched, or otherwise fenced with gates at each side therof, to be shutt nightlye, like as there is in manye places of the English Pale, and all the wayes about it to be stronglye shutt up, soe that none should passe but through those townes: To some of which it were good that the priviledge of a markett were given, the rather to strengthen and enable them to theyr defence, for nothing dothe sooner cause civilitye in anye countrey then manye markett townes, by reason that people repairing often thither for theyr needes, will daylye see and learne civill manners of the better sort. Besides, there is nothing doth more staye and strengthen the countrey then such corporate townes, as by proove in many rebellions hath bene seene; in all which when the countreyes have swarved, the townes have stood stiffe and fast, and yekned good relief to the souldiours in all occasions of service. And lastly there doth

nothing more enriche any countrey or realme then manye townes; for to them will all the people drawe and bring the fruites of theyr trades, as well to make money of them, as to supplye theyr needefull uses; and the countreyemen will also be more industrious in tillage, and rearing all husbandrye comodities, knowing that they shall have readye sale for them at those townes: and in all those townes should there be convenient Innes erected for the lodging and harbouring of all travellers, which are now oftentimes spoyled by lodging abroad in weake thatched howses, for wante of such safe places to shrowde themselves in.

Eudox. But what profit shall your markett townes reape of theyr markett, whereas each one may sell theyr corne and cattell abroad in the countrey, and make theyr secrett bargaynes amongst themselves, as nowe I understand they use?

Iren. Indeepe, Eudoxus, they doe soe, and thereby noe small inconvenience doth arise to the commonwealth; for nowe, when any one hath stollen a cowe or a garron, he may secretlye sell it in the countrey without privy of anye, whereas yf he brought it in the markett towne it would perhapse be knowne, and the thief discovered. Therefore it were good that a straighte ordinance were made, that none should buye or sell any cattell but in some open markett (there being nowe markett townes everye where at hand) upon a great penaltie; neither should they likewise buye any corne to sell the same agayne, unless it were to make malte therof; for by such engrossing and regrating we see the dearthe that nowe comonlye reigneth here in England to have bene caused. Hereunto also is to be added that good ordinance, which I remember was once proclaimed throughout all Ireland. That all men should marke theyr cattell with an open severall marke upon theyr flannes or buttocks, soe as yf they happened to be stollen, they might appeare whose they were, and they which should buye them might thereby suspecte the owner, and be warned to abstayne from buying of them of a suspected person with such an unknowne marke.

Eudox. Surely these ordinances seeme verye expedient, but speciallye that of free townes, of which I wonder there is such small store in Ireland and that in the first peopling and planting therof they were neglected and omitted.

Iren. They were not omitted; for there were, through all places of the countrey

convenient, manye good townes seated, which through that inundation of the Irish, which I first told you of, were utterly wasted and defaced, of which the ruines are yet in manye places to be seene, and of some noe signe at all remayning, save onelye theyr bare names, but theyr seates are not to be founde.

Eudox. But howe then cometh it to pass, that they have never since recovered, nor their habitations reedifyed, as of the rest which have bene noe less spoyled and wasted?

Iren. The cause therof was for that, after theyr desolation, they were begged by gentlemen of the Kinges, under colour to repayre them and gather the poore reliques of the people agayne together, of whom having obtained them, they were soe farre from reedifying of them, as that by all meanes they have endeavourd to keepe them wast, least that, being repayred, theyre charters might be renewed, and their Burgeses restored to theyr landes, which they had nowe in their possession; much like as in these old monumentes of abbeyes, and religious howses, we see them likewise use to doe: For which cause it is judged that King Henry the Eight bestowed them upon them, knowing that therby they should never be able to rise agayne. And even soe doe these Lordes, in those poore old corporate townes, of which I could name you diverse but for kindling of displeasure. Therefore as I wished manye corporate townes to be erected, soe would I agayne wish them to be free, not depending upon the service, nor under the commaundement of anye but the Governour. And being soe, they will both strengthen all the countrey rounde about them, which by theyr meanes will be the better replenished and enriched, and also be as continuall holdes for her Majestie, yf the people should revolve and breake out agayne; for without such it is easie to forraie and over-runne the whole lande. Lett be for example, all those free-bouroughes in the Lowe-countreyes, which are nowe all the strength therof. These and other like ordinances might be delivered for the good establishment of that realme, after it is once subdued and reformed, in which it might be afterwards verie easelye kept and mayntayned, with small care of the Governours and Counsell there appoynted, soe as that it should in shorte space yeeld a plentifull revenue to the crowne of England; which nowe doth but sucke and consume the treasure therof, through those unsounde plottes

and changefull orders which are daylye devised for her good, yet never effectually prosecuted or performed.

Eudox. But in all this your discourse I have not marked any thing by you spoken touching the appoyntment of the principall Officer, to whom you wish the charge and performnance of all this to be committed: Onelye I observed some fowle abuses by you noted in some of the late Governours, the reformation wherof you left for this present time.

Iren. I delighte not to laye open the blames of soe great Magistrats to the rebuke of the worlde, and therefore theyr reformation I will not meddle with, but leave unto the wisdom of greater heades to be considered: onelye this, much I will speake generally therof, to satisfie your desire, that the Governement and cheif Magistracye I wish to continue as it doth; to wecte, that it be ruled by a Lorde Deputy or Justice, for that it is a very safe kinde of rule: but there-withall I wish that over him there were placed also a Lord Lieutenant, of some of the greatest personages in England (such an one I could name, upon whom the eye of all England is fixed, and our last hopes now rest); whoe being entitled with that dignity, and being allwayes heere resident, may backe and defende the good cause of the government agaynst all malignours, which else will, through theyr cunning working under hand, deprave and pull backe what ever thinge shal be well begunne or intended there, as we commonly see by experience at this day, to the utter ruine and desolation of that poor realme: and this Lieutenancye should be noe discountenancing of the Lord Deputy, but rather a strengthening and maintayning of all his doings; for nowe the cheif evil in that government is, that noe Governour is suffred to goe on with any one course, but upon the least information heere, of this or that, he is either stopped or crossed, and other courses appoynted him from hence which he shall runne, which howe inconvenient it is, is at this howre to well felte. And therefore this should be one principle in the appoyntment of the Lord Deputyes authoritye, that it should be more ample and absolute then it is, and that he should have uncontrolled power to doe any thing that he, with the advisement of the Counsell, should thinke meete to be done: for it is not possible for the Counsell heere, to direct a Governour there, whoe shal be forced oftentimes to followe the necessity of pre-

sent occasions, and to take the suddayne advantage of time, which being once loste will not be recovered; whilest, through expecting directions from hence, the delays wherof are oftentimes through other greater affayres most irkesome, the opportunitye there in the meane time passes away, and greete daunger often groweth, which by such timely prevention might easely be stopped. And this (I remember) is woorthelye observed by Machiavell in his discourses upon Livy, where he comendeth the manner of the Romayne government, in giving absolute power to all theyr Counsuls and Governours. which yf they abused, they should afterwarde dearely answere it: And the contrarye therof he reprehendeth in the States of Venice, of Florence, and many other principalities of Italye, whoe use to limitte theyr cheif officers soe straightly, as that therby oftentimes they have lost such happye occasions as they could never come unto agayne. The like wherof, whoe soe hath bene conversaunte in that government of Ireland, hath to often scene to theyr great hindraunce and hurte. Therefore this I could wish to be redressed, and yet not soe but that in particular thinges he should be restrayned, though not in the generall government; as namelye in this, that noe offices should be solde by the Lord Deputye for mo:ye, nor noe pardons, nor protections bought for rewardes, nor noe beevies taken for Cap:aynries of countreys, nor noe shares of Bishopricks for nominating theyr Bishops, nor noe forfeitures, nor dispensations with penall Statutes given to theyr servauntes or frendes, nor noe selling of licences for transportation of prohibited wares, and speciallye of corne and flesh, with manye the like; which neede some manner of restraint, or els very great trust in the honourable disposition of the Lord Deputye.

Thus I have, Eudoxus, as breifly as I could, and as my remembrance would serve me, runne through the state of that whole countrey, both to lett you see what it nowe is, and also what it may be by good care and amendment: Not that I take upon me to chaunge the pollicye of soe greate a kingdom, or prescribe rules to such wise men as have the handling therof, but onely to shewe you the evils, which in my small experience I have observed to be the cheif hinderaunces of the reformation therof; and by way of conference to declare my simple opinion for the redresse therof, and establishing a good course for that government; which I doe not deliver for a perfect plott of myne owne invention, to be onely followed, but as I have learned and understood the same by the consultations and actions of verye wise Governours and Counsellours whom I have sometimes hearde treat thereof. Soe have I thought good to sett downe a remembrance of them for myne owne good, and your satisfaction, that whoe so list to overlooke them, although perhaps much wiser then they which have thus advised of that state, yet at least, by comparison herof, may perhaps better his owne judgement, and by the light of others fore-going him may followe after with more ease, and happily finde a fayrer waye thereunto then they which have gone before.

Eudox. I thanke you, Irenaeus, for this your gentell paynes; withall not forgetting, nowe in the shutting up, to putt you in mynde of that which you have formerlye halfe promised, that heereafter when we shall meete agayne upon the like good occasion, ye will declare unto us those your observations which ye have gathered of the Antiquities of Ireland.

APPENDIX I.

VARIATIONS FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITIONS.

Page 4 (LETTER OF THE AUTHOR), col. 2, l. 9, *vi.* All the early editions read *v.*

P. 5 (VERSES TO THE AUTHOR), col. 2, l. 11, *faure* (1609), *fare* (1590).

P. 5 (VERSES TO THE AUTHOR), col. 2, l. 17, *reebes* (1609). The 4to. 1590 has *reede*.

P. 9 (VERSES BY THE AUTHOR), col. 1, l. 30, *soverains*. The 4to. 1590 reads *soverain*, but fol. 1611 has *soveraignes*.

Page 11, book i. canto i. stanza 4, line 5, *my feeble* (1596), *mine feeble* (1590).

P. 14, bk. i. c. i. st. 12, l. 5, *your stroke*. The 4to. 1590 reads *your hardy stroke*; but it is corrected in 'Faults escaped in the Print,' though the incorrect reading is retained in the 4to. 1596, and in the fol. 1611.

P. 13, bk. i. c. i. st. 15, l. 7, *shapes* (1590), *shape* (1596).

P. 14, bk. i. c. i. st. 21, l. 5, *later sprung*. The editions of 1590, 1596, and 1611 read *later ebbe guns t' arole* (to *avale*), but this locution is corrected in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 14, bk. i. c. i. st. 23, l. 9, *oft* (1590), ? *off* (Collier).

P. 14, bk. i. c. i. st. 24, l. 8, *raft* (1590), *refl* (1609).

P. 14, bk. i. c. i. st. 30, l. 9, *sals* (1590), *fls* (1609).

P. 16, bk. i. c. i. st. 42, l. 8, *nighte*. The 4to. 1590 reads *nighes*. In the 'Faults escaped in the Print' we are told to read *nighte*.

P. 17, bk. i. c. i. st. 50, l. 1, *He thought have* (1590), *He thought t' have* (1611).

P. 17, bk. i. c. i. st. 50, l. 8, *can* (1590), *gan* (1679).

P. 17, bk. i. c. ii. Arg. l. 3, *stead* (1596). The 4to. 1590 has *steps*.

P. 19, bk. i. c. ii. st. 14, l. 4, et *passim* (Books i. ii. iii.) *off* (1596), *of* (1596).

P. 19, bk. i. c. ii. st. 17, l. 5, *cruell spies*. The 4tos. 1590, 1596, and fol. 1609 read *cruellies*, which is corrected in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 19, bk. i. c. ii. st. 17, l. 9, *die* (1609), *dies* (1590).

P. 19, bk. i. c. ii. st. 18, l. 1, *quoth* (1596) *qd.* (1590).

P. 19, bk. i. c. ii. st. 19, l. 9, et *passim* (Books i. ii. iii.) *whither* (1596), *whether* (1590).

P. 20, bk. i. c. ii. st. 22, l. 5, *thy* (1590), *your* (1596).

P. 20, bk. i. c. ii. st. 29, l. 2, *shade him thither* (1590), *shade thither* (1596), *shadow thither* (1609).

P. 20, bk. i. c. ii. st. 29, l. 3, *now ymounted*, *now that mounted* (1590, 1596). The reading in the text is found in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 21, bk. i. c. ii. st. 32, l. 9, *plaints* (1596), *plants* (1590).

P. 26, bk. i. c. iii. st. 38, l. 7, *the* (1590), *that* in errata.

P. 29, bk. i. c. iv. st. 16, l. 3, *hurlien* (1590), *hurien* (1609).

P. 29, bk. i. c. iv. st. 23, l. 7, *drydropsie* (1590), ? *dure dropsie* (Upton), *hydropsy* (Collier).

P. 29, bk. i. c. iv. st. 21, l. 3, *whailly* (1590), *waitail* (?).

P. 30, bk. i. c. iv. st. 27, l. 6, *pelye* (1596), *pelp* (1590).

P. 30, bk. i. c. iv. st. 29, l. 9, *fourth* (1596), *forth* (1590).

P. 30, bk. i. c. iv. st. 30, l. 4, *chaw* (1590), *jaw* (1609).

P. 30, bk. i. c. iv. st. 31, l. 6, *neighbours* (1596), *neibors* (1590).

P. 30, bk. i. c. iv. st. 32, l. 9, *afte*, *first* (1590), but *afte* is among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 31, bk. i. c. iv. st. 39, l. 2, *faery* (1596), *fury* (1590).

P. 31, bk. i. c. iv. st. 41, l. 9, *renverst* (1590), *re'nverst* (1609).

P. 31, bk. i. c. iv. st. 43, ll. 1, 3, *pledge*, *edge* (1596), *pledg*, *edg* (1590).

P. 31, bk. i. c. v. st. 2, l. 6, *hurld*. The 4to. 1590 has *hurle*, but *hurld* is in 'Faults escaped in the Print.' The editions 1596, 1609 retain the incorrect reading.

P. 33, bk. i. c. v. st. 7, l. 9, *And heven helmets deepe* (1590), *And helmets heven deepe* (1596).

P. 34, bk. i. c. v. st. 15, l. 2, *thirsty* (1590), *thirstie* (1590).

P. 36, bk. i. c. v. st. 35, l. 9, *leke* (1590), *leake* (1596).

P. 36, bk. i. c. v. st. 38, l. 6, *cliffs*. The editions 1590, 1596, and 1609 read *clifs*. The correction is supplied in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 37, bk. i. c. v. st. 41, l. 2, *hgh* (1590), *high* (1596).

P. 38, bk. i. c. v. st. 52, l. 9, *enswed* (1596), *en-swed* (1590).

P. 38, bk. i. c. vi. st. 1, l. 5, *in*. The 4tos. and folio 1609 read *it*, though *in* is among the errata.

P. 40, bk. i. c. vi. st. 15, l. 2, *Of Bacchus* (1590), *Of Bacchus* (1596); Hughes, *If Bacchus*.

P. 41, bk. i. c. vi. st. 23, l. 8, *noused* (1590), *noursled* (1596).

P. 41, bk. i. c. vi. st. 26, l. 5, *flers and fell* (1596), *swift and cruell* (1590).

P. 42, bk. i. c. vi. st. 33, l. 9, *woods* (1596), *woods* (1590).

P. 42, bk. i. c. vi. st. 39, l. 7, *he* (1596), *she* (1590).

P. 43, bk. i. c. vi. st. 47, l. 8, *to fight* (1590), *two fight* (1611).

P. 45, bk. i. c. vii. st. 12, l. 9, *stound* (1596), *stoond* (1590).

P. 45, bk. i. c. vii. st. 13, l. 8, *smoke* (1596), *smok* (1590).

P. 45, bk. i. c. vii. st. 18, ll. 4, 5, *brought, naught* (1590), *brought, nought* (1596).

P. 45, bk. i. c. vii. st. 20, l. 3, *that* (1590), *the* (1596).

P. 46, bk. i. c. vii. st. 22, l. 9, *sight*, is omitted in 4to. 1590, but is found in the 4to. 1596.

P. 46, bk. i. c. vii. st. 29, l. 4, *glitterand* (1590), *glitter and* (1679).

P. 47, bk. i. c. vii. st. 32, l. 18, *whose* (1609), *her* (1590).

P. 47, bk. i. c. vii. st. 37, l. 7, *trample* (1596), *amble* (1590).

P. 47, bk. i. c. vii. st. 37, l. 8, *chaufft* (1596), *chaust* (1590).

P. 48, bk. i. c. vii. st. 43, l. 5, *ronne*. The 4to. 1590 has *come*, which is amended in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 48, bk. i. c. vii. st. 47, l. 3, *hands* (1596). The 4to. 1590 reads *hand*.

P. 49, bk. i. c. vii. st. 52, l. 4, *That*. All the early editions read *that*, but ? *the*.

P. 49, bk. i. c. vii. Arg. l. 3, *that gyaunt* (1590, 1596), but *the gyaunt* is among the errata.

P. 49, bk. i. c. vii. st. 1, l. 6, *through* (1596), *thorough* (1590).

P. 50, bk. i. c. vii. st. 7, l. 6, *wise*. The 4to. 1590 reads *wist*, which is corrected in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 51, bk. i. c. vii. st. 21, l. 5, *their* ? *his*, i. e. Argoglio's (Church).

P. 51, bk. i. c. vii. st. 21, l. 7, *powre* (1596), *poivre* (1590).

P. 51, bk. i. c. vii. st. 22, l. 4, *right* (so in all old editions). Most modern editions read *left*.

P. 51, bk. i. c. vii. st. 24, l. 6, *his* (1596), *her* (1590).

P. 54, bk. i. c. viii. st. 14, l. 4, *delight*, ? *dislike* (Upton).

P. 54, bk. i. c. ix. Arg. l. 2, *bands* (1596). The text of the 4to. 1590 reads *hands*, but *bands* is in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 55, bk. i. c. ix. st. 9, l. 3, *the* (among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.') Ed. 1590 reads *that*, a lection which Church defends.

P. 56, bk. i. c. ix. st. 12, l. 9, *on* (from 'Faults escaped in the Press'). The text has *at*.

P. 56, bk. i. c. ix. st. 17, l. 8, *proves* (1590), *prorowse* (1609).

P. 58, bk. i. c. ix. st. 32, l. 7, *glee* (1590), ? *fee* (Church).

P. 58, bk. i. c. ix. st. 33, l. 3, *cliff* in errata, *clift* (1590).

P. 58, bk. i. c. ix. st. 33, l. 3, *ypight* (1596), *ypight* (1590).

P. 58, bk. i. st. 35, l. 4, *griesie* (1590), *griesly* (1611).

P. 59, bk. i. c. ix. st. 42, l. 7, *holds*. The 4to. 1590 reads *hold*.

P. 59, bk. i. c. ix. st. 46, l. 7, *fained* (1596), *fastest* (1590).

P. 60, bk. i. c. ix. st. 52, l. 1, *saw* (1596), *heard* (1590).

P. 60, bk. i. c. ix. st. 52, l. 3, *retiv'd* (1590), *rehev'd* (1611).

P. 61, bk. i. c. ix. st. 53, l. 2, *feeble* (1590), *seely* (1596), *silly* (1609).

P. 60, bk. i. c. ix. st. 53, l. 6, *greater* (1596), *qvier* (1590).

P. 62, bk. i. c. x. st. 20, l. 5, *Dry-shod*, &c. This line is found in fol. 1609, but is omitted in the 4to.

P. 63, bk. i. c. x. st. 27, l. 6, *His blamefull body in salt water sove* (1590), *His body in salt water smarting sore* (1596).

P. 64, bk. i. c. x. st. 36, l. 4, *their*. The 4to. 1590 reads *there*.

P. 65, bk. i. c. x. st. 52, l. 6, *Brnyns*. The 4to. 1590 has *Brnyr*.

P. 65, bk. i. c. x. st. 52, l. 6, *them* (1590) ? *him* or for *traveller* (l. 4) read *travellers*.

P. 66, bk. i. c. x. st. 57, l. 5, *pretious*, adopted from the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.' The text of the 4to. 1590 has *piteous*, which is retained by the fd. 1611.

P. 66, bk. i. c. x. st. 59, l. 2, *frame*. The editions of 1590, 1596, 1609, 1611, read *fame*, though *frame* is among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 67, bk. i. c. x. st. 62, l. 4, *As wretched*, &c. (1590). The 4to. 1596 reads *Quoth he*, as *wretched* and *tw'd in like paine*.

P. 67, bk. i. c. x. st. 62, l. 8, *And bitter battailes*, &c. (1590). *And battailes none are to be fought* (1596).

P. 67, bk. i. c. x. st. 62, l. 9, *they* (1590) is omitted in 1596 and 1611.

P. 67, bk. i. c. x. st. 65, l. 3, *face* (1590), *place* (1596).

P. 68, bk. i. c. xi. st. 3, This stanza is not found in the first 4to., but is in second 4to. 1596.

P. 70, bk. i. c. xi. st. 22, l. 1, *his* (1590), ? *the* (Church).

P. 70, bk. i. c. xi. st. 26, l. 6, *swinged* (1590), *singed* (1609).

P. 71, bk. i. c. xi. st. 30, l. 5, *one*. The 4to. reads *its* though *one* is in 'Faults escaped in the Print.' Mr. Collier says there is no authority for reading *one*.

P. 71, bk. i. c. xi. st. 37, l. 2, *yelled* (1609), *yielded* (1590).

P. 72, bk. i. c. xi. st. 41, l. 4, *Nor* (1609), *For* (4tos. 1590, 1596).

P. 73, bk. i. c. xi. st. 54, l. 7, *noyse* (1590) ? *noyse*. P. 75, bk. i. c. xii. st. 11, l. 2, *too* (1596), *to* (1590).

P. 75, bk. i. c. xii. st. 11, l. 4, *goasbs* (1590), *goasps* (1596).

P. 75, bk. i. c. xii. st. 17, l. 4, *note* (1590), *no'te* (1596).

P. 77, bk. i. c. xii. st. 32, l. 6, *wyise* (1596), *wieiy* (1590).

P. 77, bk. i. c. xii. st. 34, l. 2, *vaime*, adopted from the errata. The text of the 4to. 1590 has *faine*. Church thinks that *faine* = *fained* or *feigned* is a good reading.

P. 77, bk. i. c. xii. st. 34, l. 3, *improvid* (1590), *unprovided* is found in some modern editions.

P. 77, bk. i. c. xii. st. 36, l. 7, *bains* (1590), *banes* (1596).

P. 78, bk. i. c. xii. st. 39, l. 9, *aprite* (1590). Some later editions, as 1611, read *spreete*.

P. 78, bk. i. c. xii. st. 40, l. 9, *Ilis* (1590), *Her* (1596).

P. 79, bk. ii. Prol. st. 2, l. 8, *Amazon*. The fol. 1609, following the text of 4to. 1590, reads *Amazons*, but *Amazon* is among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 79, bk. ii. st. 4, l. 6, *thou* (1596), *then* (1590).

P. 80, bk. ii. c. i. st. 1, l. 2, *food* (1590), *feude* (1609).

P. 81, bk. ii. c. i. st. 12, l. 9, *challenge* (1596), *chaleng* (1590).

P. 81, bk. ii. c. i. st. 16, l. 1, *life* (1596, 1600), *lyfe* (1590).

P. 82, bk. ii. c. i. st. 20, l. 2, *quill* (1590), *quite* (1596).

P. 82, bk. ii. c. i. st. 20, l. 7, *blotted* (1596), *blotting* (1590).

P. 83, bk. ii. c. i. st. 28, l. 3, *well* *lyc* *commoneth* (1590, 1596), *ill* *becometh* (1679).

P. 83, bk. ii. c. i. st. 31, l. 4, *on* (1596), *one* (1590).

P. 83, bk. ii. c. i. st. 32, l. 7, *must* (1596), *most* (1590).

P. 83, bk. ii. c. i. st. 33, l. 8, *thoise* is adopted from the errata of 4to. 1590, but *these* occurs in all old editions.

P. 83, bk. ii. c. i. st. 34, l. 6, *steedy* (1590), *steadie* (1609).

P. 84, bk. ii. c. i. st. 39, l. 4, *dolour* (1590), *labour* (1596).

P. 84, bk. ii. c. i. st. 42, l. 9, *stout* *courage* (1590), *courage* *stout* (1609).

P. 85, bk. ii. c. i. st. 47, l. 2, *sight* (1590), *sight*, (1609).

P. 86, bk. ii. c. i. st. 58, l. 4, *frife* (1590) ? *frize* (Church).

P. 86, bk. ii. c. i. st. 59, l. 2, *common* (1596), *commen* (1590).

P. 86, bk. ii. c. i. st. 59, l. 8, *great* (1596), *greet* (1590).

P. 87, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 24, l. 3, *lieu* (1590), ? *love* (Church).

P. 87, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 5, l. 3, *hard* (1596), *hart* (1590).

P. 87, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 7, l. 7, *pray* (Cotlier). It is *chace* in all the old editions.

P. 88, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 12, l. 8, *fame* (1596), *frame* (1590).

P. 88, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 21, l. 2, *hond* (1609), *hand* (1596).

P. 89, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 28, l. 2, *their* *champions*. The 4to. 1590 reads *her* *champions*, but 4to. 1596 has *their* *champion*.

P. 89, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 30, l. 1, *there* (1609), *their* (1590, 1596).

P. 89, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 30, l. 3, *bloodguiltiness* (1609), *bloodguiltinesse* (1590, 1596).

P. 90, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 34, l. 9, *her* (1590), *their* (1596).

P. 90, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 38, l. 5, *forward* (1590), ? *fronward* (cf. l. 7 of st. 38).

P. 91, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 42, l. 6, *to hold*. All the old editions read *o make*.

P. 91, bk. ii. c. ii. st. 44, l. 4, *enrold*. The 4to. 1590 reads *entroid*, the fol. 1609 *introid*.

P. 92, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 3, l. 7, *heard* (1596), *hard* (1590).

P. 92, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 4, l. 5, *A pleasing vaine of glory*, &c. (1590), *A pleasing vaine of glory vaine did find* (1596).

P. 92, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 6, l. 9, 'Mercy!' loud (so all old editions), ? 'Mercy, Lord!'

P. 92, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 11, l. 4, *coursur* (1596), *course* (1590).

P. 93, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 20, l. 5, *does* *greatly* *them* *affaere* (1590), *their* *have* *on* *end* *does* *reare* (1596). For *greatly* (in the errata) the text of the 4to. 1590 has *unto*.

P. 94, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 26, l. 9, *fringe* (so all the 4to.).

P. 95, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 35, l. 4, *many* *bold* *emprize* (1590), ? *many* *a* *bold* *emprize* (Jortin).

P. 96, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 45, l. 4, *one* *foot* (1609), *on* *foot* (1590).

P. 96, bk. ii. c. iii. st. 46, l. 9, *erne* (1590), *yerne* (1609).

P. 96, bk. ii. c. iv. Arg. l. 3, *Phaon* (1590), *Phedon* (1596).

P. 97, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 4, l. 6, *loosely* (1596), *loosly* (1590).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 12, l. 3, *hong* (1590), *hung* (1609).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 12, l. 8, *tongue*. The text has *tongue*, which is altered to *tonge* in the errata of the 4to. 1590.

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 13, l. 6, *note* (1590), *no'te* (1609).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 17, l. 6, *one* (1596), *wretch* (1590).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 17, l. 8, *occasion* (1596), *her* *guisful* *trech* (1590).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 17, l. 9, *light* *upon* (1596), *wandring* *lech* (1590).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 18, l. 5, *chose* (1590), *chuse* (1609).

P. 98, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 18, l. 8, *Or* (1590), *Our* (1609).

P. 100, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 38, l. 4, *this* *word* *was* (so all the old editions), *these* *words* *were* (Hughes's second edition).

P. 101, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 40, l. 3, *should* (1596), *shold* (1590).

P. 101, bk. ii. c. iv. st. 45, l. 5, *that* *did* *fight* (1590), *thus* *to* *fight* (1596).

P. 102, bk. ii. c. v. Arg. l. 1, *Pyrrochles*, &c. (1590). The second 4to. 1596 reads:—

Pyrrochles *does* *with* *Guyon* *fight*,
And *Furors* *chayne* *unbonds*;
Of *whom* *sore* *hurt*, *for* *his* *revenge*
Attn *Gymochles* *finds*.

P. 102, bk. ii. c. v. st. 5, l. 9, *doe* *me* *not* *much* *sayt* (1590), *doe* *not* *much* *me* *saite* (1596).

P. 102, bk. ii. c. v. st. 8, l. 7, *hurle* (1590), *hurle* (1596), *hurien* (1611).

P. 103, bk. ii. c. v. st. 10, l. 7, *enimyes* (1596), *enmye* (1590).

P. 103, bk. ii. c. v. st. 15, l. 9, *who* *seife* (1590), *whose* *seife* (1609).

P. 104, bk. ii. c. v. st. 19, l. 4, *shee* (1609), *hee* (1590, 1596).

P. 104, bk. II. c. v. st. 19, l. 7, *garre* (1590), *do* (1596).

P. 104, bk. II. c. v. st. 21, l. 7, *occasions* (1590), *occasion* (1609).

P. 104, bk. II. c. v. st. 22, l. 5, *spight* (1590), *spright* (1609).

P. 104, bk. II. c. v. st. 23, l. 1, *that* (1590), *the* (1609).

P. 105, bk. II. c. v. st. 29, l. 5, *pricking* (1590), *pricking* (1596).

P. 105, bk. II. c. v. st. 31, l. 5, *In Nemus gayned*, &c. (1590), *Gaynd in Nemea* (1596).

P. 105, bk. II. c. v. st. 32, l. 6, *meriments*. All old copies read *meriment*.

P. 105, bk. II. c. v. st. 34, l. 8, *So he them* (1590), *So them* (1596 and 1609).

P. 106, bk. II. c. vi. st. 1, l. 7, *abstaine* (1590), *restraine* (1596).

P. 106, bk. II. c. vi. st. 3, l. 4, *As merry as Pope Jone* (1590), *that nigh her breath 'as gone* (1596).

P. 106, bk. II. c. vi. st. 3, l. 6, *That to her might more* (1590), *That might to her move* (1596).

P. 107, bk. II. c. vi. st. 12, l. 9, and *throwe her sweete smels*, &c. (1590), *and her sweet smells throw*, &c. (1596).

P. 107, bk. II. c. vi. st. 14, l. 9, *whiles* (1596), *whils* (1590).

P. 107, bk. II. c. vi. st. 14, l. 9, *love lay* (1590), *loud lay* (1596).

P. 108, bk. II. c. vi. st. 18, l. 7, *ware . . . grisy* (1590), *araves . . . araisy* (1609).

P. 108, bk. II. c. vi. st. 21, l. 8, *bonds* (1590), *bound* (1609).

P. 109, bk. II. c. vi. st. 27, l. 9, *there* (1596), *their* (1590).

P. 109, bk. II. c. vi. st. 29, l. 2, *importune* (1590), *importance* (1596), *importance* (1609).

P. 110, bk. II. c. vi. st. 38, l. 5, *sailed* (1590), *sailed* (1609).

P. 110, bk. II. c. vi. st. 43, l. 7, *hath lent this cursed light* (1596), *hath lent but this his cursed light* (1590).

P. 111, bk. II. c. vi. st. 48, l. 6, *woundred* (1596), *woundret* (1590).

P. 111, bk. II. c. vi. st. 50, l. 3, *liver swell* (1596), *livers swell* (1590).

P. 111, bk. II. c. vi. st. 51, l. 5, *fire too my* (1596), *fire only* (1590).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 1, l. 2, *to a stedfast starve*, ? to the stedfast starve, i.e. the pole-star (Church).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 3, l. 9, *fire-spitting* (1590), *fire-spelling* (1609).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 4, l. 4, *Well yet appeared* (1590), *Well it appeared* (1596).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 5, l. 6, *Ingowes* (1590), *Ingows* (1596), *Ingots* (1679).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 5, l. 9, *straunge* (1596), *strauing* (1590).

P. 112, bk. II. c. vii. st. 7, l. 3, *rich hils* (1590), *rich heapes* (1596).

P. 113, bk. II. c. vii. st. 10, l. 1, *ill beuts* (1590), *ill befts* (1609).

P. 113, bk. II. c. vii. st. 12, l. 9, *as great* (1596), *as great* (1590).

P. 114, bk. II. c. vii. st. 19, l. 5, *bloodguiltiness* (1609), *bloodguiltnease* (1590, 1596).

P. 114, bk. II. c. vii. st. 21, l. 5, *internall Payne* (1590), *infernall Payne* (1596). Perhaps *infernall Payne*=*infernal punishment* should stand in the text. Collier suggests *eternal* as an amended reading.

P. 114, bk. II. c. vii. st. 24, l. 7, *ought* (1596), *nought* (1590).

P. 115, bk. II. c. vii. st. 36, l. 4, *gron* (1596), *dying* (1590).

P. 115, bk. II. c. vii. st. 37, l. 1, *when an* (1590), *when as* (1596).

P. 116, bk. II. c. vii. st. 39, l. 8, *mesprise* (1590), *mespise* (1596).

P. 116, bk. II. c. vii. st. 40, l. 7, *golden* (1596), *groun* (1590).

P. 116, bk. II. c. ii. st. 40, l. 7, *But* (1596), *And* (1590).

P. 116, bk. II. c. vii. st. 41, l. 3, *sterne was his looke* (1590), *sterne was to looke* (1596).

P. 117, bk. II. c. vii. st. 52, l. 6, *with which*. All the old copies read *which with*.

P. 118, bk. II. c. vii. st. 60, l. 4, *intemperate* (1596), *more temperate* (1590).

P. 118, bk. II. c. vii. st. 64, l. 9, *of his pray* (1590), *of the pray* (1596).

P. 119, bk. II. c. viii. st. 3, l. 8, *Come huther*, *huther* (1609), *Come hether*, *Come hether* (1590).

P. 120, bk. II. c. viii. st. 16, l. 7, *tomb-blacke* (1596), *tombblacke* (1590).

P. 121, bk. II. c. viii. st. 25, l. 1, *Which those his cruell foes* (from the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The text of the 4tos. read:—

Which those same foes that stand hereby,
The folios (1609, 1611) have:—

Which those same foes, that doen awaite hereby.

P. 122, bk. II. c. viii. st. 29, l. 7, *uphease*. All old editions read *upreare*.

P. 122, bk. II. c. viii. st. 32, l. 3, *lodge* (1596), *lodg* (1590).

P. 122, bk. II. c. viii. st. 35, l. 5, *in his* (1590), *on his* (1609).

P. 123, bk. II. c. viii. st. 37, l. 3, *rayle* (1590), *trale* (1609).

P. 123, bk. II. c. viii. st. 40, l. 4, *so well as he it ought* (1590), *so wisely as it ought* (1609).

P. 123, bk. II. c. viii. st. 44, l. 8, *no more* (1596), *not there*, i.e. of there (1590).

P. 124, bk. II. c. viii. st. 47, l. 4, *sword* (1590), *sword* (1596).

P. 124, bk. II. c. viii. st. 47, l. 9, *this* (1590), *1596*, *1609*, *1611*, *he* (1679).

P. 124, bk. II. c. viii. st. 48, l. 8, *Prince Arthur* (1609), *Sir Guyon* (1590).

P. 124, bk. II. c. viii. st. 49, l. 7, *trud* (1590), *trud* (1596).

P. 125, bk. II. c. viii. st. 55, l. 3, *bowing with*. All the old editions read *with bowing*; but WITH is directed to be *died* among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 125, bk. II. c. ix. st. 4, l. 5, *liefe* (1590), *life* (1679).

P. 126, bk. II. c. ix. st. 6, l. 9, *Arthegall* (1596), *Arthogall* (1590).

P. 126, bk. II. c. ix. st. 7, l. 5, *Seven times the Sunne* (1590), *Now hath the Sunne* (1596).

P. 126, bk. II. c. ix. st. 7, l. 6, *Walth walke about* (1590), *Walth round about* (1596).

P. 126, bk. II. c. ix. st. 9, l. 1, *weete*. All old editions read *wote*.

P. 127, bk. II. c. ix. st. 15, l. 3, *Capitaine* (1609), *Capitaine*, (1590).

P. 127, bk. II. c. ix. st. 18, l. 3, *wood* (1596), *wooded* (1590).

P. 127, bk. II. c. ix. st. 21, l. 1, *them* (1596), *him* (1590).

P. 127, bk. II. c. ix. st. 21, l. 3, *fensible* (1590), *sensible* (1596).

P. 128, bk. II. c. ix. st. 28, l. 4, *meate* (1590), *meet* (1679).

P. 129, bk. II. c. iv. st. 37, l. 8, *doen you lore* (1609), *doen your love* (1590).

P. 129, bk. II. c. ix. st. 48, l. 2, *mood*. All old editions read *word*.

P. 129, bk. II. c. ix. st. 38, l. 9, *three years* (1590), *twelvemonths* (1596).

P. 129, bk. II. c. ix. st. 41, l. 7, *Castory* (from errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The texts of 1590, 1596 read *lastery*.

P. 129, bk. II. c. ix. st. 42, l. 1, *cheare* (1596), *cleare* (1590). If the reader prefers *cleare* (the reading which Collier prints and defends), he must take it as a substantive in the sense of clearness, serenely.

P. 130, bk. II. c. ix. st. 48, l. 3, *these* (1596), *this* (1590).

P. 130, bk. II. c. ix. st. 49, l. 4, *reason*, (so all copies). Mr. Collier says that in Drayton's copy of the fol. 1611 *reason* is altered to *season*.

P. 130, bk. II. c. ix. st. 52, l. 9, *th' house* (1609), *the house* (1590).

P. 132, bk. II. c. x. st. 6, l. 1, *For safety that* (1590), *For safetyes sake that* (1596).

P. 132, bk. II. c. x. st. 7, l. 1, *lreedn* (1590), *lived* *thor* (1596).

P. 132, bk. II. c. x. st. 7, l. 9, *sternnesse* (1596), *sternnesse* (1590).

P. 133, bk. II. c. x. st. 15, l. 9, *munificence* (1596), *munificence* (1590).

P. 133, bk. II. c. x. st. 19, l. 5, *upon the present stoure* (1590), *in that impatient stoure* (1596).

P. 133, bk. II. c. x. st. 20, l. 2, *to sway* (1590), *of sway* (1596).

P. 134, bk. II. c. x. st. 24, l. 8, *it mote* (1596), *he mote* (1590).

P. 134, bk. II. c. x. st. 30, l. 2, *weeke* (1590), *wike* (1609).

P. 134, bk. II. c. x. st. 31, l. 1, *too* (1596), *to* (1590).

P. 135, bk. II. c. x. st. 34, l. 7, *then* (1590), *till* (1596), *when* (1609).

P. 135, bk. II. c. x. st. 41, l. 1, *Gurgunt* (1590), *Gurgunt* (1596).

P. 136, bk. II. c. x. st. 43, l. 1, *Siallus*. All copies read *Siallus*.

P. 137, bk. II. c. x. st. 53, l. 2, *in great* (1590), *with great* (1609).

P. 138, bk. II. c. x. st. 65, l. 9, *have forst* (1590), *enford* (1596).

P. 140, bk. II. c. xi. st. 9, l. 9, *they that Bulwarke sorow rent* (1596), *they against that Bulwarke lent* (1590).

P. 140, bk. II. c. xi. st. 10, l. 2, *assignment* (1590), *designment* (1596).

P. 141, bk. II. c. xi. st. 11, l. 4, *dismayd* (so all editions, ancient and modern) but *mis-mayd*, i. e. *mis-made, made amiss, mis-shaped, ill-shaped* (Chilil). If this conjecture be right, and it is extremely

plausible, the comma after *ape* should be *delet*. Church thought that *dismayd*=*dismayed* (frightened), and that 'Some like to houndes, some like to apes', should be read as in a parenthesis, so that *dismayd* will refer to *friends of hell*, cf. 'ghastly spectacle *dismayd*,' F. Q. bk. III. c. iii. st. 50, l. 3.

P. 141, bk. II. c. xi. st. 14, l. 2, *is* (1590), *as* (1596).

P. 141, bk. II. c. xi. st. 13, l. 5, *assumed* (1590), *assayled* (1596).

P. 142, bk. II. c. xi. st. 21, l. 8, *there . . . there* (1609), *their . . . their* (1590).

P. 143, bk. II. c. xi. st. 30, l. 9, *survive* (among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The texts of the 4to. 1590, and folios 1609, 1611 read *revive*.

P. 143, bk. II. c. xi. st. 32, l. 5, *unrest* (1596), *infest* (1590).

P. 145, bk. II. c. xii. Arg. l. 1, *by* (1596), *through* (1590).

P. 145, bk. II. c. xii. Arg. l. 2, *passing through* (1596), *through passing* (1590).

P. 146, bk. II. c. xii. st. 1, l. 4, *hoars* (1590), *hoaræ* (1596).

P. 146, bk. II. c. xii. st. 13, l. 9, *Apolloes temple* (1590), *Apolloes honor* (1596).

P. 147, bk. II. c. xii. st. 21, l. 1, *heedful* (1596), *earnest* (1590).

P. 147, bk. II. c. xii. st. 23, l. 9, *monoceroses* (Chilil), *monoceros* (1590).

P. 148, bk. II. c. xii. st. 27, l. 4, *sea resounding* (1609), *sea the resounding* (1590).

P. 149, bk. II. c. xii. st. 39, l. 8, *upstaring* (1590), *upstaring* (1596).

P. 149, bk. II. c. xii. st. 43, l. 7, *mightiest* (1596), *might* (1590).

P. 150, bk. II. c. xii. st. 47, l. 6, *foresee* (1609), *forsee* (1590).

P. 150, bk. II. c. xii. st. 51, l. 1, *Therewith* (1590), *Thereto* (1596).

P. 150, bk. II. c. xii. st. 54, l. 7, *Hyacine* (1611), *Hyacin* (1590).

P. 151, bk. II. c. xii. st. 60, l. 5, *curious ymageree* (1590), *pure ymageree* (1609).

P. 151, bk. II. c. xii. st. 61, l. 8, *fearefully* (1590), *tenderly* (1596).

P. 153, bk. II. c. xii. st. 76, l. 8, *That* (1596), *Thot* (1590).

P. 153, bk. II. c. xii. st. 77, l. 5, *atablaster* (1590), *1596*, *1609*, *1611*, *alabaster* (1679).

P. 153, bk. II. c. xii. st. 81, l. 4, *that same* (1596), *the same* (1590).

P. 154, bk. II. c. xii. st. 83, l. 7, *spoyld* (1590), *spoyld* (1596).

P. 155, bk. III. c. i. Prol. st. 1, l. 2, *The fayrest* (1590), *That fayrest* (1596).

P. 155, bk. III. c. i. Prol. st. 4, l. 2, *thy selfe thou* (1590), *yom selfe you* (1596).

P. 155, bk. III. c. i. Arg. l. 3, *Malcastaes* (from errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The texts of 4tos. 1590, 1596, and folios 1609, 1611, read *Malcastaes*.

P. 160, bk. III. c. i. st. 41, l. 8, *lightly* (1609), *hugly* (1590).

P. 160, bk. III. c. i. st. 47, l. 7, *which* (1596), *that* (1590).

P. 160, bk. III. c. i. st. 48, l. 2, *brust* (1590), *burst* (1609).

P. 161, bk. III. c. i. st. 56, l. 8, *Nascimano* (1590), *Nascio nani* (1609).

P. 162, bk. III. c. i. st. 60, l. 8, *wary* (1609), *weary* (1590).

P. 162, bk. III. c. i. st. 60, l. 9, *fond* (1590), *fund* (1609).

P. 163, bk. III. c. ii. st. 3, l. 6, *tr* (1596), *to* (1590).

P. 163, bk. III. c. ii. st. 4, l. 1, *She traveling with Guyon by the way* (so all old editions). Upton proposed to read the *Redcrosse Knight* instead of *Guyon*. Todd suggested *Redcrosse*, and Drayton, according to Collier, proposed *S. George*.

P. 163, bk. III. c. ii. st. 8, l. 5, *Which to prove* (1590), *Which I to prove* (1596).

P. 164, bk. III. c. ii. st. 15, l. 4, *allegge* (1590), *alledge* (1679).

P. 164, bk. III. c. ii. st. 16, l. 9, *part* (1590), *point* (1609). Mr. Collier says that Todd was a careless collator, yet Todd is right in saying that the folios read *point*, and Mr. Collier is wrong in asserting that they read *part*.

P. 166, bk. III. c. iii. st. 30, l. 5, *her in her warme bed* (1590), *in her warme bed her dight* (1596).

P. 167, bk. III. c. ii. st. 44, l. 1, *minde* (1590), *mine* (1609).

P. 168, bk. III. c. ii. st. 50, l. 2, *breaded* (1590), *braided* (1609).

P. 168, bk. III. c. iii. st. 1, l. 1, *Most* (1590), *th* (1609).

P. 169, bk. III. c. iii. st. 3, l. 1, *dived* (1590), *drad* (1609).

P. 169, bk. III. c. iii. st. 4, l. 8, *protense* (1590), *prerence* (1596).

P. 171, bk. III. c. iii. st. 23, l. 5, *shall* (1590), *all* (1679).

P. 171, bk. III. c. iii. st. 29, l. 1, *with* (1590), *where* (1596).

P. 172, bk. III. c. iii. st. 35, l. 1, *thy* (1590), *the* (1596).

P. 172, bk. III. c. iii. st. 37, l. 7, *their* (1590), *the* (1596).

P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 44, l. 5, *yeares* (in 1590) is omitted by the 4to. 1596 and fol. 1609, and *full* is inserted to render the line complete.

P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 44, l. 6, *Ere they to former rule, &c.* (1596), *Ere they unto their former rule* (1590).

P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 50, l. 9, *Hee* (from the errata in *Faulis* escaped in the print). The text of 4to. 1590 reads *she*, and omits *as earst*, which are supplied from the fol. 1609.

P. 174, bk. III. c. iii. st. 53, l. 3, *need makes good schollers teach* (1590), *whom need new strength shall teach* (1596).

P. 175, bk. III. c. iv. st. 5, l. 8, *she* (1596), *he* (1590).

P. 176, bk. III. c. iv. st. 8, l. 9, *thys* (1590), *these* (1596).

P. 176, bk. III. c. iv. st. 15, l. 6, *speare* (1609), *speares* (1590).

P. 178, bk. III. c. iv. st. 27, l. 6, *feshly* (1596), *feshy* (1590).

P. 178, bk. III. c. iv. st. 30, l. 6, *sowone* (1596), *sowond* (1590).

P. 178, bk. III. c. iv. st. 33, l. 4, *raynes* (1590), *traynes* (1596).

P. 179, bk. III. c. iv. st. 39, l. 9, *uth we no more shall meet* (1596), *till we againe may meet* (1590).

P. 179, bk. III. c. iv. st. 40, l. 6, *gelly-blood* (1590), *jelly'd blood* (1611).

P. 179, bk. III. c. iv. st. 43, l. 4, *vaulted* (1590), *vaulted* (1609).

P. 180, bk. III. c. iv. st. 46, l. 2, *great* (1596), *gr et* (1590).

P. 180, bk. III. c. iv. st. 48, l. 1, *off* (1590), *of* (1596).

P. 180, bk. III. c. iv. st. 49, l. 8, *forhent* (1590), *forehen* (1609).

P. 181, bk. III. c. iv. st. 59, l. 5, *Dayes dearest children be* (1596), *The children of day be* (1590).

P. 182, bk. III. c. v. st. 3, l. 2, *till that at last* (1590), *till at the last* (1609).

P. 184, bk. III. c. v. st. 13, l. 5, *no* (1596), *now* (1590).

P. 184, bk. III. c. v. st. 21, l. 9, *blood*. The 4to. 1590 reads *flood*, (1596) *blood*.

P. 185, bk. III. c. v. st. 30, l. 7, *better* (1596), *butter* (1590).

P. 185, bk. III. c. v. st. 37, l. 3, *did* (1590) ? *had* (Collier).

P. 186, bk. III. c. v. st. 39, l. 9, *his* (1596), *their* (1590).

P. 186, bk. III. c. v. st. 40, l. 4, *loves sweet trene* (1596), *sweet loves terne* (1590).

P. 186, bk. III. c. v. st. 40, l. 9, *liking* (1590), *living* (1596).

P. 186, bk. III. c. v. st. 44, l. 5, *bountie* ? *beautie* (Collier).

P. 187, bk. III. c. iv. st. 50, l. 8, *to all th* (1590), *to* is omitted in *fol.* 1609.

P. 187, bk. III. c. v. st. 51, l. 9, *let to* (1590), *let it* (1611). Collier is wrong in contradicting Todd's assertion that the fol. 1611 reads *let it*.

P. 187, bk. III. c. v. st. 53, l. 9, *weare* (1609), *were* (1590).

P. 188, bk. III. c. vi. st. 3, l. 9, *were* (1590), *was* (1596).

P. 188, bk. III. c. vi. st. 5, l. 3, *barr* (1596), *bore* (1590).

P. 188, bk. III. c. vi. st. 6, l. 5, *his beante*. The fol. of 1609 has *his hot beante*.

P. 189, bk. III. c. vi. st. 12, l. 2, *aspret*. The 4to. 1590 reads *asprets*.

P. 189, bk. III. c. vi. st. 12, l. 4, *beautie* (1590), *beauties* (1596).

P. 190, bk. III. c. vi. st. 20, l. 5, *chaunge* . . . *straunge*. The 4to. 1590 reads *chaung* . . . *straung*; the 4to. 1596 has *chaunge*, *straunge*.

P. 190, bk. III. c. vi. st. 25, l. 5, *Whic* as (1609), *From which* (4tos. 1590, 1596). Church proposed to read *of which a fountainne, &c.*

P. 190, bk. III. c. vi. st. 26, l. 4, *both farre and neare* (1596), omitted in the 4to. 1590.

P. 191, bk. III. c. vi. st. 28, l. 6, *thence* (1590), *hence* (1596).

P. 191, bk. III. c. vi. st. 29, l. 5, *Onidus* (1596), *Onidas* (1590).

P. 192, bk. III. c. vi. st. 39, l. 1, *and to all* (1590), *to* is omitted in fol. 1611.

P. 192, bk. III. c. vi. st. 40, l. 6, *saw*. All the old copies read *spide*.

P. 192, bk. III. c. vi. st. 42, l. 5, *heavy* (1596), *heaventy* (1590).

P. 192, bk. III. c. vi. st. 45, l. 4, *And dearest love* (in 1609), omitted in the 4to.

P. 192, bk. III. c. vi. st. 45, l. 5, *Marcusse* (1596), *Marcusse* (1590).

P. 193, bk. III. c. vi. st. 48, l. 9, *losen* (1590), *loosen* (1600).

P. 193, bk. III. c. vi. st. 52, l. 9, *launched* (1596), *launch* (1590), *launzel* (1609).

P. 193, bk. III. c. vii. Arg. l. 4, *Gyaunts*. It is *Gymant* in 1590, and *Gyaunts* in 1596.

P. 193, bk. III. c. vii. st. 1, l. 8, *she did* (1596), *he did* (1590).

P. 194, bk. III. c. vii. st. 5, l. 1, *the tops* (1590), *th' tops* (1609).

P. 194, bk. III. c. vii. st. 9, l. 3, *to* (1596), *two* (1590).

P. 195, bk. III. c. vii. st. 13, l. 6, *hath* (1590), *had* (1609).

P. 195, bk. III. c. vii. st. 18, l. 5, *Might by the wick or by her sonne compass* (1590). The verb *be* must be under-lood before *compass*. *Might be the wick or that her sonne* (1596).

P. 195, bk. III. c. vii. st. 19, l. 6, *her* (1590), *that* (1609).

P. 196, bk. III. c. vii. st. 23, l. 4, *he* (1596), *she* (1590).

P. 197, bk. III. c. vii. st. 32, l. 7, *muchell* (1596), *much ill* (1611). Collier is wrong in contradicting Todd's assertion respecting the location of the fol. 1611.

P. 198, bk. III. c. vii. st. 43, l. 8, *nerre*. The 4to. 1590 has *nerre*; the 4to. 1596 *nerre*.

P. 198, bk. III. c. vii. st. 45, l. 5, *from him* (1590), *him from* (1609).

P. 198, bk. III. c. vii. st. 46, l. 8, *the* (1590), *that* (1596).

P. 198, bk. III. c. vii. st. 48, l. 4, *And many hath to &c.* (1596), *Tell him Chyldre Thopas to &c.* (1596).

P. 200, bk. III. c. viii. st. 2, l. 7, *golden* (1590), *broken* (1596).

P. 200, bk. III. c. viii. st. 5, l. 1, *advice*:—*device* (1590), *advise* (1596).

P. 201, bk. III. c. viii. st. 6, l. 7, *wex* (1590), *was* (1609).

P. 201, bk. III. c. viii. st. 7, l. 4, *to womens* (1590), *a romans* (1596).

P. 201, bk. III. c. viii. st. 9, l. 9, *whom* (1609), *who* (4to.).

P. 202, bk. III. c. viii. st. 17, l. 3, *brought*, *through*. The 4to. 1590 has *brought*, *through*.

P. 203, bk. III. c. viii. st. 25, l. 6, *hoid*. It is *hand* in all old editions.

P. 204, bk. III. c. viii. st. 30, l. 3, *frory* (1609), *frony* (1590), but see p. 204, st. 35, l. 2.

P. 204, bk. III. c. viii. st. 32, l. 7, *Hyg*. . . *assoght* (so all the old editions). Church proposed to read *Dud*. . . *assoght*.

P. 203, bk. III. c. viii. st. 33, l. 9, *her by* (1590), *thereby* (1596).

P. 204, bk. III. c. viii. st. 37, l. 9, *hight* (1596), *hugh* (1590).

P. 205, bk. III. c. viii. st. 47, l. 5, *surely*. Upton suggested *soverly*.

P. 205, bk. III. c. viii. st. 49, l. 2, *T'hare* (1596), *To have* (1590).

P. 206, bk. III. c. ix. st. 2, l. 4, *attonce* (1596), *attonce* (1590).

P. 206, bk. III. c. ix. st. 7, l. 3, *misdonne* (1596), *distonne* (1590).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 20, l. 9, *persant* (1590), *percent* (1609), *present* (1611).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 22, l. 1, *Bellona* (1590), *Minerva* (1596).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 22, l. 5, *her speare* (1590), *the speare* (1596).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 27, l. 5, *that glaunces* (1609), *with glaunces* (1590).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 27, l. 7, *demeaus* *ure* (1590), *demeaus* (1609).

P. 209, bk. III. c. ix. st. 32, l. 8, *glad* (1596), *ygglad* (1590).

P. 209, bk. III. c. ix. st. 37, l. 7, *glories* (1590), *glorie*, 1609, *glorious* (1611, 1679).

P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 41, l. 9, *remout* (1590), *remou'd* (1609), *remou'd* (1679).

P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 45, l. 3, *neck* (1596), *necks* (1590).

P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 47, l. 3, *heard* (1596), *hard* (1590).

P. 211, bk. III. c. ix. st. 49, l. 4, *Which, after rest* (1596), *And after rest* (1609).

P. 211, bk. III. c. x. st. 2, l. 2, *grievously* (1596), *grievously* (1590).

P. 212, bk. III. c. x. st. 1, l. 9, *to* (1596), *with* (1590).

P. 213, bk. III. c. x. st. 18, l. 4, *Then* (1596), *So* (1590).

P. 213, bk. III. c. x. st. 21, l. 9, *earned* (1590), *yearned* (1609).

P. 214, bk. III. c. x. st. 31, l. 3, *and with thy* (1596), *that with thy* (1590).

P. 214, bk. III. c. x. st. 31, l. 7, *vertues pay* (1609), *vertuous pray* (1590).

P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 33, l. 7, *over-ronne*. It is *overonne* in 1590.

P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 40, l. 1, *addresse*. All old copies have *addrest*.

P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 40, l. 3, *wastefull* (1596), *faulthfull* (1590).

P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 41, l. 7, *wide forest*, (1590), *wild forest* (1609).

P. 216, bk. III. c. x. st. 47, l. 1, *the* (1609), *his* (1590).

P. 218, bk. III. c. xi. st. 2, l. 3, *golden* (1609), *golding* (1590).

P. 218, bk. III. c. xi. st. 1, l. 4, *all that I ever*, &c. (1590), *that I did ever*, &c. (1596).

P. 218, bk. III. c. xi. st. 6, l. 6, *has* (1590), *was* (1611). Collier is wrong in contradicting Todd's assertion respecting the reading of the fol. 1611.

P. 218, bk. III. c. xi. st. 7, l. 6, *of* (1590), *off* (1596).

P. 219, bk. III. c. xi. st. 12, l. 1, *singulls* (1609), *singulifas* (1590).

P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 19, *death* (1590), *? life* (Jordan).

P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 22, l. 8, *the which* (1596). In 4to. 1590 *the* is omitted.

P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 23, l. 2, *Inglorious*, *beastlike*. The 4to. 1590 reads *Inglorious* and *beastlike*. In fol. 1611 *and* is omitted. Collier is wrong in saying that no old edition omits *and*.

P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 27, l. 7, *entred* (1596), *decled* (1590).

P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 28, l. 8, *Like a* (1596), *Like to a* (1590).

P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 33, l. 9, *her* (1590), *his* (1609).

P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 36, l. 7, *thee* (1596), *the* (1590).

P. 222, bk. III. c. xi. st. 38, l. 5, *fire* (1590), *fler* (1596).

P. 222, bk. III. c. xi. st. 39, l. 6, *each other* (1596), *his other* (1590).

P. 222, bk. III. c. xi. st. 39, l. 8, *stag* (suggested by Jortin). All old copies read *Mg*.

P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 47, l. 9, *heavens hight* (suggested by Church). All old editions read *heren bright*.

P. 221, bk. III. c. xii. st. 7, l. 8, *wood* (1596), *word* (1590).

P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 9, l. 3, *other* (1609), *others* (1596).

P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 12, l. 3, *too or free* (1590), *to and fro* (1596).

P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 12, l. 6, *winged* (1590), *wingy* (1596).

P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 17, l. 6, *did tosse* (so all copies). Church would omit *did*, and for *tosse* read *lost*: *In her right hand a herbrand she lost*.

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 18, l. 5, *drad* (1596), *drad* (1590).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 18, l. 8, *hony-laden*. All old editions read *hony-lady*.

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 21, l. 7, *fading*. Church thinks that Spenser meant to write *failing*.

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 21, l. 8, *still* (1596), *skill* (1590).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 23, l. 5, *hand* is omitted in 4tos., but is among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 26, l. 7, *by the* (1590), *with that* (1596).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 27, l. 3, *and bore all away* (1596), *nothing did remaine* (1590).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 27, l. 8, *It* (1590), *In* (1611). Collier is wrong respecting the reading of the folios.

P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 28, l. 1, *there* (1609). The 4tos. read *their*.

P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 29, l. 1, *wandering* (1590), *wondering* (1611).

P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 33, l. 3, *to herselfe* (1596), *to the next* (1590).

P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 34, l. 4, *unto her* (1609), *unto him* (1590).

P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 38, l. 5, *bor'd* (1596), *so'r'd*, i. e. made sore, hurt (1590).

P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 40, l. 6, *faire Lady* (1596), *faire Lad* (1590).

P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 45, l. 9, *Whiled here I doe respire*.

When Spenser printed his first three books of the 'Fairie Queene' the two lovers, Sir Scudamore and Amoret, have a happy meeting: but afterwards, when he printed the fourth, fifth, and sixth books, he reprinted likewise the first three books; and, among other alterations, he left out the five last stanzas and made three new stanzas, viz. 43, 44, 45. *More ease is seen now*, &c. By these alterations this third book not only connects better with the fourth, but the reader is kept in that suspense which is necessary in a well-told story. The stanzas which are mentioned above as omitted in the second edition, and printed in the first, are the following;—

43.

"At last she came unto the place, where late
"She left Sir Scudamore in great distresse,
"Twixt dolour and despaight halfe desperate,
"Of his lones succour, of his owne redresse;
"And of the hardie Britomarts successe:
"There on the cold earth him now throwen she
"found,
"In wilfull anguish and dead heavinesse,
"And to him cold; whose voices knownen sound
"Sogn as he heard, himself he reared light from
"ground.

44.

"There did he see, that most on earth him joyd,
"His dearest lone, the comfort of his dayes,
"Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd,
"And wearied his life with dull delays.
"Straight he upstart from the loathed layes,
"And to her ran with hasty egernesse,
"Like as a Deare, that greedily embayes
"In the cool soile, after long thirstinesse,
"Which he if, chace endured hath, now nigh
"breathlesse.

45.

"Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes twaine
"And straightly did embrace her body bright,
"Her body, late the prison of sad paine,
"Now the sweet lodge of lone and deare delight:
"But she, faire Lady, overcomen quight
"Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,
"And in sweet ravishment pourd out her
"spright.
"No word they spake, nor earthly thing they
"felt,
"But like two senseles stocks in long embracement
"dwelt.

46.

"Had ye them scene, ye would have surely thought
"That they had bene that faire Hermaphrodite,
"Which that rich Romans of white marble
"wrought,
"And in his costly Bath causd to bee site.
"So seemd those two, as growne together quite,
"That Britomart, halfe envying their blosse,
"Was much empasion'd in her gentle sprite,
"And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse:
"In vain she wisht, that fate n'ould let her yet
"possesse.

47.

"Thus doe those lones, with sweet countervayle,
"Each other of lones bitter fruit despoile.
"But, now my time begins to faint and faile,
"All woxen weary of their journall toyle:
"Therefore I will their sweetie yokes assayle
"At this same furrowes end, till a new day;
"And ye, faire Swaynes, after your long turneyle,
"Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure
"play:
"Now cease your work; to morrow is a holy day."

P. 229, bk. IV. c. i. l. 4, *Triamond*. All the early editions have *Triamond*.

P. 231, bk. IV. c. i. st. 16, l. 4, *griefull* (1596), *griefe-full* (1609).

P. 231, bk. IV. c. i. st. 16, l. 7, *none* (1596), *one* (1609).

P. 236, bk. IV. c. ii. st. 2, l. 5, *concented* (1596), *consented* (1679).

- P. 237, bk. iv. c. ii. st. 19, l. 1, *besitting* (1596), *bestitting* (1679).
- P. 238, bk. iv. c. ii. st. 22, l. 7, *avizing*. The 4tos. have *advinz*, the folios *avizing*.
- P. 241, bk. iv. c. ii. st. 52, l. 9, *so be* (1596), *be so* (?)
- P. 242, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 7, l. 4, *skill* (1600), *sill*, (1596).
- P. 242, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 8, l. 8, *avengement* (1600), *advengement* (1596).
- P. 242, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 9, l. 6, *n'ote* (1599), *not* (1596).
- P. 243, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 13, l. 8, *other brethren* (so all copies). It should be *second brother* (Church).
- P. 243, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 20, l. 1, *adventure* (so all copies). It has been proposed to read *advantage*; but *adventure*=opportunity.
- P. 245, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 36, l. 3, *wards* (so all copies). Church proposed to read *swords*.
- P. 247, bk. iv. c. iii. st. 52, l. 9, *elsewhere* (1609), *elacere* (1596).
- P. 247, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 1, l. 4, *minds* (1596), *lres* (1609).
- P. 247, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 2, l. 3, *als* (1609), *els* (1596).
- P. 247, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 2, l. 4, *Blandamour* (1679), *Scudamour* (1596).
- P. 248, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 8, l. 2, *Ferrau* (1609), *Ferrat* (1596).
- P. 248, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 10, l. 5, *worse* (1609), *worst* (1596).
- P. 249, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 17, l. 4, *maiden-headed* (1596). ? *satyr-headed* (Church).
- P. 249, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 24, l. 9, *second*. The 4to. has *sound*.
- P. 249, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 24, l. 1, *beam-like* (1609), *bravetike* (1596).
- P. 250, bk. iv. c. iv. st. 29, l. 6, *cuffing* (1611), *cuffing* (1596).
- P. 252, bk. iv. c. v. st. 4, l. 4, *Lemno* (1596), *Lemnos* (1611).
- P. 253, bk. iv. c. v. st. 5, l. 5, *Acudaisan* (1596), *Aridalian* (1609).
- P. 253, bk. iv. c. v. st. 6, l. 8, *Martian* (1596), ? *marthal*.
- P. 254, bk. iv. c. v. st. 16, l. 1, *that* (1596), *the* (1609).
- P. 254, bk. iv. c. v. st. 21, l. 8, *one* (so all old copies). Hughes reads *own*.
- P. 254, bk. iv. c. v. st. 23, l. 7, *sene* (1596), *sine* (1609).
- P. 255, bk. iv. c. v. st. 25, l. 5, *one* (1609), *once* (1596).
- P. 255, bk. iv. c. v. st. 31, l. 3, *his* (1609), *her* (1596).
- P. 256, bk. iv. c. v. st. 35, l. 4, *unpared* (1596), *prepared* (1611).
- P. 256, bk. iv. c. v. st. 37, l. 2, *Pyracmon* (1609). Ed. 1596 reads *lynacmon*.
- P. 256, bk. iv. c. v. st. 40, l. 7, *wheresoever* (1596), *wheresoere* (1611).
- P. 260, bk. iv. c. vi. st. 24, l. 8, *fears* (1609), *hus fears* (1596).
- P. 260, bk. iv. c. vi. st. 28, l. 6, *Ilum* (proposed by Upton and Church). *Her* (1596). *He* (1609).
- P. 261, bk. iv. c. vi. st. 33, l. 6, *ranging* (1596), *raging* (1611).
- P. 262, bk. iv. c. vi. st. 44, l. 4, *in* (1596); Some modern editors, following fol. 1609, alter to *on*.
- P. 262, bk. iv. c. vi. st. 46, l. 5, *whom* (1609), *who* (1596).
- P. 262, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 1, l. 1, *dur's* (1609), *dart* (1596).
- P. 263, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 10, l. 9, *over-sight* (1596), *ore-sight* (1609).
- P. 264, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 12, l. 1, *capture* (1596). Some editors have proposed to read *captur*.
- P. 265, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 22, l. 1, *Nor hedge* (1596). Mr. J. L. Collier proposes to read *For hedge*.
- P. 265, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 23, l. 3, *to* (1596) is omitted in 1679.
- P. 265, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 25, l. 1, *which* (1609), *with* (1596).
- P. 266, bk. iv. c. vii. st. 34, l. 1, *sad* (1609), *said* (1596).
- P. 267, bk. iv. c. viii. st. 1, l. 9, *infixed* (1596), *infected* (1611).
- P. 268, bk. iv. c. viii. st. 9, l. 9, *partake* (1596), *partake* (1609).
- P. 268, bk. iv. c. viii. st. 12, l. 3, *her* (suggested by Church), *him* (1596).
- P. 274, bk. iv. c. viii. st. 64, l. 1, *this* (1596), *hus* (1609).
- P. 274, bk. iv. c. ix. Arg. l. 2, *Amylia* (suggested by Church), *Peanne* (1596).
- P. 274, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 1, l. 8, *vertuous* (1609), *vertues* (1596).
- P. 274, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 3, l. 3, *these* (1596), *this* (1609).
- P. 275, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 11, l. 9, *them* (suggested by Church), *him* (1596).
- P. 275, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 12, l. 2, *he* (1596), ? *they or was* (Church).
- P. 276, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 14, l. 8, *dyde=dyed*, complexioned. Church suggested *eyde*.
- P. 276, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 17, l. 5, *quest*. It is *quest* in 1596 and in all old copies.
- P. 276, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 17, l. 7, *bequest* (1596), *request* (1611).
- P. 277, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 23, l. 8, *wide*. Mr. J. P. Collier says that in Drayton's copy of the fol. of 1611 *wide* is suggested as an emendation for *wide*.
- P. 277, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 26, l. 1, *Then gan* (proposed by Church). In 1596 it is *their gan*, in 1611 *there gan*.
- P. 277, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 30, l. 8, *repayed* (1609), *repayed* (1596).
- P. 278, bk. iv. c. ix. st. 37, l. 2, *Knight* (1596), ? *Knights* (Upton).
- P. 278, bk. iv. c. x. st. 7, l. 9, *ancient* (1609), *ancients* (1596).
- P. 280, bk. iv. c. x. st. 9, l. 1, *earne* (1596), *yearne* (1611).
- P. 280, bk. iv. c. x. st. 17, l. 5, *adward* (1596), *award* (1609).
- P. 281, bk. iv. c. x. st. 19, l. 1, *meanest* (1609), *nearest* (1596).
- P. 281, bk. iv. c. x. st. 23, l. 2, *ghesse* (1596), *bee* (1609).
- P. 281, bk. iv. c. x. st. 23, l. 8, *to bee* (1596), *to ghesse* (1609), *I ghesse* (1611).
- P. 281, bk. iv. c. x. st. 26, l. 9, *aspire* (1596), *inspire* (1611).
- P. 281, bk. iv. c. x. st. 27, l. 1, *Hyllus* (1596), *Hylus* (1609).

P. 282, bk. iv. c. x. st. 35, l. 6, *hell* (so all copies). Some editors have suggested *mell*=confound; but *hell*=O.E. *hill* or *hele*=cover, which agrees with its nominative *waters*. And *five de-voure the ayre* is a parenthetical clause.

P. 284, bk. iv. c. x. st. 51, l. 9, *girlonds* (so all editions), ? *garadians* (Church), ? *guerlonds* (J. P. Collier).

P. 284, bk. iv. c. x. st. 53, l. 8, *warre* (1596), ? *wearre* (Church and Upton).

P. 285, bk. iv. c. x. st. 56, l. 4, *at* (1596), *on* (1609).

P. 285, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 1, l. 2, *dredd* (1596), *drad* (1609).

P. 285, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 4, l. 6, *seven* (1596), *three* (1609).

P. 287, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 17, l. 6, *age*. All old copies read *times*.

P. 287, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 19, l. 4, *fortold* (1596), *foretold* (1611).

P. 289, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 34, l. 5, *Grant* (Child). The ed. of 1596 reads *Gunt*.

P. 290, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 45, l. 1, *lovely* (1596), *loring* (1609).

P. 290, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 48, l. 8, *Endore* (1596), read *Eudore* (Child).

P. 290, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 52, l. 7, *but* (so all copies). Some editors have proposed to read *both*.

P. 292, bk. iv. c. xii. st. 13, l. 1, 2, *Thus whilst*, &c. (1596).

Thus whilst his stony heart was toucht with, & And mightly courage something mollified (1609).

P. 293, bk. iv. c. xii. st. 24, l. 9, *That it was no, old sore* (1596), *That no old sore it was* (1611).

P. 295, bk. v. Prol. st. 2, l. 2, *at* (1596), *as* (1611).

P. 295, bk. v. Prol. st. 2, l. 9, *deyendered* (1596), *degenerated* (1611).

P. 296, bk. v. Prol. st. 7, l. 8, *thirte* (1596), ? *thirteen*.

P. 296, bk. v. Prol. st. 9, l. 4, *ne* (1596), *no* (1611).

P. 296, bk. v. Prol. st. 11, l. 2, *stead* (1609), *place* (1596).

P. 297, bk. v. c. i. st. 4, l. 1, *Irena* (1609), *Eirna* (1596).

P. 300, bk. v. c. ii. Arg. l. 3, *Munera*, &c. The 4to. has *Momera*. The correct reading was adopted by Hughes.

P. 300, bk. v. c. ii. st. 2, l. 7, *As to his* (1609), *And to his* (1596).

P. 300, bk. v. c. ii. st. 4, l. 1, *he* (1609), *she* (1596).

P. 301, bk. v. c. ii. st. 11, l. 4, *When as*. All editions read *Who as*. Church proposed to read *Tho as=then as*.

P. 303, bk. v. c. ii. st. 32, l. 4, *earth* (1609), *care* (1596).

P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 38, l. 1, *thex* (1596), *those* (1609).

P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 44, l. 4, *way* (1596), *weng* (1609).

P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 45, l. 8, *weight* (so all editions), ? *scale* (Church).

P. 306, bk. v. c. ii. st. 46, l. 9, *ray* (1596), *lay* (1609).

P. 308, bk. v. c. iii. st. 20, l. 2, *advised* (so all editions). Upton suggested *had viewed*.

P. 310, bk. v. c. iii. st. 40, l. 6, *we here* (1609), *were here* (1596).

P. 310, bk. v. c. iv. st. 1, l. 3, *Had neede have* (1596), *Had need of* (1611).

P. 311, bk. v. c. iv. st. 8, l. 8, *doure* (1596), *downe* (1609).

P. 313, bk. v. c. iv. st. 22, l. 2, *pinned* (1596), *pinned* (1611).

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 36, l. 1, *watchman* (1609), *watchmen* (1596).

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 36, l. 8, *halfe like a man* (1596), *as m'd like a man* (1609).

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 37, l. 3, *so few* (so all copies). Church proposed to alter *neare* in l. 1 to *new*, so as to rhyme with *few*. Mr. J. P. Collier proposes to read to *feare* instead of *so few*, thus making a suitable rhyme for *neare*.

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 37, l. 6, *there* (1596), *their* (1611).

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 39, l. 3, *doale* . . . *divide* (1609), *daile* . . . *davide* (1596).

P. 323, bk. v. c. vi. st. 5, l. 6, 7, *For houres*, &c. (so all editions); but we ought to read, says Church,

For dayes, but houres; for moneths that passed were, She told but weekes, &c.

P. 323, bk. v. c. vi. st. 13, l. 9, *singults* (1609), *singults* (1596).

P. 321, bk. v. c. vi. st. 16, l. 7, *things compacte*. Mr. J. P. Collier, following Church, reads *thing compacte*=a concerted thing. But the clause may stand if we look upon *things* as in the genitive case.

P. 324, bk. v. c. vi. st. 17, l. 5, *Ileard* (1609), *Here* (1596).

P. 325, bk. v. c. vi. st. 24, l. 1, *their* (1596), *her* (1609).

P. 325, bk. v. c. vi. st. 25, l. 9, *nights*. Church suggested *Anights*.

P. 325, bk. v. c. vi. st. 29, l. 6, *glims* (1596), *glims* (1609), *glimpse* (1679).

P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 32, l. 7, *ad* (1596), ? *had*.

P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 34, l. 7, *avenge* (1596), *revenge* (1609).

P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 34, l. 7, *their* (1596), *that* (1611).

P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 35, l. 5, *vide* (1596), *vile* (1609).

P. 327, bk. v. c. vii. st. 6, l. 9, *her wreathed* (1596), ? *his wreathed* (Church).

P. 328, bk. v. c. vii. st. 13, l. 5, *to robe* (1596), *to be* (1611).

P. 331, bk. v. c. vii. st. 38, l. 5, *bad* (1596), *sad* (1609).

P. 331, bk. v. c. vii. st. 42, l. 3, *Princess* (1609), *Princes* (1596).

P. 335, bk. v. c. viii. st. 31, l. 8, *curat* (1596), *curas* (1679).

P. 336, bk. v. c. viii. st. 40, l. 6, *knownen* (1609), *knowne* (1596).

P. 337, bk. v. c. viii. st. 48, l. 6, *whether* (1596), *whither* (1609).

P. 337, bk. v. c. viii. st. 50, l. 8, *cowheard* (1596), *coward* (1609).

P. 339, bk. v. c. ix. st. 21, l. 1, *knight* (1596), *knight* (1611).

P. 340, bk. v. c. ix. st. 26, l. 4, *Font*. The 4to. of 1596 reads *Fons*.

P. 341, bk. v. c. ix. st. 3d, 1. 8, *rebellious* (1609), *rebellious* (1596).

P. 342, bk. v. c. ix. st. 4d, 1. 1, *oppose* (1596), *oppose* (1609).

P. 343, bk. v. c. x. st. 6, 1. 4, *and her* (1609), *and of her* (1596).

P. 344, bk. v. c. x. st. 8, 1. 4, *Idols ? Idol* (Church).

P. 345, bk. v. c. x. st. 18, 1. 8, *fastnesse* (1596), *safenesse* (1611).

P. 345, bk. v. c. x. st. 23, 1. 1, *whether* (1596), *whither* (1611).

P. 345, bk. v. c. x. st. 23, 1. 4, *threatning* (1596), *threatning* (1611).

P. 346, bk. v. c. x. st. 26, 1. 3, *so now ? now so* (Church).

P. 347, bk. v. c. x. st. 37, 1. 6, *hard preased* (1596), *had preaced* (1609).

P. 348, bk. v. c. xi. st. 5, 1. 9, *have river* (1596), *not river* (1611).

P. 349, bk. v. c. xi. st. 12, 1. 4, *to them* (1596), *on them* (1609).

P. 349, bk. v. c. xi. st. 13, 1. 9, *through* (1609).
Ed. 1596 reads *thorough*.

P. 352, bk. v. c. xi. st. 40, 1. 6, *shall sure* *aby*. The 4to. 1596 omits the two words *shall, sure*, which are supplied from the folio 1611.

P. 352, bk. v. c. xi. st. 41, 1. 2, *too blame* (1596), *to blame* (1609).

P. 352, bk. v. c. xi. st. 41, 1. 6, *know* (suggested by Upton), *knew* (1596).

P. 353, bk. v. c. xi. st. 54, 1. 9, *corruptfull* (1596), *corrupted* (1609).

P. 354, bk. v. c. xi. st. 61, 1. 7, *meed* (so all editions). The rhyme requires *hure* (Church).

P. 354, bk. v. c. xi. st. 61, 1. 8, *froward* (1609), *forward* (1596).

P. 354, bk. v. c. xii. st. 1, 1. 9, *enduren* (1609), *endure* (1596).

P. 355, bk. v. c. xii. st. 5, 1. 9, *the Eagle* (1596), *th' Eagle* (1609).

P. 356, bk. v. c. xii. st. 17, 1. 5, *such* (1596), *sure* (1609).

P. 356, bk. v. c. xii. st. 19, 1. 2, *shame* (1596), *harme* (Collier).

P. 357, bk. v. c. xii. st. 30, 1. 6, *hungry* (1596), *hungrily* (1609).

P. 360, bk. vi. c. i. st. 6, 1. 9, *fame* (adopted by Collier), *name* (1596).

P. 362, bk. vi. c. i. st. 8, 1. 7, *wretched* (1596), *wicked* (1611).

P. 364, bk. vi. c. i. st. 28, 1. 6, *ere he* (1609), *ere thou* (1596).

P. 364, bk. vi. c. i. st. 34, 1. 2, *sound* (adopted by Child), *sound* (1596).

P. 365, bk. vi. c. i. st. 37, 1. 5, *potshares* (1596), *potshards* (1611).

P. 365, bk. vi. c. i. st. 40, 1. 9, *yearne* (1596), *earne* (1609).

P. 366, bk. vi. c. ii. st. 3, 1. 2, *deed and word* (1609), *act and deed* (1596).

P. 366, bk. vi. c. ii. st. 3, 1. 3, *eares*. All old editions read *eyes*.

P. 366, bk. vi. c. ii. st. 3, 1. 4, *eyes*. All old editions read *eares*.

P. 370, bk. vi. c. ii. st. 39, 1. 2, *implements* (1596), *ornaments* (1609).

P. 371, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 1, 1. 3, *a man* (1596). In 1679 *a* is omitted.

P. 372, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 12, 1. 7, *save hole* (1596), *salve hole* (1611).

P. 373, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 21, 1. 8, *default* (1596), *? assault* (Collier).

P. 374, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 24, 1. 5, *Crying aloud to shew* (1609). The 4to. 1596 has *Crying aloud in raine to shew*, &c.

P. 374, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 28, 1. 6, *soft fawning* (1679), *softing fool* (1596).

P. 374, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 30, 1. 9, *thorough* (1609). The 4to. 1596 has *through*.

P. 375, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 35, 1. 3, *which* (1609). The 4to. 1596 has *that*.

P. 376, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 42, 1. 4, *approve* (1609), *reprove* (1596).

P. 376, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 42, 1. 7, *reprove* (1609), *approve* (1596).

P. 376, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 48, 1. 2, *and all* (so all old editions), *? with all*.

P. 378, bk. vi. c. iv. st. 13, 1. 8, *where* (1609), *there* (1596).

P. 378, bk. vi. c. iv. st. 16, 1. 8, *hurt* (1611), *hurts* (1596).

P. 380, bk. vi. c. iv. st. 31, 1. 5, *of our un-happie paine* (so all old copies). Church proposed *of this our happie paine*.

P. 380, bk. vi. c. iv. st. 35, 1. 3, *Lo* (1609), *Low* (1596).

P. 381, bk. vi. c. v. Arg. 1. 1, *Serena* (Hughes), *Milda* (1596).

P. 384, bk. vi. c. v. st. 28, 1. 2, *lives* (1596), *? live*. Professor Child prints *lived*.

P. 385, bk. vi. c. v. st. 36, 1. 4, *off* (1609), *of* (1596).

P. 385, bk. vi. c. v. st. 39, 1. 3, *gree* (1609), *glee* (1596).

P. 385, bk. vi. c. v. st. 41, 1. 2, *there* (1609). The 4to. has *their*.

P. 386, bk. vi. c. vi. st. 4, 1. 4, *Of which* (1596), *In which* (1611).

P. 387, bk. vi. c. vi. st. 11, 1. 9, *Makes*. The 4to 1596 has *Make*.

P. 387, bk. vi. c. vi. st. 17, 1. 7, *Calepine* (Hughes), *Cahdore* (1596).

P. 389, bk. vi. c. vi. st. 35, 1. 6, *fight* (1609), *right* (1596).

P. 391, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 3, 1. 7, *armed* (1609). The 4to. has *arm'd*.

P. 392, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 16, 1. 9, *yearned* (1596), *earned* (1609).

P. 395, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 38, 1. 7, *through* (1609). The 4to. 1596 has *thorough*.

P. 395, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 40, 1. 7, *tyreling* (1596), *tyrling* (1609).

P. 398, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 3, 1. 9, *misust* (1596), *misus'd* (1609).

P. 397, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 11, 1. 9, *two* (1609), *few* (1596).

P. 398, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 15, 1. 3, *pounded* (1596), *pownd* (1609).

P. 398, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 17, 1. 6, *From* (1609), *For* (1596).

P. 400, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 39, 1. 4, *daintest* (1596), *daintest* (1609).

P. 401, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 47, 1. 3, *toyle* (1609), *toyles* (1596).

P. 401, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 50, l. 4, *they* (1596), *shee* (1609).

P. 402, bk. vi. c. ix. st. iv. l. 9, *time* (1596), ? *time* (Church and Upton).

P. 405, bk. vi. c. ix. st. 28, l. 6, *th' heavens* (1596). Some modern editions read *the heaven*.

P. 405, bk. vi. c. ix. st. 36, l. 3, *address* (1596), ? *he drest* (Church).

P. 406, bk. vi. c. ix. st. 36, l. 8, *Oenone* (Hughes), *Bendine* (4to. 1596 and all old editions).

P. 406, bk. vi. c. ix. st. 45, l. 9, *bought* (1596), ? *sought* (Church).

P. 407, bk. vi. c. ix. st. 46, l. 5, *did dwell* (1611), *did well* (1596).

P. 407, bk. vi. c. x. st. 2, l. 9, *in the port* (1609). The 4to. has *on the port*.

P. 409, bk. vi. c. x. st. 22, l. 5, *Æacidee*. The 4to. has *Ærider*.

P. 409, bk. vi. c. x. st. 24, l. 7, *froward* (1611), *forward* (1596).

P. 410, bk. vi. c. x. st. 34, l. 9, *her*. Collier suggests *ere*=before.

P. 411, bk. vi. c. x. st. 36, l. 6, *he* (omitted in all old editions).

P. 411, bk. vi. c. x. st. 42, l. 5, *daily* (1596), ? *deadly* (Church).

P. 411, bk. vi. c. x. st. 44, l. 8, *And* (1609), *But* (1596).

P. 414, bk. vi. c. xi. st. 19, l. 4, *pretended* ? *protended* (Collier).

P. 414, bk. vi. c. xi. st. 24, l. 1, *reliv'd* (1596), *reviv'd* (1609).

P. 417, bk. vi. c. xi. st. 45, l. 4, *lyful* (1596), *lyeful* (1609).

P. 419, bk. vi. c. xii. st. 12, l. 8, *loos* (1596), *praise* (1609).

P. 422, bk. vi. c. xii. st. 40, l. 7, *lean ned* (1596), *gentle* (1609).

P. 422, bk. vi. c. xii. st. 41, l. 3, *clearest* (1596), ? *cleared* (Child).

P. 429, bk. vii. c. vi. st. 53, l. 6, *unto* (1609). The folio 1611 has *unto unto*.

P. 429, bk. vii. c. vi. st. 54, l. 8, *champain* (1611), *champion* (1609).

P. 429, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 2, l. 3, *feeble*. The folios have *sable*.

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 8, l. 9, *showe* (1611), *shew* (1609).

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 9, l. 1, *hard* (1611), *heard* (1609).

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 9, l. 6, *kinde*. The folios have *kundes*.

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 10, l. 7, *they* :— *which they* (1611).

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 12, l. 5, *Peleus* (1611), *Pelevs* (1609).

P. 431, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 16, l. 3, *thy* (1609), *my* (1611).

P. 432, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 28, l. 3, *blossomes* *did* (1609). The ed. of 1611 omits *did*.

P. 433, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 41, l. 5, *rode* (so all copies); the rhyme requires *rade*.

P. 433, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 41, l. 7, *Idwan* (Upton). The folios read *Ican*.

P. 435, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 56, l. 7, *saine* (1609), *faine* (1611).

P. 436, bk. vii. c. viii. st. 1, l. 7, *to cast* (1609), *and cast* (1611).

P. 436, bk. vii. c. viii. st. 2, l. 8, *Sabaoth* (1611), *Sabbaoth* (1609).

P. 436, bk. vii. c. viii. st. 2, l. 9, *For that Mr. Collier suggests thou*. But there should perhaps be no comma after *God*, and the sentence will be an optative one signifying 'O may that great God of hosts grant me the enjoyment of that rest eternal.' Perhaps *Sabaoths sight* is an allusion to the ancient interpretation of the word *Jerusalem*, i.e. *visio pacis*.

P. 436, bk. vii. c. viii. st. 2, l. 9, *Sabaoths* (1609 and 1611) ? *Sabbaths* (Church).

P. 436, bk. vii. c. viii. st. 2, l. 9, *Sabaoth God* (1611), *Sabbaoth God* (1609).

THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDAR.

P. 440, l. 4, *Noblesse* (1579), *nobleness* (1597)

P. 440, l. 12, *my* (1579), *thy* (1611).

P. 441, col. 1, l. 16, *of few* (1579), *of a few* (1597).

P. 441, col. 2, l. 25, *coveting* (1579), *coveuing* (1597).

P. 442, col. 1, l. 5, *common*. The 4to. (1579) has *common*.

P. 442, col. 1, l. 49, *seene* (1586), *seme* (1579 and 1581).

P. 442, col. 1, l. 57, *to be counted strangers* (1597), *strangers to be counted* (1579).

P. 442, col. 2, p. 27, *ungyrt* (1579). All other old editions read *unright*.

P. 443, col. 1, l. 24, *as one that* (1597), *as that* (1579).

P. 443, col. 2, l. 1, *rare* (1579), *rath* (1597).

P. 443, col. 2, ll. 1, 2 from bottom, *thys* 10. (1579), *the tenth* (1597).

P. 444, col. 1, l. 13, *more . . . then* (1597), *most . . . and* (1579).

P. 444, col. 1, l. 17, *Invencon*. The ed. 1579 has *Invencion*.

P. 444, col. 1, l. 18, *these* (1597), *his* (1579).

P. 444, col. 1, l. 24, *defuntun*. The ed. 1579 has *dyfuntun*.

P. 444, col. 1, l. 35, *Æglogues* (1597). The ed. 1579 reads *Æglogues*.

P. 444, col. 1, l. 40, *containe* (1597), *conceire* (1579).

P. 445, col. 1, l. 4, *Abib*. All old editions read *Abil*.

P. 445, col. 2, l. 8, *entraunce*. The ed. 1579 has *entraunce*.

P. 445, col. 2, l. 13, *itself* (1597), *self* (1579).

P. 445, col. 2, ll. 21, 22, *of thone part . . . of thoth* (1579), *of the one part . . . of the other* (1597).

P. 445, col. 2, l. 25, *Shepheards* (1597), *Shepheard* (1579).

P. 446 (January), Arg. l. 1, *him* (1579), *himself* (1597).

P. 446, Arg. l. 5, *delights* (1579), *delight* (1597).

P. 446, l. 34, *blossomes* (1579), *blossomes* (1581).

P. 447 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 1, *who that hath* (1597), *who hath* (1579).

P. 447 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 8 from bottom, *counterfecting* (1579), *counterfaking* (1597).

P. 448 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 1, *Poesye* (1579), *Posie* (1597).

P. 448 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 3, *notwithstanding*. The ed. 1579 reads *notwithstande*.

P. 448 (FERREUR), l. 17, *thrette* (1579), *thrive* (1597).

P. 448, l. 52, *youngh* (1579), *youth* (1597).

P. 448, l. 57, *hast* (1597), *hath* (1579).

P. 449, l. 86, *ladvaunce* (1579), to *advance* (1597).

P. 449, l. 142, *overcraued* (1597), *overused* (1579).

P. 450, l. 181, *of* (1579), *of* (1597).

P. 450, l. 189, *To this the* (1579), *To this this* (1597).

P. 450, l. 218, *to the earth* (1579), *to the ground* (1611).

P. 451 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 9 from the bottom, *meanes* (1611). All 4tos. read *meane*.

P. 451 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 11 from bottom, *giveth* (1597), *geveith* (1579).

P. 451 (Embleme), col. 1, l. 10, *were* (1579), *were* (1597).

P. 451 (Embleme), col. 1, l. 15, *rash-headed* (1579), *raw-headed* (1597).

P. 451 (Embleme), col. 2, l. 8, *God* (1579), *Gods* (1579).

P. 452 (Embleme), col. 1, l. 1, *with him* (1579), *at him* (1597).

P. 452 (MARCE), col. 1, l. 4, *nighs* (to be pronounced as a dissyllable). The 4tos. read *nighst*, and fol. 1611 *nigheth*.

P. 452, col. 1, l. 6, *inters* (1579), *winter* (1597).

P. 452, col. 1, l. 40, *als* (1579 and 1597), *alus* (1581 and 1586).

P. 453 (Wyllies Embleme), l. 2, *Gods* (Child). All old editions read *God*.

P. 453 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 9 from bottom, *Goddesse* (1597). The 4to. 1579 has *Goddess*.

P. 454 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 5, *blinged love* (1597), *wandering love* (1579).

P. 454 (APHIL), (ARG.), l. 2, *herein* (1579), *here* of (1597).

P. 454 (ARG.), l. 4, *alienate* (1579), *alienated* (1597).

P. 455, col. 1, l. 64, *angeluck* (1579), *angel-lik* (1597).

P. 456, col. 1, l. 135, *finnesse* (1597), *finesse* (1579).

P. 456 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 12 from bottom, *meanesse* (1579), *meannes* (1597).

P. 457 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 32, *deffny* (1597), *derffny* (1579).

P. 457, col. 2, l. 18 from bottom, *beight* (1611). The 4tos. 1579, 1581, 1586, 1597, read *bedight*.

P. 458 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 7, *coronation* (1579), *car-nation* (1597).

P. 458 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 6, *slay* (1579), *slay* (1597).

P. 458 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 9, *of* (1579), *by* (1597).

P. 458 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 19, *blinded* (1579, 1581, 1586, 1597). Collier, who reads *blended*, is wrong in stating that Todd has no authority for printing *blinded*: fol. 1611 has *blended*.

P. 458 (MAYE), (ARG.), l. 1, *afte* (1597), *afste* (1579).

P. 458, col. 2, l. 19, *no* (1579), *ne* (1581).

P. 459, col. 1, l. 54, *gread* (1597), *gyrad* (1579).

P. 459, col. 1, l. 82, *forsey* (1597), *foresey* (1579).

P. 460, col. 1, l. 150, *say I* (1597, 1611), *sayd I* (1579).

P. 460, col. 1, l. 159, *witen* (1579), *widen* (1611).

P. 460, col. 1, l. 164, *none* (1579), *no* (1597).

P. 460, col. 2, l. 211, *the* (1579, 1581, 1586, 1597), *her* (1611).

P. 461, col. 1, l. 273, *forrestall* (1597), *forstall* (1579).

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 4, *oracles* (1579), *miracles* (1597).

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 8, *passengers* (1579), *persons* (1597).

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 1 from bottom, *Algrind* (1597), *Algrum* (1579).

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 2, ll. 32, 34, *of whom* . . . *fromethers*, in 1579 and 1581, but omitted in 1586.

P. 462, col. 2, l. 52, *hys* (1579), *her* (1581).

P. 463, col. 1, l. 92, *and* (1579), *or* (1586).

P. 463, col. 1, l. 29, *Tyrann* (1579), *Tyrant* (1597).

P. 463, col. 2, l. 15, *agreeing* (1597), *a greeling* (1597).

P. 463, col. 2, l. 22, *beware* (1579), *to beware* (1597).

P. 464 (JUNE), col. 1, l. 16, *shroude* (1611), *shouder* (1579).

P. 464, col. 1, l. 24, *rarenes* (1611), *ravene* (1579, 1581, 1586).

P. 464, col. 2, l. 98, *painfull* (1579), *plaine'full* (1581, 1586).

P. 465 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 4 from bottom, *all* is omitted in 1597.

P. 465 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 15, *Lorde* (1579), *Lorde* of (1597).

P. 465 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 1, *noblesse* (1579), *noble-nesse* (1597).

P. 466 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 13, *of* (1597), *of the* (1581).

P. 466 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 12, *under myne* (1597), *undermynde* (1579).

P. 466 (JULY), col. 2, l. 35, *willesse* (1597), *weet-lesse* (1579).

P. 466, col. 2, l. 58, *hyllie* (1579), *holy* (1597).

P. 467, col. 1, l. 63, *forseyd* (1597), *forevaid* (1579).

P. 467, col. 1, l. 77, *recourse* (1581), *resourse* (1579).

P. 467, col. 1, l. 99, *a starve* (1611). The 4tos. 1579, 1581, 1586, 1597 have *the starves*.

P. 467, col. 1, l. 129, *And* (1586), *As* (1579, 1581).

P. 468, col. 1, l. 191, *other* (1579), *other s* (1597).

P. 468, col. 1, l. 197, *vetter* (1579), *vettre* (1597).

P. 468 (Thomalin's Embleme). The old editions have *Palinodes Embleme*.

P. 468 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 10, *lapsus* (1579), *lapsu* (1597).

P. 468 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 7, *then* (1597), *and* (1579).

P. 468 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 9, from bottom, *that* (1579), *the* (1586).

P. 469 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 17, *of the* (1597), *of* (1579).

P. 469 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 92, *of a* (1579), *of the* (1597).

P. 470 (AUGUST), (ARG.), l. 2, *choose* (1579), *chose* (1597).

P. 470, col. 1, l. 10, *did passe* (1597), *didat passe* (1579).

P. 470, col. 1, l. 13, *that mischaunce* (1597), *that* • *newe mischaunce* (1579).

P. 470, col. 2, l. 46, *hetheward*, read *hethereward*.

P. 470, col. 2, l. 53, *holy* (1597), *holly* (1579).

P. 471, col. 1, l. 84, *thy hart* (1579), *my hart* (1597).

P. 471, col. 1, l. 104, *curelesse* (Collier). All editions read *carelesse*.

P. 471, col. 2, l. 162, *debarres* . . . *from* (1579), *debars* . . . *of* (1611).

P. 471, col. 2, l. 166, *woodes* (1597). The 4to. 1579 has *woodes*.

P. 471, col. 2, l. 167, *or* (1579), *nor* (1597).

P. 471, col. 2, l. 172, *as* (1597), *a* (1579).
 P. 472, col. 2, l. 198, *negheth* (1579). The 4to. 1597 has *hupeth* = *heth*, *hastens*.
 P. 472 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 4, *shee*, omitted in 4to. 1579, is supplied from the edition of 1597.
 P. 472, col. 2, ll. 14, 15, *so . . . parties* (1579), omitted by 1597.
 P. 473 (SERPENTHER), col. 1, l. 6, *durke* (1579), *darke* (1611).
 P. 473, col. 1, l. 11, *ripeth* (1579), *rippeth* (1597).
 P. 473, col. 1, l. 22, *I wene* (1579), *wene* (1597).
 P. 473, col. 1, l. 24, *estate* (1597), *estate* (1579).
 P. 474, col. 1, l. 99, *For-thy* (1579), *For they* (1611).
 P. 474, col. 1, l. 112, *whole* (1579), *hole* (1597).
 P. 474, col. 1, l. 121, *doen* (1579), *do* (1597).
 P. 474, col. 2, l. 144, *stay* (1597), *straw* (1579).
 P. 474, col. 2, l. 145, *yeed*. The 4tos. have *yeeld*; e folio 1611 reads *yeed*.
 P. 474, col. 2, l. 158, *waake* (1579), *taile* (1611).
 P. 474, col. 2, l. 160, *to* (1597), *two* (1579).
 P. 474, col. 2, l. 162, *privé* (1579), *privé* (1597).
 P. 475, col. 2, l. 257, *her* (1579), *his* (1597).
 P. 475 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 1 from bottom, *Thurse*. The 4to. 1579 has *Thurs*; fol. 1611 *Thurse*.
 P. 477 (OCTOBER), col. 2, l. 75, *be forst to fayne* (1579), *to forst to faune* (1597), *to force to faune* (1611).
 P. 477, col. 2, l. 79, *thy place* (1597), *the place* (1579).
 P. 477, col. 2, l. 80, *doe* (1579), *doest* (1597).
 P. 477, col. 2, l. 103, *wrightye*. The 4to. 1579 has *wrightye*, the folio 1611 *wrightye*.
 P. 478, col. 2, l. 12 from bottom, *Arcadian*. The 4to. 1579 has *Arcadian*, 4to. 1597, fol. 1611 *Arabian*.
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 11. *So* all old editions (?) *m*.
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, ll. 27, 28, *from statelu discourse* (1579), *to statelu confere* (1597, 1611).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 32, *we knowen to be Virgile* (1579), *well knew noble Virgil* (1597, 1611).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 38, *flocks* (1579), *flocke* (1597).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 2, *by fire*; omitted in 4to. 1597.
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 13, *layde* (1597), *lay* (1579).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 40, *Petrarch, saying* (1579), *Petrarch saying* (1597).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 12 from bottom, *had* (1597), *hath* (1579).
 P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 2 from bottom, *is* (1597), *at* (1579).
 P. 480 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 8, *forth* (1579), *out* (1597).
 P. 480 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 9, *whom seeing Vulcane so faire* (1579), *whom Vulcan seeyng so faire* (1597, 1611).
 P. 480 (NOVEMBER), (Arg.), l. 2, *albe* (1597), *albeit* (1597).
 P. 481, col. 1, l. 78, *you* is not in 4tos., but occurs in fol. 1611.
 P. 481, col. 1, l. 85, *hath displayde*. The 4to. 1579 reads *doth displaye*.
 P. 481, col. 1, l. 98, *heyme* (1597), *heme* (1579).
 P. 481, col. 1, ll. 98, 99, *hym* (1597), *him* (1579).
 P. 481, col. 2, l. 115, *coloured* (1597), *coloured* (1579).

P. 483 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 17, *enjoy* (1579), *reioice* (1597).
 P. 483 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 25, *dyled* (1597), *dyled* (1579).
 P. 483 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 5, *signe*. Not in 1579, but in 1597.
 P. 483 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 7, *Atropos daughters*. The 4to. 1579 reads *Atropodas unglers*.
 P. 483 (Embleme), col. 2, l. 5, *to* (1579), *of* (1597).
 P. 484 (DECEMBER), col. 1, l. 29, *recked* (1611). The 4tos. read *wreaked*.
 P. 484, col. 2, l. 43, *derring-doe*. The 4to. 1579 has *derring to*, but *derring doe* is in the Glosse, p. 486, col. 2, l. 1.
 P. 484, col. 2, l. 70, *loashed* (1579), *loathing* (1611).
 P. 484, col. 2, l. 76, *season* (1579), *reason* (1611).
 P. 485, col. 1, l. 89, *l'cuage* (1597), *to tenuage* (1579).
 P. 485, col. 2, l. 115, *gather together ye* (1597), *gather ye together* (1579).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 7, *or* (1579), *of* (1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 21, *nor* (1579), *or* (1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 27, *heapes* (1579), *heapes* (1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 41, *in* (1579), *in the* (1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 16, *newest* (1579), *knowest* (1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 20, *our* (how *our* in 1579, *how* is omitted by 1597).
 P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 23, *Thus*. The 4to. 1579 has *Thux*.
 P. 486 (Embleme), col. 1, l. 3, *of Poetry* (in 1579).
 P. 486 (Embleme), col. 1, l. 8, *nec . . . nec*. So in all the 4tos. Some mod. editions read *nun . . . non*.
 P. 486 (Embleme), col. 2, l. 2, *hath* (in 1579) is omitted by 1597.
 P. 486 (Embleme), col. 2, l. 5, *quod* (1597), *que* (1579).
 P. 486 (Epilogue), col. 2, l. 1 from bottom, *despise* (1579), *displeise* (1597).

THE RUINES OF TIME.

P. 493, l. 361, *to* (1591) *do* (1611).
 P. 493, l. 363, *covertize*. The edition 1591 reads *covertize*.
 P. 494, l. 414, *made* (1591), *? had* (Jortin).
 P. 494, l. 447, *For he that now*, &c. (1591), *For such as now have most the world at will* (1611).
 P. 494, l. 451, *him that* (1591), *such as* (1611).
 P. 494, l. 454, *O let the man* (1591), *O let not those* (1611).
 P. 494, l. 455, *Nor alive*, &c. (1591) *Alice nor dead be of the Muse adorned* (1611).
 P. 494, l. 499, *brickle* (1591), *brittle* (1611).
 P. 495, l. 451, *Ocean* (1611), *Ocean* (1591).
 P. 495, l. 551, *whut* (1611). The ed. 1591 reads *with*.
 P. 495, l. 571, *Was but earth*, &c. (1591), *Was but of earth and with her weightiness* (1611).
 P. 495, l. 574, *words* (1611), *words* (1591).
 P. 496, l. 647, *bred was* (1611), *was bred* (1591).
 P. 496, l. 664, *the earth* (1591) *th' earth* (1611).
 P. 496, l. 675, *worldes*. All old editions read *worlds*.

TEARES OF THE MUSES.

- P. 498, l. 113, *ancie*, (?) *in reu*.
 P. 499, l. 126, *of sin*. Some mod. editions read *to sin*.
 P. 500, l. 282, *anguish* (1611), *anguish* (1591).
 P. 501, l. 401, *that winged God* (1591), *the winged God*.
 P. 503, l. 576, *Poetresse* (1591), *Poetesse* in some mod. editions.
 P. 503, l. 600, *loving* (1611), *loving* (1591).

VIRGIL'S GNAT.

- P. 504, l. 23, *waves* (1591), ? *wave*.
 P. 505, l. 122, *heart* (1611). The ed. 1591 has *heav*.
 P. 506, l. 149, *Ascravan*. The ed. 1591 reads *As-trach*.
 P. 508, l. 340, *not* (1611) is omitted by 4to. 1591.
 P. 508, l. 343, *fire* (1591), *fer* (1611).
 P. 508, l. 387, *throat*. The 4to. 1591 reads *theat*.
 P. 508, l. 406, *flattering* (1611), *flattering* (1591).
 P. 509, l. 417, *valadaw* (1591), *veladaw* (1611).
 P. 510, l. 536, *subtle* (1611), *siye* (1591).
 P. 510, l. 575, *intiongs*. The 4to. 1591 reads *bit-lore*.
 P. 510, l. 588, *Herexan* (1591) ? *Egean*.

MOTHER HUDDERD'S TALE.

- P. 513, l. 53, *Goshup* (1611), *Goshup* (1591).
 P. 514, l. 67, *lifted upon hugh* (1591), *lifted high* (1611).
 P. 513, l. 87, *worides* (1611), *worlds* (1591).
 P. 515, l. 264, *theth* (1591), *thatch* (1611).
 P. 516, l. 349, *carried* (1591), ? *coer'd* (Collier).
 P. 517, l. 453, *diriges* (1611), *dirges* (1591).
 P. 517, l. 501, or (1591), *ere* (1611).
 P. 518, l. 625, *she* (1591), *hee* (1611).
 P. 519, l. 648, *at* (in 1611), omitted by 1591.
 P. 519, l. 734, *gentrie* (1591). This word must be pronounced as three syllables (Todd). Perhaps Spenser wrote *genterie*.
 P. 519, l. 735, *lothefull* (1591), ? *stothfull* (Collier).
 P. 519, l. 830, *kindle*. The 4to. 1591 and the fol. 1611 read *kindly*.
 P. 522, l. 997, *whether*. The 4to. 1591 has *whither*.
 P. 522, l. 1012, *stopt*. The 4to 1591 and fol. 1611 have *stept*.
 P. 522, l. 1019, *whither*. The 4to. 1591 reads *whether*.
 P. 524, l. 1245, *staf'd* (1591), *stall'd* (1611).

THE RUINES OF ROME.

- P. 526, l. 21, *Mausolus*. The 4to 1591 has *Mansolus*.
 P. 526, l. 48, *The Giants old* (1611), *the old Giants* (1591).
 P. 527, l. 119, *palaces*. The line is defective; ? *palaces failed*.
 P. 528, l. 210, *now* (1611). Omitted by the 4to. 1591.
 P. 529, l. 243, *ornaments*. The 4to. has *ornament*.

- P. 529, l. 270, *Tethis* (1591), *Thetys* (1611).
 P. 529, l. 272, *dimmed*, read *dimmed*.
 P. 531, l. 414, *stackes* (1611), *stalkes* (1591).

MUIOPOTMOS.

- P. 532, l. 34, *yongth* (1591), *youth* (1611).
 P. 533, l. 149, *champain o're he*. The 4to. 1591 has *champain he*, but the fol. 1611 reads *champain o're he*.
 P. 534, l. 250, *dispacng*. The 4to. has *displacing*.
 P. 535, l. 335, *hayrie* (1591), *aurie* (1611).
 P. 535, l. 354, *enfesed* (1591), ? *enfeserd* (Collier).
 P. 536, l. 370, *frande craftuly* (1611), *did slily frume* (1591).
 P. 536, l. 392, *hateful* (1591), *fatal* (1611).
 P. 536, l. 431, *yongthly*. The 4to. has *yongthly*, but see p. 52, l. 34.

VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE.

- P. 537, st. 3, l. 11, *dul*. The 4to. 1591 has *doth*.
 P. 538, st. 8, l. 12, *natice* (1611), *nature* (1591).

VISIONS OF BELLAY.

- P. 538, st. 2, l. 9, *On*. The 4to. 1591 reads *one*.
 P. 538, st. 2, l. 9, *Afrike golds*, ? *Africks gold*.
 P. 539, st. 9, l. 1, *astuted*. The 4to. 1591 reads *astuted*.

The following is an earlier version of 'The Visions of Bellay,' which is found in the *THEATRE FOR WORSHIPING*. 'A Theatre wherein be represented as well the muses and calamities that followe the voluptuous Worldlings, As also the grate ioyes and pleasures which the faultlesse do enjoy. An Argument both profitable and delectable, to all that sincerely love the word of God. Devised by S. Iohn vander Noode. Set out and allowed according to the order appointed. Imprinted at London by Henry Bynemann. Anno Domini. 1569.' 8vo. Then follow two pages of Latin verses—'In commendationem operis ab Nobilibus et virtutis Studiosissimo Domino, Ioanne vander Noode Patricio Antuerpiensi editi, Curmen.' and 'Doctor Gerardus Goossensius Medicus, Physicus, et Poeta Brabant. moder. in Zodium Octastichon.' And a Dedication to Q. Elizabeth, dated 'At London your Majesties Citie and seate royal. The 25. of May. 1569.' and signed, 'Your Majesties most humble servant. Iean vander Noode.' Next come Spenser's six 'Visions of Petrarch' (called Epigrams), with four additional lines at the end, and then follow the remaining poems, entitled 'Sonets,' with descriptive woodcuts.

Then follow 107 leaves of Prose, entitled 'A briefe declaration of the Authour upon his visions, taken out of the holy scriptures, and dyvers Orators, Poetes, Philosophers, and true historicks. Translated out of French into English by Theodore Roest.' The following is an extract. 'And to sette the vanitie and inconstancie of worldly and transitorie thyngs, the livelier before your eyes, I have broughte in here *twente sightes or visions, and caused them to be graven*, to the ende all men may see that with their eyes, whiche I go aboute to expresse

by writing, to the delight and pleasure of the eye and eares, according unto the saying of Horace.

Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci.

That is to say,

He that teacheth pleasantly and well,

Doth in eche poynt all others excell.

Of which our visions the learned Poete M. Francis Petrarche Gentleman of Florence, did invent and write in Tuscan *the six first*, after such tyme as hee had loved honestly the space of .xxi. yeares a faire, gracious, and a noble Damosell, named Laurette, or (as it pleased him best) Laura, borne of Avinion, who afterward hapned to die, he being in Italy, for whose death (to shewe his great grief) he mourned ten yeares together, and amongst many of his songs and sorrowfull lamentations, devised and made a Ballade or song, containing the *said visions*, which because they serve wel to our purpose, *I have out of the French speeche, turned them into the English tongue.* fol. 13.

The other ten visions next ensuing, as described of one Ioaehim du Bellay, Gentleman of France, the *which* also, because they serve to our purpose, *I have translated them out of Dutch into English.* fol. 14.

SONETS.*

IT was the time when rest the gift of Gods
Sweetly sliding into the eyes of men,
Doth drowne in the forgetfulness of slepe,
The careful travails of the painfull day:
Then did a ghost appeare before mine eyes
On that great rivers bank that runnes by Rome,
And calling me then by my propre name,
He bade me upwarde unto heaven looke.
He cride to me, and loe (quod he) beholde,
What under this great Temple is containde,
Loe all is nought but flying vanitie.
So I knowing the worldes unstedfastnesse,
Sith onely God surmountes the force of ty
In God alone do stay my confidence.

On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hee
I sawe, an hundred pillars eke about,
All of fine Diamant decking the front,
And fashiond were they all in Dorike wise.
Of bricke, ne yet of marble was the wall,
But shining Christall, which from top to base
Out of deepe vaults threw forth a thousand rayes
Upon an hundred steps of purest golde.
Golde was the parget: and the sielings eke
Did shine all scaly with fine golden plates.
The floor was Jasper, and of Emeraude.
O wordes vainenesse. A sodain earthquake loe,
Shaking the hill even from the botome deepe,
Threwe downe this building to the lowest stone.

Then did appeare to me a sharped spire
Of diamant, ten fote eke way in square,
Justly proportionde up unto his height,
So hee as mought an Archer reach with sight.
Upon the top thereof was set a pot
Made of the metall that we honour most.
And in this golden vessel couched were
The ashes of a mightie Emperour.

* Or 'The Visions of Bellay.'

Upon foure corners of the base there lay
To beare the frame, foure great Lions of golde.
A worthie tombe for such a worthie corps.
Alas, nought in this worlde but griefe endures.
A sodaine tempest from the heaven, I saw,
With flashe [? flashe] stroke downe this noble
monument.

I saw raise up on pillars of Ivorie,
Whereof the bases were of richest golde,
The chepters Alabaster, Christall frises,
The double front of a triumphall arke.
On eche side portraide was a victorie.
With golden wings in halp of a Nymph.
And set on hie upon triumphing chaire,
The ancient glorie of the Romane lordes.
The worke did shew it selfe not wrought by man,
But rather made by his owne skilfull hande
That forgoth thunder darts for Jove his sirow.
Let me no more see faire thing under heauen,
Sith I have seene so faire a thing as this,
With sodain falling broken all to dust.

Then I beheld the faire Dodonian tree,
Upon seven hilles throw forth his gladsome shade,
And Conquerors bedecked with his leaves
Along the bankes of the Italian streame.
There many ancient Trophies were erect,
Many a spoile, and many goodly signes,
To shewe the greatnesse of the statly rooe,
That erst descended from the Trojan bloud.
Ravisht I was to see so rare a thing,
When barbarous villaines in disordred kenpe,
Outraged the honour of these noble bowes.
I hearde the tronke to groue under the wedge.
And since I saw the roote in hie didaine
Seende forth againe a twaine of forked trees.

I saw the bird that dares beholde the Sunne,
With feeble flight venture to mount to heaven,
By more and more she gan to trust hir wings,
Still following the example of hir damme:
I saw hir rise, and with a larger flight
Surmount the toppes even of the heest hilles,
And pierce the cloudes, and with hir wings to
reache
The place where is the temple of the Gods,
There was she lost, and sodenly I saw
Where tumbling through the aire in lombe of fire,
All flaming downe she fell upon the plaine.
I saw hir bodie turned all to dust,
And saw the foule that shunnes the cherefull light
Out of hir ashes as a worme arise.

Then all astonned with this nightly ghost,
I saw an hideous body big and strong,
Long was his beard, and side did hang his hair,
A grisly forehed and Saturnelike face.
Leaning against the belly of a pot
He shed a water, whose outgushing stream
Ran flowing all along the creeke shoare
Where once the Trojan Duke with Turnus fought.
And at his feet a bitch Wolfe did give sucke
To two yong babes. In his right hand he bare
The tree of peace, in left the conquering Palme,
His head was garnisht with the Laurel bow.
Then sodenly the Palme and Olive fell,
And faire greene Laurel withered up and dide.

Hard by a rivers side, a wailing Nimphe,
Folding hir armes with thousand sighs to heaven,
Did tune hir plaint to falling rivers sound,
Benting hir faire visage and golden haire,
Where is (quod she) this whilome honored face?
Where is thy glory and the ancient praise,
Where all worldes hap was reposed,
When erst of Gods and man I worshippt was?
Alas, sufficed it not that civile bate
Made me the spoile and bootie of the world,
But this new Hydra mete to be assailed
Even by an hundred such as Hercules,
With seven springing heds of monstrous crimes,
So many Nereos and Caliginæes
Must still bring forth to rule this crooked shore.

Upon a hill I saw a kindled flame,
Mouthing like waves with triple point to heaven,
Which of incense of precious Cedar tree
With Balmelike odor did perfume the aire.
A bird all white, well fethered on hir wings
Hereout did flie up to the throne of Gods,
And singing with most pleasant melodie
She climbed up to heaven in the smoke.
Of this faire fire the faire dispersed rayes
Threw forth abroad a thousand shining leames,
When sodain dropping of a golden shoure
Gan quench the glistring flure. O grevous
chaunge!
That which erstwhile so pleasant scent did yelde,
Of Sulphure now did breathe corrupted smel.

I saw a fresh spring rise out of a rocke,
Clerc as Christall against the Sunny baumes,
The bottome yellow like the shining laud,
That golden Pactol drives upon the plaine.
It seemed that arte and nature strived to joyne
There in one place all pleasures of the eye.
There was to heare a noyse alluring slepe
Of many accordes more swete than Mermaids
song,
The seates and benches shone as Ivorie,
An hundred Nymphes sat side by side about,
When from nie hilles a naked rout of Faunes
With hideous cry assembled on the place,
Which with their feete uncleane the water fouled.
Threw down the seate, and droue the Nymphs to
flight.

At length, even at the time when Morpheus
Most truly doth appeare unto our eyes,
Wearie to see th' inconstance of the heavens;
I saw the great Typhæus sister come,
Hir hea. full bravely with a morian armed,
In majesty she seemed to matche the Gods.
And on the shore, hard by a violent streame,
She raised a Trophee over all the worlde.
An hundred vanquisht kings gronde at hir feete,
Their armes in shamefull wise bounde at their
backen.

While I was with so dreadfull sight afrayde,
I saw the heavens warre against hir tho,
And seing hir stricken fall with clap of thunder,
With so great noyse I start in sodaine wonder.

The sixth, eighth, thirteenth, and fourteenth
'Visions of Bellay,' which are in Spenser a translation
of 1591, are not in the 'Theatre for World-

lings;' but four others are substituted, of which the
writer thus speaks: 'And to the ende we myght
speake more at large of the thing, I have taken
four visions out of the revelations of S. John, where
as the Holy Ghost by S. John setteth him (Anti-
christ) out in his colours.' Fol. 20.

I saw an ugly beast come from the sea,
That seven heads, ten crownes, ten hornes did beere,
Having thereon the vile blaspheming name.
The cruell Leopard she resembled much:
Ferte of a beare, a Lions throte she had.
The mightie Dragon gave to hir his power.
One of hir heads yet there I did espie,
Still freshly bleeding of a grievous wounde.
One cride aloude. What one is like (quod he)
This honoured Dragon, may him withstande?
And then came from the sea a savage beast,
With Dragons speche, and shewed his force by fire,
With wondrous signes to make all wights adore
The beast, in setting of hir image up.

I saw a Woman sitting on a coast
Before mine eyes, of Orange colour hew:
Horror and dreadfull name of blasphemie
Filde hir with pride. And seven heads I saw,
Ten hornes also the stately beast did beare.
She seemed with glorie of the scarlet faure,
And with fine perle and golde putt up in heart.
Therewine of hooredome is a cup she bare.
The name of Myserie writ in hir faue;
The blond of Martyrs dere were hir delite.
Most fierce and fell this woman seemed to me.
An Angell then descending downe from Heaven,
With thondring voice cride out aloude, and sayd,
Now for a truth great Babylon is fallen.

Then might I see upon a white horse set
The faithfull man with flaming countenance,
His head did shine with crownes set thereupon.
The worde of God made him a noble name.
His precious robe I saw embred with bloud.
Then saw I from the heaven on horses white,
A puissant armie come the selfe same way.
Then cried a shining Angell as the thought,
That birdes from aie descending downe on earth
Should warre upon the kinge, and eate their flesh.
Then did I see the beast and kinge also
Joinyng their force to slea the faithfull man.
But this fierce hatefull beast and all hir traine
Is pitilesse throwne downe in pit of fire.

I saw new Earth, new Heaven, sayde Saint John.
And loe, the sea (quod he) is now no more.
The holy Citle of the Lorde, from hye
Descendeth garnish as a loved spouse.
A voice then sayde, behold the bright abode
Of God's childe men. For he shall be their God,
And all their teares he shall wipe cleane away.
Hir brightnesse greater was than can be founde,
Square was this Citle, and twelve gates it had.
Echo gate was of an orient perfect perle,
The houses golde, the pavement precious stone.
A lively streame, more cleere than Christall is,
Ranne through the mid, sprong from triumphant
seat.

There growes lifes fruits unto the Churches good

THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH.

P. 541, st. 1, l. 5, *note* (1591), *mought* (Theatre for Worldlings).

P. 541, st. 1, l. 9, *that* (1591), *this* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 2, l. 19, *show* (1591), *shew* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 2, ll. 21-28. In the T. for W. these lines are as follows:—

• *Strike on a rock, that under water lay.*

O great misfortune, O great griefe, I say,

Thus in one moment to see lost and drownde

So great riches, as lyke can not be founde.

P. 541, st. 3, l. 29, *The* (1591), *Then* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 3, l. 30, *the* (1591), *a* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 3, l. 31, *Amidst* (1591), *Amidde* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 3, l. 35, *That with, &c.* (1591), *My sprites were varisht with these pleasures there* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 4, l. 43, *a* (1591), *the* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 4, l. 49, *To the soft* (1591), *into the gentle* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 4, l. 50, *That my glad heart, &c.* (1591), *The sight wherof shal make my heart rejoyce* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 4, l. 51, *But, while herein, &c.* (1591), *But while I toke herein, &c.* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 4, ll. 55, 56, are omitted by T. for W.

P. 541, st. 5, l. 63, *at last* (1591), *at length* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 5, ll. 68-70. These three lines are not in T. for W. but instead we have the following concluding line:—*For pite and love my heart yet burnes in payne.*

P. 541, st. 6, l. 72, *thinking yet* (1591), *in thinking* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 6, l. 81, *on* (1591), *in* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 6, l. 82, *and sorrowful annoy* (1591), *That dothe our hearts annoy* (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 6, ll. 83, 84, are omitted by T. for W.

P. 542, st. 7. This stanza does not occur in T. for W., but the four following lines are added to the Epigrams:—

My Song thus now in thy Conclusions,

Say boldly that these same SIX VISIONS

Do yelde unto thy lord a sweete request,

Ere it be long within the earth to rest.

P. 542, st. 7, l. 85, *behold*. The 4to. 1591 reads *beheld*.

DAPHNAIDA.

P. 543, l. 79, *unpittied, unplained* (1591). Some mod. editions read *unpied and unplained*.

P. 544, ll. 159, 160, *fro* (1591), *from* (1611).

P. 547, l. 391, *ull* (1596), *tell* (1591).

P. 547, l. 478, *starres* (1591), *starre* (1596).

P. 548, l. 487, *despe* (1591), *détre* (1596).

COLIN CLOUDS COME HOME AGAINE.

P. 549, l. 1, *knownen*. The 4to. 1595 reads *knowne*.

P. 550, l. 46, *glorious bright, i.e. glorious bright one* (1595). Some mod. editions read *glory bright*.

P. 550, l. 89, *loose* (1611), *lose* (1595).

P. 550, l. 91, *chose* (1595), *choose* (1611).

P. 551, l. 168, *angulls* (1611), *anguls* (1595).

P. 552, l. 318, *bordrags*. The 4to. 1595 reads *bedrags*.

P. 553, l. 382, *there is Corydon*. The 4to. 1595 reads *there is a Corydon*.

P. 554, l. 487, *Urania*. The ed. 1595 reads *Urania*.

P. 555, l. 600, *clusters*. The 4to. 1595 reads *glusters*.

P. 555, l. 601, *branches* (suggested by Collier).

The 4to. 1595 has *bunches*.

P. 556, l. 670, *durst*. The ed. 1595 has *davent*.

P. 556, l. 737, *fare* (1611), *far* (1595).

P. 556, l. 762, *drownnd* (1595), *drownnd* (1611).

P. 557, l. 860, *her* (referring to earth). Some editions read *there*.

P. 557, l. 861, *life-giving*. All old editions read *life-giving*.

P. 558, l. 884, *the creatures* (1611). Ed. 1595 has *their creatures*. Collier suggests *these*.

ASTROPHEL.

P. 559, l. 22, *and weelingly* (1595) ? *unweelingly*.

P. 560, l. 50, *often* (1611), *oft* (1595). Did Spenser intend to write *oft* had sighed?

P. 560, l. 53, *sight i.e. sighted* (1595), *sight* (1611).

P. 560, l. 83, *needeth* (1611), *need* (1595).

P. 561, l. 149, *beare* (1595), *here* (1611).

THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA.

P. 562, l. 85, *him dul see* (1611), *him see* (1595).

P. 562, l. 80, *fro me* (1611), *me fro* (1595).

THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS.

P. 563, l. 20, *thy wreful*. All old editions read *their wreful*.

P. 563, l. 34, *Seyne*. The old editions read *Reyne*.

P. 566, l. 193, *do thee let fall*. Some editions read *to let thee fall*.

A PASTORALL AELOGUE.

P. 566, l. 29, *testified*. Ed. 1595 has *testifed*.

P. 566, l. 41, *hard* (1595), *sud* (1611).

AN ELEGIE.

P. 568, l. 3, *glasse*. The ed. 1595 reads *grasse*.

P. 568, l. 12, *night* (1611), *might* (1595).

P. 569, l. 109, *never* (1611), *erer* (1595).

P. 569, l. 134, *Astrophall*. The original has *istrophall*.

P. 569, l. 150, *To sholl-turle* (1595). Some editions read *The short-turle*.

P. 569, l. 155, *nor* (1595), *or* (1611).

P. 569, l. 177, *do* (1595), *doth* (1611).

P. 570, l. 181, *Thus word* (1611), *His word* (1595).

P. 570, l. 206, *of each kinde* (1611), *of kinde* (1595).

P. 570, l. 224, *discolor* (1611), *discolorers* (1595).

AN EPITAPH (II.).

P. 571, l. 25, *paravells* (1611), *parables* (1595).

P. 572, l. 39, *Go, seeke* (1611), *Go, seeken* (1595).

SONNETS.

P. 574, st. 10, l. 7, *capture*. Ed. 1595 reads *captures*.

P. 574, st. 11, l. 8, *unpittied*. Ed. 1595 reads *unpittied*.

P. 575, st. 15, l. 3, *treasure*. Ed. 1595 reads *treasures*.

P. 576, st. 21, l. 6, *love*. Ed. 1595 reads *loves*.

P. 576, st. 26, l. 4, *braunche is*. The ed. of 1595 reads *braunches*.

P. 576, st. 26, l. 5, *rough* read *tough* (1595).

P. 578, st. 33, l. 11, *Sins* (1595), *Sith* (1611).
 P. 578, st. 35. This stanza is repeated in ed. 1595, and comes between stanzas 82 and 83. There is a different reading in l. 6, it is *having it* in our text, but *seeing it* in the omitted version.
 P. 580, st. 47, l. 11, *her* (1595), *their* (1611).
 P. 580, st. 50, l. 9, *first* (1595). Some copies read *for*.

P. 580, st. 53, l. 6, *semblant* (1597), *semblance* (1611).

P. 581, st. 55, l. 12, *mind* (1595). Some editions read *love*.

P. 581, st. 57, l. 10, *these* ? *those*.
 P. 581, st. 58, l. 1, *fly her*. Some editors propose to read *to* but *fly*=concerning.

P. 581, st. 58, l. 8, *glories* (1595). Some editions (as 1611) read *glorious*.
 P. 583, st. 71, l. 9, *above*. Ed. 1595 reads *about*.
 Did Spenser write —

But as your worke is all about ymore ?
 P. 585, st. 82, l. 2, *placed*. Ed. 1595 has *plac'd*.

P. 586, st. 87, l. 9, *the idea* (1611), *th' idea*, (1595).

P. 586, st. 88, l. 3, *ron*. The ed. 1595 reads *rev*.

EPIITHALMION.

P. 587, l. 2, *me* (1595). Some editions read *the*.
 P. 587, l. 13, *guldants*. The ed. 1595 reads *guldant*.

P. 588, l. 67, *dore* (so ed. 1595), but read *dece* as suggested by Professor Child.

P. 588, l. 92, *drammes*. All the old editions read *draine*.

P. 589, l. 190, *mazefull*. The ed. 1595 has *maze-full*, but *amazefull* is suggested by Professor Child.

P. 589, l. 208, *receyve*. Ed. 1595 has *reçue*.

P. 590, l. 290, *nights sad dread* (1611), *nights dread* (1595).

P. 590, l. 341, *Pouke*. The ed. 1595 reads *Pouke*.
 P. 591, l. 359, *your bed* (1595). Some modern copies read *the bed*.

P. 591, l. 379, *wool*. The ed. 1595 has *woll*.
 P. 591, l. 385, *they will* (1611), *they will* (1595).

HYMNES.

AN HYMNE OF LOVE.

P. 593, l. 69, *make* (1596), *made* (1611).
 P. 593, l. 81, *hated fyre*. Ed. 1596 has *hate fyre*.

P. 594, l. 122, *wyth*. Warton proposed to read *from*.

P. 594, l. 150, *Since* (1596). Some mod. copies read *Sith*.

P. 594, l. 161, *doest* (1596). Some mod. copies read *doth*.

P. 595, l. 227, *hath eyde* (1596). Some copies read *had eyde*.

AN HYMNE OF BEAUTIE.

P. 596, l. 6, *doest* (1596). Some mod. editions read *doth*.

P. 596, l. 47, *clothe* it (1596). Collier reads *cloves it*.

P. 596, l. 83, *off-lames*. Ed. 1596 has *offtimes*.
 P. 597, l. 147, *Perform'd*. The ed. 1596 reads *deform'd*.

P. 597, l. 158, *will ? evill*.
 P. 597, l. 171, *affections* (1596), ? *affection*.

P. 598, l. 195, *no love* (1596), *not love* (Collier).
 P. 598, l. 222, *to his fancies* (1596), ? *of his fancies*.

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLIE LOVE.

P. 599, l. 53, *in powere* (1596), *of powere* (Collier).
 P. 600, l. 72, *still to them* (1596). Collier reads *unto them*.

P. 600, l. 158, *launcheing* (1596). Some modern editions read *launcing*.

P. 601, l. 179, *of us* (1596), *for us* (Collier).
 P. 601, l. 188, *us so* (1596), *was so* (Collier).

P. 601, 195, *Even he himselfe*. Ed. 1596 has *Even himselfe*. In 1611 it is *Even hee himself*.

P. 601, l. 238, *of great* (1596), *by great* (Collier).
 P. 602, l. 266, *to thee* (1596), *for thee* (1611).

HYMNE OF HEAVENLIE BEAUTIE.

P. 603, l. 121, *Suns bright beames* (1596), *Sun-bright beames* (1611).

P. 604, l. 165, *And dampish are*. Ed. 1596 reads *The darl and dampish are*.

P. 604, l. 170, *more bright* (in 1611), is omitted by 1596.

P. 605, l. 270, *to paine* (1596), *a paine* (1611).
 P. 605, l. 294, *on matter* (1611), *no matter* (1596).

PROTHALAMION.

P. 605, l. 5, *whom* (1596). Some copies read *whose*.
 P. 606, l. 117, *Fet* (1611), *Feat* (1596).

SONNETS WRITTEN BY SPENSER.

I. This is taken from 'Four Letters, and Certain Sonnets: Especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties, by him abused: &c. London. 4to.: Imprinted by John Wolfe, 1592.'

II. This is prefixed to 'Nennio, Or a Treatise of Nobility, &c. Written in Italian by that famous doctor and worthy knight, Sir John Baptista Nenna of Basil. Done into English by William Jones, Gent., 4to. 1595.'

III. Prefixed to the 'Historie of George Castrul, surnamed Scanderbeg, King of Albanie: Containing his famous actes, &c. Newly translated out of French into English by Z. I., Gentleman. Imprinted for W. Ponsonby, 1596,' fol. There is a copy of this work in the Bodleian Library. A.A. 37. Art. Seld.

IV. Prefixed to 'The Commonwealth and Government of Venice. Written by the Cardinall Gaspar Contarino, and translated out of Italian into English by Lewis Lodiceator, Esquire. London. Imprinted by John Windet for Edmund Mattes, &c., 1599,' 4to.

A VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF

IRELAND.*

P. 610, col. 2, l. 17, *entred* (22), *enured* (19).
 P. 610, col. 2, l. 3 from bottom, *Breaghe* (22), *Irach* (19).

P. 611, col. 1, l. 39, *sure* (22), *faire* (19).
 P. 611, col. 2, l. 10, *forestaide* (22), *forestaked* (19 and 73).

P. 611, col. 2, ll. 32, 33, *Tamisth* (22), *Tamist* (19).
 P. 612, col. 1, l. 30, *innovation* (19), *invasion* (73).

* 22=Additional MS. 22022, 19=Harl. MS. 1932. 78=Harl. MS. 7868. W.=Ware's Text.

P. 612, col. 2, l. 19, *wayred* (73), *wayed*, *waied* (19 and 22).

P. 612, col. 2, l. 41, of a *King* (22), 'Of a Kinge, which tytle was gyven by the Yrish rather for a more greater honour of their countrey then for any gratification or addition of power to the kynge, who was before Lord of Yreland; which tytle did not import the absolute sovereign command of a lord seignur over his subjects as over his va-salles; for all other absolute power of principallite he had in himself before deriyed from manie former kinges,' &c.

P. 613, col. 1, l. 15, *kepe* (22), *plucke* (19).

P. 613, col. 2, l. 9 from bottom, *warreluke* (19), *wicked* (22).

P. 614, col. 2, l. 15, *enured* (73), *entred* (22 and 19).

P. 615, col. 1, ll. 11, 12, *Culvers*, *Mounterolus*, *Oroucke*. MS. 22 omits *Culvers* and *Mounterolus*; 19 reads *Culvers*, *Moneruo* (73 *Monerue*), and *Oourke* (Oroucks 73).

P. 615, col. 1, ll. 14, 15, *Glaunmaleerih*, *Shillelah*, *Brakelagh*, *Polmonte*. MS. 19 has *Glaunator* (73 *Glamator*), *Shillelagh* and *Braklagh*. *Polmonte* is inserted from Ware's text.

P. 615, col. 1, l. 11 from bottom, the *Earle of Ulster*. Ware's text has the *Earle of*, which is omitted in the Brit. Mus. MSS. For *Ulster*, 19 reads *Lacie*.

P. 615, col. 2, l. 2, *buildd* . . . *Tomond* (22), *repaired* . . . *Thomond* (19).

P. 615, col. 2, l. 17 from bottom, *Clarfior* (19), *Clarfior* (73), *Clarfior* (Ware). Omitted by 22.

P. 615, col. 2, l. 15 from bottom, *Mourne* and *Butteant* (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 615, col. 2, l. 3 from bottom, *remember* (22), *rende* (19).

P. 616, col. 1, l. 14 from bottom, *hurt* (22), *scathe* (19).

P. 616, col. 2, l. 1, *Donluc* (Ware), *Donluc* (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 616, col. 2, l. 3, *Belfast* (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 616, col. 2, l. 12, *en Ranagh*. Omitted by 22; inserted from 19.

P. 616, col. 2, l. 14, *Belfast* . . . *Newton*. Omitted by 22; inserted from 19.

P. 616, col. 2, l. 25, in the *Ardes*. Omitted by 22; inserted from Ware: 19 reads *at the Ardes*, 73 in *Ardes*.

P. 616, col. 2, l. 29, *Crenmegham* (22), *Bremingham* (19).

P. 616, col. 2, l. 35, *to breathe or* (22), *to state nor* (19).

P. 616, col. 2, ll. 47-56, *and left* . . . *warres*, in 22, 19, and 73, but omitted by Ware.

P. 617, col. 1, l. 18 from bottom, *Gerald* (22), *Garrett* (19 and 73).

P. 617, col. 2, l. 6, *bluster* (22), *blatter* (19, and Ware).

P. 617, col. 2, l. 20 from bottom, *Leis* (22), *Leiz* (19).

P. 617, col. 2, l. 1916 from bottom, *Oreyles* (73), *Oreyles* (19).

P. 617, col. 2, ll. 12-9 from bottom, *All this* . . . *kindle* (22), *All these which ye have named and manie moe besides often tymes have I ryght well knowen to kyndle* (19).

P. 618, col. 2, ll. 18-22, *to kepe* . . . *provision* (19). Omitted by 22, and Ware.

P. 619, col. 2, l. 17 from the bottom, *lease* (22) *dryce* (19).

P. 619, col. 2, l. 10 from bottom, *garrans* (19), *gerrans* (22), *garrandes* (73).

P. 620, col. 2, l. 3, *which purposely therfore is appointed* (22), *which is purposelie appoynted thereunto* (19).

P. 620, col. 2, l. 18 from bottom, *attaynted* . . . *vout* (22). Ware and MSS. 19 and 73 omit *hath bene nage vout*; and for *attaynted*, Ware and 19 read *confeigned*.

P. 620, col. 2, l. 16 from bottom, *wronge* (19), *wrought* (22).

P. 621, col. 2, l. 15 from bottom, *Palentine* (22), *Palatyn* (19), *Pallantyne* (73).

P. 623, col. 2, ll. 4, 3 from bottom, *Cuddeleh*, *Coshurh* (22), *Cuddie*, *Cosherie* (19), *Shragh* and *Sorehm* (73 *Shragh* and *Brehim*) are omitted in 22.

P. 624, col. 1, ll. 3, 4, *anyng commonly* (22), *for their common sayngs* is (19).

P. 624, col. 1, l. 29, *Kin-cogish* (22), *Kincon-glish* (19), *Kingongish* (73).

P. 624, col. 1, ll. 4, 3 from bottom, *incluare* . . . *hum* (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 624, col. 2, l. 21 from bottom, *Cogish* (22), *Congish* (73).

P. 624, col. 2, l. 22 from bottom, *followers* (19), *fellowes* (22).

P. 625, col. 1, l. 26, *I suppose to be Scythians which at, &c.* In Ware's text we have the following passages (omitted in all the Brit. Mus. MSS.), which, however, is directed to be crossed out as being then agreeable to the best MS. copy; which passage is also omitted in the MS. of this 'View' belonging to the Marquis of Stafford (Todd): -

Eudor. How cometh it then to passe, that the Irish doe derive themselves from *Gathelus* the Spaniard?

Iren. They doe, indeed, but (I conceive) without any good ground. For if there were any such notable transmission of a colony hether out of Spaine, or any such famous conquest of this kingdom by *Gathelus*, a Spaniard, as they would faine believe, it is not unlikely, but the very Chronicles of Spaine (had Spaine then bene in so high regard as they now have it) would not have omitted so memorable a thing as the subduing of so noble a realme to the Spaniard, no more than they doe now neglect to memorize their conquest of the Indians, specially in those times, in which the same was supposed, being nearer unto the flourishing age of learning and writers under the Romans. But the Irish doe herein no otherwise then our vaine Englishmen doe in the Tale of Brutus, whom they devise to have first conquered and inhabited this land, it being as impossible to prove, that there was ever any such Brutus of Albion or England as it is that there was any such *Gathelus* of Spaine. But surely the Scythians (of whom I earst spoke at, &c.)

P. 625, col. 1, l. 37, *Scuttenland* (19), *Scuttenland* (22).

P. 625, col. 1, ll. 39-45, *I wonder* . . . *and the same* (in 19 and 73). Omitted by 22.

P. 626, col. 1, ll. 21-22, *of all which* . . . *Buck-hanan* (22). Omitted by W.

P. 626, col. 1, l. 43, *leave* (so all copies) ? *learn*.

P. 626, col. 1, l. 54, *antiquitye* (22), *auuncientes* (19 and 73).

P. 626, col. 2, l. 39, *Cales* (22), *Cadiz* (19); l. 43, *Galdenun* (W.), *Galdum* (22), *Galdumon* (19).

P. 626, col. 2, l. 49, *Celtes* (22), *Celte* (19), *Celte* (W.).

P. 627, col. 1, l. 38, *Afnye* (22), *afnyeene* (19).

P. 627, col. 1, l. 44, *Slevus* (22), *Slanius* (W.), *Slanius* (19).

P. 627, col. 1, ll. 51-52, *As the Latine proverbe is* (omitted by 22; in 19 and 73). W. reads *as the later proverbe is*.

P. 627, col. 2, ll. 11-14, *for being . . . scold* (22). Omitted by W.

P. 628, col. 1, l. 12, *Isabell* (22), *Elizabeth* (W., 19 and 73).

P. 628, col. 1, l. 23, *auncientrye* (22, 73 and W.), *auncetrie* (19).

P. 628, col. 2, ll. 17-21, *of the which . . . of the Gayles* (19 and 73). Omitted by 22.

P. 628, col. 2, l. 37, *Gauill* (22), *Gaules* (19), *Guld* (73 and W.).

P. 629, col. 1, l. 16, *Cummunreeh* (12), *Cumnerick* (19), *Camericke* (73).

P. 629, col. 2, l. 5, *winning* (22), *employing* (W. and 73), *empepting* (19).

P. 630, col. 1, l. 30, *bolyes* (W. and 19), *bogges* (22 and 73).

P. 630, col. 1, l. 53, *bolyes* (22), *boolyng* (W.), *Bolleng* (19 and 73).

P. 631, col. 1, l. 28, *Gaules* (22 and W.), *Africans* (19 and 73).

P. 631, col. 1, l. 56, *besemeth* (22), *deserve* (19).

P. 631, col. 2, l. 6, *encloseth* (22), *ensconseth* (19).

P. 631, col. 2, l. 44, *Beantoothe* (22), *Monashull* (19 and 73), *Monushul* (W.).

P. 632, col. 1, ll. 42, 43, *as have . . . that people*. W. reads *as have been devised for that people*, 22, *taken for their reformation*; 19, *as have been devised for that people*; 73, *as have been devised for the reformation of the people*.

P. 632, col. 1, ll. 26-28, *I say . . . to be named* (22). Omitted by W.

P. 632, col. 2, ll. 13, 14, *Launlauder* (W.), *Lan-dargabo* (19), *Layarrigabote* (22).

P. 632, col. 2, l. 36, *blunt* (22), *blynde* (19 and W.).

P. 633, col. 1, l. 1, *approvaunce* (22), *appearance* (19).

P. 633, col. 1, ll. 2, 3, *Scota . . . judgement* (22), *Scota be like an Egyptian word or carrie ayme smacke of aine learninge or judgement* (19).

P. 633, col. 1, l. 9, *owles or cats eyes* (19), *an oyle or cat-is eyes* (22).

P. 633, col. 1, l. 15, *Irish* (W.), *English* (22).

P. 633, col. 1, l. 17, *Ferrehs*. W. has *Ferragh*; 22 *Ferrehs*; 19 *Ferrah*; 73 *Ferraghe*.

P. 633, col. 2, l. 50, *clashing* (19), *lashing* (22).

P. 634, col. 1, l. 1, *joining* (19), *comming* (22).

P. 634, col. 1, l. 35, *oath* (19), *wealth* (22).

P. 634, col. 2, l. 31, *Lycanthropus* (W.), *Ilcanthropus* (22).

P. 635, col. 1, l. 44, *shavage* (19), *sheving* (22).

P. 636, col. 2, ll. 47, 48, *an other huge . . . upon them* (22), *and through other huge calamities which came upon them* (19).

P. 637, col. 2, ll. 25, 26, *Hernan*, *Shenan*, *Maugan* (22), *Henan*, *Shenan*, *Mangan* (W.).

P. 637, col. 2, ll. 34-49, *of which sorte . . . quite*

Irish (22, 19 and 73). Omitted by Ware, who states that this passage is in the Lambeth MS., and in the MS. belonging to the Marquis of Stafford.

P. 639, col. 2, l. 24, *head* (W.). *hand* (22, 19 and 73).

P. 640, col. 2, ll. 4-12, *Me thinks . . . aulike* of (19 and W.). Omitted by 22.

P. 640, col. 2, l. 48, *Turtius* (W. and 19), *Tyrreus* (22).

P. 642, col. 1, l. 12, *Kearrooghs* (22), *Garrowes* (19).

P. 642, col. 2, ll. 45-50, *by reading . . . of folke* (19), *by reading those which you call Folkemotes the which buille by two severall nations, the one by the Saxons, as the worde signifyeth in Saxone meeting of folke* (22).

P. 643, col. 1, ll. 30-34, *as ye . . . of stones* (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 645, col. 2, l. 29, to P. 646, col. 1, l. 41, *This is truly . . . way together* (22, 19 and 73). Omitted by W.

P. 646, col. 1, ll. 52, 53, *charges therof . . . but the inconvenience* (19), *charge therof, nor any defect of zeale for reformation herof, but the inconvenience* (22).

P. 649, col. 1, ll. 50-53, *And this is . . . for accursed* (omitted by W.).

P. 649, col. 1, l. 52, *times not called amisse* (19), *times called banisse* (22).

P. 656, col. 1, l. 6, *Jacques Goffray* (22), *Sequor Jeffrey* (19), *Signior Jeffery* (W.).

P. 658, col. 1, l. 37, *Magweirhe* (22), *Macguire* (73), *Macnyre* (19).

P. 658, col. 1, l. 11, *Tyrrrelaghe* O-Neale (22), *Turough Leragh* (19), *Turough Neale* (73).

P. 658, col. 2, l. 11, *advise* (22), *druce* (19).

P. 659, col. 2, l. 28, *cummerceygh* (22), *Cumericke* (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, ll. 52, 53, *Brin in the Britons . . . daie* (22), *Brin in the Britons language signifye wode, and Toll hillie* (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, l. 58, *Deurmuid-ne-Gath* (22), *Der-mougle* (19).

P. 660, col. 1, l. 36, *Glan-Maleurh* (22), *Glan Malor* (19 and W.).

P. 660, col. 1, l. 37, *Ballinecorrh* (22), *Ballive-carre* (19).

P. 660, col. 2, l. 53, *placing* (19 and 73), *plotting* (22).

P. 661, col. 1, l. 48, *good spuals* (22), *good spirituals* (19).

P. 661, col. 1, l. 51, *bayle* (22), *baynoning* (19).

P. 663, col. 1, l. 11, *unto them . . . where they* (22), *unto them that they shal be brought and removed with such crete as they have into Leunater, where they, &c.* (19).

P. 664, col. 1, ll. 52, 53, *which amounteth . . . acres* (22). Omitted by W.

P. 672, col. 2, l. 47, *kinde of being bounde* (19), *kinde of living being bound* (22).

P. 675, col. 1, ll. 37, 38, *Alloonaugh* . . . *dogge* (22), *Suscona, that is English* (19).

P. 676, col. 1, l. 54, *spark*. All the MSS. agree in this reading. Ware has *spear*, but *spark* may be a provincial form of the O. Eng. *spærthe*, a battle axe.

APPENDIX II.

LETTERS FROM SPENSER (IMMERITO) TO GABRIEL HARVEY.

TO THE WORSHIPFULL
HIS VERY SINGULAR GOOD FRIEND,
MAISTER G. H.

FIFOLEW OF TRINITIE HALL, IN CAMBRIDGE.*

GOOD Master G. I perceiue by your most courteous and frendly Letters your good will to be no lesse in deed than I alwayes esteemed. In recompence wherof, think I beseech you, that I wil spare neither speech nor wryting, nor aught else, whensoever, and wheresoever occasion shal be offered me: yea, I will not stay, till it be offered, but will seek it in al that possibly I may. And that you may perceiue how much your Counsel in al things prevailth with me, and how altogether I am ruled and overruled thereby: I am now determined to alter mine owne former purpose, and to subscribe to your aduizement: being notwithstanding resolved still, to abide your farther resolution. My principal doubts are these. First, I was minded for a while to have intermitted the uttering of my writtings: leaste by over-much cloying their noble eares, I should gather a contempt of myself, or else seeme rather for gain and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetnesse that I have already tasted. Then also, methought, the work too base for his excellent Lordship, being made in honour of a private Personage unknowne, which of some yll-willers might be upbraided not to be so worthe, as you knowe she is: or the matter not so weightie, that it should be offered to so weightie a Personage: or thelike. The selfe former Title still liketh me well ynough, and your fine Addition no lesse. If these, and the like doubts, maye be of importance in your seeming, to frustrate any parte of your aduice, I beseeche you without the least selfe love of your own purpose, counsell me for the beste: and the rather doe it faithfullye and carefully, for that, in all things I attribute so much to your iudgement, that I am evermore content to annihilate mine owne determinations, in respecte thereof. And indeede for your selfe to, it sitteth with you now, to call your wits and senses together (which are alwaies at call) when occasion is so fairely offered of Estimation and Preferment. For whiles the iron is hote, it is good striking, and minds of Nobles varie as their Estates. *Verum ne quid durius.*

* Reprinted from 'Two other very commendable Letters, of the same mens wryting: both touching the foresaid Artificiall Versifying, and certain other Particulae.—More lately delivered unto the Printer.—Imprinted at London by H. Bynnemann, dwelling in Thames streate, neere unto Raynardes Castell. Anno Domini, 1580. Cum gratia et privilegio Regie Majestatis.'

I pray you bothinke you well hercof, good Maister G. and forthwith write me those two or three, especial points and caveats for the nonce, *De quibus in superioribus ista mellissimis longissimisque Litteris tuis.* Your desire to heare of my late being with hir Majestic muste dye in it selfe. As for the twoo worthy Gentlemen, Maister Sidney and Maister Iyer, they have me, I thanke them, in some use of familiarity: of whom and to whome, what speache passeth for yure credite and estimation, I leave to your selfe to conceive, having alwayes so well conceived of my undained affection and zeale towardes you. And nowe they have proclaimed in their *apertissimè* a generall surcensing and silence of balde Rymers, and also of the verie beste to: in steade wherof they have, by authoritie of their whole Scoute, prescribed certayne Lawes and rules of Quantities of English sillables for English Verse: having had thereof already great practise, and drawn mee to their faction. Newe Bookes I heare of none, but only of one, that wryting a certayne Booke, called *The Schoole of Abuse*, and dedicating it to Maister Sidney, was for his labor scorned: if at leaste it be in the goodnesse of that nature to scorne. Suche follie is it, not to regarde aforehande the inclination and qualitie of him to whome wee dedicate oure Bookes. Suche mighte I happily incurre entailing *My Slobber* and the other Pamphlets unto his honor. I meant them rather to Maister Iyer. But I am of late more in love wyth my English Verse than with Ryming: whyche I should haue done long since, if I would then haue followed your counsell. *Sed te solum jam tum sapiebar cum Achamo sapere: nunc Aulam video equeque Politas Anglicos.*

Maister E. K. hartly desireth to be commended unto your Worshipp: of whome what accompte he maketh, your selfe shall hereafter perceiue, by his paynefull and dutifull Verses of your selfe.

Thus much was wrytten at Westminster yesterday: but coming this morning, being the sixteenth of October, to Mystrasse Kettes, to have it delivered to the Carrier, I receyved your letter, sente me the laste weeke: whereby I perceiue you otherwhiles continue your old exercise of Versifying in English: whych glorie I had now thought should have bene onely ours heere at London and the Court.

Truste me, your Verses I like passingly well, and envy your hidden paines in this kinde, or rather maligne, and grudge at your selfe, that would not once impart so much to me. But once or twice you make a breache in Maister Drants Rules: *quod tamen condonabimus tanto Politi, tuoque spissius maxime in his rebus autoritatis.* You shall see when we mee in London (whiche, when it shall be, certifie us) howe fast I have followed after you in that

Course : beware leaste in time I overtake you.
Veniuntamen te solum sequar, (ut scapenumero sum professor), nunquam sanè assequar dum vivam.

And nowe requite I yon with the like, not with the verye beste, but with the veryeshortest, namely, with a few lambicks : I dare warrant they be precisely perfect for the feete (as you can easily judge), and varie not one Inch from the Rule. I will imparte yours to Maister Sidney and Maister Dyer at my nexte going to the Courte. I praye you, keepe mine close to your selfe, or your verie cirtie friends, Maister Preston, Maister Still, and the reste.

Iambicum Trimeterum.

Unhappie Verse, the witness of my unhappie state,
 Make thy selfe fluttring wings of thy fast flying
 Thought, and fly forth unto my Love wherso-
 ever she be :

Whether lying restlesse in heavy bedde, or else
 Sitting so cheerlesse at the cheerfull boorde, or
 else

Playing alone cerdesse on hir heavenlie Virgi-
 nals,

If in Bed, tell hir, that my eyes can take no reste :
 If at Boorde, tell hir, that my mouth can cate no
 meate :

If at hir Virginals, tell hir, I can heare no mirth.

Asked why ? say : Waking Love suffereth no sleepe:
 Say, that raging Love dothe appall the weake
 stomacke :

Say, that lamenting Love marroth the Musickall.

Tell hir, that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me
 asleepe :

Tell hir, that hir beantie was wonte to feede
 mine eyes :

Tell hir, that hir sweete Tongue was wonte to
 make me mirth.

Nowe doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindly
 reste :

Nowe doe I dayly starve, wanting my lively
 foode :

Nowe doe I alwayes dye, wanting thy timely
 mirth.

And if I waste, who will bewaile my heavy chaunce ?
 And if I starve, who will record my cursed end ?
 And if I dye, who will saye : *this was Immerto ?*

I thought once agayne here to haue made an
 ende, with a heartie *Vale* of the best fashion : but
 loe an ysfavoured mischance ! My last farewell,
 whereof I made great accompt, and muche mar-
 velled you shoulde make no mention thereof, I am
 nowe tolde (in the Divels name) was thorough one
 mans negligence quite forgotten, that shoulde nowe
 undoubtedly have bene sent, whether I hadde
 come, or no. Seeing it can now be no otherwise, I
 pray you take all together, wyth all their faultes :
 and nowo I hope, you will vouchsafe mee an
 answer of the largest size, or else I tell you true,
 you shall bee very deepe in my debte : notwith-
 standing thus other sweete, but shorte letter, and
 fine, but fewe Verses. But I woulde rather I
 might see youre owne good selfe, and receive a
 Reciprocall farewell from your owne sweete mouth.

*Ad ornatussimum virum, multis jam diu
 NOMINIBUS CLAUSSIMUM G. H. IMMERTITO
 sui, mox in Guiliam navigatur, eutycheiv.*

Sic malus egregium, sic non infimicus Amicum ;
 Sicque novus veterem iubet ipse Poeta Poetam,
 Salvare, ac colo, post secula multa secundo
 Jam redurem, colo magis, quam nunc ipso se-
 cundo

Utter. Ecce Deus, (modò sit Dens ille, renixum
 Qui vocet in scelus, et juratos perdat amores)
 Ecce Dens mihi clara dedit modò signa Marinus,
 Et sua veligero lenis parat Equora Ligno :
 Mox sulcanda, suas etiam pater Æolus Iras
 Point, et ingentes animos Aquilonis—
 Cuncta vils sic apta meis : ego solus ineptus—
 Nam mihi nescio quò mens sancia vulnere,
 dudum

Fluctuat ancipiti Pelago, dum Navita proram
 Invalidam validus rapit huc Amor, et rapit illic.
 Consiliis Intio melioribus usa, decusque
 Immortale levi diffusa Cupidinis Arcu.
 Anguiur hoc dubio, et pectus vexamur in ipso.
 Magnæ pharutriti nunc tu contemptor Amoris,
 (Id tibi Dii nomen precor haud impune remittant)

Hos modos exsolve, et eris mihi magnus Apollo.
 Spiritus ad summos, scio, te generosis Honores
 Estimulat, majusque docet sparare Proctum.
 Quam levis est Amor, et tamen haud levis est
 Amor omnis.

Ergo nihil laudi reputas æquale perenni,
 Præque sacrosancta splendoris imagine tanti,
 Cætera, quæ vecors, uti Numina, vulgus adorat,
 Præda, Amicitias, urbana peculia, Nummos,
 Quæque placent oculis, formas, spectacula,
 Amores,

Conculcare soles, ut humum, et ludibria sensus.
 Digna meo certè Harveio sententia, digna
 Oratore amplo, et generoso pectore, quam non
 Stoica formidet veterum Sapientia vinculis
 Sancire æternis : sapor haud tamen omnibus
 idem.

Dicitur effreti proles facunda Laërta,
 Quamlibet ignoti jactata per ignora Cæli
 Inque procelloso longini exul gurgite ponto,
 Pæne tamen amplexu lachrymosæ Conjugis, Ortus
 Cælestes Divinæque thoros præsepe beatos.
 Tantum Amor, et Mulier, vel Amore potentior.
 Illum

Tu tamen illudis : tua Magnificèntia tanta est :
 Præque subumbrata Splendoris Imagine tanti
 Præque illo Meritis famosis nomine parto
 Cætera, quæ Vecors, uti Numina, vulgus adorat,
 Præda, Amicitias, armenta, peculia, nummos,
 Quæque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amores,
 Quæque placent ori, quæque auribus, omnia
 templa.

Næ tu grande sapis, Sapor at sapientia non est :
 Omnis est in parvis bene qui scit desipuisse,
 Sæpe supercilis palmas sapientibus aufert.
 Ludit Aristippum modò tetrica Turba Sophorum,
 Mitta purpureo moderantem verba Tyranno
 Ludit Aristippum dictant vana Sophorum,
 Quod levis emensi males torquet Culicis umbra :
 Et quisquis pulchras studet Herobius altis,
 Desipuisse studeat sic gratia crescit inepta.
 Denique laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vitis,

Insignire volet, Populoque placere faventi.
Desipere insanus discit, turpemque pudendæ
Stultitiæ laudem querit. Pater Rinnus unus
Dictus in innumeris sapiens: laudatur at ipsa
Carmina vevano fudisse liquentia vino:
Nec tu pace tua, nostri Cato Maxime sæveli,
Nomen honorati sacrum merere Poetæ.
Quantumvis illustre cinas, et nobile Carmen,
Mi stultire velis, sic S[ic]ultorum omnia plena,
Tuta sed in medio superest via gurgate, nam Qui
Nec reliquis nimium vult despuisse videri,
Nec sapuisse nimis, Sapientem dixerit unum.
Hinc te meruerit unda, illic combusserit Ignis;
Nec tu deliciis nimis aspernare finentes,
Nec serò Dominam, venientem in vota, nec Aurum,
Si supis, ablatum, (Curis ea, Fabricisque
Lingue viris misera, miseranda Sophismata:
quondam

Grande sui decus si, nostri sed dedecus ævi):
Nec sectare nimis. Res utraque crimine plena.
Hoc bene qui callet, (si quis tamen hoc bene callet)
Scribe, vel invito sapientem hunc Socrate solum.
Vis facit una pios. In-dos facit altera: et altera
Egregiè corlata, actortia pectora: verum
Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci.
Dil mihi, dulce diu dederant: verum utile nun-
quam:
Utile nunc etiam, ô utinam quoque dulce dedis-
sent.

Dil mihi (quippe Dis æquivalia maxima parvis)
Ni nimis invadeant mortalia esse beatæ,
Dulce simul tribuisse queant, simul utile: tanta
Sed Fortuna tua est: pariter quæque utile, quæque
Dulce dat ad placitum: sævo nos ædere nati
Quæsitum inus eam per inhospita Caucasæ longè,
Perque Pyrenæos montes, Babilonæque turpem.
Quod si quæsitum nec ibi invenimus, ingens
Æquor inexhaustis permensis erroribus, intra
Functibus in mediis socii quærenus Ulyssiæ.
Passibus inde Deum fessis comitalimur ægram,
Nobile qui furtum quærenti defuit orbi.
Namque sinu pulset in patrio, tenebrisque per-
dendis

Non nimis ingenio Juvenem infolite evirentes
Officis frustra deperdere vilibus Anno*,
Frugibus et vacuas sperantis cernere spicas.
Ibimus ergo statim: (quis eunti fausta pre-
cetur?)

Et pede Clibosæ Passu calcabimus Alpes.
Quis dabit interea conditæ rorè Britanno,
Quis tibi Litterulæ? quis carmen amore petul-
cum!

Musa sub Oebalii desmeta cacumine montis,
Plebit inexhausto tam longa silentia planctu,
Lugelisque sacrum lacrymis Hællona tacentem.
Harvelisque bonus (charus læt omnibus idem,
Idque suo merito, prope suavior omnibus unus,
Angelus et Gabriel, (quamvis comitatus amicis
Innumeris, geniumque choro stipatæ amæno)
Immerito tamen unum absentem sæpe requirit,
Optabitque Utinam meus hic Edmundus adesset,
Qui nova scripsisset, nec Amores conticuisset
Ipse suos, et sæpe animo verbaque lenigis
Fænsta precaretur, Deque illum aliquando rediret,
&c.

Plura vellem per Charites, sed non licet per Musas.
Vale, Vale plurimum, Mi amabilissime Harveie, meo
cordi, meorum omnium longè charissime.

I was minded also to have sent you some English
verses: or Rymes, for a farewell: but by my troth,
I have no spare time in the world, to thinke on
such Toyes. that you know will demand a freer
head, than mine is presently. I beseeche you by
all your Curtesies and Graces let me be answered
ere I goe: which will be (I hope, I feare, I thinke),
the next weeke, if I can be dispatched of my Lord.
I goe thither, as sent by him, and maintained most
what of him: and there am to employ my time, my
body, my minde, to his Honours service. Thus
with many superlative Commendations and Re-
commendations to your selfe, and all my friends
with you, I ende my 1st Farewell, not thinking
any more to write unto you, before I goe: and
withall committing to your faithfull Credence the
eternall Memorie of our everlasting friendship, the
inviolable Memorie of our unspotted friendship, the
sacred Memorie of our vowed friendship: which
I beseech you Continue with usual writings, as you
may, and of all things let me heare some Newes
from you. As gentle M. Sidney, I thank his good
Worship, hath required of me, and so promised to
doe againe. *Qui monet, ut facias, quod jam jeceris*:
you knowe the rest. You may always send them
most safely to me by *Mistres Keble*, and by none
other. So once againe, and yet once more, Fare-
well most hartly, mine owne good Master H. and
love me, as I love you, and thinke upon poore Im-
merito, as he thinketh upon you.

Lycester House, this 5 [?] 16] of October, 1579.

*Pæ mare, per terras,
Virus, mortuæque
Tuis Immerito.*

TO MY LONG APPROVED AND SINGULAR GOOD FREND, MASTER G. H.*

Good Master H. I doubt not but you have some
great important matter in hande, which al this
while restraineth your Penne, and wonted readi-
nesse in provoking me unto that, wherein your selfe
nowe faulter. If there bee any such thing in hatch-
ing, I pray you hartly, lette us knowe, before al the
worlde see it. But if happily you dwell altogether
in Justianus Court, and give your selfe to be de-
voured of severate Studies, as of all likelihood you
doe: yet at least impart some your olde, or newe
Latine or Englishe, Eloquent and Gallant Poesies
to us, from whose eyes, you saye, you keepe in a
manner nothing hidden. Little newes is here
stirred: but that olde grante matter still depending.
His Honour never better. I thinke the Earthquake
was also there wryth you (which I would gladly
learne) as it was here with us: overthrowing divers
old buildings and peeces of Churches. Sure verie

* Reprinted from 'Three proper and wittie fami-
liar Letters: lately passed betwene two Universitie
men: touching the Earthquake in April last, and
our English reformed Versifying.—With the Pre-
face of a wellwiller to them both.—Imprinted at
London by H. Bynneman, dwelling in Thames
streete, neere unto Baynardes Castell. Anno Do-
mini, 1580.—Cum gratia et privilegio Regiæ Majes-
tatis.'

straunge to be hearde of in these Countries, and yet I heare some saye (I knowe not howe truly) that they have knowne the like before in their dayes. *Sed quid vobis videtur magnus Philosophus?* I like your late English Hexameters so exceedingly well, that I also enure my Penne sometime in that kinde: whyche I fynd indeede, as I have heard you often defende in worde, neither so harde, nor so harsh, that it will easily and fairely yeelde it selfe to our Moother tongue. For the onely, or chiefest hardnesse, whych seemeth, is in the Accente: whycho sometime gapeth, and, as it were, yaweth unfavourably, comming shorte of that it should, and sometime exceeding the measure of the Number, as in *Carpenter*, the middle sillable being used shorte in speache, when it shall be read long in Verse, seemeth like a lame *Gosling* that *draveth one leynge after his*: and *Heaven* being used shorte as one sillable, when it is in verse stretched out with a Dinstole, is like a lame *dogge* that *holdes up one leynge*. But it is to be wonne with Custome, and rough words must be subdued with Use. For, why a Gods name, may not we, as else the Greekes, have the kingdom of our owne Language, and measure our Accentes by the sounde, reserving the Quantitie to the Verse? Lo, here I let you see my olde use of toying in Rymes turned into your artificial straightnesse of Verse by this *Tetrastichon*. I beseech you tell me your fanse without parcialitie.

See yee the blindefoulded pretie God, that feareth Archer,

Of Lovers Miscerics which maketh his bloodie game?

Wote ye why, his Moother with a Veale hath coovered his Face?

Trust me, least he my Looove happely chaunce to beholde.

Seeme they comparable to those two, which I tranlated you *ex tempore* in bed, the last time we lay together in Westminster?

That which I cate did I joy, and that which I greedily gorged,

As for those many goodly matters leaft I for others.

I would hartly wish, you would either send me the Rules and Precepts of Arte, which you observe in Quantities, or else followe mine, that M. Philip Sidney gave me, being the very same which M. Drant devised, but enlarged with M. Sidneys own judgement, and augmented with my Observations, that we might both accorde and agree in one: leaste we overthrowe one another, and be overthrowen of the rest. Trust me, you will hardly believe what greates good liking and estimation Master Dier had of your *Satyricall Verses*, and I, since the viewe thereof, having before of my selfe had special liking of *Englishe Vernacular*, am even nowe aboute to give you some token, what, and howe well therein I am able to doe: for, to tell you truth, I minde shortly at convenient leysure, to sette forth a Booke in this kinde, which I entitle *Euphathanon Thamesis*: whyche Booke, I dare undertake will be very profitable for the knowledge, and rare for the Invention and manner of handling. For in setting forth the marriage of the Thames: I shewe his first beginning, and offspring, and all

the Countrey, that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the Rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this Wedding, and their right names, and right passage, &c. A worke, beleve me, of much labour, wherein notwithstanding Master Holmshed hath muche furthered and advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their best heades and sources: and also in tracing and dogginge oute all their Course, til they fall into the Sea.

O Tite, siquid, ego,
Ecquid erit pretij?

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my *Dreames* and *Dynag Pellicane*, being fully finished (as I partlye signified in my last Letters) and presently to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my *Fairy Queene*, whyche I praye you hartly send me with an expedition: and your frendly Letters, and long expected Judgement wythall, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes aneche, as you ordinarily use, and I extraordinarily desire. *Multum vale. Westminster. Quart. Nonas Aprilis 1580.* Sed, amabo te, meum Corculum tibi se ex animo commendat plurimum: jandiu munda, te nihil ad literas suas responsus ledisse. Vide quæso, ne id tibi Capitale sit: Mihi certè quidem est, neque tibi hercle impur, ut opinor, iterum vale, & quam voles sæpe.

Yours alwayes to commaunde,

IMMERITO.

Postscript.

I take best my *Dreames* shoulde come forth alone, being grown by means of the Glosse (running continually in manner of a Paraphrase) full as great as my *Calendar*. Therin be some things excellently, and many things wittily discoursed of E. K. and the pictures so singularly set forth and purtynayd, as if Michael Angelo were there, he could (I think) nor amende the beste, nor reprehende the worst. I know you would lyke them passing wel. Of my *Stemmata Dudreana*, and especially of the sundry Apostrophes therein, addressed you knowe to whome, must more avysement be had, than so lightly to sende them abroad: howbeit, trust me (though I doe never very well) yet, in my owne fancie, I never dyd better. *Verum tamen te sequor solum: nunquam verò assequar.*

EXTRACT FROM HARVEY'S REPLY.*

But Master Collin Cloute is not every body, and albeit his olde Companions, Master Cuddy and Master Hobbynoll be as little beholding to their *Mistresse Poetrie*, as ever you writ: yet he peradventure by the means of his special favour, and some personall priviledge, may happily live by *Dynag Pellicanes*, and purchase great landes, and lordshippes with the money, which his *Calendar* and *Dreames* have, and will afforde him. *Extra jocum*, I like your *Dreames* passing well: and the rather, because they savour of that singular extraordinary veine and invention, which I ever fancied moste, and in a manner admired onely in *Lucian*, *Petrarche*, *Aretine*, *Passius*, and all the most deli-

* Reprinted from 'Three Proper and wittie familiar Letters, &c.'

cate, and fine conceited Grecians and Italians : (for the Romanes to speake of, are but verie ciphers in this kinde :) whose chieftest endeavour, and drift was, to have nothing vulgare, but in some respects or other, and especially in *lively hyperbolical amplifications*, rare, quaint, and odde in every pointe, and as a man would saye, a degree or two at the leaste, above the reach, and compass of a common schollers capacitee. In whicha respects notwithstanding, as well for the singularitie of the manner, as the Divinitie of the matter, I hearde once a Divine, preferre *Saint Johns Revelation* before al the veriest *Metaphysical Visions*, and jollyest conceited *Dreames* or *Eclases*, that ever were devised by one or other, howe admirable, or supor excellent soever they seemed otherwise to the worlde. And truly I am so confirmed in this opinion, that when I bethinke me of the verie notablest, and moste wonderful Propheticall, or Poeticall Vision, that ever I read, or hearde, me seemeth the proportion is so unequal, that there hardly appeareth anye semblance of Comparison : no more in a manner (especially for Poets) then doth betweene the incomprehensible Wisdome of God, and the sensible Wit of man.

But what needeth this digression between you and me ? I dare saye you wyl holde yourselfe reasonably wel satisfied, if youre *Dreames* be but as well esteemed of in Englande, as *Petrarches Visions* be in Italy : which I assure you, is the very worst I wish you. But, see, how I have the *Arte Memoratorie* nt commaundement. In good faith I had once againe nigh forgotten your *Faerie Queene* : howbeit by good chance, I have now sent hir home at the laste,

neither in better nor worse case, then I founde hir. And must you of necessitie have my judgement of hir indeede ? To be plaine, I am voyde of al judgement, if your *Nine Comedies*, whereunto in imitation of *Herodotus*, you give the names of the *Nine Muses* (and in one mans fansie not unworthily) come not neerer *Aristotles Comedies*, eyther for the finenesse of plausible Elocution, or the rarenesse of Poeticall Invention, then that *Elvish Queene* doth to his *Orlando Furioso*, which notwithstanding, you will negles seeme to emulate, and hope to overgo, as you flatly professed yourself in one of your last Letters.

Besides that you know, it hath bene the usual practise of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all nations, and specially in *Italie*, rather to shew, and advance themselves that way, then any other : as namely, those three notorious dyscoursing heads, *Dibena*, *Machavel*, and *Aretine* did, (to let *Bembo* and *Ariosto* passe) with the great admiration, and wonderment of the whole country : being in deede reputed matchable in all points, both for conceyt of Witte and eloquent decyphering of matters, either with *Aristophanes* and *Menander* in Greek, or with *Plautus* and *Terence* in Latin, or with any other; in any other tong. But I will not stand greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be the *Faerie Queene* be fairer in your eie than the *Nine Muses*, and *Hobgoblyn* ruffe away with the Garland from *Apollo* : Marke what I saye, and yet I will not say that I thought, but there an End for this once, and fare you well, till God or some good Aungell putt you in a better mynde.



GLOSSARY.

The numbers refer to the pages.

- A*, in 'A Gods name,' 442, 474
Abace, abase, to lower, to hang down, 82, 257, 397
Aband, to abandon, 138
Abashment, fear, 202, 203
Abear, to behave, conduct, 356, 406
Abet, abett, to aid, support, maintain, 364, 383;
 asserting falsely, 242
Abid, abide, remained, 178
Abie, aby, aby, to pay the penalty of, to atone for,
 suffer for, 101, 122, 179, 212, 235, 258, 395; abide
 by, 368
Abject, to throw or cast down, 219, 338
Abode, remained, 227; a delay, stay, 156, 202
Abolish, to wipe out, 101
Aboord, abord, from the bank, astray, at a loss,
 515. *Aborde*, harbour, 418
Abouts, about, 58
Abraide, to rouse, wake up, 218
Abray (pret. *abrayle*), to start up suddenly, to
 awake, 162, 257, 261; to quake with sudden fear,
 261
Abusion, abuse, deceit, fraud, 341, 230, 359
Accloy, accloye, to clog up, choke, encumber, hinder,
 113, 449, 568
Accoasting, skimming along near the ground, 369
Accompt, account, account, 444, 515
Accorage, to encourage, 90, 203
Accord, to grant, to agree, to reconcile, 255, 278,
 418; an agreement, 90, 125
According, agreeably, according to, 65, 75, 90,
 141; accordingly, 138
Accoste, to go side by side, to adjoin, border, 352
Accounting, entertaining (courtously), 88
Accoustrement, garb, 519
Accoy, accois, to subdue, daunt, tame, 448
Accoy, to coy, carous, 274
Accoyl, to assemble, gather together, 128
Accrete, to increase, 259, 317
Achates (Acales), purchased provisions, 428
Acquight, acquit, acquite, to deliver, release, 49, 145;
 acquitted, free, 314
Adamants, crystals, 288
Adaw, to daunt, tame, moderate, 195, 260, 341,
 449
Adages, daily, 452
Addreme, to adjudge, 307
Addoom, to adjudge, 438
Address, to prepare, adjust, direct, clothe, arm, 176,
 192, 215. *Adress*, ready, 243
Adjoyne, to approach, join, 198
Admuraunce, admiration, 347
Admure, to wonder at, 256, 260, 399
Adore, to adorn, 290
Adorne, ornament, 226
Adoune, down, 49
Adrad, adred, adredde, afraid, terrified, 162, 244,
 272, 507
Adrad, to be frightened, 299
Advaunce, to extol, 34; impel, 81
Adventure, chance, 237; opportunity, 243; to at-
 tempt, 311
Adview, to view, 308
Advuze, advise, to consider, perceive, take thought
 of, bethink, 79, 129, 294, 419
Advizement, consideration, 103, 126
Adward, an award, 280; to award, 294
Emuling, emulating, rivaling, 550 (emuled, 550)
Afraid, afraid, 217, 235
Afear, to frighten, 94, 96
Affect, affection, 367; sorrow, 566; imitation, 584
Affection, passion, 100, 139, 168, 386
Affide, affide, betrothed, 273, 306; intrusted, 328
Afflicted, low, humble, 11
Aford, to consent, 103
Aftap, to strike, to strike down, to encounter, to
 assault, 82, 163
Afray, to terrify, fray, 184; terror, 340, 345
Afrende, to make friends, 246
Affret, encounter, 207, 242
Affront, to confront, encounter, oppose, 50, 176,
 244
Affy, to betroth, espouse, 372, 376; entrust, 322
Affyaunce, betrothal, 99
Afore, in front, before, 97, 170
Aggrace, favour, kindness, goodwill, 125; to make
 gracious, 151
Aggrate, to please, delight, charm, treat politely,
 105, 128, 193, 204, 238, 349, 410
Aglet, point, tag, 94, 366
Agrec, to settle, to cause to agree, 97
Agreeably, alike, in a manner to agree, 391
Agryse, agryze, agryse, agryze, to cause to shudder,
 to terrify, to make disgusted, 111, 165, 346, 430
Agrysd, having a terrible look, disfigured, 269
Agryse, agryze, to deck, adorn, fashion, accoutre,
 82, 163, 306, 519; to disguise, 107
Alabaster, alabaster, 167
Albe, albee, although, 37, 455
Alleggaunce, alleviation, 186
Alow, howling, 323
Algate, algates, altogether, wholly, by all means, in
 all ways, at all events, 161, 201, 259, nevertheless,
 480
All, although, 155; 'all as' as if, 448

- Allegge*, to lessen, allay, 452
Almes, a free allowance, alms, 230
Alone (only), without compulsion, 255
Along, downwards, 397
Alow, praise, 5
Als, also, 80, 84, 123, 232
Amaine, violently, by force, 235, 256, 364
Amate, to daunt, subdue, to stupefy, terrify, 16, 87, 178, 197, 220; to keep company with, 128
Amaze, amazement, 194, 237
Ambassage, embassy, 517
Amerced, amerced, punished, 583
Amenage, to manage, handle, 97
Amenance, carriage, behaviour, 160, 121, 242, 520
Amis, amice, a priestly vestment, 29
Amont, to mount up, ascend, 60
Amove, to move, remove, 31, 56, 219
Anvil, anvil, 72
Annoy, annoyance, grief, hurt, 40, 91, 129
Antiques, antiques, ancient, or fantastic figures, 94, 112, 223
Apac, fast, copiously, 286
Appail, to fluster, 260; to weaken, 160
Appay, *apay* (pret. and p. p. *appay'd*, *appaid*), to please, satisfy, pay, 129, 118, 354, 470, 543
Appeach, to impeach, accuse, 123, 144, 320, 342
Appease, to cease from, 25
Appele, to accuse, 311; to offer, 168
Appellation, appeal, 427
Apply, to attend to, 63; to bend one's steps to, 106
Approven, to put to the proof, to prove, 432
Approuance, approval, 153
Arboret, little grove, 107
Arad, *arred* (p. *arred*), to tell, say, declare, describe, inform, teach, interpret, explain, 55, 57, 97, 164, 220, 238, 258, 309, 380; appoint, 355; detect, 254
Arrear, *arvare*, *arere*, *arree*, to the rear, backward, aback, 113, 196, 214, 377, 509
Arret, *arret*, to allot, entrust, adjudge, 120, 140, 254
Arre, in a row, in order, 377
Arguments, signs, indications, 391
Arighis, rightly, 343
Arke, box, che-*ts*, 218
Arras, tapestry of Arras, 28
Arraught (pret. of *arrach*), seized forcibly, 135
As, as if, 51, 70, 136, 197
Askance, sideways, 112, 160
Aslake, to slake, abate, appease, 26
Aslope, on the slope, aside, 180
Assay, to try, attempt, assail, attack, 20, 28, 97, 183, 277; an attempt, trial, 83, 92, 93; value, 19, 177
Assayde, affected, 470
Assage, to besiege, 141
Assignment, design, 140
Assize, measure, 538
Assoil, *assoyl*, to absolve, determine, set free, let loose, renew, 63, 104, 160, 203, 243, 397, 533; to pay, 548; remove, 255, 260
Assott, to befooled, to beguile, bewilder, 132, 202, 452
Assure, to promise, assert confidently, 132
Assuage, to grow mild, 23
Assyn, to mark or point out, 46
Asstart, to start up suddenly, 166
Asstart, befall, come upon suddenly, 482
Asound, *asound*, *astonied*, astonished, stunned, 269, 468
Astonish, to stun, 272
Astonying, confounding, 305
Attach, to seize, take prisoner (*attack*, 203), 142, 275, 318
Attaine, *attayne*, to find, reach, fall in with, 265
Attaint, to stain, obscure, 47
Attempt, to tempt, 334
Attendement, intent, 388
Attent, attention, 211, 408
Attone (*alone*), at one, together, reconciled, 83, 128, 264, 278. *Attone*, *attons*, at once, together, 84, 182, 206
Attropt, dressed, 251
Atween, *atweene*, between, 185, 351, 390
Atwixt, between, at intervals, 224
Annayl, to enamel, 94
Araile, *avale*, to fall, sink, lower, descend, bow down, 126, 399, 447, 448
Araunt, depart, 388
Arauntage, advantage, 107
Araunting, advancing (boastfully), 92
Avenge, revenge, 258
Avengement, revenge, 30, 184
Aventred, thrust forward (at a venture), 158, 242
Aventring, pushing forward, 258
Arise, *arise*, to perceive, consider, regard, view, take note of, reflect, bethink, 37, 109, 157, 163, 169, 174, 238, 273, 419; advise, 273
Avizefull, obscure, 260
Avoid, to depart, go out, 161
Avoure, 'to make avoure' = to justify, maintain, 376
Avorned, made, was made aware, 216
Awate, to wait for, 157; watch, 280
Awake, to terrify, frighten, 263, 351, 513
Awalets (*awalets*), tags, points of gold, 94
Aym, direction, 107
Babe, doll, 460
Bace, low, 416, 168
Bace, the game of prisoner's base, 476; 'bad bace' = challenged, 218
Baffuld, disgraced (as a recreant knight), 391, 394
Baile, to deliver, 275; custody, 428
Banns, banns (of marriage), 77
Bale, grief, sorrow, affliction, trouble, 13, 46, 91, 114; bales, ruins, 407; *baleful*, full of bale, destructive, deadly, 169, 241; *balefulness*, ruin, 154
Bale, to disappoint, to deal at cross purposes, 164, 281; a ridge between two furrows, 418
Balliards, billiards, 520
Ban, *banne*, to curse (*band*, cursed), 197, 275, 302, 349, 368, 601
Band, *band*, banish, 167; assemble, 31
Bandog, mastiff, 474
Bane, death, destruction, 142
Banket, banquet, 190, 264
Bannervail, a standard (shaped like a swallow's tail), 393
Barb, equipments of a horse, horse-armour, 87
Barbican, a watch-tower, 128
Bard, ornamented with bars (ornaments of a girdle), 94
Base, low, 18; the lower part, 339
Baseness, a low humble condition, 781
Basen-wide, widely extended, 519
Bases, armour for the legs, 318
Bash, to be abashed, 100

- Bastard*, base, lowborn, 41, 96
Basted, sewed slightly, 316
Bate, did bite, 102; fed, 473
Bate, to bait, attack, 422
Batt, stick, 506, 514
Battalious, ready for battle, in order for battle, 33, 173
Battellant, embattled, fortified, 637
Battill (properly *to fallen*), to be of good flavour, 400
Baton, stick, club, 395
Bauldrick, belt, 84, 297, 607
Bawne, a hill, 642
Bay, a standstill, a position in which one is kept at bay, 302
Baye, to bathe, 44
Bayes (baies), laurels, 234, 386
Bayt, bait, artifice, 103, 404; to bait (a bull), 123; to cause to abate, to let rest, 148
Beades, prayers, 14
Beadrill, a list, 239
Beare, burden, 561; bier, 371
Beastlyhead, 'your beastlyhead,' 'a greeting to the person of a beast,' 461
Beath'd, plunged, 263
Beauperes, fair companions, 159
Becks, beaks, 140
Becone, to come to, go to, to suit, to happen, 62, 67, 88, 121, 209
Bed, bad, 59
Bedight, dressed, equipped, decked, adorned, 81, 111, 192, 251, 382; 'ill-bedight,' disfigured, 112
Beduck, to dive, dip, 110
Defell, was fitting, proper, 127
Beginn, beginning, 171
Byword, stained with gore, 285
Behave, to employ, use, 95
Beheast *behest*, command, 90, 178
Behight, call, name, address, pronounce, promise, command, 67, 91, 198, 238, 244, 246, 313, 455; ordained, 534; adjudged, entrusted, 65, 120, 253, 383
Behoofe, profit, 266
Behote, to promise, 251; call, 484; *behott*, promised, 72
Belacroyle, kind salutation or greeting, 260
Belamoure, *belamy*, a lover, 108, 117
Belay, to beset, encompass, 575; adorn, 366
Belaine, fair lady, 167
Belgard, fair (or kind) looks, 94, 111, 598
Bellbone, a beautiful and good woman, 455
Belyde, counterfeited, 212
Ben (*bene*, *been*), are, 232
Band, band, 94, 114, 316
Beneficiall, a benefice, 517
Bent, long stalks of (*bent*) grass, 377
Berast, bereft, 236
Bes, to bear, 292; bier, 148
Besecke, beseech, 246
Besene, 'well-beseen,' of good appearance, comely, 74
Beseme, *beseeme*, to be seemly, to seem fit, to suit, fit, become, appear, 128, 129, 159, 161, 276, 320, 470
Besitting, befitting, 237
Bespeake, to address, 316
Bespredd, adorned, 216
Besprent, *besprunt*, besprinkled, 484, 485
Bested (*bested*, *vested*), situated, placed, placed in peril, 14, 86, 217, 267; treated, 388; attended, 230; beset, 184, 244; 'ill bested' = in a bad plight, 83
Betaine, to stain, 265
Betow, to place, 128
Bestradd, bestrided, 301
Bet, did beat, 89
Betake (pret. *betooke*), to take (into), to deliver, bestow, betake one's self, 34, 69, 191, 417
Beteem, to deliver, give, 121
Bethinke, to make up one's mind, 40
Bethrall, to take captive, 52
Betide, *betyde*, to befall, to happen to, 83, 110, 183; *betid*, *betydeid*, *betight*, befall, befallen, 307, 482, 562
Bett, better, 477
Biever, the front part of a helmet (covering the mouth), 102
Bey, company (of ladies), 128
Berale, to choose, select, 38
Beray, to reveal, betray, accuse, 31, 36, 168, 244; signify, 642
Bickermint, bickering, strife, 314
Bid, to pray, 14
Bide, to bid, offer, 202
Buggen, cup, 460
Bulwe, *bylwe*, *blewe*, forthwith, quickly, 36, 473
Buls, battle-axes, 353
Blame, to blemish, 120; injury, hurt, 156
Blanckt, confounded, put out of countenance, 170
Blas, to wither, 187
Blaster, to bluster (in note), 704
Blaze, to blazon forth, proclaim, 68
Blemishment, a blemish, 239
Blend (pret. and p. part. *blent*), to mix, confuse, confound, defile, blemish, stain, obscure, 42, 99, 113, 206, 359, 625. *Blent*, blinded, obscured, blotted, 97, 227, 310
Blere, to blear (one's eyes), deceive, 466
Bless, to preserve, deliver, 19, 44, 87, 259; to brandish, 33, 51
Blesse, bliss, 281
Bliss, to cease, 184
Blincked, dimmed, 206
Blind, dark, 285
Blis, wounded, struck, 397
Blis, blessed, 267
Blonckel, liveries, grey coats, 458
Blont, blunt, unpolished, 474
Bloosne, blossom, bloom, 268, 446
Blot, *blotten*, to defame, blemish, 230, 245
Blabbed, wet or stained with tears, 39, 298
Boad, 'booties boad' = lived uselessly, profitlessly, 516
Bodes, bodes, portends, 425
Bode, abode, 354, 416
Boley (or *buala*), 630; 'place (situated in a grassy hollow) enclosed by man in which to put cattle in the spring and summer months, while on the mountain pastures—a place that ensures safety.' (HENRY KINAHAN in *The Athenæum*, No. 2167, May 8, 1869)
Bollet, bullet, 45
Bolt, arrow, 452
Bond, bound, 108, 269
Boone, prayer, petition, 441, 341
Boord, *bord*, to accost, to address, talk with, 87, 99, 125, 170; conversation, 212; go side by side, 289

Boot, to avail, profit, 81, 102; booty, gain, 338, 443
Booting, availing, 293
Bore, borne, 247
Borde, coast, 418
Bordraving (pl. *bordrags*), border ravaging, border raid, 138, 552
Borrow, *borrow*, pledge, surety, 459, 460, 520
Borrell, rustic, 467
Bosse, middle of shield, 353
Bouget, budget, 21
Bought, fold, 13, 69, 507
Boult, to sift, bolt, 99
Bounse, to beat, 220
Bountie, bounty, goodness, 92, 206. *Bounteous*, generous, good, 160, 161, 219. *Bountyhed*, generosity, 145, 160, 173
Bourdon, burden (of a song), 567
Bourne, boundary, 107
Bout, about, 170
Bouting-can, a drinking-can, 29
Bownd, to lead (by a direct course), 67
Noivre, chamber, inner room, 161; to lodge, shelter, 360, 407
Bovers, muscles (of the shoulder), 53
Boy, a term of reproach, 105
Boystrous, rough, rude (as applied to a club), 50
Brace, to embrace, encompass, 474
Brag, proudly, 449. *Bragly*, proudly, 452. *Braying*, proud, 449
Brame, sharp passion (cf. O.E. *breme*, severe, sharp), 168
Brauster, dunces, brawls, 212
Braut, burst, 16, 49, 194, 212
Brave, fair, beautiful, 94, 153
Braverie, finery, 521
Bravely, gallantly, splendidly, 107
Brauned, muscular, brawny, 53
Bray (*brute*), to cry out suddenly, cry aloud, utter aloud, 350; gasp out, 81
Braynepan, skull, 389
Breaded, braided, embroidered, 88, 168
Briere, *biere*, briar, 64, 160, 213
Breech, breeches, 388
Breede, work, produce, 159
Breem, *breme*, boisterous, rough, sharp, 433, 448, 485
Brenne, to burn, 246
Brent, burnt, 55, 71, 160
Brickle, brittle, 288, 494
Brigandine, a kind of light vessel, 638
Brim, margin of the horizon, 341
Briez, *bryze*, gulfy, 363, 537
Broage, pimping, 441, 520
Broch, to commence, broach, 162
Brode, abroad, 247
Brond, sword, 121, 226
Brondion, sword, 250
Bronds, embers, *brands*, 115
Brood, a brooding-place (? an error for *brood* = O.E. *bood* or *abood*, an abode, resting place; cf. *bode*, p. 354), 112
Brooke, to endure, bear *brook*, 179, 240
Brouzes, twigs, 216
Brunt, assault, 123
Brust, burst, 160, 202, 251
Bruted, renowned, *bruted*, 514
Brutenesse, *brutishness*, brutality, brute-like state, 120, 207

Buckle to, make ready, 348
Buff (pl. *buffes*), a blow, 89
Bug, apparition, bugbear, goblin, 93, 147
Buegle, wild ox, 49
Bugle, bead, 448, 159
Bulion, pure gold, 159
Burdenous, heavy, 356
Burganel, headpiece, helmet, 124, 532
Burgein, burgeon, bud, 434
Baskets, bushes, 458
Russe, kigs, 216
But-ty, unless, 271
Buzoni, obedient, yielding, tractable, 71, 165, 213, 474
By-and-by, one by one, singly, 432, 523
Hyde, abide, 87. *Bydyng*, abiding, remaining, 108, 232
Bytve, quickly, also active, 55, 183, 212. See *Blive*, *belive*
Dynempt, named, appointed, 86, 468; bequeathed, 480
Cabinet, cottage, little cabin, 154, 547
Carrule, azure, 406
Captive, *caytve*, subject, captive, 45, 55; vile, base, menial, rasnal, 80, 95, 124, 195
Call, canil, cowl, cap, 51
Camus, *camus*, a light loose robe of some light material (as silk, &c.), chemise, 94, 316
Can or *Gan* (an auxiliary of the past tense), did, 32, 348
Can, knows, 452, 453
Cancerd, *cankerd*, corrupt, 80, 206
Canon bit, a smooth round bit (for horses), 47
Capitayn, captain, 141
Capryfale, woodbine, 192
Captvaunce, captivity, 198
Captved, taken captive, enslaved, 98, 160
Capuccio, hood (of a cloak), capuchin, 225
Card, chart, 112
Care, sorrow, grief, injury, 268, 349. *Careful*, sorrowful, 39, 111, 544. *Careless*, free from care, 22, 544; uncared for, 251
Carle, care, sorrow, grief, 16, 481
Carl, *carle*, an old man, 206; churl, 60, 257
Carriage, burden, 375
Cast, to consider, plot, resolve, purpose, 71, 478, 197; time, period, opportunity, 402, 'nere their utmost cast' = almost dead, 378; a couple, 392
Castory, colour (red or pink), 128
Cauldron, caldron, 169
Causen, to assign a cause or reason, explain, 208
Cautelous, wary, 619
Caved, rude hollow, 256
Cenlonel, a sentinel, 59, 239
Certes, certainly, 164
Cesse, to cease, 274
Cesure, a breaking off, stop, 188
Chaffar, to chaffer, exchange, 102, 478
Challenge, to claim, 22, 233, 238, 254; to track, follow, 81; accusation, 278
Chamelot water, cannot watered, 290
Chamfred, wrinkled, furrowed, 448
Champaign, *champaign*, *chumpion*, open country, plain, 301, 379, 429
Champnesse, a female warrior, 228
Character, image, 322
Charge, assault, attack, 277

- Charyl*, chariot, 198
Charm, to tune, 549; a tune, song, 478, 500
Chauf, *chaufe*, to become warm, to be irritated, to
chafe, 26, 27, 47, 96, 432; rage, 301, 368, 383
Chaunceful, hazardous, 513
Chaunticleer, the cock, 17
Chaw, jaw, 30; to chew, 30, 99, 505
Chayre, chair, 187
Chayre, chariot, 508
Cheare, *chere*, countenance, favour, cheer, 12, 247.
Chearen, to cheer up, 60
Checked, chequered, 147
Checktalon (O. E. *ciclaton*), a rich kind of cloth, 395
Cherely, cheerfully, 561
Cherishment, a cherishing, 503
Cherry, to cherish, 409
Cherye, chief rent, 663
Cherissance, enterprise, undertaking, performance,
 bargain, 126, 198, 220, 456, 459
Chickens (*frithlesse*), heathen brood, 173
Chiefe, 'wrought with a chiefe,' worked with a
 head (like a nosegay), 481
Childed, gave birth to a child, 419
Chimney, fireplace, 128
Chine, back, 371
Chorie, churl, 201
Chynd, cut, divided, 259
Clark, clerk, scholar, 343, 501
Clove, *clove*, cleft, did cleave, 409, 510
Cleane, *cleene*, *cleue*, pure, clean, 66; entirely, 264,
 346, 434. *Cleynly*, skilfully, 521
Cleep, to call, 92, 159, 282
Clemence, clemency, 329
Clew, plot, purpose (properly a hank of thread), 30
Clyf, cliff, 176
Clyck, clicket, latch, 461
Clombe, climbed, mounted, 175, 257
Cloze, secret, 161, 187. *Closetly*, secretly, 41, 166, 189
Cloches, clutches, 339
Clouted, bandaged with a clout or rag, 452
Loyd, wounded, 193
Coast, to approach, 303
Coche, coach, 246
Cocked, in cocks (in heaps), 480
Cognissance, knowledge, recollection, 83
Colled, embraced, fondled, 166
Collusion, deceit, cunning, 460
Coloure, pretence, 444; to hide, 411
Coloured, deceitful, crafty, 449
Colwort, cabbage-plant, 534
Comber, to ennui, 419. *Combrous*, laborious,
 troublesome, 127
Commene, common, to commune, discourse, 129, 338
Comment, to relaxe (falsely), 435
Commodity, advantage, 413
Commonly, in common, equally, 66
Compacte (?), compacted, concerted, 324
Compacted, close, 158. *Compacture*, a close knitting
 together, 127
Companie, companion, 233
Compare, to collect, procure, 30
Compass, circuit, 210
Compass, contrived, 155. *Compass crest*, the round
 part of the helmet, 250
Pompe, to cite, call to aid, 12
Complement, perfection (of character), 187; union,
 247
Complish, to accomplish, 382
Complyne, evensong, 517
Comportance, behaviour, 83
Compound, to agree, 365
Comprise, to comprehend, understand, 130
Comprovinciall, to be contained in the same province
 with, 172
Compyle, to heap up, 164, 169; frame, 268; settle,
 reconcile, 276
Concepful, thoughtful, 419
Concent, to harmonize, 236
Concert, harmony, 224, 598
Concreue, to grow together, 267
Cond, learnt, 448, 475
Condign, worthy, 424
Conditions, qualities, 206, 270, 597
Conduct, conductor, guide, 415; management, 89
Confusion, destruction, 460
Conge, leave, 155, 523
Conjyre, to conspire, 346
Conne, to know, 464
Consort, company, companion, 428; concert, 160,
 556; to combine, unite (in harmony), 152
Constrant, distress, uneasiness, 87
Containe, to restrain, control, 206, 354, 386
Contek, dispute, 460
Contempr, contemned, 480
Contre, to wear out, spend, 130
Controverse, debate, controversy, 252
Convenable, conformable, 474
Convent, to convene, summon, 431
Convert, to turn, 341
Contrince, to conquer, overthrow, 165
Coosen, kindred, 170
Coosnage, fraud, 621
Cope, to chop, bargain with, 517
Copesmate, a companion, 521
Coportion, an equal portion, 871
Corage, heart, mind, 164; wrath, 214
Corbe, crooked, 448
Corbe, *corbel*, a projecting piece of wood, stone, or
 iron, placed so as to support a weight of ma-
 terial, 279
Cordewayne, *cordwayne*, cordovan leather, 94, 639
Coronall, a wreath, garland, 187
Coronation, carnation, 456
Corps, a (living) body, 597. *Corse*, a body, 14, 20
 bulk, frame, 27
Corrue, corrosive, 276
Cosset, a hand-reared lamb, 480
Cost, to approach, come to one's side, 543
Cote, sheep-fold, 467
Cott, a little boat, 107
Couched, bent, 156; laid (in order), 69
Could, knew, 385
Count, an object of interest or account, 345
Countenance, to make a show of, 88
Counter, encounter, 499
Countercast, counterplot, 373
Counterchawge, return of a blow, 207
Counterfesaunce, a counterfeiting, 54, 201
Counterpoys, to counterbalance, 303
Countersayle, to oppose, resist, 109
Coupe, a cage, coop, 477
Couplement, couple, 247
Coure, to cover, protect, 120
Cours, chaced, 315
Courting, attendance at court, 520
Couth, could, 118; knew, knew how, 450, 464

- Covert*, concealed, 79
Coverture, covering, shelter, 466
Covetize, *covetize*, covetousness, 30, 176
Cowardice, cowardice, 522
Cracknell, a thin hard-baked biscuit, 447
Craze, cracked, 583
Crag, *cragge*, neck, 449, 473
Craggy, knotty, 265
Crake, to boast, 307; boast, boasting, 140, 484
Crank, a winding, 435
Crank, vigorously, 473
Crapples, grapples, claws, 336
Crased helth, impaired health, 208
Cratch, rack, crib, 601
Creakie, indented with creaks, 539
Crested, crested, tufted, 231
Creete, cattle, live stock, 652
Cremasun, *cremain*, crimson, 190, 449, 486
Creece (priestess *crève*) = *crivet*, *crumie*, vessel, 450
Crime, accusation, reproach, fault, 153, 449
Crisped, curly (hair), 94
Crooke (cross), gibbet, 318
Croset, a little cross, 42
Cross-cut, to pierce or cut across, 217
Crown, a fiddle, 588
Cruddie, to curdle, 448. *Cruddy*, curdled, 44, 178
Crumenall, purse, 474
Cud, not the thing chewed, but the stomach where the food is received before rumination, 505
Cuffing (or *cuffing*), striking, 250
Culler, a ploughshare, 544
Culver, dove, 115, 500
Culvering, *culverin*, a sort of cannon, 347
Cumbrons, troublesome, 14
Curats, *curiels*, cuirasses, 318, 382
Curlesse, hard to be cured, incurable, 217, 386, 471
Curlace, cutlass, 240
Cut, fashion, 514
- Jevitate*, skillful, 155; fertile, 283
Daint, *daint*, dainty, 60, 155, 234 (superl. *dayntest*, 149). *Dainty*, rare, valuable, 20
Dallie, to trifle, 233. *Dalliance*, idle talk, trifling, 90
Dame, lady, 108
Dammy, to injure, damage, 73, 110
Damozel, damsel, 82
Danisk, Danish, 282
Dapper, neat, pretty, 477
Darwayne, to prepare, get ready, for battle, 31, 44, 157
Darred, dazzled, frightened ('a *darred* lark' is generally explained as a lark caught (? frightened) by means of a looking-glass), 428
Dayesman, a judge, arbitrator, 122
Daze, to dazzle, dim, 13, 51, 573; to confound, 194
Dead-doing, death-dealing, 92
Deaded, deadened, 293
Dealth, bestows, 230
Deare, valuable, precious, 177
Deare, hurt, injury, 48; sore, sad, 143; sorely, 106
Dearding, darling, 273
Dearnelie, sorrowfully, mournfully (literally *dearly*, hence *lonely*, *sadly*, &c.), 534
Deaw, to bedew, 87, 356
Debate, to contend, strive, 207, 380; battle, strife, 126, 397. *Debatment*, debate, 110
- Debonaire*, gracious, courteous, 20, 158, 182
Decay, to destroy, perish, relax, 124, 144, 363; destruction, ruin, death, 22, 43, 198, 223, 400
Deceived, taken by deceit, 309
Deceit, deceit, 444
Decease, decease, 344
Decreed, determined on, 258
Decreased, decreased, 259
Deeme (pret. *dempt*), to judge, deem, 121, 200, 220, 253, 471, 'deeme his payne' = adjudge his punishment, 299
Deering-doers, doers of daring deeds, 239
Deface, to defeat, 121
Defame, disgrace, dishonour, 310, 158, 290, 283
Defaste, defaced, destroyed, 98, 122, 165
Defesaunce, defeat, 75
Defeaturre, defeat, 259
Defend, to keep or ward off, 151, 245
Deffly, delfly, gracefully, 456
Define, to settle, decide, 242
Deforme, shapeless, deformed, 147
Defray, to avert (by a proper settlement), 37; appease, 255
Degendered, degenerated, 295
Delay, to temper, stop, remove, 100, 128, 228
Delice (*Delace*), flower de-lice (= *flos deliciarum*), the iris, 456
Delices, delights, 105, 259, 310. *Delightome*, delightful
Dell, hole, 452
Delve, dell, hole, cave, 112, 119, 163, 252
Demayne, *demeane*, *demeasure*, *demeanour*, *beard-agg*, treatment, 129, 208, 388. *Demand*, treated, 556
Demisse, submissive, 600
Dempt. See *Deeme*
Denay, to deny, 199, 219, 294, 413
Dent, dint, blow, 259
Deow, dew, 361
Depainted, depicted, 103
Depart, to divide, separate, remove, 133, 176; departure, 195
Depenct, *depencten*, to paint, 455
Depend, to hang down, 145, 446
Deprave, to defame, 330
Dernful, mournful, 564. See *Dearnelie*
Dernly, secretly, 227; grievously, severely, 157
Der-doing = performance of daring deeds, 113
Derring-doe, daring deeds, warlike deeds, 101, 385, 477
Derth, scarcity, 20
Derive, to draw away, transfer, 22
Describe, *deery*, to perceive, discover, 94, 100, 233; reveal, 392
Describe, to describe, 94, 420
Desine, to demote, 245
Despairefull drift, hopeless cause, 146
Desperate, despairing, 244
Despight, anger, malice, 17, 81, 162; a scornful defiance, 309
Despightful, *despiteous*, malicious, 81, 118
Despoil, to unrobe, undress, 145
Desse, *daiss*, 284
Desynde, directed, 265
Detaine, detention, 324
Devicfull, full of devices (as *masques*, *triumphs*, &c.), 306
Devise, *devize*, to guess at, 129; purpose, 405; to

- describe, talk, 160, 268, 405, 447. *Devized*, painted, 83. *Devuzed of*, reflected on, 380
- Decoyr*, dnty, 475
- Dew*, due, 125, 318. *Dewfull*, due, 427
- Decelap*, palear, 449
- Diapase*, diapason, 127
- Diapied*, variegated, 588
- Difference*, choice, 164
- Diffused*, scattered, 352
- Dight*, to order, to arrange, prepare, dress, deck, 28, 82, 159, 273; mark, 150
- Dilute*, to spread abroad, enlarge upon, 150, 175
- Dinting*, striking, 410
- Dint*, scar, dent, 11; "dolours dint" = pang of grief, 481
- Diriges*, diriges, 517
- Dirk*, to darken, 449; darkly, 474
- Disaray*, disorder, 97
- Disaccord*, to withhold consent, 372
- Disadaunce*, to lower, to draw back, 242, 248
- Disaventurous*, unfortunate, unsuccessful, unhappy, 48, 273, 291, 353. *Disaventure*, mishap, misfortune, 59, 373
- Disburden*, to unburden, 107
- Discharge*, to acquit oneself of, account for, 425
- Discole*, to cut in two, 232
- Disciple*, to discipline, 229
- Disclaim*, to expel, 213
- Disclow* (pret. *disclote*), to unfold, transform, 76, 176; set free, disengage, 254
- Discolour*, many-coloured, 30, 213, 223
- Discomfited*, disconcerted, 160
- Discommend*, to speak disparagingly of, 322
- Disconsuell*, to dissuade, 148
- Discourse*, *discure*, to discover, 129, 165
- Discourse*, shifting, 398
- Discourteuse*, discourteous, 161
- Discreet*, differing, 152
- Discreet*, thrown or shook of, 160
- Disease*, to distress, 87, 89; uneasiness, 184, 385, 404. *Diseased*, ill at ease, afflicted, 375
- Disentrayle*, to draw forth, to cause to flow, 244, 259, 319
- Disgrace*, deformity, 357
- Disguizement*, disguise, 255
- Dishabit*, to disparage, 104
- Disleall* (*disloyal*), perfidions, 102, 235
- Dislikeful*, disagreeable, 278
- Disloign*, separated, 281
- Dismall*, fatal, 114
- Dismay*, to subdue, defeat, grieve, disquiet, 158, 177, 233, 284; defeat, ruin, 305, 408. *Dismayfull*, terrifying, 350
- Dismayd* = misshaped, deformed, 141
- Dismayl*, to take off a coat of mail, 109
- Dispacing*, pacing, roaming, 534
- Dispairful*, despairing. See *Despairefull*
- Disparage*, disparagement, 273
- Dispart*, to divide, 274
- Dispende*, to pay for, 25; expense, 128; abundance, 352
- Dispiteous*, cruel, 19
- Display*, to spread out, 168; discover, 153
- Disple*, to discipline, 63
- Displeasance*, *displeasance*, displeasure, 134, 268
- Disport*, play, sport, 160
- Disprad*, *disprad*, spread abroad, 91, 266, 358
- Dispraise*, to disparage, 399
- Dispredden* (pl.), spread out, 29
- Disprofesse*, to abandon, 220
- Dispurveyance*, want of provisions, 212
- Disseise*, *disseize*, to dispossess, 70, 434
- Disshivered*, shivered to pieces, 232
- Dissolute*, weak, 201
- Distayne*, to dchle, 205
- Distent*, beaten out, 112
- Disthronce*, to dethrone, 136
- Distinct*, marked, 374
- Distraint*, to rend, 153
- Distraught*, distracted, 246, 495; drawn apart, separated, 266
- Distrubled*, greatly troubled, 176
- Dite*, *dighte*, to make ready, 51
- Ditt*, ditty, song, 107
- Diverse*, distracting, diverting, 16, 87
- Divers*, *diversed*, turned off, 175
- Divide*, to play a fiord passage in music (Kitchin), 34
- Divinde*, defiled, 545
- Divorced*, separated by force, 22
- Doale* = *dole*, destruction, 314
- Documents*, instructions, 62
- Doe*, to cause, 45
- Dofte*, to put off, 175, 208, 405
- Dole*, *doole*, sorrow, grief, 147, 219, 262, 268, 471, 549. *Doolefull*, sorrowful, 109
- Dolor* (*dolour*), grief, 164, 268
- Dome*, *doome*, doom, judgment, censure, 59, 251, 281, 289
- Don*, to put on, 192, 399
- Done*, *donne*, to do, 138, 195, 410, 'of well to *donne*' = of well-doing, 63; DOEN, to cause, 93; DOEN (pl.), they do, 448
- Donne*, dun, 461
- Doomfull*, threatening doom, 425
- Dortours*, sleeping apartments, 420
- Doted*, foolish, 52
- Doubt*, fear (also to fear), 183, 348, 349, 369, 379; a matter of doubt, 352. *Doubtful*, fearful, 39, 112, 158
- Doubted*, redoubted, 477
- Drad*, *dred*, *dread*, dreaded, feared, 84, 101, 226, 227, 240, 345, 423; an object of reverence, 11, 269. *DREDDDEST*, most dread, 239
- Draft*, *drift*, aim, purpose, 152, 236
- Dragnet*, cloth, 128
- Drault* (= *draft*), stratagem, aim, 136, 265
- Drave*, drove, 506
- Dread*, fury, 103. *Dreadful*, fearful, 159
- Dreare*, *Dreere* (*Dreerment*), grief, sorrow, dreadful force, 22, 50, 53, 149, 178, 347, 356, 272. *Dreerred*, dreariness, *dryghed*, dreariness, affliction, 157, 162, 166, 225, 535
- Drent*, drowned, 118, 145
- Dresse*, to dispose, adorn, 220, 284, 480
- Drevill*, a slave, 236
- Droome*, a drum, 59
- Droupe*, to droop, 134
- Droughed*, drowsiness, 18
- Drouth*, drought, 118
- Drover*, a boat, 282
- Droyle*, to work sluggishly, 514
- Drugs*, dregs, 85
- Dumppish*, heavy, 286
- Duraunce*, bondage, 166
- Durefull*, enduring, 283
- Dureuse*, confinement, 269, 292
- Dye*, lot, destiny, 211

- Earne*, to yearn, 12, 41, 293, 452; to be grieved, 213
Eurat, *erat*, first, soonest, previously, 51, 70, 83, 165, 477; *at earat*, at length, 295; at present, 485
Easterlings, men of the East (Norwegians, Danes, &c.), 138
Eath, ethe, easy, 95, 290, 535
Edge, to sharpen, 237
Edifye, to build, inhabit, 15, 157, 495
Eele, eke, to increase, 37, 106, 199, 241; also, 459
Effierced, made fiercer, inflamed, 220
Efforce, to oppose, 164
Efforced, efforced, forced, constrained, compelled (to yield), 119, 228
Eggraad, scared, 13
Eft, afterwards, again, forthwith, moreover, 82, 98, 123, 249, 402
Eftsoones, soon after, forthwith, 18, 159
Eide, seen, 248
Eine, eyes, 568
Eht, age, old age, 61, 93, 239, 288
Effe, fairy, 112
Els (elles), else, elsewhere, otherwise, 37, 122, 189
Embace, embace, to bring or cast down, humiliate, 195, 361, 388, 574. *Embaste*, debased, dishonoured, 157, 209
Embar, to guard, confine, 21, 48, 219
Embasade, ambasador, 598
Embasage, embassy, message, 208
Embatell, to arm for battle, 102
Embaum, to anoint, 266
Embay, to bathe, 66, 63, 84, 124, 161; bask, 534
Embayl, to bind up, 94
Embellish, adorned (with flowers), 449
Embosome, to foster, 99
Embass, to overwhelm, press hard, 57, 158, 225; to surround, enclose, 25, 70, 381
Embase, to adorn, ornament, array, 158, 162, 248
Embone, to arch over, to curve, bend, 56, 537
Embowell, to take out the bowels, 196
Embowet, to take shelter, 507
Emboyl, to boil (with anger), 97. *Emboyled*, heated, 71
Embrace, to brace, to fasten, or bind, 361; to protect, 203
Embracement, an embrace, 98, 201
Embrave, to decorate, 86, 481
Embreule, *embroder*, to embroider, 189, 225
Embreve, to stain with blood, 189, 400
Embrused, occupied, 269
Eme, uncle, 136
Emeraul, emerald, 150
Emmore, to move, 85, 117
Emong, among, 144. *Emongest*, amongst, 159, 173
Empair, to enclose, fringe, 535
Empair, empair, to diminish, impair, hurt, 67, 134, 311, 352
Empartance, treaty, 277, 316
Empart, assign, 261
Empassoned, *empassonate*, moved or touched with passion, feeling, 27, 210, 219, 343, 536
Empeach, to hinder, prevent, 53, 174, 219; hindrance, 113; disfigurement, 161
Empoepled, dwelt, 60
Emporce, empierce, to pierce through (pret. *empierd, empierst*), 86, 124, 184, 210
Emperill, to endanger, 248
Emperish, to perish, decay, 448
Empight, fixed, settled, 101, 184, 242, 420
Emplonged, plunged, 213
Empoysoned, poisoned, 187, 189
Emprise, emprise, enterprise, attempt, 98, 116, 307, 310
Empurpled, purple-dyed, 150, 195, 227
Enaunier, lest, 450, 459
Enbosome, to fix firmly, 148
Enchance, enchase, to adorn, embellish, 76, 127, 260, 518; to honour with befitting terms, 253; engrave, 380; dart, 347
Encheason, reason, cause, occasion, 83, 460
Enconferment, hindrance, 400
Encroche, to come on, 450
Endamage, to damage, do harm, 422
Endangerment, danger, 302
Endecourment, endeavour, labour, 515
Ender, to endow, 32
Endite, to censure, 422
Endlong, from end to end, continuously, 211, 213
Endosse, write on the back, endorse, 353, 555
Endure, to harden, 270
Enc, once, 485
Enfelon'd, made fell or fierce, 337
Enfest. See *Infest*
Enferce, to make fierce, 97
Enforme, to fashion, 386
Enfoldred, hurled out like thunder and lightning, 72
Engin, wiles, deceit, contrivance, 99, 161, 212
Engirt, surrounded, 602
Englut, to glut, fill, 89
Engore, to gore, wound, 159, 185, 277, 392
Engorge, to devour, eat, 145
Engrafted, engraft, implanted, fixed, 164, 236
Engrained, dyed, 449
Engrasp, to grasp, 104
Engrave, to bury, 64, 86, 104; to cut, pierce, 197
Engreue, eggreue, to grieve, to be vexed, 99, 161, 190
Engrosse, to buy up in large quantities, to regrade, 681; to write a large letter, 555
Engrosse, made thick, 111, 176, 681
Enhaunse, to lift up, raise, 13, 109, 260
Entargen, enlarge, to set at large, deliver, 53, 101, 274
Entumine, to illumine, 296
Enmove, to move. See *Emmove*
Enrace, to implant, 187, 409
Engagement, rapture, 602
Enraunge, to range, 367
Enraunged, ranged in order, 191, 608
Enroid, encircled, 91, 147
Enseame, encloses, 289
Enene, enue, to follow after, pursue, 151, 160, 218
Ensuig, following, 275
Ensnarle, to ensnare, entangle, 338
Entayle, to carve, inlay, 94, 109, 112; (sb.) carving, 112
Enterdeale, negotiation, 334, 520
Enterpris, to undertake, 82
Enterprise, to entertain, 88; take in hand, 294
Enterians, take, receive (pay), 126, 370. *Entertayne*, entertainment, hospitality, 90, 341, 523
Entertake, to entertain, 341
Entire, inward, internal, 180, 187, 195, 270
Entirely, earnestly, 71, 393; entirely, 129
Entraile, entrayl, to twist, intertwine, interlace, 94, 192, 222, 246, 470
Entraile, twisting, entanglement, 13

- Entrail*, the lowest part, depth (bowels), 147
Entreat, to treat of, treat, 213, 280, 296, 365
Enure, to use, practise, 238. *Enured*, accustomed, 397; committed habitually, 341
Envy, to be angry, indignant, 251; to emulate, 157
Enwallowe, roll about, 178, 349
Enwombed, pregnant, 65
Enwrap, to wrap up, 70
Equal, impartial, 437
Equipage, array, equipment, 68; to array, equip, 127
Ermine, an ermine, 165
Ermine, skin of the ermine, 161
Erne, to yearn, 96
Errant, wandering, 201
Errour, wandering, 182, 210
Escal, 477. See *Escart*
Escheue, escape, 401
Escoyne, to withdraw, 29
Espial, sight, appearance, observation, 280, 312
Escoyne, to excuse, 29
Estate, state, rank, 369
Eternue, eternal, 193. *Eternize*, to make eternal, 66, 503
Eternize, to immortalize, 503
Ethe, easy, 467
Eugh, yew, 12. *Eughen*, *ecglen*, of yew, 70, 519
Evangel, gospel, 137
Evill, poor, unskilful, 416
Exanimate, lifeless, 146
Ercheat, gain, profit, escheat, 35, 202
Expert, to experience, 482
Expire, breathe out, 72; to fulfil a term, put an end to, 44, 235
Express, to press out, 144
Ertuse, surprise, 425
Ertent, stretched out, 118
Erturpe, to root out, 63
E'fort, extorted, 300
Etract, descended, 210
Etracte, extraction, 343
Evils, exiles, 558
Evils, evils, 345
Eyde, newly-fledged young, 71, 599
Eyne, eyes, 29, 194

Face, to carry a false appearance, 338
Fact, feat, deed, 210
Fail, *fail*, to deceive, 222, 293; to cause to fail, 103
Fain, *gayne*, glad, eager, 12, 261, 378; *gaynd*, desired, 208; *gaynes*, delights, 358
Fain, *gayne*, to feign, (dissemble), 34, 98; to mistake, 204; imagine, 420; '*fained* dreadful' = apparently dreadful, 228
Faitour, *faulour*, cheat, deceiver, vagabond, villain, 32, 244, 363, 459
Fallen, befall, 459
Falsed, falsified, deceived, 20, 160; insecure, weak, 73. *Falsen*, falshoods, 305. *Falsen*, a liar, 461
Faltring, faltering, 219
Fantasy, *fantasy*, fancy, 149; apprehension, 408
Fare, to go, proceed, act, deal, 80, 87, 251, 277
Farforth, very far, 211
Faste, having a face, 141
Fastness, stronghold, 345
Fate, destined term of life, 200. *Fatal*, ordained by fate, 169, 210

Fault, to offend, be in error, 140, 444
Favour, feature, 331
Favourlesse, not showing favour, 126
Fay, a fairy, 241; faith, 334, 474
Fear, *feare*, companion, 390; to *feare*, together, 138
Fear, *fearen*, to frighten, 147, 176; '*feared* — of,' alarmed by, 401
Fearfull, timid, 421
Fearfull, festive, 409
Feateously, neatly, 606
Feature, fashion, form, character, 54, 240
Fee, tenure, 88; pay, service, 408, 553; property, 233, 276
Feeble, enfeebled, 51. *Feeblesse*, feebleness, 271
Feeld (golden), an emblazoned field (of a knight's shield), 433
Feend, fiend, devil, 70
Feld, lot fall, thrown down, 109, 233
Fell, befall, 249; gall, 218
Fell, fierce, cruel, 172, 220, 337. *Felly*, cruelly, 36, 142, 242, 417. *Fellonest*, most fell, 239. *Fellonous*, wicked, fell, 162. *Felnesse*, cruelty, fierceness, 123, 270, 276
Femineite, womanhood, 193
Feod, feud, unity, 232
Fensible, fit for defence, defensible, 127, 212
Fere, companion, husband, 60, 247, 308, 418
Ferne, lodging, 184
Ferry, a ferry boat, 108
Fett, to fetch, 131; fetched (rescued), 307
Fleur-de-luce, the iris. See *Delice*
Feutre, *feutre*, to place the spear in the rest, to prepare for battle, 252, 258
Fiaunt, commision, fiat, 523
File, to defile, 162, 266
File, to polish, smoothe, 15, 556
Fine, end, 151, 245
Firm, to fix firmly, 172
Fit, to be fitting, 87; '*Of loves were fitted*' = were suited, furnished with lovers, 231
Fit, *fit*, emotion, passion, grief, 229, 260, 314, 350; a musical strain, 68
Flaggy, loose, 69, 178
Flatt, plain, 474
Flake, a flash, 163
Flamed, inflamed, 107
Flasket, a basket, 606
Flattling, *flutewise*, with the flat side (of the sword), 318
Flaw, a gust of wind
Flare, to mock, 519
Fleet, to sail, float, 146, 278, 552; to flit, 206
Flex, flax, 160
Flit, fleet, swift, 100, 222; changing, 161; unsubstantial, light, 217
Flit, *flute*, to move, change, flee, 19, 222. *Flitting*, *flecting*, 70; *quidding*, 119, 161
Flong, flung, 603
Flore, ground, spot, 143, 370
Flout, to mock, deride, 387, 428
Flowerets, little flowers, 450
Flushing, rapidly flowing, 260
Fodder, grass, 222
Foen, foes, 93
Foile, a leaf (of metal), 37
Foison, abundance, plenty, 564
Foltmote, a meeting, assembly, 247
Fon, a fool, 449, 456, 552. *Fonly*, foolishly, 459
Fond, foolish, doting, 58, 167; *fondling*, fool, 390,

- Fondly*, foolishly, 313, 628. *Fondness*, folly, 459, 578
Fond, found, 151; tried, 196
Fone, foes, 20, 172, 358
Food feud, 50, 80
Footlappie, undesigned, 38
Footlapse, foolhardiness, folly, 88, 528
For, notwithstanding, 177; for fear of; what for = what sort of? 454
Fordo, to destroy, 355. *Fordonne*, utterly undone, ruined, overcome, 37, 172, 250, 277
Foreby, *forby*, hard by, near, 42, 43, 183; with, 349; past, 157
Forecast, previously determined, 227
Foredamned, utterly damned, 217
Forelay, to lay before, or over, 84
Forelent, given up entirely, 242
Forelifting, lifting up in front, 69
Forepast, gone by, 232
Fore-red, foretold, 532
Foreshewed, previously instructed, 434
Foreside, the side to the fore, external covering, 310
Forspent, *forspent*, utterly wasted, 256
Forestall, to take previous possession of, to hinder, obstruct, 126, 461, 611
Foretaught, previously taught, 45
Forewent, gone before, 467
Foryed, false, 21
Forger, fiction, deceit, 161; a counterfeit or assumed character, 310
Forgive, to give up, 404
Forhaile, to overtake, 475
Forhent, overtaken, 180
Forlent, gave up, 180
Fortore, forlorn, utterly lost, abandoned, 45, 53, 94, 150, 173, 178, 187; *fortore* (pret.), deserted, 211; lost (to sense of propriety), 354
Formally, expressly, 153
Formerly, beforehand, 365
Forpas, to pass over, 517
Forpassed, past by or through, 213, 310
Forpined, pined away, 217
Forray, to ravage, prey on, 416; a raid, 174
Forseke, to avoid, 70; renounce, 108
Forsay, forsake, 459
Forsayd, denied residence, banished, 467
Forslacke, *forstoe*, *forstow*, to delay, waste in sloth, 280, 355; neglect, 461, 425; impede, 465
Forstall, *forstallen*, to prevent, 475. See *Forestall*
Forstall, spent with heat, 455
Forawonck, tired with over work, 456
Forthink, to repent, be sorry for, 380; to give up, 292
Forthright, straightway 115
Forthy, therefore, because, 130, 452
Fortillage, a little fortress, 149, 681
Fortune, to happen, 165, 183, 392
Fortunize, to make happy, 405
Fortuneless, unfortunate, 270
Forwandre, to stray away, 42, 220
Forwasted, utterly wasted, 68, 136
Forwearie (*forwearied*), utterly wearie, worn out, 15, 56, 72
Forwent, left, 183, 258; did forgo, 661
Forworne, much worn, 42
Foster, forster, 157
Fouldring, thundering, 88
Found, established, 136
Foundring, toppling, falling, 250
Foy, allegiance, faith, 135
Foyle, repulse, defeat, 93; to defeat, ruin, overthrow, 136, 351
Foyne, to thrust, push, 103, 124, 244, 317
Foyson, abundance, 564
Fraight, fraught, 473
Frame, to make, form, support, prepare, direct, 20, 52, 56, 157, 158, 159; to put in shape for motion, 385
Franchisement, deliverance, 351
Franch, free, forward, 90
Franklin, freeman, freeholder, 61
Franon, a loose woman, 90, 308
Fray, to frighten, terrify, alarm, 15, 17, 24, 75, 124, 149, 170; affray, 284
Frenne, a stranger, 455
Fret, ornamental border, 288. *Fretted*, ornamented with fret-work, 129, 174
Frett, to consume, 90
Friend, to befriend, 236, 285
Frigot, a little boat, 107
Friskes, gambols, 283
Frize, to freeze, 410
Pro, from, 114, 405
Frolicke, 'fained her to frolicke' = desired her to be cheerful, 372
Fronks, foreheads, 69
Frone, frozen, 450
Frory, frosty, frozen, 203, 204
Frounce, to fold, plait, 28
Froward = fromward, at a distance from, 409
Frovie, musty, 467
Fruit, fruit, 449
Fry, swarms (of young children), 74
Fry, to foam, 149
Fulmined, fulminated, 163
Fume, to pass away like smoke, 556
Funerall, death, 104
Furniment, furnishing, 245
Furniture, gear, equipment, 157
Fylde, felt, 429
Fyle, to polish, 164
Fyled, kept in files, registered, 394
Gage, pledge, 31, 72, 93
Gan, against (as in *gainst*, 264), 98
Gainsay, denial, 164
Galage (galoeche), a wooden shoe, 450
Galingale, sweet cyperus, 534
Gail, bile, 13
Gallimuffray, hotch-potch, 442
Gamesome, pleasant, 428
Gan (can) began, did, 18, 48, 110, 120
Gang, to go, 452, 474
Gard, safeguard, protection, 165
Garran, a kind of horse, 681
Garre, to cause, make, 104, 455
Gaspung, gaping, 454
Gasfull, fearful, dreary, 471
Gate, a goat, 460
Gate, way, procession, 147, 178
Gaudy green, a robe of a light green, 458
Gazement, gaze, 307
Gealousy, *gelousy*, jealousy, 78, 100
Geare, *gere*, *gear*, dress, equipment, 99, 305, 398
421; matter, affair, 372

- Geare*, to jeer, scoff, 108
Geason, rare, uncommon, 381, 512, 536
Gelly, clotted, 179
Gelt, gold, 448; bribed with gold, 186
Gelt. This word has been variously explained—by some as a gelding, by others as a *quilly* person. Professor Child explains it as a wild Irishman, *Celt*, 264
Gelt, castrated, 428
Gent, gentle, kind, accomplished, 55, 57, 83, 160
Gere. See *Geare*
Gernan, brother, 33, 34, 124
Gerne, to grin, 356
Gesse, to deem, think, *guess*, 39, 230
Gest, deed of arms, 30, 124, 378; gesture, deportment, bearing, 128, 165, 201
Ghastly, terrible, 162, 166. *Ghastliness*, terrible-ness, 90
Ghesse, to guess, deem, 39
Ghost, spirit, soul, 46
Guambeuz, laggings, greaves, 109
Gin, engine (of torture), 36; plot, contrivance, snare, 31, 194
Ginn, *guinne*, to begin, 13, 40, 70, 205
Gipsen, a gipsy, 513
Ginst, tournaments, tilts, 11, 477; to joust, tilt, 230
Glade, valley, dale, 159
Glade, to gladden, 411
Glaive, *glam*, *glance*, a sword, 265, 281, 353
Glee, pleasure? fee property, 58
Glenne, country, hamlet, 455
Glib, a thick bush of hair overhanging the eyes, 269, 630
Glins, glimpse, indistinct light, 401, 604
Glune, glen, 615
Glitterand, glittering, 141, 468
Gluter, to glitter, shine, 13, 160, 223
Glude, glided, 249
Glewy, vainglory, boasting, 92
Gloring, deceitful, 201
Glutted, filled, 474
Gnarre, growl, snarl, 36
Gobbelue, goblin, 139
Gobbet, morsel, piece, 13, 69
Godded, defiled, 557
Goe, gone, 467
Gondelay, gondola, 106
Goodlied, *goodthead*, goodness, 95, 469, 450; goodly appearance, 167
Goodles, marigolds, 552
Gore, to pierce, wound, 162
Gore-blood, clotted blood, 84
Gorge, throat, 13, 69, 242
Gorget, armour for the throat, 242
Goshawke, a large kind of hawk, 315
Gossib, kinaman, 75
Gourmandize, greediness, 410
Governall, government, 180
Governance, government, 83
Government, control, 254
Grace, favour, kindness, 118; to give favour to, 67
Grafted, grafted, 450
Graile, gravel, 44
Graune, dye (scarlet), 43
Grammercy, many thanks, 117
Grange, dwelling, place, 431
Graple, to tug, 250
Graplement, grasp, clutch, 142
Grate, grated, favoured, 410
Grate, to scorn, 86
Grayle, gravel, 339, 340
Grayle, the holy vessel said to have been used at Our Saviour's Last Supper, 137
Greave, grove, 216, 370
Gree, degree, rank, 468 (st. 15)
Gree, favour, goodwill, 34, 92
Greele, to congratulate, praise, 307, 340; mournful, 470; to assign with praise (st. 14), 307; to weep, 454
Gren, to grin, snarl, 265, 420
Grennung, grinning, 39
Grude, pierce, 507
Griefull, grievous, 231, 400
Grene, thick, sluggish, 108; gray, 58
Greshe, *grusely*, horrible, 36, 145, 157
Grieved, hurt, 49
Grimmes, severity, savageness (Embl.), 451
Gryn, to gnash the teeth, 314
Gripe, to grasp, 70, 350
Gripe, gripe, grasp; grasping, greedy, 30, 301, 377
Gronefull, full of groans, 141
Groomer, man, young man, a servant, 297, 376
Grosse, heavy, 70; the whole, 474
Groundhold, ground-tackle (as cables, anchors), 377
Groveling, with face flat to the ground, 81, 159, 184
Ground, growled, 420
Gudge, *grutch*, to murmur, growl, 19, 81, 90, 167
Gryde, cut, pierce through, 123, 162, 209
Grysey, *grysie*, squalid, 141, 226; foggy, moist, 162
Gryfon, *gryphon*, griffin (a fabulous animal), perhaps used for vulture, eagle, 33
Grypt, 'through grypt' = through-gyrd, pierced through, 374
Guarish, to heal, 186, 244
Guerdon, reward, 66, 245
Gulen, to beguile, 206
Guler, *guyler*, discover, 215
Guilt, guiled, 432
Guze, manner, mode (of life), custom, 349, 366
Gulfe, throat, 474
Gulphing, flowing (like a gulf), 510
Gust, taste, 433
Gyre, gyle (Embl.), 452
Gyld, guild, courthouse, 116
Gynat, beginning, 477
Gyre, circle, course, 102, 158
Gyrd, fettered, 314
Habergeon, *habergeon*, a small coat of mail, armour for the neck and breast, 109, 174
Habildment, clothing, 71, 82
Habitaunce, habitation, 111
Hable, able, fit, 50, 70
Hacqueton, a jacket worn under armour, 123
Hagard, wild, untamed, 70
Haile, *hail*, to drag, haul, 97, 98, 203
Haile, health, welfare, 560
Halfendeale, half part, 211
Halfen-eye=half ordinary sight, i.e. one eye, 212
Halidome, 'by my halidom' = by my faith as a Christian, 517
Han (pl.), have, 452, 476
Hand, 'out of hand' = at once, 182, 314; 'nigh hand' = near, 401
Handseit, price, reward, 413

- Ransomly*, neatly, 513
Rap, to happen, fortune, lot, 101, 380
Rappily, haply, by chance, 79
Happy, successful, 156
Harbrough, harbrough, shelter, 464
Harv, heard, 165
Hardiment, hardihood, boldness, 66, 82, 156, 183, 211
Hardness, rudeness, 274
Hardyhed, hardihood, 31, 440
Harnesse, weapons, 314
Harvou, an exclamation of distress, a call for help, 124
Harten, to encourage, incite, 529; *hartned*, encouraged, 278
Hartlesse, timid, 87
Hastie, a wicker basket for fish, 490
Hauberk, hauberk, hauberge, hauberk, a coat of mail, 177, 223, 277
Haught, high, august, 41
Hault, haughty, 368
Haust, embraced, 246
Huuntin, to frequent, 467
Havour, haviour, deportment, behaviour, 193, 224, 455
Hayle, to drag, 302, 362
Hazardise, danger, 147
Hazardry, hazard, risk, 103; gaming, 161
Headlesse-hood, heedlessehood, heedlessness, 449
Heame, home, 481
Heard, herd, 448; a keeper of cattle, 403. *Heard* groomes, herdsman, 448
Heare, hair, 21, 126. *Hearie*, hairy, 157
Heast, heet, command, behest, 45, 245, 318; name, 290; office (of one who had taken vows), 420
Heben, ebony, 117; of ebony wood, 11
Hedstall, that part of the bridle which is put on the horse's head, 309
Heednesse, heedfulness, 326
Heedly, wary, 474
Heeling, heel, 514
Heffe, raised, 72; threw, 242
Hell, to cover, 282
Helme, helmet, 237
Hem, them, 459
Hend, to seize, grasp, 350
Henge, hinge, 70
Hent, took, seized, 111, 141
Her, their, 460
Herbars, herbs, 130
Hermegane, heron, 392
Herry, hery, to praise, worship, honour, 146, 160, 448, 478
Hersall, rehearsal, 219
Herse, ceremonial, 168
Hether, hither, 401, 455
Hew, shape, form, 16
Hec, hacking, 401
Hendeguyen, dances, 464
Hute, hastened. See *Ilye*
Hukler (if not an error for *hider*=hither) = he-deer; animals of the male kind, 474
Hie, to hasten, 286
Hight, called, named, 58, 158; entrusted, 28; directed, 348; pronounced worthy, hence determine, choose, 394; appointed, 264; purports, 474
Hight, 'on hight'—aloud, 388
Hild, held, 287
Hypodames, sea-horses, 130, 222
Hoary frost, hoarfrost, 446
Hole, whole, 186
Holpen (pp.) helped, 399
Hond, hand, 225
Hong, hung, 189, 190
Honeyrock, pot of honey, 303
Hood, state, manner, 329
Hooved, hovered, abode, 556
Hopelesse, unexpected, 185
Hore, heary, 23
Horard, rough, 47
Hospitalite, hospitality, 212
Hospitale, a place of rest, 126
Hoste, to entertain, lodge, 270, 402, 506
Hostlesse, inhospitable, 218
Hostry, lodging, 345
Hot, hote, was called, 71, 251, 475; mentioned, 467
Housing, sacramental, 77
Love, rise, float, 21, 196; hover, 213
Howre, time, 95; 'good howre' = good fortune, 406
Howres, devotional exercises, 385
Hove, vessel, ship, 138
Hubbs, shouts, din, 216
Hugger mugger, in secret, secretly, 514
Humbleesse, humility, humbleness, 19, 25, 74
Hurlyburly, noise of battle, 309
Hurtle, to rush, dash, hurl, attack, 29, 31, 51; brandish, 116; crowd, 250
Hurtlesse, innocent, 41
Husband, farmer, 244
Husynthe, hyacinth, 150
Ilye, to hasten, 91, 383; *on hye*, hastily, 606
Ilyding, horse, vile, 384
Ilynde, a servant, 397
Jale, careless, 193
Idole, image, 91, 254
Ill-faste, having an ill-look, 359. *Ill-hedded*, disturbed in the head, 230
Imbrast, embraced, 274
Immeasured, unmeasured, 147
Imp, child, scion, shoot, 11, 187, 286, 349
Imp, to engrave, insert, 603
Impacable, unappeasable, 277, 493
Imprceable, not able to be pierced, 69
Implore, entreaty, 106
Imply, to enfold, entangle, envelop, 30, 70, 191
Importable, intolerable, 122
Importune, violent, savage, 73, 123; full of trouble, 173; to threaten, 167; to solicit, 342
Importunely, with importunity, 119
Impresse, to make an impression, 140
Improvded, unprovided, unlooked for, 77
In, inne, dwelling, lodging, 15, 148, 171, 547
In, 'in . . . lye' = full upon, 163
Incontinent, forthwith, immediately, 39
Indew, to put on, 101, 212
Indifferent, impartial, 163, 341. *Indifferently*, impartially, 431, 492
Indignance, indignation, 219
Indigne, unworthy, 233
Indignify, to treat with indignity, 364
Inferd, offered, 399
Infest, to make fierce or hostile, hostile, 377, 390
Influence, the power of the stars, 53
Informed, formed imperfectly, 188

Infuse, infusion, 599
Ingale, entrance, 280, 499
Ingowe, ingot, 112
Inholder, inhabitant, 431
Inly, inwardly, 161, 164, 220; entirely, 459
Inquest, quest, adventure, 163, 298
Inquire, to call, 133
Insolence, uncourteousness, 555
Insolent, rude, 180
Inspire, to breathe, 94
Insu'th=ensu'th, follows, 91, 567
Intend, to stretch out, 72; to denote, name, 224; direct one's course, 101
Intendment, intention, 77, 224; knowledge, 185, 499
Intent, purpose, 82
Interesse, interest, 426
Interlace, to intermingle, interweave, 308, 421
Intermedle, to intermix, 4
Intimate, to communicate, 372
Intreat, to prevail upon, 90
Intuse, confusion, 185
Invaide, to come into, 191
Invent, to find out, 183, 302
Inweat, to put on, 254
Irkes, wearies, 264
Irkesome, tired, weary, 17
Irrenewed, inglorious, 82

Jacob's staff, a pilgrim's staff, 42, 543
Jade, a horse, 167, 395; a scolding woman, 143
Jarre, quarrel, variance, 89
Jasp, jasper, 578
Javel, a worthless wretch, 515
Jeopardie, jeoparily, danger, 101
Jesses, strips of leather tied round the legs of hawks, with which they are held upon the fist, 379
Jollie, jolly, handsome, pretty, lively, 11, 160, 223
Joiment, jollite, jolly, joyfulness, prettiness, liveliness, 286, 367, 460
Jollyhead, jollity, 415
Jott, speck, small piece, 63
Journall, diurnal, 71
Jovial, bright, sunny, 150
Joy, to rejoice, be glad, enjoy, 159
Joyance, joyfulness, merriment, 226
Joyausance, joyousness, joyousness, 458, 480
Juncals, junkets, 316

Kaies, keys, 281
Kearn, kearne. See *Kern*
Keepe, heed, care, charge, 16, 467, 484; to take care, protect, 'heedie keepe'= watchful care, 339; keeping, guard, 469, 481
Keight, ought, 166
Kemst, combed, 327
Ken, to know, try, 597. *Kend, lent, knew*, perceived, known, 74, 121, 195, 350, 552, 460. *Kenst*, didst know, 449, 452
Kern, an Irish foot-soldier, 640
Kerne, a farmer, 463
Kerve, to cut, 230
Keser, emperor, 112
Kest, cast, 71
Kestrell kynd, base nature, 92
Kind, nature, 167, 283; sex, 163; occupation, 96.
Kindly, natural, 50, 161, 209
Kinred, kindred, 461

Kirtle, a coat fastened at the waist, 30
Knee, projection of rocks, 58
Knife, a sword, dagger, 103
Kon, know, 552. *Kond*, knew, 326
Kydst, knewest, 485
Kynded, begotten, 320
Lackey, to follow as a servant, 367
Lad, led, 154, 225
Lade, to load, 322
Laesie, lazy, 448
Laid, attacked, 277
Laure, plain, 273
Lamping, shining, 168, 573
Lanck loynes, slender waist, 189
Langurous, languid, 61
Lap, lappe, to fold, entangle, 91, 187
Larded, luted, 449
Larr, pasture, 270
Large, bountiful, 50
Latched, seized, caught, 453
Launce, balance, 194
Launch, to pierce, 84, 261, 306
Laver, a basin, 151
Lay, field, len, 201, 214
Lay, cry, 83
Lay, to throw up, 145
Lay, law, 336
Layd, faint, 477
Laye, laity, 459
Layhall, a dunghill, a place for the deposit of filth, 32
Lazar, leper, 27
Lea, field, 449
Leach, a physician, 170, 179
Leachcraft, medical skill, 170
Leake, leaky, 398
Leany, lean, 468
Leap, a basket, 496
Leare, lore, counsel, 219, 245. *Leares*, lessons, 196
Leasing, lying, falsehood, 43, 130, 140
Least, lest, 350
Leave, to raise, 134
Ledden, dialect, speech, 287, 556
Lee, river, 302, 496
Leese, to loose, 474
Left, lifted, 95
Legerdemain, sleight of hand, 339, 519
Leke, leaky, 36
Leman, a lover, 45, 105, 165
Lend, to give, provide, 131
Longd, longed, 461
Longer, longer, 14
Lepped, did leap, 453
Lere, to learn, 484; lore, 461, 557
Leenges, lies, 461
Lessoned, instructed, 193
Lest, to listen, 362
Let, to hinder, 45, 85, 183; 'let be'= away with, 93; hindrance, 50, 143, 231
Level, to direct one's course, 148
Levin, lightning, 187, 467. *Levin brand*, thunder-bolt, 428
Lewd, ignorant, wicked, foolish, 450. *Lewdly*, foolishly, 270, 448
Lewdnesse, wickedness, 187, 310
Libbard, leopard, 41, 94, 158, 166
Lich, like, 196
Lief, liefe, dear, beloved, 25, 56; willing, 207; 'tiefe

- or sorry' = willing or unwilling = *liefe* or *loth*, 365,
 424: (comp.) *liefer*, 58, 99, 158; (superl.) *liefest*,
 213, '*liefest liefe*' = dearest loved one, 166
Liege, lord, master—one to whom faith has been
 pledged, 393. *Liege-man*, a vassal, one who owes
 homage to a liege lord, 92
Lifful, living, full of life, 417, 588
Lig, *ligger*, to lie, 381, 459, 460
Light, easy, ready, 161; to lighten, 185; befall, 353
Lightly, quickly, 761
Lynage, *lynage*, lineage, 40
Like, to please, 114
Like as, as if, 316
Likely, similar, 598
Likelyness, likeness, 331
Lilt, to put out the tongue, 36
Limbeck, retort, 432
Limbeound, a bloodhound, limer, 302
Lin, to cease, 14, 36, 171, 202, 547
Lint, to desire, like, 125; (impers.) please, 164, 278.
Lisful, attentive, 299
Lite, *lyte*, alight, befall, 387, 395
Liveld, livelihood, livelihood, 311, 372
Liveln, lifelike, living, 125, 159, 200
Livelihood, *livelihood*, livelihood, 808, living original,
 125; motion of a living being, 393
Liverey, delivery, 381
Loathly, loathsome, 232, 351
Loft, height, 16
Loine, clay, loam, 407
Lompish, dull, slow, 16, 181, 225
Long, to belong, 32, 174, 367
Loord, lout, 195, 446
Loos, fume, 419
Loose, to solve, 350
Lope, leapt, 453
Lopp, branch, 448
Lore, learning, teaching, fashion, 91, 246, 287;
 speech, 354
Lore, *lor*, left, deserted, 27, 228; lost sight of, 347
Loring, learning, 331
Lorrel, *lozell*, *lozell*, a loose idle fellow, 92, 378, 467
Loze, to loosen, 224
Lozen, to set loose, 193. *Lozte* = loosed, dissolved, 176
Lot, fate, 365; share, 250
Lolthfull, unwilling, unpleasant, loathsome, 180
Louy, loop, 126
Lout, *lout*, to bow, to do obeisance, 65, 93, 214, 238
Lovelu, loving, 25, 38, 246; lovingly, 246; *lovely*,
 of love, 261, 394
Loner, an opening in the roof to let out the smoke,
 411
Lug, a perch or rod of land, 132
Lumine, to illumine, 602
Luskiness, sluggishness, 364
Lust, pleasure, desire, 251, 290, 480; to desire,
 please, 113
Luster, a glittering, shoen, 353
Lustless, feeble, listless, 29, 181, 364
Lusty, pleasant, 449
Lusthede, *lusthed*, *lusty-head*, pleasure, 216, 459,
 532; pleasure (of youth), 460
Lymster, a friar licensed to beg within a certain
 district, 513
Lynage, lineage, 12
Lyne, linen, 535
Lyte, to alight, light, befall, 387
Lythe, pliant, 449, 507
Mace, sceptre, 132
Macerate, to tear, 505
Madding, foolish, 455
Mage, magician, 170
Magne-stone, the magnet, 145
Maisl, *mayl*, *male*, armour, 237
Maime, *mayne*, force, 44, 50, 141; ocean, 197.
Mainly, *mainly*, strongly, violently, 40, 154
Mainsail, mainsail, 356
Maintenance, condition, 199
Maisterdome, *maistry*, mastery, superiority, 106,
 150, 234
Maistry, superior, controlling, 194, 274, 604
Make, to write poetry, 431
Make, companion, mate, 44, 218, 238
Malice, evil deed, 523
Malengue, ill intent, deceit, guile, 161
Malice (pret. *malist*), regarded with malice, hate
 ill-will to, 406, 534, 601
Maligne, to grudge, 179
Mall, club, pallet, 49, 257; to maul, 348
Maltalent, ill-will, 181
Mamd, blocked up with men, 417
Manie, *manly*, company, multitude, 75, 292, 353,
Manner, kind of, 279
Mantle, to rest with outspread wings, 369
Mard, spoilt, injured, dishonoured, 159, 214
Marge, margin, bank, 102, 274
Margent, *marigal*, 178
Marle, ground, soil, 143
Marishes, marshes, 345
Martelled, hammered, 198
Martyr, to afflict, torment, 263
Martyrize, to devote as a martyr, 554
Mask, to conceal oneself by means of a mask (as
 at a masquerade), 43, 174
Mass, wealth, 206; material, 283
Massy, passive, 214
Mate, to stupefy, confound, amate, 65
Matchesse, now to be matched, 232
Maugre, *maulgre*, in spite of, a curse on! 103, 179,
 220, 234; unwillingly, 299
Maris, thrush, 588
Mayntenance, behaviour, 474
Maysterdome, superiority, 301
Mazed, amazed, confounded, 234, 261
Mazeful = *amazeful*, wonderful, 589
Mazer, a kind of hard wood (probably the maple),
 150; a bowl made of maple, and richly orna-
 mented, 470
Me, 'he cast me down' (l. 244), 260
Meath, melteth, 57
Meath, middle, moderate, moderation, 113, 150, 410;
 means, 228; 'by *meaner*,' because, 399
Meanness, humble birth, 372
Meantly, moderately, 513
Meare, pure, 143; boundary, 210
Meard, divided, shared, 529
Measure, moderation, 401
Medawart, meadow-wort, 121
Measured, sang, 148
Measureless, boundless, 503
Middle, *medle*, to mix, 86, 445
Meed, reward, 515
Meere, absolute, entire, 608
Meint, mingled, 482
Melampode, black hellebore, 467
Mell, to intermeddle, 14, 430

- Melling*, meddling, 338, 468
Memories, services for the dead, 517
Memorize, to commemorate, 502
Ménage, to manage, guide (a horse), 47; to wield (arms), 128; management, 226
Mendes, amends, 82
Mene, means, 342, 387
Ment, purposed, moant, 227
Ment, joined, united, 18, 317
Merciable, merciful, 474
Mercie, merry, thanks, favour, 103; thank you, 82
Mercy, to pity, 394
Merrymake, merriment, merry-making, sport, 108, 161, 409, 458
Mery, pleasant, cheerful, 105
Mesprise, *mesprize*, contempt, insolence, 116, 207, 248; mistake, 147
Mew, to confine, secrete, 95, 206, 226; prison, 105, 114, 585; den, 339
Meynt, mingled, united, 467
Mickle, much, great, 97, 177, 211
Middlest, midst, 251; midmost, 28
Miere, to move, 293
Mincing, affected, 90
Mind, to call to mind, 87
Mindlesse, unmindful, 269
Munime, a trifling song, but properly a musical note, 410
Muniments, trifles, toys, 268
Mineon, a favourite, 90
Minsht, diminished, 72
Mirke, dark, 'to murke' = very obscure, 474
Mirkesome, dark, 35
Mis, to sin, err, 95, 206
Misadvised, ill-advised, misinformed, 164
Misaymed, ill-named, 50
Miscall, to abuse, 155, 270
Mischallenge, false challenge, 242
Misconcept, mistake, 257
Miscounselled, ill-advised, 513
Miscrant, unbeliever, 34
Miscreated, ill-formed, 116
Miscreance, false faith, misbelief, 124, 459
Misdeem, to deem amiss, misjudge, 73, 360. *Misdeeming*, misleading, 18. *Misdempt*, misjudged, misweened, 214
Misdesert, crime, 362
Misdid, failed, 250
Misdiel, over-eating, 29
Misdiight, ill-dressed, 331
Misdonne, to misdo, 206
Misdoubting, fearing sadly, 376
Miser, wretch, 80
Misfeign, to feign wrongfully, 26
Misfure, misfortune, 352
Misfaring, evil doing, 556; misfortune, 268, 270
Misgone, gone astray, 468
Misgovernance, misrule, 459
Misguyn, trespass, 376, 600
Mishappen, happen amiss, 24
Mishapt, misshaped, 196
Mislecte, mistake, to dislike, 305, 460
Misregard, misconstruction, 270
Missey, to say to no purpose, uselessly, 418; abuse, speak ill of, 260, 474
Missem, to be unseemly, to misbecome, 203
Misseming, unseemly, wrong, 57, 90; decent, 19
Mishape, deformity, 367
Mishapen, deformed, 140
Mister, sort of, manner of, 57, 182, 468
Misthought, mistake, 273
Mistooke, suspected, 219
Mistrayne, to mislead, 353
Mistreth, signifies, matters, 199
Misusage, abuse, 468
Misweene, to think amiss, 79
Misweende, to go wrong, 513
Muzzle, to rain in little drops, 482
Mo, *mo*, more, 59, 222
Mochell, much, 149, 170
Mold, mole, spot, 418
Moldicarp, mole, 556
Molt, melted, 102
Mome, blockhead, 128
Moniment, mark, stamp, 112; record, 131
Monoceros, sea-unicorn (♂ sword-fish), 117
Moorish, *morish*, marshy, 288, 507
Moralize, to cause to be moral, 153
More, root, plant, 430
Morvan, helmet, 432, 535
Morrow, morning, 306
Mortall, deadly, 89
Mortality, the state of mortal man, 60
Most, greatest, 286
Mostchat, generally, 556
Mot, *mote* (pl. *moten*), may, must, might, 191, 236, 267
Mott, measured, 553
Mought, might, 452
Mould, to moulder, 96; shape, form, 27
Maintenance, space, distance, 202, 220
Moves, insulting grimaces, *mouths*, 396
Moydy, half, 148
Moyte, to defile, 601
Muchell, much, great, 32, 40, 197, 214
Muck, wealth, 113, 214
Mucky, sordid, vile, 113, 206, 405
Mumming, masking, 520
Munifcence (*munifcence*), fortification, defence, 133
Mured, walled, enclosed, 421
Muse, to wonder, 82; wonderment, 77
Muscall, music, 458
Must, new wine, 433
Myndes, resolves, 101
Mysterie, profession, trade, 514
Namely, especially, 434
Napron, apron, 318
Narre, nearer, 467
Nas, has not, 459
Native, natural, 325
Nathelesse, *natheless*, none the less, never the less, 161, 254
Nathemoe, *nathemone*, none the more, never the more, 57, 97, 102, 184, 421
Ne, nor, 14
Neat, cattle, 402
Needmeths, necessities, 551
Nempt, named, 214
Nephews, descendants, grandchildren, 35, 132, 177
Net, *nett*, pure, clean, 226, 401
Nethelesse, nevertheless, 442, 444
Newell, a new thing, 461
Nigardise, niggardliness, miserliness, 269
Nigh, to approach, 452
Nightly, nearly, 467

- Null*, will not, 188, 219; *will or null*, willing or unwilling, 27; '*null'd*,' unwilling, 264
Nimblese, nimbleness, 340
Nip, to slander, 519
Noblesse, noblesse, nobleness, nobility, 52, 441, 465
Nominate, to name, affirm, 67
Notes, notice, occasion, 539
Nourture, *norture*, nurture, bringing up, 91
Norwegians, Norwegians, 172
Not, note, wot not, know not, knows not. (It sometimes seems to stand for *ne mote* = could not), 173, 192, 226, 293, 306
Nothing, not at all, 107
Notifue, to proclaim, 228
Nought, not, of no value, 128
Would, would not, 40, 374, 394
Noule, the head, pate, 433
Nourice, nurse, 491
Nourale, *nouale*, to nurse, foster, rear, 41, 297, 380
Nousling, nestling, burrowing, 288, 556
Norell, news, 449
Noyance, *noyance*, annoyance, 224
Noyd, *noyed*, annoyed, 63, 72, 160
Noyes, noise, 245
Noyous, annoying, disagreeable, *injurious*, 37, 73
Noysome, hurtful, 407
Nycely, carefully, 225
Nye, to draw near, 461
Nys, is not, 460

Oaker, ochre, 491
Obliquid, oblique, 435
Obsequy, funeral rite, 86
Oddes, advantage, 368
Of, off, 460; upon, 247; by, 112, 118, 285; *of all*, above all, 407
Offal, that which falls off, 92
Offend, to harm, hurt, 151, 279
Ofence, recently, 416
Ofspring, origin, 138
On, one, 489
Onely, chief, especial, 80
Ope, open, 246
Opprest, taken captive, 153
Or, ere, before, 517
Ordain, to set (the matter) in order, 138
Order, to arrange, 128; rank (of army), 127
Ordinance, arrangement, 128; ordinance, artillery, 141
Oricalche, a kind of brass, 532
Origane, bastard marjoram, 21
Other, left, 97, 358
Otherwhere, elsewhere, 150
Otherwhiles, sometimes, 212, 230
Ought, owned, 31, 123, 521; owed, 160
Outbarre, to arrest, 138
Outgo, to surpass, 253
Outgyred, let out for hire, 295
Outlaunched, outlaunched, 533
Out-learn, to learn from, 270
Outrage, violence, outburst, 90
Outstrained, outstretched, 507
Outweave, wear out, 239; pass, spend, 227
Outwell, to gush or well out, 13; (pret.) *outwilde*, 509
Outwent, surpassed, 454
Outwin, to get out, 232
Outwind (= outwin), to get out, 307
Outwrest, wrest out, discover, 99

Outcought, completed, passed, 118
Overall, everywhere, 72; all over, 69
Overbore, overthrew, 251
Overcame, overspread, 184
Overcaught, overtook, 266
Overcraw, to crow over, insult, 59, 449
Overdight, decked over, covered over, overspread, 117, 271, 554
Overgo, to overpower, surpass, 300, 471
Overgive, to give over, 173, 515
Overgras, grown over with grass, 474
Overhaile, to draw over, 447
Overlent, overtook, 133, 307; overtaken, 182, 195
Overkest, overcast, 189, 431
Overlade, to overwhelm, 356
Overplast, overhanging, 82
Over-raught, overtook, 376
Over-red, read over, 223
Overpasse, pass over, alleviate, 373
Overren, to over-run, oppress, 302
Oversee, to overlook, 129, 515
Over sight, escape (through having overlooked a danger), 38
Overstrim, to swim over, 172
Overbore, overthrow, 251
Overthwart, opposite, 284
Overture, an open place, 466
Overwent, overcome, 452
Owe, to owe. See *Ought*
Owch, a socket of gold to hold precious stones, a jewel, 19, 63, 177
Owre, ore, 112, 177
Ouzell, blackbird, 588
Oystrige, ostrich, 121

Pace, *pass*, step, pass, passage, 27, 157
Pack, to pack off, 424; a burden, 368
Paddock, toad, 484
Paine, *paine*, labour, pains, 141; punishment, 114; '*did him payne*' = took pains, exerted himself, 355
Paire, to impair, 48
Paled, '*punct*' upon gold, and *paled part per part*, 366 = 'adorned with golden points or eyelets, and regularly intersected with stripes. In heraldry a shield is said to be *parted per pale* when it is longitudinally divided by a pale or broad bar'
Paled, fenced off, 33
Pall, to subdue, moderate, 311
Pall, a cloak of rich material, 318, 467
Panachea, panacea, 85
Pannifell, skull, crown, 184
Paragoe, *paragone*, companion, equal, 233, 263, 283; rivalry, 174
Paramour, a lover, 456
Parasount, first, beforehand, 164, 558; in front, 408
Parbreack, vomit, 13
Pardale, panther, 41
Parentage, parent, 134
Parjel, plaster, 538
Part, party, 249; depart, 24
Partake, to share, 98
Parture, departure, 205
Pass, *pass* (*passing*, surpassing), to surpass, exceed, 28, 68, 108, 174, 235, 308
Passion, suffering, 20, 268. *Passioned*, affected

- with feeling, be grieved. *Passionate*, to express feelingly, 76
- Patchcock*, clown, 636
- Patronage*, defence, 122. *Patronesse*, a female defender, 65
- Pauvre*, pounce, pansy, 159, 221, 456
- Pavone*, peacock, 223
- Payne*, to take pains, exert, 28
- Poyse*, to poise, balance, 132
- Pleading*, appealing, 429
- Peare*, *pere*, equal, 369
- Peasant knight*, base knight, 374
- Pease*, blow, 165
- Pece*, false, fortified place, as a castle, ship, &c., 66, 141, 149, 212, 302
- Peeced*, imperfect, 477
- Pere-tree*, pear tree, 453
- Pind*, to paint, 449
- Pise*, *peize*, to poise, weigh, 304, 557
- Pisn*, to confine, restrain, 302
- Pendants*, ornaments (of wood or stone) hanging down from a Gothic roof, 279
- Penne*, feather, 69
- Perurie*, want of food, 318
- Percen*, to pierce, 11
- Perdu*, *perdy*, *perdue*, truly, 42, 65, 93, 205
- Perregall*, equal, 470
- Perforce*, of necessity, 92
- Poke*, port, brisk, 448
- Perilous*, perilsous, 157, 196, 228, 282
- Persant*, *persuant*, piercing, 65, 94, 208
- Perseline*, parsley, 534
- Persant*, piercing, 208
- Personage*, personal appearance, 165
- Pisue*, a track, 185
- Pirt*, open, plain, 474
- Perreyaunce*, provision. See *Perreyaunce*
- Petronell*, a kind of blunderbuss, 622
- Peasant*, a peasant, 96
- Phere=fere*, companion, 564
- Physiomy*, countenance, 430
- Pictural*, a picture, 130
- Pight*, fixed, placed, fastened, 22, 186, 449
- Pill*, to spoil, plunder, 300, 324, 531
- Pine*, *pyne*, sorrow, grief, 58; to waste away through torment, 65; 'pined ghost,' a spirit wasted away (through torment), 168, 267; *done to pine*, caused to die, 384
- Pinned*, pinioned, 313
- Pious*, compassionate, tender-hearted, 136
- Place*, 'of place,' of rank, 269
- Plaune*, *playne*, to complain, 186, 219, 220
- Platiff*, plaintive, 315
- Platane*, plane tree, 12
- Pleauance*, *pleauans*, pleasure, delight, 20, 450; objects affording pleasure, 150
- Pled*, pledged, 342
- Plesh*, a shallow pool,plash, 123
- Plight* (p. p. *plight*), weave, knit, fold, 107, 208, 395; a plait, fold, 34, 340; condition, 208, 233
- Plg*, to move, 233
- Poise*, *poyse*, weight, force, 73, 356
- Point*, *poynit*, to appoint, 273, 292; a whit, 'to poynit' = exactly, 164
- Poke*, a pouch, 268
- Poll*, to plunder, 300
- Poltice*, statecraft, 135
- Porcispices*, porpoises, 552
- Port*, *portance*, *portaunce*, demeanour, bearing, 92, 93, 116, 165, 204, 222
- Portesse*, broviary, 29
- Possesse*, to accomplish, 174
- Potshares*=*potshards*, fragments of broken vessels, 365
- Pouke*, a goblin called Puck or Robin Goodfellow, 590
- Pouldred*, powdered, spotted, 44, 165; reduced to powder, 530
- Pounce*, claws, talons, 70, 315
- Pound*, weight, balance, 'new in pound' = anew in the balance, 303
- Pourtrahed*, drawn, 128
- Pourtrait*, *pourtraiture*, portrait, image, 40, 94, 155, 233 (vb.), 442
- Pousse*, pease, 470
- Poynant*, piercing, sharp, 45, 122, 156, 242
- Poyse*, weight, 303; force, 71
- Prack*, *prackle*, treacherous, deceitful, 77; skilful, 242, 364
- Prancer*, to trim, deck, adorn, adjust, 28, 90, 92; a malicious trick, 298
- Prance*, to prance, 44
- Pray*, to be 'prey of, 410, to make a prey of, 312
- Prece*, *prease*, to press, 76, 242, 124; a press, crowd, 22, 116, 250
- Prece*, to prove, 525
- Preferd*, preferred, 238
- Preft*, fixed beforehand, 351
- Prejudize*, foresight, 130
- Prepense*, to consider, 219
- Presage*, to tell or point out, foresee, 66
- Presence*, reception-room, 28
- Presulent*, precedent, 310
- Prest ready*, prepared, 122, 244
- Pretend*, to attempt, 161; to stretch out (or over), offer, 378, 414
- Prevent*, anticipate, 365, 398
- Price*, to pay the price of, atone for, 35, 58; value, 63
- Prick*, to ride hard, to spur on quickly, 298; point, centre of target, 145, 474
- Prickett*, a buck, 484
- Prif*, *prufe*, proof, trial, experiment, 53, 56, 63, 85, 99, 380
- Prieve*, to prove, 314
- Prime*, *pryme*, spring time, 21, 153, 192; morning, 128
- Primthas*, first fruits, 617
- Primrose*, chief rose, 449
- Principle*, beginning, 348
- Prise*, adventure, 399
- Price*, *privy*, secret, 474. *Privilee*, *privitie*, private life, 98; intimate relation, 352
- Procure*, to arrange, entreat, 155
- Prodigious*, ominous, 231
- Professe*, to present the appearance of, 387
- Prone*, *proyne*, to prune or trim the feathers, 565
- Project*, to throw forward, 365
- Prolong*, prowling, 474
- Prolong*, to postpone, 248
- Prone*, subjected, 165
- Proper*, own, peculiar, 137; *proper good*, own property, 299
- Prolense*, a stretching out, 169
- Prove*, to experience, try, feel, 261, 268, 305
- Provokement*, a provoking, 247

- Prow*, brave; (superl.) *Prouest*, 31, 34, 171. *Prowes*, prowess, 56
Prune, 95. See *Proine*
Pryse, to pay for, 285. See *Price*
Puddle, a small stream, 600
Puissant, powerful, 286
Pumie, pumy stones, pumice stones, 176, 453
Purchase, to obtain, to get, win (honestly or otherwise), 93, 456
Purchas, purchase, property, booty, robbery, 24, 93, 413
Purplet, embroidered on the edge, 19, 94
Purport, di-gni-c, 161
Purpos, purpose, conversation, discourse, 20, 75, 93, 163, 201, 240; 'to purpose,' to the purpose, 101; to speak as 'purpose diversly' = to speak of various things, 146
Pursuant, a pursuer, 518
Purvis, to provide, 93, 355
Purveyance, provision, management, 75, 156, function, 159, 223
Puttocke, a kite, 317
Pyne, pain (of hunger), 318; torment, 65
Pynning, diggings, work of pioneers, 138
Quale, to cast down, defeat, conquer, 98, 165, 203; perish, 481
Quant, nice, fastidious, 194, 230
Qualify, to ease, soothe, 111
Quar le, quarrel, a square-headed arrow, 142, 143
Quarrie, quarry, prey, game, 144, 197, 316
Quart, quarter, 133
Quayd, quailed, quelled, subdued, 50
Queine, a worthless woman, 270
Queint, quaint, 478; 'queint elect,' oddly chosen, 196
Quest, quenched, 103
Quell, to kill, to subdue, 110, 411; to perish, 494; to abate, 452; to disconcert, frighten, 307, 356
Queme, to please, 458
Quest, expedition, pursuit, 199, 262
Quick, quicke, to stir, move, 341, 670
Quick, alive, 84; 'some quicke' = something alive, 452
Quietage, quietness, 246
Quight, to set free, 50; to requite, 186
Quilled, padded, 102
Quip, a jeer, taunt, 519; to sneer at, taunt, 395
Quire, company, 401
Quirk, a quip, 618
Quit, quite, quyte, to set free, to requite, repay, 19, 558; to return (a sainte), 14, 62; freed, removed, 33, 67, 231; 'quite clame,' to release, 367
Quooke, quaked, 214
Rablement, a rabble, troop, 36, 75, 41, 525
Race, to race, 154, 172; to cut, 317; raced, crased, 340
Rad, rode, 301
Rad, perceived, 206, 361. See *Read*
Raft, bereft, 14, 426
Ragged, rugged, 36
Raile, rayle, to flow, pour down, 43, 123, 181, 222, 237
Rain, rayne, to reign, 37; Kingdom, 114, 180, 244
Rakehell, loose, worthless, 352
Ramp, tear, attack, 26, 35; leap, 421
Ranck, fiercely, 92; vigorous growing, 466
Randon, random, 202, 458
Ranckorous, sharp, 450
Ranks, fiercely, 256
Rape, rapine, 263
Rascal, raskall, low, base, worthless, 141, 222, 353
Rase (pret. *rast*), to erase, 153, 232
Rash, to tear violently, back, 237, 307. *Rashly*, hastily, suddenly, 162, 227, 237. *Rash*, quick, 132
Rake, to scold, 207
Rale, allowance, 269; order, state, 284
Rath, easily, soon, 171, 467. *Rather*, early-born, 419.
Rath, ground, 642
Raught, reached, extended, took, 41, 156, 249
Raunch, to wrench, 471
Ravin, ravine, plunder, prey, 32, 69, 263
Ravishment, ecstasy, 404
Ray, to defile, soil, 84, 203, 379, 540
Ray, array, 305, 361
Rayle, to flow, 237, 540. See *Raile*
Rayle, abuse, 234
Rayne, kingdom, 367
Rayons, rays, beams, 538
Read, reede, advice, 296, 369; motto, 280; proverb, 466; prophecy, 293
Read, reed (pret. *rad*, *red*), to know, declare, explain or advise, discover, perceive, suppose, 13, 14, 42, 52, 67, 107, 117, 164, 171; regard, 113, 374
Reedifye, to rebuild, 136
Reallie, to reform, 425
Reames, realms, 187
Reare, to raise, take up or away, steal, 108, 202, 212, 217; excite, 156; to rouse, 233
Reason, proportion, 48
Reave (pret. *reft*, *raft*), to bereave, take away (forcibly), 26, 120, 141, 201
Rebuke, conduct deserving of reproof, rudeness, 161
Rebutle, to cause to recoil, 19, 73
Recklesse, reckless, 521
Reclayne, to call back, 355 (ab.), 213
Recorde, to remember, to call to mind, 293, 455
Recoure, recover, recure, to recover, 243, 251
Recourse, to recur, return, 4; 'had recourse' = did recur, 300; to return, 208, 260
Recoyle, to retire, retreat, 62
Recule, recule, to recoil, 352, 363
Red, redd, declared, described, perceived, saw, 48, 67, 107, 117, 190, 216, 232, 429, 589. See *Rad*
Redubourse, to repay, 244
Redoubted,oughty, 206
Redound, to overflow, flow, be redundant, 23, 41, 279
Redress, to reunite, remake, 36; to rest, 256
Reed, to deem, 112. *Reede*, read, to advise, 13, 86
Reet, to smoke, 474
Reele, to roll, 198
Refecton, refreshment, 294
Reft, bereft, taken violently away, 152, 179, 236. See *Reave*
Regalitie, rights of royalty, 86
Regarde, a subject demanding consideration or attention, 115; value, 413
Regiment, government, command, 131, 172, 551
Reke, to care, reck, 466
Relate, to bring back, 205
Release, to break loose from, 86; to give up, 237
Relent, to give way, to slacken, relax, soften, 190, 194, 237
Relide, to ally, join, 277

- Releve*, to recover, revive, live again, 60, 178, 200, 414, 481.
Remeasure, to retrace, 195
Remediesse, without hope of rescue, 36
Remeray, to thank, 141
Remorse, pity, 198
Rencounter, to encounter, meet in battle, 31
Renferce (*renferat*), made more fierce or = *renfort* = reinforced, 124
Renfort, reinforced, enforced, made fresh effort, 98, 136
Renne, to run, 455, 470
Renverse, to reverse, overturn, 31, 310
Repent, repentance, 226, to grieve, 205
Repining, a failing (of courage), 19
Repleue, a law term signifying to take possession of goods claimed, giving security at the same time to submit the question of property to a legal tribunal within a given time, 294
Report, to carry off, 83, 132
Reprief, reproof, shame, 57, 169, 176
Reprive, to deprive of, take away, 85
Reprive, reprove, 294
Reprize, to retake, 144, 248
Requere, to require, demand, 41
Reques, demand, 9
Requit, requited, returned, 246
Reseize, to restate, to be repossessed of, 136
Resemble, to compare, 213
Resemblance, look, regard, 195
Resiant, resident, 288
Respect, care, caution, 356
Responsence, correspondence, reply (in music), 152
Respyre, to breathe again, 98
Resseles, resistless, 346
Restore, restitution, 184
Resty, restive, 336
Retourn, to turn (the eyes) back, 93
Retraite, picture, portrait, 94, 125
Retraite, a retreat, 94, 244, 284
Retyre, retirement, 406
Revel, a feast, 159
Revengement, revenge, 234
Reverse, to return, to cause to return, 168, 175
Revest, to reclothe, 82
Revitement, a reviling, abuse, 98
Revroke, to recall, withdraw, 220
Revolt, to roll back, 220
Rue, rue, to pity, to be sorry for, to lament over, repent, 37, 172, 185
Rer, row, 189; 'in rer' in order, 499
Ribauld, *rybauld*, a loose impure person, ribald, 81
Richesse, riches, 115
Ridling, skill, skill in explaining riddles, 223
Rife, *ryfe*, abundant, abundantly, much, frequent, 166, 185, 242, 249
Ryefte, abundantly, 485
Ryft, split, broken, 114; gap, fissure, fragment, 20, 145, 243
Rigor, force, 184. *Rigorous*, violent, 226
Rine, rind, 449
Ring, to encircle, 361
Riotue, *riotue*, riot, extravagance, 169, 226
Ritage, bank, 259
Rire, to split, tear, 186, 308
Rize, to come to, 131
Rocke, distaff, 240
Rode, raid, incursion, 400
Rode, roadstead, anchorage for ships, 78
Rong, rang, 162
Rontes, young bullocks, 448
Rood, a cross, crucifix, 385
Rosiere, a rose tree, 127
Rosmarie, a sea-monster that was supposed to feed on the dew on the tops of the sea rocks, 147; rosemary, 584
Role, a lyre, harp, 182, 275
Routes, rolls, records, 394
Roundle, a roundelay, a kind of song, 471
Rout, crowd, troop, 127, 305
Rove, to shoot (with a sort of arrow called a rover), 11, 161, 320, 471
Roirel, the ring of a bit—any small moveable ring, 47
Roume, place, space, 59, 183
Rounded, whispered, 214
Roundell, a round bubble (of foam), 178
Rouze, *rouze*, to shake up, 69, 95
Royn, to mutter, 341
Rubin, *Rubine*, the ruby, 94, 150
Ruddock, redbreast, 588
Rue, to grieve, 20, 343
Ruffed, ruffled, 165, 501. *Ruffin*, disordered, 30.
Ruffing, ruff, 213
Ruinat, to ruin, 146, 346; ruined, 522
Ruyn, pitying, 343
Rulesse, lawless, 509
Ruth, pity, 17, 182. *Ruthfull*, piteous, 465
Rutty, rooty, 695
Ryfe, frequent, common, 466
Ryve, to pierce, 185
Sacrament, oath of purgation taken by an accused party, 299
Sacred, accursed, 53, 149, 354
Sad, firm, heavy, graye, 23, 61, 84, 88, 122
Saine, *sayne*, to say (i.e. say), 435, 460, 481
Sake, cause, 34
Sale, a wicker net (made of willows or willows), 484
Salve, to salute, 260
Salvaunce, onslaught, 83
Salied, leapt, sallied, 392
Sallows, willows, 256
Salvage, savage, wild, 23, 133, 173, 215, 251, 341
Salve, to heal, save, remedy, 133, 250, 320
Salving, salvation, restoration, 82
Sam, together, 66, 469
Samite, silk stuff, 225
Sample, example, 467
Sanguine, blood-colour, 201
Sardonian, sardonian, 339
Sauvgard, guard, defence, 102. *Savegard*, to protect, 208
Saulge, sage, 534
Saw, word, saying, proverb, sentence, 558
Say, a thin stuff (for cloaks), 30, 224
Say, assay, proof, 417
Scald, scabby, 64
Scand, climbed, 424
Scarabee, a beetle, 537
Scarmoges, skirmishes, 100
Scath, hurt, harm, damage, ruin, 77, 169, 212, 485, 577
Scatter, to let drop, 86
Scattering, a vagrant, 138, 624

- Scerne*, to discern, 385
Schuchin, scutchin, escutcheon, shield, device on a shield, 177, 233, 242, 353
Scolopendra, a fish resembling a centipede, 147
Scope, aim, 482; dimension, 210; 'aymed scope,' a mark aimed at, 372
Scorse, to exchange, 131, 207
Scorse, to chase, 402
Scout, scowled, 90
Scrivens, scrine, scryne, skreene, a cabinet for papers, a writing desk, 11, 131; entrance of a hall, 340
Strike, shriek, 379
Scruze, to squeeze, crush, 144, 151, 185
Scryde, descried, 358
Sdeigne, to disdain, 160, 161
Sea-shouldring, having shoulders that displace the sea, 147
Sear, to burn, 70; burning, 69
Sease, to fasten on, seize, 72
See, scat, 282
Seelde, seldom, rare, 69, 570
Seely, simple, innocent, 39, 92, 192, 466
Seem, 'nought seemeth' it is not *seemly*, 460
Seeming, apparently, 226
Seemless, unsexonly, 302
Seemly, in a seemly manner, 123; comely, 148; apparent, 226
Seemlyhed, a seemly appearance, 269
Seene, skilled, experienced, 239, 442
Seve, to pursue, 209
Seised, taken possession of, 76
Seisin, possession, 381
Seicouth, seldom known, rare, strange, 269
Sell, scat, saddle, 87, 92, 156, 175, 250
Semblance, semblaunt, semblant, likeness, appearance, phantom, 82, 150, 167, 168, 181, 195, 282; cheer, entertainment, 378
Sence, feeling, 259
Seneschall, governor, steward, 231, 313
Sens, since, 254
Sensefull, sensible, 381
Sent, scent, perception, 16, 180, 196, 257
Sere, sear, 446
Serve, to bring to bear upon, 137
Set by, to esteem, 262
Severall, diverse, 24
Seu, to follow, 88, 113, 180, 186, 402; to solicit, 294
Seyne, to say. See *Sayne*
Shade, to shadow, represent, 327
Shallop, sloop, 197
Shame, to feel shame, to be ashamed, 147
Shamefast, modest, 318
Shamefastness, modesty, 308
Shard, division, boundary, 110; cut, 287
Share, portion, piece, 19; to cut, 237, 297, 317
Shayres, shires, 135
Sheare, to cut, divide, 109, 178, 256
Sheave, shere, bright, clear, 218
Sheares, wings, 119
Shed, to spill life blood, to kill, 115
Sheene, shene, bright, shining, clear, 81, 90, 162, 180
Shend (pret. *shent*), to disgrace, defile, abuse, reproach, shame, 17, 81, 102, 120, 181, 206, 235, 467, 607
Shere, to cleave, divide, 106
Shere, bright, clear, 167, 259
Shew, mark, track, 23
Shudder (generally explained as *she*), but if not a corruption of *thuder* (thither) must mean *she-deer*, she animals, 475
Shield, 'God shield,' God forbid, 466
Shine, shyne, a bright light, 67; bright, 242
Shiver, to quiver, 235, 237
Shole, shallow, 427
Shonne, to shun, 161
Shope, shaped, framed, 320
Shot, advanced (in years), 824
Shriche-owle, shriek owl, 401
Shriech, shriek, 379
Shrive, to question (shrive), 293
Shrifty, confessions, 517
Shright, a shriek, 118, 377; to shriek, 203
Shrike, shriek, 494
Shrill, to give out a ringing, shrill sound, 401, 481; a shrill sound, 495
Shrilling, shrill, 33, 203, 239
Shriving, confession, 517
Shrowde, to take shelter, 449
Sub, sibbe, akin, related, 395
Such, such, 196, 171
Sicker, sure, 452
Sickerness, security, safety, 223
Siege, sent, 90, 116
Shield, cieler, 318
Sient, scion, 296
Sight, sighed, 85
Sign, watchword; representation, picture, 232
Sike, such, 460
Silly, simple, innocent, 42, 194, 216
Simplese, simplicity, 467
Sin, since, 417
Singults, sighs, 219, 500
Sinle, board, deposit, 14
Sited, placed, situated, 191
Sith, sithe, sythe, time, since, 37, 124, 215, 534, 549
Sithens, since, since that time, 32, 37, 55, 111, 573
Sithes, times, 447, 191
Sits, is becoming, 44, 459
Steal, a dagger, 631
Still, to signify, to be a matter of importance, 312
Stippel, a little boat, 146
Stalke, slow, 190
Stake, to slack, 169, 332
Slaver, slobber, 57
Slight, sleight, device, trick, 46, 234, 339
Slipper, slippery, 482
Stomby, sleepy, 190
Slug, to live idle, 82
Sly, subtle, clever, 121
Snurke, neat, trim, 449
Snit, smote, 19, 348; smitten, 166, 231
Snout, smote, 158; smitten, 167
Smouldry, smouldring, suffocating, 102, 220
Snag, a knot, 142, 263
Snaggy, knotted, covered with knots, 44
Snags, knots, 263
Snaky-creathed (= ?) *Snake-creathed*, snake-entwined, 425
Snar, to snarl, 420
Snarled, twisted, 225
Snebbe, to reprove, snub, 449
Snub, to reprove, 516
Snub, knob (of a club), 50
Soare-falcon, a falcon of the first year, 602
Sold, pay, remuneration, 126
Solein, sad, 460

- Solemnize*, a solemn rite, 60
Somedele, somewhat, 484
Song, sang, 106
Sonned, *sunned*, exposed to the sun, 447
Sonneslime, sunshiny, 446
Soot, sweetly, 456
Sooth, true, truth, 460; truly, 170, 174, 277
Soothe, augury, 485
Soothly, *soothlich*, truly, indeed, 164, 344, 367
Soothsay, prediction, omen, 203
Sops in wine, a kind of flower like a carnation, 458
Sort, company, 160, 561
Sort, 'in sort,' inasmuch as, 76
Souse, *gouse*, *souse*, to swoop on, as a bird does upon his prey, strike, attack, 33, 133, 177, 243, 244, 250, 256, 263; the swoop (of a hawk), 143; blow, 272, 313
Souse, to immerse, 23
Southsay, *soothsay*, 286. *Southsayer*, *soothsayer*, 33
Sovereignce, remembrance, 107, 111, 124, 459
Sound, to wield, 74. *Sound*=*sound*, swoon, 112
Soune, a sound, 105, 111
Sowat, struck, 250
Soyle, prey, 243
Space, to walk, roam, 240, 273, 297
Spalles, the shoulders, 109
Spangs, spangles, 290
Sparkle forth, to cance to sparkle, 159
Spare, sparing, niggardliness, 461; to save, 263, 459
Spark (? an error for *sparthe*), a battle-axe, 676
Sparve, bolt, bar, 348
Speculation, sight, 603
Speed, 'evil speed,' misfortune, 254
Spell, charm, 452
Sperre, to bolt, shut, 347, 460
Sperse, to disperse, scatter, 15, 310
Spes, *spyes*, keen glances, eyes, 19, 159, 398, 401
Spigitt, displeasure, grudge, 161
Spilt, to ravage, destroy, 27, 199
Spult, pieced, in mid, 279
Spured forth, produced, 489
Spout, to ravage, carry off, 114
Spunned, flowed out quickly, 277
Spot, to blame, 189
Spoused, espoused, betrothed, 60
Sprad, sprad, 340
Spray, branch, 434
Spred, *spredde*, to spread over, to cover, 157
Sprunt, sprinkled, 160, 237, 534
Spright, spirit, 310
Spring, a springal, youth, 535
Springal, a youth, stripling, 343
Spring-headed, having heads that spring aloof, 147
Sprong, sprang, 162, 175
Sourne, to spur, 156
Spyall, spy, 80
Spyre, to shoot forth, 187
Squib, a paltry trifling fellow, 516
Squire, a square, a rule, a carpenter's measure, 86
Stadle, a staff, prop, 40
Staine, to disparage, 544
Stale, decoy, bait, 80, 407
Stalk, a stride, 114
Stal'd, stolen, taken, 524
Stanck, weary, 473
Stare, to shine, 197
Stared, 'up stared,' stood up stiffly, 227
Stark, strong, stiff, 16, 84
Star-read, knowledge of the stars, 296
Startuppe, a wooden shoe, 461 (*Glosse*)
State, stately, 473
Stay, to hold, hold up, support, 220
Stayd, caused to stay, 372
Stayed, constant, 148
Stayne, to dim, deface, 99
Stayre, a step, 157
Stead, *sted*, *stedd*, station, place, situation, 51, 58, 72, 164, 223, 219
Stead, to help, avail, bestead, 126
Steale, stale, handle, 356
Stearne, a stone (vessel), 434
Steure, a steer, 222, 261
Sted, place, condition, 357; steed, horse, 51. See *Stead*
Steedy, stoney, 83
Steele=*steel*, of steel, 297
Steemed, esteemed, 252, 410
Steep, to bathe, stain, 162
Stellis, thefts, 24
Steme, to exhale, 109
Stemme, to rush against, 237
Stent, to stop, 98
Sterve, to die, 230; to starve, 594
Stern, voice, cry, 475
Stew, a hot steaming place, 72
Sue, ascend, 278
Sull, to drop, flow, trickle, 166, 266
Sunt, to stop, cease, 76, 243; a stop, limit, 564
Sur, *styre*, to stir, move, incite, provoke, 102, 198; to direct, steer, 80
Stole, a long robe, 76
Stomachous, angry, 121
Stomacke, temper, 116
Stond, attach, 141
Stoned, astonished, alarmed, 351
Stound, *stound*, *stond*, a moment of time, 52, 53; (a time of) trouble, peril, alarm, assault, 122, 158, 162, 255; effort, 485; a stunning influence, a blow, amazement, 258, 261, 308, 532; stunned, 350, 568
Stound, astonishment, amazement, 568
Stoup, to swoop, 144
Stout, stubborn, bold, 174, 226
Stoure, *stoure*, tumult, disturbance, battle, passion, ft, 18, 159, 163, 446, 447; paroxysm, 173; danger, peril, 25, 32
Straine, race, lineage, 271.
Straine, *strayne*, to stretch out, 114
Straint, grasp, strain, 301
Strake, strook, 95, 98, 507; a streak, 98
Strange, foreign, borrowed, 225
Strayne, to wield, 114; to embody in strains, 480
Strayt, a street, 116
Streight, narrow, strait, strict, 355, 583; close, 274
Streightly, straitly, closely, 122, 166
Streightnesse, strictness, 322
Streite, strain, race, 241, 387
Stresse, distress, 135, 219
Strich, the screech-owl, 149
Stryf-ful, *stryfull*, contentious, 88, 164, 243, 255
Stroken, struck, 367
Strond, strand, 196
Strong, strong, 504
Strow, to spread out, display, 467
Stub, stock of a tree, 58

Stud, stude, trunk, stock, 452; shrub bush, 505
Sty, to ascend, mount, 70, 117
Subject, lying beneath, 70, 194
Submiss, submissive, 284
Subtle, fine-spun, 163
Subvert, subverted, 228
Succeed, to approach, 377
Success, succession, 136
Sue, solicit. See *See*
Sufferance, patience, endurance, 235
Suffaunce, abundance, 534
Suffed, satisfied, 22
Sugred, sweet, 105
Supple, to make supple, 185
Suppress, to overcome, keep down, 398
Surbale, to batter, 178
Surbet, bruised, wearied, 89
Surcease, to leave off, utterly to cease, 158, 178, 237, 304
Surcharge, to attack with renewed vigour, 277
Surcharged, heavily laden, 266
Surplusage, excess, 114
Surprise, to seize suddenly, 410
Surmount, to surpass, 136
Surquetry, pride, insolence, presumption, 148, 157, 211, 303
Survew, *surveil*, to overlook, survey, 449
Suspect, suspicion, 39
Swain, *swain*, a labourer, youth, person, 388, 453
Sweat, black, 133
Swave, to swerve, retreat, 91, 96, 156
Sweat, did sweat, 305
Sway, to swing, brandish, wield (arms), 136, 162; force, 317; a rapid motion, 147
Sweard, sword, 244, 552
Sweeth-bands, swaddling-bands, 379
Swelt, fainted, swooned, 263; burnt, 44; (? swelled, 220)
Swincl, labour, toil, 112, 474
Swinge, to singe, 70
Swote, sweetly. See *Soote*
Swound, swoon, 263
Sybbe, akin, related, 461
Syker, truly, 467
Syrlyse, surly, 468
Table, a picture, 59
Tablere, one playing on a tabour, 458
Tackle (pl. *tackles*), rigger, 78
Tadvaunce, to advance, 419
Taking, sickness, 456
Talauns, talons, 72
Tamburins, small drums, 464
Tane, taken, 546
Tapeis, tapestry, figured work, 535
Tare, tore, 197
Targe, target, 102
Tarras, terrace, 340
Tassal gent, the tiercel, or male goshawk, 880
Tassuage, to assuage, 448
Tawdrice lace, a lace (girdle) bought at the fair of St. Audrey or St. Ethelred, 456
Teade, a torch, 78, 535, 687
Teene (*lene*), grief, sorrow, pain, 58, 76, 86, 213, 543; affliction, 343. See *Teene*
Teene (? *lene*, lend, give), to bestow, 186
Tell, to count, 114. *Teld*, told, 365
Temed, yoked in a team, 178

Temerise, like a team, 222
Temper, to govern, control, 525
Tempring, controlling, governing, 109
Tend, to wait on, 310
Tender, to tend, attend to, 193, 372
Twebinth, the turpentine tree, 467
Termelesse, unlimited, 600
Thee, to prosper, thrive, 83
Theeteyes, thefts, 222
Thelement, the elements, 449
Thelf, the gift, 452
Then, than, 43, 166
Thereto, besides, 158
Thetch, thutch, 515
Thether, thither, 307
Thewed, behaved, mannered, 109, 597
Thewes, qualities, manners, 55, 60, 83, 137
Thick, a thicket, 84, 453
Thilk, *thilke*, that same, this, 447, 450, 456
Tho, *thoe*, then, 13, 17, 158, 459. *Tho*, the, pl. *thos*, 474
Thone, the one, the first, 445
Thorough, through, 246, 374
Thoroughly, thoroughly, 118, 307, 383
Thother, that other, the other, 145, 445
Thous=thou es, thou art, 466, 533
Thi all, to take captive, enslave, 45, 219; bring into subjection, constrain, 319; a slave, 38; enslaved, 417
Threat, to threaten, 179, 227. *Threatfull*, threatening, 227
Thresher, a flail, 325
Threelue, thirty, 448
Thrid, a thread, 240
Thrill, to pierce, 153, 166, 184, 213, 266. *Thrillant*, piercing, 70, 101
Thrist, to thirst, 42; thirst, 108
Thirsty, thirsty, 64, 165
Throu, time, while, 180
Throu, throce, page, 64; thrust, attack, 103, 123, 184, 244, 245
Thrust, to thirst, 89; thirst, 199
Thwart, athwart, 198
Tickle, uncertain, insecure, 178, 431, 542
Tide, *tyde*, time, season, opportunity, 20, 190, 209
Tight, tied, 421
Timbered, massive (like timbers), 305
Timelesse, untimely, 570
Timely, seasonable, beautiful, 446
Tinct, coloured, 481
Tine, affliction, 294
Tine, to light, kindle, inflame, 14, 120, 195, 213, 236
Tine or tern, sorrow, grief, pain, 218, 245, 294
Tire, *ran*, train, 30
Tire, *tyre*, attire, dress, 54, 63, 86, 430
Titmouse, hedge-sparrow, 480
To=for (as in *to friend*), 14
Todde, a thick bush, 452
Tofore, before, 248, 385
Too, very, 449, 460
Toole, weapon, 95
Tooting, looking about, 462
Top, head, 46
Toren heare, torn hair, 563
To-rent, rent asunder, 263
Tort, wrong, injury, 74, 103, 164, 271
Tortuous, injurious, wrongful, 88, 276, 337
Tossen, to brandish, toss, 169

Tottle, totty, tottering, unsteady, 433, 449
To-torne, torn to pieces, 338
Tourney, to tilt, joust, 80 (sb.), 164
Touze, to tease, worry, 143
Toward, favourable, 99; approaching, near at hand, 156
To-worne, worn out, 338
Toy, pastime, sport, 110, 151; to play, 629
Toyne, net, 560
Trace, to walk, track, tract, 196, 271, 374
Track, trace, 420; to trace, 110
Trade, footstep, tread, 110; occupation, 448; conduct, 162
Traduckon, transfer, 243
Traine, *trayne*, to drag along, trail, to allure, 390; wile, decent, snare, trap, 38, 67, 169, 212, 271; track, 301; assembly, 303
Trammel, a net for the hair, tresses, 88, 208
Transard, transformed, 221
Transmute, to transmute, transform, 47, 93, 159
Transmore, to transmute, 222
Trap, to adorn (with trappings), 120, 527
Traveled, toiled, 120, 527
Travell, toll, 393
Trayled, interwoven, adorned, 316
Treachour, *treachour*, a traitor, 31, 81, 99, 136, 397, 524
Treague, truce, 90
Treat, to discourse, hold parley with, 202 (sb.), 231
Treen, of trees, 46
Trenchard, *techant*, cutting, 70, 317
Trentals, services of 30 masses, which were usually celebrated upon as many different days, for the dead, 517
True, to experience, 492; prove, *q daw tie* = prove a jackdaw or fool, 521
Truid, flowed, 153
Trim, neat, well-formed, 159; pleasing, 160
Trinall, threefold, 78
Triplicity, quality of being threefold, 78
Troad, *trode*, path, footstep, 211, 466, 474
Troncheon, a headless spear, 123, 242
Troth, truth, 81
Troublous, restless, 92
Trown, to believe, 303
Trunked, truncated, having the head cut off, 102
Trusse, to pack up, 216; carry off, 70, 264; a bundle, 460
Tryde, proved, essayed, 87
True, tried, purified, 302
Turnoid, troubled, 278, 541
Turney, an encounter, 258, 278
Turribant, turban, 288
Teau, twain, two, 109
Twight, to twit, 323
Twofold, twofold, 35
Tunde, kindled, 265, 508
Tyne, grief, pain, 56. See *Tine*, *Tren*
Tyne, to come to grief, to perish, 289
Tyranne, a tyrant, 478
Tyrannesse, a female tyrant, 37
Tyranning, acting like a tyrant, 262
Tyre, to dress, attire, 282
Tyrring? weary, 157, 395
Ugly, horrible, 59
Umbrerv, the visor of a helmet, 160, 251
Unacquainted, unusual, strange, 63

Unbid, without a prayer, 60
Unblest, unwounded, 301
Unbrace, to unfasten, 97
Uncivile, wild, uncivilised, 112
Uncooth, unusual, strange, 13, 163, 215, 267
Uncurdled, uncurdled, 589
Undefide, unchallenged, 122
Underfong, to surprise, circumvent, 300, 465
Underhand, secretly, 289
Underlay, to diminish, 505
Undersey, to affirm in contradiction to anyone, 474
Undersong, burden (of a song), 471
Understand, to learn the cause of (or perhaps to take in hand for purpose of arbitration), 24
Undertale, to perceive, hear, 309
Undertime, time of the mid-day meal, 195
Undight, to undress, take off ornaments, unloose, 23, 146, 185, 190, 392
Uneasy, disturbed, 159
Uneath, *unneath*, *unneather*, *uneth*, scarcely, with difficulty, uneasily, 58, 68, 106, 183, 211, 471
Unespyde, unseen, 159
Unslide, unpolished, 196
Ungentle, unartificial, 162
Ungentleness, base conduct, 182
Unguilt, not conscious of guilt, 165
Unhable, incapable, 29
Unhappy pause, unsuccessful labours (because there was no heir to reap the benefit of their pains), 380
Unhappy, unfortunate, 111
Unhaste, slow, 23
Unheale, *unhele*, to expose, uncover, 152, 253
Unheedy, unwary, 132. *Unheedily*, *unheedingly*, 280
Unherat, 'took from the horse or temporary monument where the knights' arms were hung,' 310
Unkempt, uncombed, rude, 214, 480
Unkend, *unkent*, unknown, 286, 440
Unkind, unnatural, 167
Unkindly, unnatural, 132, 446
Unlast, unlaced, 365
Unlich, unlike, 35
Unlike, not likely, 320
Unmannurd, not cultivated, 132
Unmard, uninjured, 407
Unmeet, unfit, 193, 232
Unnetes, scarcely, 446
Unnoble, ignoble, 502
Unpurvaide of, unprovided with, 424
Unred, untold, 291
Unredrest, without redress, unrescued, 272
Unreproved, blameless, 113
Unreafutnesse, uneasiness, 454
Unshed, unpared, 266
Unsoote, unsweet, 445
Unspidye, unseen, 188
Unstight, unsteady, 363
Unthrift, wicked, 30
Unthriftthead, unthrift, 147, 296
Untill, unto, 68, 482
Unthimely, unfortunately, 319
Untruat, unbound, 566
Unvalued, invaluable, 584
Unwary, unwary, unexpected, 76
Unware, *unwares*, *unawares*, unexpectedly, 34, 159; unknown, 260, 452, 461

Unseeing, not knowing, unconscious, 21, 22, 174
Unwieldy, unwieldy, 51
Unwist, unknown, 165, 230, 297
Unwont, unaccustomed, 448
Unworthy, undeserved, 380
Unwreaked, unrevenged, 219
Upbraide, *upbraiding*, reproach, abuse, 277, 352, 512
Upbrast, burst open, 416
Upbray, to upbraid, 101, 239; an upbraiding, 163
Uphild, upheld, 414
Upkooded, upkooded, 503
Uppeare, to raise up, 83, 173, 235
Upryat, uprisen, 452
Upstare, to stand up erect, 149, 217
Up-start, start up, 97, 121
Upalay, to support, 226
Uptyde, tied up, 86
Upround, knotted, 13
Urehn, hedgehog, 141
Usage, behaviour, 267
Usauce, usage, 112
Use, to practise, 252; habits, 104, 218
Utmost, uttermost, outmost, last, 90, 147, 220, 379, 420, 603
Utter, to put out or forth, 452; outer, 90, 280

Vade, to go, 304; to vanish, 208, 529
Vale, to lay down, 208
Vaine, frail, 240
Vaine, the poetic vein, 477
Vainesse, vanity, 538
Valew, *valur*, valour, courage, 109
Valtaunce, valour, 93, 171
Varigle, various, 182
Vauncing, advancing, 249
Vaunt, to display, 164
Vauntage, advantage, opportunity, 199
Vaut, a vault, 115, 128
Vaute, to leap, 519
Vaulted, vaulted, 179, 555
Vaut, a vault, 509, 524
Vele, a veil, 12, 161
Vellanage, *vullanage*, slavery, 139
Vellet, velvet, 460
Venary, hunting, 40
Vengeable, revengeful, deserving of revenge, 16, 69
Vengement, revenge, 265
Venger, avenger, 24
Ventayle, the place of the helmet, 165, 259
Vented, lifted up the visor, 160
Venteth, snuffeth, 449
Ventre, to venture, 265
Ventrous, *venturous*, bold, adventurous, 149, 239
Vere, to veer, 356
Vermel, *vermeill*, *vermell*, *vermily*, *vermillion*, 134, 160, 201, 277
Vetuous, possessing virtue or power, 154
Vestiment, vestment, 227
Velchy, consisting of the straw of the *velch* (tare), 475
Vild, vile, 38, 349
Vildy, vilely, 14, 27
Villem, base-born, low, 142
Virolays, light songs, 480, 540
Virginal, pertaining to a virgin, 127
Vismom, visage, 311, 535
Vital, life-giving, 81

Voide, to avoid, turn aside, to remove, 258, 395
Voided, cleared, 315, 395

Wade, to walk, go, 13
Wae, woe, 473
Wag, to move (the limbs), 299
Wage, a pledge, 31; to pledge, 114
Wagnoures, quagmires, 474
Waude, weighed, proved, 278
Waift, a waif, an article found and not claimed by an owner, 204
Waite, *to watch*, 220, (sb.) 460
Wakefull, watchful, 16, 206
Walke, to roll, wag, 97, 225
Wallowed, groveling, 218
Wan, gained, 88; took, 110
Wan, pale, faint, 110
Wand, branch of a tree, 339
Wanton, wild, 190
War, worse, 474
Ward, to guard, 310, 466
Ware, wary, cautious, 43, 208
Wareless, unaware, 236; unexpected, 299; heedless, 818
War-hable, fit for war, 138
Warment, caution, 243
Warke, work, 83
War-monger, a mercenary warrior, 214
Warray, *warrey*, to make war on, to lay waste, 37, 133, 136
Warre, worse, 271
Wasserman, a sea monster in shape like a man, 147
Wast, to desolate, lay waste, 234; wasted, 446
Wastfull, barren, uninhabited, wild, 22, 112, 223; devastating, 446
Wastness, wilderness, 22
Water-sprinkle, waterpot, 225, 244
Waives, waves, 145
Wax, *wee*, to grow, 207, 241
Way, to weigh, esteem, 429
Wayd, went on their way, 237; weighed, determined, 230
Wayfull, lamentable, 179, 449
Wayment, to lament, 81, 601; lamentation, 178, 493
Wayne, chariot, 29
Weanell, a weanling, lamb or kid, 475
Weare, to pass, spend (the time), 15
Wearish, mischievous, evil-disposed, 256
Weasand-pipe, windpipe, 242
Weather, to expose to the weather, 315
Weaved, waved, floated, 311
Weed, clothes, dress, 11, 45, 94, 120
Weeke, *wike*, 134
Weeldelesse, unwieldy, 243
Wren (pret. *weend*), to suppose, expect, think, 14, 17, 58, 99, 251
Weet, *weeten*, to know, learn, understand, perceive, 23, 92, 167, 163, 185. *To weet*=to wit, 193
Weeting, knowledge, 349
Weetingly, knowingly, 372
Weetlesse, unconscious, ignorant, 106, 165, 210
Weyt, a waif, 309
Weyt, was waited, 108; avoided, 179; a waif, a thing cast adrift, 215
Wei-away the while, alas the time! 473
Weld, to wield, govern, 229, 338
Welke, to wane, 14, 207, 447
Welkin, sky, heavens, 28

Well, weal, 22; very (*well affectionate*), 175
Well, to pour, 134. *Well-head*, fountain head, 113
Well-away, an exclamation of great sorrow, alas! 124, 473
Well-seene, experienced, 306
Well-thewed, abounding in moral wisdom, 449
Weller, to roll, 468
Went, to turn, go, 273
Went, journey, course, 257, 386
Wound, weasand, windpipe, 301
Wex, to grow, increase, become, 120, 196, 207
Wex, wax, 201
Whally, marked with streaks, 29
What, a thing—*homely*, *what* homely fare, 402
What for a, what sort of it, 455
Where, where, place, 66, 177
Whelky, shelly, 305
Whelm, to overwhelm, 91, 98
Whether, each of two, 21, 301
While, time; 'Alas the *while*!' = woe worth the time! 446
Whilere, *whilere* = erewhile, formerly, lately, 57, 190, 253
Whites, *whitest*, whilst, 292
Whumped, covered with a wimple, 436
Whu, *whu*, a kind of whale, 147
Whut, silenced, 437
Whot, hot, 84, 128, 198
Whylone, formerly, 28
Wicked, vile (chained), 220
Wide, round-about, 414
Widder, wider, 475
Wight = *wide*, blame; '*worly wight*' = merited blame, 464
Wight, person, being, 129, 140
Wight, active, 453
Wightly, quickly, 473
Widding, a wild apple, 195
Wimble, nimble, 453
Wimple, to gather, plait, fold, 12; a covering for the neck, veil, 76
Win (out), get (out), 232; come up to, 353
Wizart, wizard, wise man, 28, 296
Wise, *wise*, mode, manner, guise, 161, 165, 173
Wist, *wise*, knew, 163
Witch, to bewitch,
Witche, a reed, 464
Wite, *witen*, *wyte*, to blame, twit, reprove, 147, 180, 229, 460
Witless, blameless, 471
With-hault, withheld, 140
Withoute, without, 359
Witlesse, senseless, foolish, 466
Witt, mind, intelligence, 149. *Wittily*, wisely, sensibly, 170
Wo, woe, sad, 124, 233
Womanhood, womanly feeling, 402
Won (*did won*), be wont, 208
Won, *coune* (*wonning*), dwelling-place, abode, 114, 156, 270, 375, 378; to dwell, 42, 117, 184, 369
Wondred, marvellous, 149
Woned, were wont, 449
Wont, to be accustomed, 226
Wood, mad, frantic, furious, 30, 35, 98, 277
Woodnes, madness, 220
Woon, to dwell, 604, 557
Word, motto, 251
Wore, passed or spent the time, 276

Worshippe, honour, reverence, 12, 163
Worth, to be, 109
Wot, *wote*, know, knows, 7, 59, 206, 449
Wotes, knows, 206. *Woted*, knowest, 93
Woundlesse, unwounded, 477
Woored, wooed, 412
Wore, *woren*, become, grown, 30, 180, 271
Wracke, wreck, destruction, violence, 88, 448; to take vengeance, 261. *Wrackfull*, avenging, 405
Wrat, to wrest, 357
Wreke, did write, 227
Wrangling, mewing like a cat, 420
Wreck, vengeance, 53, 75; ruin, 198; to avenge, take vengeance on, 93, 164
Wreakfull, avenging, 297
Wreath, to turn, 86
Wreck, destruction, 21
Wrest, to wr. ach. twis. 153; a wrenching, overturning, 144, 153
Wrest, the wrist, 33, 194
Wrethe, to twist, 13
Wrigle, wriggling, 448
Writ (pl. *writes*), writing, a written paper, 76, 161
Wrode, *wroden*, avenged, 34, 238, 265, 451
Wrye, awry, crooked, 448
Wull, will, 506
Wyde, turned away (cf. *vide* of the mark), 123
Wyle, *wylen*, to blame, 353, 516, 558
Y, as a prefix of the past participle, is frequently employed by Spenser, as *Y-clad*, clothed, 12, 11.
Y-franght, filled, 20, &c.
Yale, gate, 460
Y-bent, turned, gone, 180
Y-bet, beaten, 248
Y-blent, blinded, dazzled, 18, 456
Y-bore, born, 177
Y-bond, learning, 461
Y-clad, clad, 14
Y-clepe, to call, 550
Y-cleped, called, named, 182
Y-dle, empty, 33
Y-dlesse, idleness, 369
Y-drad, *y-dred*, drenched, feared, 11
Y-eal, *y-ele*, *y-eel*, to go (properly a preterite tense), 68, 96
Y-earne, to earn, 365, 392
Y-euen, give in, 455
Y-fere, together, in company with, 54, 455
Y-fetted, adorned, 163
Y-go, *y-gore*, gone, ago, 19, 183
Y-glance, glanced, glided, 198
Y-ilde, yield, 138
Y-lrks, *y-lrks*, lashes, 395
Y-lrke, alike, 30
Y-lrke, same, 471
Y-molt, melted, 220
Y-mpe, youth, 224. See *Imp*
Y-mpt, joined, 275
Ynd, India, 38
Ynne, abode, inn, 480
Yod, *yode*, went, 60, 112, 202
Yodest, didst go, 567
Yold, yielded, 219
Y-on, yonder, 420
Y-ond, outrageous, terrible, 196
Yongthly, youthful, 536
Youngling, young of man or beast, 66

<i>Youngh, yongth, youth</i> , 480, 532	<i>Ysame</i> , together, 433
<i>Younker</i> , a youth, 231	<i>Yshrilled</i> , did sound shrill, 530
<i>Youthly</i> , youthful, 95	<i>Ytost</i> , harassed, 463
<i>Ypent</i> , pent up, 446	<i>Ywis</i> , certainly, truly, 82, 199
<i>Yplight</i> , plighted, 91	<i>Ywis</i> , 'had I wis,' vava after-regret: literally 'had I known' (how it would have turned out), 521
<i>Yrapt in spright</i> , rapt in spirit, 555	<i>Ywroke, ywrok-, ywroken</i> , avenged, revenged, 269, 285, 338
<i>Yrkes, wearies</i> , 204	
<i>Yron-braced</i> , sinewed like iron (of the arm), 102	

PRINTED BY

SPOTTISWOODE AND CO. LTD., NEW-STREET SQUARE
LONDON

Macmillan's Globe Library.

Crown 8vo. Cloth. 3s. 6d. each.

Volumes marked with an asterisk () are also issued in Limp leather, with full Gilt backs and Gilt edges. 5s. net each.*

- ***BOSWELL'S LIFE OF JOHNSON.** With an Introduction by MOWBRAY MORRIS.
- ***BURNS'S COMPLETE WORKS.** Edited from the best Printed and MS. Authorities, with Memoir and Glossarial Index, by ALEXANDER SMITH
- **THE WORKS OF GEOFFREY CHAUCER.** Edited by ALFRED W. POLLARD, H. FRANK HEATH, MARK H. LUDFLL, and W. S. MCCORMICK.
- ***COWPER'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited, with Biographical Introduction and Notes, by W. BERNHAM, B.D.
- ROBINSON CRUSOE.** Edited after the Original Editions, with a Biographical Introduction, by HENRY KINGSLEY, F.R.G.S.
- ***DRYDEN'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited, with a Memoir, Revised Texts, and Notes, by W. D. CHRISTIE, M.A.
- THE DIARY OF JOHN EVELYN.** ¹⁷¹²⁻²²th Introduction and Notes by AUGUSTIN DOBSON. [Autumn 1907.
- FROISSART'S CHRONICLES.** Translated by Lord BERNERS. Edited by G. C. MACAULAY, M.A.
- ***GOLDSMITH'S MISCELLANEOUS WORKS.** With Biographical Introduction by Professor MASSON.
- HORACE.** Rendered into English Prose, with Introductions, Running Analysis, Notes, and Index, by J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A.
- THE POETICAL WORKS OF JOHN KEATS.** Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by WILLIAM T. ARNOLD.
- MORTE D'ARTHUR.** The Book of King Arthur, and of his Noble Knights of the Round Table. The Original Edition of Caxton revised for modern use. With Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, by Sir E. STRACHKY.
- ***MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited, with Introductions, by Professor MASSON.
- ***PEPYS'S DIARY.** With Introduction and Notes by G. GREGORY SMITH.
- ***POPE'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited, with Notes and Introductory Memoir, by Professor WARD, Principal of Owens College, Manchester.
- ***SIR WALTER SCOTT'S POETICAL WORKS.** Edited, with Biographical and Critical Memoir, by Professor F. T. PALGRAVE. With Introduction and Notes.
- ***SHAKESPEARE'S COMPLETE WORKS.** Edited by W. G. CLARK, M.A., and W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A. With Glossary.
- ***SPENSER'S COMPLETE WORKS.** Edited from the Original Editions and Manuscripts, with Glossary, by K. MORRIS, and a Memoir by J. W. HALKS, M.A.
- ***TENNYSON'S POETICAL WORKS.** Also in extra cloth, gilt edges. 4s. 6d.
- VIRGIL.** Rendered into English Prose, with Introductions, Notes, Analysis, and Index, by J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

COMPLETE EDITIONS OF THE POETS.

Uniform Edition. In Green Cloth.

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON.

With a Portrait engraved on Steel by G. J. STODART. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE POETICAL WORKS OF MATTHEW ARNOLD.

With a Portrait engraved on Steel by G. J. STODART. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE POETICAL WORKS OF JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL.

With Introduction by THOMAS HUGHES, and a Portrait. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE POETICAL WORKS OF PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY.

Edited by PROF. ST. DOWDEN. With a Portrait. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE POETICAL WORKS OF SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE.

Edited, with a Biographical Introduction, by J. DYKES CAMPBELL. Portrait as Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE POETICAL WORKS OF WILLIAM WORDSWORTH.

With Introduction by JOHN MORLEY, and a Portrait. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE COMPLETE POETICAL WORKS OF T. E. BROWN.

With a Portrait; and an Introduction by W. E. HENLEY. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE COMPLETE POETICAL WORKS OF CHRISTINA ROSSETTI.

With Introduction, Memoir, and Notes, by W. M. ROSSETTI. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE BAB BALLADS, with which are included Songs of a Savoyard.

By Sir W. S. GILBERT. Sixth Edition. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

THE INGOLDSBY LEGENDS.

With 20 Illustrations on Steel by CRUIKSHANK, LEECH, and BARHAM. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

English Men of Letters.

NEW SERIES

Crown 8vo. Gilt tops. Flat backs. 2s. net each.

GEORGE ELIOT. By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

HAZLITT. By AUGUSTINE BIRRELL, K.C.

MATTHEW ARNOLD. By HERBERT W. PAUL.

RUSKIN. By FREDERIC HARRISON.

TENNYSON. By Sir ALFRED LYALL.

RICHARDSON. By AUSTIN DOBSON.

BROWNING. By G. K. CHESTERTON.

CRABBE. By ALFRED AINGER.

FANNY BURNEY. By AUSTIN DOBSON.

JEREMY TAYLOR. By EDMUND GOSSE.

ROSSETTI. By A. C. BENSON.

MARIA EDGEWORTH. By the Hon. EMILY LAWLESS.

HOBBS. By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

ADAM SMITH. By FRANCIS W. HIRST.

THOMAS MOORE. By STEPHEN GWYNN.

SYDNEY SMITH. By GEORGE W. E. RUSSELL.

EDWARD FITZGERALD. By A. C. BENSON.

ANDREW MARVELL. By AUGUSTINE BIRRELL, K.C.

SIR THOMAS BROWNE. By EDMUND GOSSE.

WALTER PATER. By A. C. BENSON.

SHAKESPEARE. By WALTER RALEIGH.

MRS. GASKELL. By CLEMENT SHORTER.

CHARLES KINGSLEY. By G. K. CHESTERTON.

JAMES THOMSON. By G. C. MACAULAY.

BEN JONSON. By Prof. GREGORY SMITH.

WILLIAM MORRIS. By ALFRED NOWES.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

P. T. O.

English Men of Letters.

EDITED BY JOHN MORLEY.

Popular Edition. Crown 8vo. Paper Covers, 1s. ; Cloth, 1s. 6d. each.

Library Edition. Crown 8vo. Gilt tops. Flat backs. 2s. net each.

ADDISON.

By W. J. COURTTHOPE.

BACON.

By Dean CHURCH.

BENTLEY.

By Sir RICHARD JEBB.

BUNYAN.

By J. A. FROUDE.

BURKE.

By JOHN MORLEY.

BURNS.

By Principal SHAIRP.

BYRON.

By Professor NICHOL.

CARLYLE.

By Professor NICHOL.

CHAUCER.

By Dr. A. W. WARD.

COLERIDGE.

By H. D. TRAILL.

COWPER.

By GOLDWIN SMITH.

DEFOE.

By W. MINTO.

DE QUINCEY.

By Professor MASSON.

DICKENS.

By Dr. A. W. WARD.

DRYDEN.

By Professor SAINTSBURY.

FIELDING.

By AUSTIN DOBSON.

GIBBON.

By J. C. MORISON.

GOLDSMITH.

By W. BLACK.

GRAY.

By EDMUND GOSSE.

HAWTHORNE.

By HENRY JAMES.

HUME.

By Professor HUXLEY, F.R.S.

JOHNSON.

By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

KEATS.

By SIDNEY COLVIN.

LAMB, CHARLES.

By Canon ALINGER.

LANDOR.

By SIDNEY COLVIN.

LOCKE.

By THOMAS FOWLER.

MACAULAY.

By J. C. MORISON.

MILTON.

By MARK PATTISON.

POPE.

By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

SCOTT.

By R. H. HUTTON.

SHELLEY.

By J. A. SYMONDS.

SHERIDAN.

By Mrs. OLIPHANT.

SIDNEY.

By J. A. SYMONDS.

SOUTHEY.

By Professor DOWDEN.

SPENSER.

By Dean CHURCH.

STERNE.

By H. D. TRAILL.

SWIFT.

By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

THACKERAY.

By ANTHONY TROLLOPE.

WORDSWORTH.

By F. W. H. MYERS.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

